

# Contents



The Author's Note	ix
Acknowledgment	xiii

## PART 1

### Introduction

1. Scientific world—whither bound? to self destruction!	3
2. Nuclear holocaust—forecast! when?—where?—means of averting it?	5
3. Universal peace!—by what means?	19

## PART 2

### The cause of disunity amongst mankind

4. The origin of religion	27
5. Nimrod—the genius mastermind	33
6. Abraham—the friend of God—sent to destroy Nimrod, the evil genius	81
7. The life of Abraham	119
8. Important events connected with prophets	177

9. Buddhism	199
-------------	-----

### PART 3

#### The Religions of the Advanced Western Civilisation

10. The miraculous conception and birth of Holy Jesus	203
11. The day and date of the birth of Holy Jesus	213
12. The teachings of Holy Jesus	217
13. The mission of Holy Jesus	367
14. The fruits of disobedience to Holy Jesus	445

### PART 4

#### According to European scholars—the Religion of Universal Brotherhood and Goodwill—How Harmony between Capitalists and Communists can be achieved— so that Nuclear War may be avoided!

15. The concept of surrender to the will of God according to European scholars	475
16. Allah	541
17. The Promised Prophet	585
18. The divine scripture which defies forgeries—the greatest continuing miracle over the centuries	793
19. The divine laws and their application	819
20. Satanism	875
21. Sufism	939
22. How Universal peace amongst mankind is achievable!	1105

## PART 5

Biblical prophecies on Nuclear destruction! Communist  
 Domination and the great Battle by Saints—  
 An Era of Universal peace, when wars would become  
 things of the past and weapons of war destroyed!  
 “Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven”

23. We are in the transition period to the new era—say Biblical researchers	1137
24. The coming of the Saviour to establish—”Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven”	1153
25. Biblical foretellings of coming events	1159
26. Foretellings as to dates	1195
27. You may survive Armageddon and enter into God’s new world	1227
28. The duty of mankind to avert coming disasters	1241
29. Biblical prophecies confirmed	1259
30. Too wonderful to believe—yet it’s true	1315
Detailed Chapter Wise Index	1335
General Index	1369



## The Author's Note



This treatise is based on extracts from works of learned scholars, researchers, scientists and several rare manuscripts—among which some are the only copies known to be in existence.

Readers of this book may be surprised at the disclosures made herein and wonder why such vital facts have been suppressed and concealed!

Some may even laugh at this attempt to save the people of the world from “DESTRUCTION” and bring about “PEACE” by means of mere quotations, including old prophecies!

Those unfamiliar with the Qur'an will be delighted to pursue the detailed and venerated accounts of the *dedication* of the Virgin Mary by her mother *from even before her birth!* As also the descriptions of the miraculous conception and birth of the Holy Jesus, which occur in numerous surahs, some of which have been presented in this volume. They include how *baby Jesus from his cradle, miraculously defended the virginity of his mother*, when she was accused by Jewish ladies of an illicit relationship and that the *date of his birth is a blessed day, which however is not Christmas day!* These bring out the many wonderful aspects of this momentous event not even known to the readers of the New Testament.

The “*Prophecy of Fatima*”, which was to be proclaimed to the world at the beginning of 1960 has been quoted here, as revealed by

Jeane Dixon, the American lady, who had foretold the assassination of President Kennedy, the Rev. Martin Luther King and many others. This prophecy is duly supported by foretelling's from other independent authorities including two sources from the Holy Bible.

The excerpts reproduced in this research are based amongst other sources on the "*Gospel of Barnabas*". So a few lines are given hereunder as to who is the author of this Gospel.

### **Saint Barnabas**

Saint Barnabas was a Levite Jew from Cyprus. His name was Josès. Barnabas was not his name nor his family title. He met Holy Jesus, son of Virgin Mary (peace of God be on them). He was so much influenced by Jesus that he sold all his properties. He donated the entire proceeds for the propagation of the teachings of Jesus (Acts 4:36-37). He became a very ardent follower of Jesus. Under the personal dictations of Jesus he recorded the Evangel of Jesus in Hebrew Language, the mother-tongue of Jesus. These dictations of Jesus were written down in the presence of Jesus before his departure from earthly life.

For his devotion to Jesus he was given in Hebrew the title of "Bar Nabuha". "Bar" means "Son of", whilst "Nabuha" means "of the Nabi i.e., Prophet". This title of Barnabuha or "Son of the Prophet" was given by all the Jewish Prophets to their religious heir or successor. For example the Barnabuha of Moses was Joshua, of Samuel was David, of David was Solomon, of Elijah was Elisha, of Elisha was Jehu, of Zakariah was his son John, of John the Baptist was Jesus when he anointed Jesus. Hence the title of Barnabas the Greek form of Barnabuha means that the Levite Jew Josès was made the Barnabuha or the spiritual heir by Holy Jesus. Thus by this appointment it was the duty of St. Barnabas to carry on the real teachings of Jesus after he was lifted to heaven.

The copy of a Gospel written in Hebrew in the personal handwriting of St. Barnabas was found in 382 A.D. lying upon his chest,

during an excavation in Cyprus when the grave of St. Barnabas was disclosed. The said Gospel was intact. As if it had just been placed inside the grave. So also was the body of St. Barnabas. Both of these are no doubt miracles. Otherwise both the Gospel and the body of St. Barnabas could not have remained intact for over 300 years in the damp Mediterranean climate.

Often I sit in amazement and wonder as to how the several thousands of quotations have come into my hands out of the many hundreds of books which have gone into the compilation of this treatise. I well realise that single handed I could never have collected so many references even in fifty years, working ten hours per day. Then comes the question of the numerous subjects delved into. I think that it is necessary frankly to disclose this secret.

When I was ordained a Khalifa, *i.e.*, spiritual head, of Chishty Musharafi Sufi School in 1958, I was ordered to write a book in English that would be beneficial to mankind by His Holiness Khwaja Diwan Syed Enayat Hussain Ali Khan Moini Chishty of Ajmer (a descendant of His Holiness Khwaja Syed Moinuddin Hasan Chishty of Ajmer, the Patron Saint of the Indian subcontinent). Diwan Syed Enayat Hussain was the spiritual guide of Khwaja Syed Musharafali Chishty Bukhari, who is my spiritual guide. Hence I became bound to fulfil his wishes.

For five years *i.e.* until 1963, I groped in the dark during which I noted numerous quotations in a subject-wise index from the Qur'an. But *still I did not have any topic upon which to write*. What was I to do? His Holiness Khwaja Diwan Syed Enayat Hussain had already departed from earthly life in 1959.

It was in this state of perplexity that I prayed in 1963 to my Patron Saint His Holiness Khwaja Syed Moinuddin Hasan Chishty of Ajmer (peace of Allah be upon him) for spiritual guidance. As if by a miracle, I became an instrument in his hands. People unknown to me started coming to me from all walks of life between 1963 and 1970, as if drawn by some magnetic force, with various books on numerous topics. I gave

them a patient hearing and copied down the passages they referred to or made extracts from the books they loaned to me for a week or so. Many of them never came back to meet me again. In this extremely mysterious and unexplainable manner I got not only the materials but also the various topics and headings to be included—Truth is sometimes more fantastic than fiction!

So I humbly surrendered myself, and did exactly according to the spiritual guidance of this saint, who has left this earth about seven and a half centuries ago! As such all credit for this wonderful book must go to my Patron Saint His Holiness Khwaja Syed Moinuddin Hasan Chishty of Ajmer (d. 6th Rajab 630 A.H. / 1233 A.D.).

The result of this spiritual guidance is such that not only each chapter but even every heading and sub-heading is a wonderful masterpiece, with something highly logical or scientific or novel or interesting from which people of goodwill all over the world can, not only derive knowledge but also solace and even safety from the Nuclear Holocaust—the *Battle of Armageddon*!

THE GOOD LORD, ALMIGHTY AND KIND;  
LET THIS BE A GUIDANCE TO MANKIND.

Hajee Mahboob Kassim  
Calcutta, 6th August 1971





## Acknowledgment



The author takes this opportunity of expressing his gratitude to Ameer Ali A. Gangjee, Asgar Ali A. Gangjee and Faiyaz Ahmed for the loan of numerous books and to Sk. Enayatullah of the National Library, Calcutta for procuring numerous books which have assisted in compiling this research and to Aga Afzal Mirza and Pratap Chunder Bonnerjee for editing and Mr Bonnerjee for also reading the proofs of this treatise.

The author also wishes to thank the authors, publishers and authors' representatives for permission to use excerpts from their books, articles, *etc.*







PART 1

INTRODUCTION





## Chapter 1

# Scientific World—Whither Bound? To Self-Destruction!



Even the word ‘Fantastic’ is inadequate to describe the almost unimaginable progress that *Science* is making today in every sphere. Man's conquest of travel in outer space, the successful landings on the moon and the hopes of landing upon neighbouring planets are all achievements which were unimaginable even a few years back.

This is by no means all. Nay, it is only a beginning. There are other far more controversial subjects upon which serious researches are now being conducted. The vast field of knowledge, yet undreamt of, lies in the results of practical experiments on such subjects which concern man and his welfare. A few of them are:

Will women who cannot bear their own children be able to select from a bank a foetus, which has been lying frozen for a hundred years or more with such combinations offering a wide range of choice *e.g.*, from a Scandinavian woman with blue eyes and golden hair and a milk-white skin but having the intelligence, patience and stamina of a *Yogi Fakir* from India, who have combined to produce that particular foetus which a childless woman is selecting for a baby all her own even though she could not normally conceive a child?

Will it be possible to bring back to life one who has been dead for

a century or more, but whose body has been kept frozen and unharmed for the entire period?

Can man control his destiny and by means of science prolong his life *indefinitely*?

The phrase 'The sky is the limit' is now believed by many ideologists to be quite inadequate to describe fully the incredible achievements which are being continuously and successfully accomplished daily. But what worries most great thinkers of today is—*are all these for the good of mankind or its destruction?*

Scientists are generally of the confirmed view that the new weapons of destruction that are now being developed and experimented on have already put into insignificance even such horrible weapons as the Hydrogen Bombs!

Countries still continue to *vie* with one another in the production and invention of weapons more dangerous and far more destructive. Then they congratulate one another on their so-called *achievements*!

Newspapers often boast about world leaders holding conferences to promote peace on Earth! One warlike incident after another bring home the fact to the U.N. that universal peace cannot be gained by mere talking.

When one realises the terrible devastation the *Two World Wars* have caused, the miseries they brought in their wake and all the horrors, even without any of the newly-invented weapons of mass extermination already developed and still being experimented upon, one cannot help shuddering with fear at the thought of

Scientific World—Whither Bound?

To

Self-destruction!



## Chapter 2

# Nuclear Holocaust Forecast: When? Where? Means of averting it?



### A. The Groups of Nuclear Powers

There are today two groups who possess Nuclear Bombs, *viz*:

*The Western Bloc* comprising America, Great Britain and France and possibly a few others.

*The Communist Bloc* consisting of the U.S.S.R. and China.

### B. The Issues that could possibly lead to a Nuclear War

The present outstanding major issues which could possibly lead to a Nuclear Holocaust are the conflicts relating to:

Germany.

Vietnam.

Middle East.

### C. Which countries might be involved in a Nuclear Bombardment?

At a glance one can see that many European, Asian and African countries are involved in the above-mentioned issues.

Therefore, if nuclear weapons of destruction are used, it would

naturally involve many unprepared countries and destroy them utterly in the holocaust. A slight mistake or miscalculation could be responsible for millions of deaths even in neutral countries.

Most people do realise quite well that with all these preparations we are heading for a *Nuclear Holocaust* which will destroy very large sections of mankind. But has this ever been foretold, and if so, what does the prophecy say?

#### **D. Are Nuclear weapons for the destruction of mankind?**

Below are given a few news items which appeared in *The Statesman* — a leading daily of India, published simultaneously from Calcutta and New Delhi:

##### **1. On Monday 4th September, 1967 on page 9.**

“Moscow, September 3: Soviet Nuclear Missiles are aimed at populated Administrative and Political Centres in the West and will be launched if the West begins a new war, Soviet Marshal Nikolai Krylov warned today, reports Reuter.

“Writing in Nedelya, the Sunday supplement to the Government Newspaper Izvestia, Marshal Krylov said that the populated Administrative Centres were considered targets equally as valid as Military Installations.

‘The Rockets’ he said, ‘Would be launched during the very first few minutes of the war’.

“His statement marked a change from previous, Soviet speculation about future war according to which conventional war could still be waged without involving nuclear strikes.

“Although Marshal Krylov stressed that any Soviet strike would be in retaliation for Western aggression, he did not specify that the West would have to make a nuclear attack before the Soviet missiles were launched”.



2. On the 16th September, 1967.

Giant Soviet Missile

“London, September 15: A British Defence Ministry expert says the Russians are believed to have developed a giant rocket warhead which releases a shower of H-bombs, each capable or being guided to a separate target, reports AP.

“Air Commodore Neil Cameron adds: It is widely believed that the Russians have developed the multiple individually-guided re-entry vehicle, known as M.I.R.V. which would revolutionize nuclear strategy. It would mean that each Soviet missile despatched could carry 10 or more individually-guided warheads. This could neutralize America’s numerical lead in this field”.

3. On the 19th November, 1967, page II.

***Russia claims Rockets that cannot be hit.***

“Moscow, November 18: The Soviet Union yesterday claimed to have small mobile launchers for its intercontinental rockets which could not be hit by an enemy, reports AP.

“The first Deputy Commander of the Strategic Rocket Forces Gen. Vladimir F. Tolubkov made the claim in an interview with the official Soviet News Agency Tass.

“The General said that the weight of nuclear warheads for Soviet intercontinental missiles has been decreased ‘considerably’, during the past 10 years. At the same time, he said the destructive power has been increased ‘several times’.

“Meanwhile, Nikolai Yegorov, a Colonel-General in the Soviet missile forces said in another interview that his country could strike nuclear blows which would be both ‘sudden and unavoidable’. A practically foolproof intercontinental missile was ready for firing, he added”.

**E. Jeane Dixon prophesies bad times for America**

On pages 177-181 of “*A Gift of Prophecy. The Phenomenal Jeane Dixon*”

by Ruth Montgomery, published by William Morrow & Co., New York, in 1944, twelfth printing, December 1965, one reads:

“Jeane Dixon has learned by experience that the early hours before daybreak provide the clearest channels for psychic meditation. She consequently arose at two o’clock on the morning of November 2, 1964, to meditate on the following day’s election returns. She was disturbed that in recent weeks the elephant had disappeared from her crystal ball; only the donkey remained, tugging and pulling its way through dark clouds. Since this had never previously happened in all the years that she had been forecasting election outcome, she hoped to find an explanation for the puzzlement. The street lights cast a wan yellow glow through her bedroom windows as she settled herself in the semidarkness, with the crystal ball in hand. The donkey was still there, pushing its nose against the finishing line but where was the Republican elephant? So intent was she on the little tableau in the glittering ball that she was only vaguely aware of an odd sensation of suspension, until she glanced towards the east and saw a magnificent marble pavilion.

“Jeane describes the vision thus: Seated on a throne before fluted marble columns was a gorgeously arrayed Roman emperor who, with great energy and strength, was hurling bits of food toward far-off throngs of ragged barbarians. The hordes gradually inched closer, seizing on the scattered titbits, while beauty radiated from the exquisite pavilion. Watching intently, Jeane noticed that the emperor was beginning to cast the food more carelessly, with less vitality, so that some of it was falling near his feet, and at last the barbarians swept across the pavilion, like a swarm of locusts, eradicating all traces of the culture and refinement which it reflected.

“As darkness enveloped the scene, Jeane felt that in a symbolic way she had not only witnessed the decline and fall of the Roman Empire, with the subsequent Dark Ages which obliterated the light of learning, but had also been given a subtle warning that America was similarly draining itself of needed strength by a careless disbursement of foreign aids.

“While she sat in reverie a new vision began to form, and Jeane suddenly found herself in the centre of it, talking with a recognizable friend, who seemed implicitly to trust her, and an enormous old woman who represented the Voice of Wisdom. Wildly victorious music flooded the room through open windows, and Jeane knew instinctively that an American presidential inauguration was in progress just outside. The friend tenderly handed her a baby girl, saying: ‘I would trust her with no one but you. Please protect her, for I love her very much’.

“Nodding sagely, the old lady cautioned: ‘This is the child of love. You must let nothing happen to her’. Jeane cuddled the infant in her arms, and as she left the house the door closed noiselessly behind her. She glanced in the direction from which the music had come, but the beautiful inaugural pavilion that had until recently been crowded with merry-makers was abandoned, and a filthy debris covered its smooth marble floor. The baby by now was a toddler, and Jeane held onto the tiny hand as she led her down a curving marble staircase.

“She felt strangely drawn towards the pavilion, but since it was too soiled for the child to walk on, they strolled along beside it, on emerald-green grass which was as soft as velvet carpeting. Jeane seemed to realise that the marble pavilion was America, and she felt sick at heart that it had become so littered with filth. New sparkling, pure, clear water was flowing across the grass and lapping gently around her ankles, but she sadly noted that the cleansing flood was sweeping under instead of over the debris on the pavilion floor.

“The child happily trudging along beside her abruptly slipped into an unseen hole. Bracing herself against the pavilion for support, Jeane frantically tugged at the arm of the baby who had been so lovingly entrusted to her care and as she struggled to lift her she beseeched the child: ‘Help me! Help me to save you! You can help me if you try’.

“The child made no effort to assist but slowly rolled over and gazed up at her: and though an inch of clear water covered the little face, Jeane

knew that she had never seen such serenity, overwhelming love and wisdom in human eyes. She continued her futile tugging until the child smiled and said joyously: 'It must be this way. It's got to be this way. Don't you see that it must be this way?'

"Jeane turned and stared again at the unspeakable litter covering the pavilion floor and sensed that she belonged to it; that this was her America. Overwhelmed by a feeling of shame, she watched mutely while smoky gray clouds began to churn the debris about, like matchboxes caught in the funnel of a tornado: She lifted her eyes and noticed that above the murky clouds were even blacker ones rolling in angry billows as if sucked by a giant magnet. As far as she could see the horizon was murky and tormented: but near the top of the black clouds a fire crackled and burned with white-hot intensity, gradually consuming the repulsive debris.

"Jeane interprets this vision as an advance warning that Americans must pay dearly for the confusion, degradation and immorality in our political, business, labour and family lives; for our obsession with material things and our compromises with high principle. Like the Romans who squandered their great cultural and political leadership with bread and circuses, she feels that we also are building up a loathsome debris that must be consumed by cleansing fires before peace can return to a troubled world. Jeane says of this:

"I saw the debris of our national life littering America, but surrounding it was a sea of pure green grass which became inundated with sparkling clear water that still left the debris un-swept. This was the present time, and as the gray clouds began to churn I knew that they represented the struggle between the races—a struggle that will dominate the decades of the 1960s and 1970s. After that came the even blacker clouds, representing a horrible war in which many Asian and African nations whom we have helped with foreign aid will join with Red China to close in on us and, like the barbarians in the vision of ancient Rome, try to destroy our way of life. This will occur during the 1980s and because of a new kind of ... warfare many will die like ants".

## **F. Forewarnings that not only America but also Europe would be involved in Nuclear destruction**

In the the book “*Imam Uz Zaman Ki Aamad*” by Hazrat Khwaja Hasan Nizami published by Ibne Arabi Ka Rukun. Halka-e-Mashaik, Delhi, in January 1927, (4th edition) on pages 32-33 are passages in Persian which are translated hereunder:

Couplet 11: “According to information of the Qur’an, Thunder and Lightning will be produced by various instruments of War.

Couplet 12: “From ‘*Nun*’ of Christianity (*Nun* is the letter ‘N’ in Persian script. In this context it can mean either ‘N’ for those lands which were once Christian but are no longer Christian like U.S.S.R. or ‘N’ is short for Nazareth *i.e.*, Israel of today to Rome. And from there (*i.e.*, Rome) to the extreme limits of America will be a rain of fiery meteors.

Couplet 13: “From these inventions will burst forth white hot light giving out the sounds of thunder. Strange indeed will be these wondrous inventions.

Couplet 14: “Strange performances (such as sending men to the moon and other such achievements of receiving photos of Mar’s surface, *etc.*) and strange sounds (such as speaking with different countries by means of the artificial satellites, *etc.*). These will be performed by means of the equipments made to produce white hot light and thunder (*i.e.*, Nuclear power”).

## **G. Prophecies that the Nuclear war would be between two powerful Groups of nations *i.e.*, the two Nuclear Blocs of Countries**

On page 33 of a “*Imam Uz Zaman Ki Aamad*” a Hadith (*i.e.*, the advices) of the Prophet of Islam is quoted as:

“That the end of the present world civilisation will not take place until two very powerful groups of nations fight a terrifying battle. Their claim will be the same (that they are fighting for giving mankind justice, equality and peace), and yet they would fight. There will be so very great a massacre as can be compared to the total destruction of mankind on earth”.

### **H. Prophecies made in 1152 A.D. describing the results of the Third World War**

Shah Neamat-Ullah has written in Persian Poetry 14 passages of prophecies of events from the 6th century Hijrah (*i.e.*, 12th century A.D.) to beyond the 14th century Hijrah (*i.e.*, the end of the 20th century A.D.). In all these eight hundred years not one of his prophecies has proved false. Already twelve passages have been completely fulfilled. The thirteenth has practically run its span.

The relevant Persian texts are still lying preserved in the British Museum at London. One Professor Brown has done much research on them.

The following passages are from the end of the 13th of such passages:

Couplet 51: “As described before, the disasters through which India has passed the same type of disunity will set in for the Western Bloc of countries.

Couplet 52: “Out of the (two allied countries whose names commence with) ‘*Alifs*’ about whom I have written earlier. (These two *Alifs* or ‘A’ in Persian script stand for the first letter of America and Anglistan or England), one *Alif* (*i.e.*, Anglistan or England) will become knocked out like a felled horse in this war, whilst the other ‘*Alif*’ which is to the West (of the first *Alif i.e.*, America) will simultaneously be attacked by ‘*Ra*’ in the said War.

- Couplet 53: “The (Scientists of) defeated ‘*Geam*’ (which is ‘G’ in the Persian language. The country which was defeated in world war two and whose name starts with ‘G’ is Germany) would be forced by the conquering countries (like America, Russia, Britain, *etc.*) to prepare such arms which would burst like erupting volcanoes causing fiery hells. And these would be used without any mercy or consideration by ‘*Ra*’ (or ‘R’ the first letter of Russia) in this war upon heavily populated areas.
- Couplet 54: “(The two countries whose names commence with) ‘*Alif*’ (America and Anglistan) will be eliminated in such a devastating form, that no trace whatsoever will be left of them save and except their names in the pages of history.
- Couplet 55: “This (kind of annihilation of nations) would be the punishment of the Almighty Invisible (God) upon the sinful Western civilization. Never again will they be able to claim (as Rome has been) the seat of priestly power to influence this world.
- Couplet 56: “The disbelievers in God (*i.e.*, Atheists or Communists) will conquer the world (after destroying the Western civilisation). But in the end they will eventually be destroyed and condemned to hell.
- Couplet 61: “If you want success and continuity (of your nations), (I beg of you) in the name of Allah<sup>1</sup>, obey His orders. Live according to His last set of Commandments.
- Couplet 63: “O Neamat (this is a short form of taking one’s own name *i.e.*, Shah Neamat-Ullah)! Keep your mouth shut.

---

1. ALLAH means the Eternal Supreme Being, Who is the Creator and Sustainer of the Universe, Who has no equals and Who is neither male nor female nor plural *i.e.*, He is the one and only Who can be called God.

Do not disclose any further the secrets of God Almighty. This is being written by me in the year 547 Hijrah (*i. e.*, 1152 A.D.)”.

Thus it appears from these prophecies made by Shah Neamat-Ullah in the year 1152 A.D *i.e.*, more than 800 years ago that scientists of a defeated European country whose name commences with ‘G’ would be forced to prepare weapons of war bursting like *Erupting Volcanoes causing Fiery Hell* and that these would be used by both sides in the Third World War. Further that Russia would ruthlessly destroy the heavily populated areas of the Western civilization.

### **I. How can men save themselves from Nuclear Disaster?**

From the above passages not only have very frightening disasters been foretold for the heavily populated cities of the world especially of the Western civilisation but there is also very sane and good advice for the safety of mankind given in Couplet No. 61 of Shah Neamat-Ullah *viz*:

“If you want success and continuity (of your nations), (I beg of you) in the name of Allah obey His orders. Live according to His last set of Commandments”.

Thus it will be clear that if mankind is to be saved they must surrender themselves and live in accordance with the wishes of Allah, the God Almighty.

The younger generation will spurn this warning by boastfully contending:

- a) Science shows that everything has come about through a process of evolution and not by creation. Hence those who are of a scientific bent of mind do not feel any necessity for the existence of a God as the Creator of the Universe. Therefore they do not feel any compulsion to follow His laws or surrender to Him.



- b) They vehemently contend that mankind cannot be saved from the destructive scientific might by surrendering oneself to God Almighty.

The first contention is fully answered later in this research in Chapter 16 and 17: B,1-2.

The second is fully answered by research carried out by Christian authorities in Chapter 27: G and H, but one appropriate historical example is quoted hereunder from the Holy Bible as a ready reference:

“Now in the fourteenth year of king Hezekiah did Sennacherib king of Assyria come up against all the fenced cities of Judah, and took them.

“And the king of Assyria sent Tartan and Rabsaris and Rab-shakeh from Lachish to king Hezekiah with a great host against Jerusalem. And they went up and came to Jerusalem. And when they were come up, they came and stood by the conduit of the upper pool, which is in the highway of the fuller’s field.

“And when they had called to the king, there came out to them Eliakim, the son of Hilkiah, which was over the household, and Shebna the scribe, and Joah, the son of Asaph, the recorder.

“And Rab-shakeh said unto them, speak ye now to Hezekiah. Thus saith the great king, the king of Assyria, what confidence is this wherein thou trustest?

“Thou sayest, (but they are but vain words) I have counsel and strength for the war. Now on whom dost thou trust, that thou rebellest against me?” (2 Kings 18:13, 17-20).

“Hath any of the gods of the nations delivered at all his land out of the hand of the king of Assyria?

“Where are the gods of Hamath, and of Arpad? Where are the gods of Sepharvaim, Hena and Ivah? Have they delivered Samaria out of mine hand?

“Who are they among all the gods of the countries, that have delivered their country out of mine hand, that the LORD should deliver Jerusalem out of mine hand?” (2 Kings 18:33-35).

Immediately King Hezekiah of Jerusalem sent a messenger to Prophet Isaiah to pray to God Almighty for help. Prophet Isaiah gave the following reply received from God:

“For out of Jerusalem shall go forth a remnant, and they that escape out of mount Zion: the zeal of the LORD of hosts shall do this.

“Therefore thus saith the LORD concerning the king of Assyria, He shall not come into this city, nor shoot an arrow there, nor come before it with shield, nor cast bank against it.

“By the way that he came, by the same shall he return, and shall not come into this city, saith the LORD.

“For I will defend this city, to save it, for mine own sake, and for my servant David’s sake.

*“And it came to pass that night, that the angel of the LORD went out, and smote in the camp of the Assyrians an hundred fourscore and five thousand: and when they (the king of Assyrians) arose early in morning, behold, they (the army) were all dead corpses.*

“So Sennacherib, king of Assyria departed (frustrated) and went and returned (disappointed), and dwelt at Nineveh.

“And it came to pass, as he was worshipping in the house of Nisroch his god, that Adrammelech and Sharezer his sons smote him with the sword (for the disaster he had brought about by disbelieving in God Almighty): and they escaped into the land of Armenia. And Esarhaddon his son reigned in his stead.” (2 Kings 19:31-37).

From the above passage it is clear that King Sennacherib of Assyria had surrounded Jerusalem with a large army. As he had defeated all the neighbouring kings, he in his pride mocked the powers of God Almighty just as the atheistic-minded science scholars of today are

doing. But what happened on the night before the attack? History shows that *the entire Assyrian Army of 185,00 men was destroyed by God Almighty. Thus the people of Jerusalem were saved even without making any effort whatsoever. That was because they believed in God Almighty and had surrendered unto Him.*

As this has been done before on *many an occasion* as repeatedly shown in this treatise, *why can it not happen again?* This is the very essence of this volume. It is to help mankind to the path that will *save them from self-annihilation* in the present Scientific Age.

It will be seen later on that there are going to be two such occasions in the coming years when the armed might of Nuclear Power with the strength of the majority of the people will attack a defenceless Saint and his band of believers in God Almighty. In the first of these assaults 5/6th of the might of the attackers will be destroyed by Divine Aid when all other hope has gone. On the second occasion in the battle of Armageddon, the armed Nuclear might of the worldly powers will be destroyed again to establish the universal religion of:

THY WILL BE DONE ON EARTH AS IT IS IN HEAVEN

At this stage all weapons of war will be destroyed and universal love and brotherhood will be established. War will become a thing of the past for many centuries to come.

Hence it is obvious that if the world is to preserve its safety people *must* rise to the occasion and make a serious effort to achieve *Universal Peace amongst men of goodwill*, irrespective of caste, colour, race or nationality. *Otherwise very many are doomed to the most serious disaster in human history.*

There will be many who will disbelieve and disregard these warnings but there are bound to be at least some who will live even after the disaster. Then they will realise the very great value of this warning, *but alas, it will be too late!*

Is it not the duty of every intelligent human being, to strive for a

basis for world peace, goodwill and friendship?

FOREWARNED IS FOREARMED.



### Chapter 3

## Universal Peace! By What Means?



If man cannot come to terms with the rest of his Universe and *effectively ban the manufacture of destructive weapons* he will, inevitably, in a short time, become so technologically advanced that he is bound to destroy himself.

*Imagination* has been the basis of our civilisation. Without it we could not have advanced to the stage of rocketing to the Moon and other planets around us even though this was foretold about 1,400 years ago:

“O company of Jinn and men, if ye have power to penetrate (all) regions of the heaven and the earth, then penetrate (them)! Ye will never penetrate them save and except when (Allah) shall permit it (by giving men the present advanced scientific knowledge)”  
(Qur’an 55:33).

All our present comforts, beautiful buildings, works of art, trains, cars, aircrafts, automatic machines, electrical gadgets, radio, television, and all our scientific progress are the results of pictures conjured up in the minds of men and then made a reality. Man is able to create much from his imagination. It has been repeatedly proved: “*Whatsoever the mind of man can conceive that it can achieve*”.

But the imaginative faculty, although discovered and used in an elementary fashion, has still a long, long way to go to reach its apex. Its

potential is vast. So far men have only scratched the surface.

Indeed our imagination is our greatest gift. Each one of us is born with this faculty. But due to disuse and neglect, it recedes into the background, becoming weak and un-productive over the years. Just as a muscle or an organ, if not used regularly, becomes flabby, so it is with *Imagination*. No one is able to say with any degree of accuracy how extensive or how productive one's imagination can be. It has made possible such things as were once considered impossible and it will surely do so again in the future.

*Imagination* and *Will* are very closely related. In fact, the *Will* by itself is useless. In any conflict between the two, it is the imagination that always prevails, *because you can do a thing only when you have the concept for it*.

Tell yourself, no matter how difficult a thing is, that you can do it, imagine yourself doing it and you eventually succeed. But try and force yourself to do something which you cannot imagine possible, then you are not likely to be successful.

Not only is imagination essential for new ideas and inventions, it also helps us to live a better and a more fruitful life. Imagination, when used productively and in a practical manner by business executives, means better working conditions and labour relations. When applied by the teacher, it makes lessons interesting; to the housewife, it makes housework a joy, and for ordinary men and women, it enables them to get the best out of life.

*Imagination* and creativity if used sensibly for constructive purposes can do much more for mankind than what most of the scientific developments put together have so far done. This is the very essence by which we can achieve universal goodwill, harmony and peace. Genesis 11:6 reads:

“And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and *Now nothing will be restrained from them—which they have imagined to do*”.

From this quotation of the Holy Bible it is seen that at one stage mankind was united into one common people. Let us all reflect for a moment especially on the word “NOW” in the last portion of the above quotation:

“NOW nothing will be restrained from them—which they have imagined to do” (Genesis 11: 6).

This brings home quite vividly the lesson: *United we stand—Divided we fall.*

Since we were united once, why can’t we be united again? This is the challenge facing each and every individual and nation if they wish to survive—Nay, it is the only means of survival.

No amount of sacrifice or efforts on the part of powerful nations can be too great to achieve this ideal. Surely we have enough imagination to find a common basis for all—an equality for all—a common brotherhood—a basis for international peace and goodwill.

The burning question is: *By What Means?*

That answer can be found if one observes the following:

1. Forget our *egoism* and thoughts of imposing *our will* upon others.
2. Give up all prejudices especially: “*Oh Well! We have believed in this for centuries*” and open our mind to anything that is good and beneficial for *All mankind* and not what we selfishly, want to believe or have been believing for centuries.
3. Select the *very best way* to achieve international goodwill—without any distinction of caste, colour, creed, race or nationality.
4. Avoid the cause or causes which led to the *Curse of God* which broke up the unity of mankind. This is by far the most important of all, if we are to *succeed*.

People who are creatively alert are naturally not only the most

interesting personalities but it is to them that the world turns for guidance in difficulties. They think differently and have more to say in the development of thoughts. It is to such people that this appeal is being made to come forward fearlessly and tell us courageously the truth as to how International Peace is achievable! These leaders in all the Governments of the World, the preachers, the thinkers, the scientists, the lawyers and even the laymen are called upon through this appeal, for the safety of mankind in general, to use their powers to try and imagine what the future might be in the light of what has happened in the past and why?

To analyse and evaluate are the traits that distinguish man from animals. Let us sink our difference, egoism and prejudices. Let us shake off our complacency of “This is good enough”. For nothing but the very best can solve the great problem before us. Let us one and all rise to the occasion and come out to seek the path to our universal safety and goodwill amongst men.

All great thinkers will admit that *Religion* has often been the binding factor between people of different nationalities, customs and languages. Here lies the *Cement*, which if properly processed, could save the whole world from future annihilation of man by man. Unity amongst nations is the only way to gain cooperation between men of goodwill for the international progress and success of mankind. This is where we need the faculties of our imagination the most, to sift out the one and only path towards salvation. Therefore, one cannot be contented with *this is good enough*, but man has to have *the best—nay the very best*—nothing else will do if we are to achieve the desired target—**Universal love, goodwill and brotherhood.**

- A. If world unity is our object then the first thing to study will be the *causes which broke up the unity of mankind* when we were all united once and spoke one language. This is amplified in part two of this work.
- B. The greatest scientific advancements now achieved have been



by what may loosely be termed the “European Group of Nations” comprising the U.S.S.R. in the East up to America in the West. Therefore, the third part of this book is being devoted to make a survey of their basic religions and to see what advantages can be derived from such observations for the common good of mankind.

- C. What according to European Research Scholars could be the basis of the Religion of World Unity and peace amongst men of goodwill is given in the fourth part of this thesis.
- D. The last part consists of foretellings of coming events about the establishment of a common World Religion under one person for the benefit of all mankind when not only would wars be banned and weapons of war destroyed but even the wild animals would also live in peace—*A complete surrender to the Will of God Almighty.*

We shall now make an analysis of these four subjects in an effort to find the *Ways and Means* by which we can achieve *Universal Goodwill and unity.*

Let us be fired by our imagination that we are going to find unity. We will and MUST find that path of international cooperation and love. Surely men and women of goodwill can find that *Path to One World*, with one people with one common goal—*Universal Peace and Brotherhood.* This book is therefore food for thought and efforts to that *Ideal Goal*, which our leaders MUST—Nay each individual amongst us—every man, woman and even children MUST strive to achieve, rising above our SELFISH desires and prejudices with an honest and open mind towards the truth-THE ABSOLUTE TRUTH.







PART 2

THE CAUSE OF DISUNITY  
AMONGST MANKIND





## *Chapter 4*

# The Origin of Religion



### **A. The beginning**

As mankind multiplied from the children of Adam, people started becoming wicked and disobedient to the Creator. The people renounced the Almighty and his Divine Laws sent through Adam, who thus became the first prophet or messenger of God. He guided his descendants—mankind—until his death at the ripe old age of 930 years (Genesis 5:5).

Time and again Prophet after Prophet was sent by the Lord to show the right path and to correct the wicked by means of more laws to be observed.

As all the efforts of these Prophets could not stem the tide of wickedness, so a very great Prophet was sent in the Seventh Century of man's existence. He was Prophet Enoch (called "Idris" in Arabic) who was born when Adam was 622 years old. He was the most learned man during the pre-deluge period and introduced the spinning of cotton into yarn and its weaving into cloth. He also invented writing upon parchments. At the age of 365 years he was bodily lifted up to heaven alive (Genesis 5:23-24)

### **B. The early calculation of day, week and months**

In that period a day ended when the Sun set. The new month began

when the new moon was visible to the naked eye. A week consisted of seven days. The days of the week did not have any separate names as at present. Except for the first day which was called “*Shamba*” and the seventh day which was called “*Jumma*” or the “Day of Gathering” together for prayers or “Sabbath day”, the other days were numbered as follows:

- a. Shamba was the day of commencement of the week. This is equivalent to our Saturday.
- b. One day after Shamba equals Sunday
- c. Two days after Shamba equals Monday
- d. Three days after Shamba equals Tuesday
- e. Four days after Shamba equals Wednesday
- f. Five days after Shamba or night before Jumma equals Thursday
- g. Jumma or the gathering day for prayers equals Friday, the day when everybody gathered to observe prayers. No work was allowed on this day. Hence it became the “Sabbath” day.

This ancient system of the day, week and month calculation from the time of Adam is still prevalent throughout the Muslim world.

At that prehistoric time the first six days of the week were spent in looking after worldly affairs and the seventh or last day of the week or Jumma, was reserved wholly for prayers as will be evident from:

“And God blessed the seventh day of the week and sanctified it ...”  
(Genesis 2: 3).

The rules for the observance of the Sabbath were very strict as will appear from the Fourth Commandment. Those breaking them were to be stoned to death. That no relaxation was to be allowed under any circumstances is evident from the fact that the Israelites were obliged to observe the Sabbath even during their forty years' wanderings in the wilderness.

### C. The two Fallen Angels

During the period of Enoch two angels named Horus and Marduk or Merodach approached God Almighty and placed before Him their complaint that:

“O Lord! see how wicked the people of the earth are becoming, yet You have made them the Viceroy over all Your creations whilst we the Angels only hymn Thy praise day and night” (Qur’an 2: 30).

“If we are sent on earth we shall be able to prove that we are superior to them and deserve the higher position”.

These two angels were amongst the cleverest of the heavenly host. God warned them that because they had full knowledge of the rewards in heaven and they had studied “*Lauhae Mahfooz*” (i.e. the preserved table containing all the laws of God in heaven in which all kinds of knowledge and power are recorded) they would be severely punished if they broke any orders of God during their stay on earth. They agreed. God gave them the “*Nafs Ammara*” or the animal instinct in man which tempts man to commit sins in addition to “*Nafs Lauama*” or the “Conscience” which they as angels already possessed and which draws man towards goodness and perfection (for greater details see Chapter 17: B-4).

Horus and Marduk led perfect lives for a while trying to teach goodness to mankind and set themselves up as models. But soon a very beautiful married Persian woman named “Bedhas” enticed them with her charms and got them to take wine, murder her husband and worship an idol before she would permit them to commit adultery with her. They fell for her charms and after taking wine they murdered her husband and committed idolatry before she permitted them to commit adultery (pages 133-134, Vol. I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Now they realised that they were doomed. So they went running to Prophet Enoch requesting him to plead for them before God. Enoch told them that he would pray for them on the coming Jumma or Sabbath Friday. But his prayers went unanswered. So he told the angels

that he would pray for them again during the next Jumma or Sabbath Friday. On the second Sabbath Friday he was informed that a choice was given to the two fallen angels of either receiving punishment on earth or on the Day of Judgment. They preferred to be punished on earth because the punishment on earth would eventually have an end to it, whilst the punishment on the Day of Judgment would be eternal.

So their punishment was that they were hung upside down in an underground well tied with chains and are to be whipped continuously until this earth is totally destroyed by some catastrophe into fragments and ashes. They would remain alive till the destruction of this earth. This underground chamber is in a concealed cave with a shaft or passage with numerous steps leading deep into the bowels of the earth at a place called "Babel" (Pages 134-136, Vol. I, *ibid*).

Human beings will only be able to contact them very occasionally *i.e.* say once in hundreds of years and that also with a great amount of troubles, obstacles and dangers to life. Whenever contacted the fallen angels could teach them Magic and all sciences they wanted to know after warning them that they would lose their souls and be severely punished (pages 137-139, Vol. I, *ibid*).

#### **D. The Deluge**

Eventually mankind became so wicked that instead of worshipping God they took to idolatry. They completely violated the sanctity of sexual morals and marriage and prided themselves on their broadmindedness and freedom. Every man and woman indulged in any sexual abuse that gave pleasure. The present world conditions particularly in the Western civilization are similar.

So angry was God at all this that He destroyed every living thing on the face of the earth by drowning them in a great deluge during 2370 B.C. save and except Noah, his wife, his three believing sons and their three wives and a few pairs of animals *i.e.* those who went into the Ark were saved (Genesis 7: 7-9).



Thus mankind started afresh to inhabit the earth through the three sons of Noah (Genesis 9: 1, 7, 18-19). Everybody in the new generations were warned of the terrible devastation that God Almighty had perpetrated upon them for their disobedience, sexual indulgence and idolatry.

God promised that He would never again destroy the whole of mankind by water (Genesis 9: 9-17). This time the warning is that the wicked disobedient mankind will be destroyed by Fire—a clear indication towards a Nuclear Holocaust!





## *Chapter 5*

# Nimrod—The Genius Mastermind



### **A. The curse of Noah**

After the great deluge it so happened that one day Noah had got drunk, and his clothes fell off his body (Genesis 9: 21). His son Ham, seeing the nakedness of his father made fun of it before his two elder brothers (Genesis 9: 22). When Noah came to know of it, he cursed Ham and his children (Genesis 9: 24-26).

The cursed Ham gave birth to a number of sons. One of them was Cush (Genesis 10: 6). Just before his death Cush took a beautiful young virgin named Semiramis for a wife. He died on the very next day after he had consummated his marriage with Semiramis, who thus became pregnant. Approximately nine months later in or about 2275 B.C. Semiramis gave birth to a posthumous son, now famous under the title of Nimrod. She claimed that she was a virgin and that Nimrod was a divine child born without any human contact. The Holy Bible refutes this false claim as follows:

“And Cush, begat Nimrod: he began to be a mighty one in the earth”  
(Genesis 10: 8).

Thus it is observed that Nimrod was the great-grandson of Noah through his cursed son Ham!

In all his three hundred and fifty years after the deluge, Noah did not make himself king over his human family, even though he was the

family head of the whole human race (Genesis 9: 28). The reason apparently was that he looked upon the true God as his Ruler and King. Therefore, so long as Noah was alive, no question arose of any one being made a king over the human race.

Noah died in 2020 B.C. But Nimrod forcibly made himself the first king of mankind after the deluge from about 2250 B.C. or about 230 years before the death of Noah. This is confirmed by the extensive research carried out by the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society of Pennsylvania under the title of “*Babylon the Great Has Fallen God’s Kingdom Rules*”.

The first edition of 1963 records as follows on page 23:

“Nimrod, the first king reported among mankind, was not ‘king by the grace of God’. We can see this from the purpose for which his capital city (Babylon) was built and from the attitude God took towards it”.

## **B. The meaning of Nimrod**

Nimrod (or in Hebrew “Na-marood”) has been derived from the Hebrew verb “Marad” which means “To rebel”.

In this case the name “Namarood” would be actually the first person, plural number of the verb “Marad” in the jussive mood and would mean “We will rebel” or “Let us rebel” (page 21, *Babylon the Great Has Fallen! God’s Kingdom Rules*).

On page 22 of *ibid* is the following:

“If the name Nimrod is thus taken from the verb meaning to rebel, then this name must have been given to this man after he had started out on his rebellious course; it was not the name given to him at birth. But regardless of the exact meanings of his name, Nimrod displayed rebellion against Jehovah God in starting world politics and setting himself up as king. Babylon, his capital, thus was a kingdom in rebellion against God, the Universal Sovereign. So from her very start she was no part of the Universal organisation of

Jehovah God, and Babylon never became part of it later on. She was never a kingdom of God. She never departed from her opposition to God”.

True to his title of “Nimrod”, this grandson of the cursed Ham, has become the source and origin of wickedness, rebellion and blasphemy throughout the earth.

### C. The popularity of Nimrod

The Encyclopedia Britannica, Volume 24, edition of 1911, page 617, under Semiramis gives the following information:

“Of this we already have evidence in (the ancient Greek historian) Herodotus, who ascribes to her the banks that confined the Euphrates (i. 184) and knows her name as borne by a gate of Babylon (iii. 155) ... according to the legends, in her birth as well as in her disappearance from earth, Semiramis appears as a goddess, the daughter of the fish-goddess Atargatis, and herself connected with the doves of Ishtar or Astarte” (see also Hislop’s *“The Two Babylons”*, pages 86 and 270).

Nimrod was brought up by Semiramis, an exceptionally clever woman, as a spoilt son, a mother’s darling. He was himself very intelligent, a great leader of men, a fearless hunter, a mighty fighter in rebellion against the One True God (Genesis 10: 8-10).

Later as he grew up into a fine specimen of the radiance of youth, his jealous mother, the beautiful queen Semiramis made him her husband also. Thus Semiramis was both mother and wife of Nimrod! On page 356 of *“The Golden Bough”* by Sir James George Frazer—Abridged Edition published in 1950 by Macmillan & Co. Ltd., London, it is recorded as follows:

“The worship of the Great Mother of gods and her lover or son was very popular under the Roman Empire. Inscriptions prove that the two received divine honours ... not only in Italy and especially at Rome, but also in the provinces, particularly in Africa, Spain, Portugal, France, Germany and Bulgaria. *Their worship survived the*

*establishment of Christianity by Constantine*; for Symachus records the recurrence of the festival of the Great Mother and in the days of Augustine her effeminate priests still paraded the streets and squares of Carthage ...”

It was the mother and son who discovered the manufacture of burnt clay bricks and cuneiform clay tablets which were burnt after being written on to make permanent records and established the first empire in the world with several other important and beautiful cities (Genesis 10: 10-11). Nimrod’s popularity as the first King of Mankind, his clever administration at the guidance of his mother-wife, and his novel ideas (such as even shooting and killing God Almighty) knew no bounds as will be seen later.

On page 22 of the research “*Babylon the Great has Fallen!*” one reads that ancient Jewish historians have come to the finding that it was Nimrod who excited mankind to affront and condemn God. He persuaded them that their success in building Babel (“Bab” means gate or gateway whilst “El” means “the perfection”. Therefore Babel stands for the gateway to success, progress, and perfection) with its bridge across the Euphrates, its palaces, temples and its hanging gardens were not the work of God but that these achievements were the work of mankind by their intelligence, under his guidance and leadership.

Hence God was something to be ignored and for whom no necessity existed. The people should rely only upon the strength of their arms and their skill if they wanted success in life. It was defeatism and cowardice to put the blame for ones shortcomings on God who did not come into the picture.

This has become the genesis on which all atheistic religions have since been based!

Anybody who refused to accept Nimrod was tortured and if he still dissented then he was put to death. Accordingly a reign of tyranny was started against the believers in the God of Noah. Nimrod thus wiped out all opposition to his Anti-God teachings.

### **D. Source of Nimrod's dynamic Power and knowledge**

Christian Churches and the learned European Scholars have carried out extensive researches, a few of which are listed below:

1. “*Babylon The Great Has Fallen!—God’s Kingdom Rules*,” by Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society of Pennsylvania published in 1963.
2. “*The Two Babylons*” by The Rev. Alexander Hislop, published in 1953.
3. “*The Golden Bough*” by Sir James George Frazer—published 1950 by Macmillan & Co. Ltd., London.

From these it appears that throughout the universe Nimrod is the source of mischief and wickedness, which did not die with him but is still continuing to influence many millions all over the world although over four thousand years have passed since. One does feel dumbfounded and puzzled as to how this could have been possible!

Nimrod was born in 2275 B.C. about 95 years after the deluge. This was certainly a very short period for mankind *i.e.* members of Noah’s family to acquire the vast knowledge that the genius Nimrod has displayed *viz*:

1. The first use of irrigation in the valleys of the Tigris and Euphrates for agriculture (This knowledge, of building dams and digging canals was carried to Egypt from here).
2. The first extraction of copper.
3. The invention of manufacture of bronze.
4. Invention of sexagesimal system which divides a circle into 360 degrees, a degree into 60 minutes and a minute into 60 seconds.
5. The division of the day into 24 hours, each hour to consist of 60 minutes divided into 60 seconds. The new date commences from midnight instead of “Sun Set” as the time of Sun Set varied

from day to day, hence this was not a scientific method according to Nimrod.

6. Astronomy.
7. The twelve constellations of the Zodiac.
8. The calculation of the solar year comprising 365 days, 5 hours, 49 minutes and 30 seconds. (These ideas were taken to Egypt from here).
9. The division of the solar year into twelve months according to the twelve constellations of the Zodiac.
10. The calculation of the Horoscope based upon the Zodiac.
11. Astrology, palmistry and forecasting.
12. Making burnt clay bricks for buildings.
13. Mathematical calculations for large buildings, bridges, temples, palaces, and dams.
14. Cuneiform Tablets.
15. Magic, the art of Witchcraft *i.e.* how to influence people without their realising this fact.
16. The alteration of the commencement of the week from Saturday to “Dies Solis” or Sun-god’s day and the naming of the days after the various deities *i.e.* Sun’s day, Moon’s day *etc.*

These and so many other notions and the prowess, which he displayed during his life, fill one with wonder and amazement as to how he could possibly have acquired so much knowledge, out of practically nothing. The high degree of perfection is evident from the fact that in these 4,000 years we have not advanced much further on many aspects of these subjects beyond what he has disclosed—especially in the calculation of the Solar Year, the method of computing and dividing days, hours, minutes, the twelve Zodiacal constellations, Astrology, Palmistry, and the Horoscope for forecasting.



It was Nimrod, who calculated and showed the “Precession of Equinox” with the same accuracy as done by astronomers of today, at “fifty second nine thirds and three fourths of a third of a degree” in a year, and by such calculation it can be computed that it takes the sun 2,150 years to retrograde out of one sign, of the Zodiac into another. Hence he calculated the precession of equinox during his period was in the constellation of Aries *i.e.* from 2537 B.C. to 388 B.C. The people who went to Egypt from the Tower of Babel carried this knowledge with them and the old records of Egypt show this calculation by their priests.

Whilst on such subjects as “Magic”, “Witchcraft” and how to influence other people to his ways of thought without their being aware of it or being able to get out of the spell cast, we the human race are still today far, far behind the powers he had attained and displayed.

Although four thousand years have gone by yet the research by the Christian Church and European Scholars show that many millions of people are still under his magical spell and influence due to which they are following mechanically his religious teachings without even realising what they are doing!

This is very vividly brought out in the Holy Bible as:

“Babylon ... made *all The Earth* drunken: the nations have drunken her wine; therefore the nations are *Mad*” (Jeremiah 51: 7).

The question is how he acquired such wondrous knowledge. The answer is found in the following books of research:

1. “*Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*” written between 1261 and 1300 A.H. by Abul Mohsin Hasan Alvi Kakori, son of martyr Abul Hasan Hussain Alvi. The Fourth Edition was published in two volumes by Munshi Navalkishore, Lucknow in Urdu in 1342 A.H. / March 1924.
2. “*Ashan ul Muwaiz*” written by Abdul Wahed, son of Muhammad Mogni, assisted by Khan Bahadur Hakim Md.

Ahsanullah. The original was written in Persian and completed in the year 1265 A.H. / 1848 A.D. Translated into Urdu by Syed Bakr Hussain Khan, son of Syed Ali Naqi Khan. Seventh Edition published by Munshi Navalkishore, Lucknow in 1926 in two volumes.

There are several such researches. They all give the same basic information although derived independently from different sources.

Semiramis and Nimrod acquired their vast and intricate knowledge in so short a time from Horus and Marduk, the two fallen angels, who are hanging suspended in the underground well at Babel (pages 134-139, Vol. I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

That is the reason why his “Magical” influence has been so very great that even though four thousand years have passed, yet the Hypnotic “Spell” cast by him on mankind, which he had learnt from these two fallen angels, is still so very powerful and long-lasting that once a person entered Nimrodism by “Baptism” which is a ceremony of bathing in the waters (for greater detail see Chapter 5: F-4), even if belonging to a Godly faith would soon find themselves ensnared into it. Their children, generation after generation, would automatically continue to follow and observe Nimrod’s teachings and adore him as “The only begotten son of god born of the great virgin mother”. In spite of all efforts mankind still finds it extremely difficult to divest itself of the absurd, wicked and blasphemous religion of Nimrod. Once they have been “Baptised” they thus come so much under the influence of his magical spell on the “Baptised” even after all these four thousand years that they still feel helpless to break away from it. Therefore, they refuse to listen to reason as if enchanted. It is quite apparent to an outside observer that they are under some kind of an intoxication or spell which mars their free thinking. The millions of pagans, who came under the influence of his religion, have carried with them Nimrodism. All over the world, ever since God Almighty broke up the unity of mankind at the tower of Babel, and scattered them all over the earth. Due to the change of languages the names of this religion have altered

from place to place. But the religion of Nimrod and his principles have remained constant for thousands of years even where there was no contact between one group of people and another for thousands of years *e.g.* the natives of Central America and Peru. When the European discoverers first landed in Central America they found that their religion was being already followed by the natives.

The Pagan Europeans had been converted from Baalism to Mithraism with the spread of the Roman Empire from Asia Minor to England. Both these religions had their origin in Nimrod, hence in principle they were identical. The Roman Emperor Constantine has continued “Nimrodism” but under a new name coined by him. This religion has spread throughout Europe according to the research of the Church and the European Scholars.

The last of the religious books briefly refers to the source of Nimrod's vast knowledge and magical powers as follows:

“... but the devils (this is a reference to King Nimrod, Queen Semiramis and their priests of the temple tower of Babel) disbelieved (in God’s teachings), teaching mankind magic and that which was revealed (*i.e.* Astrology, Zodiac, Horoscope, Forecasting *etc.*) to the two angels *In Babel*, Horus (in Arabic Harut) and Marduk or Merodach (in Arabic Marut). Nor did they (the two angels) teach it to anyone till they had said: Beware we (*i.e.* our knowledge) are a temptation, therefore disbelieve not (in the guidance of Allah). And from these two (fallen angels, certain) people learnt that (black magic) by which they cause division between man and wife (or equally between mankind in general and the right path of Allah); but they injure thereby no-one save to that extent as Allah tolerates. And they thereby learn that (*i.e.* magic and the religious principles of Nimrod) which harmeth them and profiteth them not. And surely they do know that he who trafficketh therein will have no (happy) portion in the Hereafter: and surely evil is the price for which they sell their souls, if they but knew” (Qur’an 2: 102).

This brief quotation from the Qur’an makes it apparent that:

1. Nimrod chose this site for his capital and named it Babel (or The Gateway to progress, success and perfection) because it was here that he acquired from the two fallen angels his vastly superior knowledge which has remained more or less the same for the past 4,000 years defying further developments in many fields of scientific knowledge. As far as the art of “Black Magic” is concerned it is almost dead and very little of it is left because the more important and very powerful “charm” practised by Nimrod was not disclosed by him to mankind. This was his most powerful secret weapon. It has disappeared with him. This is better appreciated when it is realised that in all other fields, scientists have acquired further knowledge hundreds of times more in the last two centuries but their learning and advancement have not been able to improve much upon what was disclosed by Nimrod especially as far as it concerns the calculations of a Day, Hours, Minutes, Solar Year, a circle, Astrology, Zodiacal calculations, Horoscope, Forecasting and Black Magic. These seem to be complete in themselves. They defy further new theories to outdate what Nimrod taught as far back as four millennia ago.
2. In honour of these two angels, his tutors, Nimrod built in Babylon, the temple to Marduk a little to the south of the tower of Babel whilst the group that went to Egypt built temples in honour of Horus, whom they called the “only begotten son of God”.

As these angels Marduk and Horus could only be contacted once in hundreds of years and that also after undergoing great trials, dangers and difficulties, so they could not be encountered by most people, hence their names have been identified with that of Nimrod, resulting in further deification of this master-mind.

## E. Some of Nimrod's Magical Performances

Anybody acquiring knowledge from the two fallen angels Horus and Marduk could perform several magical feats, e.g.:

By throwing a grain of wheat on the ground they could produce bread by ordering: "Become a fully grown plant, flower, grow into sheaves of wheat, ripen, then break, be crushed into flour, be mixed with water, be kneaded, become baked bread and be served on a plate ready to eat". The moment they would stop speaking all this would have taken place before the eyes of all watchers and the grain of wheat would have multiplied into several thousands of grains and be made into bread and be served on a plate (page 137, Vol. I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Likewise if they wanted two people to separate they could do that in a matter of seconds and thus breed hatred and enmity amongst the best of friends or even between a husband and wife.

They could also attract any one they liked and get him to praise and honour them, thereby making the world around them acclaim all their actions as wondrous deeds, even though they were in the wrong and their deeds were evil.

Now Nimrod was not just one of these ordinary students of Horus and Marduk. He was the greatest magician the world has ever known.

It is not possible after four thousand years to give in full details all the magical powers of King Nimrod, save and except a few of those which have been preserved by History.

On page 140 Vol. I, "*Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*" are described some of the magical gadgets set up by King Nimrod, which are unique inasmuch as nobody else has made anything similar:

### 1. The magical Gate Keeper

He had built a "Magical gate keeper". If anyone would enter the city with any thoughts in his mind to do any harm to the city or its king or

people it would immediately raise an alarm and the spy or enemy would be caught by the city guards posted at the gates for this purpose. Thus it was impossible for any surprise attack to be made from within by enemy agents.

## **2. The magical Radar Alarm**

He had fitted on the top of the tower of “Babel” a magical contraption looking like a goose. If any army of men would approach the city from any direction, this “Magical goose” would give the alarm siren, indicating the direction from which they were coming even when they were several miles away (say 15 or 20 miles away). Because this goose did not give the alarm of an approaching enemy army, Belshazzar did not believe in the interpretations of Daniel of the words which were written by a hand, which appeared miraculously without any body, on the wall of his banquet hall as if it was writing on sand. The words were “*Mene, Mene, Tekel, Upharsin*” which meant:

*Mene*: God hath numbered thy kingdom and finished it.

*Mene*: The second repetition meant it would take place immediately.

*Tekel*: Thou art weighed in the balance and art found wanting.

*Upharsin*: Thy kingdom is divided and given to the Medes and Persians.

The real reason why the vibrations of the approaching army were not given, was because Darius was well aware of this magical alarm and the magical gate keeper. He came with his army of Persians and Medes floating down the Euphrates River which flowed through Babylon, so that there were no vibrations, not even the least sound was made, because even oars were not used. Nobody in Babylon thus came to know until Darius and his army had floated into the middle of the feasting city which was immediately captured and Belshazzar killed (Daniel 5: 1-31).

### **3. The magical Aerovision Mirror**

Those inhabitants of Babel whose relatives had gone to other towns or far-off places and of whom there had been no news for some months, could go before Nimrod's "Magical Mirror" and ask about the current condition of their relative. They would immediately see the person concerned in the mirror and what he was doing at that moment. They could know the current condition of his health, and where he was staying and what he was doing!

### **4. The magical Finder**

When something was stolen and could not be traced or the thief could not be caught they could go to the "Magical drum". If you asked your question and played the drum, you would get the drum to answer where the stolen property was hidden, the name, full description, the type and colour of clothes being worn by the thief and where he was hiding at the moment *etc.*, thus there was no possibility of escape for the criminal.

### **5. The magical Tank of Justice**

If it was not possible to find out by the normal procedure of justice as to who was the person at fault and who was innocent, the disputants were taken to the "Magical Tank of Justice". Both parties were made to enter this tank. Whosoever was innocent the water would come only up to his waist. But the person at fault would be drowned and had no means of escape unless he confessed his guilt immediately.

### **6. The magical City Models**

Nimrod had built small models of each city in his empire. If any city revolted against his authority all he did was to flood this model city with water and the actual city concerned, even though hundreds of miles away, would immediately be submerged in water by his magical

powers.

## **7. The magical Well of Deification and Eternal Life**

Nimrod had made a magical well in an underground chamber, possibly in a cave. This was opened only once a year on the night of 24/25th December, celebrating the birth of King Nimrod as the only begotten son of Sun god through the great virgin mother.

### **(a) The principles relating to the birth of a Divine Son**

Legends relating to Nimrod's miraculous birth are based upon Zodiacal calculations. In the last week of December on a clear night one sees above his head the three bright stars (called the three kings) of the belt of Orion pointing to the East. Soon rises the star Sirius (called the Herald of the sun-god or the Messianic star) the brightest of all the host of heaven. It is followed by the rising of the constellation of Virgo or "virgin" at about midnight, which announces the birth of the son of sun-god by the virgin queen of the heavens. Daylight hours in the Northern hemisphere reach their minimum on the 24th December, which was taken to indicate that the rule of the power of "Sun god" had reached its minimum. Hence if a "son" is born at midnight of 24th/25th December then each day as he will grow bigger little by little so also would he cause the daylight to increase each day little by little from this date.

This is interpreted by the Pagans to mean that as the son of sun-god starts growing bigger from this moment, so also he is chasing away bit by bit the evil darkness from the wicked world, which he has come to save by the sacrifice of his precious and sacred life.

### **(b) The celebration of the birth of the Divine Son**

These are the bases of the belief that Nimrod or Baal or Mithra *etc.* was accordingly born of a virgin mother at midnight on 24th/25th December in cave. His birth is celebrated at midnight and as soon as



midnight of 24th/25th December was reached, a Light used to be lighted and bells of joy rung and music commenced and everybody would exclaim with joy:

“The Virgin has brought forth, the light is waxing” and start singing hymns in praise of “Sun-god” for the favour of “This only begotten and beloved son come to redeem the sinners”.

The Messianic star (*i.e.* Sirius) announced the birth of “son of god” and the three kings from afar (the three stars in Orion’s belt) paid homage to him (by pointing towards the East).

From this origin has spread all over the earth the theory of the birth of “the only begotten son of the “Sun-god”.

### **(c) The holy communion and sacramental food and drink**

On this day everyone would fast for the whole day and many would even take a purgative so that all impurity (food) in the body would come out and the body could thus be cleansed and emptied.

Anyone coming to this great annual feast of the “Nativity of the Sun” would bring some food or drink to drop into this well before sitting down to pray.

Nimrod would appear on the magical well of “Eternal Life” with a light in his hand, dressed in the red-hooded robes of “Santa Claus” as soon as the constellation of “Virgo” arose at midnight. The bells would ring and the music commenced. Everyone would stand up and exclaim joyously:

“The virgin has brought forth the only begotten son of god, now the light and power of the sun has commenced to increase”.

A dry piece of log known as the “Yule log” would be placed there. Nimrod by the power of magic would cause a green tree to sprout out laden with gifts for those present. The dead Yule log indicated that goodness and piety had died amongst mankind. The sprouting of a fresh green tree signified the birth of a saviour, who would infuse new

life into mankind. The gifts on the tree indicated that Nimrod was a gift from God to save the wicked. This is the origin of the Santa Claus, Xmas gifts and the Christmas tree.

Nimrod would announce: "I am the oblation, I am the sacrifice, I am the ancestral offering". Thus saying he would bless the consecrated food and drink from the well of Eternal Life which would mainly consist of Yule cakes, pork, goose flesh and wine and distribute it saying "Take this food, it is my flesh and take this wine, it is my blood and become the pure flesh and blood of the sinless deity, the only begotten son of God born of the great virgin mother, the queen of the heavens".

With this toast Of "*Waes Haeil*" (meaning "become well" or "become pure") they would start drinking. From it has come the word "*Wassail*" which has become equivalent with "to drink liquor". Toasting good wishes over drinks has come from this origin.

The holly wreath with its red and green colours and even the Mistletoe are sex symbols representing propagation of life. To kiss members of the opposite sex under them meant that the people were placing themselves under the spell of the deity of love *i.e.* "Cupid". This honour was bestowed upon Nimrod because of his ever-readiness to make love to any and every beautiful girl, he set his eyes upon. Thus he became the sweet-heart of all of them including his own mother who became his wife. St. Valentine is none other than the mighty hunter, Nimrod! Valentine's Day is celebrated on the 14th February to send tidings of love to one's sweet-heart.

As many as received Nimrod or believed in his teachings to such he taught magic and gave them powers to become "sons of god" whereby they believed they would attain eternal bliss and happiness.

Everyone would then go to this magical well of "Eternal Life" and ask for whatever extra helping of food or drink they liked. This food and drink would magically be served on plates and in glasses to them. Those eating and drinking them were filled with the magical feeling of rejuvenation and good health. Hence the "Well of Eternal Life".

After enjoying themselves the whole night, at the time of leaving they would ask the magical well to return the food or drinks they had dropped when they had come in. The well would return the very same food and drinks, not anything else! This was the sacred food which they preserved and gave to the sick or dying during the year which they believed would make them the pure and sinless deity, the only begotten son of god, thereby attaining *eternal happiness in the next life in the son of god*.

That this teaching of Nimrod has spread all over the world will be seen from the following studies:

“*The Golden Bough*” by James G. Frazer reads:

On page 488:

“Of all the modes of purification adopted on these occasions none perhaps brings out the sacramental virtue of the rite so clearly as the Creek and Seminole practice of taking a purgative before swallowing the new corn. The intention is thereby to prevent the sacred food from being polluted by contact with common food in the stomach of the eater. For the same reasons Catholics partake of the Eucharist fasting”.

“The custom of eating bread sacramentally as the body of god was practised by the Aztecs before the discovery and conquest of Mexico by the Spaniards”.

On page 490:

“The doctrine of transubstantiation, or the magical conversion of bread into flesh, was also familiar to the Aryans of ancient India long before the spread and even the rise of Christianity. The Brahmins taught that the rice-cakes offered in sacrifice were substitutes for human beings, and that they were actually converted into the real bodies of men by the manipulation of the priests. We read that “when it (the rice-cake) still consists of rice-meal, it is the hair. When he pours water on it, it becomes skin. When he mixes it, it becomes flesh: for then it becomes consistent; and consistent also is the flesh. When it is baked, it becomes the bones: for then it

becomes somewhat hard; and hard is the bone. And when he is about to take it off (the fire) and sprinkles it with butter, he changes it into marrow. This is the completeness which they call the, five-fold animal sacrifice”.

“Now, too, we can perfectly understand why on the day of their solemn communion with the deity the Mexicans refused to eat any other food than the consecrated bread which they revered as the very flesh and bones of their god, and why up till noon they might drink nothing at all, not even water. They feared no doubt to defile the portion of god in their stomachs by contact with common things. A similar pious fear led the Creek and Seminole Indians, as we saw, to adopt the more thoroughgoing expedient of rinsing out their bodies by a strong purgative before they dared to partake of the sacrament of first fruits”.

In Chapter 6 of “*Primitive Folk*” by Elie Reculus one reads:

“In the truly orthodox conception of sacrifice, the consecrated offering be it man, woman or virgin, lamb or heifer, cock or dove, represents the deity himself”.

In the “*Bhagwat Gita*,” Lord Krishna says:

“I am the oblation, I am the sacrifice, I am the ancestral offering”.

Thus the “Holy Communion” or the ancient “Eucharistic Ceremony” which was taught by Nimrod at the tower of “Babel” was being observed by his worshippers right from India and China in the East to Mexico and Peru in the West from thousands of years before the birth of Jesus.

## **8. The magical Tree of Shade**

Nimrod had a tree which would give shade to 100,000 people but the moment there was even one person more than 100,000 then it would give shade to not even a single person, and the full congregation would come under the direct rays of the sun.

In volume 1 of *Cyclopaedia* by M. Clintock and Strong (Published

in the year 1891), page 596 a, there is the following statement:

“More thorough destruction than that which has overtaken Babylon cannot well be conceived. Rich (Claudius J. Rich the English traveller in 1811 had visited the site of Babylon and he has recorded his findings in a book published in England in 1815 under the title of “*Narrative of a Journey to the site of Babylon in 1811*”) was unable to discover any traces of its vast walls, ... ‘On its ruins,’ says he, ‘there is not a single tree growing, except an old one,’ which only serves to make the desolation more apparent. Ruins like those of Babylon, composed of rubbish impregnated with nitre, cannot be cultivated”.

One is tempted to ask: Is this the magical tree of Nimrod, which Rich had seen in 1811 during his visit to Babylon? It can only be proved by an actual experiment as to whether or not it gives shade to a hundred thousand people but to none if there are even one more than 100,000 people. If so then at least one of his eight recorded magical contraptions is still in existence. It would go a long way to convince the disbelieving world of today that there was something like magic and that Nimrod had tremendous mysterious powers. In the vicinity of this tree a vast treasure of old records on cuneiform tablets had been found giving the world a deeper insight into the works of this wonderful genius.

If such an experiment could prove this to be the magical tree of Nimrod, then one could at least consider that as long as this tree will remain in existence, the magical influence of the religion of Nimrod will prevail over the masses all over the world. Naturally then with this tree in existence the curse of God Almighty at the tower of Babel may remain upon mankind, dividing our unity, causing disputes, strife and wars.

The above idea is just one suggestion to find out what traces God may have left behind as a symbol of His curse on the tower of Babel. We do know that God does leave behind such traces as a reminder to mankind.

Babylon the Great with all its vast civilisation and culture has fallen

in such a complete manner that except for some mute signs all other traces of Babylon have been obliterated from the face of the earth save and except its mention in history and the disclosures from excavations.

That is what must eventually happen to Nimrod's religion as also to all those people that follow this religion. They will either be destroyed leaving mute traces in history or if they want to save themselves they have to surrender to the will of God Almighty. Therefore, all those who are under the magical influence of this religion must realise that one day they will be completely destroyed in such a horrible manner that no trace of their existence may be found except perhaps a few mute tokens of evidence which would provide the records for the pages of history, that such and such a civilisation had once existed. That is the danger we must not only fear but also have the intelligence to evolve a method of confronting it and thereafter the courage to follow the decision to escape the disaster.

Hence the most important question before the human race today is:  
Was Babylon's religion destroyed with it?

Or

Has the religion survived to this day in the form of Greater Babylonia?

If so:

In what form is it?

Who are its adherents?

By what names do they call themselves?

Because it naturally follows that as completely and thoroughly as Babylon was destroyed in spite of all its advancements and achievements so also will the religion of Nimrod be destroyed and banished one day as thoroughly and completely from the face of the earth leaving behind perhaps a few minute and silent items of evidence of what disaster can also befall a scientifically advanced mankind for having incurred the wrath of the Almighty God.

The object of this research is to bring home to the world those significant facts which are not commonly known to the public at large.

But nevertheless they are frightfully important for the safety of mankind in general. It was due to Nimrod's religion that disaster after disaster have haunted mankind from time to time. On a number of such occasions a section of the human race has been wiped out in some sudden manner. Some of such examples are Sodom, Gomorrah, Pompeii, the destruction of the Egyptian Army by drowning in the Red Sea, the destruction of Jerusalem twice, Babylon, the Jews in Nazi Germany and so many other cases. With all our scientific weapons of mass destruction very nearly the whole of the human race can easily be wiped out. Hence the intelligent are forced seriously to meditate upon:

Scientific World—Whither Bound?

To

Self Destruction!

or

Is Universal Peace Possible?

If so-By what means ?

#### **F. Nimrodism—Atheistic Paganism**

Nimrod's exalted position of the infallible Pontifex Maximus encouraged the already proud and arrogant monarch completely to spite God and originate a rebellious religion; a challenge in which he could make a complete distortion of the True God, and His laws.

Nimrod was an absolute atheist. He could not reconcile himself to the existence of a Supreme Divine Being, Who could not be seen or contacted. Therefore for him such a "God" was not a necessity and could well be done away with. He based all his successes upon his knowledge, strength and ability. All failures were put down to inefficiency or improper calculation or insufficient experimentation or wrong concepts. Thus it was shirking of responsibility and cowardice for anyone to put the blame for failures on the Supreme God who did not even exist according to him. Many scientists of today have the same conviction.

## 1. The only begotten divine son born of the great virgin queen of the heavens

Nimrod was fully aware of the fact that the advanced consciousness of the primitive mankind created in individuals “*Hope*” and “*Fear*” to such an extent as is unknown to other animals. These two passions would make them bow, if not rightly guided, even to false deities created out of man’s mental conjecture.

The Sun plays a most important role in human lives. It is something which can be seen, its heat felt, its rays light the universe by day. Besides it is-

- a. The giver of life, the vivifier and resurrector of the dead earth, the upbringer of vegetations.
- b. Its light drives away darkness (which is interpreted as the destroyer of the dark, unknown evil forces which cause fear) and destroys germs which are harmful to mankind.
- c. It gives universal benefit all over the earth without any distinction between man and beast, between good and evil, hence it is the just and logical ruler.

Taking advantage of this situation Nimrod, who was well versed in the different phases or aspects of the Sun in the Zodiac and the cause of seasons, started Sun-worship and based its ceremonies on asterical calculation representing the Sun as a triad or a three-faced god or three gods in one—*viz*:

- a. The Giver of life or The Creator.
- b. The Destroyer.
- c. The Just Ruler of the Universe.

This more or less fulfilled all the needs of the primitive intelligence of man.

When Nimrod and his mother Semiramis could display such



knowledge and magical powers described above, quite naturally his mother and he became the source of deity worship. Their claim that Semiramis was a virgin and had given birth to a divine son without any human contact gained so very much credence and popularity on account of the impossible feats performed by their magical powers that every house in his empire contained the pictures and images of their Great Virgin Queen Mother Semiramis with the divine child Nimrod in her arms (page 20, *"The Two Babylons"* by Hislop).

Thus started for the first time on the face of the earth the idol worship of the great "Virgin Queen of the Heavens, the Mother of god" with her "only begotten divine son of god" in her arms.

Therefore whatsoever Nimrod did, even when it was wrong or unjust, was acclaimed and praised by his courtiers as a great and wondrous deed.

He became the first living person on earth to be publicly acknowledged as "Infallible" *i.e.* the one who could do no wrong whatsoever his deeds might be. If he raped a young woman, she had to consider herself the luckiest girl on earth because she had had an association with the only begotten son of god. If he murdered anybody, the family were to think themselves blessed because the murdered man had been sacrificed on the altar for the appeasement of the angry god for the sins of the family, and now they had as a result of this sacrifice become blessed. Thus Nimrod was free to do whatever he pleased without any qualms, whether he committed crimes against man or beast.

Therefore, he was the first Sovereign Pontiff or Pontifex Maximus. The subsequent emperors and thereafter the heads of his religion have assumed this title and role.

When God's curse fell at the tower of Babel breaking up the unity of mankind and changing their language, the result was that the name of Nimrod, the only begotten son of Sun-god and Semiramis the virgin queen of the heavens became changed from place to place as this

religion spread from Babylon to the far corners of the earth as will be seen from the following chart:

NAME OF COUNTRY	ALLEGED VIRGIN MOTHER’S NAME	NAME OF ALLEGED SON OF GOD	SOME OF NIMROD’S UNIVERSALLY POPULAR TITLES
Babylon	Semiramis or Rhea or Astarte or Ishtar	Baal or Bacchus or Merodach or Tammuz or Nimrod	The only Begotten Son The only Mediator (between god and man)
Persia	Mother of god	Mithra	
Greece	Leto or Ceres or Irene	Apollo or Plutus	The Good Shepherd The Redeemer
Italy	Alcemne	Hercules	The Sin Bearer
Rome	Fortuna	Jupiter-puer	Well Beloved
Syria and Phrygia	Cybele	Adonis or Attis	Son The Healer
Egypt	Neith or Isis	Osiris or Horus	The Saviour (and figured as a lamb)
Scandinavia	Frigga	Balder	
Mexico, Peru and Central America	Chimalman	Quetzalcoatl	The Light Bringer The Lamented
India	Isi	Iswar	One
Asia Minor	Cybele	Deoius	The Deliverer The Liberator The Slain

It will, therefore, be observed from the above that the concept of a god incarnate, the son of a virgin mother which originated at the tower of Babel through Nimrod and Semiramis is common in all the above cases.

On pages 20 and 21, of “*The Two Babylons*” by the Rev. Alexander Hislop we find the undermentioned passages:

“The Babylonians in their popular religion, supremely worshipped a goddess mother and a son, who were represented in picture and in images as infant or child in his Mother’s arms. From Babylon, this worship of the mother and the child spread to the ends of the earth. In Egypt, the Mother and the child were worshipped under the names of Isis and Osiris. In India, even to this day as Isi and Iswara; in Asia, as Cybele and Deoius; in Pagan Rome as Fortuna and Jupiter-puer or Jupiter, the boy; in Greece as Ceres, the Great Mother, with the babe at her breast, or as Irene, the goddess of peace, with the boy Plutus in her arms; and even in Tibet, in China and Japan, the Jesuit missionaries were astonished to find the counterpart of the Madonna and her child as devoutly worshipped as in Papal Rome itself; Shing Moo, the Holy Mother in China being represented with a child in her arms, and a glory around her, exactly as if a Roman Catholic artist had been employed to set her up.

“The original of that mother, so widely worshipped, there is reason to believe, was Semiramis, already referred to, who, it is known, was worshipped by the Babylonians, and other eastern nations under the name of Rhea, the great goddess Mother”.

Certain feasts were celebrated connected with the only begotten divine son born of the virgin mother *viz*:

- a. The feast of the Nativity of the only begotten divine son born of the virgin mother on 25th December has already been covered earlier under the heading of “the Magical Well of Deification and Eternal Life”.
- b. The feast of Astarte or Ishtar; the queen of the heavens or the virgin goddess of spring and fruitfulness, was observed with the following objectives on the first Sunday after the full moon following the “Spring Equinox” *viz*:
  - a) Because the daylight in the northern hemisphere became greater day by day over the period of night it

was considered that the virgin became pregnant at the Spring Equinox with the divine child who was to be born nine months later on the 25th December. Hence the “Easter Eggs” to denote the immaculate conception for the birth of the only begotten divine son in the womb of the virgin Ishtar or queen Semiramis.

- b) Nimrod had foretold :-
  - i) He would meet with a violent death to save the wicked world.
  - ii) His death would be in an act of defence of his religion.
  - iii) By this sacrifice of his life he would become the lamented, the saviour for the sinners, the liberator, the deliverer, the sin bearer, the one mediator, the good shepherd, the lamb of the heavens who has come to be slain.
  - iv) He would be killed, *by the evil forces of darkness and illiteracy.*
- c) The Vernal Equinox occurred at that time when the sun in its elliptical revolution, as it passed the Equator, made the shape of a cross in the constellation of Aries or the “Lamb”. This was taken as the triumph of the sun-god, whose virgin queen had succeeded in rescuing her only begotten divine son, who had sacrificed his life to the powers of darkness to save humanity and to send him to heaven to look after his believers. Therefore, he became Aries or *the lamb of the Heavens*. This event is celebrated with hot cross buns; the round bun represents the sun and the cross on it as the magical sign made by the sun, which saved the saviour from the imprisonment of the forces of darkness.

To express his hate against this person who would be the cause of his death by violence, Nimrod used to abuse him as “a swine”. Accordingly to express his revenge in advance against this “would-be killer” he and his followers enjoyed swine flesh at all their feasts.

### **(a) The Babylonian Passion Play**

The legend of this great sacrifice of Nimrod is to be found in the cuneiform tablets dug up by the German excavators in 1903-1904 at Kalah Shargat, the site of the ancient Asshur, which was one of the ancient cities built and controlled by Nimrod.

“*The Quest*” of London dated January, 1922 has given the translation of these cuneiform tablets under the heading of “*The Babylonian Passion Play*” as follows:-

“Baal is taken prisoner.

“Baal is tried in the House on the Mount (the Hall of Justice).

“Baal is led away to the Mount.

“Together with Baal, a malefactor is led away and put to death. Another, who is also charged as a malefactor, is let go, thus not taken away with Baal.

“After Baal had gone to the Mount, the city breaks out into tumult, and fighting takes place in it.

“Baal’s clothes are carried away.

“A woman wipes away the heart's blood of Baal flowing from a drawn-out weapon (spear?)

“Baal goes down into the Mount away from sun and light, disappears from life, and is held fast in the Mount as in a prison.

“Guards watch Baal imprisoned in the stronghold of the Mount.

“A goddess sits with Baal: she comes to tend to him.

“They seek for Baal where he is held fast. In particular a weeping woman seeks for him at the ‘Gate of Burial’. When he is being

carried away she lamented: “O, my brother! O, my brother!

“Baal is again brought back to life (as the sun of spring), he comes again out of the Mount.

“His chief feast, the Babylonian New Year’s festival in March at the time of the spring equinox, is celebrated also as his triumph over the *Powers of Darkness* (cp. the creation hymn ‘Once when on high’ as the New Year’s festival hymn)”.

For the “*Powers of Darkness*” see Chapter 12: H, 1-11. This will give the readers a clearer idea on these theories.

## 2. The Sign Of The Cross

Nimrod won the title of “Tam-Muz” which means “Fire, the Perfector” from an incident which is described in detail in Chapter. 6: F. He threw the “Idol Breaker” into the fire for trying to teach that God is one and alone who has no form or equals. Thereby Nimrod presented to his followers that he was “Fire, the Perfector” or Tam-Muz. The initial letter of “Tam-Muz” was written in Hebrew script as an upright sign of the Cross and was pronounced as “Tau”. So the sign of the cross was the initial letter of the name of the Babylonian god “Tammuz” or Bacchus or Nimrod. Hence, the worship of the cross was the worship of “Tammuz” or Bacchus or Nimrod.

The Persian variety of Nimrodism was known as Mithraism. With the conquest of Babylon by the Persians and Medes in 539 B.C., Mithraism spread throughout the Middle East and Europe reaching the British Isles by 70 B.C. During this century a cross has been discovered in Ireland (page 90 of the “*Sources of Christianity*” by Khwaja Kamal-ud-din, published in 1924, printed by Unwin Brothers Ltd., London & Woking). On this cross is the effigy of Mithra with a Parthian Crown of a Persian prince on his head. From this relic it is clear that in Mithraism it was already preached that the divine son born of the virgin mother who had come to save sinners had been killed on a cross.

The death on the cross was thus a symbolic way of giving

expression to the idea that the only begotten son of the sun-god would meet with a violent death in the defence of his religion to become the saviour of his followers. Hence the sign of the cross was a symbol of their saviour, who would protect them from all harm.

The sign of the cross was, therefore, used as a sacred magical symbol to ward off evil, especially because Nimrod preached that after his divine sacrifice to save wicked humanity, he would be raised from the dead to the position of “The lamb of heaven” when the Sun crossed the Equator making the sign of the cross at the Spring Equinox.

On page 62 of the “*Sources of Christianity*” is the following statement:

“St. Jerome admits that Mithra and Baal were the same, and called the sons of the Lord”.

The upright sign of the cross thus became the symbol of safety and protection for the followers of Nimrod.

This worship of the sign of the cross which spread from Babylon is noted in “*New Light on the Most Ancient East*”, by Archaeologist V. Gordon Childe, pages 184-185 (edition of 1953), in Chapter IX entitled “Indian Civilization in the Third Millennium B.C.”. There you will read:

“The swastika and the cross, common on stamps and plaques, were religious or magical symbols as in Babylonia and Elam in the earliest prehistoric period, but preserve that character also in modern India as elsewhere”.

Says “*The Two Babylons*” (Hislop), on page 199 regarding the cross:

“It was worshipped in Mexico for ages before the Roman Catholic missionaries set foot there, large stone crosses being erected ...”

“The cross thus widely worshipped, or regarded as a sacred emblem, was the unique vocal symbol of Bacchus, the Babylonian Messiah, for he was represented with a head-band covered with

crosses ...”

“This symbol of the Babylonian god is revered at this day in all the wide wastes of Tartary (Asian and European location of Tatars), where Buddhism prevails, and the way in which it is represented among them forms a striking commentary on the language applied by Rome to the Cross”.

“The Cross”, says Colonel Wilford, in the *‘Asiatic Researches’*,

“... though not an object of worship among the Bud’has or Buddhists is a favourite emblem and device among them”.

On page 146 of “*Babylon the Great*” is a quotation from page 204 of “*The Two Babylons*”:

“... (in Christendom) the Tau, the sign of the Cross, the indisputable sign of Tammuz, the false Messiah, was everywhere substituted in its stead (instead of the Greek letter Chi or X as in Christos) ...”

The *Encyclopedia Americana* edition of 1929 Volume 8, page 238; under “Crosses and Crucifixes”, says:

“The Cross as a symbol dates back to an unknown antiquity. It was recognized in all countries throughout the world at all times. Before the present era the Buddhists, Brahmans, and Druids utilized the device. Seymour tells us: ‘The Druids considered that the long arm of the cross symbolized the way of life, the short arms the three conditions of the spirit world, equivalent to heaven, purgatory and hell’. With the ancient Egyptians the cross was a revered symbol. Their *ankh* (*crux ansata* or handled cross) represented life, and a perpendicular shaft with several arms at right angles (Nile cross) appears to have had some reference to fertility of crops. Five of their planet symbols were represented by a cross attached to a circle or part of a circle. Prescott says that when the first Europeans arrived in Mexico, to their surprise, they found ‘the cross’, the sacred emblem of their own faith, raised as an object of worship in the temples of Anahuac”.

In *Wilkinson*, Vol. I, page 376 we read:



“... Men as well as women wore earrings and they frequently had a small cross suspended to a necklace ... showing that it was largely in use as early as the fifteenth century before the Christian era”.

In *Crabb's Mythology*, page 163 you find:

“There is hardly a pagan tribe where the cross has not been found. The cross was worshipped by Pagan Celts long before the incarnation and death of Christ”.

In “*Indian Antiquities*” by Maurice, Vol. VI, page 49:

“It is a fact not less remarkable than well attested, that the Druids in their groves were accustomed to select the most stately and beautiful tree as an emblem of the Deity they adored, and having cut the side branches, they affixed two of the largest of them ... in such a manner that those branches extended on each like the arms of a man, and together with the body, presented the appearance of a HUGE CROSS, and on the bark, in several places, was also inscribed the letter Tau”.

The origin of the upright sign of the cross is therefore traced back to the Hebrew letter “Tau” which is the initial letter of “Tammuz” the title of Nimrod.

### 3. Trinity in unity

Nimrod based his religion on the following anti-God principles with the sun, himself and his mother as the three principal actors.

Thus the Babylonian god consisted of a triad of:

- a. Shamash (the Sun-god)
- b. Sin (the Moon-god or Nimrod or Baal or Tammuz)
- c. and Ishtar (goddess queen of the Zodiac or Semiramis or Rhea or the Great Virgin Mother).

For further proof see page 324 of “*Israel and Babylon*” by W. Landsdell Wordle.

In India in the ancient cave temples, the supreme Deity is represented by three heads on one body under the title of “*Eko Devah Trimurthi*” which means god the one with three faces or three gods in one god or trinity in unity.

This supreme deity is still worshipped. His name in India is Siva and he is:

- a. god of life or creator
- b. god of death or destroyer and
- c. god of administration or ruler of the universe *i.e.*, He is the Sun-god.

On pages 184-185 of “*New Light on the Most Ancient East*” (1953 edition) by Archaeologist V. Gordon Childe in Chapter IX entitled “Indian Civilisation in the Third Millennium B.C.” you will read:

“A ‘Seal’ from Mohenjodaro depicts a horned deity with three faces ... Siva”.

It will thus be seen that god consisting of a trinity in unity or three gods in one god has been in existence all over the known world from the third millennium B.C. and this strange theory had its origin in Nimrod of Babylon, as observed in the following quotation from pages 16-17 of “*The Two Babylons*” by the Rev. Hislop:

“So utterly idolatrous was the Babylonian recognition of the Divine Unity, that Jehovah, the Living God, severely condemned His own people for giving any countenance to it: ‘They that sanctify themselves, and purify themselves in the gardens behind one tree in the midst, eating swine’s flesh, and the abomination, and the mouse, shall be consumed together, saith the LORD’ (Isaiah 66: 17). In the unity of that one and only god of the Babylonians, there were three persons, and to symbolise that doctrine of the Trinity, they employed, as the discoveries of Layard prove, the equilateral triangle just as it is well known, the Church of Rome does to this day. In both cases such a comparison is most degrading to the King Eternal, and is fitted utterly to pervert the minds of those who

contemplate it, as if there was or could be any similitude between such a figure and Him who hath said, “To whom will ye liken God, and what likeness will ye compare unto Him ?” ...”

#### 4. Baptism

Nimrod preached that the son of the Sun-god was initiated into the religion by:

1. Facing the West (the point of sinking of the sun) and cursing the *Prince of Darkness* the evil.
2. To face the East (rising point of Sun or light) and to be baptised from the sacred fount of Alpheus and Peneus (*i.e.* Euphrates and Tigris) which according to mythology had the powers of cleaning the Augean Stables in one day for Hercules (King Augeas of Elis had stabled 3,000 oxen in these stables without their being cleaned for 30 years). Thus these sacred waters according to the teachings of Nimrod had the powers of removing instantly all the dirty black sins of mankind. The example that he set before his public to accept this theory was that dirty clothes become clean when washed with water and soap.

It, therefore, did not matter how heinous or atrocious the sins were, for they all would be washed away as soon as one was “Baptised” and the person immediately would become pure and clean. Thus started the system of Baptism by standing in waist-deep waters usually of a flowing river or a tank and pouring water on the head of the person from a receptacle. This form of purification has been prevalent amongst millions of Hindus in India and others throughout the world since more than 2,000 years before the birth of Jesus.

Mythology informs us that immediately this son of the Sun-god was baptised, the god of the heavens (Jupiter or the Sun-god) descended in a great light and announced to the whole world as under:

“This is my only begotten son in whom I am well pleased.”

Tertullian in his “*Our Sun-god*” has written on page 179 as follows:

“The Devil, whose business is to prevent the truth, mimics the exact circumstances of the Divine Sacraments in the Mysteries of Idols. He himself baptises some, that is to say, his believers and followers; he promises forgiveness of sins from the sacred fount and thereby initiates them into the religion of Mithra. Thus he marks the forehead of his own soldiers, thus he celebrates the oblation of bread, he brings in the symbol of resurrection: and wins the Crown with the sword”.

### **5. The twelve divine guides or apostles of the sun**

Nimrod, the great astronomer, and astrologer, traced the circular path followed by the Sun in the sky during the various seasons to complete the annual solar cycle. This is called the Zodiac, which he divided into twelve more or less regular portions or months, to be able to forecast more accurately what could best be grown in that particular period, what influence it would have upon plants, animals and even human beings. He claimed that each of these constellations of the Zodiac controlled and guided the lives, career, health, character, behaviour, marriage and destiny of that person, who was born during its corresponding period of influence.

He gave to each of these twelve guides or satellites of the Sun an appropriate name, sign and period of influence. The names have changed with the changes of languages but the principles have remained the same throughout these 4,000 years.

1. *Aries* symbolises the ram possessing formidable horns and guides the lives of those born between about 21st March and 19th April. The Babylonian New Year starts from this period.
2. *Taurus* is symbolised by a mighty bull and guides the lives of those born between about 20th April and 20th May.
3. *Gemini* is symbolised by a pair of twin children and guides the lives of those born between about 21st May and 21st June.

4. *Cancer* is symbolised by a crab and guides the lives of those born between about 22nd June and 22nd July.
5. *Leo* as the name implies is symbolised by a lion and guides the lives of those born between about 23rd July and 22nd August.
6. *Virgo* as the name implies is symbolised by a virgin and guides the lives of those born between about 23rd August and 22nd September.
7. *Libra* is symbolised by a pair of scales or a balance and guides the lives of those born between about 23rd September and 23rd October.
8. *Scorpio* as the name implies is symbolised by a scorpion or serpent with a poisoned tail and guides the lives of those born between about 24th October and 22nd November.
9. *Sagittarius* is symbolised by a centaur—a creature, whose upper half is that of a man and lower half that of a horse and who is shooting an arrow from his bow. It guides the lives of those born between about 23rd November and 21st December.
10. *Capricorn* is symbolised by a goat having the tail of a fish and guides the lives of those born between 22nd December and 20th January.
11. *Aquarius* is symbolised by a man pouring out a stream of water from a pitcher and guides the lives of those born between about 21st January and 19th February.
12. *Pisces* is symbolised by a pair of fishes and guides the lives of those born between about 20th February and 20th March.

The “Horoscope” had been developed from this basis with the exact position of the Sun, the Moon and the planets at the time of birth of an individual in relation to the Zodiacal sign under which he or she is born.

The system of the twelve months in the solar calendar year

therefore has its origin in these ancient theories.

This also is the origin of the twelve guides or apostles of the Sun worshippers.

Hence according to the mythology of Sun worshippers twelve guides or apostles or experts were a *sine qua non* for them.

All men cannot be the same, some have to be bad also. Hence the theory that one of these twelve guides or Apostles would be the source of traitors and betrayers of the faith and trust of others. Therefore, the killer of the only begotten son of Sun-god, the enemy of the Sun should be one of the twelve heavenly guides. This is the constellation of “Scorpio” or the serpent. The entry of the sun into this sign of the Zodiac causes its declination, hence this must be the traitor amongst the heavenly apostles who will betray the saviour.

From this has developed the mythological story of the betrayal of the only begotten son by one of the twelve divine heavenly guides.

It was for this reason that the serpent was treated as the Satan in the Zodiac or amongst the Apostles of the Sun-god.

The serpent and Satan have been identified as the same in many of the olden scriptures. Perhaps this even explains the reference of Satan coming in the form of a serpent to tempt Adam and Eve and to make them commit their first sin. Thus it was the serpent or Satan who robbed them of the bliss of the Garden of Eden (For details see Chapter 20: B, C and D).

## **6. The principles of Nimrodism**

1. The laws (of God) are a curse for mankind.
2. The laws (of goodness) are not the faith.
3. As the laws of God are very restrictive for the wicked, the man who undertakes upon himself the grave risks of upholding them, is like the cursed one, who has hanged himself from a

tree for his mistakes and failures by the very rules of the law he has been trying to observe.

4. Accordingly he taught: Do not tempt God by following His laws; otherwise He would judge and punish you for having broken His laws, which the people are unable to fulfil.
5. Hence it was safer and better not to acknowledge the laws of God and not to recognize even His existence at all so that there could be no question of God judging man by the laws that man has refused to recognise or abide by. Thus in his claim of infallibility, Nimrod considers himself even superior to God and thinks he is entitled to dictate to God on how man is to be treated and not judged by God in any manner because he has been declared “Infallible” by all mankind, who were still united and spoke one common language until this time as confirmed in Genesis 11: 1.
6. It was Nimrod, who taught that it was no longer necessary to follow any laws of goodness or to do any good deeds. Under such circumstances the world must of necessity become a place for doing only wicked and evil deeds.
7. About the spring equinox a heavenly messenger came and gave glad tidings to a virgin woman that without any human contact she was going to conceive a male child who was the “*Word*” or the son of the god of gods (*i.e.* Sun-god).
8. This “only beloved begotten son” was to be born during the winter solstice—*i.e.* about 25th December, in a cave or in an underground chamber.
9. This son of god was to spend a life of toil and was to sacrifice his life for the saving of mankind from the anger of god for their sins.
10. He was the Light-bringer, the Healer, the Sin-bearer, the Mediator, the Saviour and the Deliverer *etc.*

11. He would be vanquished by the “*Power of Darkness*” and descend into the captivity of the underground world or Hell. (see Chapter 6: I, J and K for who destroyed Nimrod).
12. He would rise again from the dead and become the Saviour of mankind.
13. He founded the communion of saints and temples or churches dedicated to the name of these sages.
14. His disciples had to be baptised to enter his religion.
15. One’s sins would be wiped out if one ate the sacramental meals of “Bread and Wine” which were the flesh and the blood of this “only begotten son of god” and hence when you eat the holy sacraments you become in flesh and blood the pure “son of god”, *i.e.* you become sinless.

Hence Nimrodism has no basis for the attainment of eternal life by doing good deeds according to the laws of God!

Since this genius had achieved all his successes through contemplation, meditation, magical powers and applied knowledge to produce inventions and results, he wanted to have groups of thinkers and meditators, the genius of humanity to assist him in furthering man’s material progress. He had them grouped according to their particular skills and knowledge *e.g.* the astronomers, the astrologers, the agricultural experts, the architects, the engineers, the chemists, the metallurgists *etc.* They were the elite of his society. He grouped them according to their special skills or knowledge. Both men and women were drafted. In order that they may be free all the time to concentrate upon further developments, they were prohibited from marrying or having any worldly connections. Their hair was shaved off from the scalps of their heads in a circular disc form leaving a fringe of hair all round. It was a replica of the round circular sun with its flames shooting out from its edge and is known as the clerical tonsure. This is the origin of the various monastic orders of the priests of “The Flaming Sun-god”,



each group being under a separate “temple” which became famous after the name of its sage or expert, who was thus raised to the status of a saint. This is the origin of the priest-class which is called Brahman in India.

From this has originated the use of temples dedicated to the particular sages or saints, which are ornamented on occasions with fruits, flowers, branches of trees, incense, lamps, and candles; votive offerings on recovery from illness; holy water; asylums; holy days and seasons, use of the calendars, blessings on the fields, sacerdotal vestments, the clerical tonsure, the praying before images, the wearing of the “Cross” in chains, round the neck as a charm to ward off evil and the ring given to a woman when she either marries or enters a nunnery is to indicate to her that she is willingly submitting herself to be chained henceforth in lifelong bondage and slavery either to her husband or to the deity as the case may be. Thus she reduces her status to that of a helpless slave for life and acknowledges herself an inferior creature who is deprived of the right of equality with her husband *i.e.* man. Prayers are to be said facing the East, the rising place of the Sun.

The following are quotations from pages 210 and 220 of “*The Two Babylons*” by the Rev. Hislop:

“Now, while Semiramis, the real original of the Chaldean Queen of Heaven, to whom the ‘unbloody sacrifice’ of the mass was first offered, was in her own person, as we have already seen, the very paragon of impurity, she at the same time affected the greatest fervour for that kind of sanctity which looks down with contempt on God’s holy ordinance of marriage. The Mysteries over which she presided were scenes of the rankest pollution, and yet the higher orders of the priesthood were bound to a life of celibacy as a life of peculiar and pre-eminent holiness. Strange though it may seem, yet the voice of antiquity assigns to that abandoned queen the invention of clerical celibacy, and that in the most stringent form. In some countries, as in Egypt, human nature asserted its rights, and though the general system, of Babylon was retained, the yoke of celibacy was abolished, and the priesthood were permitted to

marry. But every scholar knows that when the worship of Cybele, the Babylonian goddess, was introduced into Pagan Rome, it was introduced in its primitive form, with its celibate clergy”.

“The effects of its introduction were most disastrous. The records of all nations where priestly celibacy has been introduced have proved that instead of ministering to the purity of those condemned to it, it has only plunged them in the deepest pollution. The history of Tibet, and China, and Japan, where the Babylonian institute of priesthood has prevailed from time immemorial, bears testimony to the abominations that have flowed from it. The excesses committed by the celibate priests of Bacchus in Pagan Rome in their secret Mysteries, were such that the senate felt called upon to expel them from the bounds of the Roman Republic. In Papal Rome the same abominations have flowed from priestly celibacy, in connection with the corrupt and corrupting systems of the confessional, insomuch that all men who have examined the subject have been compelled to admire the amazing significance of the same divinely bestowed on it, both in a literal and figurative sense, ‘Babylon the Great, *The Mother of Harlots and Abominations of the earth*’.”

“These celibate priests have all a certain mark set upon them at their ordination; and that is the clerical tonsure”.

Monasteries have been in existence amongst the Sun-worshippers all over the world from times unknown. As seen above, these had their origin in Babylon. These included virgins in service of female deities and male ascetics. They never married and thus did not attach themselves to worldly ties. Hence they lived contrary to the rules of natural laws. Numerous books of reference can be quoted here, the most popular and well known being “*Our Sun god*” by Tertullian, page 179.

The distinction for a Sun-worshipper ascetic was that he would shave his hair from the scalp of his head in a circular disc to denote that he was carrying the regard and respect of the Sun on top of his head, the highest and most reverential place in the human body. This practice

was followed in Babylon, Arabia, Egypt, Pagan Rome, Persia, India, China and wherever Sun worship was practised.

A quotation from Herodotus lib. III, Chapter 8; p.115C is as follows:

“The Arabians acknowledge no other gods than Bacchus and Urania (*i.e.* Semiramis or Astarte or Ishtar, the Queen of Heaven), and they say that their hair was cut in the same manner as Bacchus’s is cut, now they cut it in a circular form, saving it round the temples”.

In the “*Two Babylons*” by the Rev. Hislop on pages 221-224 we find the following passages:

“Over all the world, where the traces of the Chaldean system are found, this tonsure or shaving of the head is always found along with it. The priests of Osiris, the Egyptian Bacchus, were always distinguished by the shaving of their heads. In Pagan Rome, in India, and even in China, the distinguishing mark of the Babylonian priesthood was the shaven head”.

“In the religion of the Babylonian Messiah this institution was in vogue from the earliest times. In that system there were monks and nuns in abundance. In Tibet and Japan, where the Chaldean system was early introduced, monasteries are still to be found, and with the same disastrous results to morals as in Papal Europe. In Scandinavia, the priestesses of Freya, who were generally kings’ daughters, whose duty it was to watch the sacred fire, and who were to perpetual virginity, were just an order of nuns. In Athens there were virgins maintained the public expense, who were strictly bound to single life. In Pagan Rome, the Vestal who had the same duty to perform as the priestesses of Freya, occupy a similar position. Even in Peru, during the reign of the Incas, the same system prevailed and showed so remarkable an analogy, as to indicate that the Vestals of Rome, the nuns of the Papacy, and Holy Virgins of Peru, must have sprung from a common origin. Thus does Prescott refer to the Peruvian nunneries: ‘Another singular analogy with Roman Catholic institutions is presented by the

Virgins of the sun, the elect, as they are called. These were young maidens dedicated to the service of the deity, who at a tender age were taken from their homes, and introduced into convents, they were placed under the care of certain elderly matrons, *mamaconas*, who had grown grey within their walls. It was their duty to watch over the sacred fire obtained at the Festival Raymi. From the moment they entered the establishment they were cut off from communication with the world, even with their own family and friends ... Woe to the unhappy maiden who was detected in an intrigue: by the stern law of the Incas she was to be buried alive.' This was precisely the fate of the Roman Vestal who was proved to have violated her vow. Neither in Peru, however, nor in Pagan Rome was the obligation to virginity so stringent as in the papacy. It was not perpetual, and therefore not so exceedingly demoralising. After a time, the nuns might be delivered from their confinement, and marry: from all hopes of which they are absolutely cut off in the Church of Rome. In all these cases, however, it is plain that the principles on which these institutions were founded were originally the same. 'One is astonished', adds Prescott, "to find so close a resemblance between the institutions of the American Indian, the ancient Roman, and the modern Catholic.'

Prescott finds it difficult to account for this resemblance: but the one little sentence from the prophet Jeremiah which was quoted at the commencement of this inquiry, accounts for it completely:

'Babylon hath been a golden cup in the *Lord's* hand, that hath made *All The Earth Drunken ...*' (Jeremiah 51: 7).

Under these Nimrodic teachings the doers of good deeds were to be looked down upon and shunned as people who were living in a wrong age and were thus out of date and had no place in his society. Sacramental feasts of the first fruit, corn, swine-flesh, goose, yule cakes and drinks would wipe away all sins, *i.e.* merriment, enjoyment, feasting, dancing and drunkenness were the means of wiping out the pin-pricks from one's conscience for sins committed thus making one immune even from feeling guilty for the heinous sins and reprehensible crimes committed!

Accordingly it was Nimrod, who invented the doctrine that by partaking of such foods and strong drinks which were the flesh and the blood of deity, one became the pure and sinless deity himself. Therefore all sins committed before are completely wiped away just as chalk writings on a slate are wiped away when rubbed with a wet piece of cloth. What could be more tempting to a person? Indeed, how very alluring these were for sinners, who wanted some kind of an excuse to believe in and have faith, thereon that their sins were forgiven and they were now safe from God's punishment for their sins by feastings, merriment, dancing and drunkenness? At least it killed their conscience and relieved them as long as they carried on with it night after night—it was great fun indeed! Hence millions have flocked to this religion for the past four thousand years!

## 7. Nimrod's ambitions

Nimrod's ambitions knew no bounds. Not only did he make himself the first king of mankind after the deluge but he also deified himself into the only begotten son of god, born at the winter solstice or the Nativity of the Sun, through the great virgin mother. He was thus the innocent lamb of the heavens—the god come in human form to save sinners.

As if this were not honour enough, he got himself deified into “god Himself” by calling himself “Trinity in Unity”. He got his subjects also to accept this theory.

Still not satisfied with even so much, he strove to set himself up as superior to God Himself, Whom he reduced in his teachings to:

- a. A secondary position and rank of having the dishonour to sit on the left hand of Nimrod on the day of judgment in front of the Universe. Hence God is in a lower position to Nimrod according to his teachings.
- b. The reason for his being honoured by sitting in the superior position to God Himself, *i.e.* on His right hand is that Nimrod

took on human bodily form and went through the tortures and trials of earthly life, which God Himself did not go through. Hence Nimrod's claim to superiority over God Himself!

- c. Because he had the actual experience of living an earthly life it follows that he had the necessary "knowledge" of how to conduct "Judgment" on human beings—he himself having been once a human being also!
- d. In these circumstances God Himself, being the inexperienced one, would helplessly as a mere puppet witness the "experienced and superior" Nimrod conducting the affairs of the Day of Judgment!
- e. When God, according to Nimrod, was something inferior, the question of the "Necessity of God being in existence" or His laws being followed did not even arise.
- f. Accordingly all followers of the laws of God and the doers of good deeds would be condemned by Nimrod the "Only begotten son" to hell for their small mistakes. Thus Nimrod converted God into the Merciless, the Unjust and the Cruel.
- g. Whilst the "baptised" sinners would all go straight to heaven for their faith alone.
- h. Good deeds were the curse with which the followers of God's laws were tempting God to punish them!

One would have thought that Nimrod had thus reached the limit of blasphemy and mockery of God, that human intelligence could ever conjecture, but no! Certainly not so, with Nimrod! He even raised himself to the "Infallible Pontifex Maximus" by trying to kill the Almighty God Himself about which we shall read later on (Chapter 6: G) to win the Biblical title of "A mighty hunter in rebellion against the Lord" (Genesis 10: 9).

Nimrod thus set himself up as superior to God in every conceivable way!

Is not all this the highest and the most wicked form of blasphemy that the human mind can ever conjecture against God Almighty, Who is All Love, All Justice and All Perfection? It is also an insult to His Majesty's Dignity, the Creator of all that is in the Heavens and all in the Earth and all in between them!

### **G. The curse of God on Nimrod according to the Holy Bible**

Having thus established his Pagan-atheistic religion with a wonderful empire of beautiful cities and palaces and stupendous feats, Nimrod built the most gorgeous temple called "Bab-el" which means "the Gate Way" to perfection and success.

He reached the height of his glory when this wonderful temple was successfully completed with numerous floors and several meditation rooms and prayer halls on each floor. This first skyscraper in the history of mankind was completed in 2239 B.C. God's curse fell upon mankind when this magnificent temple was put to anti-God worship. The curse broke up the unity of the entire human race. The people went to sleep speaking one common language but awoke the next morning speaking different languages! They did not understand one another. There was complete confusion and chaos. Disputes and misunderstanding arose as to what was being said by one group to the other. The natural result was separation and disunity. Groups speaking the same language gathered together. Nimrod and his group being the most powerful stayed on at Babylon. Each of the other language groups went in different directions and settled down in new countries.

The teachings of Nimrod accordingly spread all over the face of the earth. Only the names of the begotten son and his virgin mother became changed due to the changes in the language. But the principles of Sun-worship and its dates remained unaltered as it was based upon the different phases of the Sun in the Northern Hemisphere.

This incident finds mention in the Holy Bible as:

"AND the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech.

“And it came to pass, as they journeyed from the east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar (the site where Babylon was built on the plains between the rivers Euphrates and Tigris); and they dwelt there.

“And they said one to another, Go to, let us make brick, and burn them thoroughly. And they had brick for stone, and lime had they for mortar.

“And they said, Go to, let us build us; city and a tower whose top *may reach* unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth.

“And the LORD came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded.

“And the LORD said, Behold the people is one, they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do.

“Go to, let us (*i.e.* God Almighty) go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech.

“So the LORD scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city.

“Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the LORD did there confound the LANGUAGE of all the earth” and from thence did the LORD scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth” (Genesis 11: 1-9).

As a matter of fact almost all the pagan religions in existence today on the face of the earth have their origin directly or indirectly in the teachings of King Nimrod.

As long as this group of religions flourishes with millions of adherents the curse of God from the tower of Babel will be upon mankind, and there can be no unity or peace amongst the people of the world.



## **H. Nimrod's attempt to reunite mankind through marriage**

Everything Nimrod did was calculated to do something against God Almighty's decrees.

Nimrod planned to reunite the different groups by putting the following scheme into operation:

1. Nobody should be permitted to marry a relative.
2. Marriage should always be contracted with someone belonging to some other family group so that unity and friendship might grow amongst the different groups of mankind and thus they could reunite and undo what God Almighty had done to destroy the unity of mankind at the tower of Babel.
3. If a person had more than one wife there was every possibility of jealousy between the two or more wives belonging to the two or more different groups of people. It would mean that such disputes between the wives were likely to result in disputes between the husband's family group and the two or more family groups from where the different wives came. Thus this was a possible source of disunity amongst different groups of the human race. Hence only one wife was the order of the day.
4. To support this theory he preached that marriage in the same family meant the same blood. This, Nimrod declared, was harmful to the health of the children.
5. Nimrod's followers, till this day, follow this principle of one marriage and that also with a non-relative.

The Pharaohs of Egypt used to marry their own sisters. Historical records show that this did not leave any ill effects upon the health and intellectual powers of their children. In fact, such children of the rulers of Egypt were all the more exceptionally clever, healthy and beautiful.

From the time of Abraham about 4,000 years ago his children, both the Jews and the Arabs, have intermarried amongst cousins

without any ill effects. Thus the four millennia prove the fallacy of Nimrod's theory of ill effects due to intermarriages. It was nothing but eyewash and bluff to bring about the reuniting of mankind which was split by God's curse.

How far Nimrod has succeeded and / or failed in his attempts at reuniting mankind into one people with one government is quite apparent from the numerous worldwide disputes and troubles between one group of nations and another. So much so that a stage has now come about that if man does not reconcile himself with his fellow beings there is every danger of man destroying himself with the increasingly deadly weapons of mass destruction that he is daily developing and inventing.



## Chapter 6

# Abraham—The Friend of God sent to destroy Nimrod the evil genius



### A. The dream of King Nimrod

On page 188 of Vol. I of “*Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*” is described the dream which King Nimrod had in 2019 B.C. He saw a star rising from the Western Horizon instead of the East. As this star rose slowly higher into the sky it became brighter and brighter. When it reached the zenith it became the brightest and stopped over there. Then the bright light started slowly to spread over the face of the earth. Finally this light lit up the whole earth.

King Nimrod found out the interpretation of this dream as follows:

1. A child was going to be born within a year who would break idols.
2. This child would be responsible for establishing on a permanent footing on this earth: “*God is one and alone, Who has no equals and none comparable with Him.*”
3. He would prove to the world that it was blasphemy to follow the religion taught by Nimrod of: *The Only Begotten son of god born of the great virgin queen mother* (Chapter 5: F-1) *the lamb of the heavens who has come to sacrifice himself to save the sinners* (Chapter 6: J), *the first to claim a seat on the right hand*

*of God, hence in a position even superior to God Himself, and exercising God's power of forgiving Nimrod's baptised sinners and condemning to hell the believers in the true and one God—the doers of good deeds—for their small mistakes (Chapter 5: F-7).*

4. He would prove before the world that Nimrod's claims were false and absurd in all respects especially:
  - a. *Trinity in unity* (Chapter 5: F-3 and 6: H)
  - b. *Only begotten son of god* (Chapter 5: E-7 a, b and c; F-1).  
*God incarnate come on earth* (Chapter 16: D -1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6 and 7).  
*And divinity* (Chapter 6: G; 16: A and C)
  - c. *Infallible Pontifex Maximus* (Chapter 6: H)
5. By Divine aid this child would be responsible for not only the destruction of the mighty army and power of Nimrod but would also be instrumental in his eventual death by violence (Chapter 6: J) because of his refusal to believe in the absolute Oneness of God as taught by this child.
6. This child would be a very important prophet. From his descendants would come several lines of prophets and saints for the guidance of mankind. This is the interpretation of the star becoming brighter as it continued to rise.
7. This star reaching its zenith and stopping there, then after sometime shining its brightest indicated two things *viz*:
  1. The last prophet would be the greatest of all the earlier prophets because it had reached the Zenith.
  2. After some time shining at its brightest and lighting up the world indicated that a child would be born from this greatest prophet who would bring the world to one

universal religion for all mankind after destroying Nimrodism by whatever name it might be known at that point of time.

8. Thus would end the curse of God Almighty which broke up the unity of mankind at the temple of Babylon on which Nimrod had built for his deification (Chapter 5: G). Then the entire world would be reunited into a single brotherhood (Chapters 25, 26, 29 and 30) under this saint's banner of '*Surrender to the Will of God*'. Gone would be the differences of caste, colour, nationality, richness or poverty (Chapter 7: I). Everyone would be on the same equal footing. Wars would become a thing of the past, (Chapter 24: B and C; 25: W; 29: C-8a to d). Weapons of war would be converted into instruments for prosperity and progress *e.g.* atomic energy for peace *etc.* (Chapters 29:C-8a to d; 30: C). Peace and brotherhood would prevail once again after a lapse of about 4,000 years from the birth of this child.
9. This child would be born in a city named "UR", which was situated about 50 miles from the Persian Gulf, near the confluence of the Euphrates and Tigris rivers.
10. That the sperm had not as yet left the father's body to enter the mother's womb to start the creation of this child.

These interpretations of his dream quite naturally upset Nimrod very much. He, thinking himself to be the "Be All and End All" and having sway over all mankind, therefore resolved to prevent the conception and birth of this child at all costs and thus defeat God and bring His plans to naught!

Even today many think in the same way, that "Might is Right" and God can do nothing against worldly scientific progress. Do not realise that our birth and death which are the commencement and the end of our individual existence on this earth are solely in His hands? Has the scientific world of today yet been able to break this control of God and keep thousands alive eternally by scientific robot lungs, hearts, organs,

limbs *etc*? Have we succeeded eternally even in a single case so far in spite of all our scientific progress and discoveries? Can we tell, by our scientific knowledge positively the correct date, day, hour, minute and second when any individual is going to die? How very weak and incomplete are all our scientific achievements of today in the face of God's will and powers (Chapter 16: B). Our advanced science could not keep the "TITANIC" afloat nor keep STALIN alive! (Chapter 16: B).

### **B. Steps to prevent the birth of Abraham**

Ur about this time was a powerful, prosperous and busy city with at least a quarter million inhabitants according to Keller in "*The Bible as History*".

On page 189, Vol. I, of "*Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*" one can read about the determination with which King Nimrod with his armies occupied Ur to stop the birth of Abraham. He thought that by sheer force he could prevent the birth of all children. Nimrod never hesitated to order anything that his fanciful imagination could conceive.

Accordingly a royal proclamation was announced at Ur as follows:

1. With immediate effect no man may save any sexual relations with his wife under pain of death.
2. And no woman may have any sexual relations with her husband under pain of death.
3. Also, guards were to be mounted on female quarters to prevent men from entering therein.
4. That all males must leave the city immediately and stay in the camp with Nimrod's soldiers, until further orders.
5. Soldiers were to be placed around the city sealing the women inside it.
6. That men were not permitted to enter the city and women were

not allowed to come out of the city of Ur during any part of the day or night.

7. Every pregnant woman was to be kept separate if she gave birth to a male child it was to be killed on the spot.

By these arrangements which he personally supervised, King Nimrod now felt confident he could prevent the birth of Abraham or kill him upon his birth.

These arrangements were continued for a period of nearly two years until about 2017 B.C.

### **C. Nimrod's anti-marriage teachings at this juncture.**

In order that the people may not become restive at these severe restrictions on their liberties and in order to justify his action, King Nimrod's clever brain invented some ingenious theories, *viz*:

That these orders which he had issued were for the purification of the human soul in general and for the pious religious-minded people of Ur in particular in order that they may get an opportunity to live a period of their lives in a state of perfection without any worldly attachment to wealth, wife, or children, thus enabling them to attain self-control and nearness to immortality, death being the greatest fear in the minds of the primitive, whilst attainment of immortality was the goal they always sought after.

For this purpose he organised daily prayer meetings, fastings and simple food so that he could train his chosen people to lead a life of renunciation to worldly attachments in order to attain immortality.

For the married he developed the following theory which finds its expression in the form of a dialogue between a husband and his wife quoted in an "*aranyaka*" to explain Nimrod's path to immortality. This teaching of Nimrod has become one of the authoritative ways of renunciation to attain immortality (pages 34-37, "*The Teachings of the Mystics*" by Walter T. Stace, published by The New American Library

of New York under Mentor Book series):

*Husband:* My dearest wife, I have resolved to give up the world and all its charms and comforts and to begin a life of renunciation. I wish, therefore, to divide my properties between you and my children.

*Wife:* My lord, if the whole earth belonged to me, with all its wealth, should I through its possession attain immortality?

*Husband:* No my dear. Your life would be like that of the rich. None can possibly hope to attain immortality through attachment to worldly things like husband, wife, children, and properties. Immortality cannot be purchased by wealth.

*Wife:* Then what is the use of the wealth that you are leaving to me? If you have decided to enter the path to immortality, then I too wish to embark upon it, renouncing the world and all its attachments. Therefore, kindly be so good as to educate me, that I too may take to that path and attain eternal success and immortality.

*Husband:* Near to me you have always been, my dear wife. But now you wish to learn about the truth which is nearest to my heart. Come my dear, sit by me. I will explain it to you. Meditate carefully on what I say.

It is not for the sake of the husband, my beloved, that the husband is dear but it is due to love instilled in us by the Immortal Creator.

It is not for the sake of the wife, my beloved, that the wife is dear, but it is due to love instilled in us by the Immortal Creator.

It is not for the sake of the children, my beloved, that the children are dear, but it is due to love instilled in us by the Immortal Creator.

It is not for the sake of creatures, my beloved, that the creatures are prized, but for the sake of love instilled in us by the Immortal Creator.

It is not for the sake of wealth, my beloved, that worldly



possessions are dear but it is due to love instilled in us by the Immortal Creator.

It is not for the sake of the higher worlds, my beloved, that the higher order of life is desired, but out of love for perfection instilled in us by the Immortal Creator.

It is not for the sake of the gods, my beloved, that the gods are worshipped but out of love for the Immortal Creator instilled in us.

It is not for the sake of itself my beloved, that anything whatsoever it might be, is esteemed but out of love instilled in us by the Immortal Creator.

Thus to attain immortality, you have to divorce all worldly attachments and leave in your heart no place for anything whatsoever but the pure love of the one and only Creator. That is the pure undivided love for the Immortal Creator. Hear about Him, reflect upon Him and meditate upon him. Only by knowing Him, can one achieve success. To know Him, my beloved, you have to hear about Him. After that meditate upon Him. Then only can you realise and know him.

Think on:

As for touch the medium is the skin.

As for smell the medium is the nose.

As for taste the medium is the tongue,

As for sound the medium is the ears.

As for sight the medium is the eyes.

As for thought the medium is the mind.

As for divine wisdom the medium is the heart.

Oh my beloved, know well that a pure heart free from all worldly attachment is the path to immortality. Having said this they both renounced the world to lead a separate life of seclusion in search of the Divine Light and Immortality. That is the way to the highest form of

success according to the teachings of this genius.

King Nimrod's counsels to women were:

A virgin dedicates herself to God, so that she may be holy in body, mind and spirit. Accordingly she has in her heart a place for only one absolute and complete love and that is the love of her Creator. She has no room for any other loves or worldly attractions. She can thus easily attain the highest form of success which is immortality. But the married woman has no option because she has to take care of worldly things such as house management, the welfare of the children and how she may please her husband. A married woman thus loses all opportunity of achieving immortality, which can only be acquired by a heart which is free from worldly attachment.

The teachings of this master-mind for unmarried men were:

A wise man wishing to attain immortality and perfection should therefore avoid married life as if it were a pit of live coals; realise that there is no passion more violent than voluptuousness. Fortunately there is only one such passion. If there were two, not a single man in the whole universe could follow the truth, so beware of fixing your eyes upon woman. (If you find yourself in their company, let it be as though you were not present). If you speak to them, guard well your hearts lest you succumb to the temptation of their charms and lose the chance of immortality.

King Nimrod by his magical powers of influencing the minds of people, with over one year of preaching and the separation of the men from the women folk, effectively turned the city of Ur into a holy city. The entire northwest quarter was converted into monasteries, ziggurat, and temples with thousands of celibate monks and nuns. Chapels for the purpose of worship were also scattered throughout the city, and every home, except those of the poorest people, had its own chapel.

## 1. Man Born Sinful

King Nimrod thus preached that the soul was immortal. It was imprisoned in the body of man. The soul is pure but the body is contaminated. The goal of life should be to soar above the sordid demands of the body, and to achieve the liberation of the soul through contemplation of the eternal, thereby attaining immortality. Such an objective can be achieved only by taking the harsh and narrow path of asceticism.

Under these theories of Nimrod the act of production of children was “a call of the sinful flesh” therefore every child born was out of a “sinful” act between the parents, hence everyone has been born “sinful”! See Chapter 20: B, C and D for Adam’s Immortal Sin!

The only exception being Nimrod, the only begotten son of god, because he was born of a virgin, without any human contact, thus he was not only born free of any sin, but also he could commit no sin irrespective of whatever might be his deeds. So he was infallible and sinless.

This teaching of Nimrod was a part and parcel of the ancient Babylonian mysteries which regarded sex as something low and degrading. From here this teaching spread to Mesopotamia, Persia, India and China in the East, and Egypt, Greece, and the Roman Empire including Europe in the West. It gained such a strong foothold all over that many people disregarded completely such divine laws as:

“And God blessed them (*i.e.* Adam and Eve), and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, ...” (Genesis 1: 28).

“And God blessed Noah and his sons, and said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth” (Genesis 9: 1).

“And God saw everything that he had made, and, behold, it was *Very Good*” (Genesis 1: 31).

This would naturally include sex for production of the children which

God has blessed.

Divine laws, however, expressly forbid adultery, fornication and illicit sex relationships as something very rotten and evil but not the sanctity of marriage, which is regarded as “*Very Good*” and “*Blessed*” as quoted above.

## **2. The Title of “The Sacred Heart”—Baal**

This teaching of Nimrod about keeping the heart pure from worldly attachment of marriage and observing celibacy won for him the title of “The sacred heart”. In the Chaldean tongue “Bal” meant “heart”. Hence “Baal” with a double ‘a’ meant the “Special Heart” or “The Sacred Heart”. Accordingly pictures were drawn of Nimrod for the purposes of worship, depicting him with a heart on top of which was drawn “Tau” of Tammuz, *i.e.* the upright sign of the cross. This is how he acquired the title of “Baal” which means “The Sacred Heart”.

## **D. The Birth of Abraham**

On page 189, Vol. I, “*Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*” it is recorded that a few months after celibacy had been imposed on the town of Ur, it became necessary for Nimrod to procure something from the city which he required urgently.

Accordingly Nimrod summoned his most trusted governor of Ur. This man’s name was “Terah” (or Azar). He made Terah promise under pain of death that he would not go near his wife whilst he was permitted inside the town. Terah was given a time limit to find the required article from the official treasury in the town and return. When Terah arrived at the treasury or the place where this article was, he found it within a very short time and started his return journey towards the city gates. He still had about half an hour to spare. His house was situated on the path out of the city and he had a sudden urge to see the members of his family. He thought no harm would be done if he were to see them for a few moments especially as he was ahead of schedule and could return

in good time to the gate. Terah also knew very well that if he did not take advantage of this opportune moment he would not have another chance to see his family until Nimrod returned from Ur to Babylon which might not be for another year or more. So he entered his house secretly. Terah's wife was at home, and was delighted at her husband's sudden appearance. This encounter resulted in the the conception of Abraham. Alarmed at this Terah warned his wife not to admit that they had even seen each other, otherwise both would be killed by King Nimrod. Thereupon he rushed out secretly and returned to Nimrod's camp-headquarters outside the city in good time, still ahead of schedule.

The very next morning Nimrod found out by his magical powers that this child, who was to destroy him, was now in the mother's womb. Naturally he was furious. He interrogated Terah for a long time. But Terah pleaded his innocence pointing out that he had returned well ahead of schedule, so could not have had the time to visit his wife. His wife was also questioned but she too denied having seen her husband for the past several months:

Nevertheless a soldier was appointed to watch over Terah's wife. At the first sign of pregnancy she was to be killed along with Terah.

Nimrod promptly ordered every pregnant woman in Ur to be kept under military watch and all new-born male babies were to be put to death during the following year and a half.

Thus a reign of terror and bloodshed prevailed until Nimrod was satisfied that this child, who was to cause his death must have been completely destroyed.

For nine months Terah's wife showed no signs of pregnancy. Therefore the soldier appointed to watch over her was withdrawn. The men-folk were eventually allowed to return. But all pregnant women were kept separately under surveillance. All new-born male children were killed. The very next day after the withdrawal of the guard, Terah's wife, although showing no outward signs of pregnancy, felt the

movement of a child in her womb. She was frightened because if found out all three, Terah, herself and the child, would be put to death. So for her own and her husband's safety she secretly selected a cave outside the town and kept some torn clothes in it. When the child came she, out of fear, left the babe in the cave wrapped in torn clothes and sealed its mouth with a piece of rock.

Terah somehow found out that his wife had been out of the town for a period of several hours. So he asked her where she had been for such a long time. She replied that she had given birth to a male child whom she had buried in the hills. Terah warned her to keep this news secret otherwise both of them would be killed by Nimrod's soldiers who were still in the town slaughtering new-born male children. To make sure that this male child was dead, even if his wife might have lied, he did not permit his wife out of his sight for seven days. After seven days, when she got a chance she, visited the cave expecting to see the child dead but she was extremely surprised to find that the child was looking not only healthy but also as big as a one-month-old babe and that out of the four fingers and the thumb of his right hand were oozing milk, water, fruit-juice, honey and oil which this child was sucking. The child kept on growing alarmingly (Page 190, Vol. I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Abraham was born at Ur under these trying circumstances about 352 years after the Deluge or around 2188 B.C. His original name was Abram which means "Lofty father" (Genesis 11: 26-27). It was subsequently changed by God to Abraham, which means "A father of many nations" (Genesis 17: 5), when the Covenant was made that every male child shall be circumcised. From him sprang the Ishmaelites or the Meccans, Israelites or the Jews as also the Edomites, Medanites and Midianites.

When Abraham was 15 months old, he looked like a fifteen year old boy. It was only at this stage that Terah met the boy and allowed him to come to his house from the cave in which he was born. (page 190, Vol. I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). This happened a few

months after Nimrod's soldiers were completely withdrawn from Ur.

This incident reminds one of the massacre of new-born male Jewish children by the Pharaoh of Egypt at the time of the birth of Moses (Exodus 1: 15-22).

### **E. How Abraham Acquired Knowledge of God and His Teachings**

The undermentioned verses recount briefly but very vividly how Abraham acquired knowledge of God in a logical and systematic manner and taught these to the members of his family and relatives:

“Thus did We<sup>2</sup> (Allah) show Abraham the kingdom of the heavens and the earth that he might be of those possessing certainty.

“When the night grew dark upon him, he beheld a star. (He thought to himself that the bright star represented Astarte the queen of Heavens as worshipped by his father). Accordingly he said: Is this my Lord? But when it set, he said: I love not things that set.

“And when he saw the moon uprising (he thought to himself it represented Nimrod the only begotten son of God as had been taught to him by his father), he therefore said: Is this my Lord? But when it (the moon) set, (in the west) he said: If my Lord does not guide me, I surely shall become one of the folks who are astray.

“And when he saw the sun rising (as was taught to him by his father Terah representing the god of the gods), he cried: Is this my Lord? This is (indeed) greater! And when it set he exclaimed: Oh my people! I am free from all that ye associate (with Allah like Nimrod's teachings of Trinity in unity, *etc*).

“Lo! I have turned my face towards Him, Who created the heavens and the earth: as one by nature upright, and I am not of the

---

2. In many oriental languages, including Arabic, when a king or a great personage addresses somebody he usually uses “We” or “Us” which is a proud form of saying “I” or “me” in the singular number: Similarly “We” and “Us” have been used very often in the Qur’an by Allah and represent the singular number and not the plural.

idolaters.

“(Remember) when Abraham said unto his father Azar (this is the title or call name of Terah): Takest thou idols for gods? Lo! I see thee and thy (household) folk in error manifest.

“His people (members of the family and relatives) argued with him. He said: Dispute ye with me concerning Allah when He hath guided me? I fear not at all of that which ye set beside Him (and no harm will come to me) unless my Lord willeth. My Lord includeth all things in His knowledge. Will ye not then remember (what happened a few hundred years earlier—the Great Deluge which destroyed the entire mankind except the family of Noah and his three sons and their wives and a few pairs of animals)?

“How should I fear which ye (yourselves create out of imagination and in ignorance have) set up besides Him, when ye fear not to set up (rivals like Nimrod) beside Allah, things for which He hath revealed unto you no warrant? Which of the two factions hath more right to safety? (Answer me that)” if ye have knowledge.

“Those who believe and obscure not their belief by wrong doings, theirs is safety; and they are rightly guided.

“That is Our (Allah’s) argument. We (Allah) gave it to Abraham against his folk. We (Allah) raise unto degrees of wisdom whom We (Allah) will. Lo! Thy Lord is Wise, Aware” (Qur’an 6: 76-80, 75, 81-84).

“And (I, Allah) make mention (O Muhammad) in this Scripture of Abraham. Lo! He was a saint, a Prophet.

“When he said unto his father: O my father! Why worshippeth thou that which heareth not nor seeth, nor can in aught avail thee?

“O my father! Lo! there hath come unto me of knowledge that which came not unto thee. So follow me, and I will lead thee on a right path.

“O my father! Serve not the devil. Lo! The devil (this is a reference to Nimrod, who is described in the Holy Bible as the mighty hunter in rebellion against God) is a rebel unto the Beneficent.



“O my father! Lo! I fear lest a punishment from the Beneficent overtake thee so that thou become a comrade of the devil (*i.e.* Nimrod the cursed, due to whom the unity of mankind was destroyed at the Tower of Babel).

“He (Terah or Azar, *i.e.* the father of Abraham) said: Rejectest thou my gods, O Abraham? If thou cease not, I shall surely stone thee (to death). Depart from me a long while!

“He (Abraham) said: Peace be unto thee! I shall ask forgiveness of my Lord for thee. Lo! He was ever gracious unto me.

“I shall withdraw from you and that unto which ye pray beside Allah, and I shall pray unto my Lord. It may be that, in prayer unto my Lord, I shall not be unblest” (Qur’an 19: 41-48).

From the above passages it is clear that Abraham was gifted with the knowledge of God together with an understanding of His Teachings.

#### **F. Abraham, the idol breaker, thrown into the fire by Nimrod or Tammuz—Fire the perfector**

When Abraham, in spite of repeated attempts, found that it was useless to preach to Terah, his father, and to the other members of the family and his relatives, he decided upon preaching to the public. According to the historical records on the lives of the earlier prophets to be found on pages 203 and 204, Vol. I, “*Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*”, Abraham was about 16 years old at this point of time.

The Qur’an shows that Abraham preached to the people of Ur as follows:

What are these images unto which ye pay devotion?

“They replied: We found our fathers worshippers of them.

“He said: Verily ye and your fathers were in plain error, (for believing in Nimrod as the only begotten son of the Sun-god, the moon or the lamb (Aries) of the heavens, the trinity in unity, who has come to save sinners by the sacrifice of his life, who was born of

Semiramis, the virgin queen of the heavens, thus committing blasphemy because God has no equals nor trinities in unities, neither any father nor mother, nor husband nor virgin wife nor any begotten son nor any daughter nor a brother nor a sister. And that standing before idols and praying was idolatry. Further, Nimrod was the son of Cush, the son of Ham, the son of Noah. Semiramis was not a virgin but the wife of Cush. Idols had no power to hear prayers nor any power to move nor give any help to their worshippers. Idols were the creation of man therefore inferior to man, whilst God is the Creator of the entire Universe therefore superior to all that is in it, hence the only one who deserves to be worshipped. It was He, who destroyed humanity by the great Deluge for their disobedience and disbelief in Him).

They asked: Bringest thou into us the truth, or art thou some jester?

“He explained: Nay, but your Lord is the Lord of the heavens and the earth, Who created them; and I am of those who testify unto that” (Qur’an 21: 52-56).

In his arguments with the public he repeatedly pointed out that “idols” were nothing but their own creation. The idols could not even talk nor walk nor hear prayers nor be of any assistance to others. The logic of Abraham caused great confusion amongst the people of Ur. Since they were so much under the magical spell cast by Nimrod, they still used to threaten to kill Abraham just as his own father had done (Qur’an 19: 46) as read earlier.

During one of his arguments Abraham had threatened that he would destroy their idols only for the purpose of bringing home the point that idols had no power whatsoever. Further, to prove that when idols were even unable to defend themselves from being broken by some ordinary human being then how could the idols defend others viz: their worshippers. Hence to pray before idols was absolutely meaningless and a waste of time and energy. This is referred to in the Qur’an as follows:

“And, by Allah, I shall circumvent your idols after ye have gone away and turned your backs” (Qur’an 21: 57).

One day, for celebrating some pagan feast, all the people of the town of Ur went out, possibly for bathing in the river to wash their sins away. Abraham seized this opportunity and destroyed all the idols excepting the biggest one. When the people returned and saw all the idols shattered except the biggest one, they were enraged. This incident is briefly recorded in the Qur'an as:

“Then he (Abraham) reduced them (idols) to fragments, all save the chief of them, that haply they (the people of Ur) might have recourse to it.

“They said: Who hath done this to our gods? Surely it must be some evil-doer.

“They said: We heard a youth make mention of them, who is called Abraham.

“They said: Then bring him (hither) before the people's eyes that they may testify.

“They said: Is it thou who hast done this to our gods, O Abraham?

“He (Abraham) replied: But this, their chief hath done it. So question him, if he can speak (and tell you who has done it).

“Then gathered they apart and (Abraham) said: Lo! Ye yourselves are the wrong-doers.

“And they were utterly confounded (by Abraham), and (after they had gathered their wits) they said: Well thou knowest that these speak not.

“He said: Then (are) ye (so very foolish as to) worship instead of Allah that which cannot profit you at all, nor harm you?

“Fie on you and all that ye worship instead of Allah. Have ye then no sense?” (Qur'an 21: 58-67).

The people of Ur, were so much upset by Abraham's deeds and arguments that they reported the matter to their king the famous Nimrod of Babylon, who realised very well that this was the youth who would cause his downfall. He was able to corroborate this fact by means

of his magical powers. He thus came to know how Abraham was born and escaped the massacre 15/17 years earlier at Ur.

His teachings of celibacy and keeping the men-folk away from the women of Ur for over a year had failed completely. He also knew by now that Abraham was the son of Terah born out of the incident of his sending Terah into the town to fetch something important for him, and Terah had broken his oath of not seeing his wife while inside Ur to fetch the important article. Thus Abraham had been conceived as had been foretold in his dream.

King Nimrod came immediately to Ur and publicly questioned Abraham. Abraham was then 16/17 years old. This incident took place about 237 years after the Tower of Babel or early in the year 2001 B.C. Their discussion is briefly narrated in the following passages:

“Then turned he (Abraham) to their gods and said: Will ye not eat?

“What aileth you that ye speak not?

“He said: (Are ye so very foolish and ignorant) that ye worship that, which ye yourselves have carved out” (Qur’an 37: 91-92, 95).

“He said: You have chosen idols instead of Allah. The love between you (*i.e.* between idolaters and their idols) is only in this life on earth. On the Day of Resurrection ye will deny each other, and curse each other, and your abode will be the Fire (of Hell), and ye will have no helpers.

“Do they not realise how Allah produceth creation (*i.e.* prehistoric men then destroyed them completely, then created a new mankind from Adam, then He destroyed it by the great Deluge except the family of Noah and his three sons and their wives and the few pairs of animals that were saved in the ark), then reproduceth it? Lo! For Allah that is easy.

“But if they deny, then (remember) nations have denied before you (and have refused to follow God’s laws according to the teachings of the earlier prophets for which reason they were destroyed by the great Deluge). The messenger is only to convey (the Divine

message) plainly” (Qur’an 29: 25, 19, 18).

“They (Nimrod and his priests and followers) cried: Burn him (Abraham) and stand by your gods” (Qur’an 21: 68).

It was the practice of proud and arrogant Nimrod that whenever anybody opposed his teachings, he used to have the person publicly burnt at the stake, so that his cries could be heard by the public and everybody was thus frightened to oppose this imperious king.

Whenever this used to happen Nimrod would exclaim that he had purified the earth of an evil. Thus he won, the title of “TAM MUZ” or “Fire, the Perfecter”.

The initial “T” or “Tau” of Tammuz was written in old Hebrew as an upright Cross (Chapter 5: F-2). Since this was the method adopted by King Nimrod to burn Abraham, “The Sign of the Cross” is a sign which is hated by all the descendants of Abraham and his followers, because the “upright cross” reminded them of the stakes at which the followers of the True God used to be burnt by Nimrod for their refusal to accept Trinity of “the only begotten son of god born of the virgin queen of the heavens”.

This system of burning people alive at the stake has become a well-recognised feature amongst the followers of Nimrodism.

On pages 203-204, Vol. I, “*Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*” it is recorded that timber for the fire was collected and piled up for thirty days at a place called Amwala Bani-ana, where the signs of the great fire were still to be found. It took seven days to light this huge pile of wood.

So intense was the heat of this fire that it was impossible for anyone to approach it. A problem arose as to how Abraham was to be thrown into this fire. A catapult was invented for this purpose. This was the first man-made machine that came into existence through the ingenuity of Nimrod, the evil genius.

As Abraham was brought, a man named Paijama was ordered to undress him and place him on the catapult. As soon as he touched the

clothes covering the lower half of the body of Abraham he was paralysed and that was his end.

Then Abraham was placed on the catapult, with his clothes on and flung into the fire.

Whilst all this was going on, the angels in Heaven pleaded with God Almighty for permission to save Abraham. The Angel of Wind said, 'Give me authority and I will blow away the entire pile of burning wood before Abraham can be thrown into it'. The Angel of Rains said, 'Give me authority and I will put out the fire before Abraham can fall into it'. The entire Heavenly dwellers pleaded for the safety of Abraham. To this Allah replied, "Go and ask My Khalil (*i.e.* Friend) and see what he has to say".

Thereupon all the Angels flashed into view and pleaded with Abraham for his authority. But Abraham's reply was:

"If God wants His friend (Khalil) to die then it is wrong for the Khalil or friend to try and save himself against the wishes of his beloved. That is the essence of true love. Therefore let God do whatsoever pleases Him and in the fulfilment of that I am happy and satisfied. I am of those who joyfully submit themselves to the Will of God".

God was gratified with this wonderful reply of Abraham. This retort of Abraham is further supported by the following divine passages:

"O People (*i.e.* believers in) the (divine) Scriptures! Why do you argue about Abraham, when the Torah and the Evangel were not revealed until (long) after Him? Have ye then no sense?

"Abraham was not a Jew, nor a Nazarene, but he was an upright man who was a "Muslim" (*i.e.* one who had surrendered himself to the Will of Allah) and he was not an idolater.

"Lo! those of mankind, who have the best claim to Abraham, are those who follow his principles (*i.e.* are Muslims *i.e.*, surrender to the Will of Allah) and this Prophet (*i.e.*, Muhammad) and those who believe (in Islam *i.e.*, the religion of surrender to the Will of

God); and Allah is the Protecting Friend of the believers” (Qur’an 3: 65, 67-68).

“And who forsakes the religion of Abraham, save he who makes a fool of himself? And most certainly We (Allah) made him pure (literally “chose” him) in this world and lo! in the Hereafter he is among the righteous.

“When his Lord said unto him: “*Aslim*” (surrender)! he said: “*Aslamto*” (I have surrendered) to the Lord of the entire creation” (Qur’an 2: 130-131).

Thus Abraham proved not only to mankind but also before the spiritual forces *i.e.*, the whole universe that he was one who had absolutely surrendered himself to the Will of his Creator and that he was happy in God’s pleasures. This was his trend of thought when he was flung by Nimrod from the catapult into the blazing inferno!

God issued an order directly on the fire as Abraham was falling into the pyre as follows:

We (Allah) said: O fire! Be a coolness and a (place of) peace for Abraham” (Qur’an 21: 69).

After Abraham had fallen into the fire everybody was surprised to hear clearly the voice of Abraham coming from the fire speaking to someone (who was Angel Gabriel). The latter stated that by Allah’s orders he was freeing Abraham from the chains in which he had been bound by King Nimrod’s followers and that the fire had been ordered by God to become a place of comfort for Abraham and that no harm was going to come to him and thus Nimrod’s efforts to destroy him would be a complete failure.

When everybody miraculously heard all this talk between Abraham and the Angel Gabriel coming from the pyre, naturally a heated debate arose as to what should now be done.

Princess Razia, the sixteen-year-old daughter of King Nimrod, had accompanied her father from Babylon for this occasion. Upon hearing this talk which was taking place in the fire and the discussions between

her father and his advisers, she pointed out to them that it was an unbelievable miracle that such a big fire was not harming Abraham in any way. Also the statement of Angel Gabriel to Abraham that he would safely escape clearly showed that the God of Abraham was indeed the one and only True God. Therefore the idols broken by Abraham were nothing but worthless creations of ignorant people, and could not be of any assistance to anybody. Hence she declared to her father: "Behold! The God of Abraham is the True God. Therefore, everyone should forthwith accept Abraham's teachings".

Nimrod was so furious at this that he and his advisers thought it best to kill the princess and make her an example of what happens to believers in Abraham. No sooner than did Razia see their faces full of fury, raging with anger and on the verge of pouncing upon her like hungry lions upon a defenceless victim than she realised she had no alternative but to accept the red high flames. Immediately she leapt down from the royal dais and blindly rushed into the raging inferno exclaiming:

"Oh God of Abraham, be my safety!"

Princess Razia, however, safely reached the centre of the blazing inferno to find Abraham unharmed and that neither her own clothes nor her hair nor her body were singed. This all the more convinced her about the absolute powers of the God of Abraham. She immediately became a disciple of the faith of Abraham.

King Nimrod in his rage thundered like lightning and commanded his courtiers who were standing on the ground near the platform to catch her. One Haroon ran after her but was immediately burnt to death. No one else could do anything.

When the wicked king realised that he was powerless to stop his daughter from accepting the religion of Abraham he cursed and abused her bitterly. His courtiers followed suit.

Abraham educated Razia that to call anyone the only begotten son of god, the lamb of the heavens come to save sinners was blasphemy.



To pray before idols was idolatry and to deserve Heaven in the life hereafter one had to do good deeds. God alone would arbitrate on the Day of Judgement. Nimrod's theory that he would be sitting on the right hand of God as the only begotten son, the saviour, the sin-bearer forgiving the baptised sinners was nothing but blasphemy and fantasy. One's sins are not forgiven for one's partaking of sacramental meals and drinks. It was the height of absurdity to think that by partaking of the sacramental foods one could become the pure sinless flesh and blood of the deity himself.

Everybody watching the pyre miraculously heard these teachings of Abraham and Razia's acceptance of the religion of Abraham. This all the more infuriated Nimrod.

After acquiring knowledge of the true religion of Abraham, Princess Razia walked out of the fire on the opposite side to where her father and his courtiers were and went into the surrounding forest. As she was escaping into the forest she was sighted. King Nimrod and his men gave her chase. (pages 203-204, Vol. I, "*Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*").

As soon as Nimrod and his men disappeared from view in the chase, Abraham received instructions to flee immediately from the kingdoms of Nimrod to Haran with the believing members of his family.

Abraham walked out of the fire unharmed. His sister Sarah (who was then six years old) and his nephew Lot, both believed in Abraham's religion. They decided to escape with him before Nimrod returned from his hunt.

Terah the father of Abraham, was afraid he would be killed now that Nimrod knew fully the truth about the birth of Abraham and how he had lied about not going near his wife when he had been sent into the city of Ur. So he also decided to escape from the wrath of his king and joined Abraham and the two believers. They all fled away together.

Thus the divine message to Abraham quoted hereunder was

fulfilled:

“And they (*i.e.* Nimrod and his followers) wished to set a snare for him (*i.e.* when Abraham came out alive from the fire they would surround and kill him on the spot), but We (Allah) made them the great losers (by getting Princess Razia to be converted to the faith of Abraham and escape into the forest, with her father and his men hunting for her, whilst Abraham made good his escape).

“And We (Allah) rescued him (Abraham) and Lot (and eventually brought them), to the land, which We (Allah) have blessed (*i.e.* from Mecca for Ishmael to Palestine for Isaac with Madinah and Beersheba in between) for the peoples” (Qur’an 21: 70-71).

In spite of a search everywhere for Princess Razia in the forest she was not found and nothing more is known about her after this incredible episode.

When King Nimrod returned tired and disappointed from the unsuccessful chase after his daughter Razia, he was shocked to learn that Abraham and those who believed in him together with Terah had all eluded him. He was naturally inflamed and he kept on plotting how to do away with Abraham, because he knew very well from his dream that Abraham would not only bring about his downfall but would also cause his death by violence.

From page 245 of “*The Two Babylons*,” by the Rev. A. Hislop we observe the following:

“The name Tammuz as applied to Nimrod or Osiris, was equivalent to Alorus or the ‘god of fire’, and seems to have been given to him as the great purifier by fire. Tammuz is derived from TAM, ‘to make perfect’, and MUZ, ‘fire’ and signifies ‘Fire, the perfecter’, or the ‘perfecting fire’. To this meaning of the name, as well as to the character of Nimrod as the Father of the gods, the Zoroastrian verse alludes when it says: ‘All things are the progeny of ONE FIRE. THE FATHER perfected all things, and delivered them to second mind, whom all nations call the first’ ... And hence, too no doubt the necessity of the fire of purgatory to ‘perfect’ men’s souls and to

purge away all the sins that they have carried with them into the unseen world”.

Further, in the appendix of “*The Two Babylons*”, The Rev. Hislop points out that “Zoroaster” means “fire the perfecter”.

### **G. How Nimrod won the Title of “A Mighty Hunter in Rebellion against God”**

Nimrod now realised how he had failed to prevent the birth of Abraham and also to kill him upon his birth, or to burn him when he was 16 years old. Therefore Nimrod decided to hunt and kill the God of Abraham, Who had so cleverly contrived Abraham’s escape from his clutches by sending him on a futile chase into the forest after his own daughter Princess Razia.

Accordingly he built a tower in about three years which was stated to be 5,000 yards high with the object of shooting and killing God with his arrows. When this tall tower was ready, Nimrod climbed on to it. But to his great chagrin he found the heavens, the supposed abode of God, as far away from the ground as from this high tower. He came down rather thwarted. The next day a great storm came and blew away the top of this tower. (Page 209, Vol. I, “*Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*” and page 140, Vol. I, *Ajaibul Kasas*).

He therefore captured four large birds, having speed and great stamina for long distance flights. He fed them well over a period and strengthened them. Next he constructed a light but sturdy two-storied box with one window in each of the two compartments, the window of the upper floor opening upwards and the lower looking downwards. He occupied the upper chamber armed with bows and arrows and a companion of his got into the lower floor. He tied four large pieces of meat to four long poles at the four corners out of the reach of the four birds, who were chained to the four corners of this contraption. Thus the birds flew up after the tempting meat just over their heads but out of their reach, drawing up the casket with Nimrod and his accomplice.

After flying upward for a full day he asked his companion to open the lower window and report upon what he could see. He replied that he saw only a vast blue expanse like an ocean below him. Then Nimrod opened the upper window only to find that the sky was as far away from there as it was from the earth below. He flew upwards for another day. Then he asked his friend to open the lower window once again and report upon what he saw. The answer was that they had flown so far away from the earth that no part of the earth, not even the blue expanse of the Ocean, was visible to the naked eye. A vast expanse of a layer of light smoke far below was all that could be seen. Nimrod now thought that he had flown up high enough as he was experiencing difficulty in breathing due to the rarefied atmosphere at this height.

The haughty king then shot several arrows straight upwards into the sky through his upper window in his attempt to shoot and kill the God of Abraham and Noah. According to the orders of God Almighty, these arrows were caught by the Angels and dipped in the blood of fish and then allowed to fall back upon the casket by the natural force of gravity. When the blood stained arrows fell back and struck the casket in which the two were flying, Nimrod, seeing the blood-stained arrows, happily lowered the meats by swinging the poles downward, but still out of reach of the eagles to commence their journey earthward.

When he returned with the blood-stained arrows in proof of his hunting and killing God, he was proudly acclaimed "The mighty hunter in rebellion against God". Thus he won the great title of the "Mighty hunter" which is attached to his name in the Holy Bible (Genesis 10: 9). This not only made Nimrod, the Pontifex Maximus, the supreme and infallible being who had not even failed in killing and destroying the God of Abraham and Noah, but it also made his believers imagine that their religion was now without doubt far superior to the religion of God taught by Noah and Abraham. Thus spread throughout the world the religion of the mighty hunter, the "Super-religion" of "the only begotten son of god through the great virgin mother, the lamb of the heavens come to save sinners" claiming ascendancy over all other

religions.

## H. Excommunication

When Abraham was about 77 years old, he was ordered at Beersheba by God to go back to King Nimrod in Babylon and once again to try and bring him back to the belief in the true God. Abraham accordingly went to Nimrod. When Nimrod saw Abraham he boasted that he had killed the God of Abraham and Noah by shooting arrows into the heavens and proudly related his hunting expedition in the flying casket. After hearing everything Abraham, asked Nimrod whether the sky was as far away from the great height reached after two days of upward flight as it was from earth. Nimrod had to admit that even at that great height which he had attained after two days of upward flight, the sky was still apparently as far away from him as it was from the ground. Then Abraham asked him if it was possible for him to shoot his arrows from the ground so that they may reach and get stuck in heaven without falling back to the ground? Nimrod had to admit that his arrows if shot from the ground could never reach anywhere near heaven. At this Abraham pointed out that since heaven was as far away from the great height reached by Nimrod as it was from the ground it was equally inconceivable for his arrows to have reached heaven as it was impossible from the ground. Nimrod had to concede to this logic of Abraham's argument. Yet Nimrod insisted he must have been successful because his arrows were tipped with blood when they fell back. Abraham smiled and said that Angel Gabriel had already informed him that when Nimrod had shot his arrows from his flying casket, the arrows had been caught by the Angels and under God's orders they were returned dipped in the blood of fish. Nimrod was naturally very angry when he realised how he had been duped by God Almighty (page 141, Vol. 1, *Ajaibul Kasas*).

Therefore, with a view to securing his supreme position further as the Pontifex Maximus, Nimrod boasted to Abraham that he had all the powers of God, such as even to take life at his sweet will and to grant

life when he wanted. To prove his powers to Abraham he ordered a criminal sentenced to death to be released, thus giving life to one who had lost the right to live. He then ordered an innocent man to be taken from his house and killed, thus taking life when he wanted. This incident is quoted briefly in the last divine scripture as follows:

“Do you remember of him (King Nimrod), who had an argument with Abraham about his Lord, because Allah had given him the (first human) Kingdom (for the Kingdom of Nimrod please refer to Genesis 10: 9-19); how when Abraham said: My Lord is He Who giveth life and causeth death, he (King Nimrod) answered: I give life and cause death. Abraham said: Lo! Allah causeth the sun to rise in the East, so do thou cause it to come up from the West (if you are a god or the trinity in unity with God or the only begotten son of God). Thus was the disbeliever (the Infallible Pontifex Maximus) abashed (for the first time in his life), and Allah guideth not wrong doing folk” (Qur’an 2: 258).

Nimrod was very justifiably worried that if the truth of what Abraham had asserted became known to his followers, namely, that Nimrod was not god, nor the only begotten son of god, nor born of a virgin mother but the son of Cush, the grandson of Noah, nor trinity in unity but an inferior being who was certainly unable to make the sun rise from the West then he would not only lose his great title of “Mighty hunter in rebellion against God”, but all his religious teachings also about the only begotten son of god come to save sinners would become discredited. He would also be ridiculed.

Nimrod therefore ordered that anybody listening to any other religious teachings henceforth, except those taught by him, would be excommunicated from the society and burnt at the stake. This order thus became a permanent feature of all religions originating from Nimrod to prevent the proliferation of other doctrines to the followers of his religion. This prohibition is still in force amongst the followers of Nimrodism.

## **I. Death of King Nimrod by violence**

Nimrod decided he must do something drastic to demolish the Almighty God of Abraham and Noah. He challenged Abraham that he was going to prepare a huge army to fight and kill God once and for all. Accordingly this arrogant and mighty hunter in rebellion against God, this Pontifex Maximus—the Infallible sent a challenge to God through Abraham. Abraham therefore had to return to Beersheba without achieving any success.

After about seven years when Abraham was about 83 years old, he was again ordered by God Almighty to pay yet another visit to King Nimrod of Babylon and to try to bring him to the true faith. When Abraham arrived, he found Nimrod had gathered a huge army taking men from almost all countries and communities who followed his religion. He had armed them fully and trained them thoroughly. Nimrod, on seeing Abraham, challenged him to ask God to come and oppose him in an open confrontation on the battlefield, Abraham was very much upset but he prayed to God for an answer. The Angel Gabriel communicated that God was fully prepared to meet Nimrod and his huge army on a nominated field on a particular day and at a specific time. Nimrod accordingly went to the selected site which was quite close to Babylon. At the appointed day and time a cloud of small flying creatures appeared. The army of Nimrod could not destroy them. These tiny flying creatures simply fell upon the army and ate into the flesh and bones and drank their blood, killing each and every soldier. Nimrod alone fled from the battlefield to his queen in Babylon and narrated all that had happened. His queen asked him for a description of these flying creatures. Just then he saw one such creature approaching and he pointed it out. This creature flew into Nimrod's nose and bored its way into his brain and started biting. (According to E. Arnold's study this, creature bored its way into Nimrod's brain through his ear). It was so painful that Nimrod began beating his head with his hand. When he beat his head he felt relieved for a few minutes. Then again the biting started and he again beat his head and got solace

for a few minutes. When the biting became very painful and the relief by beating his head with his hands became ineffective, Nimrod ordered an iron rod to be taken and his head to be hit with it every time the biting started. Thus he gained succour for a few minutes each time. This continued for forty days and nights without any peace or rest for the so-called Infallible Pontifex Maximus. Abraham came daily during this period and pleaded with Nimrod to give up his blasphemous claims to divinity, trinity in unity and the only begotten son born of the great virgin mother. Abraham preached to Nimrod to stop his rebellion against God Almighty and to seek his forgiveness. Nimrod proudly taunted him on the first day after his army had been destroyed, "Oh Abraham! Your God has indeed very foolishly killed a very large portion of the male population of the whole world, now who are left to accept your God?" Next day Abraham came back and replied that he had been informed by God, that there were plenty of things even besides human beings who believe in the True God. Nimrod haughtily insinuated that Abraham was now talking nonsense. Thereupon his personal household animals one by one spoke miraculously and gave evidence that the God of Abraham and Noah is the one and only true God. The furious Nimrod ordered them to be killed one by one as each gave evidence.

After each animal was killed Nimrod would mockingly ask, who was still left to give evidence God Almighty. Abraham would point to the next animal and it would speak miraculously and give evidence. This procedure continued for several days until not a single horse or cow or other pet, fowl or bird was left alive at the palace of Nimrod in Babylon because each one of them had given evidence of the true God of Abraham and Noah. After each killing Nimrod would ask Abraham, who remained to give evidence about God Almighty. Then Abraham said, "The trees in your garden will give evidence". Thus one by one each tree in his garden spoke miraculously and bore witness "*La Ilaaha Illal-Laahu Ibrahim Khalilullah*" (There is no God but Allah and Abraham is the Friend of Allah). One by one the so-called only



begotten son of the virgin had all his beautiful trees cut down and his wonderful Hanging Gardens of Babylon spoilt. Whenever each item was destroyed he would boastfully ask Abraham, who was left to give evidence. In this manner several days passed until not a fruit or flower tree was left.

Then Abraham said, the beautiful gate of your palace will give evidence of God Almighty. When the gate miraculously spoke, the blasphemer had it destroyed. Then the pillars of his palace and eventually the walls of his castle gave testimony and these too he destroyed systematically.

It was by now the fortieth day of the attack of the flying creature biting into the brains of the so-called Infallible Pontifex Maximus, when Abraham again came for the last time and pleaded with the haughty king to accept God Almighty and ask for His forgiveness but Nimrod, the claimant to the seat on the right hand of God, dispensing justice on the day of Judgment, proudly taunted, “Oh Abraham if there is anything else left to give evidence about the True God, bring it before me and I will destroy it, and thus show to you whose power is greater—Your God’s power or mine?”

Abraham replied, “The royal robes you have on your body will give evidence”. Thereupon his clothes miraculously spoke and testified that Allah is the One and Only and that none are comparable to Him. The rebel angrily threw off his royal robes and burnt them proudly boasting: “Now is there anything left to give evidence that there is only one true God, who has no equal and who is alone the Master and Creator of the entire universe and can challenge my claim of being the divine god, the trinity in unity?” Nimrod further said: “Have I not destroyed everything that gave evidence due to your magical powers against me, the lamb of the heavens who has come to save sinners. Now tell me indeed who is greater—your God or me, the Infallible Pontifex Maximus?”

Abraham indeed felt most disappointed. The Angel Gabriel

thereupon appeared and informed Abraham that Nimrod and all those who followed his teaching of the only begotten son of god, *etc*, had been condemned to everlasting Hell by God and that he now had only a few breaths of life left; hence there was no cause for disappointment. Just as Nimrod was destroyed, so shall not only Babylon be devastated but also these blasphemous teachings shall one day be obliterated in some terrible disasters of such great magnitudes that very large sections of humanity will also be effaced. It is this prediction of the destruction of a large part of humanity as a result of the curse of God from the Tower of Babel which is haunting mankind today: It will end in the battle of Armageddon when Nimrodism will be annihilated and a new civilisation started.

Just then the insect which had got into Nimrod's brain started biting once more. The mighty rebel ordered a hard blow to be struck on his head. In obedience the king's servant struck a blow with the iron rod. Nimrod's skull was fractured and he fell down dead at the age of about 341 years *i.e.* in or about 1934 B.C. A few minutes later the insect crept out of his body and flew away. (Pages 209-212, Vol. I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia* and pages 141-143, Vol. I, *Ajaibul Kasas*).

Thus ended violently the life of Nimrod. However, this religion of Babylon did not come to an end upon his death. Its believers have and will continue to suffer many a disaster until it is totally effaced at the Battle of Armageddon.

### **J. The Great Sacrifice by which The Only Begotten Son is to Save Sinners**

We have read how Nimrod experienced a period of forty days of agony ending in his turbulent death, the so-called sacrifice of his pure soul, with which he would save the "Baptised" sinners of the world—the death with a broken skull due to his refusal to accept Abraham's teachings that God is only one and not a Trinity in unity.

Thus at the hands of Abraham this rebellious blasphemer of

Babylon as well as his followers have been condemned to hell. Can such a condemned Nimrod, the so-called saviour, redeemer, sin-bearer, son of God, trinity in unity *etc.*, save anybody from among his Baptised followers and sinners? Can sacramental food and wine make one the “Sinless” pure deity, who himself is full of sins and condemned to everlasting hell? Even if sacramental food were able to convert one into the deity who is damned, then are not his followers automatically condemning themselves to hell by eating and drinking such sacramental food and drink? Or is it the magical net dragging into its meshes the many millions, who have absolute faith in these principles, condemnation in hell? What is the correct position? Let everyone think for himself. Can the laws of God ever be a curse for mankind by any stretch of the imagination? Or is the magical hypnotic spell of Nimrod’s baptism and the sign of the Cross so very strong as to blind the millions and intoxicate them so that they can no longer distinguish between blasphemy and the plain truth? Let them ponder over the warning of the Angel Gabriel to Abraham so to be found in the Holy Bible as:

“Babylon, hath been a golden cup ... that made all the earth drunken the nations have drunken of her wine (by being “Baptised” and thus initiated into this religion on which the curse of God fell at the Tower of Babel—the religion of the only begotten son of god born of the great virgin mother, the trinity in unity, the lamb of heavens come to save sinners by the sacrifice of his life to a violent death in maintaining his religion, sacramental food, idolatry, the signs of the cross, laws of God are a curse for mankind, sitting on the right hand of God on the day of Judgment to save baptized sinners and condemn doers of good deeds for small mistakes, *etc.*), *Therefore The Nations Are Mad.*” (Jeremiah 51: 7).

Thus according to the Holy Bible the greatest obstacle to world unity is the magical and intoxicating religious influence of Nimrod of Babylon. This religion as seen earlier affirms:

1. Abraham as the betrayer of their saviour.
2. Abraham’s teachings of God being One and Alone as the

“forces of darkness”.

3. The death of Nimrod at the instance of Abraham as the great sacrifice by the only begotten son of god by which he would save the baptised sinners *etc.*

### **K. Expressions of Hate by Nimrod's Followers**

The man who single-handed not only braved the wrath and might of King Nimrod, the proud hunter in rebellion against God but also destroyed his vaunted infallibility and brought about his downfall ending in his violent death was Prophet Abraham, the friend of Allah. Thus he terminated the Anti-God reign of the first Blasphemer who claimed divinity as son of God, Godhood in trinity and superiority over God on the Day of Judgment, the killer of God, the infallible Pontifex Maximus. After him his followers have continued to maintain these fantastic blasphemous claims.

In the East, the worst form of abuse is to call someone a pig or a swine. Therefore this enemy, who caused the violent death of the saviour, is abused in the pagan religious beliefs all over as the “wild boar” or the most ferocious type of a pig.

In revenge against Abraham, the instrument which caused the death of “the lamb of the heavens come to save sinners by the sacrifice of his life”, his pagan followers ate swine-flesh in expression of their hatred and as an abuse towards this enemy of their sin-bearer, *i.e.* the Prophet Abraham, the Friend of Allah.

In “*The Two Babylons*” by the Rev. A. Hislop, pages 99-102, we read as under:

“In many countries the boar was sacrificed to the god, for the injury a boar was fabled to have done him. According to one version of the story of the death of Adonis, or Tammuz, it was, as we have seen, in consequence of a wound from the tusk of a boar that he died. The Phrygian Attis, the beloved of Cybele, whose story was identified with that of Adonis, was fabled to have perished in like manner, by

the tusk of a boar. Therefore, Diana, who though commonly represented in popular myths only as huntress Diana, was in reality the great mother of the gods, has frequently the boar's head as her accompaniment, in token not of any mere success in the chase, but of her triumph over, the grand enemy of the idolatrous system, in which she occupied so conspicuous a place. According to Theocritus, Venus was reconciled to the boar that killed Adonis, because when brought in chains before her it pleaded so pathetically that it had not killed her husband of *malice prepense*, but only through accident. But yet, in memory of the deed that mystic boar had done, many a boar lost its head or was offered in sacrifice to the offended goddess. In Smith, Diana is represented with a boar's head lying beside her, on the top of a heap of stones, and in the accompanying woodcut, in which the Roman Emperor Trajan is represented burning incense to the same goddess, the boar's head forms a very prominent figure. On Christmas day the Continental Saxons offered a boar in sacrifice to the Sun, to propitiate her for the loss of her beloved Adonis. In Rome a similar observance had evidently existed, for a boar formed the great article at the feast of Saturn, as appears from the following words of Martial:

"That boar will make you a good Saturnalia".

"Hence the boar's head is still a standing dish in England at the Christmas dinner, while the reason of it is long since forgotten.

"There can be no doubt, then, that the Pagan festival at the winter solstice—in other words Christmas—was held in honour of the birth of the Babylonian Messiah".

The Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society on page 144 of their research "*Babylon the Great Has Fallen*" have similarly referred to eating of swine-flesh by the Babylonians.

Under these circumstances the eater of swine flesh is without doubt a hater and an abuser of Abraham, the friend of Allah and a follower of Nimrod!

Therefore the institution or origin of the eating of swine-flesh throughout the world was nothing but an expression of abuse, hate and

revenge against the so-called “Force of darkness”, who caused the violent death of their saviour. Who was this enemy whose flesh was being eaten in this abusive and hateful revenge? It was certainly that of “Abraham, the friend of Allah”. Therefore the eating of swine-flesh is tantamount to the eating of the flesh of the Prophet Abraham in an offensive and bitter revenge.

It was for this reason that not only the eating of swine-flesh has been forbidden by God from the time of Abraham but even the touching of the carcass of a pig is also strictly prohibited. This will be clear from the following laws recorded in the Holy Bible:

“And the Lord spake unto Moses and to Aaron, saying unto them,

“And the swine, though he divide the hoof, and be cloven-footed, yet he cheweth not cud; he is unclean to you.

“Of their flesh shall Ye not eat, and their carcass shall Ye not touch, they are unclean unto you.

“And for these Ye shall be unclean: whosoever toucheth the carcass of them shall be unclean (for the whole of that day) until the (next day which starts at) even (*i.e.*, sunset).

“And whosoever beareth ought of the carcass of them shall wash his clothes and be unclean (for the whole of that day) until the (next day which starts at) even (*i.e.*, sunset)” (Leviticus 11: 1, 7-8, 24-25).

“Thou shall not eat any abominable thing.

“And the swine ... it is unclean unto you: ye shall not eat of their flesh, nor touch their dead carcass” (Deuteronomy 14: 3 and 8)

## **L. Peculiarities about Nimrod's Followers**

Unfortunately, it has been a peculiar feature of the followers of Nimrod that in spite of it being proved to them beyond any doubt that what they are following is absurd and blasphemous, yet they persist in his false religion. They deliberately try to take a wrong interpretation of any proof given or if that is not possible then call the truth a falsehood.

Thereby they stubbornly refuse to follow the plain truth. They still have the audacity to boast that theirs is the ideal religion on the face of the earth. As a matter of fact this religion of Nimrod has been the source of all disunity amongst mankind, since the time of the curse of God Almighty at the Tower of Babel. This curse is still plaguing mankind and has been for the past 4,000 years, causing disunity, wars and destruction, each time greater than the previous occasion. If man does not take heed he will surely destroy a very large part of mankind due to this curse God, on account of following the blasphemous teachings of Nimrod.

Unfortunately, the theories of “We are the superior” have developed from this source. The Aryan group of Nations have always claimed that they are the superior class as compared to all other nations.

Today we see the same attitude in a far more intense form in South Africa and Rhodesia and in a milder form in the Southern States of the U.S.A.—All this is nothing but “Nimrodism”.

Such expressions were found in the scientifically advanced Germany and led to the Second World War with all its horror and destruction including the genocide of millions of Jews in Nazi Germany’s Horror Camps and gas chambers.

Are not these the results of the curse of God at the Tower of Babel on the followers of Nimrod? Are we so blind that we still fail to realise this?

“Scientific World—Whither Bound?  
To Self Destruction!

### **M. Punishment to Chosen People of God for Following Nimrod’s Religion**

The first king of the Jews ruling over Israel to come under the magical spell cast upon mankind by Nimrod and introduce his worship of

Baal—"The Sacred Heart" come to save sinners by the sacrifice of his life—was Ahab, son of Omri, who came under this magical charm against Jewish Laws. He married the pagan Princess Jezebel, the daughter of Ethbaal, king of the Zidonians who was already under this spell of Nimrod (1 Kings 16: 20-33).

The Prophet Elijah challenged and forced King Ahab and the Jews to get their 450 priests of Nimrodism to make a sacrifice of any one of two bullocks brought for this purpose. If fire from heaven came and lit it up then they were right, but if fire from heaven lit up Elijah's offerings, then God Almighty was the true God and not Nimrod—Baal. The priests of Baal failed whilst Elijah was successful. Hence all 450 priests of Nimrodism were put to death and this cursed pagan worship of Nimrod was destroyed (1 Kings 18: 20-41).

In 759 B.C. Ahaz, son of King Jotham, became the king of the Jews in Judah at the age of 20 years. He ruled from Jerusalem. He again came under the spell of Nimrod on mankind and followed Nimrod's religion of Sun worship. He built temples to Baal (*i.e.* Nimrod) the only begotten son of the Sun-god and made his children walk over the fire and sacrificed his sons to Baal. Thus the Jews were drunk and immersed in this magical spell of Nimrod for the second time in the space of a few years (2 Kings 16: 1-4).

Thereafter came several Jewish kings who married pagans and followed Nimrodism in spite of repeated warnings from God (2 King 17: 2-17; 21: 1-22.) Eventually Jerusalem was destroyed in 607 B.C. for the sake of Nimrodism and the Jewish race, the chosen people of God, were put to the sword or made captives and slaves (2 Kings 25: 1-21 and Jeremiah 52: 8-15), the irony of the whole thing being that the Jews were destroyed by Babylon itself!





## *Chapter 7*

# The Life of Abraham



### **A. Abraham's First Marriage**

Haran<sup>3</sup> in those days was a separate but powerful kingdom over which King Nimrod had no control. This city was also devoted to Nimrod's religion, which spread as we have seen from God's curse at the Tower of Babel. The citizens worshipped Nanna, the moon god, the only begotten son of the Sun god through Astarte, the virgin queen of the Heavens.

The Holy Bible confirms the escape of Abraham by informing us in Genesis 11: 31 that Terah left Ur with Abraham, Lot and Sarah and "they came unto Haran and dwelt there".

"And the days of Terah were two hundred and five years: and Terah died in Haran" (Genesis 11: 32).

Just because Terah, an idolater, had accompanied his son Abraham and the two believers, all were stopped from reaching the Promised lands.

Abraham was about 17 years old when he reached Haran. Terah died in Haran at the age of 205 years. Abraham was 75 years old when his father died. Accordingly Abraham spent 58 years in Haran.

---

3. In the Old Testament the name is "Haran". In the New Testament it is spelt "Charran".

A Nazarene martyr named Stephen, when in the witness box before the Jewish supreme Court in Jerusalem, where he was sworn in, confirmed this to the Judges:

“... The God of glory appeared unto our (fore)father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia before he dwelt in Charran.

“And said unto him, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred; and come unto the land which I shall shew thee.

“Then came he out of the land of the Chaldeans and dwelt in Charran: and from thence when his father was dead he removed himself unto this land, wherein ye now dwell” (Acts 7: 2-4).

It was not the custom for a brother to marry his own sister or step-sister. In fact Nimrod had been teaching that marriage should be only between people who had no blood relationship. Nevertheless marriage amongst cousins was common but certainly not between brothers and sisters.

One is therefore puzzled and intrigued as to why Abraham married his step-sister Sarah—a most unusual course! What was the compelling reason which forced him into such a strange and unusual marriage alliance!

When they came to the city of Haran, Abraham was 17 years old. When he left he was 75 years old (Genesis 12: 4). Sarah was 7 years old on arrival and 65 years old when she departed.

When Nimrod found out that Abraham and his party had escaped to Haran from the fire into which he had thrown Abraham, he immediately decided to send to Haran his storytellers as propagandists were known in those days. These spread the story of how Abraham had broken their idol-gods and thus committed sacrilege and warned the people to have nothing to do with Abraham. Therefore the people of Haran would have nothing to do with Abraham and the two believers, whom they would have put to death, but for Terah, who was one of the finest sculptors and makers of idols besides being an authority on paganism. Hence Terah was a highly respected person amongst the

idolaters.

Hence Abraham, Sarah and Lot patiently spent their 58 years sojourn in Haran ostracized by the populace. The results were as follows:

1. Lot grew up from a little boy to the ripe old age of almost 70 years but nobody was prepared to give his daughter in marriage to him, so he was forced to remain unmarried all the time that they were in Haran.
2. Sarah grew up from the age of 7 years till she neared the age when she would soon become too old to bear children, yet nobody in Haran was prepared to marry her in spite of her great beauty.
3. Abraham was also not offered a single girl by the local populace in marriage, during his entire stay of 58 years in Haran.
4. Under such desperate conditions what were they to do? They had to do something at least about Sarah's marriage. Abraham being the eldest of the three had to be married first. Hence there was no option left but for Sarah to be married to her step-brother Abraham. That is the only logical explanation about the compelling circumstances under which Abraham was forced to marry his step-sister Sarah—a most unusual feature, even in those early days of human history.

The Torah confirms that Sarah was the step-sister of Abraham in the following passage:

“And yet indeed she (Sarah) is my sister; she is the daughter of my father, but not the daughter of my mother (but of my step-mother); and she became my wife” (Genesis 20: 12).

It will be observed from this Biblical quotation that under certain abnormal and unavoidable circumstances certain types of marriages, which were normally forbidden did take place even with Prophets! The fact that Abraham and the two believers patiently spent 58 years in

Haran with daily humiliations and deprivations, without allowing their faith in God Almighty, to be shaken, indeed deserves the highest praise.

## **B. Abraham's Second Marriage**

On the death of Terah in Haran, Abraham, who was then 75 years old, was ordered to leave for the Promised Land. Sarah, who was married at about the age of 35 was now about 65 years old. She had by this time passed the age of child-bearing. Sarah remained without child. This is related in the Torah in the following passages:

“But Sarai<sup>4</sup> was barren: she had no child” (Genesis 11: 30).

1. “Now the Lord had said unto Abram, (this is the original name of Abraham—Chapter 6: D) Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father’s house, unto a land that I will shew thee:
2. “And I will make of thee a great nation and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing:
3. “And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed (This is the interpretation of the dream of Nimrod. Also Nimrod and his followers would be cursed for cursing Abraham by observing the sign of the Cross, Baptism, Easter and Winter Solstice festivals and eating swine-flesh).
4. “So Abram departed, as the LORD had spoken unto him; and Lot went with him: and Abram was seventy and five years old when he departed out of Haran.
5. “And Abram took Sarai his wife, and Lot his brother’s son and all their substance that they had gathered, and the souls (servants) that they had gotten in Haran; and they went forth

---

4. Sarai is the original name. It was changed to Sarah when she was going to give birth to Isaac (Genesis 17: 15-16).

to go into the land of Canaan; and into the land of Canaan they came.

6. "And the LORD appeared unto Abram, and said, Unto thy seed will I give this land: and there builded he an altar unto the LORD, who appeared unto him.
7. "And Abram journeyed, going on still toward the south.
8. "And there was a famine in the land: and Abram went down into Egypt to sojourn there; for the famine was grievous in the land.
9. "And it came to pass, when he was come near to enter into Egypt, that he said unto Sarai his wife, Behold now, I know that thou art a fair woman to look upon:
10. "Therefore it shall come to pass; when the Egyptians shall see thee, that they shall say, this is his wife: and they will kill me, but they will save thee alive.
11. "Say, I pray thee, thou art my sister: that it may be well with me for thy sake; and my soul shall live because of thee.
12. "And it came to pass, that, when Abram was come into Egypt, the Egyptians beheld the woman that she was very fair.
13. "The princes also of Pharaoh saw her and commended her before Pharaoh: and the woman was taken into Pharaoh's house.
14. "And he entreated Abram well for her sake: and he had sheep, and oxen, and he asses, and menservants, and maidservants, and she asses, and camels.
15. "And the LORD plagued Pharaoh and his house with great plagues because of Sarai Abram's wife" (Genesis 12).

The Prophet Abraham came into Egypt in 1943/1942 B.C. during the reign of King Senusrit I. This Pharaoh ruled from 1971 to 1928 B.C. His wife was Queen Nufrit, daughter of Pharaoh Amenemhait I.

Princess Hagar was their elder child. Their second child was Pharaoh Amenemhait II, who was born in 1942 B.C. when Abraham was about to leave Egypt after one year's stay.

On pages 208-209, Vol. I, of "*Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*" we read about this incident.

When Pharaoh Senusrit I saw Sarah and thought her to be the unmarried sister of Abraham, he wanted to take this beauty and make her his handmaid. So immediately upon their arrival in Egypt, he separated Abraham from his wife Sarah. That night he had Sarah sent alone into his private chamber. He accordingly approached her but before he could touch her he was totally paralysed. He asked Sarah to pray for his recovery. She prayed and the Pharaoh immediately got back the power of movement of his limbs. He was so impressed with this miraculous power of Sarah that he approached her a second time, but once more he was paralysed but this time his male courtiers were also affected. He requested Sarah to pray. As Sarah prayed they were all cured. Again a third time, Senusrit I approached Sarah and for the third time he was afflicted, but this time all the members of the royal family were plagued as mentioned in Genesis 12: 17 quoted hereinbefore.

Pharaoh Senusrit I sent Sarah to a separate apartment and went to sleep in a very disturbed state of mind. That night God ordered the Pharaoh in a dream to return Sarah to Abraham as she was his wife, and said that Abraham was one of the great prophets of God. Further, God threatened to destroy him together with his kingdom if this was not done. In the Torah we find this historical incident has also been recorded:

"And Abraham said of Sarah his wife, she is my sister: and (King) Abimelech (the name given in the Bible of this Pharaoh) took Sarah.

"But God came to Abimelech in a dream by night, and said to him, Behold, thou art but a dead man, for the woman which thou hast taken for she is a man's wife.

“But Abimelech had not come near her: and he said Lord, wilt thou slay also a righteous nation?

“Said he not unto me, She is my sister? and she, even she herself said, He is my brother: in the integrity of my heart and innocence of my hands have I done this.

“And God said unto him in a dream, Yea, I know that thou didst this in the integrity of thy heart; *for I also withheld thee from sinning against me: therefore suffered I thee not to touch her.*

“Now therefore restore the man his wife: for he is a prophet, and he shall pray for thee and thou shalt live: and if thou restore her not, know thou that thou shalt surely die, thou, and all that are thine.

“Therefore Abimelech rose early in the morning, and called all his servants, and told all these things in their ears: and the men were sore afraid.

“Then Abimelech called Abraham, and said unto him, What hast thou done unto us? and in what have I offended thee, that thou hast brought on me and on my kingdom a great sin? thou hast done deeds unto me that ought not to be done” (Genesis 20: 2-9).

“And Pharaoh called Abram, and said, what is this that thou hast done unto me? Why didst thou not tell me that she was thy wife?

“Why saidst thou, she is my sister? So I might have taken her to me to wife: now therefore behold thy wife, take her, and go thy way” (Genesis 12: 18-19).

“And Abraham said, Because I thought, surely the fear of God is not in this place: and they will slay me for my wife’s sake.

“And yet indeed she is my sister; she is the daughter of my father, but not the daughter of my (own) mother (but daughter of my step mother); and she became my wife.

“And it came to pass, when God caused me to wander from my father’s house, that I said unto her, This is thy kindness which thou shalt shew unto me; at every place whither we shall come, say of me, he is my brother.

“And Abimelech took sheep, and oxen, and menservants, and gave them unto Abraham and restored him Sarah his wife.

“And Abimelech said, Behold, my land is before thee: dwell where it pleaseth thee.

“And unto Sarah he said, Behold, I have given thy brother a thousand pieces of silver; behold he is to thee a covering of thy eyes, unto all that are with thee, and with all other: thus she was reproved.

“So Abraham prayed unto God; and God healed Abimelech and his wife, and his maidservants; and they bore children.

“For the LORD had fast closed up all the wombs of the house of Abimelech, because of Sarah Abraham’s wife” (Genesis 20: 11-18).

The prophet Abraham sojourned in Egypt for almost a year until there was rain in the promised lands and the drought was over.

Now this Pharaoh had only one daughter and no male heir to his throne. He asked Sarah to pray for a son, when he returned her to Abraham. Most of his courtiers also had only daughters. As a result of the blessings when Sarah was returned by the Pharaoh, his queen and her ladies in attendance became not only pregnant but all were blessed with male children. There was therefore great joy and celebration throughout the land. This Pharaoh with all his courtiers with their families converted to the religion of Abraham. He was the first Egyptian ruler who totally gave up idolatry and sun-worship and accepted the One and True God. Several rulers came thereafter following the correct religion of Abraham.

When Abraham and Sarah went to bid farewell to King Senusrit I and Queen Nufrit, after about one year’s stay in Egypt, the Pharaoh and his queen said to them, “You are an old man over of 76 years and your wife is barren and 66 years old now so past child-bearing age. We know very well you are thirsting for a child whom you can call your own. We throughout Egypt have received great blessings and male heirs through your prayers. In fact, we have been blessed with a son and heir a few days back. Therefore as a token of our goodwill and friendship, we offer



our own only daughter Princess Hagar of Egypt (who was then about eight years old) as a gift to you so that you may have a child whom you can call your own” (Rabbi Shalomo Issac, a very authoritative Jewish Rabbi in his explanation of chapter 16 of Genesis has written down in Hebrew that Hagar was the daughter of the Pharaoh of Egypt). So saying they handed over their eldest child, their one and only daughter Princess Hagar (in Arabic “Hazra”) of Egypt to their spiritual guide and religious teacher Prophet Abraham and Sarah and gave advice to their little daughter, that they considered it better for her to go with the prophet of God than to be married to some prince, when she grew up (page 209, Vol. I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia* and page 37, Vol. II, *Rahmatul Aalamin* by Kazi Md. Sulaiman Munsoorpuri).

When Abraham returned from Babylon to Beersheba after the death of King Nimrod and settled down there, he was about 84 years old. By this time Princess Hagar was 16 years of age. He thought of marrying her to some good youth, but Sarah did not agree since she loved Princess Hagar as her own child and did not want to part with her.

After another year or so Sarah realised that Princess Hagar had to be married. How could it be done without parting with her? So she suggested to Abraham that he marry Princess Hagar, and if she bore any children they would be their own children.

Abraham pointed out that once Princess Hagar was married to him then Sarah’s love would soon be replaced by jealousy and hatred, and that would cause trouble. But Sarah remained firm and forced Abraham to agree (page 212, Vol. I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Thereupon Abraham aged about 85 years married Princess Hagar of Egypt who was then about seventeen. This is mentioned in the Torah:

“And Sarai Abram’s wife took Hagar ... the Egyptian, after Abram had dwelt ten years in the land of Canaan, and gave her to her

husband Abram to be his wife” (Genesis 16: 3).

The Logos or the Holy Spirit was placed on the forehead of Prophet Adam, the original father of our present human race, at the time the immortal soul was ordered to enter his body. (For further details see Chapter 17: A 1-8, B 1-6).

This Spirit or Logos went into the forehead of Eve when she conceived Seth and on his birth, it had gone into the forehead of Seth. From Seth the Holy Spirit had come down step by step to Noah and from him step by step to Terah, his wife when she became pregnant with Abraham and then into Abraham’s forehead. Now this Holy Spirit left Abraham and entered the forehead of Princess Hagar on the very first night of her marriage to Abraham as she conceived.

The Holy Spirit shining upon her forehead made Princess Hagar look very elegant and mature with womanly grace. Sarah was indeed filled with jealousy at the beauty of Princess Hagar of Egypt. The very next day after her marriage, Sarah out of hatred punctured both the ear lobes of Princess Hagar to make her ugly.

Princess Hagar plucked some flowers and stuck them in these holes which Sarah had punctured. Instead it made her look still more exquisite and Abraham was full of praise for this enhanced beauty. It is from this incident that Muslim women have their ear-lobes pierced to wear ear-rings (page 213, Vol. I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Quite understandably this filled Sarah with much greater jealousy for the beauty of Princess Hagar. So she waited for an opportunity and as soon as Abraham’s back was turned when he had gone out on some work, she wreaked her vengeance on the innocent princess by mercilessly beating her for no rhyme or reason.

This treatment meted out by Sarah during the very first few days of her marriage completely alarmed Princess Hagar. She was already fully aware from her stay with this family for the past ten years how Sarah had dominated Abraham. Therefore she knew very well that the henpecked Abraham would not be able to give her any protection

against the jealousies of Sarah. As a last resort she decided to flee to Egypt, her father's kingdom, from the unwarranted persecution by Sarah.

Because of this unjustified persecution by Sarah, God Almighty decided to reward Princess Hagar with an honour which no other woman had been blessed with so far, thus proving to the whole world that Princess Hagar was innocent and in the right, otherwise she could not have been blessed with such an honour. Hence she became the first woman from the time of creation of this world to receive a direct message of God through the Angel Gabriel, the divine messenger to the Prophets. Only two other women received such an honour later on. They were the Virgin Mary, the mother of Jesus of Nazareth and Amena, the mother of Prophet Muhammad.

The divine messenger Angel Gabriel appeared before Princess Hagar, when she was fleeing from Sarah and was on her way to her father's kingdom of Egypt. He informed her that Allah had heard her heart's prayers because of the unjust afflictions of piercing of her earlobes by Sarah and the beatings given by Sarah out of spite. So as a compensation as well as a reward Almighty God had decided to bless her with a noble and gentle son, as a result of her marriage to Abraham a few days earlier, and that she was already pregnant with this son in her womb. Until this child was born she was to return to the house of Abraham and that God would protect her from further molestations by Sarah. The Torah confirms this in the following passages:

“And the Angel of the Lord said unto her (Princess Hagar), Behold, thou art with child, and thou shalt bear a son, and shall call his name Ishmael; (This honour of being the first woman to receive directly the divine messenger Angel Gabriel has been given to you) because the Lord hath heard thy affliction (from the unjust persecution of Sarah out of her jealousy at your beauty).

“And the Angel of the Lord said unto her: Return (to the house of Abraham and God will protect you from the unjust persecution of Sarah up till child birth) ... (Genesis 16: 11, 9).

The Biblical records thus prove to the world not only the honour given to Princess Hagar of being the first woman to receive a direct visit of Angel Gabriel, the messenger of God to the prophets, but also the information that the Almighty “Hath heard thy affliction” thereby proving for all time that Hagar was the aggrieved and afflicted party.

### **C. Prophet Prince Ishmael—the First Born of Abraham**

Princess Hagar returned to the house of Abraham and conveyed the divine message foretelling the birth of Ishmael as advised by Angel Gabriel. The Qur’an refers briefly to it thus:

“My Lord: grant me (out) of the doers of good deeds.

“So We (Allah) gave him (Abraham) good tidings (through Princess Hagar) of a gentle son Ishmael” (Qur’an 37: 100-101).

Sarah who had no child of her own, was overjoyed at this good news—the divine foretelling of the birth of a son and heir to Abraham meant that at last they were going to have a child all their own. She accordingly stopped further persecution until the first-born son and heir of the family was given birth to by Princess Hagar in 1932 B.C.

The Torah records:

“And Hagar bare Abram a son: and Abram called his son’s name, which Hagar bare, Ishmael.

“And Abram was fourscore and six years old, when Hagar bare Ishmael to Abram” (Genesis 16: 15-16).

The Holy Spirit or Logos which had entered the forehead of Hagar from the forehead of Abraham on the night she conceived Ishmael, now left the forehead of his mother Princess Hagar and came into the forehead of Ishmael upon his birth (page 213, Vol. I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). Thus God Almighty by this fact of placing the Logos on the forehead of Ishmael made it explicit that God had selected this first born child of Abraham through his legally married wife Hagar to be the heir of Abraham.

So beautiful was Ishmael at birth due to the Holy Spirit shining on his forehead that Sarah took away the babe and played with him all day long. Only at times of breast feeding could Princess Hagar have her child. Abraham was so dominated by Sarah that he dared not interfere. This state of affairs continued for a few months (page 213, Vol. I, *ibid*).

It so happened one day whilst Princess Hagar was feeding the babe, Abraham came into the room. Seeing his younger wife feeding the child he started playing with them out of love. Sarah, when she realised that Princess Hagar was taking an unusually long time to feed Ishmael came to investigate. She was shocked to see the love play between Abraham, the mother and child. This filled Sarah with rage once more and she decided to take her revenge on the innocent Princess Hagar and the few-months-old Ishmael. She resolved to get rid of both of them from her life (page 213, Vol. I, *ibid*).

Sarah therefore waited for her opportunity and when Abraham came to her, she asked him to promise in the name of God that he would carry out faithfully whatever request she was going to make so as to render her happy. Abraham pointed out that he was doing all in his power to make her happy. But Sarah would have nothing less, so he faithfully promised in the name of God to carry out Sarah's request.

Sarah having thus extracted the "Oath on God" from the hen-pecked Abraham now insisted that Abraham should fulfil his promise in the name of God and to do as follows to please her:

1. To take Hagar and the babe Ishmael and to leave them in some far-off place.
2. That Abraham may not live as man and wife with Hagar any more.

So shocked was Abraham at these unjust demands into which Sarah had trapped him by his oath that he wept bitterly and prayed to God for guidance.

The Angel Gabriel appeared and informed Abraham that Allah

had heard his prayers of distress for the innocent Princess Hagar and the babe Prince Ishmael. Since Sarah was so very dangerous in her hatred and jealousy, if she got any opportunity she could murder the innocent mother and child. Therefore for their safety Allah desired that they should be removed to such a far-off place where Sarah would no longer be a source of danger to these innocents. Accordingly Allah had decided to honour them by making them the first caretakers of His house of worship (*i.e.* Bait-Ullah or Kaabah at Mecca) which the angels had built on earth even before the creation of Adam. And that Allah would look after them and protect them from all harm at Mecca.

Thus assured, Abraham carried out Sarah's request by taking Princess Hagar and the babe Prince Ishmael on his camel which he loaded with food and a leather-pouch containing water. He then set off for "Bait-Ullah" or "Kaabah" at Mecca. In those days it was known as the wilderness of Paran, according to the Biblical name given in Genesis 21: 21. Having reached his destination he asked Princess Hagar to get down with the babe Ishmael. He unloaded the food and water and turned to go back. At this Princess Hagar asked her husband in whose care he was leaving her alone in the middle of the desert. Abraham replied by, Allah's orders and in His care. This satisfied Princess Hagar, who was one of those who had surrendered herself to live according to the will of Allah, irrespective of whether it meant trouble or comfort for her. It was for this reason that she did not decide upon going back to the Palace of her father in Egypt to live in comfort. As soon as Abraham was out of sight he stopped his camel and turning his face towards Kaabah or Bait-Ullah or the House of Allah prayed for a long time for the safety and welfare of his second wife Hagar and his first born child Ishmael (page 215, Vol. I, *ibid*).

After some days the water left by Abraham ran out. The Princess's breast also became dry after a few days due to no water being available. As a result she had nothing with which to feed her babe. There were two hills nearby—Safa a hundred feet away and Marwah a hundred yards or so away.

As they were steep it was not possible for her to climb with the baby Ishmael in her arms. She was all alone with no habitation nearby. She thought that if she climbed up these hills she might see some animal or birds. By watching their direction of travel she might come to know where water may be available or perhaps see some passing caravan and ask for water for her child, who was dying of thirst and was now putting out his tongue for water. So she placed the child under the shade of a shrub and climbed the nearer hill, Safa. Not having found any signs by which she could procure some water, she climbed down from Safa and ran through the valley between the two hills and climbed up the other hill, Marwah. On seeing nothing which could help her she descended from Marwah and climbed up Safa. In this manner, she made seven trips between the hills Safa and Marwah. She would walk as long as she was on the higher slopes from where she could see her child. She would run through the valley in between the two hills from where she could not see the babe for fear that some wild animal might carry away Ishmael. By the seventh climb she was completely exhausted whereupon she sat down and prayed fervently to God for her child. Her prayers were immediately answered and Angel Gabriel appeared before her and asked her: "O Princess Hagar of Egypt, how is it that you are alone in this wilderness?" She replied: "I am here by the Will of the Almighty in whom I have complete faith and trust". Then the angel asked her: "What aileth thee that thou art crying?" She replied: "My baby Ishmael is dying out of thirst". The angel replied: "Fear not for God has heard your prayers and solved the difficulties of the babe. Look at where your child is laying and see, wherever he is throwing his little arms and legs, there water is spouting out in little streams".

Delightedly she ran to her baby and found that this water, which was coming out of the ground where baby Ishmael lay, was refreshing like honey and absolutely crystal clear. (Page 215 Vol. I, *ibid*).

Thus both were saved. She immediately built a mud well around it to preserve the water. This is the most sacred water in the world. Its name "Zam Zam" originated from the joyous gurgling sound made by

the little baby, Ishmael, when given to drink the water by his mother in a water bottle as he was still too small, (only a few months old) to be able to drink the water by himself.

Thus Princess Hagar was again honoured with a second direct visit from the Angel Gabriel, a status which as we have read earlier no other women ever enjoyed except the Virgin Mary and Amena, mother of Muhammad. Thus these exalted women enjoy a high status amongst the noble and pious ladies of the world. But Hagar was honoured with one more blessing for the whole world and that was the Holy Well of “Zam Zam” which is even now in existence at Mecca.

For the Muslims it is obligatory to make these seven trips between the hills Safa and Marwah during their Hajj pilgrimage. Wherever Princess Hagar ran, the Muslims run and wherever she walked the Muslims walk. They drink the Holy sacred water of “Zam Zam” and pray just as the second wife of Abraham had done.

Thus the exact spots and incidents from the lives of Abraham, Princess Hagar and his first born son and heir Prince Ishmael, from whom has descended the Prophet Muhammad, have been not only carefully preserved and recorded but also meticulously repeated to inspire greater religious fervour during the sacred Pilgrimage to Mecca by millions of Muslims from all over the world.

The Holy Bible also briefly confirms these facts in the following passages:

“Wherefore She (Sarah) said unto Abraham, cast out this ... woman and her son ...

“And the thing (this injustice of Sarah out of her jealousy) was very grievous (and wrong) in Abraham’s sight (especially) because of his (first born) son (and heir who was then only a few months old and was the first child he had in his 86 years of life).

“And God said unto Abraham (through Angel Gabriel), Let it not be grievous in thy sight because of thy (first-born) son and because of thy (innocent wife as God would look after them) ... in all that



Sarah hath said unto thee; hearken unto her voice (because if you do not do so she could murder them out of hatred and jealousy and that would be far more serious)” (Genesis 21: 10-12).

This incident took place when Abraham was 86 years old (Genesis 16: 16) and Ishmael only about 6 months. Isaac, the second son of Abraham was born 14 years after this incident when Abraham was 100 years old (Genesis 21: 5).

The Torah also confirms the incident of the child Ishmael almost dying of thirst. It also confirms the visit of Angel Gabriel and the Holy sacred water of “Zam Zam” at Mecca spouting out of the spot, where the baby Ishmael was lying dying of thirst. The Holy Bible also corroborates that at this point of time Ishmael was so very small that he was unable to drink water by himself and so he had to be fed water from a bottle as will be observed from the following passages:

“And (when all) the water was spent from the bottle, and she cast (*i.e.* placed) the (baby) CHILD under one of the shrubs.

“And she (Hagar) went, and sat her down over against him a good way off, as it were a bowshot (distance of a few hundred feet) for she said, Let me not see the death of the (baby) CHILD (Ishmael). And she sat over against him, and lifted up her voice, and wept.

“And God heard the voice of the LAD (*i.e.* a child but not a young man of 19 years of age); and the Angel of God called to Hagar out of heaven, and said unto her, what aileth thee, Hagar? fear not; for God hath heard the voice of the LAD (*i.e.* the small child Ishmael) where he is (under the shrub and has caused springs of water to burst out of the ground and this would be a blessed spot for the future).

“Arise, lift up the LAD, and hold him in thine hand ...

“And God opened her eyes and she saw a well (*i.e.* a spring) of water (spouting out of the ground where the little hands and legs of baby Ishmael were hitting the ground because this spot where he was lying was blessed) and she went (running to the child and lifted him in her arms) and filled the bottle with water (as he was too small to

drink even water by himself), and gave the LAD (*i.e.* a small child to) drink.

“And God was with the LAD; and he grew up, and dwelt in the wilderness, and became an archer.

“And he dwelt in the wilderness of Paran: ...” (Genesis 21: 15-21).

Thus it is clear that the place called Paran in the Holy Bible is the same as that which is called Mecca today.

Pharaoh Senusrit I could easily have taken his daughter Princess Hagar and his grandson Prince Ishmael from Mecca or Paran to his palace in Egypt. But because he had surrendered himself, upon the teachings of Abraham, to live according to the will of Allah and since Hagar and Ishmael were at Mecca by the will of the one and true God, so he dared not take his daughter and grandchild to his palace in Egypt, but he let them live there. This only goes to show the religious fervour created by Prophet Abraham among his followers. This Pharaoh with all his courtiers had converted to the religion of Abraham as mentioned earlier. Instead of bringing Hagar and Ishmael over to Egypt, he spent a fortune and got a canal dug from the River Nile to the Red Sea, so that he could easily supply the needs of the two at Mecca.

On page 183, Vol. II, “*Tariq Umru Ibnul As*” by Hasan Ibrahim Misri, *Daktur Fil Adab*, published by Matbaatul Saadat Misri, it is recorded that when Pharaoh Senusrit I heard that his daughter Princess Hagar with his grand-child the baby Prince Ishmael had been left alone at Mecca, he built a special canal—a wonderful achievement of engineering for those early days—from the river Nile to the Red Sea. Now he could easily supply via Jeddah all the necessities of his daughter at Mecca. “Jed” means “Grandparents”. The grave of “Eve” the mother of the human race, the wife of Adam is still in existence at Jeddah, Hence the name Jeddah or “place of our Grand Parent”. Hagar and Ishmael lie buried beside the Kaabah at Mecca.

As there was easy communication between Egypt and Mecca on account of the canal from river Nile to the Red Sea, all the requirements

of food and other supplies of these two in Mecca were being sent by two of the Pharaohs of Egypt—Hagar’s father during his lifetime and later on by her brother, when he became the next ruler of Egypt. For this reason it was convenient for Princess Hagar to have a suitable princess from one of the royal families of Egypt sent to Mecca to be a wife to Prince-Prophet Ishmael when he had grown up. This is mentioned in the Holy Scriptures:

“And he (Prophet Prince Ishmael) dwelt in the wilderness of Paran: and his mother (Princess Hagar of Egypt) took him a wife out of the land of Egypt” (Genesis 21: 21).

“And (Allah) makes mention in the scriptures (*i.e.* Torah and Evangel) of Ishmael, he was the keeper of promise, and he was a messenger (of Allah), a prophet.

“He enjoined upon his people worship (of Allah, the Alone) and almsgiving and was acceptable in the sight of his Lord” (Qur’an 19: 54-55).

Thus Princess Hagar from the age of about 18 years and Prophet Prince Ishmael from the age of a few months lived their whole lives at Mecca, or Paran as it was then called. They never went into the presence of Sarah after this incident. This event took place fourteen years before the birth of Isaac, the second son of Abraham through Sarah.

#### **D. Foretelling’s of the Births of Prophets Isaac and Jacob**

The last of the Heavenly Books gives the following interesting prophecies about the birth of Isaac, the second son of Abraham and his grandson Jacob and that both of them would be prophets of God. This revelation was made on Thursday the 9th day of the lunar month of Muharram in the solar year 1919 B.C.

“Hath the story of Abraham’s honoured guests (the three angels sent to destroy Sodom and Gomorrah) reached thee (O Muhammad)?

“And when they came unto him and said: Peace! he answered: Peace

(and thought) Folk unknown (to me).

“Then he (Abraham) went apart unto his household so that they brought a fatted calf;

“And he set it before them, saying: Will ye not eat?” (Qur’an 51: 24-27).

“And Our (Allah’s) messengers (*i.e.* the Angels) came unto Abraham with good news. They said: Peace! He answered: Peace! And delayed not to bring a roasted calf.

“And when he saw their hands reached not to it, he mistrusted them and conceived a fear of them. They said: Fear not! (we are the angels of Allah. Angels do not require human food for their sustenance. Hence we are unable to eat the human food you have placed before us); Lo! we are sent (for punishment) unto the folk of Lot” (Qur’an 11: 69-70).

“They said: Be not afraid! Lo! we bring thee good tidings of a boy possessing wisdom” (Qur’an 15: 53).

“Then his wife (Sarah, hearing these talks) came forward, making moan, and smote her face (before them), and cried: A barren old woman! (at this point of time Sarah was 89 years old and without any child” (Qur’an 51: 29).

“She (Sarah) said: Oh, woe is me! shall I bear a child when I am an old woman, and this my husband is an old man (of 99 years of age)? Lo! this (what you Angels of Allah say) is (indeed) a strange (unbelievable) thing!” (Qur’an 11: 72).

“He (Abraham) said: Bring ye me good tidings (of a son), when old age hath overtaken me? Of what (use is it now when I have no more power in me, to produce children and my wife Sarah has long since lost her capacity to bear children) then can ye bring good tidings ?” (Qur’an 15: 54).

“They the angels said: Disbelieveth thou at the commandment of Allah? (Then know very well that nothing whatsoever is impossible for Allah. He has only to command: Be and it is). The mercy of Allah and His blessings be upon you, O wives of the house (of

Abraham): Lo! He (Allah) is the Owner of (All) Praise, the Owner of (All) Glory!" (Qur'an 11: 73).

"And his wife (Sarah), standing by, laughed when We (Allah) gave her good tidings (through the Angel of the birth) of Isaac (as a son) and through Isaac, of (a grandson) Jacob" (Qur'an 11: 71)

"... We (Allah) gave him (Abraham a son) Isaac and (through him a grandson) Jacob. Each of them We (Allah) made a Prophet" (Qur'an 19: 49).

"And when the awe departed from Abraham, and the glad news (of a son Isaac and through him a grandson Jacob and that both would be prophets of Allah) was reached (*i.e.* fully appreciated by) him, he pleaded with Us (Allah) on behalf of the folk of Lot (*i.e.* the dwellers of Sodom and Gomorrah, *etc.*)

"Lo! Abraham was mild, imploring, penitent.

"(It was said) O Abraham! Forsake this; Lo! thy Lord's commandment hath gone forth, and Lo! there cometh unto them a doom which cannot be repelled" (Qur'an 11: 74-76).

"They said: Lo! we are sent unto a guilty folk,

"That we may send upon them stones of clay,

"A mark (for later generations) by the Lord for (the destruction of) the wicked.

"Then We (Allah) brought forth such believers as were there.

"But We (Allah) found there but only one house of Muslims (*i.e.* those surrendered to the Will of Allah).

"And We (Allah) left behind therein a warning for those who fear a painful doom" (Qur'an 51: 32-37)

Thus by the Will of God Almighty the wicked cities where Lot had settled down were destroyed on Friday, the tenth day of Muharram which corresponds to the tenth day of the Jewish Seventh Lunar month. Almost all important events affecting mankind have taken place on this day, date and month of the lunar calendar as we shall see later in

## Chapter 11.

These passages from the last of the heavenly books once again bring out the following:

1. That God Almighty can do whatever pleases Him whether it is logical and scientifically acceptable or not. For example, there is no coherent or scientific explanation to show how the disaster of Sodom and Gomorrah could have taken place by the natural forces of the laws of Nature. When human intelligence fails we have to admit the hand of God in it for after all human intellect is no doubt limited (Chapter 16: B).
2. The methods adopted by God Almighty are often beyond the ken of human imagination. Mankind must accept that every act of God has a purpose. To assume that we know what is good for us often leads us to work in a direction which is contrary to the Will of God.
3. It is for this reason that periodically God punishes and destroys the guilty, leaving behind mute evidence for disobedience to his Laws, in such a sudden, unique and startling way that man has no means to escape his destiny (Chapter 16: B).
4. For example, modern scientists have made stupendous equipment's and machines, which have been tested until they work to perfection. Yet these have often failed! Why? The answer is given later in Chapter 16: B and C—there is a Super Power, Who denies them success whenever He wishes without even explaining to them why they failed in spite of the fact that their scientific planning's and calculations were flawless! Modern scientists cannot therefore defy God in their attempts to achieve progress, however much they may try.
5. Do all these not bring home very vividly to us:

“Scientific World—Whither Bound?  
To Self Destruction!

or  
Universal Peace!  
By what means?

### E. The Happiest Year In The Life Of Abraham

The happiest year in Abraham's life was undoubtedly the period between his 99th and 100th year of age (*i.e.* between 1919 B.C. and 1918 B.C.) for the following reasons amongst others as given in the Holy Bible *viz*:

1. When the three angels sent to destroy Sodom and Gomorrah had informed him that he was going to get his second son, Isaac, through Sarah, Abraham had pleaded with God that instead of getting any further children in his old age, it would be much better if Ishmael, his beloved son and first-born, be blessed with children:

“Then Abraham fell on his face (in thanksgiving), and laughed, and said in his heart, shall a child be born unto him that is (about) a hundred years old? And shall Sarah, that is (about) ninety years old, bear?

“And Abraham said unto God, O that (my beloved first born son and heir) Ishmael might live before thee (and be blessed with children rather than me in my old age)!

“And as for Ishmael, I have heard thee: Behold I have blessed him, and will make him fruitful, and will multiply him exceedingly; *Twelve Princes shall he beget, and I will make him a Great Nation*” (Genesis 17: 17-18, 20).

2. Then Abraham offered thanksgiving to the Lord for the good news of one son Isaac through Sarah, and one grandson Jacob, through Isaac, and he was told that both of them would be prophets, and of twelve grandsons through Ishmael. Naturally what more happiness could a 99-year-old man aspire for? But God Almighty decided to reward him for his thanksgiving as

mentioned in the Torah:

“And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, the Lord appeared to Abram and said unto him, I am the Almighty God; walk before me, and be thou perfect.

“And I will make my covenant between me and thee, and will multiply thee exceedingly.

“And Abram fell on his face (in thanksgiving) and God talked with him saying,

“As for me, behold, my covenant is with thee, and thou shalt be a father of nations.

“Neither shall thy name any more be called Abram, but thy name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made thee” (Genesis 17: 1-5).

3. On this occasion God Almighty made A Permanent Covenant with Abraham to distinguish for all time to come between those who can claim to be the children and followers of Abraham and those that are not:-

“And I will make thee exceeding fruitful, and I will make nations of thee, and kings shall come out of thee.

*“And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generation for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee.*

“And God said unto Abraham, thou shalt keep my covenant therefore, thou, and thy seed after thee in their generations.

*“This is my covenant, which ye shall keep, between me and you and thy seed after thee; Every man child among you shall be circumcised.*

*“And ye shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin; and it shall be token of the covenant betwixt me and you.*

“And he that is eight days old shall be circumcised among you, every man child in your generation, he that is born in the house,



or bought with money of (*i.e.* from) any stranger, which is not of thy seed.

*“He that is born in thy house, and he that is bought with thy money, must needs be circumcised: and my covenant shall be in your flesh for an everlasting covenant.*

*“And the uncircumcised man child whose flesh of his foreskin is not circumcised, that soul shall be cut off from his people; (and will thus be condemned because) he hath broken my covenant.*

“And Abraham took Ishmael his son, and all that were born in his house, and all that were bought with his money, every male among the men of Abraham’s house; and circumcised the flesh of their foreskin in the self-same day, as God had said unto him.

“And Abraham was ninety years old and nine, when he was circumcised in the flesh of his foreskin.

“And Ishmael his son was thirteen years old, when he was circumcised in the flesh of his foreskin.

“In the self-same day was Abraham circumcised, and Ishmael his (only) son.

“And all the men of his house, born in the house, and bought with money of (*i.e.* from) stranger, were circumcised with him” (Genesis 17: 6-7, 9-14, 23-27).

4. The first part of the glad tidings given by the three angels sent to destroy Sodom and Gomorrah *etc.* was fulfilled about ten months later when Abraham was 100 years old. This is also quoted from the Old Testament:

“For Sarah conceived, and bare Abraham a son in his old age, at the set time of which God had spoken to him.

“And Abraham called the name of his son that was born unto him, whom Sarah bare to him, Isaac.

“And Abraham circumcised his son Isaac being eight days old, as God had commanded him.

“And Abraham was an hundred years old, when his son Isaac

was born unto him.

“And Sarah said, God hath made me to laugh, so that all that hear will laugh with me.

“And she said, who would have said unto Abraham, that Sarah should have given children suck? for I have born him a son in his old age.

“And the child grew, and was weaned: and Abraham made a great feast the same day that Isaac was weaned” (Genesis 21: 2-8).

The Holy Qur'an briefly gives Abraham's prayer of thanksgiving:

“Praise be to Allah, Who hath given me, in my old age, Ishmael and Isaac! Lo! my Lord is indeed the Hearer of Prayers” (Qur'an 14: 39).

5. As soon as any one part of the glad tidings given by the angels was fulfilled it became clear that the rest of the divine messages were also going to be realised in due time *viz*:
  - a. His second son Isaac was going to have a son whose name would be Jacob and both of them would be prophets.
  - b. His first born Ishmael was to be blessed with 12 sons or princes.
  - c. The period of tribulation for Abraham, who had had only one son for the past fourteen years and none up to the age of eighty-six, was now over.
  - d. Now he could spend his old age in happiness in a house to be filled with thirteen promised grand-children.
  - e. He could now also visualise that as promised by God, he would in fact become the father of nations of believers and a true “Abraham” *i.e.* “A true Father of Nations of circumcised believers”.

What more happiness could one look forward to at the ripe old age of one hundred years? Hence undoubtedly the period 99-100 years of

age was the most important and auspicious year in Abraham's life (1919 to 1918 B.C.) and was calculated to bring him unbounded joy as the years went by.

### **F. The Great Trial of Abraham**

Abraham had no children up to the age of 85 years. He had promised in the course of one of his prayers in this period, when he was about to marry Princess Hagar, daughter of Pharaoh Senusrit I and Queen Nufrit of Egypt, that if he got a son and heir through his second marriage he would gladly sacrifice this boy in the way of Allah (page 217, Vol. I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

A few days later the divine message of Angel Gabriel had come to Princess Hagar informing her that:

- a. Though married to Abraham only a few days earlier, yet she was already pregnant with a son who was to be named Ishmael.
- b. Instead of fleeing to Egypt at the persecution of Sarah through jealousy, she should return to Abraham.
- c. God would protect her.

The love of Abraham for Ishmael was even greater because for reasons of safety both the few-months-old Ishmael and his mother had to be kept far away from Beersheba where Sarah lived. This love of Abraham for his first born Ishmael is evident as seen from the Biblical quotations from Genesis 17: 17-18 and 20 given in the previous section. When Abraham was informed that he was going to have a second son, Isaac, (but this time through Sarah), he had pleaded that his first born and heir Ishmael might be blessed with children instead of himself in his old age. In reply God informed Abraham that He had heard his prayer and:

- a. Ishmael would be blessed with twelve princes, in addition to Isaac through Sarah,
- b. Further, that Isaac would also be blessed with a son Jacob and

that both of them would be prophets of Allah.

Thus it is clear that Abraham had very great affection for Ishmael, who was not only his first born son and heir but also his one and only child from the age of 86 years. At the age of 99 years Abraham was given the forecast by the angels on the 9th day of the lunar month of Muharram of his second son Isaac and thirteen grandsons of which Jacob would be from his second son Isaac and the rest from his first born Ishmael. Hence Ishmael was being blessed much more than Isaac in the matter of children.

The Arabic lunar month of “Zil Haj” is the month just preceding the Arabic lunar month of Muharram. Accordingly “Zil Haj” is the equivalent of the sixth Jewish lunar month.

On the eighth night of this lunar month of “Zil Haj” in the solar year 1919 B.C. when Abraham was about 99 years of age, he had a fantastic dream at Beersheba ordering him: “Take thy son, thine only son, whom thou lovest the most and sacrifice him to God Almighty” (page 217, Vol. I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

The one and only child that Abraham had at this moment was Ishmael. At this point, Abraham had no news whatsoever of any further children or grandchildren to console him or to carry on his name. The glad tidings of another son and thirteen grandchildren, including the change of his name from “Abram” to “Abraham” or “Father of Nations” and the order of circumcision were given to him one month later *i.e.* on the ninth day of the lunar month of Muharram.

Hence Abraham got up from his sleep in a very troubled state of mind and soul. He wondered what God could gain out of this sacrifice of Ishmael who was his one and only son, born at the age of 86 years. Now he was about 99 years old and well past child-producing capacity. After all, there should be someone to carry on his name. There were at this juncture no foretellings about any further child or children, not even a girl.

So Abraham thought that this dream must have been the work of

Satan, for he could not bring himself to accept that this could be the order of God. On the very next night *i.e.* the ninth of “Zil Haj” he again had the same dream where he heard God Almighty ordering him: “Take thy son, thine only son, whom thou lovest the most and sacrifice him to God Almighty”. Abraham still could not bring himself to believe that this was God’s order.

On the third successive night he had the same dream: “Take thy son, thine only son, whom thou lovest the most and sacrifice him to God Almighty”. Immediately he got up, convinced that it was indeed God’s order and told Sarah about this dream. Just then he also remembered his own prayer to God at the time of his second marriage: “If You bless me with a son I will sacrifice him to You”. He immediately took Sarah’s permission and set out from Beersheba for Mecca on his fastest camel and reached there during the tenth day of “Zil Haj” (pages 217-218, Vol. I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Jesus has given the following information about the very great love that Abraham had for Ishmael:

“Abraham loved his son Ishmael a little more than was right, wherefore God commanded, in order to kill that evil love out of the heart of Abraham, that he should slay his (one and only son whom he loved the most): which he would have done had the knife cut” (pages 229 and 231, Gospel of Barnabas by Lonsdale & Laura Ragg published by Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1907).

Abraham asked Princess Hagar to dress Ishmael in the best clothes he had. Hagar obeyed. He asked Ishmael to take a knife, a piece of rope and to accompany him. They proceeded towards the central Hill of Monah.

Satan realised that Abraham was determined to carry out God’s order. So he came to Princess Hagar and asked her where Abraham had gone with Prince Ishmael and for what reason. She replied that he had gone to Monah Hills. Satan informed her that Abraham was going to sacrifice Ishmael in the name of Allah according to God’s order. She

replied courageously: “Whatever is the will of Allah let it be carried out. I am one of those who have surrendered herself for all these 13 years past to the Will of Allah”.

Satan having failed to kindle the mother’s love, came to Prince Ishmael and informed him that his father intended to sacrifice him according to God’s orders. To his great surprise he was rebuffed by the boy Ishmael. “If it is the will of Allah, then I shall not be found lacking” was his forthright retort.

As Abraham neared Monah, Satan came to him and said: “Allah merely wanted to test you and you have proved your intentions. This son is the one and only child you have been blessed with in your old age to carry on your name. Let him go and return”. Abraham realised that it was Satan who was testing him. Immediately he picked up seven pieces of stone and flung them at Satan. Satan was turned instantly into a stone column. This Satan is known as “Jamratul Ula”.

After proceeding a little distance, he was again approached by another Satan, who advised Abraham not to commit the senseless murder of his one and only child Ishmael. Again Abraham pelted him with seven pieces of stone, and he too was transformed into a column of stone. This Satan is known as “Jamratul Wasta”.

As he neared the central hill of Monah, a third Satan made a final attempt to dissuade him. Abraham again threw seven pieces of stone at him and immediately this Satan also became a stone column known as “Jamratul Uqba”.

Muslims from all over the world pelt these three preserved stone monuments of the respective Satans with seven pieces of stone on each occasion. The first one for three days on the 10th, 11th and 12th of the lunar month of “Zil Haj” and the other two for two days each on the 11th and 12th “Zil Haj” in memory of Satan’s temptations of the Holy Prophet Abraham when he was taking Ishmael, his one and only beloved child, to sacrifice him in accordance with God’s orders.

When Abraham reached the top of the hill at Monah he told his

son about his dream. Ishmael replied: "Then please fulfil Allah's will, you will not find me wanting in courage to face death for Allah's pleasure". Thus when father and son had come to a mutual agreement Abraham fastened his son with the rope, after which he tied his own eyes with a piece of cloth, so that he may not see his son, for fear that fatherly love may prevent him from sacrificing his one and only son. Abraham struck the first blow with his knife but it did not cut. So he hit a second blow but without any success. Thinking his fatherly love was interfering with his duty to his Lord, he struck a hard blow and the knife cut through the body. He opened his eyes to be surprised to see that Ishmael was standing smiling on one side and a ram had been cut with his last blow. (page 217, Vol I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Abraham was very perplexed at seeing Ishmael safe, and a ram killed by his blow. He did not know what to make of it. Thinking that he had not yet fulfilled the order of God he picked up the bloodstained knife to strike Ishmael with it. Immediately the Angel Gabriel called out from above him "Abraham, Abraham lay not your hands upon Ishmael, nor do any harm to Ishmael, for now you have already proved that you are a Muslim (*i.e.* one who surrendered himself to the Will of God) and to fulfil His orders and pleasures you have not even spared your one and only son Ishmael born to you at the old age of 86 years, without any news of any more sons or daughters. It was I who, under Allah's orders, prevented your knife from hurting Ishmael when you struck twice. It was I, who under Allah's orders; replaced Ishmael with a ram sent by Allah from heaven and which was sacrificed instead of Ishmael. Therefore, know that your sacrifice of your one and only beloved son Ishmael in the ways of Allah is complete and has been fully accepted by Allah with the greatest pleasure".

The Torah confirms these incidents as follows:

"And Abraham stretched forth his hand, and took the knife to slay his son.

"And the Angel of the Lord called unto him out of heaven, and said Abraham, Abraham: and he said, Here am I.

“And he (the Angel Gabriel) said, Lay not thine hand (any further) upon the lad, neither do thou anything (*i.e.* harm) unto him: for now I know that thou fearest God, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine ONLY son from (being sacrificed to) ME” (Genesis 22: 10-12).

When Abraham heard all this he fell onto the ground in ecstasy and offered thanksgiving to his Creator.

Accordingly on the 10th day of the lunar month of “Zil Haj” every year all over the world Muslims celebrate “Eid-e-Abram” or “Feast of Abraham” by sacrificing rams on this day. Whilst those Muslims from all over the world, who have had the good fortune to go on the holy pilgrimage of Hajj to Mecca, perform this sacrifice of the ram also on the 10th of “Zil Haj” around the Hills at Monah and its surrounding plains at the very same spot where Abraham had performed this sacrifice of his one and only beloved son Ishmael. Thus the Muslims recall the “Great Sacrifice” of Abraham by repeating in the minutest detail—the performances of the great Prophet Abraham and his great son Prophet Prince Ishmael (peace of Allah be on them).

God Almighty was extremely pleased with Abraham’s prayers of thanksgiving because his one and only beloved son Ishmael had been spared. So when Abraham finished his prayers, the Angel Gabriel again spoke to him for the second time and informed him:

You have willingly agreed to carry out God’s orders even when it required of you to sacrifice your one and only beloved son Ishmael, especially when you had no news whatsoever of any further children or grandchildren, and all that at the ripe old age of about 99 years. Also your son Ishmael had willingly agreed to offer himself in sacrifice to appease God Almighty. Therefore Allah had decided to bless Ishmael with the Promised Prophet of the final period of the earth through whom the whole world would be blessed.

God had resolved to bless Abraham fully, so that he would not have to undergo any further great trials.



As a reward for this great sacrifice of his one and only beloved son Ishmael, Allah promised to disclose shortly to Abraham how he proposed to multiply his seed, as the stars in heaven and as the grains of sand, on the sea shore. These details were revealed exactly one month after the incident of the sacrifice of Ishmael on the 10th of “Zil Haj”. These revelations were made to Abraham on Thursday the 9th of Muharram by the three Angels, who destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah on Friday the 10th day of the lunar month of Muharram in 1919 B.C. as we have just read in the previous section.

Accordingly the most auspicious and fortunate year of Abraham’s life would be the coming twelve months between 1919 and 1918 B.C. (*i.e.* from Ishmael being saved from the sacrifice till the birth and circumcision of Isaac) or the period when Abraham was between 99 and 100 years old.

Abraham then returned to Beersheba after handing over the charge of Ishmael to his mother.

This is confirmed in the Holy Bible as follows:

“And the angel of the Lord called unto Abraham out of heaven the second time (*i.e.* when he had finished his prayers of thanksgiving to the Lord after his one and only son had been saved from the sacrifice).

“And said, by myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son (who at that point of time was Ishmael and there was till then no news of any further children to carry on the name of Abraham):

“And in thy seed (through this one and only child *i.e.* Ishmael) shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed My voice (and offered thy only son Ishmael in sacrifice to God’s pleasures).

“That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of heaven and as the sand which is upon the sea shore ...

“So Abraham returned unto his young men, and they rose up and went together to Beersheba; and Abraham dwelt at Beersheba” (Genesis 22: 15-19).

The last of the Heavenly Books also confirms briefly this incident of the sacrifice of Ishmael, and the conversations between father and son. As a recompense for this incident, Allah after a short time of one month, disclosed to Abraham the fact of his being blessed with Isaac; his second son in the following passages:

“My Lord! Grant me (out) of the doers of good deeds,

“So We (Allah) gave him tidings (through Princess Hagar of Egypt) of a gentle son (Ishmael).

“And when (Ishmael) was old enough to walk with him, (Abraham) said: O my dear son, I have seen in a dream that I must sacrifice thee. So look, what thinkest thou? He said O my father! Do thou which thou art commanded. Allah willing, thou shalt find me of the steadfast.

“Then, when they had both “Islama” (*i.e.* surrendered to the Will of Allah) and he (Abraham) had flung him (Ishmael) down upon his face.

“We (Allah) called unto him: O Abraham!

“Thou hast already fulfilled the vision. Lo! thus do We (Allah) reward the good.

“Lo! that verily was a clear test.

“Then We (Allah) ransomed him with a tremendous victim.

“And We (Allah) left for him among the later folk (the salutation):

“Peace be unto Abraham!

“Thus do We (Allah) reward the good.

“Lo! he is one of our believing slaves.

“Thereafter (*i.e.* after a month) We (Allah) gave him (Abraham) tiding of the birth of Isaac, a Prophet of the righteous”. (Qur’an 37: 100-112).

## G. Some Forgeries in Relation to Abraham

It is indeed regrettable that certain people take great pains in forging or destroying the Holy Scriptures with the object of misguiding and deceiving the world. Let us consider a few such instances in relation to Abraham, the friend of Allah.

### 1. “And He (God) Said (To Abraham), Take Now Thy Son, Thine Only Son, Whom Thou Lovest”

Abraham was blessed with his first son Ishmael when he was 86 years old (Genesis 16: 15-16).

Isaac was Abraham’s second son. Abraham was 100 years old when Isaac was born (Genesis 21: 5).

Therefore Ishmael was 14 years of age when Isaac was born.

Abraham died at the age of 175 years and was buried by Ishmael then aged 89 years and Isaac aged 75 years (Genesis 25: 7-9).

Ishmael died at the age of 137 years (Genesis 25: 17).

The facts that emerge from these divine records are that Ishmael was the *one and only son* of Abraham for a period of fourteen years *i.e.* until the birth of Isaac. At no time after the birth of Isaac, was Abraham with *only one son*.

Hence it becomes self evident that some wicked mischief maker has distorted the Holy Bible, deleted the name of Ishmael and interpolated the name of Isaac, who was never the *one and only son* of Abraham at any stage of Abraham’s life as shown above from the Holy Bible.

The falsified Bible therefore reads as follows:

“And He (God) said (to Abraham), Take now thy son; thine only son (Ishmael has been deleted and replaced with) Isaac, whom thou lovest, and get thee into the land of Moriah (in Arabic “Monah” a group of hills about 6 miles out of Mecca, the place to which Baby

Ishmael and Hagar were exiled out of the jealousy of Sarah); and offer him there for a burnt offering upon one of the mountains which I will tell thee of” (Genesis 22: 2).

Thus it is clear that according to the Holy Bible the *one and only son* of Abraham for fourteen years before the birth of Isaac was Ishmael. Consequently it was Ishmael and none other, who must have been taken by Abraham to be sacrificed and that also at a place near Mecca and not a place near Beersheba, the residence of Abraham. This incident therefore took place not only before the birth of Isaac but also before the foretelling of the birth of Isaac had been revealed to Abraham. Otherwise, the very essence of the trial faced by Abraham in this respect would have been lost. Because Abraham could have very well consoled himself with the thought that even though God was taking away Ishmael, who was his first and naturally most loved son, yet instead He (Allah) was going to give him another son or Isaac as compensation. Then the very significance and importance of the trial faced by Abraham would no longer be valid. For this incident to be a real or a severe test for Abraham, it was obligatory that Abraham should face this ordeal when he had his *one and only son*, Ishmael, and no knowledge whatsoever of any further children. This is also substantiated from the Qur’an and the historical records of Abraham already quoted earlier from “*Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*”. Even “*Ehsan Ul Muwaiz*” and other historical studies confirm that it was Ishmael the *one and only son* of Abraham at that point of time, who was taken for the sacrifice which took place actually before the prediction of the birth of Isaac. This is further proved from the divine title blessed upon Ishmael by God. He was the fourth prophet out of eight to be given such an honour *viz*:

“*La Illaha Illal-laahu Ismail Zabiullah*”

**Translation:** “There is none worthy of divine worship except Allah (and) Ishmael (is the one who willingly offered himself) is the sacrifice to Allah”. The other divine titles are listed in Chapter 8: I.

Hence the interpolation of the name of Isaac for Ishmael as the

only son, who was taken for the sacrifice is a deliberate attempt to misguide the unsuspecting millions all over the world.

Here is a text from the New Testament:

“For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a free woman”.

“But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh; but he of the freewoman was by promise” (Galatians 4: 22-23).

Genesis 16: 3 tells us that the Egyptian Hagar, was married to Abraham. In Genesis 16: 7-12, is recorded the visit of the Angel Gabriel telling Princess Hagar that she was already pregnant even though just married to Abraham and that the child was a blessed one and his name would be Ishmael.

When Abraham was ninety nine years old, he was forewarned of the birth of Isaac.

Sarah died at the age of 127 years. Abraham was then 137 years (Genesis 23: I, 2).

After the death of Sarah (Princess Hagar having died even earlier), Abraham married Keturah (Genesis 25: I) and through her, he had six sons (Genesis 25: 2) till his death at the age of 175 years (Genesis 25: 8). The names of these six sons are:

1. Zimran
2. Jokshan
3. Medan
4. Midian
5. Ishbak
6. Shuah (Genesis 25: 2)

Abraham, therefore, had eight sons through three wives. Hence the statements made in Galatians 4: 22-23 that he had only two sons and only two wives are both false, misleading and contradictory to

Genesis 25: 1-2.

Further, this statement mentions that only one of these two sons was born by a promise of God. But the Holy Bible proves that angels foretold the birth of two of these eight sons *viz*: Ishmael (Genesis 16: 6-11) and Isaac (Genesis 17: 16). Hence the remaining six through the third wife may be termed: “after the flesh”. Thus the passages quoted above from Galatians 4: 22-23 are fabrications according to even the Holy Bible.

## **2. The Two Forgeries In Relation To Hagar and Ishmael**

- a. From Genesis 16: 7-11, we read that Hagar, who had been married to Abraham (Genesis 16: 3) hardly a week earlier, had been informed by the Angel Gabriel that she was already pregnant and should return to Abraham inspite of the unwarranted persecution of Sarah punching her ear-lobes and beating her out of envy. The exact phrase in the Holy Bible being:

“God had heard her (Princess Hagar’s) affliction (by Sarah out of jealousy)” (Genesis 16: 11). A girl who was only 17 years of age and only just married for less than a week—could not by any stretch of the imagination have come to know that she was already pregnant, until God honoured her with the direct visit of Angel Gabriel thus raising her status to the honoured position of being the first woman to receive a visit of the Angel Gabriel since the creation of mankind. If Sarah was in the right she would surely not have been denied such a unique distinction by God!

When Hagar did not know and could not have known within one week of her marriage that she was already pregnant than the following passage of the Holy Bible **MUST BE** a definite fraud:

“And he (Abraham) went in unto Hagar, and she conceived: and

when she saw that she has conceived (this is a forgery as a girl of 17 years of age could never have come to know that she had conceived in the very first night of her marriage), her mistress was despised in her eyes (How could this be possible?).

“And Sarai said unto Abraham, my wrong be upon thee: I have given my maid into thy bosom: and when she saw that she had conceived, I was despised in her eyes: The Lord judge between me and thee.

“But Abram said unto Sarai, Behold, thy maid is in thy hand; do to her as it pleaseth thee. And when Sarai dealt hardly with her, she fled from her face” (Genesis 16: 4-6).

Hagar came to know for the first time that she was pregnant, after she had already been tortured and beaten by Sarah and only after she had fled from the house of Abraham for Egypt. Whilst she was fleeing did the Angel Gabriel come before her and announced she was pregnant (Genesis 16: 11). Therefore, Hagar could not have despised Sarah even before she knew she was pregnant. Hence the passages Genesis 16: 4-6 are absolutely incorrect.

- b. From Genesis 21: 19 it is clear that Ishmael was so very small, when left in the wilderness, that he had to be fed water from a bottle by his mother. Isaac was born 14 years after this incident. Therefore, when Isaac was weaned, neither Ishmael nor his mother were present.

They had been sent a way more than 14 years earlier and they were never brought back. Hence the under mentioned passages of the Holy Bible are certainly erroneous:

“And Sarah saw the son of Hagar, the Egyptian, which she had born unto Abraham (who had not been there for 14 years before the birth of Isaac), mocking” (Genesis 21: 9).

Since Hagar and Ishmael had not been there for now more than 14 years, how could Ishmael have mocked Isaac?

Thus it is clear that both these forgeries have been inserted to cover up Sarah's jealousy on these two occasions. If Hagar was in the wrong and Sarah in the right as depicted by these forgeries, then the Angel Gabriel would not have visited Hagar twice, once after each of these two incidents; an honour no woman had received till then!

### 3. The Firstborn and Heir of Abraham

From the time of Adam the Divine Laws on the rights, privileges and position of the "*First born*" who is the heir, are recorded in the Torah as follows:

"If a man has two wives, one beloved, and another hated, and they have borne him children, both the beloved and the hated; and if the firstborn son be hers that was hated:

*"Then it shall be*, when he maketh his sons to inherit that which he hath, that he *may not* make the son of the beloved firstborn before the son of the hated which is *indeed the firstborn*:

*"But he shall acknowledge the son of the hated for the firstborn, by giving him a double portion of all that He hath: for He is the beginning of his strength; The right of the firstborn is His"* (Deuteronomy 21: 15-17).

Under these laws Ishmael was not only the firstborn but also the heir of Abraham!

Further, the under mentioned passage of the Old Testament shows that Sarah was opposed to God's laws, hence she is portrayed as a sinner in the Holy Bible:

"Wherefore she (Sarah) said unto Abraham ... for the son of this bondwoman shall not be heir with my son, even with Isaac" (Genesis 21: 10).

Thus the Holy Bible proves that Sarah was not only a jealous woman but she was also a sinner and was overriding Abraham all the time according to the Holy Bible.



That God not only upheld Ishmael as the seed of Abraham but also protected him from his babyhood is seen from the following passages of the Holy Bible:

“And God heard the voice of the lad (*i.e.* the baby Ishmael); and the angel of God called to Hagar out of heaven, and said unto her, What aileth thee, Hagar? fear not; for God hath heard the voice of the lad (Ishmael) where he is (under the shrub and has caused a spring of water to burst forth out of the ground).

“Arise, lift up the lad and hold him in thine hand; for I (the Lord, God) will make him a great nation (because he is Abraham’s seed as confirmed in Genesis 21: 13).

“And God opened her eyes, and she saw a spring of water (sprouting out of the ground where the little hands and legs of baby Ishmael were hitting the ground, because this spot where he was lying was a blessed spot); and she went (running), and filled the bottle with water, and gave the lad to drink (as he was too small even to drink by himself).

“And God was with the lad; and he grew up and dwelt in the wilderness, and became an archer” (Genesis 21: 17-20).

Abraham recognised Ishmael not only as his first born but also as more beloved than Isaac. That God accepted this position also will be clear from the Holy Bible:

“And Abraham said unto God, O that (my beloved) Ishmael (might be blessed with a child instead of Isaac to me in my old age and) live before thee!

“And (God said through the Angels sent to destroy Sodom and Gomorrah) as for Ishmael I have heard thee (Abraham): Behold I have blessed him, and will make him fruitful, and will multiply him exceedingly; twelve princes shall he beget, and I will make him a great nation” (Genesis 17: 18 and 20).

Therefore the following passage of the Holy Bible must be a fabrication for God does not lie!

“And God said unto Abraham ... for in Isaac shall thy seed be called”  
(Genesis 21: 12).

#### **4. The Twelve Princes**

In Genesis 17: 20 we read that God had promised that Ishmael would be blessed with twelve princes.

The names of these twelve sons of Ishmael are to be found in Genesis 25: 13-15. Their father Prince Ishmael was not a king of any place but lived the life of an archer in the wilderness of Paran (Genesis 21: 20-21), Hence the question of his sons being called princes for this reason does not arise. None of his twelve sons were kings of any place. They all lived as one joint family. Their descendants are the Arab Nation. They were only a single unit or nation. Then what is the reason or meaning behind God addressing them as “twelve princes” in the Holy Bible?

The only logical reason for their being called princes is because their grandmother Princess Hagar was third in the line of succession to the throne of Egypt, her brother Amenemhait II, being the first and his son the second in the said line. Therefore Prince Ishmael was (fourth in the line of succession to the throne of Egypt. Accordingly the children of Prince Ishmael were called hereditary princes!

As Princess Hagar was the daughter of the Pharaoh Senusrit I and Queen Nufrit who ruled over Egypt from 1971 to 1928 B.C. is it not very strange indeed to call her a “Bond-maid” in the Holy Bible? When a wonderful and fabulous engineering feat was performed by digging a canal from the River Nile to the Red Sea to enable the Pharaohs to alleviate the necessities of Hagar, could such a person by any stretch of the imagination be a slave girl or rather was she not the rightful princess of Egypt? Is it not very wrong to describe a “Princess” of a ruling Kingdom as a “Bond-woman”?

In spite of every effort to run down Princess Hagar and Prince Ishmael the forgers of the Holy Bible have been exposed as they

overlooked and forgot to delete the word “Princes” from the Holy Bible:

“And as for Ishmael, I have heard thee: Behold, I have blessed him, and will make him fruitful, and will multiply him exceedingly; twelve *Princes* shall he beget, and I will make him A (*Single*) Great Nation (and not twelve principdoms or nations)” (Genesis 17: 20). The emphasis is on “A (*Single*) Great Nation”.

## 5. The Reason for These Forgeries

One feels rather puzzled as to what could be gained out of these forgeries.

The prime reason apparently is to misguide the world to believe that the promised seed of Abraham through whom the whole world would be blessed is going to come out of the descendants of Isaac instead of Ishmael. Hence the interpolation of the name of Isaac in place of Ishmael in Genesis 22: 2 as pointed out earlier.

They knew from the under mentioned passages of the Holy Bible that the promised seed would be from that son of Abraham, who was being taken to be sacrificed.

The relevant passage of the Holy Bible confirms this:

“And said, By myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, for because thou hast done this thing and hast not withheld thy son, *Thine only son*:

“That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed (*i.e.* Ishmael thy Only son at this point of time) as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed (Ishmael) shall possess the gate of his enemies;

“And in thy seed (Ishmael) shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice” (Genesis 22: 16-18).

As we go on we shall read the numerous forgeries that have been incorporated in the Holy Bible to misguide the world from the promised seed of Abraham, through whom the world would be blessed. Thus several passages have been falsified of the Holy Bible with this

ambitious purpose to lead astray millions of innocent people all over the world. But by distorting passages in the Holy Bible can one ever hope to stop or alter God's decrees and decisions? Is it not the height of folly on the part of mischief-makers, whereby they misguide many millions?

## 6. Jesus Proves the Forgeries

Jesus had confirmed to his disciples the forgeries introduced by the Jewish Rabbis in Genesis, the first book of Moses, on pages 101-105 of "*The Gospel of Barnabas*" edited and translated by Lonsdale and Laura Ragg (See Chapter 12: F-12) as follows:

"Then said Andrew: 'Thou hast told us many things of the Messiah, therefore of thy kindness tell us clearly all.' And in like manner the other disciples besought him.

"Accordingly Jesus said: 'Everyone that worketh, worketh for an end in which he findeth satisfaction. Wherefore I say unto you that God, verily because He is perfect, hath not need of satisfaction, seeing that He hath satisfaction in Himself. And so, willing to work, He created before all things the soul of His messenger, for whom He determined to create the whole, in order that the creatures should find joy and blessedness in God, whence His messenger should take delight in all His creatures, which He had appointed to be his slaves. And wherefore is this so, save because thus He hath willed?

"Verily I say unto you, that every prophet when he is come hath borne to one nation only the mark of the mercy of God. And so their words were not extended save to that people to which they were sent. But the messenger of God, when he shall come, God shall give to him as it were the seal of His hand, insomuch that he shall carry salvation and mercy to all the nations of the world that shall receive his doctrine. He shall come with power upon the ungodly, and shall destroy idolatry, insomuch that he shall carry salvation and mercy to all the nations of the world that shall receive his doctrine. He shall come with power upon the ungodly, and shall

destroy idolatry, insomuch that he shall make Satan confounded; for so promised God to Abraham, saying: "Behold in thy seed I will bless all the tribes of the earth; and as thou hast broken into pieces the idols, O Abraham, even so shall thy seed do".

"James answered: 'O Master, tell us in whom this promise was made; for the Jews say "in Isaac," and the Ishmaelites say "in Ishmael".'

"Jesus answered: 'David, whose son was he, and of what lineage?'

"James answered: 'Of Isaac; for Isaac was the father of Jacob, and Jacob was the father of Judah, of whose lineage is David.'

"Then said Jesus: 'And the messenger of God when he shalt come of what lineage will he be?'

"The disciples answered: 'Of David'.

"Whereupon Jesus said: Ye deceive yourselves; for David in spirit calleth him lord, saying thus: 'God said to my lord, sit thou on my right hand until I make thine enemies thy footstool. God shall send forth thy rod which shall have lordship in the midst of thine enemies.' If the messenger of God whom ye call Messiah were the son of David, how should David call him lord? Believe me, for verily I say to you, that the promise was made in Ishmael, not in Isaac'.

"Thereupon said the disciples: 'O master, it is written in the book of Moses, that in Isaac was the promise made.'

"Jesus answered with a groan: 'It is so written, but Moses wrote it not, nor Joshua, but rather our rabbis who fear not God. Verily I say unto you, that if ye consider the words of angel Gabriel, ye shall discover the malice of our scribes and doctors. For the angel said "*Abraham, all the world shall know how God lovest thee; but how shall 'the world know the love that thou bearest to God? Assuredly it is necessary that thou do something for love of God.*" Abraham answered: "*Behold the servant of God is ready to do all that which God shall will.*"

"Then spoke God, saying to Abraham:

*“Take thy son, thy firstborn Ishmael, and come up the mountain to sacrifice him” (Genesis 22: 2).*

How is Isaac firstborn, if when Isaac was born Ishmael was several years old?” (Ishmael was born when Abraham was 86 years old—Genesis 16: 16. Isaac was born when Abraham was 100 years old—Genesis 21: 5. Thus Ishmael was 14 years old when Isaac was born).

“Then said the disciples: Clear is the deception of our doctors: therefore tell us thou the truth, because we know that thou art sent from God.’

“Then answered Jesus: *‘Verily I say unto you, that Satan ever seeketh to annul the laws of God; and therefore he with his followers, hypocrites and evil doers, the former with false doctrine, the latter with lewd living, today have contaminated almost all things, so that scarcely is the truth found. Woe to the hypocrites: for the praises of this world turn for them into insults and torments in hell.*

“I therefore say unto you that the messenger of God is a ‘splendour’ that shall give gladness to nearly all that God hath made, for he is adorned with the spirit of understanding and of counsel, the spirit of wisdom and might, the spirit of fear and love, the spirit of prudence and temperance; he is adorned with the spirit of charity and mercy, the spirit of justice and piety, the spirit of gentleness and patience, which he had received from God three times more than he hath given to all his creatures. O blessed time, when he shall come to the world: *Believe me that I have seen him (and have done him reverence, even as every prophet hath seen him): seeing that of his spirit God giveth to them prophecy (i.e. prophethood)’ And when I saw him my soul was filled with consolation, saying: “O Mohammed, God be with thee, and may He make me worthy to untie thy shoe latchet, for obtaining this I shall be a great prophet and holy one of God”.*

“And having said this, Jesus rendered his thanks to God.”

## H. Building the Holy House of God Almighty

The Kaabah at Mecca was a place of pilgrimage for Angels from 2,000 years before the advent of Adam (page 103, Vol. I, *Tafirhul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

When Adam and Eve committed their first act of disobedience they were sent out of the “Garden of Eden” and exiled on the face of the earth. For what the act of disobedience was and its consequences refer to Chapter 20: A, B, C, D, and E.

Adam cried and asked God for forgiveness but this was not granted until he made a reference in his prayers saying “O Creator! Please forgive my sins in the name of that beloved of Yours whose name appeared with Your (God’s) name in Heaven”. The Hebrew text of the Holy Bible even today gives the name of the “Beloved of God” (see Chapter 17: C 6) as Muhammad. This sentence was: “*La Illaaha Illal laahu Mahummadur Rosoolullah*” (Translation from Arabic into English: There is none worthy of divine worship except Allah and Muhammad is the messenger of Allah) see Chapter 8: I. Immediately upon this reference to the name of Muhammad the promised seed through whom the world would be blessed, God Almighty forgave Adam and Eve and reunited them on the ninth day of the lunar month of ‘Zil Haj’ on the plains of “Arafat”, which means “re-union”.

On this plain there is a small hill named “Rahmat” which means “Blessings”. It was here that Adam and Eve prayed the whole day and thanked Allah for His Mercy. At sundown they left for Kaabah, which is about 12 miles from this place. They spent the night en route at Muzdalfah about 4 miles from Arafat. On the morning *i.e.* the tenth day of ‘Zil Haj’ the Angel Gabriel took them to the Kaabah and showed them how to perform Hajj. (Page 103, Vol. I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). Thus the first pilgrimage of Hajj was undergone by man. Eve spent her life in the vicinity of Kaabah and lies buried at Jeddah about 30 miles away.

Adam performed the pilgrimage of Hajj 40 times during his lifetime (page 107, Vol. I, *ibid*).

The building of the Kaabah was bodily lifted up to heaven just before the great Deluge of 2370 B.C. (page 104, Vol. I, *ibid*).

In 1885 B.C. when Abraham was 133 years old, he was ordered by God to go to Mecca or the wilderness of Paran (as it was then called) and rebuild the Kaabah (page 224, Vol. I, *ibid*), with the aid of Ishmael who was then 47 years old and had been dwelling over there from the time he was a few months old. Several angels also assisted them in the rebuilding which was done on the old original foundations which Ishmael dug up again (pages 225-235, Vol. I, *ibid*).

These angels brought stones for the building from various mountains and hills which were going to be declared holy later on. These included mount Zion on which the temple of Jerusalem was to be built.

The sacred stone known as “Aswad”, a white stone from heaven was fitted in one of the corners of the Kaabah’s outer wall foundation. When anyone kissed this stone it had the effect of drawing out evil thoughts from the person concerned and making him purer in his thoughts and deeds. As it drew out the sins of mankind, its original white colour gradually became blacker. Now it is generally blackish in colour except for a few small greyish white spots.

Abraham’s finger and hand-imprints were found on this stone at the time of setting “Aswad” in the corner. These hand-prints of Abraham were mistaken by ignorant people at a later stage as faded carvings of idols on it (page 230, Vol. I, *ibid*).

A few of the numerous references appearing in the Qur’an are given hereunder, which will explain satisfactorily the importance of Kaabah or House of God rebuilt by Abraham and Ishmael at Mecca.

The prayer of Abraham for a prophet from the descendants of Ishmael, who will recite the revelations of God Almighty and guide



men to goodness and piety is also contained in these passages. The only prophet born from the descendants of Ishmael is Muhammad, who was born and brought up at Mecca. Hence the prayer of Abraham at the time of rebuilding the Kaabah was fulfilled in the coming of the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace of Allah be on him).

A few of the relevant passages are quoted hereunder:

“And (remember) when his Lord tried Abraham with (His) commands, and he fulfilled them He said: Lo! I have appointed thee a leader for mankind. (Abraham) asked: And of my offspring (will there be leaders)? He said: My covenant includeth not wrongdoers.

“And when We (Allah) made the House (at Mecca) a resort for mankind and, sanctuary, (saying): Take as your place of worship the place where Abraham faced (to pray). And We (Allah) imposed a duty upon Abraham and Ishmael, (saying): (Rebuild and) Purify My House for those who go around and those who meditate therein and those who bow down and prostrate themselves (in worship).

“And when Abraham prayed: My Lord! Make this a region of security and bestow upon its people fruits, such of them as believe in Allah and the Last Day, He answered: As for him who disbelieveth, I shall leave him in contentment for a while, then I shall compel him to the doom of fire—a hapless journey’s end!

“And when Abraham and Ishmael were raising the foundations of the House, (Abraham prayed): Our Lord! Accept from us (this duty). Lo! Thou, only Thou, art the Hearer, the Knower.

“Our Lord! And make us both “Muslims” (*i.e.* submissive unto Thee) and of our seed, a nation of “Muslims” (*i.e.* submissive unto Thee), and show us our ways of worship, and relent toward us. Lo! Thou, only Thou, art the Relenting, the Merciful.

“Our Lord! And raise up in their midst (*i.e.* the children of Ishmael) a prophet from among them who shall recite unto them Thy revelations, and shall instruct them in the Scripture and in wisdom and shall make them grow. Lo! Thou, only Thou, art the Mighty, the Wise. (From the children of Prophet Prince Ishmael only one single Prophet has come—*i.e.* “Muhammad” in answer to this

prayer of Abraham).

“And who forsaketh the religion of Abraham save him who befooleth himself? Verily We (Allah) chose him in the world, and Lo! in the Hereafter he is among the righteous.

“When his Lord said unto him: ‘*Aslim*’ (*i.e.* Surrender)! he said: ‘*Aslamto*’ (*i.e.* I have surrendered to) the Lord of the entire creation.

“The same did Abraham enjoin upon his sons, and also Jacob, (saying): O my sons! Lo! Allah hath chosen for you the (true) religion; therefore die not unless you are “Muslims” (*i.e.* as one who has surrendered unto Him).

“Or were ye present when death came to Jacob, when he said unto his sons: What will ye worship after me? They said: We shall worship thy God, the God of thy fathers, Abraham and Ishmael and Isaac. The One God, and unto Him we are ‘Muslims’ (*i.e.* surrendered).

“Those are a people who have passed away. Theirs is that which they earned, and yours that which ye earn. And ye will not be asked of what they used to do.

“And they say: Be Jews or Nazarenes, then ye will be rightly guided. Say (unto them, O Muhammad): Nay, but (we follow) the religion of Abraham, the upright, and he was not of the idolaters.

“Say (O Muslim): We believe in Allah and that which is revealed unto us and that which was revealed unto Abraham, and Ishmael, and Isaac, and Jacob, and the tribes and that which was given to Moses and Jesus (*i.e.* the Torah and Evangel respectively) and that which the prophets received from their Lord. *We make no distinction between any them*, and unto Him we are “Muslims” (*i.e.* as one who has surrendered unto Him).

“And if they believe in the like of that which ye believe, then are they rightly guided. But if they turn away, then are they in schism. And Allah will suffice thee (for defence) against them. He is the Hearer, the Knower.

“(We take our) colour from Allah, and who is better than Allah at

colouring? We are His worshippers.

“Say (unto) the people of the Scriptures, (*i.e.* the Jews and the Nazarenes): Dispute ye with us concerning Allah when He is our Lord and your Lord? Ours are our works and yours, your works. We look to Him alone.

“Or say ye that Abraham, and Ishmael and Isaac, and Jacob, and the tribes were Jews or Nazarenes? Say: Do ye know best, or doth Allah? And who is more unjust than he who hideth a testimony which he hath received from Allah? Allah is not unaware of what ye do” (Qur’an 2: 124-140).

The building of this altar to Allah and that the surrounding area would be the chosen land for the descendants of Abraham is also mentioned briefly in the Torah as:

“And the Lord appeared unto Abram, and said, Unto thy seed will I give this land: and there builded he an altar unto the Lord, who appeared unto him” (Genesis 12: 7).

## **I. The Voice of Him That Crieth in The Wilderness Inviting Mankind to The Way of Allah**

When Abraham completed the rebuilding of Kaabah with the assistance of his first born son Ishmael and performed Hajj, he was ordered by God to climb up the surrounding hills and announce three times in a loud voice “Come for Hajj Pilgrimage to Bait-Ullah (*i.e.* House of God, which is now ready (*i.e.* rebuilt and purified), O mankind! either on foot or on transport from far-off lands” (extract from Qur’an 22: 26-27).

“Oh my Lord: There is not a single person or thing, not even an animal or a bird or a tree in this wilderness of Paran (Mecca) which is in the middle of the desert, who is there to hear my voice and come to pray at your “Bait-Ullah”? I am a voice that crieth in the wilderness inviting mankind to the way of Allah” (page 243, Vol. I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

The reference to this call of Abraham from the top of the hills of the wilderness in the desert in compliance with God's orders is mentioned in the Holy Bible in the following passage:

"The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, prepare ye the way of the Lord, make straight in the desert a highway for our God" (Isaiah 40: 3).

Besides Abraham there has been only one other prophet of God who was ordered to make a similar public proclamation which was also fulfilled by the deliberate Will of God from the very same hills around Mecca, thereby inviting mankind to the worship of the One and Alone, the Almighty Creator.

At the end of the third year of Holy Prophet Muhammad's teachings, he received the following order at Mecca:

"O thou enveloped in thy (woollen) cloak,

"Arise and warn!

"Thy Lord magnify,

"Thy raiment purify,

"Pollution shun!

"And show not favour, seeking worldly gain!

"For the sake of thy Lord, be patient!" (Qur'an 74: 1-7).

Till now Muhammad had been preaching the message only to relatives and friends. So the next morning he ascended one of the surrounding hills and called out to the inhabitants just as Abraham had done 2,500 years earlier.

It was the custom amongst the Meccans that whenever anybody had some very important information to give concerning the welfare of the city and its population, he would climb up the hill and shout out calling all the people, who would come to listen, leaving aside all other work. Accordingly all the elders of the town assembled to hear the momentous message that Muhammad had to give to them.

Muhammad asked them: "If I say there is an army of enemies on the other side of this hill would you believe me?"

They replied with one voice: "O Muhammad! you have never lied in your life and that is the reason why we have given you the title of 'AL-AMIN', the trustworthy. Therefore if you say there is an army of enemies on the other side of this hill we would implicitly believe you".

Then Muhammad explained that the chief reason for which he had called them was to tell them that there is no God save and except Allah, the one and the Alone, and he further pointed out the wretched folly of idolatry in the face of the tremendous laws of day and night, of life and death, of growth and decay, which all manifest the power of Allah and attest his sovereignty.

So annoyed were the Qureysh that they turned their backs upon him and left him speaking alone to the vast surrounding wilderness.

This incident in Muhammad's life which reproduced the call of Abraham in the wilderness of the desert is also mentioned in the New Testament:

"For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight" (St. Matthew 3: 3).

"As it is written in the book of the words of Esaias the prophet, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight" (St. Luke 3: 4).

Since no other prophet besides only these two have climbed upon a hill in the desert and exhorted mankind to the true worship of God Almighty, these three references including the one from Isaiah 40: 3 quoted earlier must evidently be in relation to either one or both of them.

When Abraham asked God: "O Lord! there is nobody over here to hear my call and answer it", God Almighty informed him that it was for Abraham to give the call in the wastes of Paran (Mecca) and it was

up to Him to get the call made by one calling in the desert wilderness, answered (page 243, Vol. I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

To-day we see several millions of people answering this call of Abraham each year with the answer:

“Labbaik—Allah Humma Labbaik

Labbaik—La Sharika laka Labbaik

Innal hamda waniamata laka wal mulka

La sharika laka”.

**Translation:** “I am present—Oh Allah I am present! I am present—Oh One who has no equals I am present! Indeed All Praise and good deeds and all kingdoms are yours. Oh One who has no equals”.

They start reciting this answer to Abraham’s call the moment they leave their homes for Mecca. These millions of Muslims come from each and every continent of the world, all speaking various languages, with different cultures, of diverse nationalities but all clothed in the same pilgrim’s robe for men—only two unstitched pieces of white linen cloth—right from the kings, presidents, ministers of various countries down to the poorest of the poor. They are all dressed in one manner allowing no distinction of any kind whatsoever between one man and another from the fairest white to the darkest brown and black in colour. All are bonded in one universal brotherhood of equality, love and peace—AL-ISLAM (*i.e.* all surrendered to the will of God—Thy Will be done on earth as it is in Heaven).

As soon as these pilgrims arrive at Mecca, they go straight to “Mukam-E-Ibrahim” *i.e.* “Station of Abraham” and offer prayers. Then they go round the Kaabah seven times as Abraham and Ishmael had done.

Thereafter they drink the Holy Sacred Water from the well of Zam Zam, which saved the baby Ishmael. They then make the seven trips between Safa and Marwah and pray as Princess Hagar had done,

running where she ran and walking where she walked. They spend the whole day at Arafat on the ninth day of Zil Haj and the night at Muzdalfah just as Adam and Eve had done upon being pardoned. Then they stone the three Satans at Monah with seven pieces of stones just as Abraham had done, and sacrifice the lamb at Monah in memory of the ram that was sacrificed instead of Ishmael. Finally they come back to the Kaabah at the wall of wailing where the Prophet Jacob son of the Prophet Isaac had cried for his son Joseph, when he was sold by his brothers. It was here that Jacob came to know that his beloved son Joseph was alive and he would meet Joseph in his old age before his death. The Muslims pray here for the grant of their wishes just as Jacob the grandson of Abraham had done.

In short the Muslims whilst on the Hajj Pilgrimage recall every single incident connected with prophets Adam, the first man, Abraham, Hagar, Ishmael and Jacob. The Prophet Moses was only one of the numerous Jewish prophets who had gone for Hajj Pilgrimage from the descendants of Isaac to Mecca.

When Moses reached “Raoha” a place some miles away from Kaabah he took two blankets with one he covered the lower part of his body and with the other the upper portion. This is called the wearing of the “Ehram” or Pilgrim’s robe worn by Muslims (page 233, Vol. I, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Moses went reciting “*Labbaik ... (etc.)*” just as Muslims do even today.

When Moses reached the hill “Safa” he heard the voice of God Almighty saying:

“Labbaik Abdi Anamaka”

**Translation:** “I am present, Oh my slave (Moses), I am with you”

Upon hearing this Moses fell onto the ground and worshipped the Lord.

All the Jewish Prophets whenever they had any great difficulties,

went for the Hajj pilgrimage to the Kaabah and prayed over there and their difficulties were solved.

The “Wall of Wailing” at Kaabah derives its name from the lamentations of the Prophet Jacob when he was separated from Joseph. Hagar and Ishmael lie buried on this side of the Wall of the Kaabah.

This “Bait-Ullah” (or House of Allah) was the place towards which Adam and Eve faced in their prayers. Abraham and all believers also turned their face towards Kaabah whilst praying. It was only after the building of the Temple of Jerusalem by the Prophet King Solomon (peace of Allah be on him) that the Jews were ordered to face towards Jerusalem in their prayers. This is confirmed in the following passage from the last of the Heavenly Books.

Lo! the first Sanctuary appointed for mankind was that at “Becca” (Mecca), a blessed place, a guidance to the peoples;

“Wherein are plain memorials (of Allah’s guidance); the place (Kaabah) where Abraham stood (*i.e.* faced) to pray; and whosoever entereth it (for Hajj pilgrimage), is safe. The (Hajj) pilgrimage to the “Bait-Ullah” is a duty unto Allah for mankind (from the time of Adam and Eve), for him who can find a way thither. As for him who disbelieveth, (let him know that) lo! Allah is Independent of (all) creatures.

“Say O People of the Scriptures (*i.e.* Jews and Nazarenes)! Why disbelieve ye in the revelations of Allah, when Allah (Himself) is Witness of what ye do (then have ye no fear that He is watching ye and will punish ye)?” (Qur’an 3: 96-98).

Thus the call of one crying in the wilderness in the middle of the desert is answered every year by the circumcised children and followers of Abraham—the Muslims in their millions. The manner in which they greet one another, the co-operation and goodwill they show on the occasion of the Hajj Pilgrimage in spite of the differences of languages, manners, customs, colour of their skin, and social status make one realise that mankind *is but one family and we are all brothers and equals*; Here is the best kind of unity for the human race despite its



diversity.

Here certainly is a cement which is actually moulding millions from different countries before our eyes into one brotherhood of love each year at Bait-Ullah or House of Allah. Therefore here is something available to the educated to study as to how we could get rid of the curse of God, which broke up the unity of mankind at King Nimrod's tower of Babel. This unity can once again be achieved by following the call of Abraham, the destroyer of Nimrod, the main cause for the curse of God at Babylon; by forsaking Nimrod's teachings of only begotten son of God born of the great virgin mother queen of the heavens, the trinity in unity, the lamb of the heavens come to save the baptised sinners by sitting on the right hand of God, the laws of God being a curse, sacramental feasts converting the sinners into pure sinless gods, the sign of the cross the initial letter of TAM-MUZ or "Fire the perfecter" and all other such Blasphemies and manifestations of idolatry *etc.*

The living example of the millions of Muslims (*i.e.* those surrendered to the Will of Allah) performing Hajj each year comprising different nationalities, races, cultures and languages from all over the world, is indeed an irrefutable proof of unity and Universal Brotherhood. It could be the answer to:

How to achieve a universal Brotherhood!

"International Peace and goodwill amongst mankind"





## Chapter 8

### Important events connected with Prophets



God Almighty has blessed each of his messengers with something exceptional. For the purpose of our study it will suffice to dwell on some of the noteworthy events.

Quite often God Almighty chooses to prove His laws with various types of miraculous exceptions to convince mankind that He is the Supreme Lord of all. He does whatsoever pleases Him. There is none to question His Authority. He has no equals and none comparable with Him in any way.

#### **A. Miraculous Births**

The most wonderful birth in human history has been that of Adam who was created in a unique manner by an act of God, without the necessity of either a Father or a Mother.

Eve is the next most miraculous, being created out of Adam but without any mother.

Lastly, the birth of Jesus from the womb of the Virgin Mary, without a father.

Thus God has shown that he can create human beings in any of the three unnatural ways, *viz*:

- Adam—without any Father or Mother.
- Eve—without any Mother but out of a Man, Adam.

- Jesus—without any Father but out of the Virgin Mary.

## **B. Raising the Dead to Life**

The first man to raise the dead to life was Abraham: When God bestowed upon him the title of “Khalil-Ullah” *i.e.* friend of Allah (Qur’an 4: 125) he was informed by the Angel Gabriel that God had blessed him with the powers to raise the dead to life. This miracle is briefly described in the Qur’an as under:

“And when Abraham said (unto his Lord): My Lord! Show me how thou givest life unto the dead. He said: Dost thou not believe? Abraham said: Yea, but (I ask) in order that my heart may be at ease. (His Lord) said: Take four of the birds (*i.e.* four different species. Abraham took a peacock, an eagle, a dove, and a cock), and cause them to incline unto thee (*i.e.* teach each of them to come flying when you call their respective names and when these birds have been trained then cut them up into small pieces and mix their pieces together). Then scatter a portion of this mixture of cut up pieces on each of the (several surrounding) hills, and call them, (and you will see before your eyes how the scattered parts will come flying from the various directions of the particular type of bird which you have called and you will see how) they will come to thee, (reassemble and come back to life) in haste. And know that Allah is Mighty, Wise” (Qur’an 2: 260).

For further details please refer to page 200, Vol. I, “*Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*”.

The second well-known incident of raising the dead to life was that of the son of a widow with whom Prophet Elijah was living. When the child died, Eijjah laid the widow’s son on his own bed and placed his own body over the dead child and prayed to God thrice and the child came back to life (I Kings 17: 17-24).

The third popular episode of raising the dead to life is quoted here from the Holy Bible:

“And Elisha died, and they buried him. And the bands of the

Moabites invaded the land at the coming in of the year.

“And it came to pass, as they were burying a man, that, behold, they spied a band of men and (through fear of being caught by this band of men and in order to save time) they cast the (dead body of) the man into the sepulchre of Elisha: and when the (dead) man was let down, and (no sooner had it) touched the bones of Elisha, he revived, and stood up on his feet” (2 Kings 13: 20-21).

From this incident it is further clarified that those who have spent their lives in the path of God are not really dead but their powers are still active. This is indeed a very important incident and clear proof of the most wondrous ways in which the Almighty showers His blessings upon His beloved even long after they completed their earthly span of life. Thus blessing them with eternal bliss and happiness—the proof that there is a reward of Heaven for those who surrender themselves to the Will of God.

After these prophets, the next to raise the dead to life was Jesus. He restored to life a widow’s son at Nain (St. Luke 7: 11-16).

As far as Islam is concerned almost all leading saints have raised the dead to life and thousands of miracles of this type can be quoted with full references and detailed data. Hence even though this is indeed a great miracle yet it is nevertheless extremely common amongst the saints of Islam. For details refer to Chapter 17: F-2.

### **C. Some Unique Miracles**

You will read in greater detail about some of the unparalleled Miracles of Muhammad in Chapter 17: F, 1-6.

1. The splitting of the Moon into two halves!
2. Raising the sun from the Western horizon after it had set.
3. The bringing out of streams of water from his fingers in a cup of water, in the wilderness to supply the requirements of a whole army of 34,000 men and all accompanying animals!

### **D. The Visit of Angel Gabriel to various Prophets**

On page 35, Vol. II, “*Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*” it is recorded that the Angel Gabriel visited some of the prophets as under:

- Adam had the honour of 12 visits.
- Enoch had the honour of 4 visits.
- Noah had the honour of 50 visits.
- Abraham had the honour of 42 visits.
- Moses had the honour of 400 visits.
- Jesus had the honour of 10 visits.
- Muhammad had the honour of 26,000 visits.

There were several other prophets who have received visits from angels. But as they are not so well known they have not been included in the above chart. Some of the famous ones include Prophets Lot and Zakariah. The three blessed ladies who received direct visits from Angels are Princess Hagar, the second wife of Abraham, the Virgin Mary, mother of Jesus and Amena, mother of Muhammad.

### **E. Raised Bodily Alive To Heaven**

There is evidence available that four prophets were honoured by God to be taken up in a living condition bodily to Heaven, *viz*:

1. Enoch was raised to Heaven bodily at the age of about 365 years (Genesis 5: 21-24).
2. Elijah was taken bodily to Heaven alive in the presence of Elisha in a flaming chariot (2 Kings 2: 9-15).
3. Jesus was raised bodily in a live condition to Heaven in the presence of his followers (St. Luke 24: 50-51 and Acts 1: 9).
4. Muhammad was raised bodily to heaven, shown around and returned to earth as described in Chapter 17: E-9.

The first two of these four have gone to Heaven and will not lead earthly lives any more, even though they may appear in bodily form temporarily for specific purposes just as Elijah appeared in a cave and had a private discussion with Muhammad in the presence of his disciples and Jesus re-appeared to guide his disciples.

Of the remaining two, Muhammad led an earthly life for over twelve years after this miraculous incident.

Jesus will also come again to earth and lead a normal life for a period of about 40 years (Chapter 29: C, 9-10). Then will Jesus marry, have children, and rule the Earth under one universal religion thus fulfilling the promise of “Jesus Nazarenæ Rex Iudæi” or “Jesus of Nazareth a King out of Jews” (Chapter 29: C-10).

## **F. The Three Adams**

For the differences between prehistoric men and ourselves and whether modern man has evolved out of the prehistoric men or Adam was a creation have been dealt with in detail in Chapter 17: B, 1-6. Until then let us take the various religious scriptures at their face value.

We are all familiar with Adam the first man and Eve his wife from whom the generations of mankind have come (Genesis 1: 27-28). Hence he is rightly termed the father of the human race.

When men became wicked God Almighty destroyed them by the great deluge about 2370 B.C. (Genesis 7: 1-24.) save and except Noah and his three sons and their wives. All the different nations of today are from the three children of Noah.

Hence Noah is not only the second of the modern Adams as compared to the prehistoric man but he is also the most significant because the present people of the world are divided in to three basic races from his three sons; Shem, Japheth and Ham (page 166, Vol. I, “*Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*”). See also Chapter 17: B, 1-6.

The third Adam is also a prophet like the first two but there is a

divergence between him and the others. The first two Adams are fathers of all mankind but the third is only the father of the nations of believers. Also all male members belonging to the third are circumcised. The Holy Bible refers to him as:

“Neither shall thy name any more be called Abram, but thy name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made thee” (Genesis 17: 5).

To make a distinction between the believing children of Abraham and the non-believers, a covenant was made at the same time by God:

“This is my covenant which ye shall keep, between me and you and thy seed after thee: Every man child among you shall be circumcised.

“He that is born in thy house and he that is bought with thy money, must needs be circumcised: and my covenant shall be in your flesh for an everlasting covenant.

“And the uncircumcised man child whose flesh of his fore skin is not circumcised, that soul shall be cut off from his people (*i.e.* those belonging to Abraham); he hath broken my covenant” (Genesis 17: 10, 13-14).

Therefore the uncircumcised people cannot be the followers of Abraham, the father of nations of believers.

### **G. The Chosen People of Allah**

It is an admitted fact that the Jews have always claimed to be the chosen people of Allah because they are the descendants of Isaac, the second son of Abraham. We all know that every time the Israelites transgressed the Divine laws they were punished and every time they repented they were forgiven by God. For taking to the religion of Nimrod, the City of Jerusalem and its temple were razed to the ground and the irony of it was that the Jews were made captives in 607 B.C. by Babylon itself, whose religion they were following (2 Kings 25: 1-21 and Jeremiah 52: 8-15).



From the Holy Bible we come to know that another set of people were also blessed.

“And as for Ishmael, I have heard thee (Abraham): Behold, I have blessed him, and will make him fruitful, and will multiply him exceedingly and I will make him a great nation (Genesis 17: 20).

Thus the Holy Bible confirms that the children of Ishmael have also been blessed by God to become a great nation.

These Ishmaelities at Mecca took to idolatry just as their brethren the Israelites did at Jerusalem. They still called the Kaabah “Bait Ullah” or the “House of Allah”, but the chief objects of worship were a number of idols, which were called intermediaries to plead before Allah for the wicked sinners.

When Jerusalem and its holy temple were demolished and the Israelites punished by being taken as slaves to Babylon for adopting the teachings of King Nimrod, *i.e.* the worship of Baal, the Sacred Heart and his initial “Tau”, the cross of Tammuz then the Ishmaelites of Mecca certainly also deserved a similar punishment, when they took to idolatry.

History informs us that Abraha, the Abyssinian ruler of Al Yemen, had sent a large army of 70,000 soldiers equipped with fighting elephants under General Aryat against the Ishmaelites (page 142, Vol. 1, “*Siratun Nabi*” by Sulaiman Munsoorpuri, sixth edition). His purpose was to destroy Kaabah, raze Mecca to the ground and make its inhabitants slaves just as Nebuchadnezzar, King of Babylon, had done to Jerusalem in 607 B.C.

The Ishmaelites, seeing this formidable army, fled into the surrounding hills helplessly to watch their homes being effaced. When challenged to come out and fight, they replied: “You have come to destroy ‘Bait-Ullah’. *Since it is the House of Allah let Him defend it*”.

The watching Meccans were much impressed to note that the leading elephant when urged to lead the charge upon Mecca and

Kaabah simply refused to advance and all the elephants started running back towards Yemen. This delayed the attack by a few minutes. Then came swarms of an unknown type of green-coloured flying creatures named in the Qur'an as *Ababil*. These *Ababils* shot bullets (described as stones because of their hardness) at the attackers. The bullets went right through the troops and the elephants and emerged from their bodies on the opposite side smashing all bones in their path and burning and disfiguring completely the parts of the body through which they passed. Thus in a few minutes the entire army of the Yemeni king had been totally annihilated (pages 771-774, Vol. 1, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

These *Ababils* then flew away and nobody knows from where they came and where they went or what they were—except that it was by Allah's Will.

Some of these so-called stones or bullets were later on picked up by a few Meccans and preserved until Prophet Muhammad became famous. The following passage was revealed in the early part of Prophet Muhammad's preaching's at Mecca:

"In the name of Allah, the Beneficent, the Merciful.

"Hast thou not seen how thy Lord dealt with the owners of the Elephants?

"Did He not bring (all) their stratagem to naught,

"And sent against them swarms of *Ababil*

"Which pelted them with (bullets which appeared like) stones of baked clay.

"And destroyed and mutilated them like things devoured" (Qur'an 105).

The Jews have called themselves the chosen people of Allah but the Christians claim that they are "Sons of god". For example:

"But as many as received him, to them he gave power to become the *sons of god*, even them that believe on his name" (St. John 1: 12).

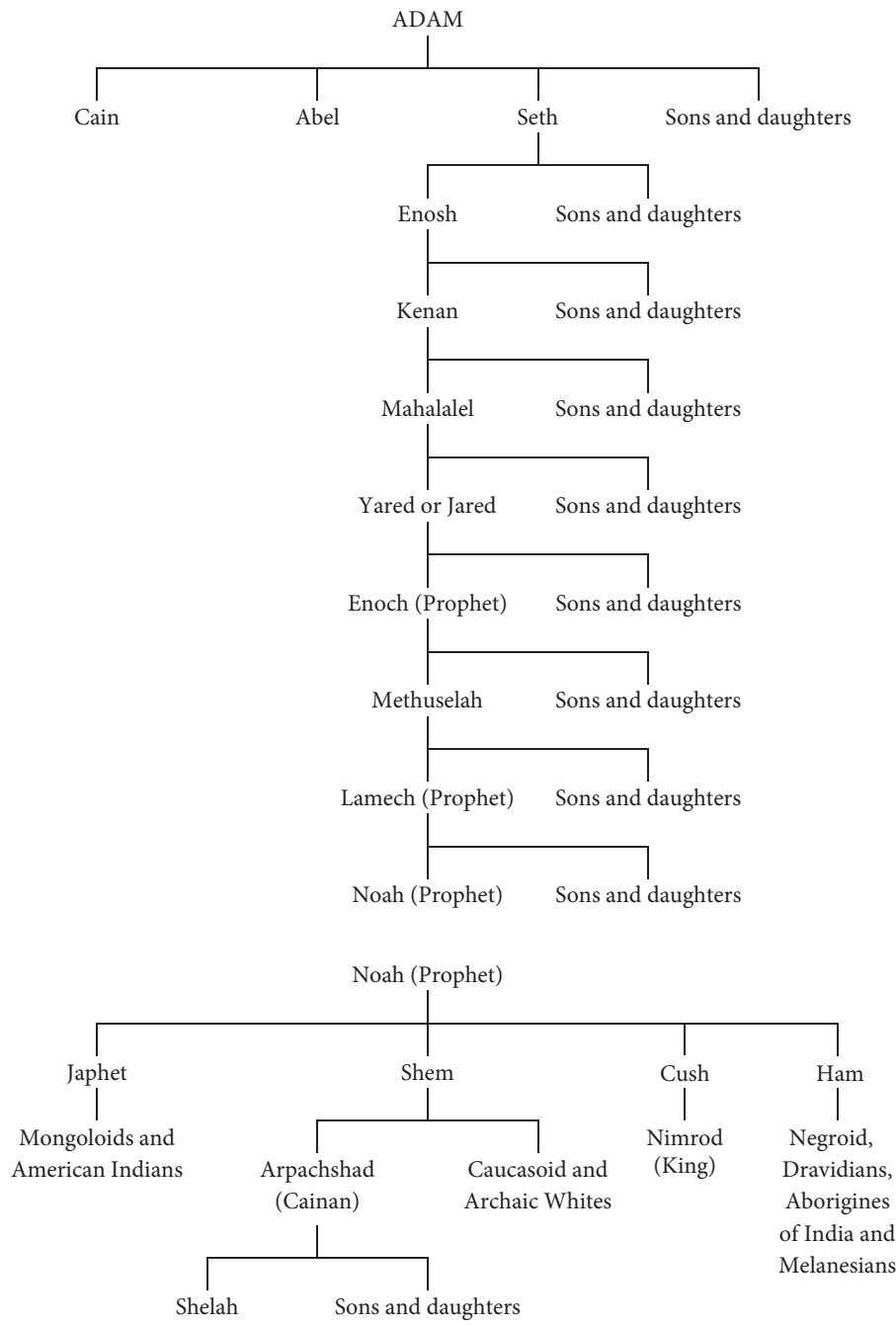
“The Jews and Christians say: We are sons of Allah (the claim of the Christians) and His loved ones (the claim of the Jews). Say (in reply): Why then doth He chastise you for your sins? Nay, ye are but mortals of His creating. He forgiveth whom He Wills and chastiseth whom He wills. Allah’s is the sovereignty of the heavens and the earth and all that is in between and unto him will ye (eventually) return” (Qur’an 5: 18).

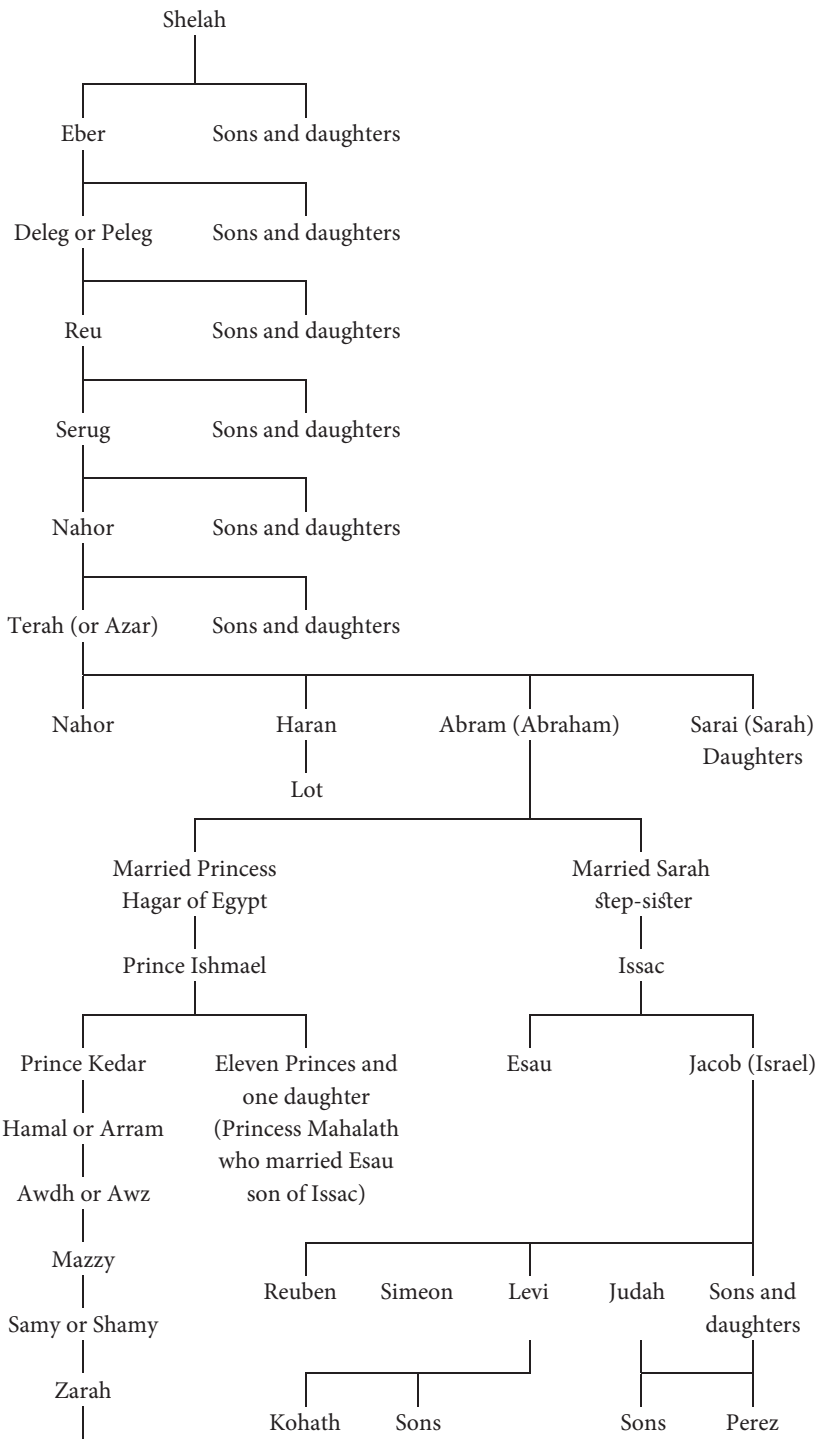
This miraculous saving of Mecca when all hope was abandoned and the defenders had fled away, proves that the Ishmaelites were treated by God in a manner more beneficent than the Israelites. One is naturally puzzled and curious to know why the Ishmaelites were given such preferential treatment under conditions identical with the destruction of Jerusalem.

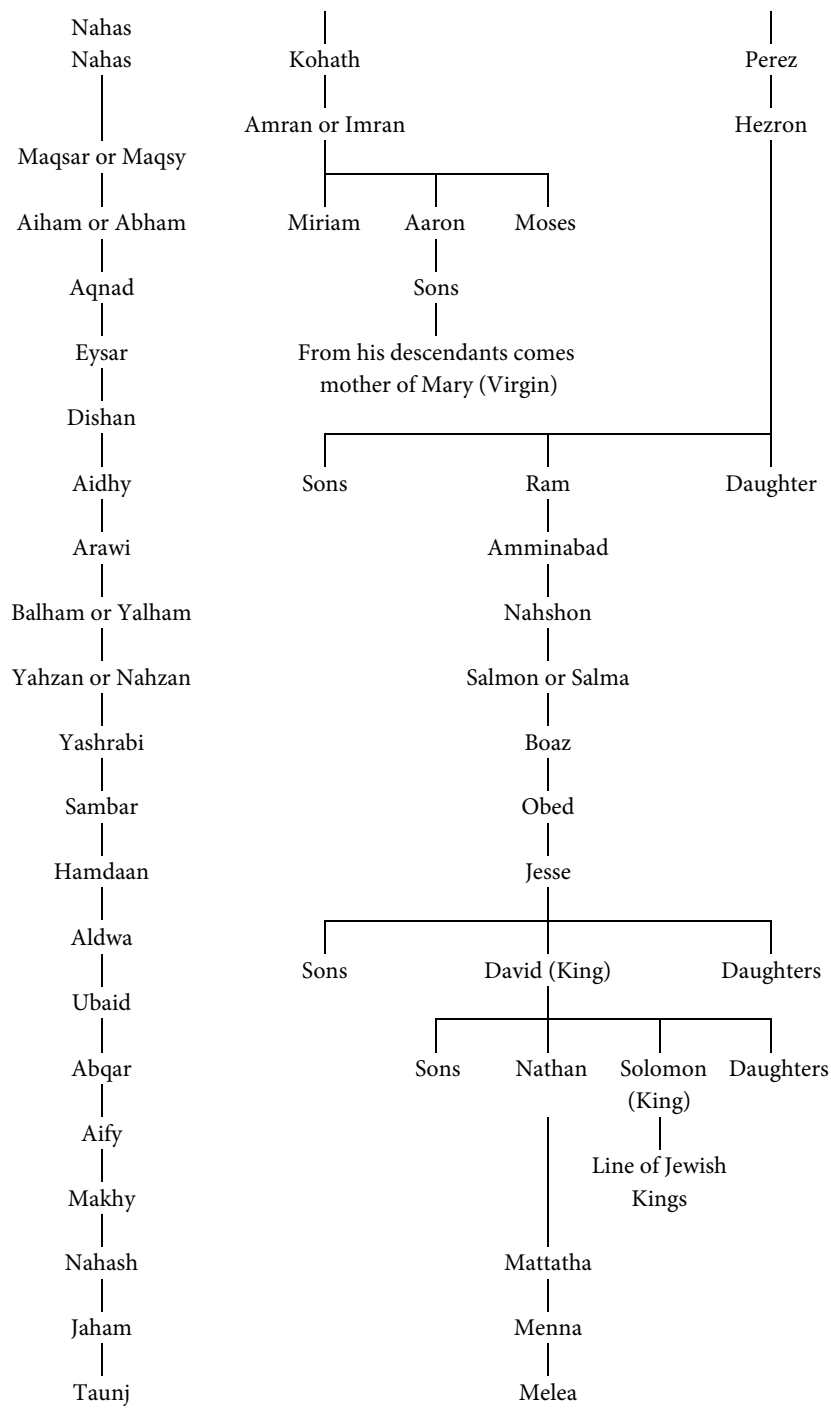
The answer apparently is any one or both of the following reasons:

1. Ishmael was not only the first born of Abraham but also the true heir of Abraham the father of the nation of believers. Hence his children were not only entitled to, but actually they also received greater privileges from God than the so-called chosen people, the Israelites, as is clear from the above historical event.
2. The promised seed through whom the world would be blessed was going to be born at Mecca amongst the Children of Ishmael within the next few days, as a blessing for his sake.

H. Genealogical Tables







Taunj  
|  
Ydlaf or Tdlaf  
|  
Baldas  
|  
Haza  
|  
Nashid  
|  
Awwam  
|  
Ubbi  
|  
Qumwal  
|  
Yuz  
|  
Aus  
|  
Salaman  
|  
Humaisa  
|  
Ubad  
|  
Adnan  
|  
Maad  
|  
Nazaar  
|  
Mudhar  
|  
Elyas  
|  
Mudrekah  
|  
Khuzaimah  
|  
Kananah  
|

Melea  
|  
Eliakim  
|  
Jonam  
|  
Joseph  
|  
Judas  
|  
Symeon  
|  
Levi  
|  
Matthat  
|  
Jorim  
|  
Eliezer  
|  
Jesus  
|  
Er  
|  
Elmadam  
|  
Cosam  
|  
Addi  
|  
Melchi  
|  
Neri  
|  
Shealtiel  
|  
Zerubbabel  
|  
Rhesa  
|  
Joanan  
|  
Joda  
|

Nadhar  
Nadhar  
|  
Malek  
|  
Tehr  
|  
Ghalib  
|  
Luwaij  
|  
Kaab  
|  
Murrah  
|  
Kublab  
|  
Qussa  
|  
Abdul Munaf  
|  
Hashim  
|  
Abdul Muttaleb  
|  
Abdullah  
|  
Ahmed,  
Muhammad  
(May Allah bless them)

Josech  
Josech  
|  
Semein  
|  
Mattathias  
|  
Maath  
|  
Naggai  
|  
Esli  
|  
Nahum  
|  
Amos  
|  
Mattathias  
|  
Joseph  
|  
Jannai  
|  
Melchi  
|  
Levi  
|  
Matthat  
|  
Heli  
(Father of Mary)  
|  
Mary (Virgin)  
|  
Jesus  
(May Allah bless them)



## I. Heavenly Titles to Eight Chosen Prophets

Eight of the chosen prophets were blessed with divine titles. These are called “*Qalima*” or recitations. They are the proclamations of faith for the followers of the particular prophet concerned.

The first person to be thus honoured was Adam, the original father of the human race. The “*Qalima*” for his children was:

*“La Ilaaha Illal Lahu Adam Shafiullah”*

**Translation:** “There is none worthy of divine worship except Allah (and) Adam has been forgiven by Allah”.

This was conferred upon Adam when he performed the first Hajj at “Bait-Ullah” at Mecca.

Thus the Almighty has made it clear for mankind that Allah is the Forgiver of sins. Men must never give up hope in Allah for forgiveness. This is the essence of the first “*Qalima*”.

The second person to be blessed with the *Qalima* was Noah:

*“La Ilaaha Illal Laahu Nooh Najibullah”*

**Translation:** “There is none worthy of divine worship except Allah (and) Noah is the one who was saved by Allah (from destruction by the deluge)”.

This *Qalima* brings home very vividly that everything was destroyed by the great deluge save and except Noah and his three sons and their wives. Allah gave them the following order:

“And God blessed Noah and his sons, and said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth” (Genesis 9: 1 ).

At the same time Allah did not forsake his people and let them wander about without a prophet to guide them to the Will of Allah, the right path of “Thy Will be done on Earth as it is in Heaven”. This guide when man made the second start was Noah.

Hence the second *Qalima* is that man’s safety lies not only with

Allah but also in carrying out His Will.

The third person to be thus honoured is Abraham with the following *Qalima*:

*“La Ilaaha Illal Laahu Ibrahim Khalil ullah”*

**Translation:** “There is none worthy of divine worship except Allah (and) Abraham is the friend of Allah”.

The emphasis this time is on the fact that “Abraham is the friend of Allah”. Hence all the circumcised children of Abraham *i.e.* the Ishmaelites and the Israelites and all others following the teachings of Abraham become the chosen people, belonging to the “Friend of Allah”. Thus the full implications of the meaning of the name “Abraham” is “A father of Nations of believers in Allah”.

We may recall here the “Everlasting Covenant” made between God and Abraham that every man-child from amongst the followers and children of Abraham “*must be circumcised*” (Chapter 7: E).

Thus a permanent distinction is made between the circumcised followers of Abraham and the uncircumcised but baptised followers of Nimrod, the cursed.

The fourth *Qalima* is:

*“La Illaha Illal Laahu Ismail Zabiullah”*

**Translation:** “There is none worthy of divine worship except Allah (and) Ishmael (is the one who willingly offered himself as) the sacrifice to Allah”.

Thus Ishmael was accorded special honour and blessings from the Creator according to the Holy Bible, *viz*:

1. That God would bless and multiply his descendants as the stars are in the heavens and as the sands are on the sea shores (Genesis 22: 17).
2. That from his descendants would be the promised seed through whom the whole world would be blessed (Genesis 22:

18).

The fifth *Qalima* is:

*“La Illaha Illal Laahu Musa Kalimullah”*

**Translation:** “There is none worthy of divine worship except Allah (and) Moses (is the one who) spoke to Allah”.

Thus Moses had the honour of being the first human being to speak directly with Allah.

The sixth is:

*“La Illaha Illal Laahu Dawood Khalifatullah”*

**Translation:** “There is none worthy of divine worship except Allah (and) David is the Viceroy Allah”.

To proclaim his Viceroyalty, God asked all people to turn towards Jerusalem instead of Mecca as before in prayers. Thus a very great honour was bestowed upon David, who was also blessed with a divine book.

The seventh is:

*“La Illaha Illal Laahu Eesa Ruhallah”*

**Translation:** “There is none worthy of divine worship except Allah (and) Jesus is from the spirit of Allah”.

His miraculous birth is given prominence in this *Qalima*.

The last is:

*“La Illaha Illal Laahu Muhammadur Rasoolullah”*

**Translation:** “There is none worthy of divine worship except Allah (and) Muhammad is the messenger of Allah”.

## **J. Heavenly Books**

A very large number of prophets have been blessed periodically with heavenly messages ranging from a single order or rule in one’s life-time

to numerous orders or extensive messages. Only very few of these have been preserved in the various religious and historical records available today, especially when it is realized that there were about 144,000 religious elders (or divine messengers) to the Holy Bible (Revelation 7: 4). We do not even know their names, when they were born, in which parts of the world and to which communities they preached. The only reliable and relevant information available is quoted hereunder:

“And verily We (Allah) have raised **in every Nation a Messenger**, (proclaiming): Serve Allah and shun false gods. Then (there were) some of them (peoples of the various nations) who followed Allah’s guidance, and some of them (there were) upon whom (their own evil deeds and) errors had a complete hold. Do but travel in the land and see the nature of the consequences of the deniers (like the destruction of the cities of Pompeii in Italy, Sodom and Gomorrah in the Dead Sea, Babylon in Iraq and so many others)!” (Qur’an 16: 36).

“Lo! We (Allah) have sent thee with the Truth, a bearer of glad tidings and a warner; **And there is not a nation but a warner hath passed among them**” (Qur’an 35: 24).

We find from the Qur’an that only four Divine Books were revealed by God Almighty through four different prophets to the world. They are:

1. Touriath (Torah or the first 5 books of the Holy Bible *viz*: Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy) through Musa or Moses.
2. Zabourah (Psalms or the 19th book of the Holy Bible) through Dawood or David.
3. Engil (Evangel) through Eesa or Jesus.
4. Qur’an through Muhammed.

## **1. Torah**

The necessity of the Torah, the first of the Divine Books, is quite clear. Primitive man required a book of rules for his conduct. This book comprises numerous Heavenly Messages. They contain various Divine Orders, laws, historical records, miracles, foretelling's, *etc.* and form a complete teaching for primitive man to make him civilized and law-abiding. When this set of Divine Books was subsequently forged and false statements were incorporated, the world was in need of further guidance.

## **2. Psalms**

The second of the Heavenly Books comprises hymns in praise of God Almighty and contains certain foretellings. These hymns were sung to music as practised and taught by King David.

They were used both in the public services of Israelites and also in their private devotions. Poetical songs accompanied with music enthused the listeners and the singers with great love and devotion of God and even led them to ecstasy in contemplation of the Divine Creator.

Some of the most beautiful passages in English literature are to be found in this book. Of all the books of the Bible, this is one of the most widely read and sung, not only amongst the Jews but also in most Christian churches of today.

These Psalms were disclosed to Prophet David through Angel Gabriel, the bearer of God's messages to the prophets, and were recorded by King David in his own handwriting in the Hebrew language.

These Holy Scriptures were destroyed when Jerusalem was razed to the ground in 607 B.C. Thereafter the Jews again came very much under the influence of Babylon during their captivity. They changed their week from Saturday, being the first day of the week to Sun-god's

day or Sunday. Hence their Sabbath was changed from Friday, the last day of the week from the time of Adam to Saturdays. The Saturday Sabbaths are still being observed by the Jews.

The Prophet Ezra re-wrote the Torah and the Psalms. But they were soon fabricated by the Jews. Ibn Hazm (d. 456 A.H. / 1064 A.D.) has proved in his works that at least 57 passages in the Old Testament have been falsified. The result was that the “Original Teachings” of God were once more lost.

### 3. Evangel

Hence to Jesus was sent the *Evangel* to correct the corruptions and falsifications that had been forged into these holy Heavenly books as confirmed in the following passage:

“Think not that I am come to destroy the (Mosaic) law, or the (teachings of the earlier) prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil (and thus bring back into existence what have been spoilt or destroyed after the Jews came under the pagan influence of Babylon)” (St. Matt. 5: 17).

Thus the Evangel is the third of the four Heavenly Books. It contained those divine messages which were revealed to Jesus by the Angel Gabriel as also the answers given by Jesus to the various questions put to him on a wide range of issues. It was dictated personally by Jesus in the Hebrew language, his own mother tongue, during his stay on earth and before his ascension. It was immediately recorded in Hebrew in Aramaic script by several Jewish scribes, all of whom were his close companions and disciples.

The most famous of these was Levi, son of Alphaeus. Levi was by profession a “Publican” *i.e.*, a collector of tolls and customs imposed upon persons and goods crossing Lake Gennesaret at Capernaum. Papias, in the first half of the second century says that the Evangel of Jesus was written by Levi in the Hebrew Aramaic Script. The same statement is to be found in the writings of other early fathers (page 64,

part IV, section XXV—Summary of the books of the New Testament being an appendix under the heading: “Helps to The Study of The Bible” in the *Oxford Bible For Teachers*—printed at 91 & 93 Fifth Avenue, New York in 1896 by the publisher to The University of Oxford).

St. John is reported to have written down the Evangel and the Revelations, both in Hebrew Aramaic, a few years after the destruction of Jerusalem by the Romans in 70 A.D. from the notes of the dictations given by Jesus when he was on earth. This Hebrew Evangel by St. John was similar to the one recorded by Levi.

These three abovementioned originals were seized from the possession of Arius by the pagan roman Emperor Constantine in 325 A.D. at the council meeting called by him in Nicaea in Asia Minor. Unfortunately these were burnt and destroyed immediately under orders of Constantine as we shall read later in Chapter 12: F, 2-8.

The Evangel of Jesus recorded by Andrew and Barnabas during the life of Jesus in the Hebrew Aramaic script were also similar to that of Levi. These escaped destruction at the hands of Emperor Constantine because they were not in the possession of anybody at Nicaea as they were somewhere in Alexandria. These were the recognised Genuine Canonical Gospels until 325 A.D. Such have been the affirmations of the early fathers of the Church and the findings of Christian scholars.

Emperor Constantine issued an order in 325 A.D., that anybody found possessing copies of the Evangel similar to those in the possession of Arius and not burning them instantly would be punished with death. Naturally, out of fear, these Original Evangel of Jesus recorded by Jewish scribes in Hebrew Aramaic were suppressed. Eventually they were handed over to the Pope in 382 A.D. Details of the various incidents about the burning and suppression of the “Original” teachings of Jesus are given later in Chapter 12: F, 1-12.

Hence owing to the destruction and/or suppression of the Original

Hebrew Aramaic Evangel of Jesus, the world for the third time stood in need of a book of “Divine Guidance” after 325 A.D.

The following quotation from Jesus confirms that there was only one religion from the very beginning and that “only” four major divine scriptures are all that will come on earth:

“Jesus answered: ‘Everything that conformeth to the book of Moses, that receive ye for true; seeing that God is one, the truth is one; whence it followeth that the doctrine is one and the meaning of the doctrine is one; and therefore the faith is one. Verily I say unto you that if the truth had not been erased from the book of Moses, God would not have given to David our father the second. And if the book of David had not been contaminated, God would not have committed the Gospel to me; seeing that the Lord our God is unchangeable, and hath spoken but one message to all men. Wherefore, when (Muhammad) the messenger of God shall come, he shall come to cleanse away all wherewith the ungodly have contaminated my book’.” (Page 285, Gospel of Barnabas by Lonsdale & Laura Ragg, Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1907).

The details of the fourth and the last of the “Divine Scriptures” referred to by Holy Jesus in the above Gospel are given later in Chapter 18: A-J of this thesis.





## *Chapter 9*

# Buddhism



### **A. Gautama Buddha**

The world was deeply influenced by a great religious teacher approximately five hundred years before the birth of Jesus. Gautama was his clan name and Buddha was his title which means “The Enlightened One”. At the age of 29 years he gave up his kingdom. He forsook his palace at midnight without telling anybody. It was a painful decision for him—he stood only for a moment by his beloved sleeping wife and baby son. His will was of iron. From being a prince of this world he became the prince of ascetics and his fame spread abroad “like the sound of a great gong hung up in the sky”.

After six years of rigid self-mortification, he had reduced himself to a faltering skeleton. One day, when in this condition, he was attacked by violent pains and fell down unconscious. When he recovered his senses, he realised that to break open the secrets of the universe, one had to adopt a “middle way” between ascetic self-denial and sensual indulgence. The subsequent events have shown how right he was.

### **B. The Eight Beatitudes**

Gautama sat under a certain “Pipal” tree, afterwards called the “Bo Tree” or the “Tree of Knowledge”, in meditation. It was here that he gained enlightenment. It was from here that he got up and made his soul-stirring speech which enthralled the world with his eightfold path

of salvation for the perfection of mankind. See Chapter 12: J for a comparison of these beatitudes with the teachings of Christianity.

### **C. The System of Guru or Spiritual Guides**

Great indeed was the impact of these Eight Beatitudes, which comprised the teachings of Buddha. His five close friends and monks, who had decided to boycott him when he had embarked on the middle road between asceticism and self-indulgence, were now so impressed by his superior gift of application that after his enlightenment they just sat and watched him intently.

From here the cult of the “Guru” *i.e.* the learned ascetic teacher and his disciples spread to the Middle East. By the time Jesus was born this system had secured a firm root even in the Middle East as well as in the Persian and Roman Empires.

### **D. The Spread of Buddhism**

Buddhism spread like wild fire throughout India and from there to Afghanistan, Ceylon, Burma, Siam, Indo-China, Malaysia, Indonesia, Tibet, China, Russia, Mongolia and Japan.

Its impact was so very profound in Persia that the Persians incorporated all the eight beatitudes and the various incidents in the life of Buddha into their own Nimrodic faith. This hybrid religion became known popularly as Mithraism. Mithraism spread from Persia throughout the Roman Empire. It reached Britain in 70 B.C.

Thus developed the cult of enlightened celibate sages, each with their hundreds of disciples throughout the Middle East.

This is the background in which Christianity had its origin!





PART 3

THE RELIGIONS OF THE ADVANCED  
WESTERN CIVILISATION





## Chapter 10

# The Miraculous conception and birth of Holy Jesus



The finest known description of the ancestry, the circumstances of the dedication of the Virgin Mary to the service of God, the miraculous birth of Holy Jesus and how he miraculously proved the purity of his mother against the accusations of Jewish ladies, when he was only a couple of hours old and what was his mission are given from the Qur'an hereunder:

### **A. The Lineage of the Mother of the Virgin Mary**

“Lo! Allah preferred Adam and Noah and the Family of Abraham and the Family of Imran (the father of Moses) above (all his) creatures.

“They were descendants one of another, Allah is Hearer, Knower”  
(Qur'an 3: 33-34).

### **B. The Dedication of the Virgin Mary by Her Mother from Before Her Birth**

“(Remember) when a woman (*i.e.* a female descendant from the renowned family) of Imran (*i.e.* the father of Moses and Aaron) said: My Lord! I have vowed unto Thee that which is in my belly as a consecrated (offering). Accept it from me. Lo! Thou, only Thou, art the Hearer, the Knower!” (Qur'an 3: 35).

### **C. The Birth and Dedication of Virgin Mary to the Service of God**

“And when she was delivered she said: My Lord! Lo! I am delivered a female (child)—Allah knew best of what she was delivered—the male is not as the female; and lo! I have named her Mary, and lo! I crave Thy protection for her and for her offspring from Satan the outcast” (Qur’an 3: 36).

### **D. The Virgin Mary received food from Heaven when inside a Locked Room!**

Because the Virgin Mary had been dedicated to the service of God by her mother from even before her birth, she was not permitted according to rule to be brought up as a normal child under her parents’ guidance at home. She had to be entrusted to the care of the High Priest to be brought up in the Temple of Jerusalem, trained to lead a pure life dedicated to the service of God Almighty.

Accordingly the Virgin Mary was placed under the care of her cousin Prophet Zakariah. He used to keep her locked in a small room of the temple. This was the sanctuary where Mary used to stay and pray all the time. Zakariah would open the door only once a day to hand her food. It so happened that he forgot to give her any food for three days consecutively. When he opened the door of the room on the fourth day with much concern for her wellbeing, he was extremely surprised to find that she had inside the sanctuary beautiful fresh food such as he had never before seen in his life. The Qur’an briefly refers to this incident:

“And her Lord accepted her (Mary) with full acceptance and vouchsafed to her a goodly growth; and made Zachariah her guardian. When Zachariah went into the sanctuary where she (Mary) was (locked without any food for three consecutive days), he found that she had food. He said: O Mary! Whence cometh unto thee this (food)? She answered: It is from Allah. Allah giveth without stint to whom He will” (Qur’an 3: 37).

### **E. Zakariah Prays for a Child from within the sanctuary of the Virgin Mary**

So impressed was Zakariah at this that he prayed:

“Then Zachariah prayed (from within the sacred sanctuary of Mary) unto his Lord and said: My Lord! (Who has bestowed upon Mary such precious gifts also) bestow upon me of Thy bounty a goodly offspring. Lo! Thou art the Hearer of prayers” (Qur’an 3: 38).

### **F. Zakariah foretold of the birth of Prophet John**

“And the angels called to him as he stood praying in the sanctuary (of Mary): Allah giveth thee glad tidings of (a son whose name will be) John, (who cometh) to confirm a message from Allah, lordly, chaste, a prophet of the righteous.

“He said: My Lord! How can I have a son when (old) age hath overtaken me already and my wife is barren? (The angel) answered: so (it will be). Allah doeth what He will.

“He said: My Lord! Appoint a token for me. (The angel) said: The token unto thee (shall be) that thou shalt not (be able to) speak unto mankind (for) three days except by signs. Remember the Lord much, and praise (Him) in the early hours of night and morning” (Qur’an 3: 39-41).

### **G. The Virgin Mary is Blessed by God and Preferred Above Women of Creation**

“And when the angels said: O Mary! Allah hath chosen thee and made thee pure, and hath preferred thee above the women of creation.

“O Mary! Be obedient to thy Lord: prostrate thyself and bow with those who bow (in worship)” (Qur’an 3: 42-43).

## **H. The Virgin Mary's Engagement to be Married**

“This is of the tidings of things hidden. We (Allah) reveal it unto thee (Muhammad). Thou was not present with them when they threw their pens (to know) which of them should be the guardian of (*i.e.* would be married to) Mary, nor was thou present with them when they quarrelled (thereon)” (Qur'an 3: 44).

## **I. The Virgin Mary foretold of the Birth of Holy Jesus without any human contact and before she is married!**

“And remember when the angels said: O Mary! Lo! Allah giveth thee glad tidings of message from Him, whose name is the Messiah, Jesus, son of Mary, illustrious in the World and the Hereafter, and one of those brought near unto Allah.

“He will speak unto mankind in his cradle and in his manhood, and he is of the righteous (Qur'an 3: 45-46).

“She said: My Lord! How can I have a child when no mortal hath touched me? Neither have I been unchaste?” (Qur'an 19: 20).

“He (Allah) said (through the angel): So (it will be). Allah createth what He will. If He decreeth a thing, He saith unto it only: Be! And it is” (Qur'an 13: 47).

## **J. The Virgin Mary Miraculously Conceives Jesus without Human Contact**

“He (the angel) said: So (it will be). Thy Lord saith: It is easy for Me. And (it will be) that We (Allah) may make of him a revelation for mankind and a mercy from Us, and it is a thing ordained.

“And she (Mary) conceived him, and she withdrew with him to a far place (*i.e.* on the outskirts of the city of Bethlehem)’ (Qur'an 19: 21-22).



### **K. Jesus Miraculously speaks on Childbirth and consoles His Mother**

When Mary got her first pains of the birth of Jesus, she was sitting under a dry, dead tree. As soon as her pangs of child-birth started this tree miraculously became fresh and green. All its dry flowers opening out blossomed immediately. Muslims all over the world collect reverently the dry flowers of this tree till this day. After this wondrous incident: the dry flowers of this tree have been named “The flower of Marium” or “The flower of the Virgin Mary”. Whenever any child is born in a Muslim’s house the Surah Marium (Chapter 19 of the Qur’an named after “The Virgin Mary”) is read and the dry flower of Marium placed in a clean bowl of water. As the flower opens out so does the child come out of the womb of the mother. Observation has shown that if there is going to be any complication, this flower will not open out properly or fully and if the child is going to be stillborn or die on birth then the flower often is strangely attacked by insects thus indicating what is going to happen. As this tree did not give Mary enough seclusion for the child-birth she moved into a hollow space nearby under a palm tree. The Qur’an has recorded the miraculous happenings at the time of the birth of Jesus as follows:

“And the pangs of childbirth drove her unto the trunk of the palm tree. She said: ‘Oh! would that I had died ere this (child’s birth without any father) and had become a thing of naught (*i.e.* dead and), forgotten’:

“Then (Jesus as he was coming out of the womb of his mother miraculously) replied unto her from below her, saying: ‘Grieve not. Thy Lord hath placed a rivulet beneath thee’.

“(And the child Jesus said): ‘shake the palm-tree toward thee, thou wilt cause ripe dates to fall upon thee’.

“(And the child Jesus said): So eat and drink and be consoled. And if thou, meetest any mortal, say: Lo! I have vowed a fast unto, the Beneficent, and may not speak this day to any mortal” (Qur’an 19: 23-26).

### **L. The New Born Child Jesus miraculously speaks and defends the Virginity of Mary**

“Then she brought him to her own folk, carrying him. They said: O Mary! Thou hast come with an amazing thing (of shame that you have got a child even before you have been married)!

“Oh Sister (this is an Eastern term of respect to address a woman) of (the descendants of) Aaron (brother of Prophet Moses, the son of Imran)! Thy father was not a wicked man nor was thy mother a harlot!

“Then she pointed to him (Jesus). They said: How can we talk to a new born child, who is in the cradle?

“He (Jesus) spoke (from his cradle even though he was just a few hours old and said): Lo! I am the slave of Allah, He hath blessed me with a book of Scriptures (*i.e.* Evangel) and hath appointed me a prophet.

“And hath made me blessed where-so-ever I may be, and hath enjoined upon me prayer and alms-giving so long as I remain alive.

“And (hath made me) dutiful toward her (the Virgin Mary) who bore me, and hath not made me arrogant, unblest.

“Peace be on me the day I was born, and the day I die, and the day I shall be raised alive (to heaven)!

“Such was Jesus, son of Mary! (this is) a statement of the truth concerning which they doubt” (Qur’an 19: 27-34).

### **M. Jesus a Prophet for the Jews and His Miracles**

“And He (The Lord) will teach him (Jesus) the Scripture and wisdom, and the Torah and the Evangel.

*“And will make him a messenger unto the children of Israel, (and Jesus will tell them): Lo! I come unto you (i.e. the Jews) with a sign from your Lord. Lo! I fashion for you out of clay the likeness of a bird and I breathe into it and it is a bird, by Allah’s leave. I heal him who was born blind, and the leper and I raise the dead by Allah’s*

leave. And I announce unto you what ye eat and what ye store up in your house. Lo! herein verily is a clear evidence for you, if ye are believers” (Qur’an 3: 48-49).

#### **N. Jesus teaches He is not Son of God but the Brethren disbelieve**

“It befitteth not (the Majesty of) Allah that He should take unto Himself a son. Glory be to Him! When He decreeth a thing, He saith unto it only: Be! And it is.

“And (Jesus has taught) lo! Allah is my Lord and your Lord (See St. John 20: 17), so serve Him. That is the right path.

“The sects (*i.e.* the Brethren) among them differ (from the Nazarenes): but woe unto the disbelievers from the meeting of an awful Day (of Judgment)” (Qur’an 19: 35-37).

#### **O. The Birth of Adam is More Miraculous**

“Lo! The likeness of Jesus with Allah is as the likeness of Adam. He created him (Adam) out of dust, then He said unto him: Be! And he is.

“This is the truth from thy Lord, so be not thou of those who waver.

“Lo! This verily is the true narrative. There is no God save Allah, and lo! Allah is the Mighty, the Wise” (Qur’an 3: 59-60, 62).

God has thus given a pre-eminent place to Adam over Jesus according to verse 59 of Chapter 3 of the Qur’an quoted before, because Adam was created without either any father or any mother, whereas Jesus, at least, had a virgin mother.

When Adam had no right or claim to Divinity and nobody calls Adam, the son of God, then Jesus, whose birth is far less miraculous than Adam’s, surely cannot have any such claim in Divinity by any stretch of the imagination. Some people in spite of these facts call Jesus “Son of god”.

Further we have read earlier in Chapter 7: D that Abraham had

offered food, a roasted calf, to the angels sent for the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah (Qur'an 11: 69-70; and 51: 21-33. They had refused to eat because angels do not require human food for their sustenance. But both Jesus and Mary required human food just like any other mortal. Hence both Jesus and the Virgin Mary were human beings and in a stage which was lower than that of spirits, who did not require food to remain alive. The Angels are not called "God" or "sons of God." Therefore if someone is in a stage which is lower than that of Angels then surely they also cannot be called son of God or mother of God! This is brought out beautifully in the last of the Heavenly Books:

"The Messiah, son of Mary, was no other than a messenger, messengers (the like of whom) had passed away before him. And his mother was a saintly woman. And they both used to eat (earthly) food. See how We (Allah) make the revelations clear for them, and see how they (the Christians) are turned away!" (Qur'an 5: 75).

In St. John 20: 17 Jesus has clarified beyond any doubt that God is as much his God as our God that he is a brother to other human beings and not a divine being. This passage of the Bible reads as follows:

"... but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God and your God".

This statement of Jesus is also confirmed in the Qur'an:

"They surely disbelieve who say: Lo! Allah is the Messiah, son of Mary. The Messiah (himself) said: *O Children of Israel, worship Allah, my Lord and your Lord*. Lo! Whosoever ascribeth partners unto Allah, for him Allah, hath forbidden Paradise. His abode is the Fire (Hell). For evil-doers there will be no helpers" (Qur'an 5: 72).

That Jesus has never made any claims to divinity is clarified further beyond doubt in the Holy Bible as under:

"And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me *good (master)* there is none 'good (master)' but One, *that is*, God" (St. Mark 10: 18 read with "*good master*" from verse 17 *ibid*).

The last of the Heavenly Books confirms this teaching of Jesus as

follows:

“(And Jesus said) Lo! Allah is my Lord and your Lord, so worship Him. That is the straight (correct) path” (Qur’an 3: 51).

### **P. Jesus’s Miraculous Birth Confirmed**

The birth of Jesus without any father is indeed one of the greatest miracles by which God Almighty has shown that He can do just what pleases Him, and that there is none who can be compared with His Majesty. This has been confirmed in the “*Gospel of Barnabas*”, pages 3-5 as follows:

“In these last years a virgin called Mary, of the lineage of David, of the tribe of Judah, was visited by the angel Gabriel from God. This virgin, living in all holiness without any offence, being blameless, and abiding in prayer with fastings, being one day alone, there entered into her chamber the angel Gabriel, and, he saluted her, saying: ‘God be with thee, O Mary’.

The virgin was affrighted at the appearance of the angel; but the angel comforted her, saying: ‘Fear not, Mary, for thou hast found favour with God, Who hath chosen thee to be mother of a prophet, whom He will send to *the people of Israel* in order that they may walk in His laws with truth of heart.’ The virgin answered: ‘Now how shall I bring forth sons, seeing I know not a man?’. The angel answered: ‘O Mary, God Who made man (*i.e.*, Adam the first man) without a man (*i.e.*, without any parents) is able to generate in thee man without a man (*i.e.*, without a father), because with Him nothing is impossible.’ Mary answered: ‘I know that God is Almighty, therefore His will be done.’ The angel answered: ‘Now be conceived in thee the prophet, whom thou shalt name Jesus: and thou shalt keep him from wine and from strong drink and from every unclean meat, because the child is an holy one of God.’ Mary bowed herself with humility, saying: ‘Behold the handmaid of God, be it done according to thy word.’ The angel departed, and the virgin glorified God, saying: ‘Know, O my soul, the greatness of God, and exult, my spirit, in God my Saviour; for He hath regarded

the lowliness of His handmaiden, insomuch that I shall be called blessed by all the nations, for He that is Mighty hath made me great, and blessed be His Holy Name”.

On page 7 of *ibid* is recorded:

“Joseph being a righteous man, when he, perceived that Mary was great with child, was minded to put her away because he feared God. Behold, whilst he slept, he was rebuked by the angel of God, saying, ‘O Joseph, why art thou minded to put away Mary thy wife? Know that whatsoever hath been wrought in her, hath all been done by the will of God. The virgin shall bring forth a son, whom thou shalt call by the name Jesus; whom thou shalt keep from wine and strong drink and from every unclean meat, because he is a holy one of God from his mother’s womb. He is a prophet of God sent unto the *people of Israel*, in order that he may convert Judah to His heart, and that Israel may way walk in the law of the Lord, as it is written in the Law of Moses. He shall come with great power, which God shall give him, and shall work great miracles, whereby many shall be saved’.

“Joseph, arising from sleep, gave thanks to God, and abode with Mary all his life, serving God with all sincerity”.

Thus it will appear that the following items:

- a. Wine
- b. Strong drinks
- c. Every unclean meat (*i.e.* swine flesh).

were forbidden to Jesus throughout his life because he was a holy and pious prophet sent by God *for the correction of the Jews to the original laws of Moses* (St. Matthew 5 :17 and 10: 5-7 where Jesus says: *Go rather to the lost sheep of the House of Israel*).



## Chapter 11

# The day and date of the birth of Holy Jesus



St. Luke, Chapter 2: 7-10 gives evidence that Jesus was born before the winter rains had set in, because the shepherds were still keeping their flocks in the open pasture land all night.

The last of the Heavenly books also confirms briefly this fact as follows:

“And We (Allah) made the son of Mary and his mother a portent, and We (Allah) gave them refuge (at the time of the birth of Jesus) on a height, a place of flocks and water springs” (Qur’an 23: 50).

Dean Farrar in his *“Life of Christ”* has remarked that Jesus was not born on the 25th December because the Bible mentions the shepherds as being that night with their flocks in the fields. Heavy rains start from before mid-October and carry on throughout the winter in Judaea. Hence the birth of Jesus must have been at the latest about the end of September or beginning of October, *i.e.* before the winter rains had set in.

This is also confirmed on page 133 of *“Your Will be done on Earth”*, published by Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society of Pennsylvania in 1958.

On page 5 column 3 of the March 1971 issue of *“The Plain Truth”* is an article by the researcher Garner Ted Armstrong on Jesus where he confirms that Jesus was not born anywhere near Christmas.

The Muslims believe that Jesus was born on a *Friday* on the *10th* day of the Lunar Month of *Muharram* which corresponds to the 10th day of the Jewish Seventh Lunar Month. *The tenth day Jewish Seventh Lunar Month* called *Ethanim* corresponds to 26th September in the year 1 B.C.

Hence the time as deduced from St. Luke, the Jewish calendar, the research of Dr. Farrar, the findings of the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society; The Plain Truth and the Islamic system of calculation all seem to concur that the date of the birth of Jesus was the 26th September in the year 1 B.C.

The Muslims further believe that *Friday* the *10th* day of the Lunar Month of *Muharram* is a special chosen day of the Almighty Creator, Who has effected on this particular and auspicious day, date and month throughout the ages many wondrous events of far-reaching consequence besides the birth of Jesus. For further elucidation just a few of the important events that took place on this day, date and month throughout creation are enumerated below:

1. The commencement of the creation of the Universe out of the Holy Spirit, or Word of God.
2. The creation of our Earth from out of the Sun.
3. The creation of Adam the First man in the autumn of 4026 B.C. (Genesis 1: 27).
4. The Ark of Noah touched the ground on top of Mount "Ararat" after the great deluge on this day, date and month in 2369 B.C. (according to the Holy Bible the date is 7 days or just one week later, see Genesis 8: 4).
5. Abraham came out alive from the huge fire into which he was catapulted by King Nimrod in 2001 B.C. (Chapter 6: F).
6. In 1919 B.C. the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, the twin cities of Lot, which are lying submerged in the Dead Sea (Genesis 19: 24-29).



7. Jacob was reunited with his beloved son Joseph, the prime minister of Egypt (Genesis 45 and 46).
8. David slays Goliath (1 Samuel 17: 23, 33-51).
9. The escape of Jonah from the stomach of the giant whale, approximately after three days and three nights (Jonah 1: 15-17).
10. The martyrdom on this day, date and month in the year 680 A.D. of Hazrat Imam Hussain, grandson of Prophet Muhammad, with most of the male members of the families related to Muhammad at Karbala as foretold in the Holy Bible. (Chapter 26: C-1).
11. To commemorate this day, date and month as being the day of their escape from Egypt under Moses and the drowning of Pharaoh and his forces, the Jews were ordered to “Fast” on this date every year, and to keep it holy. This can be seen from the following orders appearing in the Old Testament:

“And this shall be a statute forever unto you: that in the seventh month, on the tenth day of the month, ye shall afflict your souls, and do no work at all, whether it be one of your own country, or a stranger that sojourneth among you” (Leviticus 16: 29).

“And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying,

“Also on the tenth day of this seventh (lunar) month (called Ethanim) there shall be a day of atonement: it shall be a holy convocation unto you; and ye shall afflict your souls, and offer an offering made by fire unto the Lord.

“And ye shall do no work in that same day: for it is a day of atonement, to make an atonement for you before the Lord your God.

“For whatsoever soul it be that shall not be afflicted in the same day, he shall be cut off from among his people.

“And whatsoever soul it be that doeth any work in that same day,

the same soul will I destroy from among his people.

“Ye shall do no manner of work: it shall be a statute forever throughout your generations in all your dwellings.

“It shall be unto you a Sabbath of rest, and ye shall afflict your souls: in the ninth day of the month at even (Sunset), from even (Sunset) unto even (Sunset), shall ye celebrate your Sabbath” (Leviticus 23: 26-32).

Similar references are found in other places in the Old Testament showing how very important this particular date and month is.

From this evidence it is established conclusively that the definite date of the birth of Jesus was Friday the tenth day of the seventh Jewish month called Ethanim, which corresponds to Friday the tenth of Muharram or 26th September in the year 1 B.C., because this is one of the chosen dates of Almighty God, for doing something awe-inspiring and having a far-reaching effect upon humanity. And further that Jesus had thus been honoured greatly by the Lord of all creation by causing such a marvellous birth on such an important day, date and month.

Therefore it is clear from these facts, that the 25th December is not at all connected with the birth of Jesus. It is indeed most unfortunate that nowhere in the whole world is the birth of Jesus of Nazareth, son of the Virgin Mary being celebrated on the 26th September according to the Solar Calendar or the 10th day of the Seventh Jewish lunar month of Ethanim or Muharram. Whose birthday are the Christians then celebrating on the 25th December in each year?



## Chapter 12

# The teachings of Holy Jesus



### A. Introduction

If our aim is world peace and goodwill, then we must fully appreciate, understand and realise the religious faiths and beliefs of those nations who are today the leaders of our scientific progress and achievements—  
”The European Group of Nations”.

For many centuries they have believed in Jesus. Yet some of them in Eastern European countries have now openly renounced him, whilst the other European Nations have more or less followed suit covertly. You see the Churches on every Sunday morning lying almost deserted in the Christian countries with not even half a per cent of the population attending them. In many Churches throughout Europe you see a congregation of as few as only a dozen people on Sundays, all of them very old, usually over sixty years of age, some so old that they can hardly walk. One naturally feels distressed at seeing the European peoples flocking to concerts of “Pop music”, “The Beatles:” *etc.* instead of a Church service on a Sunday! One asks: “Why is it thus?”

Religion has often been the binding factor between man and his fellow beings but unfortunately it has not been so with Christianity as will be clear from the very few extracts given here from pages 496-498 of “*Babylon The Great Has Fallen*”:

“As the American nation grew and spread from coast to coast, its separation of Church and State by the National Constitution

resulted in its lands becoming the home of more than two hundred religious sects, all of which professed to be Christians.

“Christendom as a whole became rent apart with religious sects, Roman Catholic, Eastern Orthodox and Protestant. In South Africa 1,400 religious sects have grown up among the Bantu people since 1910, when Christendom’s missionaries poured in, according to an Associated Press despatch published from Johannesburg, South Africa, on August 12, 1957. **Today the religious situation in Christendom is a mockery of the Christian unity that Christ taught his disciples.**

“The Reformation movement of the sixteenth century led to **shameful religious persecution by both Protestants and Catholics, and to frightful religious wars**”.

One is rather puzzled and wonders why Christendom has become an obstacle to unity between the same basic group of people—The European Nations? After all, they all accept the same religious book The Holy Bible!

This can be gauged easily from the numerous public expressions being made daily by the various groups of Christians, *e.g.*:

When one says “God is only one” it is contradicted with: “God is a Trinity in Unity”.

If some insist “that “Jesus is not divine” others explain: “Christ is the only begotten son of god”.

A group contends “Mary is Mother of god and queen of the Heaven” whereas another sect pays hardly any recognition to her!

Hundreds of such contradictions are now in circulation and for each they quote a reference from the Holy Bible as their source of authority. Surely all these conflicting statements and beliefs cannot be correct. Nor can all the references quoted from the Holy Bible be authentic. One is rightly confused as to why there are all these contradictions in a Holy Book of God, which should be simple and easily understood by the masses. The indisputable answer is that the

Original Hebrew Texts of the “Evangel” containing the preaching’s of Jesus were simple and clear. They left no scope whatsoever for any contradictions or confusion and misrepresentations. But unfortunately, these originals are no longer available. They were either burnt and destroyed completely in 325 A.D. or suppressed as we shall read later on.

The result is that the Christians, groping in the dark for the truth, have brought out over a dozen versions of the Holy Bible in the English language alone, not to mention the Bibles in Greek, Latin, French, Spanish and other foreign languages. Some of the well known English versions:

1. The Holy Bible by John Wycliffe in 1382-83
2. New Testament by William Tyndale in 1525-26
3. Miles Coverdale’s version in 1535.
4. Matthew’s Bible in 1537 (by John Rogers) with revision in 1539 (by Richard Taverner).
5. The Great Bible in 1539.
6. The Geneva Bible in 1560.
7. The Bishop’s Bible in 1568.
8. The Rhemish Bible in 1582, which was later revised into The Douay Bible.
9. The Authorised Version of King James I in 1611.
10. The Revised Version in 1881.
11. The American Standard Version in 1901.
12. The Revised Standard Version in 1952.
13. The New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures.

These multifarious versions of the Holy Bible unfortunately, instead of bringing about unity and love between one Christian and

another have become the source and cause of not only disputes, dissensions, but even wars amongst them and what is more important, have broken up the Christians into numerous different sects and groups. Instead of unity, the different versions have brought about disunity.

Many great thinkers and teachers have very rightly viewed these developments with grave concern. They have set out in search of the truth from time to time during the past 1500 years. They are also desperately seeking the correct path which even now may bring about unity amongst the hundreds of factions of Christians. No solution is yet in sight. Could the undermentioned causes be the reasons?

1. The material upon which a Christian is prepared to rely has to be only "The Holy Bible".
2. Many even know that the Original Hebrew Texts of the Holy Bible are no longer available.
3. Christians know for a fact that many of the traditions, rites, rules and regulations are from Pagan or Gentile sources and have no connection with the doctrines of Jesus.

Unless the original teachings of Jesus can be reconstructed to disclose the discrepancies in the Holy Bible, there is no hope for a common basis for goodwill amongst the Europeans. Without unity amongst them, world peace cannot be achieved. Hence this is the *sine qua non*. *This research has been undertaken to meet just this challenge.*

### **1. Period: The Birth of Jesus**

Jesus was circumcised on the eighth day (St. Luke 2: 21). When the Virgin Mary had purified herself after 40 days, a sacrifice was made for Jesus at the temple according to Jewish law (St. Luke 2: 22-24).

### **2. Period: 29-33 A.D.**

Jesus at the age of about 30 years began to preach (St. Luke 3: 23).

He went to the temple of Jerusalem and tried his utmost to root out the evil practices that had crept into the Jewish religion and to bring them once again to the correct path (St. Matthew 21: 12-3; St. Mark 11:15-18; St. Luke 19: 45-46; St. John 2: 13-16).

Jesus went all over Galilee in Judaea for three years teaching to the Jews (St. Matt. 4: 23).

Jesus did not advocate a schism or a separate religion from that of the Jews. His teachings were merely a continuation of the Jewish faith but in its correct original form.

He made this absolutely clear in the following terms:

“Think not that I am come to destroy the (Judaic) law, or (teach against the earlier Jewish) prophets: I am not come to destroy (Judaism), but to fulfil (and bring Judaism to its original)” (St. Matt. 5: 17).

Jesus and all his followers being Jews by birth naturally spoke only in their mother tongue *i.e.* Hebrew.

Therefore all that he taught, prophesied and did, were recorded in Hebrew because Jesus had come to teach “*to none but unto the Jews only*” (Acts 10: 36 and 11: 19).

From these Biblical records it is apparent that Jesus not only taught the Jewish law but he also lived the life of a Jewish preacher (St. Matt. 10: 5-7).

The Divine “Evangel” revealed to Jesus through the Angel Gabriel and dictated by him during his lifetime could have been only in Hebrew as it was meant to correct the falsifications in the Torah of Moses which was in Hebrew. Further, the Evangel was documented with the sole object of guiding the Israelites, whose language was Hebrew (page 285, *Gospel of Barnabas*).

That this message of Jesus dictated and recorded in his lifetime was a divine one is proved by the Holy Bible:

“For I (Jesus) have not spoken out of my self (*i.e.* of my own accord); but (this is the message which) the Father sent me, He gave me a commandment (through Angel Gabriel, as to) what I should say, and what I should speak” (St. John 12: 49).

“He that loveth me not and keepeth not my sayings (*i.e.* the Evangel); and the word (*i.e.* the Evangel) which ye hear is not mine but the Father’s which (He) sent (to) me (through Angel Gabriel)” (St. John 14: 24). .

### 3. Jesus is lifted bodily to Heaven

Jesus at the age of about 33 years was lifted bodily to heaven when alive in the presence of witnesses (Acts 1: 9).

During his earthly life he had managed to gather a following of about 120 people, all of whom were Jews (Acts 1: 15).

Jesus did not give his followers the nomenclature Christians. **His followers were the Jews.**

### 4. The Knowledge of the coming of Jesus

The Jews were aware of the coming of Jesus. This will be clear from the following passages, where John, the predecessor to Jesus has been questioned by the Jews:

“And this is the record of John when the Jews sent priests, and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, who art thou?

“And he confessed, and denied not; but confessed, I am not the Christ (the word Christ was coined in 325 A.D. as we shall read later).

“And they asked him, what then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that Prophet? And he answered No” (St. John 1: 19-21).



## **B. The World in which the Christian Church was Born**

Since the Old Testament had been corrupted and several passages altered, many Jews were unable to recognise Jesus. This led to the persecution of Jesus and his followers. Even the word “Jesus” is a corrupted form of the Hebrew name “Eisa” or “Eisu”.

### **1. About 35 A.D.**

After the departure of Jesus, the oppression did not stop. There lived a young Jew named Saul of Tarsus, later on known as St. Paul. He was not only a hater of Jesus but also the worst possible enemy of his teachings the Evangel.

The Bible records of him:

“And (Saul) cast him (Stephen) out of the city, and stoned him (till he was dead): and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young man’s feet, whose name was Saul (St. Paul).

“And they stoned Stephen, (who was) calling upon God, and saying, Lord (of) Jesus, receive my spirit” (Acts 7: 58-59).

“As for Saul, he made havoc of the church entering into every house, and haling men and women committed them to prison” (Acts 8: 3).

“And Saul, yet breathing out threatening’s and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went unto the high priest,

“And desired of him letters to Damascus to the synagogues, that if he found any of this way, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound unto Jerusalem” (Acts 9: 1-2).

So bitter was the persecution of Saul that the followers of Jesus had to scatter to save themselves.

“Now they which were scattered abroad upon the persecution that arose about Stephen travelled as far as Phenice and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching the word to none but unto the Jews only” (Acts 11: 19).

## 2. The Conversion of St. Paul

Saul of Tarsus found that he could not destroy the teachings of Jesus by persecution, from the outside, as the followers of Jesus were getting scattered. He then thought of joining the faith to deceive the people (Acts 9: 3-18) by falsely stating that he had met Jesus, who asked him to convert, so that he might subvert the entire teachings of Jesus. The very first words he uttered after his alleged conversion were nothing but pure and simple blasphemy *i.e.* the pagan sun worship theories of Nimrod combined with Buddhism which was then prevalent in this area under the name of Mithraism. With the sole object of confounding the believers he, straightaway, preached blasphemy as will be evident from the following passage:

“And when he had received meat, he was strengthened. Then was Saul certain days with the disciples which were at Damascus.

“And straightaway he (Saul or St. Paul) preached **Christ** (This word was coined in 325 A.D.) in the synagogues, **That He is the Son of god.**

“But all that heard him were amazed; and said: *Is not this he that destroyed them which called on this name in Jerusalem, and came hither for that intent, that he might (destroy the religion of Jesus and) bring them bound unto the chief priest?*

“But Saul increased the more in strength and confounded the Jews (who were the followers of Jesus) which dwelt at Damascus, proving that this is very **Christ** (since this word was coined by Constantine in 325 A.D., this must have been written after 325 A.D.)

“And when Saul was come to Jerusalem, he assayed to join himself to the disciples: but they were all afraid of him, and believed not that he was a disciple” (Acts 9: 19-22 and 26).

## **C. The Origin of the Christian Churches**

### **1. About 36 A.D.**

Saul (St. Paul) got the golden opportunity a year after his professed conversion to found the “*Religion of Brethren*” in co-operation with Peter and half-a-dozen dissidents with the object of destroying the strict teachings of God as revealed through Jesus and recorded in the **Evangel**.

Shortly after his supposed conversion, he propounded that the only way by which they could avoid the persecution from the Jews was not just to concentrate upon preaching to their Jewish circumcised brothers, friends and relatives. So far they had been preaching as Jesus had ordered during his life to teach only to the circumcised Jews—the *lost sheep of the House of Israel* (St. Matt. 10: 5-7).

### **2. The Decision to preach to Other than Jews**

Saul pointed out that they had to attract the attention of the Centurions and the “Gurus” or the religious monks and try to convert these Gentiles. He explained that if they made only one such convert, then all their hundred or more followers along with their families, slaves and dependants totalling a thousand or more would all be converted automatically together with the head of their organisation. Therefore each such conversion would mean a thousand or more followers at a time. The plan was very interesting indeed! As these Centurions and Monks were very influential people amongst the Gentiles, all persecution from the Jewish quarters would accordingly have to stop.

### **3. How to attract people to convert to the Brethren Faith**

Now the serious problem arose as to what would attract them. With the idea of destroying the teachings of the Evangel, Saul (St. Paul) the enemy of Jesus suggested, as follows:-

- a. We cannot ask these important people to be circumcised otherwise they will not join our faith.
- b. We cannot ask them to follow the Mosaic Laws, because it was too difficult for the Gentiles to lead perfect lives according to God's Laws, and further these great men would not agree to conform to such strict rules. They had to have something attractive, familiar and simpler than the teachings of Jesus.
- c. They were believers in Mithra (the changed name of King Nimrod) being the only begotten son of Sun-god. That he was born of the great Virgin Mother, Queen of the heavens. That he was the lamb of the heavens, the saviour, who had come on earth to sacrifice his life to save sinners; that he was trinity in unity with the sun-god. To enter this faith one had to be baptised instead of promising to follow the Mosaic Laws as taught by Jesus, and partake of sacramental foods and drinks to become the pure sinless deity. Observe the eight beatitudes of Buddha *etc.*
- d. It was therefore St. Paul's suggestion that this religion of Mithraism be adopted as the basis of attracting these wise, educated, influential Gentiles with the following changes *viz*:
  - i. Replace the name of Mithra by Jesus.
  - ii. Replace the name of Queen Semiramis by Virgin Mary.
  - iii. Add all the miracles of Jesus.
  - iv. Add on one additional miracle because Bacchus was the inventor of the gift of wine by saying that Jesus turned water into wine at a marriage ceremony as against wine being strictly prohibited to Jesus according to the Evangel—*The Gospel of Barnabas* as read in Chapter 10: P.
  - v. Adopt the whole religion of Mithraism, as if these were the teachings of Jesus. Thus ignore the under-

mentioned curse of Jesus:

“Whosoever therefore shall break (even) one of the least (*i.e.* smallest) of these (Mosaic) commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be (cursed to the lowest hell *i.e.*) called the least in the Kingdom of Heaven: but whosoever shall follow (these Mosaic Laws *i.e.*) do and teach them (to other people), the same shall be (blessed to great positions and respect *i.e.*) called great in the Kingdom of Heaven” (St. Matt. 5: 19 see also Revelation 22: 18-19).

The curse of Jesus is also confirmed in the last Heavenly book as follows:

“Those of the children of Israel who went astray were cursed by the tongue ... of Jesus, son of Mary. That was because they rebelled and used to transgress” (Qur’an 5: 78).

Thus it is explicit from the Holy Bible that “*Nobody*” has had or will ever have any right whatsoever to change any of the teachings of Jesus nor any of the Mosaic Laws, which have been fully incorporated in the Evangel and yet call himself a follower of Jesus. Therefore anybody breaking any of these laws is condemned to the lowest hell by the curse of Jesus, as still recorded in the Holy Bible (St. Matt. 5: 19 and Revelation 22: 18-19).

“If ye love me (Jesus), keep my commandments” (St. John 14: 15).

Thus the religion propagated by St. Paul, which was aimed at destroying the teachings of Jesus, appeared very attractive to the Gentiles because of the miracles, including the raising of the dead and bringing back to life and the actual birth of Jesus from a truly virgin Mary.

#### **4. The First Pagan to Convert to the Brethren Faith**

On this basis Peter accepted the first uncircumcised person into their “Brethren” faith about 36 A.D. He was the Roman Centurion named Cornelius (Acts 10: 1-48). Then followed the mass scale conversions of the pagan Gentiles into the faith of the “Brethren”.

### **5. Jesus refused to convert Pagans to his Religion even though they had implicit Faith, which even the Jewish Followers of Jesus did not have**

The Holy Bible discloses that Jesus taught to none but Jews (Acts 11: 19). Even though the “Roman Centurion” had absolute faith in him (St. Luke 7: 1-10) yet Jesus did not think it correct to convert this centurion even with circumcising because Jesus had come to save the Jews and not the pagan Gentiles. The reason evidently was that Jesus was well aware that this would be made an excuse to change the religion of God as taught by him into paganism, idolatry, blasphemy and adultery. Therefore, he avoided it, so as not to give any chance whatsoever to mischief makers to alter his religious precepts at a later stage!

Here is a quotation from page 91 of Madras Lectures on Islam—Series No. 2—“*The Cultural Side of Islam*” by the English Research Scholar Pickthall delivered in January 1927 (published in 1937):

“Even Christ himself, as several of his sayings show—for instance, when he asked if it were meet (*i.e.* correct) to take the children’s (*i.e.* Hebrew race) bread and throw it to the dogs (*i.e.* how pagan disbelievers were treated by the Jews), and when he declared that he was sent only to the lost sheep of the House of Israel—seemed to regard his mission as to the Hebrews only;”.

### **6. Jesus commands that his teachings are for Jews and not others**

“These twelve Jesus sent forth, and *commanded them, saying, go not into the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not.*

*“But go rather to the lost sheep of the House of Israel.*

*“And as ye go, preach, saying, the kingdom of heaven is at hand”* (St. Matt 10: 5-7).

From these it will be clear that Jesus has forbidden anybody from teaching his religion to anybody but the Jews. Further his mission is only “*for the lost sheep of Israel*”.

## 7. The Protest of the Nazarenes to the Brethren

St. John, the Apostle and heir of Jesus, along with about 112 out of the 120 original followers of Jesus requested that at least the new converts be circumcised and be persuaded to follow the laws of Moses, which were the laws taught by Jesus (Acts 11: 2-3; 15: 1-5). The six dissidents disagreed (Acts 15: 6-24). This group comprising Peter, Paul and half a dozen others thus formed their own religion known as “Brethren” (Acts 11: 1) and thus severed their connections with the original religion of Jesus, (Acts 15: 9-25) by breaking the everlasting covenant of God Almighty (Genesis 17: 12-14) in spite of the protests of almost all (*i.e.* St. John and 112 out of the 120) disciples (Acts 11: 2-3).

## 8. The Brethren faith break away from the Nazarenes or followers of Jesus

Peter and his religion of the Brethren by this record of the Holy Bible showed:-

- a. They had no regard for the *Everlasting Covenant of God*.
- b. They thus considered themselves cleverer and more intelligent and learned than *God Almighty Himself*. Is not this *pure and simple Blasphemy*?
- c. Such persons as Peter and Paul who break the everlasting covenant of God, commit Blasphemy and misguide men surely cannot be guides for mankind. Far less have they any claims to be *Apostles of Jesus*: Especially when they are violating his commands to preach *only to the lost sheep of Israel* and not to the Gentiles and Samaritans (St. Matt. 10:-5-7).

## 9. In 47-48 A.D.

Paul, who never recognised Jesus or his teachings, the Evangel, displays publicly once again his utter disregard of the curses of Jesus on those who changed God’s message as taught by him. Thus Paul openly

commences to preach contrary to the Laws of God and the Evangel dictated by Jesus during his life on earth, as will be seen from the few quotations given hereunder:

- a. Jesus is Saviour (Acts 13: 23)
- b. Jesus is begotten son of god. (Acts 13: 33)
- c. That Jesus preached forgiveness of *Sins if you just believe in him.* (Acts 13: 38-39).

Hence it meant to the Pagan Gentile converts that *all sins were fully justified and encouraged by the Brethren. If they believed in the name, of Jesus they could commit as many sins as they pleased fearlessly even though they were in fact forbidden by Jesus and also prohibited under the laws of Moses as taught by Jesus in the Evangel* (Acts 13: 39).

## 10. The Warning of Jesus

Beware of the Day of Judgment on which you will be raised from the dead and will have to give an account of your deeds on earth. And I warn you that you will not attain heaven without good deeds. Beware on this day a sinner with a sin as small as *one jot or one tittle shall in no wise escape from the (Mosaic) law, and enter into heaven until he or she abides by and fulfils all the (Judaic) Laws* (St. Matt. 5: 18).

“For the eyes of the Lord are over those who do good and right deeds (as required by the Jewish Law) and His ears are open unto their prayers; but the face of the Lord is against them that do evil (in disregard of the Judaic law)” (1 Peter 3: 12).

## 11. The Second Protest in 49 A.D.

St. John, the apostle and the 112 disciples of Jesus *i.e.* “the Nazarenes” again protested against these false teachings of Paul as they were contrary to the preachings of Jesus and the Evangel saying:

“Except ye be circumcised (and follow the Evangelical laws) after the manner of Moses ye cannot be saved” (Acts 15: 1).



Paul thus had a serious dispute with the believers in Jesus (Acts 15: 2).

“Saying, this fellow (*i.e.* Paul) persuadeth men to worship God contrary to the (Mosaic) Law (as taught by Jesus)” (Acts 18: 13).

From the above it will be explicit that Paul was taken by the faithful disciples of Jesus not only as a hater of Jesus but that after his alleged conversion he also continued to teach such things, as were fundamentally contradictory to, the doctrines of Jesus. According to these faithful disciples of Jesus, Paul’s teachings without a doubt were calculated to destroy and obliterate the pure religion of Jesus from the face of the earth.

When the disciples of Jesus started protesting against the teachings of Saul, a conference was called by the “Brethren” under the chairmanship of Peter. It was attended amongst others by the following persons, the members of this conference were:

1. Peter (Acts 15: 7).
2. James the brother of Judas (Acts 15: 13).
3. Simeon (Acts 15: 14).
4. Judas, brother of James (Acts 15: 27).
5. Salias (Acts 15: 27).
6. Mark (Acts 15: 39).
7. Saul of Tarsus (St. Paul).

At this meeting of the “Brethren” it was resolved:

- a. To forsake the teachings of Jesus.
- b. To adopt a new religion based on the teachings of King Nimrod, *i.e.* Mithraism.
- c. To replace the name of Baal with its translation of “The Sacred Heart” and the names Mithra or Nimrod with the already famous name of Jesus.

- d. That the *Gentiles need not be circumcised when they accepted this new faith (of the Brethren)* (Acts 15: 19) *even though this meant the breaking of the everlasting covenant of God with Abraham* (Acts 15: 24).
- e. That neither the Pagan converts nor should the disciples be burdened any longer with the following of the Mosaic Laws taught by Jesus (Acts 15: 9-11 and 24).
- f. Following the Mosaic Laws would amount to tempting God to punish them for having broken the said divine laws. (Acts 15: 10). Thus in effect violating the following teachings of Jesus in the Holy Bible:

“Think not that I am come to destroy the (Judaic) law, or the (teachings of the Jewish) prophets; I am not come to destroy (these teachings), but to fulfil (them)” (St. Matt. 5: 17).

*“For I (Jesus) say unto you, that except your righteousness (i.e. good deeds done on earth in accordance with the Mosaic Law) shall exceed the righteousness (i.e. good deeds done on earth in accordance with the Mosaic Law, which are equally applicable to the followers of Jesus as the Jews) of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven”* (St. Matt. 5: 20).

- g. That it is immaterial what sins a Christian commits, so long as he believes in Jesus (as the only begotten son of god), he shall be saved by his grace just like they (that took all the trouble to follow the Mosaic law. Hence good deeds were not only irrelevant but they were to be looked down upon—Acts 15: 11).

Accordingly these Nimrodic principles became the foundation in 49 A.D. for the development of the Churches of Peter (Antioch), Mark (Alexandria), and Paul (Rome), which adopted the Pagan sun worship religion prevailing in these areas but instead of using the names Baal, the Sacred Heart or Tammuz and the sign of the cross, or Mithra, the saviour, the only begotten son born of the virgin, *etc.*, they merely replaced them with the already famous name of Jesus and gave him all

their titles *e.g.* the Sacred Heart, the only begotten Son, the Saviour come to save the world by the sacrifice of his life, *etc.* Thereby they raised the status of Jesus in course of time from “A Man” to “Son of god” to fit in with the pagan mythology of the “Virgin giving birth to the only begotten son of the Sun god, who sacrificed his life to save sinners”.

Therefore, the religion taught by the “Brethren” was completely at variance with that of Jesus. It had no real or any imaginary connections except for the incorporation of the name of Jesus. They enlarged upon his miracles as their best and most convincing argument. This is thus the beginning of the display of utter disregard for Jesus and his threat to disown such corruptors of his religion on the “Day of Judgment”. This refers to those who changed his teachings of observance of the Mosaic Laws and the doing of good deeds failing which one could not hope to attain heaven.

The message of Peter on behalf of the “Brethren” to the Pagan converts was as under:

Forasmuch as we have heard, that certain (people *i.e.* St. John and the Nazarenes) which went out from us have troubled you with words, subverting your souls saying, *Ye must be circumcised and to keep the (Mosaic) Law: to whom (the Nazarenes) we (i.e. the Brethren) gave no such commandment.*

“It seemed good (enough) unto us, (the Brethren) being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men unto you with our beloved Barnabas and Paul,

“We have sent therefore Judas and Salias, who shall also tell you the same things by mouth” (Acts 15: 24-25 and 27).

Thus started orally the new religion of the “Brethren” in contradiction to the “Evangel”, the message of God through Jesus.

This is confirmed by St. John in the Holy Bible:

“And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.

“Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that anti-christ shall come, *even now are there many antichrists*; whereby we know that it is the last time.

*“They (the Brethren) went out from us (the Nazarenes), but they were not of us (the followers of Jesus) for if they had been of us (the followers of Jesus), they would no doubt have continued with us (the followers of Jesus); but they (the Brethren) went out that they might be made manifest (i.e. become world famous on account of the new popular religion they have originated in the name of Jesus thus they made clear) that they were not at all of us (the followers of Jesus)”* (I John 2: 17-19).

#### **D. The warnings of Jesus that he disowns Peter**

Did Jesus authorise St. Peter in terms of the Holy Bible to:

1. Accept Gentiles and Samaritans and others who were not Jews into the faith without being circumcised?
2. Do away with the Judaic Law and to treat it as a curse?
3. Alter the religion taught by Jesus?

From the Holy Bible it is confirmed that Jesus had warned Peter in his original name of Simon that Satan is going to possess him as follows:

“And the Lord said, Simon, Simon behold *the Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat:*” (St. Luke 22: 31).

From the Holy Bible it appears that Jesus has informed Peter repeatedly in the presence of two or three witnesses as required under the law—Deuteronomy 17:6, that on the Day of Judgment when Peter would approach him, Jesus would disown Peter, because he was aware that Peter and those like him would destroy the teachings of Jesus and turn his religion from God worship into paganism, idolatry and blasphemy.

When one has been disowned repeatedly and warned by Jesus in the presence of witnesses how can such a one be described as an apostle

of Jesus? What right has he to call himself an apostle of Jesus? How can such a person be the guide to followers of Jesus? What is the value of anything taught by Peter and his associates especially when it is aimed at effacing the teachings of Jesus?

The witnesses to the warning of Jesus to Peter were:

1. John, the son of Zebedee (St. Matt. 4: 21).
2. Andrew.
3. James, the son of Zebedee (St. Matt. 4: 21).

This warning to Peter is quoted hereunder from the Holy Bible:

“And as he sat upon the Mount of Olives over against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately.

“And Jesus answering them began to say, Take heed lest any man (even from amongst those present here—a direct reference to Peter and those like him) deceive you.

“For many shall come in my name (*i.e.* claiming to be the Apostles of Jesus), saying I am sent by (or chosen by Jesus) Christ and (such like Peter) shall deceive many” (St. Mark 13: 3, 5-6).

Jesus has clarified further in the Holy Bible that he would disown Peter and those like him on the Day of Judgment:

“Not everyone that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the Kingdom of heaven (*i.e.* faith in Jesus is not sufficient); but he that doeth the will (*i.e.* does good deeds and follows the Judaic Laws) of my father (*i.e.* the Creator), Which is in heaven.

“Many will say to me in that day (of Judgment), Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name done many wonderful works?

“And then will I (Jesus) profess unto them, I never knew you (because you did not follow my teachings): depart from me, ye that work iniquity (by saying “Faith” is sufficient and good deeds and the Judaic law of God are a curse)” (St. Matt. 7: 21-23).

Thus Jesus has clarified before witnesses as required under the Law (Deuteronomy 17: 6) to Peter that he was fully aware, of what mischief Peter and his associates would do after his Ascension. And Jesus has warned that on the Day of Judgment, Jesus was going to disown Peter and his followers and chase them away for the harm they would do to the religion of God as taught by Jesus.

Jesus knew very well what was going to happen in the future to his religion and who is going to change and demolish it.

Since John, his heir and Andrew and James (brother of John, the son of Zebedee) were going to remain on the right path, *this warning was a direct and indisputable reference to Peter, who was the fourth and an indirect reference to Paul and their followers, i.e. the Brethren.*

Jesus has expressed further his disappointment at Peter for his inability to pray for an hour to save himself from the temptations of Satan when praying at the Garden as follows:

“And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith (only) unto Peter: What, could ye not watch with me one hour? (Jesus did not say so to the sons of Zebedee because he knew that they would remain on the right road and that all his references and warnings related only to Peter. He thus kept the same two witnesses out of the previous three also on this occasion, one of whom was to be his only Apostolic heir).

“(Jesus orders Peter) Watch and pray that ye (Peter) enter not into temptation (of the Satan, who is going to have you as warned earlier—St. Luke 22: 31) ...

“He (Jesus) went away again the second time, and prayed ...

“And he came and found them asleep again (*i.e.* Peter and the two sons of Zebedee *i.e.* John and James the two witnesses of the previous warning to Peter. Thus Jesus kept witnesses regularly against Peter, which shows he fully knew about Peter) ...

“(Again Jesus awoke Peter warning him to pray otherwise the Satan would have him as warned in St. Luke 22: 31, saying this is the third

and final chance Peter had of saving himself from the Satan if he prayed with Jesus and woke up John and James a second time so that they might be witness to his warnings to Peter). And he left them and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words (of warning to Peter).

“Then cometh he (Jesus after he had finished his prayers) to his disciples and saith unto them (to Peter in absolute disappointment and to John and James as his witnesses), Sleep on now, and take your rest (as the hour of prayer for safety from Satan for Peter had already passed) ...” (St. Matt. 26: 40-45).

Then there are the six famous denials of Peter in the Holy Bible before the cock crows. These occurred thrice at the house of Annas (St. John 18: 17-18 and 25-27) and again thrice at the Palace of Caiphas (St. Matt. 26: 69-75; St. Mark 14: 66-72). These six denials of Peter in one single night clearly show how little was Peter’s faith in Jesus.

Jesus has made it clear in the Holy Bible that if anyone denies him *even once in public* then Jesus would disown him in heaven:

*“But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my father (i.e. the Creator) which is in heaven”* (St. Matt. 10: 33).

*Since Peter has denied Jesus six times in public* (see Chapter 12: H-3), *therefore Peter is a person disowned by Jesus* hence absolutely unfit to represent Jesus according to the Holy Bible.

The Holy Bible confirms further that God Almighty has given no right to anybody to change even an iota from the religion of God as can be seen from the following quotations:

“For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, if any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book” (Revelation 22: 18).

“Ye shall *not add* unto the work which I command you, *neither shall ye diminish ought from it*, that ye may keep the commandments of the LORD your God which I command you.

“Know therefore this day, and consider it in thine heart, *that the LORD He is God in heaven above, and upon the earth beneath: there is NONE ELSE.*

“Thou shall keep therefore His statutes, and His commandments, which I command thee this day, that it may go well with thee, and with thy children after thee, and that thou mayest prolong thy days upon the earth, which the LORD thy God giveth thee, (This is a commandment) for ever” (Deuteronomy 4: 2, 39-40).

If anyone deviates from the laws of God Almighty then he is either:

- a. Assuming to be cleverer than God Almighty so that he can change His orders—but that is impossible and also a blasphemy as no man can ever compare his knowledge with that of God Almighty, or,
- b. The changer of the law is a sinner.

In both the cases such a person has no right whatsoever even to pretend before the world that he is an Apostle of Jesus. The people of the world are forbidden by the above Biblical orders to follow such mischief makers. Otherwise they surely will suffer dire consequences.

Even if such a person were an “appointed Apostle” of Jesus, from the moment he discarded the law or taught disobedience to the Mosaic Law, he would cease automatically to be an apostle of Jesus. Thus he would become an apostle of the devil instead of Jesus.

Jesus has made this quite evident by the following curse:

“Whosoever therefore shall break (even) one of these least (*i.e.* the smallest of these Mosaic) commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be (cursed to the lowest hell *i.e.*) called the least in the kingdom of heaven but whosoever shall do (*i.e.* follow these Mosaic commandments) and teach them (to other people), the same shall be called (*i.e.* blessed to) great (positions and respect) in the Kingdom of Heaven” (St. Matt. 5: 19).

As such, a person who invokes upon himself the curse of Jesus, can by no stretch of the imagination be one of his Apostles.



Further, Jesus has clarified by his prayer in the Bible that he prays for only those few who would keep to his teachings and thus belong to him and not for the rest of the world:

“I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but (only) for them, which Thou hast given me; for they are Thine (*i.e.* those who are observers of your Judaic Laws and Commandments)” (St. John 17: 9).

The last Heavenly Book corroborates the above teachings of Jesus as follows:

“But when Jesus became conscious of their disbelief, he cried: Who will be my helpers in the cause of Allah? The disciples (St. John and the 112 out of the 120) said: We will be Allah’s helpers. We believe in Allah and bear thou (O Jesus) witness that we are “Muslims” (*i.e.* we have surrendered ourselves to the Will of Allah—Thy will be done).

“Our Lord! We believe in that which (Evangel) thou hast revealed (through Jesus) and we follow him, whom thou hast sent. Enrol us among those who are witnesses (to the truth.)

“And they (Peter and Paul and the Brethren) schemed (against John and the 112 believers in Jesus) and Allah is the best of schemers” (Qur’an 3: 52-54).

## E. The Origin of the Non-Hebrew Gospels

**In 50 A.D.:** Paul commences to write letters of advice for the new Pagan converts inviting other Gentiles to join this new religion of which he and his “Brethren” are the founders. These letters of Paul in course of time became the first man-made “Gospel” and that too in a non-Hebrew ‘tongue *i.e.*, a language alien to Jesus, as against the Divine Original Hebrew Evangel of Jesus (see also Chapter 8: J-3—The Evangel).

They compiled eventually their own *Holy Bible* in the non-Hebrew languages of the Gentiles as opposed to the original *Evangel* personally dictated by Jesus in Hebrew before being lifted to heaven and recorded

in Aramaic script by several Jewish scribes including Levi, Andrew and Barnabas. They had recorded it during the period that Jesus was preaching, and it was also noted by John there and then but reproduced in book form a few years after the Romans ravaged Jerusalem in 70 A.D. All these Jewish scribes were not only the companions but also numbered among the 120 disciples of Jesus (Acts 1: 15).

**About 56-58 A.D.:** The Pagan converts to the faith of the “Brethren” had become numerous. They required a book of instructions. The Evangel was not acceptable to them! A Gentile of Antioch who was by profession a physician whose name was Luke (Colossians 4: 14) became a faithful companion of Paul. Luke was an acknowledged scholar. At Paul’s request and on the basis of the information given by Paul to him, he wrote the “Gospel of St. Luke”. This is the second series of man-made writings, which is again in a Non-Hebrew language—*i.e.*, not for Jews but for the Gentile converts.

**About 58-60 A.D.:** When St. John and the Nazarenes, the true followers of Jesus, heard of the false gospel of Luke they started showing the Pagan converts the Hebrew “Evangel” of Jesus.

This gave rise to bitter feelings between the Nazarenes and the Brethren; who had already increased to some thousands in number. The Pagan converts were mostly Romans in authority. They commenced immediately a systematic persecution of the Nazarenes, who by 62 A.D. had to flee for their lives from Jerusalem as foretold by Jesus (St. Luke 21: 20-24).

**About 60-65 A.D.:** It appears that because Paul had got his friend Luke to write out a gospel, Peter likewise influenced his friend Marcus, another intellectual of the time, to compile a book also. This became the third series of man-made writings in a non-Hebrew language for the Pagan converts to counteract the Original Hebrew “Evangel” of Jesus.

This new religion of the “Brethren” appears to be based upon the undermentioned quotations which spelt the death-knell of the

teachings of Jesus and the Evangel:

“But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for the just shall live by the faith.

“And the laws is not of faith: but the man that doeth them shall live in them.

“CHRIST” (this word was coined by Constantine in 325 A.D. hence this must have been written thereafter) has redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree” (Galatians 3: 11-13). These are purely Nimrod’s teachings.

That the religion of these “Brethren” is that taught by King Nimrod at the “Tower of Babel”, the Church of Babylon, is even confirmed by St. Peter in the Holy Bible when he requested St. Mark to write out a Gospel paying due respect to the teachings of this temple of Babylon and to greet with a kiss this gospel when written and prepared as follows:

“The *Church* (Tower of Babel) that is *at Babylon* elected together with *You* (i.e. founded by *You*—King Nimrod) Saluteth *You* (i.e. King Nimrod, the only begotten son of God who was born of the great Virgin mother, queen of the heavens, the lamb come to save sinners): and so doth Marcus (St. Mark the gospel writer) my son.

“(When the gospel of St. Mark on King Nimrod replacing it with the name of Jesus is prepared) Greet Ye one another with a kiss of Charity. Peace be with you all that are in *Christ* (this word was coined in 325 A.D.) Jesus Amen” (I Peter 5: 13, 14).

Babylon has always upheld one religion (page 23 of *Babylon the Great has Fallen!*), that of King Nimrod from the time of the curse of God at the Tower of Babel. This is re-iterated in the Holy Bible:

“Babylon hath been a golden cup in the Lord’s hand, that made *All the earth Drunken*; the nations have drunken of her wine; *Therefore the Nations are mad*”. (Jeremiah 51:7)

## **F. The Spread of Christianity**

### **1. The Brethren Faith**

The spread of the Brethren faith of Peter and Paul was very rapid until 70 A.D., when Jerusalem was destroyed by the Romans.

Thereafter; as they were considered a branch of the Jewish faith, they came under the persecution of the Romans. Therefore they had no option but to show that there was a great difference between the Jewish faith and that which the Brethren were following. Rather the latter was identical with the Mithraic faith of the Romans. In fact the Brethren claimed that their faith, even though it appeared similar to Mithraism, was definitely superior in the following respects:

- a. Jesus was actually born of a virgin named Mary as against the mythological story of Nimrod the only begotten son of sun-god through the virgin queen of the heavens.
- b. All the people of Judea had actually witnessed the wonderful miracles performed by Jesus including the raising of the dead to life.

Because of these two arguments, the Brethren faith continued to spread amongst the pagans.

### **2. The Church receives Royal Patronage**

On the 28th October, 312 A.D. the Roman Emperor Constantine the Great was declared the Chief Augustus and Pontifex Maximus by the Roman Senate after he had defeated his rivals.

In January 313 A.D. Constantine, in his capacity of Pontifex Maximus, published his famous edict of toleration in favour of those professing the Brethren and the Nazarene faiths, both of which claimed Jesus to be the founder of their religion. Thus Jerusalem was again opened to the followers of Jesus.

In 321 A.D., Constantine enacted his first law which would apply equally to his pagan as well as Christian subjects *viz*:

Henceforth “*Dies Solis*” or Sun-god’s day was to be observed as the “Sabbath day by all his subjects irrespective of their religious beliefs”.

Hence the Christians were obliged to observe the Pagan sun-god’s day as their “Sabbath” instead of “Fridays” as was being observed by the followers of Jesus, who did not eat meat on Fridays nor kill animals for food but observed Fridays as the holy day for prayers.

In 325 A.D. King Constantine had his son-in-law Emperor Licinius killed. Thus he became the sole Monarch of the Eastern and Western Roman Empires. By this unifying action he gained great power and respect.

He wanted to consolidate this position by having a common universal religion for all his subjects whether pagan or otherwise. He was even anxious to end all religious rifts between the Brethren faith and Mithraism on the one hand and the Brethren and Nazarenes on the other. If all his subjects professed only one faith, it would mean much greater strength and unity for his whole empire. That was his ideal. Just as he had unified the Eastern and the Western Roman Empires into one consolidated Roman Empire, so also did he want to do the same thing with the religion of all his subjects.

On studying the various religions prevalent in his empire, he found that Mithraism and the Brethren faith were rather similar. The two arguments of the Brethren on the miraculous birth of Jesus and his numerous miracles being witnessed by a large number of people impressed him very much.

Accordingly in 325 A.D. the pagan Constantine in one of his first acts as sole emperor of the Eastern and Western Roman Empires and as Pontifex Maximus called together a religious council for settling the disputes between the diverse religions professing to originate from Jesus. This was the first step towards his objective of unifying all religions into one single faith for his subjects.

On pages 477-478, of “*Babylon the Great has Fallen!*” one reads the following:

*Unbaptized Constantine, the pagan Pontifex Maximus, called for all the Christian episcopal or overseers throughout the empire to meet in council, not in Italian Rome, but in Nicaea, near Nicomedia, in Asia Minor. Of all these overseers, only about one-third, or 318, are reported to have come; and even this figure is understood to be too high. But why should these overseers, if they were Christians, obey a pagan Pontifex Maximus and let him dictate in Christian matters? Because of the attendants whom the bishops brought along, the number of men present at the Council may have been between 1500 and 2000. Constantine himself attended this first Council of Nicaea and he, as Pontifex Maximus and not as the religious bishop of Rome presided over the council. It was conducted, not in Latin, but in Greek, and the Nicene Creed that resulted was in Greek. The Latin Church had only seven delegates present, two of these being presbyters who represented the bishop of Rome.*

“Those who upheld the trinity were championed by the young archdeacon Athanasius of Alexandria, Egypt. Those who opposed it and who showed from the (original handwritten Hebrew) Scripture that Jesus Christ was less than God his Father were championed by Arius, a presbyter. For about two months the two sides wrangled. Arius maintained that ‘the son of god was a creature, made from nothing; that there was a time when he had no existence; that he was capable of his own free will of (doing) right and wrong,’ and that, ‘were he in the truest sense a son, he must have come after the Father, therefore the time obviously was when he was not, and hence he was a finite being.’ When Arius rose to speak, a certain Nicholas of Myra hit him in the face. Afterwards, as Arius talked on, many stuck their fingers in their ears and ran out as if horrified by the old man’s ‘heresies.’

“Finally Pontifex Maximus Constantine made his decision and came out in favour of the trinitarian teachings of Athanasius (because they fitted in with the existing Mithraism and would help him to unify the religion of all his subjects). So the Nicene Creed on the “Trinity” was issued and enforced. Later, for resisting this, Arius

was banished to Illyria by Constantine's order".

From this finding of the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society it will be quite clear that there are still many true followers of Jesus who believe in his teachings:

"But in vain they do worship me (Jesus), teaching for doctrines the commandments of men" (St. Matthew 15: 9).

"Jesus saith unto her (Mary Magdalene) ... but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father; and to my God, and your God" (St. John 20: 17).

These statements of Jesus thus clarify beyond any doubt the following issues:

- a. The worship of Jesus is in vain.
- b. That Jesus is the brother of mankind.
- c. That the "God" of mankind is equally the "God" of Jesus.
- d. That the "Father" of mankind is also the "Father" of Jesus or in other words, God, out of respect, has been referred to in numerous passages of the Holy Bible as "The Divine Father" which only means that "The Creator" of mankind is also "The Creator" of Jesus. It does not by any stretch of the imagination mean "Father" in the physical sense. Otherwise each human being becomes divine according to the above statement of Jesus—that would indeed be an absurdity!

Therefore if Jesus was divine as decided upon by Constantine, the Pagan Pontifex Maximus, in 325 A.D. at the Council of Nicaea at the suggestion of Athanasius, then in that case, according to the above quotation from the Holy Bible, the entire human race, who are the brethren of Jesus, must each be equally divine! If Jesus is declared son of god then it follows that his brethren *i.e.* every human being must also be the sons of 'God'! But Jesus has made no claim whatsoever to divinity anywhere in the Holy Bible. He has never said I am "God the son" or "Only begotten son of God" or "Trinity in Unity". His above

statement “my God and your God” therefore clearly establishes the heresy of Athanasius and Constantine.

All lovers of Jesus will naturally be very much shocked to find that because Arius and two fellow bishops refused to renounce the teachings of Jesus and worship Jesus which is something in vain and useless according to the Holy Bible they were banished and the **Original teachings of Jesus were declared heresies!** Can the teachings of Jesus ever be heresies?

The definition of Arianism as it appears in a standard English Encyclopaedia (The Penguin) may here be appropriately quoted. Though it is described as a heresy in the Encyclopaedia, the particulars given rather lend support to the arguments of the true believers in Jesus, and this clearly shows it to be the authentic teachings of Jesus:

“**Arianism.** Christian heresy named after Arius, about A.D. 256-336, a priest of Alexandria who taught that Jesus was not co-eternal with God the Father but created by Him and therefore in some sense inferior. Condemned by the Council of Nicaea A.D. 325 and bitterly opposed by Athanasius (later Bishop of Alexandria), it was embraced by many pagan converts to Christianity especially among the Goths and Germans, but from the 6th century gradually died out, though held by individuals (including allegedly Milton) at various times throughout Christian history; ...”

On page 1357, Vol. 3, of “*The Reader’s Digest Great Encyclopaedic Dictionary*” one reads:

“**Arianism.** Doctrine held by Arius of Alexandria (c 250-335) and his followers, who denied that God the Son was truly divine, co-substantial and coeternal with the Father, but was created by him”.

From the above definition given by the Reader’s Digest, it would appear that all Christians do not hold Arianism *i.e.* the original teachings of Jesus as heresies. Those who follow Constantine and Athanasius do, but the lovers of Jesus do not!

The following list of dates on *Trinity* might be of interest to all



seekers of the truth:

- A.D. 33:** “I ascend unto my Father and your Father and to my God and your God” (St. John 20: 17).
- A.D. 57:** The Brethren about this time are teaching: “For there is *One God*, and *one mediator between God and man, the man Jesus*” (1 Timothy 2: 5).
- A.D. 96:** About this time Clement wrote that Jesus was sent by God and the Apostles by Jesus.
- A.D. 120:** The creed of the Apostles became known to the Church as: “I believe in God the Father, the Almighty”.
- A.D. 230:** Origen writes against prayers being offered Jesus, which is in accord with the teachings of Jesus, that prayers to him are in vain (St. Matthew 15: 9).
- A.D. 260:** Sabellius teaches: *Father, Son and Holy Spirit* are three names for the same god.
- A.D. 300:** No trinitarian form of prayer is yet known to the Church.
- A.D. 310:** Lactanius (orthodox father) writes: “*Jesus never calls himself God*”.
- A.D. 320:** “*Jesus teaches us to call his Father the True God and to worship Him*”.
- A.D. 325:** History bears testimony to the fact that Christos or Christ the name coined by Emperor Constantine after the Greek letter “X”, was declared con-substantial with the Father by the Council of Nicaea. To enforce the Divinity of Christ, there followed that horrifying and inhuman slaughter of thousands of innocent people, who refused to accept the Divinity of Christ conferred on him by the said Council, not only in Europe but in the sacred city of Jerusalem as well.

**A.D. 381:** The Council of Constantinople gives the finishing touch to *the doctrine of “three persons in one god”*.

**A.D. 383:** The Emperor Theodosius threatens to punish all who will not believe in and worship the Trinity.

At the first Council of religious heads at Nicaea, not the Pope of Rome but Constantine in his capacity as Pontifex Maximus issued a number of regulations to be observed by the members of the Church. These canons included:

- a. The Greek letter “X” pronounced as “*chi*” to represent the first letter of the name of the founder of their religion just as the upright sign of the Cross stood for “Tau” or the first letter of the name of Tammuz, the title of Nimrod.
- b. From the Greek letter “X” he coined the name Christos or Christ (in English) for the founder of this religion.
- c. His birthday to be celebrated at the Winter Solstice, the birthday of Nimrod-Mithra and called “X-mas” pronounced “Christmas”.
- d. That henceforth the followers of the Christ were given a special name called Christians. Thus this is the origin of Christianity.
- e. He decided on which *Dies Solis* or Sun-god’s day of the year “Easter” should be regularly held,
- f. That God instead of being one and alone as taught by Jesus was reduced to a “Trinity in Unity” according to Nimrod’s teachings as in Mithraism.
- g. Anyone not accepting these doctrines was to be persecuted, Arius along with two Bishops being exiled for this very same reason.
- h. All documents which showed that Constantine, the Great Pontifex Maximus, was forcing pagan Mithraism into the religion which he named Christianity, were destroyed by his

orders. This resulted in God's curse falling upon Constantine causing the destruction of the Roman Empire, about which we shall read later.

### 3. The Burning of the Evangel and other Hebrew texts

Accordingly the original Evangels of Jesus written by Levi, son of Alphaeus and St John in Hebrew Aramaic Script along with the Revelation of St. John also in Hebrew were seized from the custody of Arius and burnt at the suggestion of St. Athanasius, the archdeacon of Alexandria, who wrote out in the Greek language at the Royal Command the "Holy Bible" we now have incorporating the word "Christos" or "Christ" which was coined by Constantine in 325 A.D. at the council of Nicaea. Further, the language is Greek *i.e.* the language of Constantine the Pagan Pontifex Maximus's choice and not Hebrew the language of Jesus or Latin, the official language of the Roman Empire till 312 A.D. Therefore the "Non-Hebrew Gospels" have nothing to do with the real teachings of Jesus which had to be burnt because these differed materially from the Greek manuscripts thus prepared in or after 325 A. D.

All these burnings of the original Hebrew books and records and letters of protests as also that everything has been done to humour Constantine are confirmed in the following passage:

"It was indeed significant that in the early fourth century one of the first acts of Constantine, when by his presence, he gave countenance to the new status of the Church at the Council of Nicaea, should be the receiving of numerous petitions of complaints from bishops against their fellow bishops. **It is Recorded that he burned them**" (page 14 of "*Islam and Christian Theology*" Part 1: Vol. One—Preparatory Historical Survey of the early period by J. Windrow Sweetman, published by Lutterwood Press; London 1945. See Chapter 8: J-3—Evangel).

In Socrates, Schol. Eccl. Hist. 1.1.c. 9 we are informed:

- a. That an edict was issued by Emperor St. Constantine the pagan head of the Nicaean Council of 325 A.D.
- b. The order decrees that all the writings in the hands of Arius be burnt. Thus the Original Evangel of Jesus in Hebrew Aramaic script dictated personally by Jesus during his life and noted down by the Scribe Levi as also the Original Gospel of St. John and the Revelation *etc.* all in Hebrew Aramaic script were seized from the custody of Arius and burnt.
- c. This edict further orders that anybody concealing any documents containing the same teachings as that of Arius and not immediately producing these and committing them to the flames would be punished with death.
- d. That those who persisted in preaching what Arius advocated would be anathematised, excommunicated, imprisoned, banished, fined, beggared and starved.

Not only was the Original Evangel of Jesus written by Levi and John thus destroyed along with many Hebrew books of the New Testament but even Arius and two other Bishops who voted with him were also tortured, excommunicated and exiled for their persistence in preaching the authentic teachings of Jesus! Their banishment is referred to in page 26 of “*A Popular History of the Catholic Church*” by Philip Hughes published by Burns & Oates, London, 1958.

On page xiv of the Preface to the Second Edition of the “*Apocryphal New Testament*” published by William Hone of Ludgate Hill, London, 1820, it is again borne out:

“... an edict published by Constantine, in which he decrees that all the writings (similar to those seized from the possession) of Arius (*i.e.* the Original Hebrew Aramaic Evangel personally dictated by Jesus to Jewish Scribes) should be burned and anybody concealing any writings composed by him, and not immediately producing them, and committing them to the flames, should be punished with death”.

#### 4. The Religion of the Founder of “The Church of Christ”

It is stated on pages 202-205 of “*The Two Babylons*” by the Rev. Hislop that Constantine the Great, saw (in a dream) a flaming Cross in the heavens under the “SUN” (his patron god) bearing the words “*In hoc signo vinces*” (i.e. “By this sign you will conquer”). This was before the council of Nicaea. This occurred during his campaign against his opponent Maxentius in 312 A.D. whom he defeated. Since then Constantine had boundless faith in the magical “Sign of the Cross”. He therefore founded his “Church of Christ” or Christianity upon it in 325 A.D.

The royal founder of “The Church of Christ” may have chosen to put forward his adoption of the Cross as the sign of his new religion, but the fact remains that Apollo was his patron deity, and remained so throughout his life, as the seal and coinage of Emperor Constantine demonstrate.

Hence it is evident that Constantine, while claiming to be a Christian was in fact a Sun worshipper and that his pagan belief was responsible for the adoption of the “Sign of the Cross” of “Sun-god”. This is proved further beyond any doubt by the resolutions he adopted at this first Council of religious bishops held under his Presidency.

Constantine got this Council to ratify his decree of 321 A.D. changing the Sabbath day from “Fridays” to “*Dies Solis*” or the day of “Sun-god Sol”, whose symbol was the Cross.

He believed in Trinity of Sun-worship comprising:

1. Jupiter as god of gods,
2. Apollo as son of god Jupiter and
3. Leto, the virgin mother of Apollo.

This influenced Constantine to accept Trinity as propagated by St. Athanasius. This theory fitted in beautifully with his pagan religious belief in the Trinity in unity of gods of Sun-worshippers. Thus started

what is known as the “Blessed Trinity” or the “Nicene Creed” or “The Church of Christ” and “Christianity”.

That explains why even after two months of efforts and in spite of showing him the Original Handwritten Evangel of Jesus in Hebrew Aramaic Script by Levi and St. John and the Revelation of St. John also in Hebrew, Arius failed to convince Emperor Constantine.

Naturally it follows that if such were the true facts, then God’s curse must have fallen upon the religion founded by Constantine. The terrible devastation it caused for Europe is recorded later.

### **5. The Character of the Originator of “The Church of Christ”**

History informs us that the founder of The Church of Christ was as follows:

- a. King Constantine cruelly tortured his wife to death by drowning her in boiling water!
- b. He also arranged the murdering of the following members of his family and relatives:
  1. His own son Crispus
  2. The husband of his sister Anastasia
  3. The twelve year old son of his sister Constantia
  4. The husband of his sister Constantia
  5. His own father-in-law Maximilian Hercules.
- c. He also ordered the slaughter of a large number of people, who were not so closely related to him.

In spite of all these murders of innocent people The Church of Christ has bestowed upon its founder the title of “Saint”.

## 6. The Reasons for Founding “The Church of Christ”

Emperor Saint Constantine asked the pagan priest Supator to give him absolution from the Sin of the murder of his own father-in-law. But Supator, the Mithraic priest, refused in spite of being tortured. In a temper Constantine decided not only to kill this priest but he also resolved to destroy Mithraism as well and thus declared himself to be a Christian! This cannot by any stretch of the imagination be called a conversion, rather it emanated out of his hatred against justice. Hence The Church of Christ has been born out of a revulsion for truth and justice—principles which are so very far removed from the teachings of the gentle Jesus.

The European Research Scholar John Devenport has shown (pages 137-138 of “*Mohammed and the Koran*” by J. Davy & Son, London, 1882) that all the horrible atrocities committed in the name of holy Jesus were the result of the wicked teachings of this Roman Emperor Saint. He has commented about him as follows:

“... the least sanction or authority for the horrible atrocities afterwards perpetrated in his (Jesus’s) revered name? To whom, then it may be asked, are they attributable? The answer is easy—*To the Emperor Constantine, falsely surnamed the Great ... The Emperor, who, from political motives exclusively, had embraced Christianity, but who, on account of his cruelty, has justly been called A Second Nero, presided over the Famous Council of Nicaea ... in which the Doctrine of Christ’s Divinity was, for the First Time Established*”.

## 7. The Destruction of Mithraism

From these actions of the pagan Roman Emperor it becomes clear that to achieve his objects:

- a. To destroy Mithraism because its priest refused him absolution for the murder of his father-in-law, and
- b. To have one unified religion for all his subjects be they pagans

or otherwise,

Constantine did not hesitate to take any action—harsh, unfair or unreasonable. His principal of life therefore was:

“It does not matter what destruction is involved, everything is fair. So long as the object is achieved—it is fully justified”.

Constantine incorporated in the Greek Holy Bible this principle of his as follows:

Think not that I am come to send *Peace* on earth: I am not to send *Peace but the Sword*” (St. Matt. 10: 34).

Let us compare and see how very contrary are these teachings of Emperor St. Constantine the originator of the word “Christos” and The Church of Christ from the real teachings of Jesus:

“This is my Commandment, that ye love one another, as I have loved you” (St. John 15: 12).

“These things I Command you, that ye love one another” (St. John 15: 17).

“... For they that take (to) the sword (to impose their will upon others) shall (one day) perish with the sword” (St. Matthew 26: 52).

The Christian religion thus formed had the full backing and encouragement of the Roman Kings that followed “Saint Constantine the Great Roman Emperor”, the founder of Christianity.

Those who were the wardens of “The Church of Christ” in those days never failed to do two things according to historical records, until Christianity fully triumphed over Mithraism *viz*:

1. Christian Churches incorporated all the popular pagan cults into their faith.
2. The Church took particular pains to obliterate and burn all available pagan records and libraries in order to remove all evidence as to the origin from which their Christian faith was derived and which if allowed to remain, would clearly



show that the Christian religion had its origin in a faith not only so alien to that of Jesus but in something which was even hated and despised by Jesus as also cursed repeatedly by God, the most famous curses of God being at the Tower of Babel and again in the respective destructions of Jerusalem in 607 B.C. and 70 A.D.

The thoroughness with which these sun-worship records of Nimrod's faith were destroyed by The Church of Christ can be visualised from the extermination, not only by the burning of the Alexandrian Library some fifty years after the death of the Great Roman Emperor St. Constantine but also the killing of Hypatia, the great teacher and priest of the sun-worship cult as well as its librarian.

### **8. The Religion of the Sword in one Hand and the Holy Bible in the other**

While reading the history of the Church of Christ, one cannot but be convinced that the Christian Church founded by Constantine had used the sword and fire in wiping out every trace and memory of Sun-worship in its original form. It was incorporating anything and everything of the heathen forms of worship into its own teachings and traditions in order to make the new faith popular. They were not interested in teaching the religion of Jesus, but were only anxious to make as many converts as possible who would call themselves the followers of the faith of the second Nero, the Roman Emperor St. Constantine (*i.e.* Christians).

Copernicus could not do better service in this direction to the Christo—Pagan Church, to which he belonged, than to introduce his solar system and substitute it for the Ptolemaic—a mere reference to which system would easily show the origin of the Christian Mysteries, and the dates of the Church festivals.

There were several treatises setting forth the religion of Mithra, but “everyone of these have been destroyed”, says Robertson on page 325

of *'Pagan Christ'*, "by the care of the Church and it is remarkable that the treatise of Firmices is mutilated at passage (V) where the writer seems to be accusing Christians of following Mithraic usages". In this respect, Professor Murray says:

"the polemic literature of Christianity is everywhere triumphant, (because) the books of the Pagans have been destroyed (by the Christian Church)".

When the Christians landed in Mexico they were greatly surprised to find that their religious belief in the only begotten son of god, the lamb who had come to save sinners with the sign of the cross and all the Christian customs and beliefs were already being followed, here and had been so for several thousands of years. It was the sun-worship of Nimrod which had been scattered from Babylon by the curse of God Almighty at the Tower of Babel. Here also the Christians used violent means forcibly to convert them to Christianity by means of their superior armaments and guns. They again destroyed all evidence that this pagan religion had its origin from the same source as Christianity, which certainly was not from Jesus of Nazareth, the son of the Virgin Mary.

That coercion has been used by the Christian Churches in obliging the pagans to convert themselves to it is further evident from the fact that in 988 A.D., Vladimir the Great of Russia married Anna the sister of Emperor Basil II. He had himself baptised. He had the idolatrous images of Peroun and other gods cast into the Dnieper River. At this action the people wept, but they yielded to Vladimir's demand for them to be baptised as Christians.

Vladimir's son nearly completed the forced conversions of the Russians, who thus became members of the Orthodox Church of Constantinople.

Page 37 of Volume 24 of "*The Encyclopedia Americana*", Edition 1929 reads:

“Russian paganism did not vanish when the Christian Gospel began to be preached. It survived in the popular language, sayings, traditions, domestic life and even religious beliefs. As late as the 18th century, serpents were adored in some remote villages. Eugenius Golubinsky, the great historian of the Russian Church, declares that Russia was baptized in the ninth century, but not Christianized”.

## 9. The Origin of the Canonical Gospels

On page 270 of *“The Apocryphal New Testament”* by William Hone, London, 1820, it is reported that Athanasius, Bishop of Alexandria, wrote out the New Testament, which is exactly the same as the New Testament we now have before us today. From this it will be obvious that the Greek Manuscripts of the New Testament incorporating the words “Christos”, or “Christ”, coined by Constantine in 325 A.D. and in the language of Constantine’s choice *viz:* in Greek, instead of Hebrew, the mother tongue of Jesus, or Latin, the language of the Roman Empire, were the works of Athanasius, the destroyer of the original Evangels of Jesus written by Levi and John in Hebrew Aramaic script. Thus the New Testament before us does not include the original works of Matthew (or Levi to call him by his original Hebrew name) and St. John *etc.*, but is the work of the destroyer of the Original Evangel and his collaborators.

It will be clear from the undermentioned quotations of English Biblical Research Scholars that this falsification of the Bible and its endorsement as the “Canonical Gospel” was not only carried out under the instructions of Emperor St. Constantine, the founder of “The Church of Christ”, but was also inspired by fear of him as also to placate him as stated in page XIV of *ibid*:

“Let us, with the illustrious Jortin, consider a council called, and presided over by this Barbarian Founder of the Church Militant: by what various motives the various Bishops may have been influenced; as by reverence to the Emperor or to his counsellors and favourites, his slaves and eunuchs; by the fear of offending some

great prelate, as a Bishop of Rome or of Alexandria, who had it in his power to insult, vex, and plague all the bishops within and without his jurisdiction; by the dread of passing for heretics, and of being calumniated; reviled, hated, anathematised, excommunicated, imprisoned, banished, fined, beggared, starved, if they refused to submit; by compliance with some active leading and imperious spirits; by a deference to the majority; by vanity and ambition, by a total ignorance of the question in debate, or a total indifference about it; by private friendships; by enmity and resentment; by old prejudices; by hopes of gain; by an indolent disposition; by good nature; by the fatigue of attending, and a desire to be at home; by the love of peace and quiet; and a hatred of contention, & c.

“Whosoever takes these things in to due consideration will not be disposed to pay a blind deference to the authority of general councils but will rather be inclined to judge that ‘the council’ held by the Apostles at Jerusalem was the first and the last in which the Holy Spirit may be affirmed to have presided”.

Therefore many lovers of Jesus would be surprised to find from the records of Christian Bible scholars that what is now known as the “Canonical” New Testament has been written in or after 325 A.D. for the sole purpose of the gratification of Emperor St. Constantine, the founder of “The Church of Christ”. All matters included are arbitrary for the purpose of having an uniform religion for all his subjects, be they pagan Gentiles following Mithraism or the followers of Jesus. Therefore no consideration was given to the teachings of Jesus. The specific objective was to have one single unified religion for all the subjects of the Roman Empire.

Dr. H. Spencer Lewis, Ph.D., has disclosed in his study “*The Secret Doctrines of Jesus*” that since the Nicaean Council until 1870 A.D.,

“Twenty ecclesiastic or church council meetings were held in which **man alone decided upon the text of the Bible**. Self-appointed judges in the four Lateran Councils between 1123 and 1215 A.D., decided to expurgate from the Bible those sacred writings which did not

please them!”

## 10. The Stoppage of the Spreading of the Nazarene Faith

Confusion naturally followed the burning in 325 A. D. of the two Original Hebrew Evangels of Jesus recorded by Levi and John after they were seized from the possession of Arius at the Nicaean Council meeting and the issue of the decree by Constantine that anybody found possessing similar Original Hebrew Evangels and not burning the same would be put to death immediately. The Hebrew Aramaic Evangel of Jesus by Barnabas and Andrew which were being read as the “Canonical Scriptures” until 325 A.D. in the churches of Alexandria were hidden instantly by lovers of Jesus somewhere in Alexandria. That is how they escaped destruction in 325 A.D.

In or about 367 A.D. St. Athanasius, the author of the Greek Manuscripts and the destroyer of the Original Evangels of Jesus by Levi and John in Hebrew Aramaic Script, by a letter announced what he considered to be the correct or canonical gospels. He naturally declared his own works *i.e.* the Greek Manuscripts of the New Testament, which we now have, as “Canonical”.

In 367 A.D. he also issued a list of those Original Hebrew Evangels of Jesus which he knew had escaped destruction in 325 A.D. and which proved clearly the falsity of the “Canonical Greek Gospels”. In this list amongst others, figures the “Evangelium Barnabe”. Everybody knew that if they made over these original Hebrew texts to Athanasius, he would surely destroy them, as had been the fate of the Evangels by Levi and John. Therefore no one submitted these “Originals” to Athanasius, who died disappointed. The curse of God that fell on Athanasius is described later.

Some years after the death of Athanasius, apparently under pressure from the Roman Rulers a meeting of the Church Council was called in 382 A.D. Pope St. Damasus I as head of this meeting sanctioned the list of Gospels in Greek prepared by St. Athanasius as

“Canonical”. He also approved of the list of “Aprocryphal Gospels” as prepared by St. Athanasius, which included “Evangelium Barnabe” or the Evangel of Jesus (recorded) by Barnabas. This Pope required these Apocryphal Gospels in the Original Hebrew Aramaic Script to be surrendered to him or his successors. Thus since 382 A.D. these original Hebrew Evangels have been in the “Private” library of the Popes at the Vatican. Nobody is allowed to read them unless he is the trusted representative of the Pope.

The lovers of Jesus were shocked at the burning of the two Hebrew Evangel of Jesus recorded by Levi and John, as also the Revelation of John at the Nicaean Council and the decree of Constantine that anybody found possessing such Hebrew Originals and professing that God is one and alone and Jesus is not the begotten son of god and not accepting “Trinity in Unity” as promulgated by him would be burnt at the stake. So great was the effect upon the Nazarenes that the spread of the true doctrines of Jesus was halted from the year 325 A.D. whilst the Pagan Nimrodic teachings of “The Church of Christ” received a great impetus.

## 11. The Apocryphal Gospels

The word “Apocryphal” has originated from the Greek word “Apokrupha” which means hidden or secret (writings). According to “*The Reader’s Digest Great Encyclopaedic Dictionary*” (page 51c, Vol. 1) the word “Apocrypha” represents:

“Those books of the Old Testament, which “were included in the Septuagint (Greek Old Testament) but were not originally written in Hebrew, are not counted genuine by the Jews, and are excluded from the canon”. Also applied to ... a number of early Christian writings (Gospels, Epistles, Acts, *etc.*) some of which were at one time included in the New Testament canon”.

Bible students therefore know that *the Jews have rejected as Canonical anything which was not originally written in Hebrew.*

On page 7 of "*Helps to the study of the Bible*" by the Rev. Charles H. H. Wright, D. D., Ph.D., given at the back of the "Holy Bible" (King James Version) published by The Bible Mediation League of Ohio and printed in Great Britain by Collin's Clear Type Press, one reads:

"GREEK—All the books of the New Testament have come down to us in Greek only. It is a question whether St. Matthew's (or to call him by his original Jewish name "Levi") was not composed originally in Hebrew. If that be so, the original is lost, for only the Greek version is extant".

Lovers of Jesus naturally ask: Since the Jews have rejected books of Greek origin as "Apocryphal" and spurious and recognized the Hebrew versions only as "Canonical", then why should they not also reject the Greek Manuscripts as "Apocryphal" and counterfeit especially in the light of the findings of Christian scholars as read here before and insist upon the Hebrew Originals only as being Canonical? Surely they contend that in all these years somebody or other must have had an opportunity to read one of these originals in the Pope's confidential library and if it was not possible to smuggle the original out, then at least to make a translation of it in a small note book or some loose sheets of paper?

Various Christian scholars have prepared lists of "Apocryphal" Gospels, which their research shows were genuine and accepted as the Canonical Gospels until 325 A.D.

William Hone published in 1820 from London, "*The Apocryphal New Testament*". A portion of the list of contents of this book with the remarks made about them by the highest English Church Authorities is reproduced hereunder:

I. CORINTHIANS

II. CORINTHIANS

BARNABAS

EPHESIANS

MAGNESIANS

TRALIANS

ROMANS

PHILADELPHIAN

SMYRNAEANS

POLYCARP

PHILLIPPIANS

I. HERMAS—VISIONS

II. HERMAS—COMMAND

III. HERMAS—SIMILITUDES

“These are ‘The Genuine Epistles of the Apostolic Fathers: being together with the Holy Scriptures of the New Testament, a complete collection of the most primitive Antiquity for about a hundred and fifty years after Christ’ says William (Wake) Lord Bishop of Lincoln, afterwards Lord Archbishop of Canterbury.”

It will thus be clear from the above findings of Church Authorities that these ancient Gospels are genuine.

## 12. The Gospel of Barnabas

When the Italian translation of the Gospel of Barnabas was disclosed by J. F. Cramer to John Toland in 1709 A.D., who made the Spanish translation, there arose a big controversy over the authenticity of this Gospel throughout Europe during the eighteenth century. A lot of research was done. Some of the interested English scholars were:

- Dr. Holme, Rector of Hedley
- Dr. Thomas Monkhouse, Fellow of Queen’s College, Oxford, who also prepared an English translation from the Spanish MS (manuscript).
- Dr. White Bampton, Lecturer in 1784 *etc.*

The following opinions have been expressed in favour of the writings of Barnabas who was a companion of Jesus and one of the 120 original converts to the teachings of Jesus, by the Reverend Ancient



Fathers of the Church of Jesus, learned Christian scholars and also Church Authorities:

“It has been cited by Clemens Alexandrinus, Origen, Epusebius, and Jerome, and many ancient Fathers. Cotelerius affirms that Origen and Jerome esteemed it genuine and canonical; Dr. Bernard, Savilian Professor at Oxford, not only believed it to be genuine but that it was read throughout, in the churches at Alexandria, as the canonical scriptures were. Dodwell supposed it to have been published before the Epistle of Jude, and the writings of both the Johns Vossius, Dupuis, Dr. Cane, Dr. Mill, Dr. S. Clark, Whiston and Archbishop Wake also esteemed it genuine” (page 143 of the *Apocryphal New Testament* by William Hone, London, 1820).

The Arab Christian Scholar Dr. Khalil Sahadat Bey of Cairo after conducting a research on the Italian version of the “*Evangelium Barnabe*” *i.e.* the Evangel of Jesus (recorded) by Barnabas informs:

1. Barnabas was a Jew from Cyprus and one of the companions of Jesus as also his disciple.
2. The Evangel by Barnabas comprises the teachings, advice and dictations of Jesus recorded in the Hebrew language in Aramaic Script in the presence of Jesus, before he was lifted to heaven. Hence it contains the complete, true, original teachings of Jesus.
3. The Evangel of Jesus by Barnabas also contains the full story of Jesus from his birth to his ascension, as found in the four canonical gospel, but the volume of additional matter in Barnabas is totally missing from the canonical gospels very often leaving a missing link which shows that something has been deliberately deleted from the canonical Gospels.
4. The Evangel of Jesus by Barnabas was recognised as the canonical gospel till 325 A.D. and was read regularly in the churches at Alexandria as the canonical gospel, according to the early Fathers of the Church.

5. The Original Evangel of Jesus recorded by Barnabas in the Hebrew Aramaic Script escaped destruction in 325 A.D. because it was somewhere in Alexandria and had not been taken to the church council meeting which was called by Emperor Constantine at Nicaea, in Asia Minor. Otherwise it would also have been burnt.
6. Athanasius the cursed by God, in 367 A.D. declared by letter a number of original works dictated personally by Jesus and recorded by Jewish scribes before his ascension as “Apocryphal”. This included “Evangelium Barnabe” in Hebrew Aramaic script.
7. In 382 A.D. Pope St. Damasus I as head of the Church Council approved the list of Apocryphal Gospels as prepared by Athanasius. This list included “Evangelium Barnabe” and required that the same be surrendered to the Pope.
8. The Evangel of Jesus by Barnabas was referred to by the ancient authors in the “Decree of Gelassius”. *Therefore the Evangel of Jesus by Barnabas did exist but the Church holds that the contents of it can never be known because it is either lost or destroyed!*
9. In 1585 A.D. an Italian priest named Peretti became Pope Sixtus V.
10. The Italian monk Fra Marino was a close friend of Pope Sixtus V, and therefore Fra Marino was granted special permission by Pope Sixtus V to read the secret books in the Pope’s library.
11. Fra Marino could read the Hebrew language in the Aramaic script. When Fra Marino read the Original Evangel of Jesus recorded by Barnabas in Hebrew Aramaic Script in the Pope’s library in 1585 A.D., he was so impressed that he took a few loose sheets of paper, some of them of different quality, or as readily available to him, and formed them into a small “Pocket-

size” note book about 6¼” x 3¼” containing 255 leaves, and after completing the translation he bound them with thin stiff boards, covered with leather having a thickness of a little over 1½ inches. In this little pocket book he translated the Gospel of Barnabas over a period of several days from the Original Hebrew Aramaic into Italian in his own handwriting in a free running style and not with printed letters as would have been the case if a book was prepared for record purposes.

12. Fra Marino became a Muslim in accordance with the instructions of Jesus as given in the Evangel recorded by Barnabas.
13. Fra Marino died without disclosing the contents of his Italian translation of the Gospel of Barnabas. Hence it has remained unknown to the Muslims.
14. This Italian translation of the Gospel of Barnabas passed from hand to hand for a period of about 110 years without its contents being known to the Muslims and eventually reached J. F. Cramer, who was the Counsellor to the king of Prussia shortly after 1700 A.D.

Lonsdale and Laura Ragg inform us in their introduction to the Gospel of Barnabas published by Clarendon Press (1907) as follows:

On pages x and xi:

“Our Italian M. S. was acquired in Amsterdam ‘by J. F. Cramer, and lent by him to John Toland in 1709. Four years later, in 1713 (as the dedicatory preface observes) Cramer presented his prize to the illustrious Connoisseur Prince Eugene of Savoy: and eventually it found its way, in 1738, in company with the rest of that prince’s library into the Hopbibliothek at Vienna, where it now reposes.

“Further back than the beginning of the eighteenth century, we have no certain traces of the Codex, though an ambiguous reference in the preface to the (NOW LOST) copy of the Spanish version, seen and described by Sale in 1734, may possibly indicate that our Italian

Manuscript was once in the library of Pope Sixtus V (1585-1589)".

On page xliii:

"Thus much we may say with confidence. The Italian "Barnabas" is, to all intents and purposes, *an original work*".

On page xliv:

"It is the work of one, whose knowledge of the Christian Scriptures is considerably in advance of his familiarity with the Scriptures of Islam: presumably, therefore, of a renegade from Christianity".

The Spanish version, which is not available now, must be the work of John Toland the great Spanish Scholar. This Gospel of Barnabas was a translation from the Italian Manuscript and should be dated around 1709 A.D.

Thus the Spanish Manuscript was written over 120 years after the Italian MS. if the date of the writing of the Italian Manuscript is fixed around 1585 A.D.

The Italian Manuscript was in the Imperial Library at Vienna at the beginning of this century when Lonsdale and Laura Ragg copied the Italian text and translated it into English.

George Sale, on page X of his note "To the Reader" in his translation of "*The Koran*" (the correct spelling should be Qur'an) has made the following observation about the Spanish Gospel of Barnabas:

"There is a preface prefixed to it (*i.e.* the Spanish M.S.) wherein the discoverer of the original (Hebrew) M.S. who was a Christian Monk, called Fra Marino, tells us that having accidentally met with a writing of Irenaeus (among others), wherein he speaks against St. Paul, alleging, for his authority, the Gospel of Barnabas, he became exceeding desirous to find this Gospel; and that God, of His Mercy, having made him very intimate with Pope Sixtus V., one day, as they were together in that Pope's library, His Holiness fell asleep, and he to employ himself, reaching down a book to read, the first he laid his hand on proved to be the very gospel he wanted: overjoyed at the discovery, he scrupled not to hide his prize in his sleeve; and, on

the Pope's awakening, took leave of him, carrying with him that celestial treasure, by reading of which he became a convert to Mohammedanism.

"This Gospel of Barnabas contains a complete story of Jesus Christ from His birth to His ascension; and most of the circumstances in the four real Gospels are to be found in them".

Thus George Sale admits that this Gospel of Barnabas contains the complete story of Jesus as found in the four canonical Gospels put together. If that be so then the Gospel of Barnabas cannot be a forgery at all! Rather this research scholar has called it a "celestial treasure" thereby confirming without any doubt that this "Gospel of Barnabas" contains the true and correct teachings of Jesus. Otherwise how can it be regarded as a "celestial" *i.e.* heavenly treasure?

George Sale confirms that he never saw the Original (Hebrew) manuscript nor its translation into Italian by the Christian Monk Fra Marino. He claims that he was given in 1734 A.D. by Dr. Holme, Rector of Hedley in Hampshire, only the Spanish manuscript of this Gospel, which was of course a translation of the Italian translation of the original Hebrew Aramaic Gospel in the Pope's Private library. Hence he has made the above remarks about the theft of the Hebrew manuscript from the library of Pope Sixtus V. apparently on a mere speculation, as will be seen hereafter from the remarks of Lonsdale and Laura Ragg who not only saw the Italian manuscript but transcribed and translated it. If the Original Hebrew Gospel of Barnabas, dictated during the time that Jesus was on earth, was stolen by the Christian Monk Fra Marino as alleged, then the said Original would have got disclosed just as the Italian manuscript has been! But the fact that it has not fallen into the hands of the public shows that the Original Hebrew Manuscript is still in the Pope's private library and that Fra Marino had made only an Italian translation of it.

Lonsdale and Laura Ragg in their preface to the Gospel of Barnabas inform us:

1. The Spanish manuscript went from Dr. Holme, Rector of Hedley to Dr. Thomas Monkhouse, Fellow of Queen's College, Oxford.
2. Dr. Monkhouse gave the original text of the Spanish manuscript and a translation of the Gospel of Barnabas to Dr. White Bampton, Lecturer, in 1784. So we know that the Spanish manuscript was in existence until 1784 A.D. and that there was also an English translation thereof.
3. When Lonsdale and Laura Ragg tried to inspect this Spanish manuscript around 1902-1906 A.D. it could not be traced anywhere. They have remarked of it: "which has since unfortunately disappeared from view". They did not even find the English translation of the Spanish Manuscript.
4. In the Original Italian Manuscript of the Gospel of Barnabas, which they have copied and translated into English, there is however no reference whatsoever to the effect that the Christian Monk Fra Marino stole the (Hebrew) Original from the Pope's library. The charge made by George Sale in his note of 1734 A.D. of theft against Fra Marino is therefore false according to both the Italian Manuscript and fact that the Original Hebrew scripture has not fallen into the hands of the public just like the Italian Manuscript which should have been the case had it been stolen because both these would have been together had the Original Hebrew Gospel been taken out of the Vatican. Further, if the original could be taken out then what was the necessity for Fra Marino to make an Italian Translation? In fact the Italian Translation by Fra Marino goes to show that it was not possible to remove the Original Hebrew Gospel of Jesus recorded by Barnabas during the life of Jesus from the private library of the Popes. Hence Fra Marino had to translate same in his own handwriting and for his convenience in his mother tongue *i.e.* Italian.

Fra Marino's claim that he translated it into Italian from the Original Hebrew Aramaic Manuscript written by Barnabas himself and lying in the Pope's library, which he read with the permission of Pope Sixtus V. amongst other books seems much more plausible for three very obvious reasons *viz*:

- a. The Italian manuscript is in the size of a small notebook which could easily be hidden in a priest's flowing robes. In fact Fra Marino used to carry a few sheets of paper every day and when alone in the library he used to translate into Italian the Evangel of Jesus recorded by Barnabas in the Hebrew Aramaic Script. This process continued for a number of weeks before he had translated the full book. The Italian language did not exist at the time of Jesus!
- b. It is in fast running handwriting, which would not be the case if it were the original. In the original one would expect well-formed printed letters in a much larger sized book if such an important Gospel was being documented to be preserved in the Pope's library.
- c. The very fact that the Italian priest Fra Marino converted to Islam on the basis of the book in the Pope's library suggests that what he had seen with his own eyes must have been the original document in Hebrew Aramaic written during the life of Jesus by Barnabas, a companion of Jesus. Otherwise it could never have convinced him that it was the true and authentic teachings of Jesus in accordance with which he accepted Islam. As a matter of fact, the Gospel of Barnabas contains a lot of information given by Jesus, which is totally missing from the so called Canonical Gospels.

The readers of this study would be anxious naturally to have some more concrete evidence as to whether this Italian Manuscript of the Gospel of Barnabas was several centuries old and stolen by Fra Marino from the private library of the Pope during the time of Pope Sixtus V

(1585-1590) or was written on paper manufactured during the second half of the sixteenth century and in a style of handwriting that was prevalent around 1585 A.D. which means that it was a translation into Italian by Fra Marino in his own handwriting from the Original in Hebrew Aramaic written during the life of Jesus and lying concealed in the Pope's private library. Lonsdale and Laura Ragg provide us with the required proof on pages xiv-xv of their introduction to this gospel which reads:

"The paper is described by Toland as 'Turkish', and Denis follows him; but a careful examination scarcely bears out this judgement. There are, in fact, two leaves (ff. 107 and 108) that might be described as delicately gummed and polished; but these are entirely different in character from the rest—yellow, thin and smooth. All the remaining pages are of a somewhat coarse and stout 'cotton-paper', and a close inspection reveals a water-mark such as no oriental paper ever bore. The anchor within a circle, says M. Briquet, is distinctively Italian; and the form which that sign assumes in the present case belongs, according to the same distinguished expert, to the second half of the sixteenth century."

"The handwriting cannot, of course, be of greater antiquity than the paper on which it is written and probability is in favour of its being not very much later. The specimen photograph which we give of the first page, together with one from the middle of the book, will offer fairly adequate material for a positive Judgement as to the date of the script. Its general style will be seen to be that of the latter half of the sixteenth century. A fairly close resemblance to it can be found in certain Venetian MSS. of 1543, 1563, and 1564 in the Archivio di Stato, and of 1550, 1562, and 1567 in the Archives of St. Mark's. The most exact parallel that we have seen—remarkable for the reproduction of the characteristic *p* and *h* of our codex—is, however, a document in the latter collection, which bears the signature 'Franc Vianello, Segretario Ducale', and the date April 15, 1584".

So the Italian Manuscript was written on paper manufactured in Italy during the second half of the sixteenth century *i.e.* after 1551 and



before 1600 A.D., and in a style of writing which was prevalent in 1584 A.D. Hence it must have been the handwriting of Fra Marino during the period of the reign of Pope Sixtus V *i.e.* around 1585 A.D.

Thus it is proved conclusively that the Italian Manuscript has come out of the original Hebrew Aramaic Text of “*Evangelium Barnabe*” in the Pope’s private library. Hence it must be the true and accurate teachings of Jesus. If it did not contain the precise teachings of Jesus then it could not possibly be preserved in the Pope’s confidential library since 382 A.D. It will be remembered as recorded earlier that Pope St. Damasus I had issued an order in 382 A. D. to the effect that anybody possessing the “*Evangelium Barnabe*” amongst others should surrender the same to the Pope. Hence the original Hebrew M.S. of this Gospel, written during the life of Jesus by Barnabas himself, had been preserved in the Pope’s library ever since 382 A.D. from which Fra Marino had made the Italian translation during the time of Pope Sixtus V *i.e.* around 1585 A.D. on paper manufactured in Italy in that period and in a handwriting style which was current around 1584 A.D.

Secondly, if this Hebrew Gospel was not authentic then why should the Christian monk Fra Marino take the trouble to translate it into Italian, his mother tongue, in 1585 A.D. Why should he want to have a copy of this Gospel for his personal record? Hence his translation in fast running handwriting into a small pocket size notebook is understandable.

Finally, why should Fra Marino, a monk attached to a Pope, have forsaken Christianity and converted to Islam of his own accord unless he was fully convinced beyond doubt that the Hebrew Original of this Gospel which he read in the Pope’s library, was one of the very few Gospels which had escaped destruction in 325 A.D. and was the original document written by Barnabas, himself, during the lifetime of Jesus—hence the true unadulterated teachings of Jesus, son of the Virgin Mary, as against the Canonical New Testament we now have before us, which is based on the Greek Manuscript of the New Testament written in 325 A.D. and thereafter by Athanasius to humour

Emperor St. Constantine, the Founder of the Church of Christ (pages XIV and 210 of *The Apocryphal New Testament* by William Hone, London, 1820).

Lonsdale and Laura Ragg state it took them four years to translate this Italian Manuscript of the Gospel of Barnabas into English. They were assisted in this task by Padre Minocchi of Florence, Professors Nallino and Casareo of Palermo, Professors Guidi and Nonaci of Rome, Professor Grescini of Padua, Commendatore Malagola of the Venetian Archivio, Professor J. Ritter von Karabacek, Director of the Imperial library at Vienna and his colleague Dr. Rudolp Beer. Would the learned priest of Florence and all these reputed scholars and Italian savants have assisted in the translation into English of this book if it was not the absolute truth?

Thousands of copies of the Gospel of Barnabas were published by the Clarendon Press of Oxford University in 1907. The author of this thesis had been trying to get a copy of this book for many years but not a single copy seemed to be available anywhere. After years of searching one copy was eventually traced in the British Museum, London. A photocopy of this Gospel of Barnabas was obtained eventually from the British Museum, London through the kind assistance of his English Correspondents.

One feels puzzled as to why there was so much difficulty in obtaining even one copy of this Gospel. The answer is given by Frederic C. Grant of the Union Theological Seminary of the U.S.A. He has revealed that the Church took deliberate steps to suppress this Gospel of Barnabas by Lonsdale and Laura (M. Roberts) Ragg published by Clarendon Press, 1907.

At this disclosure many seekers after the truth will feel highly distressed and anxiously ask:

1. Certainly now there is no fear of persecution by the Roman Emperors. The Roman Empire has disappeared many centuries ago.

2. If the Gospel of Barnabas was the true translation of the Evangel of Jesus recorded by Barnabas then the Church has committed a serious mistake in suppressing the original teachings of Jesus. If it is not then there was no need whatsoever to suppress the Gospel of Barnabas, because any intelligent person upon reading it would realise that it is not correct hence it would be ignored automatically. Suppression always does much more harm and invariably leaves the impression that the truth is being hidden!
3. When the work of Barnabas is admitted by leading authorities of the church as containing the genuine teachings of Jesus and was recognised as such until the Nicaean Council of 325 A.D. then why is it not being publicized by the Vatican? Why should the world have to depend on the Italian translation made secretly by the Italian monk Fra Marino, as a friend of Pope Sixtus V in 1585 A.D. from the Hebrew original?
4. What happened to the Spanish Manuscript? Did it suffer the same fate as the Evangel of Levi and John in 325 A.D. at the hands of The Church of Christ?
5. What happened to the English Translation of the Spanish Manuscript? Was it destroyed or suppressed deliberately just like the thousands of copies of the Gospel of Barnabas published by the Clarendon Press in 1907 A.D.?
6. What has happened to the “Prophecy of Fatima” which Sister Lucia Dos Santos reported had been revealed to her in 1927 A.D. by Jesus with instructions to keep it a secret until 1960. Sister Lucia sealed it in an envelope and conveyed it to the Pope at the Vatican for disclosure on 1st January, 1960, but the church has kept the information concealed since 1960 even though it is now 1972 (for the Prophecy of Fatima please consult chapters 26: B).
7. Can the Church of Christ hope to hide the truth forever in this

manner? Or by this attitude is the church only going to cause a revolt, amongst its younger generation and cause bitterness and ill-will amongst its educated followers by adhering to such a policy of repression?

8. Many learned Christians foresee in such a procedure a split of the Roman Catholic Church into many factions within the next fifteen years unless the truth is placed frankly before them—especially those facts which are unpleasant and foretell the doom of the present Western Civilisation ending in the battle of Armageddon.
9. Many Christians have ventured already to pose such questions as:
  - a. Is not the Church afraid of Armageddon, which is just round the corner? (See Chapter 25 till the end of this thesis).
  - b. Is the Church of Christ so anxious that with its own destruction, the entire Christian world should also be annihilated?
  - c. Are they not thereby hastening the Third World War—The Nuclear Holocaust?

Here are two small extracts from the speech delivered on Sunday, 24th July, 1927 to Christians at the general assembly of 15,000 members of the International Bible students at Toronto, Canada by President Rutherford of the Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society:

“... with great pomp and glory that unholy system rides upon the backs of the peoples. Without the support of the common peoples that wicked system called “Christendom” could not survive. When the peoples withdraw their support therefrom ‘Organized Christianity’, which is a part of Babylon or the Devil’s organisation, will fall like a great millstone into the sea.

“... But instead of heeding the message from the word of God, the

rulers of the world, to wit, those constituting the unholy alliance, walk on in darkness and continue to oppress the peoples. The doom of "Organized Christianity" or Babylon is sealed: ..." (page 312 of Watch Tower, dated 15th October 1927).

The Holy Bible also warns thus about the devastations of the Nuclear Holocaust:

"And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen and is become the habitation of devils, ...

"For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.

"And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her (the religion of Babylon now known as The Church of Christ), my people, that ye be not partakers of her sin, and that ye receive not of her plagues.

"For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.

"Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double according to her works: in the cup she hath filled, fill to her double.

"How much she hath glorified herself, and lived deliciously so much torment and sorrow give her: for she saith in her heart, *I sit a Queen, and am no widow and shall see no sorrow.*

"Therefore shall her plagues come in *one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God, who judgeth her.*" (Revelation 18: 2-8)

With this Biblical warning about the destruction of Babylon which according to The Watch Tower Bible Society refers to Christianity, one and all should feel apprehensive about the future welfare of the Powerful Nations. Because their destruction in a Nuclear Holocaust would certainly also mean the devastation of many unprepared and neutral nations. It will surely have very serious world-wide

consequences—a disaster of unimaginable magnitude will take place suddenly in one single day without any prior warning, according to Biblical Prophecies.

To indicate the means whereby mankind can escape from such a terrible calamity is the sole object of this treatise.

### **G. Accept the Teachings of which Jesus?**

Jesus of Nazareth, son Of the Virgin Mary, has taught:

“A new commandment I (Jesus) give unto you. That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another” (St. John 13: 34).

As against the above teaching of Jesus, history shows that for the past seventeen centuries since the Nicaean Council of 325 A.D. Christians of one sect or belief or place have fought, murdered and burnt at the stakes millions of fellow Christians of another sect or place with incredible viciousness. They have not even spared the lives of the aged infirm, the helpless women and innocent children all believing in the very same Holy Bible and professing to be followers of a *Jesus*.

Mothers who presumably believed in the same Jesus but lived under different governments have fervently prayed that Jesus grant their sons success in battle over neighbouring European kingdoms and nations. This must have been enormously confusing to whichever Jesus, if any, who heard those impassioned pleas.

Immediately the question arises, which *Jesus*?

The *Jesus* that taught:

“But I (Jesus) say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which spitefully use you, and persecute you” (St. Matthew. 5:44 ).

— or —

Constantine, who to justify the numerous murders at his own

instigation, got the following forgery inserted into the Greek Holy Bible that his Jesus Christ has announced:

“Think not that I am come to send *peace* on earth: I am not to send *peace*, but the *sword*” (St. Matt. 10: 34).

It’s *easy* to spot such hypocrisy. Today double standards are prevalent everywhere owing to the real teachings of Jesus being contradicted in the Greek Holy Bible itself by Constantine’s theories in the name of Christ and Jesus Christ causing confusion, and confounding the devotees of Jesus as to which Jesus they should follow?

A believer in Jesus shooting a machine gun at any human being irrespective of caste, colour or creed in spite of the injunction of Jesus to love one’s enemies is as purely hypocritical as a policy of peace through war, success through cheating, or happy marriages through adultery.

A father tells his adolescent children to stop smoking pot. But paradoxically the father who lays down this moral edict, puffs away at cigarettes with the plain statement written on the package: “Caution—Cigarettes may be harmful to health”!

A mother may be aghast that her daughters like hard rock, long hair, “*free love*” and pot, while she, the ‘moral’ mother, has just got back from a little weekend adultery!

Today’s educated youth easily spots deceit in their elders, in the leaders of their governments and in their daily public and private lives. They see around them legislation permitting freedom of sex to their elders, the legalising of abortion, and divorce. Yet their elders exhort them to avoid the corruption and degradation all around, while the youth know perfectly well that they did not make all this chaos and confusion!

These teenagers can also see the agonizing need for a change. And, tragically, they too see that no lasting change is forthcoming. Some of the most exciting conversations amongst the *teens* are those which

probe the cause of the evils of society. There are those long “rap sessions” about the establishment, “Agnew’s rhetoric”, “Nixon’s War”, the student groups, “pot”, the rock festivals, and the gross stupidity of parents who set wrong examples but expect their children to be good!

A new *Sub-culture* has thus developed amongst the youth known as “Hippie Generation”, the “Now People”, the “Happy People”—and an ad infinitum of other press-publicized names, including the latest, “The Jesus People”.

This new sub-culture has formulated its own standards of vocabulary, religious expression and judging people from their outward appearance.

Ask a teenager what it’s all about and he may answer something like this: “I think each person must decide those things for himself”, “I think you should do your own thing—you know, have your own bag—I mean it’s you, isn’t it, and, like, *you* have to be you, and decide for you, right?”

Parrots repeat meaninglessly, mere words endlessly without understanding them. Similarly the students who sit at the feet of the *new moralists* have learned their nowhere cliches well, “Y’gotta do your own thing, y’know...?”

The looks of barely concealed outrage from the middle America directed toward a Volkswagen van full of long-hairs is as downright satisfying to the hippies as when the young wolf of society whistles to the girl in the tantalising bikini. They like to be objects of abnormality—since everything their elders call “normal” is to them “anathema”. They openly declare: “We reject society”!

And it’s worth rejecting, all right! Any society which could be so utterly insane as to bring mankind to the brink of literal cosmocide has got to be a society worth rejecting. Any civilization which has so entangled itself in the pursuit of worldly and materialistic goals that it merely looks around in bewilderment, at its own impending



annihilation has got to be a civilization worth plenty of rejection. These youngsters are turning off from the world and turning on to new things—drugs, sex and whatever is bizarre. Some of them even say, “Turn on with Jesus”! They say, Christ had long hair. They say, “I revolt because Christ overturned the money tables”. They say, “I demonstrate because Christ talked pretty straight to the Pharisees”. They say, “Sure, I come head to head with the authorities because Jesus did”.

Recently at the Tournament of Roses Parade, a loud public audio set was going up and down the parade route. Thousands heard it: “Turn on with Jesus. Sin is the problem. We ’ve got to come out of sin. We ’ve got to turn on with Jesus. That’s the way to solve the problems of this world”. Or they say: “Freak out with Jesus”, or “Jesus is a good trip”. This new sub-culture takes on blatant religious overtones. They talk of a Jesus! But which Jesus?

Jesus of Nazareth, son of the Virgin Mary?

— or —

Constantine’s Jesus Christ?

Added to the general hypocrisy of our age are the hideous problems we all face. We talk all the time of peace but we go on producing the Nuclear bombs. Today the world is different, incredibly, enormously different. Today, you must recognize the stark fact that human annihilation is a very real possibility. Accidental war between the two blocs of European Nations as pointed out in Chapter II, could very easily bring it about.

If your eyes are open you can easily see that a dramatic change is an absolute necessity. And you can see it *must be now*. And it will *only be possible* if you follow the real Jesus of Nazareth of the Bible instead of the Jesus Christ of society and history.

Do that—and you will REALLY reject society.

You will be FORCED to reject it.

Because *it will reject YOU!*

Make no mistake! The, “Turn on with Jesus” idea of the Hippies is as incorrect and meaningless as the values of the society they reject. They have got the wrong Christ. The Jesus of the Holy Scriptures was no hippie. Neither would he have fitted into the “straight” society of this day. Then what was Jesus? How can we know, love and understand the real Jesus ?

We have already read in Chapter 2: I that mankind can yet save itself from the threatened *Nuclear Holocaust*, by surrendering itself to the Will of God. We have also seen how the Jews under King Hezekiah by following the guidance of Prophet Isaiah were saved without even having to fight the mighty army of King Sennacherib of Assyria, which resulted in the death of the entire Assyrian army of 185,000 men in one single night by the curse of God and undefended Jerusalem was actually saved!

Every believer in Jesus knows perfectly well in his heart of hearts that he can have a chance to save himself from the coming Nuclear Holocaust and come out alive from the battle of Armageddon, only if he can discover the true Original teachings of Jesus of Nazareth, the son of the Virgin Mary and faithfully follow those injunctions.

All lovers of Jesus will be delighted therefore to find that for the first time a subject wise analysis is being placed before them, which will clearly illustrate from the Holy Bible itself:

- a. Which portions are the true and real teachings of Jesus.
- b. The sources from which the teachings of “The Church of Christ” have been derived.
- c. Which portions of the Greek Holy Bible, the source of all versions of the New Testament of today, have been corrupted by the teachings of Emperor St. Constantine and his “Church of Christ”—the other Jesus, the Jesus Christ of the Christian society of today!

## 1. ON GOD

The original teachings of Jesus	Nimrodism	Christianity today
<p>That Jesus never claimed divinity will be apparent from the Holy Bible.</p>	<p>The first and only man to claim divinity in the world is Nimrod, the mighty hunter in rebellion against God. (Genesis 10: 9).</p>	<p>As against the teachings of Jesus that God is one and alone, <i>i.e.</i> one who has neither any begotten son nor virgin wife <i>etc.</i>, we find that Nimrod's teachings of god as a trinity in unity incorporated in the manmade books of the Bible as follows:</p>
<p><b>a. The First Commandment of Jesus:</b></p>	<p>We have read earlier that King Nimrod of Babylon had taught that god consisted of trinity in unity comprising:</p>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. god the Father</li> <li>2. god the Son</li> <li>3. god the Holy Ghost (St. Matt. 28:19)</li> </ol>
<p>"And Jesus answered him, <i>The First of all the Commandments is</i>, Hear O Israel; <i>The Lord our God is one Lord (i.e. one Who has no father, mother, husband, virgin wife, brother, sister, begotten son, daughter or any other form of equal)</i>:</p>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Shamash (the Sun god or father of the gods).</li> <li>2. Sin (the Moon god or Nimrod or Baal, the Sacred Heart or Tam-muz, the only begotten son of god).</li> <li>3. Ishtar (goddess queen of the heavens or Semiramis or Rhea or the Great Virgin Mother of god).</li> </ol>	<p>In the Trinitarian Monastery at Madrid the Christians worship an image of the Triune god with three heads on one body representing god the Father, god the son, and god the Holy Ghost.</p>
<p>"And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength; this is the first commandment" St Mark 12: 29, 30).</p>	<p>This teaching of Trinity in unity spread, all over the world from Tower of Babel when God disrupted the unity of mankind by His curse, which changed the languages of the people in 2239 B.C. (Genesis 11: 1-9).</p>	<p>In India for the past 3,500 years "Trimurti" or a god with three heads on one body or a trinity in unity has been worshipped.</p>
<p><b>b. The Parting advice of Jesus:</b></p>		
<p>"Jesus saith then unto her (Mary Magdalene) ... but go to <i>my brethren</i>, and say unto them, I ascend ... to my God and your God" (St. John</p>		

### **The original teachings of Jesus**

20: 17).

Thus it is evident that the first commandment and the parting words of Jesus are the same.

God is one and alone and not a multiple in one god as in the faith of the Gentiles.

He is as much the God of Jesus as the God of all mankind.

We are all the brethren of Jesus, who is therefore not divine in any way, unless all mankind are also divine, and that would be the height of absurdity.

The following is a quotation from page 487 of "The Gospel of Barnabas";

"Jesus answered : Believe me, Barnabas, that every sin, however, small it be, God punish with great punishment, seeing that God is offended at sin. Wherefore, since my mother and my faithful disciples that were with me loved me a little with

### **Nimrodism**

The names have altered from place to place due to the haunting Curse of the Tower of Babel, but the basic religion of Nimrod has continued.

### **Christianity today**

The Hindu god Siva also has three faces or heads on one single body. He has been worshipped since the time of the Mohenjodaro civilization which existed more than three millennia ago.

These teachings of "A trinity in unity" have originated from King Nimrod, the mighty hunter in rebellion against God (Genesis 10: 9) and are certainly not the doctrines of Jesus son of the virgin Mary but are in fact absolutely contrary to his teachings.

**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

earthly love, the righteous God hath willed to punish this love with the present grief, in order that it may not be punished in the flames of hell. And though I have been innocent in the world, since men have called me "God", and "Son of God", God, in order that I be not mocked of the demons on the day of judgement, hath willed that I be mocked of men in this world by the death of Judas, making all men to believe that I died upon the cross. And this mocking shall continue until the advent of Mohammed, the Messenger of God, who, when he shall come, shall reveal this deception to those who believe in God's law;

"Having thus spoken, Jesus said: 'Thou art just, O Lord our God, because to Thee only belongeth honour and glory without end'."

**Nimrodism****Christianity today**

## 2. ON ONLY BEGOTTEN SON OF GOD

The original teachings of Jesus	Nimrodism	Christianity today
<p>Jesus never claimed that he was the Only begotten son of God. Rather he affirmed that he was an inferior being and a servant of God according to the Holy Bible:</p>	<p>As read earlier, Nimrod had propagated that he had been created through a virgin woman as the only begotten son of god, who had come on earth to save sinners by the sacrifice of his life.</p>	<p>The Christians believe that Christ the only begotten son of god born of the virgin Mother, had come on earth to save sinners by the sacrifice of his life.</p>
<p>“For my father (<i>i.e.</i> God) is greater than I (Jesus)” (St. John 14: 28).</p>	<p>That he is:</p>	<p>That he is:</p>
<p>“Verily, verily, I (Jesus) say unto you, The servant (<i>i.e.</i> Jesus) is not greater than his Lord (God); neither he (<i>i.e.</i> Jesus) that is sent greater than He (God) that sent him (Jesus)” (St. John 13: 16).</p>	<p>1. The only begotten son.</p>	<p>1. god’s only begotten son.</p>
<p>“And when he (Jesus) had gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?</p>	<p>2. The shepherd.</p>	<p>2. The good shepherd.</p>
<p>“And Jesus said unto him, why callest thou me Good (Master, when I Jesus am His servant)? There is none Good</p>	<p>3. The redeemer.</p>	<p>3. The redeemer.</p>
	<p>4. The Sin-bearer.</p>	<p>4. The gift of god to man to ransom his sins.</p>
	<p>5. The well beloved son.</p>	<p>5. The well beloved son.</p>
	<p>6. The healer.</p>	<p>6. The healer of souls.</p>
	<p>7. The light-bringer.</p>	<p>7. The giver of the Water of Everlasting Life.</p>
	<p>8. The liberator.</p>	<p>8. The sinless.</p>
	<p>9. The deliverer.</p>	<p>9. The bread of life.</p>
	<p>10. The slain to save sinners.</p>	<p>10. The price of sin.</p>
	<p>11. The one who would be seated on the right side of the Sun-God on the day of Judgment—dispensing Judgment—forgiving his baptised followers, and condemning the doers of good</p>	<p>11. Seated on the right hand—thus having superior position to God on the day of Judgment, forgiving baptised sinners and condemning to hell for their small mistakes, the doers of</p>

### The original teachings of Jesus

Jesus never claimed that he was the Only begotten son of God. Rather he affirmed that he was an inferior being and a servant of God according to the Holy Bible:

“For my father (*i.e.* God) is greater than I (Jesus)” (St. John 14: 28).

“Verily, verily, I (Jesus) say unto you, The servant (*i.e.* Jesus) is not greater than his Lord (God); neither he (*i.e.* Jesus) that is sent greater than He (God) that sent him (Jesus)” (St. John 13: 16).

“And when he (Jesus) had gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?

“And Jesus said unto him, why callest thou me Good (Master, when I Jesus am His servant)? There is none Good (Master) but one, that is God, but if thou will

### Nimrodism

deeds and the followers of the “Laws of God” for their small mistakes because they believed in the Justice of God.

### Christianity today

good deeds, *i.e.* the followers of the “Laws of God”, because they believed in the Justice of God.

That all these above claims about Christ being son of god are later fabrications, is proved by the following passage in the New Testament written by the “Brethren” themselves a few years after Jesus had already been lifted to heaven:

“For there is (only) *One God*, and one mediator between God and men, the *Man* Christ Jesus” (1. Timothy 2: 5).

Hence Jesus was considered a “*Man*” and not the only begotten son of god when this was written by St. Paul *i.e.* about 50-55 A.D.

That the above statement has also been copied from Nimrodism will be clear from the following passage in the Holy Bible, which contains the last prayer of

### The original teachings of Jesus

enter into (eternal heavenly) life, (then) keep the (Mosaic) Commandments (which I have come to correct and teach)"—(St. Matt. 19: 16-17 and St. Mark 10: 17-18).

Here is a quotation from page 127 of "The Gospel of Barnabas":

"And having said this, Jesus smote his face with both his hands, and then smote the ground with his head. And having raised his head, he said: *'Cursed be everyone who shall insert into my sayings that I am the son of God.'* At these words the disciples fell down as dead, whereupon Jesus lifted them up saying: 'Let us fear God now, if we would not be affrighted in that day (of Judgment)'".

On page 487 of "The Gospel of Barnabas" it is again confirmed that Jesus is not God nor son of God and that this is a lie, will be proved when Muhammad, the Mess-

### Nimrodism

Nimrod, is not a man but the only begotten son of Sun-God—hence: his function is that of the one and only mediator between God and men.

### Christianity today

Jesus as:

"I (Jesus) pray for them (that are my followers): I pray not for the world (because I am not the mediator between God and men), but for them, (only) which thou hast given me; for they are thine" (St. John 17: 9).

Hence from this passage in the Bible, it is clear that the claims now being made by the Christians that Christ is the "Saviour" is not in accordance with the teachings of Jesus, but concurs with Nimrodism, which has been incorporated at a later stage in the Greek man-made New Testament e.g.:

"And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world.

Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of god, god dwelleth in him, and he in god" (1 John 4: 14-15).



**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

**Nimrodism**

**Christianity today**

enger of God shall come.

The last of the divine scriptures also reiterates the above teachings of Jesus as:

“The Messiah (Jesus) WILL NEVER SCORN TO BE A SLAVE UNTO ALLAH (this is therefore the meaning of the statement of Jesus quoted above from St. Matt. 19: 16-17 and St. Mark 10: 17-18 that only God is the “Good Master” hence Jesus must accordingly be His humble servant or slave as mentioned in St. John 13:16), nor will the favoured angels. Whosoever scorneth service to (*i.e.* adoration of) Him (Allah) and is proud, all such will be assembled unto Him (for punishment in Hell fire)” (Qur’an 4: 172).

Jesus was questioned after being lifted to heaven by God if he had preached the blasphemy of only begotten “Son of God”. His reply is reproduced hereunder

Nimrod is the Saviour, come to save the world of sinners by the sacrifice of his life.

**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

from the last of the  
divine scriptures:

“And when Allah questioned: O Jesus son of Mary! Didst thou say unto mankind: Take me and my mother for two gods besides Allah? He replied: (O Allah) Be glorified! It was not mine to utter THAT TO WHICH I HAD NO RIGHT. If I used to say it, then Thou knewest it. Thou knewest what is in my mind and I know not what is in Thy mind. Lo! Thou only Thou art the knower of things hidden.

“I spoke unto them only that which Thou commandedest me (teaching): worship Allah, my Lord and your Lord (St. John 20: 17). I was a witness of them (only) while I dwelt among them, and when Thou tookest me, Thou wast the Watcher over them. Thou art witness over all things” (Qur’an 5: 116-117).

**Nimrodism**

**Christianity today**

### 3. ON SONS OF GOD

#### The original teachings of Jesus

As read herebefore when Jesus has not claimed to be a son of God then anybody having pretensions to be “the sons of God” surely commits blasphemy. This is confirmed also in the last of the Divine Scriptures:

“... and Christians say: The Messiah is the son of Allah. That is the sayings of their mouths. They imitate the sayings of those who disbelieved of old (*i.e.* Nimrod the mighty hunter in rebellion against God). How perverse are they!

“They have taken as lords besides Allah, their priests and their monks (when they perform the Holy sacraments and hear their confessions) and the Messiah, son of Mary, when they were bidden (by Jesus) to worship only one God (St. Mark 12: 29-30). There is no god save Him (St. Mark 10: 17-18). Be He glorified from

#### Nimrodism

We have read earlier that Nimrod at the feast of his birthday at the “Magical Well” taught magic and gave powers to as many as believed in him “to become sons of god” (Chapter. 5: E-7, C).

Thus Nimrod not only called himself the only begotten son of god but those of his followers, who believed in him were given powers to become sons of god. Even though they did not have any miraculous births or any other logical basis yet they maintained this fantastic claim!

#### Christianity today

Nimrod’s blasphemous teachings on “sons of god” are to be found incorporated in the Holy Bible:

“But as many (people) as received him, to them he gave power to become sons of god, even to them that believe in his name” (St. John 1: 12).

“For as many as are led by the Spirit of god, they are the sons of god” (Romans 8: 14).

“For ye are all the children of god by (having) faith in Christ ...” (Galatians 3: 26).

“Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of god: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.

“Beloved, now are we the sons of god, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall

### **The original teachings of Jesus**

all that they ascribe as partner (unto Him)" (Qur'an 9: 30-31).

Jesus has clarified further in the Holy Bible:

*"But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men"* (St. Mathew 15: 9).

### **Nimrodism**

### **Christianity today**

appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is".

"And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself (and becomes sinless), even as he (Christ) is pure and sinless". (1 John 3: 1-3).

## **4. CHRISTMAS**

### **The original teachings of Jesus**

Jesus was born before the winter rains had set in to prevent the shepherds from keeping their flocks in the open fields at night (St. Luke 2: 7-10) *i.e.* on 26th September as earlier research shows. Then the Angel Gabriel, who brought the good tidings to Mary, of her impending pregnancy without human contact (St. Luke 1: 26-38) must have appeared sometime around the middle of December so as to give 9 months and 10 days as the normal period for

### **Nimrodism**

The sun-worshippers' legends are based upon zodiacal calculations *viz:* in the last week of December on a clear night, one sees overhead the three bright stars (called the three Kings) of the belt of Orion pointing to the East. Soon rises Sirius (called the Herald of the sun-god or the Messianic star) the brightest of all the hosts of heaven.

It is followed by the rising of the constellation of Virgo or Virgin at about midnight, which announces the

### **Christianity today**

Uesener has recorded that by an order of Pope Liberius, the celebration of the date of birth of Jesus was fixed at 25th December in the year 353-354 A.D. so that it may correspond to the "Nativity of Sun" *i.e.* the birth date of Mithra!

The entire Mithraic Legends had already been incorporated under orders of Emperor Constantine in the man-made New Testament in Greek, the language of Constantine's choice, including the Pagan story of the Messianic

### The original teachings of Jesus

the birth of Jesus. But unfortunately the Christians do not hold any festival relating to the pregnancy of Mary, around the middle of December or the miraculous birth of Jesus on 26th September 1 B.C. If the Christians were the followers of Jesus, surely they would be celebrating his birthdate and not that of Nimrod, the mighty hunter in rebellion against God. In fact the celebration of Christmas was started several centuries later with a view to dislodge the hold that Mithraism had gained upon the people living around the Mediterranean and the Europeans. This was after several of the original Evangelists of Jesus were burnt and destroyed in 325 A.D., whilst the remaining original, Evangelists in Hebrew had been hidden for fear of persecution.

The following passage appears on pages 102-

### Nimrodism

birth of son of god Sun by the virgin. Daylight hours in the Northern Hemisphere reach their minimum intensity on the 24th December. This was taken to indicate that the rule or power of darkness and evil is at its height. At this stage a saviour, the only begotten son born of the virgin mother is come not only to stop darkness becoming more extensive but also to get the daylight or goodness to proliferate as he grows bigger. Hence if this pagan Nimrod is born at midnight on the 24th / 25th December, then each day as he will slowly grow bigger so also the daylight starts to increase each day gradually from this date.

The Messianic star (*i.e.* Sirius) announced the birth of "gon of god" and the three Kings from afar (the three stars in Orion's belt) paid homage to him.

### Christianity today

Star, the three kings from afar paying homage (St. Matt. 2: 9-11) *etc.*

"*The Golden Bough*" by Sir James George Frazer on pages 357-358 reads:

"Among the gods of eastern origin who in the decline of the ancient world competed against each other for the allegiance of the West was the old Persian deity Mithra. The immense popularity of his worship is attested by the illustrative monuments of it which have been found scattered in profusion all over the Roman Empire.

"In respect both of doctrines and of rites, the cult of Mithra appears to have presented many points of resemblance not only to the religion of the Mother of the gods but also to Christianity. The similarity struck the Christian doctors themselves and was explained by them as a work of the

### The original teachings of Jesus

103 of "*The Two Babylons*" by the Rev. A. Hislop:

"That festival, called Lady-day is celebrated at Rome on the 25th March, in alleged commemoration of the miraculous conception of our Lord in the womb of the Virgin, on the day when the angel was sent to announce to her the distinguished honour that was to be bestowed upon her as the mother, of the Messiah. But who could tell when this annunciation was made? The scripture gives no clue at all in regard to the time. But it mattered not. Before our Lord was either conceived or born, that very day now set down in the Popish calendar for the 'Annunciation of the Virgin' was observed in Pagan Rome in honour of Cybele, the Mother of the Babylonian Messiah. Now it is manifest that Lady-day and Christmas day stand in intimate relation to one another.

### Nimrodism

This is the common basis for the birth of the son of the sun-god in all the countries, irrespective of the varied names of the son or the virgin mother, which were changed from place to place due to the curse of Almighty God which changed the languages of the builders of "Babel" (Chapter. V: E-7; F-1 and G).

### Christianity today

devil, who sought to seduce the souls of men from the true faith by a false and insidious imitation of it. So to the Spanish conquerors of Mexico and Peru, many of the native heathen rites appeared to be diabolical counterfeits of the Christian sacraments!

"However that may be, there can be no doubt that the Mithraic religion proved a formidable rival to Christianity, combining as it did a solemn ritual with aspirations after moral purity and a hope of immortality. Indeed the the new born sun by the image of an infant which on his birthday, the winter solstice, they brought forth and exhibited to his worshippers. No doubt the Virgin who thus conceived and bore a son on the twenty-fifth of December was reckoned the winter solstice, and it was regarded as the Nativity of the Sun,

**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

Between the 25th of March and the 25th of December there are exactly nine months. If then the false Messiah was conceived in March and born in December, can anyone for a moment believe that the conception and birth of the true Messiah can have, so exactly synchronised, not only to the month, but to the day? Lady-day and, Christmas day, then are purely Babylonian”.

**Nimrodism****Christianity today**

because the day begins to lengthen and the power of the sun to increase from that turning-point of the year. The ritual of the nativity, as it appears to have been celebrated in Syria and Egypt, was remarkable. The celebrants retired into certain inner shrines, from which at midnight they issued with a loud cry, “The Virgin has brought forth. The light is waxing”. The Egyptians even represented the new born sun by the image of an infant which on his birthday, the winter solstice, they brought forth and exhibited to his worshippers. No doubt the Virgin who thus conceived and bore a son on the twenty-fifth of December was the great Oriental goddess whom the Semites called the Heavenly Virgin or simply the Heavenly goddess; in Semitic lands she was a form of Astarte. Now Mithra was

**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

**Nimrodism**

**Christianity today**

regularly identified by his worshippers with the sun, the Unconquered Sun, as they called him; hence his nativity also fell on the twenty-fifth of December. The Gospels say nothing as to the day of Christ's birth, AND ACCORDINGLY THE EARLY CHURCH DID NOT CELEBRATE IT. In time, however, the Christians of Egypt came to regard the sixth of January as the date of the Nativity, and the custom of commemorating the birth of the Saviour on that day gradually spread until by the Fourth century it was universally established in the East.

"But at the end of the third or the beginning of the fourth century the Western Church, which had never recognised the sixth of January as the day of the Nativity, adopted the twenty-fifth of December as the true date and in time its decision was accepted



**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

**Nimrodism**

**Christianity today**

also by the Eastern Church. At Antioch the change was not introduced till about the year 375 A.D.”.

**5. THE SIGN OF THE CROSS**

**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

**Nimrodism**

**Christianity today**

Jesus was fully aware that the sign of the Cross was a symbol, which had already been cursed by God Almighty not only because of Nimrod at the tower of Babel, but also when some Jewish women were weeping for Tammuz (the pagan Babylonian god Nimrod who was represented by the sign of the Cross) at the Northern Gate of the Temple of Jerusalem. In fact God Almighty was so infuriated at this incident that He ordered them to be killed—vide the Holy Bible:

“... he brought me to, the door of the gate of

Among the Babylonians an upright cross was a sacred magical symbol to ward off evil. In the Hebrew alphabet, such a cross was the original form of their letter “T” (or Tau). So the cross was the initial letter of the name of the Babylonian god Tammuz or “Fire, the Perfector”, or Nimrod. Its worship was thus the worship of “Tammuz” or Bacchus or Nimrod.

The cross has thus been venerated by sun-worshippers throughout the world for many centuries before the so called Christian era. This

Nowhere in the Bible is it mentioned that the Cursed Pagan sign of the Cross is to be worshipped by the Christians.

Clement in his list of Christian; symbols, does not mention the sign of the Cross. Hence it does not date from the crucifixion!

On pages 204-205 of “*The Two Babylons*” by the Rev. A. Hislop one reads:

(With reference to Christendom) “and the Tau, the sign of the cross, the indisputable sign of the Tammuz, the false Messiah, was every-

### **The original teachings of Jesus**

the Lord's house which was towards the north; and behold there sat (Jewish) women weeping for Tammuz" (Ezekiel 8: 14).

"Slay utterly old and young, both maids, and little children, and women ... and begin (these killings) at My sanctuary ..." (Ezekiel 9: 6).

As read earlier, in accordance with the above curse of God Jerusalem, the sacred city of not only the Jews but also of Jesus, was completely demolished for this reason in 607 B.C. (Chapter. 6: M).

Further this sign of the Cross represents the throwing of Prophet Abraham, the friend of God, into the fire by Nimrod for having broken Idols, as read earlier in Chapter VI: F.

Hence the Cross is a sign hated by both God and Jesus because it represented Nimrod, the

### **Nimrodism**

worship has spread from Babylon to Mexico and South America on one hand, and throughout Asia, Europe and the Mediterranean countries on the other as we have read earlier in Chapter 5: F-2.

### **Christianity today**

where SUBSTITUTED in its stead" (*i.e.* "X" or Chi as in Christos which was introduced by King Constantine in 325 A.D)

Thus the adoption of the magical sign of the cross shows that Christianity came under, the corrosive influence of the spell of Nimrod, which has robbed Christians of their will power and reasoning! Otherwise they would have stayed surely far away from this intoxicating sign which is not only a cursed symbol in the eyes of Jesus, but also despised by him.

The original teachings of Jesus	Nimrodism	Christianity today
<p>mighty hunter in rebellion against God (Genesis 10: 9), and his attempts to wipe out the teachings of “God is One” by replacing it with “trinity in unity”!</p> <p>The last of the Heavenly Books repeatedly stresses “... Follow not the footsteps (<i>i.e.</i> do not imitate anything) of the devil (Nimrod). Lo! he is an open enemy for you” (Qur’an 2: 168).</p>		<p>During this century, a cross has been discovered in Ireland with a crucified effigy, but it is the effigy of “Mithra” as a Persian Prince and not that of Jesus, because the head of the one crucified bears a Parthian coronet and not the crown of thorns. This identifies it with the old Mithraic cult. Thus the sign of the cross and the crucifixion came from Mithraism into Christianity. Hence the sign of the cross has nothing to do with Jesus nor with any incident in his life.</p>

6. ON CIRCUMCISION

The original teachings of Jesus	Nimrodism	Christianity today
<p>The centurion of the town of Capernaum had a sick servant. He asked Jesus to pray for his servant and not bother to come to his house as he was fully confident his servant would get cured!</p> <p>“... speak the word only and my servant shall be</p>	<p>The difference between the pagan followers of Nimrod and the believing followers of Abraham, the father of the nations of believers in God Almighty has been circumcision of the males from the very inception of these two basic religions.</p>	<p>“The Brethren” broke the everlasting covenant of God with Abraham, by inviting the uncircumcised Cornelius, a centurion of the Roman Army in 36 A.D. to convert into their faith (Acts 10: 1-48).</p> <p>Immediately they became victims of the spell</p>

### The original teachings of Jesus

healed” he said (St. Matt. 8: 8; St. Luke 7: 7).

When Jesus heard this he was very much moved and declared:

“Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel” (St. Matt. 8: 10; St. Luke 7: 9).

Yet Jesus did not convert this believing centurion and all his servants as well as the 100 soldiers under him and their families even though they all had such ardent faith in Jesus. This one conversion would have meant anything from 500 to 1,000 converts but Jesus did not convert them! Why? Why was he content with only 120 converts (Acts 1: 15) and all of them only the circumcised Jews!

Jesus was fully aware that because the Jewish King Ahab, son of Omri, had married the pagan Princess Jezebel, daughter of the uncircumcised Ethbaal, king

### Nimrodism

1. Those who are circumcised cannot fall easily a prey to the magical influence of Nimrod.

2. Those uncircumcised are usually much too intoxicated even, to realise what blasphemies they utter!

It should be noted here that when anyone approaches the two fallen angels in the underground chamber of Babel (Chapter 5: D) where they are hung upside down in the well of punishment, both Horus and Marduk warn the persons that they would lose their souls if they were to learn the art of magic (Qur'an 2: 102). If they insisted then they were asked to go and urinate at another well in the same chamber (pages 134-139, Vol. 1, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Therefore circumcision plays such a vital role as to distinguish forever the pagan followers under

### Christianity today

of Nimrod upon humanity as warned in the Holy Bible:

“Babylon hath been a golden cup in the Lord's hand, that made all the earth drunken: the nations have drunken of her wine: THEREFORE THE NATIONS ARE MAD” (Jeremiah 51: 7).

Many of the true believers in Jesus warned the Brethren converts:

“And certain men (*i.e.* the Nazarenes which included St. John and the 112 out of the 120 believers in Jesus) which came down from Judaea taught the “Brethren” (*i.e.* the converts of Peter, Paul and the dissidents to Jesus) and said, Except ye be circumcised (according to the covenant of Abraham and follow the Judaic Laws) after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved” (Acts 15: 1).

That the Brethren being overcome under the

### The original teachings of Jesus

of the Zindonians the whole Jewish nation had been corrupted into Nimrodism (1 King 16: 29-33)

Just one contact brought several Jewish kings under the magical spell of Nimrod resulting eventually in the effacement of Jerusalem in 607 B.C. because of Nimrodism and its sign of the cross and the feast of Easter!

He therefore wanted to ensure that his teachings were not corrupted and destroyed by inviting the uncircumcised people, as he was fully aware of the bewitching influence of Nimrod. Therefore Jesus not only refused to accept the uncircumcised pagan centurion who had absolute faith in him but he also never preached to nor converted the uncircumcised. This is clear from the following passage in the Holy Bible:

“... Preaching the word

### Nimrodism

the magical spell of Nimrod and the circumcised children and followers of Abraham, the friend of Allah.

### Christianity today

hypnotic spell of Nimrod paid no heed to the teachings of Jesus of Nazareth is evident from:

“And being brought on their way by the church, they passed through Phenice and Samaria, declaring the conversion of the *Gentiles*; and they caused great joy unto all the *Brethren*” (Acts 15: 3).

“Forasmuch as we (the Brethren) have heard, that certain (people *i.e.* Nazarenes) WHICH WENT OUT (*i.e.* who have broken away) FROM US HAVE TROUBLED You with words, subverting your Souls, saying: ye must be circumcised and keep the (Mosaic) Laws (taught by Jesus): to whom (*i.e.* the Nazarenes) WE (the Brethren) GAVE NO SUCH COMMANDMENT” (Acts: 15: 24).

‘Consequently it is clear from this that the authority of the Brethren

### **The original teachings of Jesus**

to none but unto the  
(circumcised) Jews only”  
(Acts 11: 19).

Jesus ordered his  
disciples to preach only  
to the Jews and not  
to the uncircumcised  
pagans as follows:

“These twelve Jesus sent  
forth, and commanded  
them, saying, Go not into  
the way of the Gentiles,  
and into any city of the  
Samaritans enter ye not:

“But go rather to the lost  
sheep of the house of  
Israel” (St Matt. 10: 5-6).

Jesus himself was  
circumcised when he was  
eight days old (St. Luke 2:  
21).

### **Nimrodism**

### **Christianity today**

came from themselves.  
The words “WE (i.e.  
THE BRETHREN!)  
GAVE NO SUCH  
COMMANDMENT”  
being very significant!  
Thus it makes explicit  
that it is “the Brethren”  
who have broken away  
from the teachings of  
Jesus of Nazareth, by  
following their own  
whimsical desires and  
think themselves to be  
even cleverer than Jesus  
and the Divine Evangel.

If this is not “Blasphemy” of the worst type, then what is it?

St. John has corroborated that it is the Brethren who have broken away from the teachings of Jesus as shown earlier in Chapter 12: C-12 according to the Holy Bible.

## 7. ON SABBATH DAY

### The original teachings of Jesus

Jesus regularly observed the Sabbath Day throughout his life as is confirmed in the Holy Bible:

“And he (Jesus) came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood up for to read” (St. Luke 4: 16).

“And (Jesus) came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the Sabbath days” (St. Luke 4: 31).

According to tradition Jesus taught the observance of Sabbath from sunset on Thursday to sunset on Friday as follows:

- 1: Not to light any fires or to cook any food.
2. Not kill any animal for food.
3. Not to eat any meat.
4. Not to do any manual labour.

### Nimrodism

According to Nimrod’s teachings of Sun-worship, he started the week from Sunday or Sun-god’s day. This was the first day of their week.

The Sabbath observed by the Prophets on Friday, the last day of the week, was with the idea of asking God for the forgiveness of one’s sins actually committed during the whole of the week which ended on Friday, so that they could start the next week from Saturday in a purer condition.

The Pagan’s objective of observing the Sabbath was not forgiveness of one’s sins or purity. On the contrary it was adhered to with the sole object of having good luck throughout the duration of the week that they observed Sunday as the most powerful “sun god’s day” or the first day of the week as their prayer day.

### Christianity today

The Christians observed till now two of the rules of the Sabbath of Jesus viz:

1. Not to eat meat on Fridays.
2. Not to kill any animal for food on Fridays.

But according to the decree of King Constantine issued in 321 A.D. they changed the weekly day of prayer and rest in conformity with the pagan system of observing “Dies Solis” or Sun-god’s day or the first day of the pagan week instead of Friday the seventh day of the week of the Prophets from the time of Adam thus showing a greater respect for King Constantine’s sun worship as compared with the teachings of Jesus and the earlier prophets, from the inception of the creation of mankind.

The research scholar Garner Ted Armstrong has written on page 5 of

### The original teachings of Jesus

5. To spend the day in prayers, good deeds, attending synagogues, reading the Torah and preaching, thus keeping the day holy.

“When it was day, Friday morning, early, Jesus, after prayers, assembled his disciples and said unto them: ‘Let us sit down (in prayers); for even as on this day God created man of the clay of the earth’ ... then Jesus sat down and praised God (page 281, Gospel of Barnabas).

This was the system of observing the Sabbath on Friday, which was the last or seventh day of the week from the time of Adam as shown earlier (Chapter 4: B and C).

### Nimrodism

This teaching of Nimrod spread all over the world when God’s curse broke up the unity of mankind at the tower of Babel and the peoples were scattered from there.

### Christianity today

the March 1971 issue of “*The Plain Truth*” as follows:

“Read about the Jesus whose mother had a large family (Matthew 13: 55-56), who is Lord of the Sabbath, not Sunday,” (St. Mark 2: 28).

So it will be clear that Jesus’s sabbath was not on a Sunday but on *Fridays, i.e. the day they were forbidden to eat meat* and to refrain from killing any animal for food!

In 321 A.D., Constantine ordered:

Henceforth “*Dies Solis*” or Sun-god’s day was to be observed as the Sabbath day by all his subjects! (Chapter 12: F-2).



## 8. ON MEAT WITH BLOOD FORBIDDEN

### The original teachings of Jesus

We find from the Holy Bible that the first occasion where permission was given to mankind to eat meat was after the great deluge. Before that only vegetables and fruits were eaten.

This order on Noah reads:

“Every moving thing that liveth shall be meat for you; even as the green herb have I given you all things.

“But flesh with the life thereof, which is the blood thereof, shall ye not eat” (Genesis 9: 3-4).

The Angel Gabriel came and showed how this order was to be carried out, *viz*: the animal's or bird's wind pipe and the two main arteries on the two sides of the wind pipe in the neck were only to be cut with a sharp knife, causing instantaneous death without injuring the spinal cord, so that the brain

### Nimrodism

King Nimrod spent his long life only in exciting rebellion against God Almighty. He is described in the Holy Bible as follows:

“And Cush begat Nimrod: he began to be a mighty one in the earth.

“He was a mighty hunter in rebellion before the Lord. Wherefore it is said Even as Nimrod the mighty hunter in rebellion before the Lord” (Genesis 10: 8-9).

He always considered the laws of God All mighty a curse and took the greatest pleasure in not only breaking them but also getting others to follow his mischievous teachings. Hence his title “Nimrod” which means “Let us rebel”.

Quite naturally he considered the rules of killing an animal and taking out its blood before eating it an unnecessary waste of

### Christianity today

The Christians by following the system of Nimrod by killing animals with one stroke by either chopping off the head or by paralyzing the brain with an electric shock or a stroke on the head are eating meat with blood still in it.

Thus the Christians accord greater respect by their deeds to the principles of Nimrodism as against God All mighty's orders forbidding the eating of “Blood”.

If this is not “Hero worship of Nimrod” and “Blasphemy against God”, then what is it?

For full details of the Divine Laws that “BLOOD IS FORBIDDEN” as observed by Jesus please refer to:

“And wherever you live, you must not eat the blood of any bird or animal. Anyone who eats blood must be cut

### **The original teachings of Jesus**

could still operate the heart of the animal or bird for a few minutes after death until all blood in the body flows out of it through these two cut main arteries. When all the blood had been pumped out in this manner then only would the animal or bird become fit for eating.

Any animal or bird which died of itself or was killed by another animal or by strangulation (Leviticus 17: 15-16) or by chopping off its head in one stroke thus injuring the spinal cord or otherwise impairing the function-ing of the heart in pumping the blood out of the body through cut arteries or an animal dying a natural death were forbidden as food because the process of the brain causing the heart to pump the blood out of the body through the two cut main arteries was impaired. Hence

### **Nimrodism**

time and effort. So he pretended that in killing an animal or a fowl in the manner ordered by God All Almighty was to cause great torture to the animal or bird concerned. Thus he posed himself as a great preventer of cruelty to animals and birds.

The proper way of killing an animal or a bird according to Nimrod without causing any pain or torture was to chop off the head of the animal or bird in one stroke or even to wring the neck of the birds, if they are small, as that would cause instantaneous death with the least possible torture. Thus he used to eat meat with blood still in it.

### **Christianity today**

off from their people.” (Leviticus 7: 26-27)

“I will set my face against any Israelite or any foreigner residing among them who eats blood, and I will cut them off from the people. For the life of a creature is in the blood, and I have given it to you to make atonement for yourselves on the altar; it is the blood that makes atonement for one’s life. Therefore I say to the Israelites, “None of you may eat blood, nor may any foreigner residing among you eat blood.” “Any Israelite or any foreigner residing among you who hunts any animal or bird that may be eaten must drain out the blood and cover it with earth, because the life of every creature is its blood. That is why I have said to the Israelites, “You must not eat the blood of any creature, because the life of every creature is its

**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

such meat, which was with blood, was forbidden to be eaten by the descendants of Noah, from whom the present human race has come about.

The followers of Jesus also conformed to this law as is evident from the following passage in the Holy Bible:

“That ye abstain from meats offered to idols, and from things strangled, and from fornication” (Acts 15: 29).

**Nimrodism**

**Christianity today**

blood; anyone who eats it must be cut off.”

“Anyone, whether native-born or foreigner, who eats anything found dead or torn by wild animals must wash their clothes and bathe with water, and they will be ceremonially unclean till evening; then they will be clean. But if they do not wash their clothes and bathe themselves, they will be held responsible.” (Leviticus 17: 10-16)

“Do not eat any meat with the blood still in it.” (Leviticus 19: 26)

and you will realise that the punishment for eating meat with blood is “death” and the person will be cut off from God’s blessings!

## 9. ON FOOD LAWS—SWINE FORBIDDEN AS FOOD

### The original teachings of Jesus

The swine, which belongs to the wild-boar family, was abominable to Jesus and his followers because:

1. It was one of the animals of god Tammuz. Hence it was a special item of meat offered to Idols.
2. Swine flesh was eaten by the pagans on festive occasions with a view to take an abusive revenge upon the one who was responsible for the violent death of Nimrod, their only begotten son of sun-god born of the great virgin queen of the heaven as read earlier (Chapter 6: I, J and K).
3. The man, who was responsible for the violent death of Nimrod was Abraham the ancestor of Jesus and his followers. Therefore eating swine flesh meant the eating of the flesh of their own great ancestor Abraham.

### Nimrodism

Swine flesh was eaten under Nimrodism as an abusive revenge on the flesh of Abraham, who was responsible for the violent death of their only begotten son of the sun-god (Chapter 6: K).

Therefore every eater of swine flesh is ipso facto a hater and an enemy of Abraham, the friend of God All mighty.

### Christianity today

The Christians by enjoying swine flesh, (something hated by Jesus) thus identify themselves with the followers of Nimrodism.

By taking swine flesh at the feast of Christmas, the birth date of Nimrod, they prove categorically that they eat it only to express their hatred for Abraham, the architect of the death of their Messiah.

Can such people ever be the followers of Jesus of Nazareth the son of the Virgin Mary?

We have already read in Chapter 10: P, that all his life Jesus had been forbidden repeatedly the following items as recorded in "The Gospel of Barnabas":

- a) Wine
- b) Strong drinks
- c) Every unclean meat.

**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

4. Swine flesh was also strictly forbidden to Jesus and his followers the circumcised Jews under the divine Laws:

“And the swine, because it divideth the hoof, yet cheweth not the cud, it is unclean unto you: ye shall not eat of their flesh, nor (even) touch their dead carcass” (Deuteronomy 14: 8) also similar order is in (Leviticus 11: 7 and 8), which is as follows “And the pig, though it has a divided hoof, does not chew the cud; it is unclean for you. You must not eat their meat or touch their carcasses; they are unclean for you.”

5. If the carcass of a swine is even accidentally touched, then it would render one unclean for the rest of the day until the sunset when the new day commenced:

**Nimrodism**

**Christianity today**

Therefore the followers of Jesus cannot indulge in wine (even for sacramental purposes) or in strong drinks or swine flesh on festive or any other occasions.

That Jesus refused to drink wine because it was prohibited will be evident from the following Biblical quotation:

“And they gave him (Jesus) to drink wine mingled with myrrh: but he received it not” (St. Mark 15: 23).

**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

“The carcases of every beast which divideth the hoof, and is not cloven footed, nor cheweth the cud, are unclean unto you: every one that toucheth them shall be unclean.

“And whosoever beareth ought of the carcase of them shall wash his clothes, and be unclean (for the rest of the day) until the even (*i.e.* sunset when the new day starts)” (Leviticus 11: 25 and 26).

Hence it is evident from these passages that no follower of Jesus can even touch swine flesh under any circumstances whatsoever, let alone eat it!

**Nimrodism**

**Christianity today**

10. ON IDOLATRY

The original teachings of Jesus	Nimrodism	Christianity today
“Little children keep yourselves from idols. Amen” (1 John 5: 21).	As recorded earlier Nimrodism taught that praying before idols was prayer to the deity. This is the belief of the pagans. This is the commencement of idolatry after the deluge. (Chapter 5: F-1).	Many Christians pray before idols. Just like the pagans they believe that prayers before idols are prayers to the deity! Are they not thus giving preference to Nimrodism over the teachings of Jesus, son of Mary? Are not such idolaters?
“Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry” (1 Corinthians 10: 14).		
“And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? ...” (2 Corinthians 6: 16).		

11. ON MARRIAGE

The original teachings of Jesus	Nimrodism	Christianity today
Marriage is a blessing and that there is no restrictions on the number of wives can be seen from the following Biblical quotations:	We have read earlier that Nimrod planned to reunite the different groups, when God’s curse broke up the unity of mankind at the tower of Babel (Genesis 11: 1-9) by preaching as follows (Chapter V: H):	1. Only one wife to be allowed.
“And God blessed Noah and his sons, and said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth.	1. That nobody would be permitted to marry a relative but that marriage should be contracted with some other group, so that unity and friendship may flourish amongst the different groups and	2. The husband and wife should be from different families.
“And God spake unto Noah, and to his sons with him saying:		3. Marriages between cousins not normally allowed.
“And I, behold, I establish My covenant with you, and with Your		From the above it is explicit that the Christians preferred and accepted the teachings of Nimrod as against God’s orders taught by Jesus.
		The result of following Nimrodism must inevit-

### The original teachings of Jesus

seed after you;

“And you, be ye fruitful, and multiply; bring forth abundantly in the earth, and multiply therein” (Genesis 9: 1, 8, 9, 7).

“Whoso findeth a wife findeth a good thing, and obtaineth the favour of the Lord” (Proverbs 18: 22).

“Who can find a virtuous woman? For her price is far above rubies” (Proverbs 31: 10).

The teaching of Jesus found in the New Testament is cited:

“Marriage is honourable in all (be they priests or nuns or ordinary people) ...” (Hebrews 13: 4).

That marriage amongst cousins is encouraged can be seen from the following Biblical quotation:

“... but he shall take a virgin of his own people (*i.e.* a cousin) to wife” (Leviticus 21: 14).

### Nimrodism

thus they could re-unite and undo what God Almighty had done to split the Unity of mankind.

2. If a person had more than one wife there could be quarrels bet-ween the wives which would mean a dispute between three or more family groups. Thus it was a possible source of disunity. Hence only one wife was his order of the day.

3. To support this theory he preached that marriage in the same family meant the same blood and that this was detrimental to the health of their children.

### Christianity today

ably bring a curse of Almighty God upon the Christian group of nations.

As an example the world sees that during the last World War many of the young German men were killed.

There were left approximately five women to one man in the marriageable age group. If one man can marry only one wife, what happens to the remaining four women? Are they not human beings according to the Christian Church? Must they be denied the right of married life? Was this the purpose for which they were created by the Almighty that they should be reduced to prostitution, being denied their rights to marry and lead honourable lives in accordance with the laws of God? (See Chapter 19: E-3).

Can these ever be the laws of God? Or are the Christians merely blind-



**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

**a) Marriage laws  
according to the Bible:**

According to Biblical laws you cannot marry the following, and any one breaking these laws is to be put to death:

1. Pagans and Idolaters (Leviticus 20: 1-6).
2. Another living man's wife (Leviticus 18: 20; 20: 10).
3. Father, mother, son, daughter (Leviticus 18: 6-8).
4. Do not prostitute thy daughters (Leviticus 19: 29).
5. Sister, father's daughters (*i.e.* step-sisters), mother's daughters (*i.e.* half-sisters) (Leviticus 18: 9; 20: 17).
6. Father's wives (*i.e.* Stepmothers) (Leviticus 18: 8; 20: 11).
7. Daughter-in-law (Leviticus 18: 8; 20: 11).
8. A woman, her daughter, her daughter's daughter, her son's daughter (Leviticus 18:

**Nimrodism**

**Christianity today**

ly following the teachings of Nimrod, the accursed, and thus bringing God's scourge upon themselves?

It was for this life of shame that many places were destroyed by God's curse from time to time. Sodom, Gomorrah, in the days of Lot, Babylon, Pompeii etc.—not to forget the great deluge in the time of Noah! Should not the Europeans beware that God's curse will overtake them if they do not give up Nimrod's cursed principles of having only one wife and a free license for prostituting any number of other wo-men!

The answer to such tragic situations in Europe is to follow the teachings of God All mighty.

Look at the Arabs! They have on rare occasions married more than one wife (See Chapter 19: E-3, F and G), all cousins of one another and see

### **The original teachings of Jesus**

17).

9 Wife's mother  
(Leviticus 20: 14).

10. Mother's sisters or  
Father's sisters (Leviticus  
18: 12, 13; 20: 19).

11. Uncle's wife  
(Leviticus 18: 14; 20: 20).

12. Brother's wife as long  
as brother is alive  
(Leviticus 18: 16; 20: 21).

13. Wife's sister as long  
as the wife is alive  
(Leviticus 18: 18).

14. Another man's wife  
or a prostitute however  
beautiful or attractive she  
may be (Leviticus 20: 10).

15. Another man for wife  
(Leviticus 18: 22; 20: 13).

16. Any animal for sexual  
pleasures (Leviticus 18:  
23; 20: 15 and 16).

All others you can marry  
from amongst your  
relatives without any  
restrictions on the  
number of wives a man  
may have! These are the

### **Nimrodism**

### **Christianity today**

how very contentedly  
they are living in perfect  
harmony amongst them-  
selves.

They have from the time  
of Abraham some 4,000  
years back, married  
amongst cousins, with-  
out suffering any ill-  
health, thus disproving  
totally the teachings of  
Nimrod!

By marrying between  
cousins, the wives being  
cousins and knowing one  
another from child-hood  
co-exist very happily and  
well. This would not be  
so if they were not  
interrelated.

Therefore this is the only  
way by which the  
Europeans can rid  
themselves of prostitu-  
tion, which is haunting  
them and eroding their  
morality. Instead of  
living a clean honest life,  
they are living a life of  
deceit and shame, owing  
to their man-made laws  
of restricting marriage to  
only one wife. Thus this  
is proving a curse for the  
Europeans and is dest-

The original teachings of Jesus	Nimrodism	Christianity today
teachings of Jesus who had come not to destroy the Mosaic Laws but to fulfil them (St. Matthew 5: 17).		roying their family lives (See Chapter 19: G—Polygamy and the West).  This cankerous principle of Nimrod of having only one wife and so many women available without any hope for decent honourable lives is the cause of the various “Nudist Cults”, “Exchange of mates”, “Call Girls”, and the “Free  for all living styles” now raging throughout the European assortment of nations and America (Chapter 23: C-8).

12. ON MONASTICISM

The original teachings of Jesus	Nimrodism	Christianity today
<b>a) The Holy Bible shows Jesus is against Monasticism</b>  “Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the later times some ( <i>i.e.</i> Peter and his group the Brethren) shall depart from the faith (of Jesus), giving heed to seducing spirit, and doctrines of	We have read earlier that King Nimrod encouraged monasticism to prevent the birth of Abraham, whereby he hoped to destroy the truth and thus prevent the light of the Almighty Creator being spread on the face of the earth! (Chapter 6: A, B and C).	Many of the Christian sects by observing Monasticism thus identify themselves as the followers of Nimrod!  Therefore they are the enemies of Abraham!  One who is an enemy of Abraham is ipso facto also an enemy of Jesus, who is one of his

### The original teachings of Jesus

the devils (*i.e.* Nimrod and his teachings like Mithraism);

“Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron;

“FORBIDDING TO MARRY ...” (1 Timothy 4: 1-3).

“MARRIAGE is honourable in ALL (be they priests or nuns or ordinary people) and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge” (Hebrews 13: 4 ).

### b) Marriage is compulsory for priests under the Holy Bible

That the Priests of Jesus MUST BE married people is proved from the following passages of the Holy Bible:

“**This is a true saying** (of Jesus), if a man desire the office of a ‘**BISHOP**’, he desireth a good work.

“**A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant,**

### Nimrodism

Thus monasticism is an expression of hatred to Abraham, the father of the nations of believers (Chapter 7: E and 8: F).

Thus it was King Nimrod who formulated the first anti-marriage laws, with the object of preventing the birth of Abraham (Chapter 6: C).

Therefore all who follow these unnatural laws and observe celibate monasticism are surely the followers of Nimrod,

### Christianity today

descendants.

Is that what Christianity is? A religion of hatred to both Abraham and Jesus!

St. Peter the originator of the “Brethren” was a married man.

**In 867 A.D.:** Adrian II a married man became Pope.

Therefore the following anti-marriage laws, contrary to the precepts of Jesus, must have been copied from Nimrodism:

### The original teachings of Jesus

sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach;

**“Not given to wine,** no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous;

“One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity;

*“(For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the Church of God?”* (1 Timothy 3: 1-5).

“Likewise must the ‘DEACONS’ be grave, not double-tongued, not given to ... wine, not greedy of filthy lucre;

“And let these also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being found blameless.

“Even so must their wives be grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things.

### Nimrodism

the enemy of Abraham, the ancestor of Jesus.

Hence the various orders of celibate priests and nuns all over the world, under whatever names, are all the enemies of the children of Abraham, including Jesus!

### Christianity today

“... It is good for a man not to touch a woman” (1 Corinthians 7: 1).

“I say therefore to the unmarried and widows, It is good for them if they abide (unmarried) even as I” (1 Corinthians 7: 8).

“... He that is unmarried careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord;

“But he that is married careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife.

“There is a difference also between a wife and a virgin. The unmarried woman careth for things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and in spirit: but she that is married careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband” (1 Corinthians 7: 32-34).

These are nothing but the doctrines of Nimrod (Chapter 6: C).

### **The original teachings of Jesus**

*“Let the deacons be the husband of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well” (1 Timothy 3: 8-12).*

### **Nimrodism**

### **Christianity today**

In 1123 A.D.: At the first Lateran Council, it was clearly passed that PRIESTS and NUNS from that date onwards were forbidden to marry!

Hence it is absolutely obvious that this law on celibacy did not exist at the time of Jesus and those that followed him. It is something which was innovated eleven centuries later!

### **c) Celibacy is a bad thing according to God in the Holy Bible**

Every true religion, which had come from the One and only God through anyone of the numerous prophets of God, has invariably preached against “Monasticism”, since the time of Adam till date:

“And the Lord God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him” (Genesis 2: 18).

The following quotation is from page 220 of “The Two Babylons” by the Rev. A. Hislop:

“The effects of its (monastic celibacy) introduction (by Nimrodism from Babylon) were most disastrous. The records of all nations where priestly celibacy has been introduced have proved that, instead of ministering to the purity of those condemned to it, it has only plunged them in the deepest pollution.

In fact this unnatural and Pagan law is solely responsible for priests, bishops and cardinals taking mistresses.

Alexander VI fathered at least four illegitimate children before becoming the Pope in 1492 A.D.

Historian Henri Daniel Rops estimated that in the 15th century in Burgundy, half of the children born, were out of prostitution indulged in by Priests, Bishops and Cardinals.

### The original teachings of Jesus

The teachings of Jesus as well as of St. Paul, one of the founders of the Brethren faith, also confirms in the Holy Bible that only married men can be priests of the Church and not the celibate priests and nuns as in paganism!

"This is a true saying (of Jesus) if a man desire the office of a Bishop, he desireth a good work.

"A BISHOP then MUST BE blameless, THE HUSBAND OF ONE WIFE" (1 Timothy 3: 1-2).

"Let the DEACONS BE THE HUSBANDS OF ONE WIFE, *ruling their children and their houses well*" (Timothy 3: 12).

### Nimrodism

The history of Tibet, and China, and Japan, where the Babylonian institution of priestly celibacy has prevailed from time immemorial, bears testimony to the abominations that have flowed from it. The excesses committed by the celibate priests of Bacchus in Pagan Rome in their secret Mysteries, were such that the Senate felt called upon to expel them from the bounds of the Roman Republic. In Papal Rome the same abominations have flowed from priestly celibacy, in connection with the corrupt and corrupting system of the confessional, insomuch that all men who have examined the subject have been compelled to admire the amazing significance of the same divinely bestowed on it, both in a literal and figurative sense, 'Babylon the Great, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH'" (Revelation 17:5).

### Christianity today

**In 1836:** "The Rev. M.H. Seymour shows that the total number of births in Rome in one year was 4373 of which no fewer than 3160 were born out of illicit relationships with the priests" (Moral Results of Romanish System, page XLIX in Evening with Romanists).

"When Pope' Paul V mediated the suppression of licensed brothels in the "Holy City", the Roman Senate petitioned against his carrying his design into effect, on the ground that the existence of such places was the ONLY means of HINDERING THE PRIESTS FROM SEDUCING THEIR WIVES AND DAUGHTERS!" (Pages 220 of "The Two Babylons" by the Rev. Alexander Hislop, The 6th American Printing of 1953).

Often young attractive virgins going alone for confession into the secluded confines of the

### The original teachings of Jesus

### Nimrodism

### Christianity today

Church have realised too late that they are coming out of a brothel and not a place of worship of God, with their chastity lost to the one they were looking upon as their guide in religious and spiritual matters! They have experienced sin in the Church at the hands of the “Forgiver” of their sins, the hearer of their confessions!

Hence this unnatural Pagan Law of Nimrod has made the clergy a danger to the dignity and purity of the society.

#### d) General Order of God that a Priest must Marry

The particular orders for priests were as follows (Jesus being from the family of the Jewish priests) and these form part of the laws that Jesus taught:

“And the Lord said unto Moses, speak unto the priests, the sons of Aaron (the Virgin

As seen earlier King Nimrod taught Monasticism as part of his policy of revolt against God and His friend Abraham, the father of the circumcised believers (Chapter 6: C).

Even though Jesus gave no permission to practise Monasticism and celibacy, yet the Christians took to it after the lapse of many Centuries. By doing so whom are they following? To whom do they show greater respect;

THE REAL JESUS

— or —

NIMROD?

*i.e.* Constantine’s

CHRIST ?



**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

Mary's Mother being from this particular family), and say unto them.

"And he (the priest) SHALL (*i.e.* compulsorily) take a wife in her virginity.

"A widow or a divorced woman, or profane, or an harlot, these SHALL he not take: but he SHALL (compulsorily) take a virgin of his own people (*i.e.* a near relative, a cousin) to wife.

"Neither shall he (the priest) profane his seed among his people: for I the Lord do sanctify him" (Leviticus 21; 1, 13-15).

**Nimrodism**

**Christianity today**

**e) Divine Confirmation  
that Monasticism was  
not taught by Jesus**

That this was the divine message in the Evangel given by God Almighty to the world through Jesus is confirmed again by the last of the

This Pagan Law of King Nimrod has not brought any dignity, honour, perfection and reverence for the "Celibate Priests" all over the world. On the contrary it has brought disgrace, dishonour and imperfection. Because such a

In January, 1966 a group of Italian Priests had petitioned the Pope to relieve them from the obligation of celibacy, arguing that it was an intolerable burden and the rule had no basis either in the scriptures or natural law.

### The original teachings of Jesus

Heavenly books as follows:

“And We (Allah) verily sent Noah and Abraham and placed the Prophethood and the (Divine) Scriptures among their seeds, and among them there is he who doeth right, but many of them are evil livers.

“Then We (Allah) caused our messengers to follow in their foot-steps (*i.e.* Noah and Abraham); and We (Allah) caused Jesus, son of Mary, to follow (the Judaic Laws, taught and practised by the earlier prophets) and gave him the Evangel, and placed compassion and mercy in the hearts of those who followed him. But Monasticism (*i.e.* the different celibate priestly and nunnery schools) they (the Christians) invented (by copying the pagan teachings of Nimrod)—We (Allah) ordained it not

### Nimrodism

law is not only a disobedience to God, being against the call of nature but it has also been devised for the sole purpose of preventing the fulfilment of God’s will *i.e.* the birth of Abraham, the ancestor of Jesus (Chapter 6: A, B and C).

### Christianity today

If Christianity or Nimrod’s teachings as it is called in modern times is a curse for mankind, then there can be no solution for the upliftment of man and his salvation unless and until mankind submits to God’s laws, without altering a single letter of it.

**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

for them—only seeking Allah’s pleasure (by leading normal married lives in the right way).

Hence they (the Christians) observed it not with the right observ-ance. So We (Allah) give those of them who believe (and follow the Evangel *i.e.* the Nazar-enes) their reward but many of them (*i.e.* the Christians) are evil-livers.” (Qur’an 57: 26-27).

**Nimrodism**

**Christianity today**

**13. THE APOSTLES**

**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

The Jews were many thousands when they escaped from Egypt under Moses, but the latter appointed only one Apostle *i.e.* Joshua after him to guide the large numbers belonging to the twelve different tribes of Jews.

In 2 Kings 2, we read of Elijah having appointed Elisha to be his Apostle and heir after him.

**Nimrodism**

Nimrod, the great astronomer, as we have read earlier invented the theory of the twelve heavenly guides or the twelve constellations of the Zodiac, from which he showed that all those born under their influence had common characteristics and on this basis Horoscopes and forecasts were invented by him. Hence the twelve sections of

**Christianity today**

Since Jesus did not appoint the twelve apostles, then from where did this theory of the twelve guides come about? Was it not from Nimrodism? Is it not with the object of misguiding the world to accept such utterly incompetent people as St. Peter and St. Paul who have been disowned by Jesus according to the Holy Bible? (Chapter

### The original teachings of Jesus

Similarly King David was appointed heir to Prophet Samuel and David appointed Solomon after him as apostle for the whole Jewish race. In fact, the whole of the Old Testament is full of such evidence that only one guide was nominated at a time for all the twelve tribes of the Jewish nation.

The Holy Bible gives us the following information:

“And in those days (i.e. those that followed after Jesus was raised to heaven) Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples, and said, (the number of names together were about an hundred and twenty)” (Acts 1: 15).

By no stretch of imagination can it be suggested that an apostle is required for the guidance of every 10 disciples or more than one apostle as necessary to guide 120 converts to the faith of Jesus.

### Nimrodism

influence were a *sine qua non* as far as his teachings were concerned! (Chapter 5: F-5).

This is the Pagan basis for the twelve guides or the twelve heavenly Apostles.

### Christianity today

12: D and H-3).

Jesus has publicly declared that St. Peter is a Satan e.g.:

“But he (Jesus) turned, and said unto Peter, *Get thee behind me Satan*: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not things that be of God, but those that be of men.

“For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world and lose his soul? ...” (St. Matthew 16: 23 and 26).

**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

According to tradition Jesus also appointed only one heir. He is John the son of Zebedee (St. Matthew 4: 21) the writer of the Evangel and the Revelation both in the Hebrew Language in Aramaic Script. His works were seized from the possession of Arius along with the Evangel by Levi and burnt in 325 A.D. under orders of Emperor Constantine. These were replaced by St. John, the Revelation and St. Matthew respectively—all written in Greek—a *language foreign to Jesus!*

**Nimrodism**

**Christianity today**

**14. ON SIN AND HOLY COMMUNION**

**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

Jesus has clearly warned his followers to beware of the Day of Judgment on which one will be raised from the dead and will have to give an account of one's deeds on earth. Nobody will be able to attain heaven if he has committed even one sin under the

**Nimrodism**

We have read earlier how King Nimrod had propagated the utterly absurd and illogical theory that if one partook of the Holy Sacramental bread and wine, one would become transformed automatically into the pure sinless only begotten son of

**Christianity today**

In the Non-Hebrew Gospels written in Greek for the pagan converts, we are told about the Holy Communion as follows:  
“And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the

### **The original teachings of Jesus**

Mosaic laws even as small as one jot or one tittle:

“For verily I (Jesus) say unto you; Till heaven and earth pass, (a sin as small as) one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass (*i.e.* escape) from the (Mosaic) law, (and enter into heaven) till (he or she abides by) all (the Judaic Laws and they) be fulfilled” (St. Matthew 5: 18).

“For the eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and his ears are open unto their prayers but the face of the Lord is against them that do evil (in disregard of the Mosaic Laws)” (1 Peter 3: 12).

“Whosoever therefore shall break (even) one of these least Commandments (*i.e.* the smallest of the Mosaic Laws), and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the Kingdom of Heaven: but whosoever shall do (*i.e.* follow these Mosaic Laws) and teach

### **Nimrodism**

Sun-god and nothing more was necessary for the forgiveness of one's sins. In other words, salvation lay in feasting and drinking, which killed the qualms of one's conscience for the sins committed! (Chapter 5: E-7c and 6: J).

Nimrodism or Paganism is not based on reaching heaven by doing good deeds or by living according to God's laws, but by enjoying ritualistic feasting and drinking!

### **Christianity today**

disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body.

“And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it;

“For this is my blood of the New Testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins” (St. Matthew 26: 26-28 also St. Mark 14: 22-24 and St. Luke 22: 19-20).

“The Brethren” or Christian religion is not based upon reaching heaven by doing good deeds or by living according to the Mosaic Laws taught by Jesus but according to Nimrod's teaching of the Holy Communion!

On the contrary, they consider that the believers in “Only begotten son of god come to save sinners” are not to be burdened any longer with the following of Mosaic laws taught by Jesus, as that would amount to tempting God to punish

**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

them (to other people), the same shall be called great in the Kingdom of God” (St. Matthew 5: 19).

Jesus has stated clearly in the Holy Bible that all worship made to him is in vain and useless. Thus worship has to be made to God alone e.g.:

*“But in vain they, do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men”* (St. Matthew 15: 9).

“Enter ye in at the strait (very narrow) gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in threat” (St. Matthew 7: 13).

**Nimrodism**

Further, it does not matter what sins a believer commits. As long as he believes in the “Only begotten son of Sun god come to save sinners”, he shall be saved by his grace!

No man can live such a good life as can justify himself before God by having followed the laws of God. Therefore pagan believers live by the faith that Nimrod sitting on the right hand of God on the Day of Judgment would save them. Thus they disregard the necessity of doing any good deeds.

**Christianity today**

them for having submitted to the laws of God, if any of them have been broken (Acts 15: 9-11).

That it is immaterial what sins a Christian commits, so long as he believes in Christ (as the Only begotten son of god come to save sinners) he shall be saved by his grace (Acts 15: 11).

“But that no man is justified by law in the sight of God, it is evident: for the just live by faith” (Galatians 3: 11).

### The original teachings of Jesus

“Because strait (very narrow) is the gate and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto (eternal) life (of happiness in heaven) and few there be that find it” (St. Matthew 7: 14).

“For I (Jesus) say unto you, *That except your righteousness (by good deeds) shall exceed the righteousness of the (Jewish) scribes and Pharisees* (who follow the Mosaic Laws), *ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven*” (St. Matthew 5: 20).

### Nimrodism

That the law of God to do good deeds is not faith. Anybody following the laws of God shall be required to live by them or be punished if one fails in his attempt.

The Saviour Nimrod has redeemed his believers from the curse of the laws of God for doing only good deeds. Thus the laws of God have been made a bane for his believers. Accordingly, it had been proposed by Nimrod *that accursed is everyone who tries to follow the laws of God and thus hangs himself by the said Laws as if from a tree!*

### Christianity today

“And the law is not of faith: but, The man that doeth them shall live in them” (Galatians 3: 12).

“Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, *cursed is everyone that hangeth on a tree*” (Galatians 3: 13).



15. FORMALITIES TO ENTER THE FAITH OF THE REAL JESUS

The original teachings of Jesus	Nimrodism	Christianity today
1. “And Jesus answered him <i>THE FIRST OF ALL THE COMMANDMENTS IS: Hear, O Israel; THE LORD OUR GOD IS ONE LORD</i> (i.e. one who has no father, mother, husband, virgin wife, brother, sister, only begotten son, daughter or any other form of equals):  “And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: <i>this is the first commandment</i> ” (St. Mark 12: 29-30).	God is a trinity in unity. Nimrod is the only begotten son of Sun-god, born of the virgin queen of the Heavens, come to save sinners by the sacrifice of his sacred and precious life.	God is a trinity in unity. Christ is the only begotten son of god, born of the virgin mother, come to save sinners by the sacrifice of his sacred and precious life.
2. To face towards Jerusalem  — and —	To face towards the East the rising place of the Sun  — and —	<i>To face the East instead of towards Jerusalem</i>  — and —  <i>To be baptised with water.</i>
3. To make a pledge to observe the Mosaic Laws of God from now onwards.	To be baptised from the sacred founts of Alpheus and Peneus which would clean up one’s polluted sins just as the Augean stables were cleaned instantly.	
4. To be circumcised within 8 days.  Jesus hated “ <i>Baptism</i> ” because it represented the magical rites to bring		

### The original teachings of Jesus

one under the spell of Nimrodism, due to which Jerusalem, the Sacred City of his ancestors, had been destroyed in 607 B.C. as read before.

That Jesus was never baptised and that he did not baptise anybody is recorded in the Holy Bible as follows:

“Though Jesus himself baptised not (neither himself nor others) ...” (St. John 4: 2).

Hence there can be no question of the followers of Jesus practicing the pagan sun worshippers’ rites of “Baptism” for bringing them under the spell of King Nimrod, the Cursed, in the light of the following Biblical warning:

“Babylon hath been a golden cup in the Lord’s hand, that made all the earth drunken: the nations have drunk of her wine: therefore the NATIONS ARE MAD (to suggest God coming

### Nimrodism

The Pagan mythology tells us that when the Only begotten son of Sun-god was baptised, the Sun descended in resplendent glory and announced:

*“This is my well beloved son in whom I am well pleased”.*

### Christianity today

“And Jesus, when he was baptised, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he (alone) saw the spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him:

“And lo a voice from heaven, saying, *This is my beloved son in whom I am well pleased*” (St. Matthew 3: 16-17; St. Luke 3: 21-22).

As Jesus was not baptised and did not baptise anybody according to the Holy Bible (St. John 4: 2) then all that is in the Holy Bible to the contrary is nothing but a fraud introduced to suit the Pagan converts and to deceive the world!

**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

down on earth to declare  
“*This is my beloved son in  
whom I am well pleased*”  
when God has no son nor  
any other form of equals.  
He  
is One and Alone)”  
(Jeremiah 51: 7).

**Nimrodism**

**Christianity today**

**16. ON CRUCIFIXION**

**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

According to Nazarene tradition it is stated that Judas, the betrayer, whilst going with the Jews to capture Jesus was separated from the group in the darkness. Immediately, by the will of God, his face and features changed to those of Jesus. When Judas came to rejoin the seekers after Jesus, he was captured by the Jews, who believed that he was Jesus in spite of his protests.

This captive explicitly denied before Pilate that he was Jesus. Pilate, being satisfied, refused to take any action. Again before Herod the victim disclaimed that he was

**Nimrodism**

Two of the Cuneiform Tablets, which were dug up by German Excavators in 1903-1904 at Kalah Shargat, the site of ancient Assur ‘one of the cities built by Nimrod’ give the following account of Nimrod’s religious teachings:

Baal is taken prisoner.

Baal is tried in the House on the Mount (the Hall of Justice).

**Christianity today**

The Non-Hebrew versions of the Bible show:

Jesus is taken prisoner. (St. Mark 14: 46; St. John 18: 12).

Jesus is tried in the House of the High Priest and the Hall of Justice (of Pilate). (St. Mark 14: 56-65; 15: 2-15).

Jesus is scourged. (St. Matthew 27: 26).

Together with Jesus, two malefactors are led away and put to death (St. Mark 15: 27-28), another (Barabbas) is released to the people, and thus not taken away with Jesus (St. Matthew 27: 17, 20, 21 and 26-36).

### The original teachings of Jesus

Jesus.

Herod took a basin of water, in accordance with his Jewish Custom, and washed his hands of the accused man's blood to indicate that he found him innocent. This infuriated the persecutors. Subsequently for the safety of the alleged Jesus from the infuriated crowd, he took Judas into protective custody for the night and asked the accusers to appear in Court the next day. By now the Jews knew very well that they would not be able to substantiate their charges against the supposed Jesus and they became desperate. So in the early hours of the morning when prison guards were sleepy, they surprised them, took out the supposed Jesus and put him to death instantaneously in spite of protests till the last moment that he was Judas and not Jesus.

The Holy Bible confirms that Jesus was unhurt

### Nimrodism

Baal is smitten (wounded).

Baal is led away to the Mount. Together with Baal a malefactor is led away and put to death. Another, who is also charged as a malefactor, is released. Thus he is not taken away with Baal.

After Baal has gone to the Mount, the city breaks out into tumult, and fighting takes place in it.

Baal's clothes are carried away.

A woman wipes away the heart's blood of Baal which is flowing from a drawn-out weapon (? spear).

### Christianity today

At the death of Jesus, the veil in the temple is rent, the earth quakes, the rocks are rent asunder, the graves are opened, and the dead come forth into the holy city. (St. Matthew 27: 50-53).

Jesus's robe is divided among the soldiers (St. Matthew 27: 35; St. Mark 15: 24; St. John 19: 24).

A spear is thrust into Jesus' side and there is out flow of water and blood. (St. John 19: 34).

Mary Magdalene and two other women busy themselves with ministering unto him (i.e. washing the wounds and embalming the body). (St. Matthew 27: 55-56, St. Mark 15: 40-41).

Jesus, in the grave, in the rock tomb. (St. Matthew. 27: 60; St Mark 15: 46) goes down into the realm of the dead ("descent into hell" dogma).

Guards are set over the tomb of Jesus. (St. Matthew. 27: 62-66).

**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

and alive after the alleged crucifixion:

“And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

“But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit (because Jesus was supposed to have been killed).

“And he said unto them, why are ye troubled? And why do thoughts arise in your hearts?”

“Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for (a man who has been killed and if he then appears he is) a spirit (and it) hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.

“And when he had thus spoken, he showed them his hands and his feet (to see and feel that they were safe and sound and without any kind of injury of the alleged attack by Jews. Thus he

**Nimrodism**

Baal goes down into the Mount away from the sun and light, disappears from life, and is held fast in the Mount as in a prison.

Guards watch Baal imprisoned in the stronghold of the Mount.

A goddess sits with Baal; she comes to tend him.

They seek for Baal where he is held fast. In particular, a weeping woman searches for him at the “Gate of Burial”.

**Christianity today**

Mary Magdalene and the other Mary sit before the tomb. (St. Matthew. 27: 61).

Mary Magdalene, the other Mary and others came to the tomb to seek Jesus where he is behind the door of the tomb. (St. Matthew 28: 1; St. Mark 16: 1-2; St. John 20: 1).

Mary stands weeping before the empty tomb because they have taken her Lord away. (St. John 20: 11-13).

Jesus’ restoration to life, his rising from the grave (on a morning of dies Solis or Sun-god Sol’s day). (St. Matthew 28: 5-7; St. Mark 16: 6; St. Luke 24: 1-10).

His festival, approximately at the spring equinox, is also celebrated as his triumph over the “Power of Darkness”. (Colossians 1: 12-13).

### The original teachings of Jesus

showed that the Jews had neither succeeded in capturing nor killing him and that it was Judas whom the *Jews had murdered*, as confirmed by Jesus on page 487 of *The Gospel of Barnabas* quoted here before in Column No. 1, of Chapter 12: G-I).

“And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered he said unto them, Have ye here any meat (because when one has been killed or died he cannot anymore eat human food thereafter)?

“And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of a honey comb.

“And he (Jesus) took it, and did eat before them (thus proving before several witnesses as recorded in the Holy Bible that definitely he had not been killed by the Jews and that he was still unharmed and alive, and not risen after death)” (St. Luke 24: 36-43).

### Nimrodism

When he is being carried away, the same lamented: “O, my brother! O, my brother!”

Baal is again restored to life (as the Sun of spring), he comes again out of the Mount.

His chief feast, the BabyIonian New Year’s festival in March at the time of the spring equinox, is celebrated as also his triumph over the Power of Darkness (*cp.* The creation hymn “Once when on high” as the New Year’s festival hymn).

*A few other Pagan references:*

Osiris was betrayed by Typhon slain and dismembered. He was interred but came back to life.

Every year the maidens wept for Tammuz (Ezekiel 8: 14) and then rejoiced over his resurrection.

### Christianity today

Jesus was betrayed by Judas, crucified, interred in the rock grave but he came back to life.

Every year the Christians mourn the crucifixion of Christ and rejoice his resurrection.

The date of the crucifixion is another stumbling block in the way of a seeker of truth,

### The original teachings of Jesus

Jesus was not killed but was raised bodily in live condition after the alleged crucifixion. This is evident from the Holy Bible:

“... While they beheld, he (Jesus) was taken up (by angels); and a cloud received him out of their sight.

“And while they looked steadfastly towards heaven as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel;

“Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? This same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall (on the day of the Battle of Armageddon) so come (back to earth) in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven” (Acts 1: 9-11).

The following passages from the last of the Heavenly Books also confirm that Jesus was never crucified:

### Nimrodism

Easter (*Anglo-saxon Eostre or Ostera*) is nothing more than Ishtar or Semiramis, the virgin mother, Queen of the Heaven, who is also the goddess of Light and Spring.

In her honour the festival of Easter was celebrated everywhere on the first Sunday, after the Full moon about the Spring Equinox for many thousands of years before Jesus (Chapter 5: F-1).

Hot-Cross buns and painted eggs were distributed and eaten in all Middle East countries, including Egypt as also in the British Isles and Ireland. The practice continues even now in Christendom at the time of Easter.

In “*Pagan and Christian Creed*” page 39:

“The triumph of the Sun-god was, therefore and quite naturally

### Christianity today

because here he finds the date of Good Friday corresponds closely with the date of the passions of the various age-old pagan deities. The same is the case with the time of the resurrection. No doubt we find its mention in the Gospel as occurring near the date of the Passover Feast. But this was a time honoured date in the Pagan world. Hence the Gospel writers have copied all this from Nimrod’s teachings.

The movable nature of Easter between March and April according to the moon phases clearly shows that:

### The original teachings of Jesus

“And because of their saying: We slew the Messiah, Jesus son of Mary, Allah’s Messenger —They slew him not nor crucified him, but it appeared so unto them; and lo! those who disagree concerning it are in doubt thereof; they have no knowledge thereof save pursuit of a conjecture; they slew him not for certain.

“But Allah took him up (bodily into the Heaven) unto Himself. Allah is ever Mighty, Wise” (Qur’an 4: 157-158).

“(And remember) when Allah said: O Jesus! Lo! I am gathering thee (from the earth) and causing to ascend (to heaven) unto Me, and am cleansing thee of those (Peter and the dissidents etc.) who disbelieve in thee and the Evangel) and am setting those who follow thee above those who disbelieve until the Day of Resurrection. Then unto Me ye will (all) return, and I shall judge

### Nimrodism

ascribed to the influence of Aries (The Lamb of the Heavens). The lamb thus became the symbol of the Rising Saviour and of his passage from the underworld into the height of heaven”.

In “*The Golden Bough*”, by Frazer, pages 348-356, you read about the Phrygian virgin-born son of god who was bled to death hanging crucified from a pine-tree. His blood renewed the fertility of the earth and thus, brought new life to humanity. He also rose from the dead.

“In celebrating his death and resurrection, his image was fastened to a pine-tree cut in the form of a cross on March 24th and the day was called the “Day of Blood” since on that day the deity was bled to death. The image was then laid in a tomb, when there was wailing and mourning, but the coming night changed their sorrow to joy. The

### Christianity today

a) If the crucifixion of Jesus had really taken place, then this festival would take place on a fixed date. Hence this festival has nothing to do with the crucifixion.

b) Further, it is common knowledge that new life starts budding after the “Full Moon” occurring during the spring Equinox. Hence this festival is nothing but the worship of Ishtar or Eostre or Ostera, the goddess of Light and spring, the ruler of the zodiac, Queen Semiramis, the mother of Nimrod!

c) The lamb is the symbol of the Pagan “Sun god’s son rising from the dead” during the period of Aries or the Constellation of the Lamb. Thus it does not represent Jesus and his crucifixion.

d) The effigy of Jesus on the Cross with a crown of thorns is nothing but a copy of Mithra on the



### The original teachings of Jesus

between you (i.e. the Nazarenes, the true followers of Jesus and the Christians, the followers of Peter and the dissidents and Paul, Marcus etc.) as to that wherein ye used to differ.

“As for those who disbelieve I shall chastise them with a heavy chastisement in the world (in the battle of Armageddon) and the Hereafter; and they will have no helpers (in Jesus).

“As for those who believe and do good works, He will pay them their wages in full. Allah loveth not wrongdoers.

“This (which) We (Allah) recite unto thee (O Muhammad) is a revelation (to you) and a wise reminder (to the Christians)” (Qur’an 3: 55-58).

### Nimrodism

Tomb was found empty on the next morning i.e. 25th March, when the festival of the resurrection was celebrated. These rituals included a baptism of blood and a sacramental meal”.

In Prescott’s “*Conquest of Mexico*” Volume I, page 60, we find that Quetzalcoatl, son of Virgin Chimalman was crucified, when the sun was darkened and withheld its light. His second coming was looked for so eagerly that when Cortez appeared, the Mexicans greeted him as the returning “god”.

Countless such examples from different places and the varied religions of the sun worshippers can be cited here.

### Christianity today

Cross wearing a “Parthian” coronet (this has been already referred to earlier).

This discovery of the cross in Ireland with Mithra crucified clearly proves that the entire story of the crucifixion of Christ has been copied from Mithraism and has nothing to do with The Real Jesus.

The fixing of the particular “Dies Solis” or Sun-god Sol’s day on which Easter is to be celebrated by the Christians was done by Emperor Constantine in 325 A.D. at the Nicaean Council. Hence, this may be taken as the proper origin of the story of the Crucifixion of Christ and his resurrection, as can be seen from the following passage:

“Easter began everywhere more of custom than any commandment either of Christ or any Apostle” (Hist. Ecclo

**The original teachings  
of Jesus**

**Nimrodism**

**Christianity today**

Thus it will be seen that even though Mexico had been cut off from the rest of the world for many thousands of years, perhaps right from the time their group left Babylon, yet their religion of sun-worship has not differed in its main features save and except for the names of the “Virgin Mother” and the “Only Begotten Son” because of God’s curse at the tower of Babel which changed the languages of the people overnight. sias lib. V, Chapter. 22).

**H. The Permanent Sacrifice to Save Sinners**

The present Christian religions seem to be interwoven around King Nimrod’s theory of the “Only begotten son of god come to save sinners by the sacrifice of his life”. It is the “*sine qua non*” of their whole faith. Hence it is necessary to analyse the various aspects of the great sacrifice as found in the Holy Bible.

**1. “The Powers of Darkness”**

The Holy Bible gives us the following information:

“When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched forth no hands against me: *but this is your hour, and the Power of Darkness*”  
(St. Luke 22: 53).

From this it appears beyond doubt that during daylight hours (*i.e.* when the sun is in the heavens) the Jewish Priests had no power to molest “the Christ” but when the sun sinks and darkness sets in, then Christ and his god, evidently “the sun”, are helpless against “*the Powers of Darkness*”!

As far as God Almighty is concerned His Power is the same all the time. It is the same by night as by day. In fact the phenomena of day on half the earth and at the same time night on the other half is caused by the daily rotation of the earth. Hence *Night* in one part or *Day* in another does not make the least difference to God’s powers. Therefore the only natural inference of this quotation from the Holy Bible attributed to Christ can be one of the two undermentioned situations—Which Jesus?:

i. EITHER

That according to the Holy Bible, Christ was a believer in and a worshipper of the sun as his god and his powers in daylight and his helplessness in darkness. Hence the Jesus of the Holy Bible is King Nimrod!

ii. OR

The *REAL JESUS*, which Jesus was a worshipper of the True God Almighty, then the writers of the Gospels in Greek *i.e.* Luke, Marcus *etc.* were sun-worshippers and not worshippers of God Almighty—The God of the *Real Jesus*.

The above quoted statement from the “Holy Bible” attributed to the *Christ* of Constantine’s creation on “the Powers of Darkness” must be false because the *Real Jesus* was not by any stretch of the imagination a believer in the sun as a god or in the imagination “Powers of Darkness” or in the theory of the weakness of his enemies during daylight hour. Such were the fantasies of the sun-worshippers, who were ignorant of the fact that the rays of the sun always covered half the earth with sunshine all the time, whilst the other half was

simultaneously in darkness as the earth rotated.

Therefore the whole story of the crucifixion built upon “the Powers of Darkness” is not only false but also copied from pagan mythologies of Nimrod, the saviour, who had sacrificed his life to a violent death at the hands of Abraham and his God to protect his religion and become the “Sin bearer” come to save the baptised sinners of the world (Chapter 6: I and J). Is not all this nonsense—an absolute insult to the intelligence of the modern educated man and a blasphemy against God Almighty? The *Real Jesus* certainly was not a blasphemer. But Constantine’s Christ, who is none other than Nimrod, was! Which *Jesus* should the Christians follow?

## 2. The Crucifixion

The Greek Holy Bible written for the pagan converts has recorded the incidents which were supposed to have taken place during “the reign of the *Powers of Darkness*” in a single night as follows:

- a. The Last Supper (St. Matthew 26: 26-28; St. Mark 14: 22-24; St. Luke 22: 15-20).
- b. The decision to betray Jesus was taken by Judas only after this “Last Supper” (St. John 13: 2). It must have taken at least about 3/4 hours to come to such a serious decision as to betray one’s teacher and guide, a holy saintly person without any faults and daily performing wonderful miracles!
- c. Judas goes to the Jewish High Priest after the “Last Supper” and asks what he would be paid if he betrayed Jesus (St. Matthew 26: 14-15; St. Mark 14: 10-11; St. Luke 22: 3-5).
- d. After a bargain is made and an agreement has been arrived at, the “High Priest” orders a number of men to be gathered and armed to capture Jesus (St. John 18: 3). A few hours would surely be necessary for all this.
- e. Judas leads these armed men to the various places where Jesus

is likely to be found (St. Matthew 26: 16; St. Luke 22: 6).

- f. The agony in the garden for at least three hours till a very late hour in the night (St. Matthew 26: 36-45; St. Mark 14: 32-41; St. Luke 22: 39-46).
- g. Judas arrives with armed men at this very late hour in the night, possibly 1 a.m. or even later (St. Matthew 26: 47; St. Mark 14: 43; St. Luke 22: 47; St. John 18: 3).
- h. Jesus asked the armed men, “Whom seek ye?” They answered “Jesus of Nazareth”, Jesus replied “I am he”. As soon as Jesus said: “I am he”, all the armed men were hurled backward by an unseen power with such great force that all of them collapsed and fell to the ground—fainted (St. John 18: 4-6).
- i. Jesus is betrayed by the “Kiss” Of Judas (St. Matthew 26: 48-49; St. Mark 14: 44-45; St. Luke 22: 47-48).
- j. Peter chops off the ear of Malchus, the Jewish leader of the men come to arrest Jesus, but Jesus saves by his touch (St. Matthew 26: 51; St. Mark 14: 47; St. Luke 22: 49-51; St. John 18: 10).
- k. In spite of these two miracles *viz.* of the soldiers being hurled backward to the ground and the healing of the chopped-off ear of Malchus, the soldiers, instead of running away to save their lives, and Malchus, instead of being grateful for the miraculous healing of his chopped-off ear, have the audacity to arrest and bind Jesus! Is that what the Holy Bible wants us to believe? (St. Mark 14: 46; St. John 18: 12).
- l. Jesus is taken first to the house of Annas (St. John 18: 13).
- m. Jesus is tried by Annas and interrogated (St. John 18: 19-23) for several hours. What could be the time of the same night when Jesus is sent to the High Priest?
- n. Jesus is bound by Annas and sent to the palace of Caiaphas,

the high priest (St. John 18: 24).

- o. Caiaphas the Chief Priest then gathers the elders from amongst the Jews and counsels that it would be expedient if one man should die (St. John 18: 14). All this must have taken several hours. What could be the time of the same night?
- p. Thereupon the Chief Priest, the elders and all the Council tried to collect evidence against Jesus to put him to death but found none (St. Mark 14: 55). This must have taken them several hours. What could be the time of the same night?
- q. They blindfolded Jesus and struck him on his face saying "Prophecy, who it is that smote thee?" (St. Luke 22: 64). Thus they tortured Jesus for several hours in an effort to break him. What could be the time of the same night?
- r. Having failed to break the patience of Jesus, they decided to gather false evidence against Jesus. So they sent for dishonourable witnesses at this time of the dead of night! Many witnesses were gathered from their houses after being woken up from their sleep at the dead of night and brought to the High Priest (St. Matthew 26: 59-60; St. Mark 14: 56). Then they were taught by the High Priest what to say but when they came before Jesus, they declined to give false evidence. This was a process taking many hours of coaching for each person (St. Matthew 26: 60). The night of the *Powers of Darkness* of a single night must have continued for at least 100/150 hours to enable so much to be done! Is that what the Holy Bible wants us to believe?
- s. Under the Jewish Law, before any man can be accused of any crime at least two witnesses are required (Deuteronomy 17: 6 and 19: 15). Hence at least two witnesses have to be forced or induced to give false evidence against Jesus. At long last two persons agree to make false statements (St. Matthew 26:60).
- t. But many of the testimonies of these two perjurers were

contradictory and did not agree (St. Mark 14:56). This must have taken at least another 8 or 10 hours—all during the *Powers of Darkness* of a single night—The special night with its “*Powers of Darkness*” during which the “god of the Christ” (*i.e.* the sun) was helpless! The night still continued in spite of all these many hours of the Powers of Darkness and yet the sun was not late in rising the next morning!

- u. Then followed a lengthy examination of Jesus, arguments and counter arguments *etc.* on how to frame charges of death against Jesus that would convince the Roman Governor. Say another 10/15 hours were necessary, yet the single night still continued according to what the Holy Bible wants us to accept! Nevertheless the sun was not late in rising the next morning!
- v. Thereupon the Jews at the palace of the High Priest start hitting Jesus on the face, spitting upon him and tormenting him (St. Matt. 26: 67; St. Luke 22:63). All this must have taken some time. The single night very strangely still persisted according to the Holy Bible!
- w. At last in desperation the Jewish High Priest frames a charge of blasphemy and demands that Jesus be put to death (St. Luke 22 : 70-71). The framing of the charge must have taken another several hours. The single night still endured with its “*Powers of Darkness*”.
- x. Jesus is bound and led to the Hall of Judgment (St. John 18: 28) at this unearthly hour of the night, when no Court of Justice is held! According to the Holy Bible, the time was early in the night and before they had their meal of the “Feast of the Passover” (St. John 18:28).
- y. The Holy Bible wants us to believe that at this unnatural hour of the night, when the world is asleep, Pilate without being woken up comes out and the Jews bring various charges against Jesus during the period of the “*Powers of Darkness*” of

a single night. Pilate questions Jesus. Jesus answers, and after a detailed examination of the charges Pilate pronounces Jesus innocent (St. Luke 23: 1-4). The Bible wants us to believe that this Court was held in the dead of night! Further, it took many hours and yet the “*Powers of Darkness* of this special night continued”! Also the sun was not late in rising on the next morning!

- z. The Jews became desperate and accused Jesus of inciting revolt throughout Jewry, beginning from Galilee to this place *i.e.* Jerusalem (St. Luke 23:5).
- aa. When Pilate heard the name of Galilee he transferred the case to Herod for Galilee was in Herod’s jurisdiction (St. Luke 23: 6-7).
- bb. Jesus is then taken under escort during the “*Powers of Darkness*” of the single night and produced before Herod at that unearthly hour of the night. Herod very strangely happens to be in Jerusalem on that night instead of somewhere in Galilee, the area under his jurisdiction! Herod is not woken up! Herod is very glad to see Jesus, as he had been anxious and desirous of meeting Jesus for whom he had the highest regard and respect (St. Luke 23: 8).
- cc. The Chief Priest and the scribes vehemently accused Jesus before Herod (St. Luke 23:10).
- dd. Herod questioned Jesus for a long time out could not find any sign of guilt!
- ee. Herod, a king of the Jews, puts his gorgeous royal purple robe on Jesus to show his respect for this great man whom he found innocent. After that the Gospel writers want the world to believe that Herod had a sudden fit of insanity for no rhyme or reason, because Herod and his men of war, we find, mocked Jesus at that unearthly hour of the night and sent him back to



Pilate, instead of setting Jesus free and punishing the wicked Jews for bringing false accusations against an innocent man (St. Luke 23:11).

- ff. When Pilate found that Jesus was returned again in the dead of night wearing the royal purple robe to show that he was found innocent by the man under whose jurisdiction Jesus was, Pilate was obliged under Roman Law to set him free, as he was found to be innocent.
- gg. When Jesus was brought for trial, the wife of Pilate sent an urgent message to Pilate that she had had a dream which showed that if the innocent Jesus was not set free then they would suffer severely. This request from one's wife would be an imperative command for any sane husband (St. Matthew 27:19).
- hh. According to Roman Law under these circumstances Pilate was obliged not only to have set Jesus free but also to have punished the Jews for bringing a false charge. Instead the Greek Gospel writers for the pagan converts want the world to believe that for no rhyme or reason Pilate also got a sudden, inexplicable attack of insanity and he offered to set the innocent Jesus free in lieu of Barabbas, a criminal! (St. Matthew 27:21; St. Mark 15:7-11). How absurd indeed!
- ii. The Jews refuse this offer and ask that Jesus be killed and Barabbas, the murderer, released (St. Matthew 27:21; St. Luke 23:18). All this during the "*Powers of Darkness*" of a single night! which must have been at least 200/250 hours long instead of the usual 12 hours at the time of spring equinoxes!
- jj. The Gospel writers then want to make the world believe that the superstitious Roman Governor Pilate gets a further fit of temporary insanity. That he ignores his beloved wife and the dream of warning. That he is prepared to get himself punished severely and his family ruined by ordering the crucifixion of

the innocent Jesus! The crown of thorns, the scourging *etc.* must have taken several hours. All this after his wife had warned her husband to release the innocent Jesus or suffer dire consequences! Hence it was impossible for Pilate to allow the murder of Jesus under any of these circumstances. Yet The Holy Bible wants the world to believe it was so (St. Mark 15:12-20).

- kk. The length of the night during the spring Equinox is twelve hours all over the world and not 250/300 hours as the writers of the Holy Bible seem to pretend as without that, so much could not have possibly taken place during the "*Powers of Darkness*".
- ll. The Holy Bible has made no claims that this night was an exceptionally long night lasting for say about 300 hours or having the length of a month of nights without the sun rising even once in all this period, instead of only 12 hours as is a fact.
- mm. Therefore the multiplicity of the various events recorded in the gospel as taking place during the "*Rule of the Powers of Darkness*" of one single night makes the whole Gospel story not only an impossibility but also a complete absurdity and a clear fabrication. It does bring to mind the following advice of Jesus himself:

"But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!" (St. Matthew 6:23).

It was God's plan to save Jesus from the ignominy of death at the hands, of his enemies! The Bible disgraces Jesus with a punishment reserved only for criminals by giving him a death on the Cross, but The Gospel of Barnabas and the Qur'an give honour to Jesus that God saved Jesus from death on the Cross by replacing him with Judas and instead raised Jesus to heaven alive before a vast multitude. This theory of Jesus' substitution by Judas was accepted by numerous followers of Jesus.

Some of them were known as:

1. The early Basilidians
2. The Veselins
3. The Corinthians
4. The Carpocrates
5. The Dositors
6. The Armingus
7. The Nazarenes

These early converts to the faith of Jesus knew very well what had actually taken place before their very eyes as against the invention of the story of the *Crucifixion of Christ* some 300 years later!

It is now for the intellectuals to decide which of the theories they are going to follow?

EITHER

Those of the early followers of Jesus who maintain that *The Real Jesus was never crucified but bodily lifted to heaven in a live condition* (Acts 1 :9).

OR

Nimrod's theory that he sacrificed his life to save his baptised sinners *i.e.*—What Constantine has incorporated into the Greek Holy Bible and that he was raised up from the dead in a spiritual condition as the "*Ares*" or the lamb of the heavens?

### **3. St. Peter Denies Jesus Six Times in a single Night!**

The Holy Bible tells us that on this eventful night, at two different places St. Peter denied six times all connections with Jesus as under:

Jesus is taken first to the house of Annas (St. John 18:13) and is questioned there (St. John 18:19-23).

St. Peter denied Jesus three times at the house of Annas before the cock crowed twice (St. John 18:16-18, 25-27).

Jesus is bound by Annas and sent to the palace of Caiaphas, the High Priest (St. John 18:24).

St. Peter followed Jesus to the palace of Caiaphas (St. Matthew 26:57-58; St. Mark 14:54).

For the second time the same night St. Peter once again denied thrice all connections with Jesus but this time at the palace of Caiaphas and that these three denials were made again before the cock crowed twice (St. Matthew 26: 69-75; St. Mark 14: 66-72).

Therefore according to the Holy Bible Peter denies Jesus thrice before the cock crows twice on two separate occasions at two different places and at two different parts of the night. Once he rejects him at the house of Annas between 1 a.m. and 3 a.m. Then he sits down and cries and again thrice before the cock crows twice at the palace of Caiaphas between 4 a.m. and 6 a.m. during the same night and finally Peter sits down and cries again. For such an incident to take place once in a lifetime is more than an improbability but to take place twice according to the Greek Bible in the same night with Peter denying Jesus six times and crying after each of these two sets of incidents makes it absolutely unbelievable.

Is it logically possible for such an important personage as the saint and founder of the Brethren Churches to have denied Jesus six times in the same night? And that also twice between the times the cock crowed twice at each of the two separate places? Can such ten coincidences have taken place twice in the same night in two different sets of five incidents each at two different spots?

To any intelligent mind, are not such records of six denials and four cock crowing's all so well synchronised at two diverse sites in a single night a basic impossibility?

In any case, the Holy Bible makes it clear that Jesus has warned that anybody denying him even once before the public would be

disowned by Jesus in Heaven before God in the following passage:

“But whosoever shall deny me (Jesus) before men (*i.e.* in public), him will I deny before my Father which is in heaven” (St. Matthew 10:33).

Therefore according to the Holy Bible, St. Peter is a *person* who has not only been disowned by Jesus but he was also warned by Jesus in his original name of Simon that Satan was going to have him:

“And the lord (Jesus) said, Simon, Simon, behold; Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat” (St. Luke 22:31).

When Peter failed to improve, then Jesus declared as under:

“But he (Jesus) turned, and said unto *Peter*, *Get thee behind me, Satan*: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not things that be of God, but those that be of men.

“For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?” (St. Matthew 16: 23, 26).

#### **4. Courts of Justice do not function at night!**

Courts do not function at the dead of night to try criminals! Hence the Gospel story is inconceivable and devoid of any truth!

#### **5. False witnesses at dead of night**

The calling of perjurers at 4 a.m. and the arrival of many of them after many hours of search makes it basically impossible for it to have happened during the “*Powers of Darkness*” of a single night. Further, it is quite absurd to suggest that the High Priest instead of praying and preaching was spending his life in maintaining a list of false witnesses, *Who Testify in The Courts*, with their residential addresses! Hence to call “many” false witnesses as described in the Bible would ordinarily take many nights. Therefore it is quite impossible for so many witnesses to have appeared in a single night. Hence this part of the Bible is also basically untrue.

## **6. The unexplained and absurd fit of sudden insanity of both Herod and Pilate during the “Powers of Darkness”!**

The insane orders of Herod and Pilate only as far as Jesus is concerned during the “*Powers of Darkness*” of the particular night further make the Gospel story a complete fiction and an absurdity. Neither of the two men were “MAD”! Both revered Jesus as shown earlier from the Holy Bible. The question of their torturing Jesus or wanting to exchange him for a criminal and not putting the Jewish High Priest up for trial for bringing false charges against Jesus during the night are all unacceptable to the educated mind of any intellectual.

## **7. The belated admission exonerating the Jews**

Recently the Pope has exonerated the Jews from the charge of crucifying Jesus. This could not have been possible if Jesus had in fact been crucified!

## **8. The Falsity of the Crucifixion**

The whole story of the Crucifixion of Christ and that “Christ gave his life to save sinners” on account of which he would be sitting on the right hand of God dispensing judgment is false as is proved by the following statement of Jesus found in the Nazarene Scripts discovered at Constantinople:

“I shall not judge men or call them to account. He, who sent me, will do this”.

(Page 58, “*Time*” The Weekly Magazine—Asia Edition dated 15th July 1966). This is also confirmed in the Holy Bible as follows:

“And if any man hear my words (Evangel), and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world ...

“He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one (God) that judgeth him ...” (St. John 12: 47-48).

## **9. Origin of Easter according to the Church**

“Easter (the celebration) began everywhere more of (Pagan) custom than any commandment either of Christ or any Apostle” (Hist. Ecclesiast. lib. V, Chapter 22).

## **10. The origin of The Crucifixion of Christ on The Cross**

The discovery in Ireland of an effigy of Mithra hung on a cross wearing a Parthian coronet shows clearly that this is the origin of the story of Christ being hung on a cross wearing a crown of thorns. This theory had been in existence for many centuries before the birth of Jesus. This is the true origin of the Crucifixion of Christ which was incorporated into Christianity when it adopted the “Cross” of Constantine *i.e.* in or after 325 A.D.

## **11. The Revelation by European Research Scholar**

“*The Golden Bough*” by Sir James G. Frazer—Abridged Edition published 1953, pages 350-361 reads:

“Thus it appears that the Christian Church chose to celebrate the birthday of its Founder on the twenty-fifth of December in order to transfer the devotion of the heathen from the Sun to him, who was called the Son of Righteousness. If that was so, there can be no intrinsic improbability in the conjecture that motives of the same sort may have led the ecclesiastical authorities to assimilate the Easter Festival of the death and resurrection of their Lord to the festival of the death and resurrection of another Asiatic god which fell at the same season. Now the Easter rites still observed in Greece, Sicily, and Southern Italy bear in some respects a striking resemblance to the rites of Adonis, and I have suggested that the Church may have consciously adapted the new festival to its heathen predecessor for the sake of winning souls to Christ. But this adaptation probably took place in the Greek-speaking rather than in the Latin-speaking parts of the ancient world; for the worship of Adonis, while it flourished among the Greeks, appears to have made

little impression on Rome and the West. Certainly it never formed part of the official Roman religion. The place which it might have taken in the affections of the Vulgar was already occupied by the similar but more barbarous worship of Attis and the Great Mother. The death and resurrection of Attis were officially celebrated at Rome on the twenty-fourth and twenty-fifth of March, the latter being regarded as the spring equinox, and therefore as the most appropriate day for the revival of a god of vegetation, who had been dead or sleeping throughout the winter. But according to an ancient and widespread tradition Christ suffered on the twenty-fifth of March, and accordingly some Christians regularly celebrated the Crucifixion on that day without any regard to the state of the moon. This custom was certainly observed in Phrygia, Cappadocia, and Gaul, and there seem to be grounds for thinking that at one time it was followed also in Rome. Thus the tradition which placed the death of Christ on the twenty-fifth of March was ancient and deeply rooted. It is all the more remarkable because astronomical considerations prove that it can have had no historical foundation. The inference appears to be inevitable that the Passion of Christ must have been arbitrarily referred to that date in order to harmonise with an older festival of the spring equinox. This is the view of the learned ecclesiastical historian Mgr. Duchesne, who points out that the death of the Saviour was thus made to fall upon the very day, on which, according to a widespread belief, the world had been created. But the resurrection of Attis, who combined in himself the characters of the divine Father and the divine son, was officially celebrated at Rome on the same day. When we remember that the festival of St. George in April has replaced the ancient pagan festival of the Parilia; that the festival of St. John the Baptist in June has succeeded to a heathen Midsummer festival of water; that the festival of the Assumption of the Virgin in August has ousted the festival of Diana; that the feast of All Souls in November is a continuation of an old heathen feast of the dead; and the Nativity of Christ himself was assigned to the winter solstice in December because that day was deemed the Nativity of the Sun; we can hardly be thought rash or unreasonable in conjecturing that the other cardinal festival of the Christian church—the solemnisation of



Easter—may have been in like manner, and from like motives of edification, adapted to a similar celebration of the Phrygian god Attis at the vernal equinox.

“At least it is a remarkable coincidence, if it is nothing more, that the Christian and the heathen festivals of the divine death and resurrection should have been solemnised at the same season and in the same places. For the places which celebrated the death of Christ at the spring equinox were Phrygia, Gaul, and apparently Rome, that is, the very regions in which the worship of Attis either originated or struck deepest root. It is difficult to regard the coincidence as purely accidental. If the vernal equinox, the season at which in the temperate regions the whole face of nature testifies to a fresh outburst of vital energy, had been viewed from of old as the time when the world was annually created afresh in the resurrection of a god, nothing could be more natural than to place the resurrection of the new deity at the same cardinal point of the year. Only it is to be observed that if the death of Christ was dated on the twenty-fifth of March, his resurrection, according to Christian tradition, must have happened on the twenty-seventh of March, which is just two days later than the vernal equinox of the Julian calendar and the resurrection of Attis. A similar displacement of two days in the adjustment of Christian to heathen celebrations occurs in the festivals of St. George and the Assumption of the Virgin. However, another Christian tradition, followed by Lactantius and perhaps by the practice of the Church in Gaul, placed the death of Christ on the twenty-third and his resurrection on the twenty-fifth of March. If that was so his resurrection coincided exactly with the resurrection of Attis”.

“Attis” is one of the names of Nimrod the only begotten son of sun god as will be seen from Chapter 5: F-1, which got changed to this name due to the curse of God at the Tower of Babel (Chapter 5: G). Such findings have been recorded by numerous European Scholars.

## I. Mithraism

- i. “Mithra” in Sanskrit stands for benefactor or saviour. Thus Mithra or Mithras is one of the names of Nimrod which was changed by the people of Persia with the alteration in their language owing to the curse at the Tower of Babel.

It is a common fact that when anyone becomes famous, others try to copy him hoping that some of that fame may also come to them through this imitation.

The impact of the spread of Buddhism on Persia was such that they incorporated all the eight beatitudes and the various incidents in the life of Buddha into their Nimrodic faith. This hybrid religion became known as Mithraism. From here it spread throughout the Roman Empire and even into Britain by 70 B.C. Thus developed in the Middle East and the Roman Empire the cult of the enlightened celibate sage with his hundreds of disciples. This is the origin of the system of patron Saints, in whose names temples were built and schools started. This is the background in which Christianity has had its origin as pointed out earlier (Chapter 9: C).

- ii. On page 1350 of Volume III, of the *Readers Digest Great Encyclopaedic Dictionary*, First Edition, published in 1964 one reads:

“MITHRAS.—Ancient Persian deity, associated with the sun or light. His cult is said to have been brought to Rome in the middle of the 1st c. B.C. Later it became widely popular, especially in the army ...”

- iii. On Page 569 of Volume II, of *ibid* one finds:

“MITHRAISM.—The religion of the worshippers of Mithras, which was introduced among the Romans under the Empire and spread over most of North and West Europe during the first three centuries A.D. becoming the Principal rival at that

time of Christianity”.

## J. Buddhistic teachings incorporated into Christianity

On Pages 162-163 of “*The Buddha, The Prophet and The Christ*” by F. H. Hilliard, Ph.D., B. D., (London) published by George Allen & Unwin Ltd., London in 1956 you read:

“The internal evidence for a literary connection between the Buddhist and Christian traditions has been reviewed to some extent by Thomas (in Chapter 17 of “*The Life of Buddha*”). There are quite striking parallels which have understandably given rise to the argument that one tradition has influenced the other. In both Buddhist and Christian scriptures we have noticed stories of the miraculous birth of the Founder, of his presentation to a holy man, of his temptation, of his transfiguration, and of miracles, including that of the disciple walking on the water. If, however, Dr. Law’s conclusions as to the dates of the formation of the Pali canon are accepted, it seems clear on the whole any suggestion of the Pali writings having been influenced by the Christian scriptures must be ruled out, for it would appear that the final form of the Pali canon was fixed before the end of the first century B.C. (see Dr. B. C. Law’s “*A History of Pali Literature*” published in London, 1933)”.

Hereafter are given a few comparisons of the Buddhistic teachings which have become incorporated into Christianity through Mithraism in the course of time:

Buddhism	Christianity
The birth of Buddha was heralded in the heavens by a star which was seen rising on the Eastern horizon. It is called the “Messianic Star”.	The birth of Jesus was announced in the heavens by “his star” (St. Matthew 2: 2), which was seen rising in the East. It might properly be called the “Messianic Star” (St. Matthew 2: 9-10).
Demonstrations of celestial delight were manifest at the birth of Buddha. The Devas in heaven and earth sang praises to the “Enlightened One” and said: “Today, Bodhisatwa is born on	Demonstrations of heavenly joy were manifest at the birth of Jesus. The angels in heaven and earth sang

earth, to give joy and peace to men and Devas; to shed light in the dark places, and give sight to the blind”.

Buddha was visited by wise men who recognised in this marvellous infant all the characteristics of “a superior being”.

The infant Buddha was presented with “costly jewels and precious substances”.

“When twelve years old, the child Buddha is presented in the temple. He explains and asks learned questions; he excels all those who enter into competition with him”.

When Buddha was about to go forth “to adopt a religious life”, Mara appeared before him, to tempt him.

Mara said unto Buddha: “Go not forth to adopt a religious life, and in seven days thou shalt become an emperor of the world”.

Buddha would not heed the words of the Evil One, and said to him: “Get thee away from me”.

After Mara had left Buddha, “the skies rained heavenly flowers, and delicious odours pervaded the air”.

Buddha fasted for a long period.

“On one occasion toward the end of his life on earth, Gautama Buddha is reported to have been transfigured.

Through Prayers in the name of Buddha, his followers expect to

praises to the “Blessed One”, saying “Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men” (St. Luke 2:13-14).

Jesus was visited by wise men who recognised in this marvellous infant all the characteristics of divinity (St. Matthew 2: 1 and 9-11).

The infant Jesus was presented with gifts of gold, frankincense, and myrrh (St. Matthew 2: 11).

And when he was twelve years old, they brought him to (the temple at) Jerusalem ... While in the temple among the doctors and elders, and learned men of Israel, he posed several questions of learning, and also gave them answers (St. Luke 2: 42-52).

When Jesus was about to begin his preaching’s the devil appeared before him, to tempt him (St. Matthew 4: 1-7; St. Luke 4: 1-5).

The devil said to Jesus: “If thou wilt fall down and worship me, I will give thee all the kingdoms of the world” (St. Matthew 4: 8-9; St. Luke 4: 5-7).

Jesus would not heed the words of the Evil One, and said to him: “Get thee behind me, Satan” (St. Luke 4: 8; St. Matthew 4: 10).

After the devil had left Jesus, “angels came and ministered unto him” (St. Matthew 4: 11).

Jesus fasted forty days and nights (St. Matthew 4: 2; St. Luke 4: 2).

receive their rewards.

“Buddha was described as a superhuman organ of light, to whom a superhuman organ of darkness, Mara or Naga, the Evil Serpent, was opposed.”

One day Ananda, the disciple of Buddha, after a long walk in the country, meets with Matangi, a woman of the low caste of the Kendalas, near a well, and asks her for some water to drink.

She tells him what she is, and that she must not come near him. But he replies: “My sister, I ask not for thy caste nor thy family, I ask only for a draught of water”. Afterwards she became a disciple of Buddha.

According to Buddha, the motive of all our actions should be piety or love for our neighbour.

During the early part of his career as a teacher, Buddha went to the city of Benaras, and there delivered a discourse, by which Kondanya, and afterwards four others were induced to become his disciples. From that period, whenever he preached, multitudes of men and women embraced his doctrines. This multitude comprised many thousands of followers at the time of his death.

Those who became disciples of Buddha were told that they must “renounce the world”, give up all their riches, and avow poverty just as

On one occasion during his sojourn on earth, Jesus is reported to have been transfigured: “Jesus taketh with him Peter, James, and John, and leadeth them up into an high mountain apart by themselves: and was transfigured before them: And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow” (St. Mark 9: 2-3).

Through prayers in the name of Jesus, his followers expect to receive the rewards of paradise (Acts 16: 30-31).

Jesus was described as a superhuman organ of light “the Sun of Righteousness” as opposed by “the old Serpent, the Satan, hinderer, and adversary”.

One day Jesus, after a long walk, cometh to the city of Samaria and being wearied with his journey, sat on a well. While there, a woman of Samaria came to draw water, and Jesus said unto her: “Give me to drink” (St. John 4: 6-7).

“Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him; How is it that thou, being a Jew, asketh drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? For the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans”. Afterwards she along with all the Samaritans of her town became the believers of Jesus. (St. John 4: 5-42).

But Jesus did not convert a single person who was not a Jew. Hence this proves the apparent forgeries copied from Buddhism.

Buddha had done!

When Buddha's time on earth was about to terminate, he, "foreseeing the things that would happen in future times", said to Ananda, his disciple, "Ananda when I am gone, you must not think there is no Buddha: the discourses I have delivered, and the precepts I have enjoined must be my successors, or representatives and be to you as Buddha".

In the Buddhist Somadeva the following is found "To give away our riches is considered the most difficult virtue in the world; he who gives away his riches is like a man who gives away his life: for our very life seem to cling to our riches. But Buddha, when his mind was moved by piety, gave his life like grass, for the sake of others; Why should we think of miserable riches: By this exalted virtue, Buddha, when he was freed from all desires, attained supernatural knowledge, entering into Buddhahood. Therefore, let a wise man, after he has turned away his desires from all pleasures, do good to all beings, even unto sacrificing his own life, that thus he may attain true knowledge".

Buddha's aim was to establish a "Religious Kingdom".

Buddha said: I now desire to turn the wheel of the excellent law. For this purpose am I going to the city of Benares, to give light to those enshrouded in darkness, and to open

"But I (Jesus) say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you;" (St. Matthew 5: 44).

During the early part of his career as a teacher, Jesus went to the city of Capernaum, and there delivered a discourse. It was at this time that four fishermen were induced to become his disciples. From that period, whenever he preached, multitudes of men and women followed his doctrines (St. Matthew 4: 13-25).

This huge multitude of men and women numbered as few as only 120 at the time when Jesus was lifted to heaven (Acts 1: 15) and not many thousands as in the case of Buddha upon his death. Hence the false statement of huge multitudes of men and women embracing the doctrines of Jesus brings out glaringly the forgeries incorporate into the Holy Bible from Buddhism. They are not facts concerned with Jesus in any way!

Those who became the disciples of Jesus were told that they must renounce the world, give up all thoughts of worldly riches, and avow poverty (St. Matthew 6: 24-34).

When Jesus' time on earth was about to end, he told of the things that would happen in future times, and said unto his disciples:

"Go ye therefore, and teach all nations

the gate of Immortality to man”.

Buddha said: “Though the heavens were to fall to earth, and the great world be swallowed up and pass away: Though Mount Sumera were to crack to pieces, and the great ocean be dried up, yet, Ananda, be assured, the words of Buddha are true”.

Buddha said: “There is no passion more violent than voluptuousness. Happily there is but one such passion. If there were two, not a man in the whole universe could follow the truth. Beware of fixing your eyes upon women. If you find yourself in their company, let it be as though you were not present. If you speak with them, guard well your hearts”.

Buddha said: “A wise man should avoid married life as if it were a burning pit of live coals. Those who cannot live in a state of celibacy should not commit adultery”.

“Buddhism is convinced that if a man reaps sorrow, disappointment, pain, he himself, and no other, must at some time have sown folly, error, sin; and if not in this life then in some former birth”.

Buddha knew the thoughts of others: “By directing his mind to the thoughts of others, he can know the thoughts of all beings”.

When Buddha was about to become an ascetic, and while riding on the horse “Kantako”, his path was strewn

...”

“Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen” (St. Matthew 28: 19-20).

“And behold, one came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life?”

“Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give (it) to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow me” (St. Matthew 19: 16 and 21).

“From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand” (St. Matthew 4: 17).

Jesus, after his temptation by the devil, went and dwelt in the city of Capernaum. “The people which sat in darkness saw great light; and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death light is sprung up” (St. Matthew 4: 16).

“Verily I say unto you ... Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away” (St. Luke 21: 32-33).

“Ye have heard” Jesus is supposed to have said “that it was said of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery:

“But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her

with flowers, scattered there by the Devas.

### The Eight Beatitudes

1. "BLESSED are they who know and whose knowledge is free from delusion and superstition.
2. "BLESSED are they, who speak what they know in a kindly, open and truthful manner.
3. "BLESSED are they, whose conduct is peaceful, honest and pure.
4. "BLESSED are they, who earn their livelihood in a way that brings no hurt or danger to any living things.
5. "BLESSED are the tranquil, who have cast out ill will, pride, self-righteousness, and put in their place love, piety and sympathy.
6. "BLESSED are ye when ye direct your best efforts to self-training and self-control.
7. "BLESSED beyond measure are ye, when ye are by this means unwrapped from the limits of selfhood.
8. "And BLESSED, finally are they who find rapture in contemplating what is deeply and really true about this world and our life in it." (*Reader's Digest*—August, 1955, page 33, "Buddha, The Enlightened One" by Max Eastman).

hath committed adultery with her already in his heart" (St. Matthew 5: 27-28).

"It is good for a man not to touch a woman"

"But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn"

"To avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband" (1 Corinthians 7: 1, 9, 2).

"And as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was blind from his birth. And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind?" (St. John 9; 1-2).

Jesus could read the thoughts of others. By directing his mind to the thoughts of others, he knew the thoughts of all-beings.

When Jesus was entering Jerusalem, riding on an ass "And many spread their garments in the way (in honour of Jesus to ride over them): and others cut down branches off the trees, and strawed them in the way (of Jesus to ride over them)" (St. Mark 11: 7-8).

1. "BLESSED are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven" (St. Matthew 5: 3).
2. "BLESSED are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted" (St. Matthew 5: 4).
3. "BLESSED are the meek: for they



- shall inherit the earth” (St. Matthew 5: 5).
4. “BLESSED are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled” (St. Matthew 5: 6).
  5. “BLESSED are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy” (St. Matthew 5: 7).
  6. “BLESSED are the pure in heart: for they shall see God” (St. Matthew 5: 8).
  7. “BLESSED are the peacemakers for they shall be called the children of god” (St. Matthew 5: 9).
  8. “BLESSED are they which are persecuted for righteousness sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven” (St. Matthew 5: 10).

## **K. Conclusions on the Teachings of the Holy Jesus**

It is well known that Jesus began to preach when he was about 30 years old (St. Luke 3: 23).

Jesus was lifted bodily to heaven in the presence of his disciples at the age of about 33 years (Acts 1: 9-11).

Thus Jesus preached in the world for a brief period of about 3 years only, before being lifted bodily to heaven!

In such a short duration it was impossible for Jesus to have taught two contradictory doctrines simultaneously *viz*:

- a. The corrected version of the Old Testament.
- b. Its contradiction *i.e.* Paganism of Nimrod’s Sun-worship that was prevalent under the name of Mithraism with its blasphemies, idolatries and mockeries of God’s Laws!

Therefore the question to be decided by the readers for themselves is: What did the *Real Jesus teach*?

a) Were they God's Laws?

or

b) Are God's Laws a curse?

*Immediately the question arises: Which Jesus to accept?*

### **1. The Admission of the Church Authorities**

The research carried out by the Authorities of the Churches confirm that all the present day beliefs of the Christians have originated from pagan sources. For example, the book entitled "*Essay on the Development of the Christian Doctrine*" published in 1878 by John Henry Newman who was made a Cardinal in 1879 by Pope Leo XII reads as follows in Chapter 8 of the 1881 edition, pages 355, 371 and 373.

"Confiding then in the power of Christianity to resist the infection of evil, and to transmute the very instruments and appendages of demon worship to an evangelical use, and feeling also that these usages had originally come from primitive revelations and from the instinct of nature, though they had been corrupted; and that they must invent what they needed, if they did not use what they found; *and that they were moreover possessed of the very archetypes, of which paganism attempted the shadows; the rulers of the Church from early times were prepared, should the occasion arise, to adopt, to imitate, or sanction the existing rites and customs of the populace, as well as the philosophy of the educated class*".

"The use of temples, and these dedicated to particular saints, and ornamented on occasions with branches of trees; incense, lamps, and candles; votive offerings on recovery from illness; holy water; asylums; holy days and seasons, use of calendars, processions, blessings on the fields, sacerdotal vestments, the tonsure, the ring in marriage, turning to the East, images at a later date, perhaps the

ecclesiastical chant, and the Kyrie Eleison, *are all of pagan origin, and sanctified by adoption into the church*".

After this candid admission by the authorities of the Christian Churches it is absolutely clear and well established now that the religion presently being preached by the Christian churches is nothing but the "*religion of Babylon*" which was invented by the cursed King Nimrod, "the mighty hunter in rebellion against God" into which have been incorporated, with the passage of time, the teachings of Buddhism. This combined religion was known as Mithraism since more than a century before the birth of Jesus. From 325 A.D. when the Greek Gospels were written, after the destruction of many of the Hebrew Originals, the religion has been renamed after Christos or Christ, the word coined by St. Constantine, the Great Roman Emperor and is known today as Christianity.

## **2. Has the Church the Right to Sanctify Blasphemy, Idolatry and Wickedness under the Holy Bible?**

But do such blasphemies, mockeries and wickedness according to the Holy Bible become consecrated and holy just because the Church has sanctified them?

Let us read a few passages from the New Testament:

"Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words ...

"He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word (*i.e.* the Evangel in Hebrew) which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which (He) sent (to) me (through Angel Gabriel)" (St. John 14: 23-24).

"If ye love me, keep my commandments" (St. John 14: 15).

"For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, if any man (*i.e.* Peter or Paul or Marcus or Luke or Constantine or the Church of Christ or anybody else) shall add unto these things (*i.e.* the Hebrew Evangel dictated by Jesus during his

life), God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book:

“And if any man shall take away from the words of the book (of Jesus *i.e.* ‘Evangel) of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of (those blessed with eternal) life (of happiness) and out of the holy city (*i.e.* Heaven), and from the things which are written in this book (the Hebrew Evangel)” (Revelation 22: 18-19).

From these quotations it is evident that the authorities of the Christian Churches, if they are followers of the *Real Jesus*, then they have no right whatsoever to change even a single word from the original *Hebrew Evangel* dictated by Jesus during his life and recorded by the several Jewish scribes in Aramaic script, some of which were burnt and destroyed in 325. A.D., whilst others were misplaced or lost. But the Gospel of Barnabas, one of the Original Hebrew Evangel, though still in existence, is being deliberately suppressed, very surprisingly by the Church of Christ!

### 3. The Contentions of the Church

The contentions of Constantine’s *Jesus, the Christ of Society*, can be summed up as follows:

- a. To mock God by calling His Laws a curse contrary to the teachings of the *Real Jesus*.
- b. To disobey God’s laws and say Christ (*i.e.* Nimrod) has absolved us from the curse of the Laws of God in contradiction to the teachings of the Jesus who is son of the Virgin Mary, a human being, hence not the son of a God!
- c. Good deeds are not relevant. The followers of Christ live by the faith that Christ, the son of God, by the sacrifice of his life had redeemed those sinners, who have baptised themselves and eaten sacramental meals, drunk wine and enjoyed swine-flesh! Thus they did everything contrary to the teachings of Jesus of Nazareth who was the son of a human being *viz:* the Virgin

Mary, hence not the son of a God.

- d. To commit idolatry by praying before “Idols” even though this was forbidden by the *Real Jesus*!
- e. To break the everlasting law of circumcision which Jesus, the Jew, and all his disciples, who were also Jews, observed.
- f. To commit blasphemy against God by setting up rivals as the “Son of God” and “Trinity in Unity”—the teachings of Nimrod!
- g. To eat Abraham’s flesh as swine flesh because he is the enemy who destroyed Nimrod, the so-called only begotten son of god.
- h. To be baptised to come under the spell of Nimrod, instead of promising to follow the laws of God as taught by Jesus of Nazareth!
- i. To call a human being the “Infallible Pontifex Maximus”, an honour which is due to none but God Alone.
- j. To make *God inferior to Christ* who would sit on the right hand of God and other such blasphemies, profanities and absurdities.

Such absurdities were considered holy and pious things instead of wicked manifestations, according to Christianity just because the Church has adapted and sanctified them!

Thus *God, the Real Jesus and the Evangel* are not of any significance before the Church of Christianity which is supreme and surpasses all of them when it sanctifies something! Does not such a claim of the Christian Church remind one of the following passage in the Holy Bible:

“BABYLON hath been a golden cup in the Lord’s hands that made all the earth drunken: the nations have drunken of her wine (of magical intoxication by baptism and the magical sign of the cross, the initial of Tammuz), therefore the nations are MAD” (Jeremiah 51: 7).

#### 4. Nimrod's Religious Influence

In the Old Testament we find several references as to how the magical charms of this evil genius, Nimrod, will control completely the minds and deeds of the people of the world (even for many millennia after his violent death) in acts of disbelief against God Almighty!

A few quotations are given hereunder:

"For thus saith the LORD GOD of Israel unto me; Take the wine cup of this fury at my hand, and cause all the nations, to whom I send thee, to drink it.

"And they shall drink, and be moved, *and be mad, because of the sword* (this is an apparent reference to Constantine, the founder of the Church of Christ, and his verse of the SWORD, St. Matthew 10: 34, incorporated in the Greek Bible) *that I will send among them.*

"Then took I the cup at the LORD's hand, and made all the nations to drink, unto whom the Lord had sent me:

"To wit, Jerusalem, and the cities of Judah, and the kings thereof, and the princes thereof, to make them a desolation, an astonishment, an hissing, and a curse; as it is this day;

"Pharaoh king of Egypt, and his servants, and his princes, and all his people;

"And all the mingled people, and all the kings of the land of Uz, and all the kings of the land of the Philistines and Ashkelon, and Azzah, and Ekron, and the remnant of Ashdod.

"Edom, and Moab, and the children of Ammon,

"And all the-kings of Tyrus, and all the kings of Zidon, and the kings of the isles which are beyond the sea.

"Dedan, and Tema, and Buz, and all that are in the utmost corners (of the earth),

"And all the kings of Arabia, and all the kings of the mingled people that dwell in the desert.

"And all the kings of Zimri, and all the kings of Elam, and all the

kings of the Medes,

“And all the kings of the north, far and near, one with another, and all the kingdoms of the world, which are upon the face of the earth: and the king of Sheshach shall drink after them.

“Therefore thou shalt say unto them, Thus saith the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Drink ye, and be drunken, and spue and fall, and rise no more, because of the sword (*i.e.* Constantine’s Christ) which I will send among you” (Jeremiah 25: 15-27).

This clearly proves that according to the Holy Bible the whole world would be affected and influenced by the spell cast by Nimrod, the accursed. Further, the influence of this religion would be so profound that people would follow it blindly just like a drunkard who had lost himself under the influence of intoxication! Further, according to the Holy Bible these followers would be MAD because they would refuse to accept the truth! They would deny the proofs when given to them and would try to twist them and their hearts would be hardened against the true God, just as Nimrod’s was until his last breath (Chapter 6: I and J). They would try to perpetuate Nimrod’s religion, even knowing that it has been cursed at the Tower of Babel and would lead mankind from disaster to disaster until it is effaced eventually at the Battle of Armageddon.







## Chapter 13

# The mission of Holy Jesus



### A. Introduction

It is accepted universally that Jesus was gifted with powers of performing wondrous miracles, as also with pre-cognition. Thus he was fully aware of those, who would destroy deliberately and systematically his teachings, which unfortunately are now no longer being practised as already seen from the previous chapter.

Jesus not only knew this fact but he also announced publicly that Peter would fall into the hands of Satan and destroy the religion taught by Jesus. This warning of Jesus is in the original name of Peter which was “Simon”. This warning is worded:

“And the Lord said, Simon, Simon; behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat” (St. Luke 22: 31).

When Jesus saw that Peter was not improving himself and coming to the true and correct path he declared as follows:

“But he (Jesus) turned and *said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan; thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not things that be of God, but those that be of men.*

“For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world and lose his soul? ...” (St. Matthew 16: 23 and 26).

This is exactly what Peter actually did when he preached the foundations of Nimrod’s religion *viz:*

- a. "Baptism"
- b. "The Law of God was a curse"
- c. "Good deeds no longer mattered"
- d. "Faith in the Saviour and Sacramental Food and drinks were enough" *etc.*

These anti-God teachings have become the corner-stones of the new Religion of Peter and his collaborator Paul and the dissidents, who formed the Brethren Faith (Chapter 12: C) for teaching to the Pagans.

In course of time, under the chairmanship of Constantine, this religion, which had no affinity with Jesus, has incorporated in it every little detail of the faith, the rites, the dates and the teachings of King Nimrod, the cursed, the mighty hunter in rebellion against God. (Chapter 12: F 1-10; G 1-16 and K 1-4).

Jesus knew fully well what was going to happen to his teachings and through whom and how his followers would destroy eventually the "Evangel" the Divine Book dictated personally by him during his lifetime in Hebrew and noted down in Aramaic Script by Levi, son of Alphaeus, and other Hebrew scribes. Under such circumstances it is quite logical and evident that the teachings of Jesus could never have been his mission on earth, if they were going to be destroyed and not followed!

Indeed something far greater and more outstanding must have been the mission of one who had been favoured by the Almighty to have such a miraculous birth through the Virgin Mary, the only one of its kind in the known history of mankind (Chapter 10), and that also on a chosen day, date and month on which great events of far reaching consequence for mankind have taken place throughout the ages (Chapter 11).

Therefore the following questions pose themselves in everyone's mind:

1. What was the great mission of the *Real Jesus* on earth when it was not his teachings even according to Jesus himself?
2. What evidence is available in support of this from reliable original sources?
3. How can the great mission of the *Real Jesus* be proved by the evidence still available, if any, in the Bible in its present form?

Systematic research on these problems throws a light upon the quest before us. To go into every minute detail would require a much larger book. Hence only a few relative details are quoted hereafter which should suffice to grasp the essence of the Mission of Jesus when it is remembered that Jesus has made it absolutely clear in St. Matthew 5: 17; that he had not come to disrupt the purpose for which the earlier prophets of God had come.

Hence let us start our quest in an organised way to proceed towards our goal “The Mission of Jesus” by taking a look at The Holy Bible.

### **B. Who is the Promised Seed through Whom the World would be blessed according to the Holy Bible?**

The prayer of Jesus in the New Testament just before he was lifted to heaven bodily is quoted hereunder:

“I pray for them (*i.e.* only the followers of the real Jesus): **I pray not for the World, but (only) for them, Which Thou hast given me ...**” (St. John 17: 9).

Thus it is clear that if Jesus was the Promised seed through whom the world would be blessed he would surely have prayed at this moment particularly for the whole world and not for only his followers! Hence according to Jesus, as recorded in the Holy Bible, he is definitely not that promised seed of Abraham through whom the whole world would be blessed and whose description in the Holy Bible is as follows:

“... And of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham, and *in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed*” (Acts 3: 25).

In Galatians 3: 3 we again read that God had informed Abraham “... *in thee (i.e. thy seed) shall all nations be blessed*”.

Therefore the real Jesus has shown undeniably in the New Testament according to his own prayer for his followers only and not for the world that he is not that “Promised seed through whom the world shall be blessed” but that personage must be someone else, someone who will be the “Comforter” of the whole world!

This promised seed will therefore have to be a saviour for the whole world. As against that the real Jesus has, unmistakably and without any scope for argument, shown that he had come for the upliftment of only the Jews:

*... preaching the word to none but unto the Jews only*” (Acts 11: 19).

“These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, *Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not!*

*“But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel”* (St. Matthew 10: 5-6).

All these references from the Holy Bible make it explicit that Jesus had come for Jews only and not for the whole world! Even prophet John, the son of Zakariah, the forerunner to Jesus, has informed us in the New Testament that the promised, sought-for Prophet was a different person to Jesus who would be coming with one “Elias” and that both of them would be after Jesus (St. John 1: 19-21 and 25).

Further the Old Testament informs us that the promised Prophet was to be from a brethren tribe to the Jews (Deuteronomy 18: 18) whilst Jesus was a Jew and that the (promised) Prophet would be a blessing and a comfort for the whole world. We are also informed that this Promised Prophet would speak face to face with God as Moses did as a

man speaketh unto his friend (Exodus 33: 11) which Jesus never did. Neither is any one claiming in the Bible or elsewhere that Jesus confronted God as Moses did. Hence it is clear that Jesus is not this Promised Seed.

Jesus has himself clarified in the New Testament that he had come not to destroy the Mosaic Laws but to fulfil them (St. Matthew 5: 17) whilst the promised Prophet would come with a complete set of new Laws of God which would remodel and complete the old Mosaic Laws of God (Acts 3: 22-25).

Thus Jesus has shown repeatedly from his prayers and his preaching's that he is not that promised seed of Abraham through whom mankind would be blessed but on the contrary he has come for those who follow him from amongst only the Jews.

In fact Jesus has himself preached about this Promised seed, the Comforter, through whom the whole world would be blessed, in the Holy Bible, as follows:

"If ye love me, keep my commandments.

"And I will pray the father, and he shall give you *another Comforter* (*i.e.* not Jesus himself) that he (this Promised Prophet or the Comforter) may abide with you forever (*i.e.* Jesus and his teachings have not come to abide forever but only for a temporary intermediary period);

"Even the Spirit of truth (*i.e.* the Holy Spirit from which God has created everything); whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not (now), neither knoweth him: but ye know him (from the descriptions I have given of him); ...

"I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you (again at the time of the battle of Armageddon).

"But the Comforter (*i.e.* Parakletos in Greek; translated into Arabic it becomes Ahmad Rahmat-ul-lil-Aalamin), which is the Holy Ghost (Logos out of which God has created everything Chapter 17: A 1-8 and B 1-6), whom the Father will send (will tell you what has

been taught correctly or incorrectly) in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you” (St. John 14: 15-18 and 26) *i.e.* to say he, the “Comforter” of the world, the promised seed through whom the whole world would be blessed will teach the world all things and thus complete the religion of God on earth which came down step by step. Each time a set of laws was destroyed, another list of laws more elaborate was sent down not only to correct the distortions but also to avoid its destruction by the previous methods (Chapter 15: E; 18: H and I) and bring to the remembrance of the followers of Jesus the various signs given by Jesus with which to recognise him, *viz*:

- a. A piece of cloud would shade him by day (page 167, *The Gospel of Barnabas*).
- b. He would have the seal of Prophethood on his right shoulder (Isaiah 9: 6).
- c. He would speak to God as one friend speaks to another *etc.* (Deuteronomy 18: 18).
- d. He would rest under the tree planted by Abraham at Beersheba (Genesis 21: 33), where only those who would be prophets of God could rest and pray (Chapter 13: H).
- e. He would not accept charity but would accept a gift (Chapter 13: I).
- f. He would be born at a place which is South of the land of Palestine. He would be a breaker of idols and a destroyer of idolatry just as Abraham had been the breaker of idols (page 223, *The Gospel of Barnabas*).
- g. Idols all over the earth will fall down upon the ground and miraculously speak announcing the birth of the promised messenger (page 169, *The Gospel of Barnabas*).
- h. “But when the comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of Truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me (This means that the promised Comforter when he comes would confirm the

miraculous birth of Jesus and that Jesus was not crucified but lifted alive to heaven *etc.*);

“And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning (and I have given to you detailed descriptions about him which Arius and the Nazarene priests have confirmed as to the mission of Jesus as will be read hereafter)” (St. John 15: 26-27).

- i. He would recite the message of God when in a state of trance, as if divinely inspired:

*“Nevertheless I tell you The Truth; it is expedient for you that I (i.e. my, teachings the “Evangel”) go away (i.e. be destroyed): for if I (i.e. my teachings the “Evangel”) go not away (i.e. until the Evangel is not destroyed), The comforter will not come unto you but if I depart (i.e. when the Evangel is destroyed then after about the same period for which it had existed will become disclosed the Promised Seed through whom the world will be blessed, as shown by the calculations of Arius given hereafter), I will send him unto you.*

“And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment:

“Of sin, because they believe not on me (but only pretend because they will use my name to deceive the world by pretending that Christianity is the religion taught by Jesus, when in reality it is Nimrodism);

“Of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more;

“Of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged.

- j. *I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now (i.e. Jesus has not completed the teachings of God on earth because the people cannot bear them now).*
- k. *“Howbeit when he, The Spirit of Truth (i.e. Logos—Chapter 17: A, 1-8), is come, he will guide you into all truth (and not Jesus): for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear (from God), that shall he speak (in Arabic Al-Qur’an—see Chapter 18): and he will show you things to come” (St. John 16: 7-13).*

The following passages are from pages 225-227 of “*The Gospel of Barnabas*”:

“Then said the Priest: ‘How shall the Messiah be called, and what sign shall reveal his coming?’

*“Jesus answered: ‘The name of the Messiah is admirable, for God Himself gave him the name when He had created his soul, and placed it in a celestial splendour. God said: “Wait Muhammad; for thy sake I will to create paradise, the world, and a great multitude of creatures whereof I make thee a present, insomuch that who so shall bless thee, shall be blessed, and whoso shall curse thee, shall be accursed. When I shall send thee unto the World, I shall send thee as My messenger of salvation, and thy Word shall be true, insomuch that heaven and earth shall fail, but thy faith shall never fail.”*  
**‘Muhammad is his Blessed name’.**”

“Then the crowd lifted up their voices saying: ‘O God, send us Thy messenger: O Muhammad, come quickly for the salvation of the World!’”

Ahmad and Muhammad are the two most popular names of the Prophet of Arabia. For their meaning and origin see Chapter 17: A-5.

Sir William Muir says in “*Life of Mahomet*” that the word “Ahmad” might “have been erroneously employed as a translation of Perikalutas in some Arabic version of the *New Testament*”.

Barnabas whose personal name was Joseph was a companion of Jesus and one of the 120 Jews who were converted to the faith of Jesus. This Barnabas has recorded as read here before that Jesus has said:

1. God created Paradise, the world and a great multitude of creatures for the sake of Muhammad.
2. Paradise, the world and all created things have been given as a gift from God to Muhammad.
3. Muhammad will come on earth as God’s messenger of Salvation, (*i.e.* in Arabic “Rahmat-ul-lil-Alameen”, one of the



titles given by God to Muhammad).

4. Those who shall follow Muhammad and send blessings upon him will be blessed by God, but those who will disbelieve in Muhammad will be accursed by God.
5. The heaven and the earth will be destroyed eventually but the teachings of Muhammad shall never fail.

Not only Jesus and his disciples but also the Last of the Heavenly Books confirm that the promised seed of Abraham through whom the whole of the UNIVERSE will be blessed is Muhammad and that his religion shall never be demolished:

“We (Allah) sent thee (Muhammad) not (for any purpose) but as a mercy for the whole creation” (Qur’an 21: 107).

“He (Allah) it is Who hath sent His messenger (Muhammad) with guidance and the Religion of Truth, that he may cause it to prevail (from the time of the battle of Armageddon) over all religions, however much the disbelievers may be averse (Qur’an 9: 33).

From these it would appear that when the original Evangel in Hebrew Aramaic was burnt and destroyed in 325 A.D. and the Bible in the Greek language was prepared that the proper name Ahmed Rahmat-ul-lil-Alameen was translated into “Parakletos”, although in the Arabic translation of the *New Testament* the word “Ahmad” is still there, as observed by Sir William Muir in his book “*Life of Mahomet*”.

### **C. The Promised Comforter according to the New Testament**

Jesus has said as recorded in “*The Gospel of Barnabas*” pages 97-99 as follows:

Then the disciples wept after this discourse, and Jesus was weeping, when they saw many who came to find him, for the chiefs of the priests took counsel among themselves to catch him (Jesus) in his talk. Wherefore they sent the Levites and some of the scribes to question him, saying: ‘Who art thou?’

“Jesus confessed, and told the truth: ‘I am not the Messiah.’

“They said: ‘Art thou Elijah or Jeremiah, or any of the ancient prophets?’.

“Jesus answered: ‘No.’

“Then said they: ‘Who art thou? Say, in order that we may give testimony to those who sent us.’

“Then Jesus said: ‘I am a voice that crieth, through all Judaea, and crieth: “Prepare ye the way for the messenger or the Lord,” even as it is written in Esaias.’

“They said: ‘If thou be not the Messiah nor Elijah, or any (of the olden) prophets, wherefore dost thou preach a new doctrine, and make thyself of more account than the Messiah?’

“Jesus answered: ‘The miracles which God worketh by my hands show that I speak that which God willeth; nor indeed do I make myself to be accounted as him of whom ye speak. *For I am not worthy to unloose the ties of the hosen or the latches of the shoes of the messenger of God whom ye call “Messiah,” who was made before me, and shall come after me, and shall bring the words of truth (i.e. the Qur’an), so that his faith shall have no end*’.

The Jewish Priests had asked these very same questions not only of Jesus but also earlier of Prophet John son of Zakariah. Hence it is apparent that the Jews were awaiting anxiously the arrival of the Promised Prophet. These questions and the answers of Prophet John are quoted herein from the Holy Bible:

“And this is the record of John (son of Zakariah), when the Jews sent Priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, Who art thou?

“And he confessed, and denied not; but confessed, I am not the Christ (this word was coined by Constantine in 325 A.D.).

“And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that (Promised) prophet? And he answered, No.

“And they asked him, and said unto him, Why baptizes thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that (Promised)

prophet?” (St. John 1: 19-21 and 25).

From these passages it becomes clear that:-

a. Jews were aware from their holy books that three great personages were going to come whose description or names were:

1. “Jesus” (in the Hebrew language the original name of Jesus is “Eisa”. When the Greek language was used the original name of Eisa was corrupted into Jesus by changing the “Ei” into “Je” and adding “us” at the end of it. Thus the correct name of Jesus is “Eisa”).

2. “Elias” (In original Hebrew this name was pronounced “Eli” or “Ali” but corrupted by Greek translators into Elias by adding “as” to the end of it).

3. The (Promised) Prophet.

b. From these quotations in their *New Testament* the believers of Jesus were thus fully aware that after Jesus were to come two great personages viz:

1. “Elias” or according to the Hebrew pronunciation “Ali”.

2. The (Promised) Prophet.

c. Further we find in the *New Testament* that Jesus has been described as:

Jesus, Son of Mary

Jesus, son of man

The Promised Seed

Christ

Son of God *etc.*

But Jesus has never been described as “the Prophet”. Hence any reference to “The Prophet” in the Holy Bible must obviously mean “The

(Promised) Prophet” referred to in the above quotations of St. John 1, who was to come after Jesus and further that “The (Promised) Prophet” was very definitely and distinctly quite a different person from Jesus, who has never been described anywhere in the New Testament as “The Prophet”!

Now if one looks at The Acts of the Apostles, one will read the following passages:

For Moses truly said unto the fathers, *A prophet* shall the Lord your God raise up unto you (twelve tribes of Israel) of your brethren (tribe *i.e.* descendants of Ishmael), like unto me (*i.e.* one who will speak face to face with God just like one converses with his friend—Exodus 33: 11); him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.

“And it shall come to pass (after a passage of sometime *i.e.* at the battle of Armageddon), that every soul, which will not hear that (Promised) prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people (of the earth).

“Yea, and all the prophets, from Samuel and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold (of the coming of this Promised Prophet of the final period) ...” (Acts 3: 22-24).

From the New Testament it becomes explicit that both the Jews as well as the true followers of Jesus are fully aware that *the promised Prophet* will be quite a different person from Jesus and that he would be one of the two great personages that were to come at some stage after Jesus (St. John 1: 19-21, 25).

The fact that they *i.e.* both the Jews and the Nazarenes, the followers of Jesus have recognised Muhammad of Arabia as the Promised Prophet of the final period (as will be read hereafter) makes it clear that if the world is to achieve unity, harmony, love and brotherhood it has to follow the Promised Comforter of the whole world, the Promised seed of Abraham from the brethren tribe to the Jews (*i.e.* the descendants of Ishmael) through whom the whole world would be blessed, as declared by Jesus (Chapter 7: G-8) when he proves

that the Bible has been forged, and teaches the cursed pagan religion of Nimrod, by whatever name it may be called including Christianity. It was Nimrodism that broke up the unity of mankind by God's curse upon it at the Tower of Babel (Genesis 11: 6-9) and which will continue to disrupt the unity of mankind so long as it is followed by millions of people, who are drunk and drowned in the intoxication of the spell of Nimrod which God has described in the Holy Bible, as:

*"Babylon, hath been a golden cup in the Lord's hand that made all the earth drunken: the nations have drunken of her wine (of magical intoxication by baptism and the sign of the cross); therefore the nations are Mad"* (Jeremiah 51: 7).

With the present trend of deterioration and dissensions in international relations, resulting in two of the biggest disasters in human history, the two world wars between the Christians, the believers in the same "Holy 'Bible'" and the same "Christ" and that also within a quarter of a century, mankind, especially the Christians seem to be suffering from some form of insanity. It is indeed unbelievable that in spite of the terrific progress of science so much devastation has not only been caused by the two world wars but that even a holocaust is also feared in the near future. One would expect that the advancement in learning should lead to greater understanding, peace and tranquillity for all. Instead we live in a world full of surcharged tension and terror as never known before. Undoubtedly something is wrong. It could be our religion that is misconceived by following the false Jesus Christ. Hence the cause of misunderstanding between man and man as mentioned in the above quoted passage from the Holy Bible, which clearly shows what an all-pervasive influence Nimrodism still has over mankind. Even after 4,000 years we are behaving like those who are insane in spite of all our achievements and advanced scientific knowledge of today!

## D. The Promised Prophet honoured as “Lord” in the Holy Bible

Numerous prophets have referred to the “Promised Prophet” in the Holy Bible as their “Lord” e.g.:

“Then said Jesus: ‘And the messenger of God when he shall come, of what lineage will he be?’

“The disciples answered: ‘Of David.’

“Whereupon Jesus said: ‘Ye deceive yourselves; for David in spirit calleth him lord, saying thus: “*God said to my lord (i.e. the saviour), sit thou on my right hand until I make thine enemies thy footstool. God shall send forth thy rod which shall have lordship in the midst of thine enemies.*” If the messenger of God whom ye call Messiah were the son of David, *how should David call him lord* (instead of my son or descendant)? Believe me, for verily I say to you, that the promise was made in Ishmael, not in Isaac.’” (Page 103, *The Gospel of Barnabas*).

The *New Testament* confirms the same facts as:

“While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them,

“Saying, what think ye of the Saviour, whose son is he? They say unto him, The Son of David.

“*He (Jesus) saith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him lord, saying,*

“*The Lord (God) said unto my lord (the Saviour), Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool?*

“If David then call him Lord, how is he (the Saviour) his son (*i.e. descendant*)?” (St. Matthew 22: 41-45).

King David has stated in the *Old Testament*:

“*The Lord (God) said unto my lord (the Saviour), Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool.*

“*The Lord (God) shall send the rod of thy strength out of Zion (i.e. the Prophethood which was so long with the Jews will go out of*

Zion or the Jewish kingdom of Jerusalem): *rule thou* (Oh Saviour) *in the midst of thine* (i.e. the Saviour will be given dominion over his) enemies!

“The LORD (GOD) hath sworn, and will not repent, *thou* (Oh Saviour) *art a Priest for ever*.

“The LORD (GOD) at thy (the Saviour’s) right hand shall strike through kings in the day of his wrath (at the Battle of Armageddon).

“He shall judge among the heathen, he shall fill the places with the dead bodies; he shall wound the heads over many countries” (Psalms 110: 1-2, 4-6).

“Behold, I will send my (Promised) messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me: and the lord (Promised Saviour), whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, (he is) even the (Promised) messenger of the covenant (made with Abraham when he had taken Ishmael his first born only son for sacrifice), whom ye delight in; behold, he shall come, saith the LORD (GOD) of hosts” (Malachi 3: 1).

Moses in his farewell message has not only called the Promised Prophet, the Saviour as his “lord” but he has also forecast to the Jews concerning the following:

1. That the prophethood which was with the Jews since the time of Jacob would be transferred from Sinai or Palestine to another race.
2. That this promised prophet would become famous all over the world from a place known in those Biblical days as “Seir”.
3. That this promised prophet will be revealed at “a Mount at Paran”.
4. That since the people of Paran would force the Promised Prophet to leave his birth place, he would come with an army of 10,000 saintly persons and capture his birth-place.
5. After capturing Paran a fiery law would be established

eliminating idolatry for all time.

6. That this Promised Prophet would forgive all the trouble-makers in Paran.
7. That after capturing Paran he would purge the place of idols and sit down and pray with all his followers at the purified temple of God.
8. Moses has commanded by this law that all the Jews follow this Promised Prophet.
9. That this Promised Prophet would be from a tribe of people, who are the brethren of the Jews.
10. That those who will not follow this promised Prophet will be destroyed from amongst the people on the earth at the battle of Armageddon.

Before proceeding further let us pose the questions:

- i. According to the Holy Bible where is Paran?
- ii. Who was the important Prophet who lived at Paran and was blessed by God according to the Holy Bible?

“And God was with the lad (Ishmael the first born son of Abraham); and he grew, and dwelt in the wilderness, and became an archer.

“And he dwelt in the wilderness of Paran: and his mother took him a wife out of the land of Egypt” (Genesis 21: 20-21).

“And as for Ishmael, I have heard thee (Abraham): Behold, I have blessed him, and will make him fruitful, and will multiply him exceedingly; Twelve princes shall he beget, and I will make him a great nation” (Genesis 17: 20).

PARAN is the place where Ishmael grew up, lived in and died in and is buried there. This place is now called Mecca (Chapter 7: G, H and I).



Now let us refer to the Torah:

“AND this is the blessing, wherewith Moses the man of God blessed the children of Israel before his death.

“And he said, The *Lord* (The Saviour) came from Sinai (*i.e.* the prophethood which was with the Jews at Sinai or Jerusalem came from Jerusalem to), and rose up from Seir (*i.e.* the hill at Madinah) unto them (*i.e.* the Saviour would become famous from Madinah amongst the Jews settled by King Tibba at Madinah to await the arrival of the Promised Prophet see Chapter 13: F), he (the Saviour) shined forth from Cave Hira on Mount Noor or Light which is a mount (at) Paran (Mecca), and he came with (an army of exactly) ten thousands of saints (to capture Mecca and convert the temple of God known as Bait Ullah at Kaabah in Mecca which had 360 idols in it into the *True House of God*): from his right hand went a fiery law for them (the Saviour on his triumphant entry into Mecca, his birthplace, without even a fight, went to each of the 360 idols in “Bait Ullah” at Kabaah and declared before each of them individually as follows:

“The Truth has prevailed, Darkness has vanished away.”

As soon as Muhammad made this announcement before one of the idols in the Bait Ullah pointing towards it with his staff, immediately that particular idol would miraculously break loose from its firm base without anyone touching it, then hurl itself onto the floor smashing itself into small fragments. Muhammad repeated his declaration 360 times that day and one by one all the 360 idols in the Kaabah destroyed themselves in the presence of the awestricken pagan inhabitants of Mecca and the army of Muslims from Madinah see Chapter 17: E-24, also miracle No 212 given on pages 101-102 of *Maujizat-e-Muhammadia*. So profound was the effect of this supernatural manner of destroying idolatry that all the pagans of Mecca converted there and then to Islam. The Kaabah was accordily cleansed of idolatry and purified into a *True house of Allah* or *Bait Ullah* as it was when originally constructed by Abraham and Ishmael—Chapter 7:

H. This miraculous incident became the turning point or foundation upon which commenced the abolition of idolatry throughout Arabia in the 8th year of Hijrah and was completed within two years thereafter during the life-time of the Promised Prophet *the Lord of all the earlier messengers*. Arabia till this day is free from idolatry and the Qur'anic Laws of God are still firmly established.

“Yea, he (the Prophet) loved the people (of Mecca and forgave them all their crimes and their attempt to murder him); all his saints are in Thy hand (*i.e.* they have surrendered themselves to live their lives according to the will and pleasures of God Almighty—AL-ISLAM) and they sat down (in prayers) at Thy feet (at Kaabah, the temple of God in Mecca); every one (of the pagans of Mecca or Paran) shall receive thy words (*i.e.* each and every one of the people of Mecca upon seeing the wonderful kindness with which Muhammad behaved when he captured Mecca and the miraculous manner in which, he destroyed the 360 idols in the Kaabah willingly came to him and received his teachings and converted to Al-Islam or surrender to the will of God).

“Moses commanded us (the Jews, this order of God that when the Promised Saviour comes they should immediately accept him. This order is made into) a law, even (unto) the inheritance of the congregation of Jacob (*i.e.* all the twelve tribes of the Jews who are the descendants of the twelve sons of Jacob)” (Deuteronomy 33: 1-4).

“I (God) will raise them (*i.e.* for the guidance of the Jews) a Prophet from among their brethren (*i.e.* not a Jew but from their brethren *i.e.*, the Ishmaelite's), like unto thee (Moses *i.e.*, “And the Lord spake unto Moses face to face, as a man speaketh unto his friend”—Exodus 33: 11) and will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him (in Arabic sayings are called “AL-QUR'AN”). From this it is clear that it would not be necessary for the Promised Prophet to have any worldly knowledge to read and write).

“And it shall come to pass (after the passage of sometime at the Battle of Armageddon) that whosoever will not hearken unto My

words which he (the Promised Prophet) shall speak (*i.e.* the Qur'an) in My name, I will require it of (*i.e.*, punish and destroy) him (at the battle of Armageddon)" (Deuteronomy 18: 18-19).

The only person besides Moses who has spoken face to face with God is Muhammad. No other Prophet has made such a claim, not even Jesus. Further, Muhammad is the only prophet, who in a state of trance, used to recite the Divine words of God, as if they were put into his mouth—hence the name "AL-QUR'AN" or the recitations of a man who did not know how to read or write a single word (see Chapter 18 for further details).

The mount thus referred to in Deuteronomy 33: 2 is definitely Cave Hira on Mount "Nur" (*i.e.* "Light") where the first revelation of the Holy Qur'an was made. This mount is on the outskirts of Mecca city or Paran. This Promised Prophet's teachings of *Al-Islam* or *Surrender to the will of God* would spread all over the earth from Seir *i.e.* Madinah had been foretold in the Holy Bible in Deuteronomy 33:1 by Moses in his parting advice not only to the Jews *i.e. the congregation of Jacob* but also to all believers in the Holy Bible!

The name of the Promised Prophet will be "Mohamadeem" still appears in the Hebrew Text of the *Old Testament* as currently in circulation (Chapter 17: C-6).

Therefore, the Bible has prophesied not only the specific city where the Promised Prophet would be born but even the particular mount at Mecca (Paran) from where Allah's revelations of the Qur'an would emanate, that his teachings would spread from Madinah (Seir) and that his name would be Mohamadeem or Muhammad!

### **E. The Prophecy of Holy Moses**

Moses had been blessed by God so that he could speak to Him face to face just as one friend speaks to another. According to tradition, Moses was in the habit of asking God all kinds of questions. Some of them were as under:

1. Is there any man more learned than me at this time on earth? (Qur'an 18: 60-82).
2. Is there anybody who loves you more than I do? (Chapter 20: A).
3. Will there be any prophet who will be greater than me? and so on.

In reply to the third question according to tradition Allah gave the following answers:

Yes, there would be a prophet whose saints would be such that they would go to Heaven on the Day of Judgment without having to give any account of their deeds on earth. This prophet would speak not only face to face with God Almighty but would also see Him with the naked eye, which none others will achieve. He would not only spread love, goodwill and brotherhood amongst mankind without any distinction for caste, colour or nationality, but his followers would also eventually establish world peace under a new system of civilisation when the whole world would become one single community of 'Surrender to the Will of Allah'. Wars would then become a thing of the past. This promised Prophet would be a 'Blessing for the whole universe'." Allah also informed Moses that everything which is in the entire universe has been created out of the spirit of this Promised Prophet. Thus he would have influence over even heavenly bodies. He is the Spirit of Light of Guidance to all the Prophets from Adam. He will be born on earth from the descendants of Ishmael, the first-born and heir of Abraham, that is to say from the brethren tribe to the Jews who are from Isaac, the second son of Abraham. He would be the final prophet till the end of the earth".

Then Moses paid his respects to Muhammad and replied that he was desirous of becoming a follower of this great Promised Prophet, so that he might also go to heaven without having to give an account of his deeds, especially for the soldier of Pharaoh, whom he had killed, for whipping an aged Jew.

God Almighty replied:

“You should be satisfied with the honourable position of being one of My great prophets, but I will take you during your wanderings through the wilderness with the Israelites to the temple built by Abraham for My worship where this Promised Prophet will be born and also to the place from where he will spread My final teachings. His name will be Ahmed, and when this great Promised Prophet of the final period of the earth will come, he will mention the teachings of the earlier prophets. You instruct the Jews that they shall leave aside all My teachings given to them through you and all the other prophets before and after you and hearken unto the call of this Promised Prophet”.

Further Allah said,

“I will put My words in his mouth and he shall recite only what I shall command him for the benefit of mankind. Whosoever will not listen unto My words which he shall recite in My name, I will punish them severely, and after some lapse of time would come a great ‘Battle’ in which all disbelievers in this Promised Prophet and his teachings will be cut off from amongst the people of the earth and, God, shall completely destroy such disbelievers”.

“Your people will recognise this Promised Prophet of the final period just as they recognise their own children by the following signs:

He shall have the seal of Prophet-hood on his right shoulder.

He will perform all the miracles, which any other prophet has performed before him.

Besides, he shall perform such miracles, which no other prophet shall have performed.

His miracles will not only be witnessed by those near him but also will be witnessed simultaneously by peoples of distant lands even thousands of miles away.

Even though he will be too poor to go to any school and, he would never learn how to read or write a single word, yet he will recite My teachings in a language, which will remain without any parallel in the history of mankind till the end of the earth. This is the interpretation of Deuteronomy 18: 18.

He shall give details of the leading prophets of the World even though he would never have studied their history (St. John 14: 26).

He will bring warring peoples into firm bonds of brotherhood, love and peace.

Money, wealth, riches, position, beautiful girls *etc.*, will not influence him.

Even though he will rule large areas, he will lead a simple, and ascetic life wearing rough woollen clothes with several patches.

His magnanimity of heart and forgiveness will win over many sworn enemies.

He will be the protector of the weak, the poor, the oppressed, the widows and orphans.

He would not accept any charity from anybody but would accept a gift.

Even though a virtual king, he would work for his living and lead a humble life!

He will be raised to Heaven bodily and shall not only speak to God Almighty (Deuteronomy 18: 18) but also see Him with the naked eye—an honour which no other prophet has been given by the Almighty.

He would be a man of very strong character and exemplary will-power.

Whenever he would go under the open sky a wisp of cloud would give shade over him.

He would be born as a posthumous child. He would speak in his cradle. His mother would die when he is only a few years old.

His conduct would be such from his childhood that at the prime of his youth the title of "The Faithful and True" will be conferred upon him (Chapter 25: T and Revelation 19: 11; also Chapter 17: D-30). He would be the bringer of divine help at the Final Battle (Armageddon). His Title would be "THE WORD OF GOD" (Chapter 17: A, 1-8; 25: T and Revelation 19: 13).

"The sacred fire" maintained by the Persian Magi in the "House of fire", in commemoration of the throwing of Abraham, the idol-breaker, into the fire by King Nimrod, as read earlier in Chapter 6: F, with the sole object of purging the world of evils, *i.e.* the true divine teachings as propagated by Prophet Abraham, the friend of Allah, and which fire had been burning since the time of Nimrod, whom they called Tammuz or "Fire, the perfecter" or Zoroaster (for reference please see Appendix to "*The Two Babylons*" by A. Hislop, pages 313-317) for the first time in thousands of years would be quenched as an indication of the birth of one who stands for the obliteration of idolatry and paganism on a world-wide basis (Chapter 17: D, 7-11; 17: E, 21-24).

On page 109, Vol. II, "*Tafrihul Askia FilAhwal ULAmbia*" there is a reference to "*Jasbul Qulub Diarul Mahboob*" in which Sheik Abdul Huq Mohaddis Dehalvi has written that on one occasion (during the 40 years of wanderings of the Israelites under the guidance of Moses in the wilderness, when they were being led by God from place to place) they visited the temple of God built by Abraham and Ishmael at Paran (now called Kaabah or Bait Ullah, or House of Allah at Mecca) where Moses prayed with the Israelites. On the return journey they came upon a place which they immediately recognised by the descriptions given in the Torah as "Seir", which is now called Madinah from where the Promised Prophet of the final period would spread the ultimate message of Allah. They halted and prayed there for a considerable period before moving on towards the Promised Land for the Jews. Hence the Jews had not only the exact description of the Promised

Prophet, but they also knew that his place of birth would be Mecca and the town from which he would spread his teachings of the Surrender to the will of God would be Madinah.

On page 427 of “*The Gospel of Barnabas*” is given an original quotation from the books written personally by Prophets Moses and Joshua:

“The scribe then said (to Jesus): ‘Pardon me, O master, for I have sinned’.

“Said Jesus: ‘God pardon thee; for against Him hast thou sinned’.

“Whereupon said the scribe: *‘I have seen an old book written by the hand of Moses and Joshua (he who made the sun stand still as thou hast done), servants and prophets of God; which book is the true book of Moses. Therein is written that Ishmael is father of the Messiah (Muhammad the Messenger of God), and Isaac is the father of the messenger of the Messiah (i.e. Jesus, is the harbinger of the coming of the Promised Prophet Muhammad, the Messenger of God who is described in The Gospel of Barnabas as the Messiah). And thus saith the book, that Moses said “Lord God of Israel, Mighty and Merciful, manifest to Thy servant the splendour of Thy Glory”. Whereupon God showed him His messenger in the arms of Ishmael, and Ishmael in the arms of Abraham. Nigh to Ishmael stood Isaac in whose arms was a child (i.e. Jesus), who with his finger pointed to (Muhammad) the Messenger of God, saying: “This is he for whom God hath created all things”.*

“Whereupon Moses cried out of joy: ‘O Ishmael, thou hast in thine arms all the world and paradise! *Be mindful of me, God’s servant, that I may find grace in God’s sight by means of thy, son (i.e. descendant Muhammad) for whom God hath made all.*”

#### **F. King Tibba, The Re-Builder of “Ya Tibba” or “Yathrib”**

On page 110, of Vol. II, “*Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*” it is recorded that the pagan King of Yemen, whose name was Tibba, had set out to conquer Syria and Iraq.



During his journey he came upon the place now famous as Madinah, which pleased him and he occupied it. He made his son the Governor of this place.

The people of Madinah conspired and murdered this son of King Tibba.

When he received the news of his son's assassination, he returned from Syria to Madinah to take his revenge. He vowed he would wipe out completely that place from the face of the earth, and gave orders for the general massacre of the population of Madinah, and the destruction of each and every house there.

Repeated attempts were made by him day after day but to his great surprise he found that what he destroyed one day was restored to its original state the next morning and that he was merely wasting his time and energy without making any progress whatsoever!

Now amongst the captives which he had taken from Palestine and Syria were four hundred learned Jews who were well versed in the Torah. They explained to king Tibba that he could do whatever he liked but he could never demolish this place because one day it would become the seat of the Promised Prophet of the final period of the earth.

To test their theory further he had a fire lit publicly and asked two of the Jewish elders to walk through the fire carrying the Torah with them. They came out of the fire unharmed. Then he sent two of his priests carrying idols of their supreme god (probably of Fire or Tammuz *i.e.* Fire, the perfecter) but they had hardly put their foot into the fire when they ran out burnt.

This fully convinced King Tibba. He accepted what was written in the Torah about the coming of the Promised Prophet of the final period of the Earth and the spread of his religion from this town of Seir. So he gave up immediately his attempt to destroy Madinah.

Therefore to right the wrong he had already done out of his ignorance in trying to destroy this town, he freed the four hundred

Jewish captives. He built a house for each of them at Madinah, gave them each a Jewish slave girl as wife and some money. Thus King Tibba founded a new town. This town was called after his name “Ya Tibba” with the Jewish settlements in and around Madinah with the avowed purpose of awaiting the arrival of the Promised Prophet of the final period of the earth. In course of time the name of this town changed from “Ya Tibba” to “Yathrib” by which name it was known, when Prophet Muhammad came here in 622 A.D.

The leader of these learned Jews was a man called Shahaul. King Tibba wrote a letter and handed it over to Shahaul with instructions that he should hand over this letter to the Promised Prophet, if he came to this town during his life-time, but, if not, then to hand over this letter to his son with the same instructions generation after generation *i.e.* to preserve and hand over this letter to the Promised Prophet whenever his identity was disclose. Further, that Shahaul was to make him a guest in this house which he built specifically for this purpose and gave to Shahaul to live in. Thus the Yemeni King foretold that the Promised Prophet would stay in this house on his first arrival at Madinah.

In the tenth/eleventh year of Muhammad’s preaching’s in the year 620 A.D., *i.e.*, when, he was just over fifty years old, during the pilgrimage season, he came upon a little group of men, who listened to him gladly. They had come from Yathrib, a city more than two hundred miles away, which has since become world famous as *Madinah, or City of the Prophet*. At Yathrib the descendants of the learned Jews had often spoken to the pagans of a Promised Prophet of the final period of the Universe, who was soon to come among the Arabs from the descendants of Ishmael—a brethren tribe to the Jews, both being descendants of Abraham. The Jews descended from Isaac, the second son of Abraham. This promised Prophet would come on earth to wipe out idolatry just as Abraham had attempted. When he appeared the Jews would join him, because the Jews knew that this Promised Prophet would efface paganism from Arabia. When the men from Yathrib saw Muhammad at the outskirts of Mecca, they recognised him as this

Promised Prophet, whom the Jewish rabbis had so often described to them. On their return to Yathrib they narrated what they had seen and heard, with the result that at the next pilgrimage season *i.e.* 621 A.D. a deputation came from Yathrib to Mecca with the sole purpose of meeting the Prophet. This delegation secretly met the Prophet on the outskirts of Mecca at a place known as Aqabah. They met at this place to avoid arousing the suspicions of the Meccans. At this place this delegation swore allegiance to the Prophet in what is known as the “First Pact of Al-Aqabah”, the oath they took being that which was afterwards exacted from women converts, with no mention of fighting. They then returned to Yathrib with a Muslim teacher in their company, and soon there was not a house in Yathrib wherein there was not a mention of the messenger of Allah and the great tortures and difficulties he had been facing for the past twelve years and the continuous dangers to his life at Mecca.

In the following year *i.e.* 622 A.D. at the time of pilgrimage, seventy-three Muslims from Yathrib came to Mecca to vow allegiance to the Prophet and invite him to their city. They met the Prophet secretly by night at Al-Aqabah. Here they swore to defend him as they would defend their own wives and children. This is known as the “Second Pact of Al Aqabah”. It was then that the Hijrah or the decision to shift to Yathrib, and thus be free from persecutions of the Meccans was decided upon by Muhammad.

In this group of 73 was a young man named Abu-Laila. He was the son of Ayub Ansari, who was a descendant of the learned Jewish Leader Shahaul, in whose custody the letter of King Tibba was entrusted. Ayub. Ansari had secretly given this letter of King Tibba to his son Abu Laila just as he was leaving Yathrib for Mecca as a member of the group of 73 Muslims sent out to invite Muhammad to come over and live in peace at Yathrib. He had instructed his son not to disclose this letter, but to bring it back with him, unless he was asked to produce it by Muhammad. That would be a good test to know if Muhammad was in reality the Promised Prophet. As soon as this group met Muhammad,

he miraculously came to know that the letter of King Tibba was with a member of this delegation and he miraculously pointed to Abu Laila and said, "Your name is Abu Laila and you have secretly hidden on your person the letter King Tibba has written to me, please produce it." Everybody was surprised as to how Muhammad recognised Abu Laila, who had come for the first time before the Promised Prophet, and how he knew about this letter, which everyone thought was still at Abu Laila's house in Yathrib.

This letter was produced by Abu Laila and read publicly, for the Prophet Muhammad could not read or write. It was found that the letter was written 1,040 years earlier by King Tibba. (For the original text please refer to page 110, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). The rendering into English of its contents is as follows:

"After saying your praise (*Hamd*) and praying for your safety and welfare (*Salaam*), let it be known to you Oh! Muhammad (Peace of Allah be on you) I hereby declare that I have accepted you and have placed my faith on that book, which Allah will send through you and I hereby declare that I have already converted myself to your religion and I hereby accept your God, as the Creator of all things and I hereby accept all rules of the Sariat of Islam, which will come down from Allah through you.

"On the day of Judgment I hereby beg of you to plead for my forgiveness to Allah and do not forget me on this day. I have accepted you and your teachings of Islam from before your coming and I have thus become your first disciple and follower. And to further my claim upon you I have hereby converted myself to the religion of your forefather "Ibrahim Khalilullah" (*i.e.* Abraham, the friend of Allah) and I am now living according to his religious teachings."

"Seal and Signature of  
Tibba, King of Yemen"

When Muhammad arrived later that year at Yathrib he was on a camel with Abu Bakr Siddiq. Everybody wanted to invite him to their

house. It was difficult to decide where to stay. So Muhammad said, "I will be the guest of the people of the house where my camel stops". The house where the camel stopped and sat down of its own accord was that of Abu Laila's father, Ayub Ansari, the descendant of Shahaul the learned leader of Jews. Thus the foretelling's of King Tibba came true *i.e.* when the Promised Prophet of the Final period of the Universe would come to Yathrib, he would first of all stay as a Guest in this house which he had built specially for this purpose and given to the Learned Jewish Leader Shahaul, in whose custody he had also left his letter for the Promised Prophet.

### **G. The Learned Jewish Elders and the result of disobedience**

As soon as Muhammad arrived at Yathrib and became a guest of Ayub Ansari, the people of the whole town, the Jews, the pagans and the Muslims, all came to see him. He delivered a wonderful speech full of good advice, which made a deep impression upon his listeners (Chapter 17: E-15; also pages 108-112, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Among this crowd was Abdulla bin Salaam, the most learned of the Jewish elders of the time at Madinah. Abdulla bin Salaam was convinced that Muhammad was undoubtedly the Promised Prophet. He took the first opportunity of coming back to Muhammad when he was more or less alone with just a few Muslims and Ayub Ansari's family members. He told Muhammad that he wished to ask the Prophet a few questions which could not be answered by one who was not a prophet of God. One of his questions was:

What will be the first sign of the destruction of this Earth?

Muhammad replied:

"It will be a 'Fire' going from East to West which will spread indescribable devastation. This will be the first sign of the coming destruction of this Earth".

Upon hearing Muhammad's reply Abdulla bin Salaam admitted that Muhammad was perfectly right, and confessed:

"La Illaaha Illalla wa innaka Rasulallah"

Translation:

"There is no god but Allah and you are indeed the Prophet of Allah".

Thus he became the first Muslim convert after the arrival of the Prophet at Yathrib (page 112, Vol. II, *ibid*).

He asked Muhammad to keep his conversion to Islam a secret. He requested the Holy Prophet to invite the Jews and see what they had to say about him and also regarding his acceptance of the Holy Prophet. During that time he would remain hidden in some interior room in the house.

Accordingly the Jews were invited and Muhammad asked them why they did not admit the fact, which they knew very well, that he was the Promised Prophet of the Final period. They denied that they had already recognised him to be the Promised Prophet. Then Muhammad asked them what their opinion was about Abdulla bin Salaam. They answered:

"Saiyadana wa ibne Saiyadana, Allamna wa ibne Allamna"

Translation:

"He is a 'Saiyad' (*i.e.* from the descendants of the Jewish Prophets) and the son of a 'Saiyad'.

"He is a most learned 'Doctor' of religious knowledge and the son of a most scholarly religious authority".

Muhammad asked them: "If Abdulla bin Salaam says that I am the Promised Prophet of the final period will you not accept this most learned Saiyad's advice?"

They replied: "May Allah save him from becoming a Muslim". Three times were these questions repeated and thrice the same answers

given.

Thereupon Muhammad called Abdulla bin Salaam from his hiding place and he came out reciting the “*Qalima*” i.e. “There is no god save Allah and Muhammad is His Messenger”. He informed them that he had asked several questions of Muhammad which none but a Prophet could answer and he had received the correct answers. He also told the Jews: “You know perfectly well that this is the Promised Prophet of the final period” and he proved this by references to the Torah which he was carrying with him.

Abdulla Bin Salaam pointed out further from the Torah (Deuteronomy 18: 18-19) that God had warned Moses that whosoever shall not listen and follow implicitly My (God’s) Words, which this Promised Prophet will say in My (God’s) name, I (God) shall severely punish by having them cut off from their people and even their menfolk slaughtered, and their women and children sold as slaves. Knowing all this he warned the Jews:

“Why are you doing such things as would deprive you of your homes and force you to leave and may even destroy you and your families. Have you no fear left in your hearts of God Almighty and His powers, which our forefathers have tasted in the past on many an occasion in the past for their disobediences. Have you forgotten all this or do you wish the curse of Allah to fall upon you again and again and thus become losers not only in this earthly life but also of Heaven. Oh! what is wrong with you, my people and brethren?” The Jews angrily left as they could not rebut the references quoted by Abdulla bin Salaam which even gave the name of the beloved Prophet of God as Muhammad. (Chapter 17: C-6, Solomon’s Song 5: 16).

In the first year of his reign at Yathrib, Prophet Muhammad entered into a solemn treaty with the Jewish tribes, which secured equal rights of citizenship and full religious liberty for them in return for their support of the new State. But the Israelites’ idea of the Promised Prophet was one who would give them dominion and rule over the

Arabs and not one who made the Jews who followed the Prophet, brothers of every Arab who might happen to believe as they did. The Jews still wanted to be the superior race or the chosen nation and not be regarded as equals, amongst human beings, without any distinction for caste, colour or nationality.

Till then the Qiblah (the place towards which the Muslims face when praying) had been the temple of God at JERUSALEM. The Jews imagined that the choice implied a leaning towards Judaism and that the Prophet stood in need of their guidance so they were the superior or chosen race. Whereupon the Prophet received a command from God to change the QIBLAH from Jerusalem to the old Original KAABAH, the House of God built by Abraham and Ishmael at PARAN or MECCA. The whole of the first part of Surah 2 of the Qur'an relates to these Jewish controversies.

When the Jews found that they could not use the Promised Prophet for their own ends to give them superiority over the rest, they tried to shake his faith in his Mission and to seduce his followers—a line of conduct in which they were secretly encouraged by some hypocrites professing to be Muslims but who considered they had cause to resent the Prophet's coming to Yathrib, since it robbed them of their local influence. In the Madinah surahs of the Qur'an there are frequent references to these Jews and these hypocrites.

The reverse which the Muslims suffered on Mt. Uhud in the third year of Hijrah lowered their prestige with both the Arab tribes and with the Jews of Yathrib. Tribes which had been inclined towards the Muslims for the past three years were now inclined towards the Qureysh. The Qureysh were the leading tribes of Mecca. Muhammad was one of them. When Muhammad started preaching that God is one and alone and that idolatry was sacrilege this had turned the Qureysh against Muhammad. They did not stop persecuting Muhammad even after he had gone over to Yathrib. After the incident of Mt. Uhud whenever the Muslims went out of Yathrib in small groups, they were attacked and murdered. Khubeyh, one of his envoys, was captured by a



desert tribe and sold to the Qureysh, who publicly tortured him to death in Mecca.

The Jews, despite their treaty, now hardly concealed their hostility. They even went so far in their flattery of the Qureysh as to declare that the idolatry of the pagan Arabs was superior to the worship of the One and only God under Al-Islam-thus committing “Blasphemy”.

The natural result was that God’s curse fell upon these mischievous Jews. The ringleaders amongst these blasphemers were the Jewish tribes of Bani Nudir. Accordingly they were forced to emigrate from Madinah, leaving behind their hearth and homes. Thus the first curse of God fell upon them as warned in the Torah, that they would be cut off from their people and their estate, if they did not heed the words of God spoken by the mouth of the Promised Prophet.

In the fifth year of the Hijrah, the idolaters made a great effort to destroy Al-Islam in what is known as the War of the Clans or the War of the Trench. On this occasion the Qureysh with all their clans and the great desert tribe of Ghatafan with all their clans, formed an army of ten thousand men and rode against Yathrib. The Prophet on the advice of one Salman Pharsi (see Chapter 13: 1) caused a deep trench to be dug before the city, and himself led the work of digging it. The Army of the clans was stopped by the trench, a novelty: in Arab warfare. It seemed impassable for the cavalry, which formed their strength. They camped in sight of it and daily showered their arrows on its defenders.

While the Muslims were awaiting the assault, news came that Bani Qureysh, a Jewish tribe of Yathrib which had till then been loyal, had gone over to the enemy. The situation seemed desperate. But the delay caused by the trench had dampened the ardour of the clans, and one who was secretly a Muslim, managed to sow distrust between the Qureysh and their allies, so that they hesitated to act. Then came a bitter wind from the sea, which blew for three days and nights so terribly that not a tent could be kept standing, not a fire lighted, and not a pot boiled. The tribesmen were in utter dismay. On the third night the leaders of

the Qureysh decided that the torment could be borne no longer and gave orders to retire. When the tribes of Ghatafan awoke next morning they found the tribes of the Qureysh had departed. They too took up their baggage and withdrew demoralised, without even a skirmish having taken place.

Thus the Muslims were left to face the treacherous Bani Qureysh, who conscious of their guilt fled into their fortress for refuge. Because of God's curse falling upon them, they only begged that they might be judged by a member of the Arab tribe of which they were adherents, instead of the Promised Prophet. The Prophet granted their request. But the judge, upon whose favour they had counted condemned their men to death and their women and children to slavery according to the Mosaic Laws. Thus the punishment, mentioned by God in the Torah for refusing to follow the Promised Prophet about which Abdulla bin Salaam had warned the Jews five years earlier, as read here before, was fulfilled for the second time but in a much harsher manner than that experienced by the Jewish tribes of Bani Nudir, a couple of years earlier. This was "the second curse of God" on the Jews for their disobedience to the Promised Prophet of the final period.

Obviously this incident caused great consternation amongst the Jews, as it reminded them of the destruction of Jerusalem in 607 B. C. when their males were put to the sword and the women and children captured and taken to Babylon as slaves for disobeying the Mosaic Laws of God. Now they realised that either they must accept the Promised Prophet in accordance with the foretelling's of Moses and the prophets before and after him in compliance with the orders of God or alternatively, with a view to take revenge for Bani Qureysh, to prepare such a strong army as would wipe out Muhammad and his teachings from the face of the earth. At this juncture Muhammad's followers were limited to below 5000 men. If the Jews delayed then the number of Muslims would become larger and later on they (the Jews) would not be able to do anything about it. Hence this was a matter of great urgency for the Jews.

The Israelites according to their customary habit of revolting against the wishes of Allah decided upon the latter choice. Therefore for two years they gathered and trained their men at Kheybar, in North Arabia and prepared a vast army of about 50,000 or more, calculated to outnumber the maximum strength of the Muslims.

Accordingly in the seventh year of the Hijrah, they forced Muhammad to lead a campaign against their fully fortified forts of Kheybar and its vast, well-equipped and trained army. Thus they got the Prophet to fall into their well-prepared trap.

Abu Bakr, the Prophet's companion, was commissioned to lead the attack on the first day against the strongest of the forts but he failed to capture it. On the second day, Umar led the attack but with no better result. On the third day, Muhammad gave the command to Ali his son-in-law and declared, "Today I am placing the command in the hands of a person who loves Allah and His Prophet and who never retraces his steps from the field of battle. He shall certainly conquer this fort". This prophecy was fulfilled that very day. This was the lunar month of Safar in the year 7 A.H. or 629 A.D. Hence in spite of severe odds at the battle of Kheybar the Muslims were completely victorious-thus proving once again that none can ever change the decisions of God Almighty for His chosen Prophet.

Henceforth the Jews of Kheybar became the tenants of the Muslims until the expulsion of the Israelites from Arabia during the Caliphate of Omar for their repeated acts of treachery. Thus again the decrees of God Almighty were fulfilled upon the disobedient Jews and they were cut off from what had been theirs for centuries.

It was at Kheybar that a Jewess prepared some poisoned meat for the Prophet of which he only tasted a morsel without even swallowing it, whereupon he warned his comrades that it was poisoned. One Muslim, who had already swallowed a mouthful, died immediately. Muhammad himself, from the mere taste of this poisoned meat prepared by this Jewish lady derived the illness which eventually caused

the Prophet to pass away from this earthly life. Thus Muhammad was also one of the prophets, who wore a martyr's crown just like so many of the earlier Jewish Prophets, who were also murdered by the Jews.

The woman who had cooked the meat was sent up for trial on a charge of murder of the one man, who had died, and for the attempted murder of many more. She said that she had done it on account of the continuous humiliation "the Jews had suffered since the advent of Islam for their refusal to convert". So she had done it out of hatred and revenge. Muhammad, the Prophet, upon hearing her reasons for the crime showed the magnanimity of his kindness and forgave this Jewess. Thus she was saved from the gallows on a charge of murder.

When the Jews of Yathrib made a pact with Muhammad in the first year of Hijrah, they knew perfectly well that he was the Promised Prophet. Therefore they asked him to pray to Allah that the Israelite be blessed with:

1. Facial Beauty
2. Wealth
3. Knowledge

Accordingly, we find the Jews and Jewesses are beautiful to look at. They have large funds at their disposal and may be considered the wealthiest community. Accordingly they control world finances in quite a big way. Many of the scientific discoveries have come from this community. They were indeed blessed by Prophet Muhammad with all they had asked for.

Because of their repeated treacheries to the Promised Prophet and their refusal to follow God's words spoken through him, the Jews have brought upon themselves the curse of the Almighty.

Now the American, the British and the French Governments with their well-connived plans of trying to destroy the teachings of this Promised Prophet (Chapter 29: C-2G) created an artificial homeland for the Jews in Palestine- to repay their financial debts to the Jews

during the two great world wars out of the lands belonging to somebody else *i.e.* the Arabs. Thus innocent Arabs were massacred and their homes destroyed deliberately. Hence this New State of Israel has been constructed out of the blood of innocent Arab martyrs at the point of the gun with the funds of the Jews. Naturally Israel has made enemies of all those around her. But how long can guns and money prevail over the innocent blood of martyrs (Chapter 29: C-6A to C and C-7A to F)? This is therefore a very potential source for a major conflict involving those in this area and those who have contributed extensively to the artificial creation of Israel by force. God Almighty will sooner rather than later right this injustice as foretold in Chapter 29: C-2H) as He has always done in the past.

Therefore if world Jewry desire their own good, they must realise that they cannot have any permanent success on earth and eternal peace and happiness in Heaven, unless and until they accede to Allah's command (Deuteronomy 18: 18-19) and follow his teachings through His Promised Prophet of the final period. Their refusal has been the cause of persecution of the Jews for the past 1400 years throughout Europe and the extermination of Jews in Nazi Germany.

The way in which the Jews can contribute to World Peace and harmony and their own happiness is to follow God's command and accept this Promised Prophet and treat all those around them, whom they have made their enemies, as brothers and to give adequate compensation, and relief. And also to rehabilitate those Arabs whom they have thrown out of their homes which they have destroyed by bulldozers at the point of the gun. If they do this, *i.e.* give equal voting rights and give equal opportunities to all in Palestine *i.e.* Israel, the Arabs as to the Jews, then the various river and other development schemes could be planned for the joint benefit of all-Syria, Lebanon, Iraq, Jordan, Saudi Arabia and Egypt jointly with Israel. They could all become one unit of brothers irrespective of caste, colour or creed and thus unimaginable progress, prosperity, happiness, goodwill and unity would be their lot. This would be a very positive step to World Peace

and happiness amongst men of goodwill, which is now threatened in the Middle East by the ill-will caused by the artificial creation of Israel, and by robbing the land from the surrounding Arabs, a source of constant danger not only to International Peace in general but the foretold destruction of Israel also in particular can thus be removed permanently by following the Old Testaments:

“I will raise (for) them (*i.e.* Bani Israel) up a Prophet from amongst their brethren (*i.e.* Bani Ishmael), like unto thee (*i.e.* “And the LORD spake unto Moses face to face, as a man speaketh unto his friend”—Exodus 33:11), and will put MY words into his mouth: and he shall speak (*i.e.* Al-Qur’an) unto them all that I shall command him.

“And it shall come to pass, (after the passage of sometime at the Battle of Armageddon) that *whosoever will not hearken unto MY words, which he shall speak in MY name, I will require it of (i.e. punish and destroy) him (at the Battle of Armageddon)*” (Deuteronomy 18: 18-19).

“We (*i.e.* Bani Israel) have dealt very corruptly against thee (O LORD), and have not kept Thy commandments, nor the statutes, nor the Judgments, which Thou commandest Thy servant Moses.

“Remember, I beseech Thee, the word that Thou commandedest Thy servant Moses, saying, If ye transgress, I (God) will scatter you abroad among the nations:

“But if ye turn unto ME, and keep MY COMMANDMENTS, and do (*i.e.* follow) them; though there were of you cast out unto the uttermost part of the heaven, yet will I gather them from thence, and will bring them unto the place that I have chosen to set my name there” (Nehemiah 1: 7-9).

Oh! Bani Israel, do not be complacent: do not count your laurels on the strength of your money or your ingenuity; do not be misguided by your ambitious dreams of conquest and domination of all the Arab resources, from Alexandria in the West to the borders of Iran in the east and from the boundaries of Turkey to Madinah including all the

oil resources of the Arabs and the Suez Canal. *Remember well that it was not so long ago that Germany had made itself the Master of the Cream of Europe. Poland Czechoslovakia, Bulgaria, Hungary, Rumania, Yugoslavia, Albania, Greece, Norway, Denmark, Belgium, Holland; and even France were all subjugated. But what happened eventually? Germany was divided into pieces under the control of various conquering forces comprising the Western Bloc, the Eastern Bloc and Poland -their nation destroyed and enslaved. There is still no hope of the unification of Germany! One should learn a lesson from the follies and mistakes of those who depended upon their military might in the past and committed atrocities against mankind because they were temporarily in power. Israel should not commit such crimes as bulldozing the homes of millions of innocent Arabs and throwing them out of their home depriving them of properties without compensation or killing Arab families and burning them in their houses.*

Otherwise Israel is bargaining for the curse of God, which destroyed so many mighty empires in the past and Germany recently. If they do not come to terms with their “Maker” then for their disobedience they will be effaced in what is known as the battle of Armageddon, which is detailed in the last part of this treatise.

Therefore there is little choice, either willingly to surrender to the will of Allah and make yourselves a brother of every other Arab in the area irrespective of his caste, colour or creed, so that all receive equal benefits and the Arabs are compensated for their losses, or face the consequences suffered many times before especially in 607 B.C., and again in 70 A.D., when Jerusalem was twice burnt and destroyed, and more recently in Nazi Germany when millions of Jews were exterminated.

## **H. The knowledge of The Nazarenes, the true followers of Jesus, about the Mission of Jesus**

1. Sergius, son of Udas, a Nestorian Priest was residing at a place called Beheera about six miles from Beersheba. He saw a caravan of Arabs coming from the South bound for Syria. He noticed that in the clear blue sky a speck of cloud was providing shade to the caravan. He remembered immediately that Jesus had foretold this as one of the signs of the Promised Prophet of the final period. At once he sent out an invitation to the leaders of the Caravan to have some food with him. The Caravan stopped near a tree some distance away. The children accompanying the caravan were left in charge of the animals and the merchandise and the elders came to meet Sergius, the monk, who saw that the speck of cloud did not come along but stayed at the tree where the caravan had stopped. He said to them: "You have left someone behind and it is him I wish to meet". They said: "only the children. So he asked that the children be brought along one by one. When Muhammad son of Abdulla was brought the speck of cloud followed him. On this day, Muhammad was 12 years 2 months and 10 days old. The aged priest ran forward and took Muhammad in his arms with great love and affection and told him: "You have on your right shoulder a mark, I wish to see it". Muhammad showed it to him. He kissed it declaring that: "This is the seal of Prophethood, this child is the Promised Prophet". He enquired instantly as to who was related to him. Abu Talib said: "He is my son". Thereupon Sergius replied: "You are not speaking the truth because Jesus had predicted that this child will be a posthumous child and his mother would die in his early childhood, so you cannot be his father". At this Abu Talib replied: "You are right, his father was my brother, Abdulla". Then the priest declared that this child was the Promised Prophet of the last period and that Muhammad



must not be taken any further and certainly never to Syria because the Jews in Syria would recognise him just as easily as he had recognised him from afar, and as they had killed several of their prophets and had attempted to kill even Jesus, they would surely try to kill Muhammad also. Therefore he forced Abu Talib to send this child back to Mecca from here and warned him never to permit Muhammad to go to Syria. Accordingly Muhammad was returned to Mecca after he had stayed for a few days at Beheera as a guest of this Nazarene-the true followers of Jesus of Nazareth. This was the first trip of Muhammad out of Mecca with a trading caravan (page. 22, Vol. 2, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). Jesus had informed his followers that a white speck of cloud will give shade over Muhammad is recorded on page 167 of *The Gospel of Barnabas*.

2. When Muhammad was 24 years 9 months and 6 days old he was declared “AL-AMIN” i.e., “The Faithful and True” by the people of Mecca at a Public Meeting (page 24, Vol. 2, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia* also Chapter 17: D-30).

At this time a wealthy widow named Khadija of Mecca was in need of a trustworthy and faithful person to accompany her caravan laden with merchandise for sale to Syria. When she heard of the declaration of “AL-AMIN” she offered the job to Muhammad, which he accepted after consulting his Uncle Abu Talib.

The caravan was placed in the charge of Khazima, a relative of Khadija and her trusted slave named Masira. Muhammad accompanied them as the third member of the party. They left Mecca a few days later bound for Syria.

When this caravan reached Beersheba, they camped at a well and Muhammad took rest under a tree close by. In front of this place lived a Nazarene priest named Nastura. Immediately

he saw Muhammad taking rest under this tree he came rushing out and took him in his arms and kissed him. The other two companions asked the aged monk the reason for this strange behaviour.

Nastura explained that Prophet Abraham had planted this grove and had prayed there (Genesis 21: 33) and from that time till now only prophets had come and rested and prayed under it. Jacob was comforted when he had prayed under this tree at Beersheba (Genesis 46: 1-3).

Therefore without doubt this young man was the Promised Prophet of the last period of the earth whose coming had been foretold by all the earlier prophets and that Jesus was the messenger, who brought the glad tidings that the Prophet after him would be the great Comforter of the whole universe, who would complete the religion left incomplete by Jesus (St. John 16: 12-13 and Chapter 13: B).

Nastura warned Khazima that they must not go any further because Muhammad would be recognised by the Jews of Syria. Upon Nastura's insistence they sold their goods at Beersheba. The manner in which Muhammad conducted the sales, his behaviour and good dealings won so much praise and popularity that they earned twice as much profit as they would have earned in Syria. Therefore after selling all their merchandise they returned from there to Mecca (pages 24-25, Vol. 2, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

### **I. The Mission of Jesus by Arius from the line of St. John, the Only Heir of Jesus**

According to a tradition Salman Pharsi had given the following information at Madinah, when he converted from the Nazarene faith to Islam in the first year of Hijrah *i.e.* 622 A.D.

Salman was born in a town called Pharas, around 310 A.D. His

parents were fire-worshippers, *i.e.* Zoroastrians. He left his family and went in search of worship of the true God. He met Arius, who was the heir to the teachings of Jesus through the line of heirs established by St. John, the first and only heir of Jesus (Chapter 12: G-13). Salman made Arius his religious preceptor and guide. Salman was with Arius when he died in 335 A.D. He converted to the faith of Jesus not by “Baptism” which Arius informed him was the method of entering the faith of “Nimrod”. Arius informed Salman that Jesus was never “Baptised”. Neither did he “Baptise” anybody nor did he teach “Baptism” (St. John 4: 2). “Baptism” was nothing but the pagan Sun worshippers’ method of being initiated into their religion. Baptism was therefore something hated and despised by Jesus. Accordingly Salman Pharsi was circumcised and made to commit himself to observe as under to enter the faith of Jesus. So Salman become a true follower of Jesus by promising to observe the following conditions (Chapter 12: G-15):

- a. To believe that God is one and alone, who has no father, mother, brother, sister, husband, virgin wife, only begotten son, daughter or any other form of equals or partners. This is the first Commandment of Jesus and to love God with all his heart, with all his strength and with all his mind and soul (St. Mark 12: 29-30).
- b. Jesus is the messenger of God and is therefore not divine (Chapter 12: G-1).
- c. To abstain from wine and strong drinks (pages 5 and 7, *The Gospel of Barnabas*) and from forbidden foods *i.e.* swine flesh, any flesh with blood in it or any food offered to idols (Chapter 12: G-9). Not to eat any food offered in the name of idols in sacramental ceremonies as the body and blood of a god and thus commit a communion with Satan.

Because such food and drinks, instead of securing remission of sins as claimed would instead heap greater sins on the partakers

of such “Holy Communion” and “Sacred Sacraments” (Chapter 12: G-14).

- d. He would observe the holy Sabbath from sunset on Thursday to sunset on Friday. Further, during the Sabbath period, he would not kill any animal or eat meat or do any manual labour or trade. Instead, he would keep this period free for the adoration of God Almighty (Chapter 12: G-7).
- e. He would observe the Mosaic Laws as taught by Jesus (Chapter 12: G-15).
- f. He would pray to God daily facing towards Jerusalem and not towards the East, the rising place of the sun, as was done by Pagan Sun worshippers.
- g. To fear the Day of Judgment when all will be raised up from the dead by God and all will have to give an account of their own deeds on earth and be judged by God (Chapter 12: G-14).
- h. No man will bear the burden of the responsibility of the sins of another (Chapter 12: G-14).
- i. To attain heaven one had to do good deeds (Chapter 12: G-14).
- j. One could become a true lover of Jesus only by following the Commandments of Jesus (St. John 14: 15).
- k. Jesus has declared that it is the truth from him that when the “Evangel” or the Divine Message dictated personally by him in Hebrew and noted in Aramaic Script by the Jewish scribe Levi, son of Alphaeus, will be gone from the hands of his true believers and heirs, the Nazarenes, *i.e.* will be destroyed and will exist no more on earth, then after the same interval as existed between his departure from earth and the destruction of the “Evangel”, the identity of Ahmad Muhammad, the Promised Prophet will be disclosed. This Promised Prophet will be the Holy Spirit of Truth. As long as the “Evangel” or the Divine scripture dictated by Jesus in Hebrew and noted by Levi during

his lifetime will not go away from earth, *i.e.* be destroyed, until then Ahmad Muhammad, the Promised Prophet, the Comforter of the world, who is the Holy Spirit, the messenger of salvation for whose sake everything in the entire universe has been created, will not come (Chapter 13: B).

1. "He shall teach you all things, which I (Jesus) have not yet been able to say to you, because you will not be able to bear them now. He being the Holy Spirit or the Light of Guidance will guide you unto all truths, for he shall not speak from his mouth anything as the words of God save and except whatsoever he shall hear from God Almighty, that he shall recite (*i.e.* Qur'an) and he will show you things to come". He will also confirm the truth of the teachings of the earlier prophets including Jesus. This Comforter will be the final Prophet of God on this earth until the time of restitution of all things (*i.e.* when everything will be resurrected on the Day of Judgment). About this fact, God has spoken by the mouth of all his Holy Prophets since the world began. For example, Jesus quoted that Moses said truly unto their fore-fathers that a Prophet shall the Lord your God raise up for you from your brethren tribe of Ishmael, like unto Moses, who will speak to God as if face to face as a man speaks unto his friend, and him shall you obey in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you. And it shall come to pass after a lapse of some time that every soul, which shall not hear that Prophet, shall be destroyed at the battle of Armageddon from among the people of the earth. Jesus has said that this had been reiterated by all the Prophets from the time of Samuel in the same manner as Moses had said earlier that the teachings of the Final Prophet to this earth will remain until the restitution of the entire Universe on the Day of Judgment. He will be from the brethren tribe of the Jews *i.e.* a descendant of Ishmael whose children are the Arab tribes whilst the Jews are descended from his younger brother Isaac.

- m. Jesus has further warned: “Remember ye are the children of the Prophets saying remember the covenant which God Almighty has made with our forefathers saying to Abraham that from his first-born son i.e. from Ishmael shall come the final Prophet of the world, whose teachings will replace all earlier teachings of the Prophets and he will be a Comforter for the whole Universe, which shall be blessed through him (Chapter 13: B and C).

Then Arius wept bitterly and informed Salman that the original hand-written Holy scriptures of Jesus the “Evangel” recorded by Levi which had been handed down generation after generation from St. John, the heir of Jesus to himself as well as the explanations of the Evangel and the life of Jesus and his examples and miracles and the Revelations written by St. John in Hebrew Aramaic Script had been confiscated from him under orders of King Constantine, when he (Arius) was banished to Illyria in 325 A.D. and these original Hebrew Texts were handed over to Athanasius, Bishop of Alexandria, who burnt and destroyed them. He added Athanasius was a preacher of the Babylonian faith of Nimrod started by Peter and Paul in the name of Jesus which advocated that:

- i. “God is a trinity in unity” instead of “God is one and alone”.
- ii. “Christ is the only begotten son of God” instead of “Jesus is a created being hence inferior to God”.
- iii. “That to enter the religion of Christ you have to be Baptised like the Pagan sun worshippers” instead of “getting oneself circumcised and promising to follow faithfully the teachings of Jesus”.
- iv. “That to pray facing the East, the rising place of the Sun *i.e.* Sun-worship,” instead of “facing towards Jerusalem as taught by Jesus”.
- v. “That to pray before idols of Christ” instead of “prayers are for God only and that prayer before idols is idolatry and strictly forbidden by Jesus”.

- vi. “That good deeds no longer mattered so long as you have faith in Christ, the son of God” instead of “You cannot attain Heaven without doing good deeds as taught by Jesus”.
- vii. “That the laws of God were a curse” instead of “you must live according to the Mosaic Laws as taught by Jesus”.
- viii. “That Jesus is the Redeemer, the Saviour, the Mediator, *etc.*” instead of “No man shall bear another’s burden as taught by Jesus”.
- ix. “That Jesus has come for the whole world” *etc.* instead of “Jesus has prayed for only his believers as confirmed in the New Testament”.

It is thus apparent that the Greek Manuscripts of the Holy Bible now before us are the outcome of the mischief of Athanasius, the destroyer of the “Evangel” and this is further proved by the word “Christos” or Christ being included in the Greek texts now before us—a word coined by King Constantine in the year 325 A. D.

That the Church is aware of this fact will be clear from:

“Papias in the first half of the second century, says that he (Levi son of Alphaeus who is now identified by the Christians as St. Matthew) wrote it (Evangel) in Hebrew Aramaic, and the same statement is found in the statement of early Fathers”· (page 64 of Part IV of the *New Testament* Chapter 25, Summary of the Books of the New Testament of the S.S. Teacher’s Edition of The Holy Bible—The Authorised Version-Printed at Oxford University Press, London).

Hence the coming of the Comforter or the Promised Prophet according to the foretellings of Jesus as calculated by Arius was as follows:

Original Evangel (the Holy Bible of Jesus) recorded by Levi son of Alphaeus in Hebrew was destroyed in 325 A.D.

Less 33 years Life of Jesus on earth 33 A.D.

The Original Hebrew Evangel by Levi existed for 292 Years

The year of destruction of the Original Hebrew Evangel is 325 A.D.

Add the period that the Original Bible existed after Jesus 292 years.

The year in which the Promised Prophet of the final period would become renowned all over the known world by the miracle of splitting of the moon is 617 A.D.

This miracle of splitting the moon with full details is narrated in Chapter 17: F-6.

That Jesus was the harbinger of glad tidings of the coming of the Promised Prophet of the final period (pages 223 and 167, *The Gospel of Barnabas*). This Prophet would be the only prophet after Jesus and there would be no more prophets born on earth after the Promised Prophet (page 225, *The Gospel of Barnabas*).

There would be no prophets in between, Jesus and the Promised Prophet just as there were no prophets in between John, the son of Zakariah, and Jesus and further that like John, the son of Zakariah, was the “Message bringer” of glad tidings of the coming of Jesus so also would Jesus be the harbinger of the good tidings of the coming of Muhammad (page 167, *The Gospel of Barnabas*).

Hence the real mission of Jesus on Earth was not to propagate his teachings, which were to be destroyed by those who would be his professed followers, but to give glad tidings of the coming of the Promised Prophet, the Saviour of the Universe (page 167, *The Gospel of Barnabas*).

That the Promised Prophet of the final period of the Universe will be born in the City of the “House of God” built by Abraham (*i.e.* at the Kaabah at Mecca) which is south of the land of Palestine (page 223, *The Gospel of Barnabas*). He would be from the descendants of Ishmael the first-born of Abraham, *i.e.* the Arabs (page 105, *The Gospel of Barnabas*). That the people of his native town will not accept him and will revolt against him. That he would come eventually as a leader of men to Yathrib (Madinah) and be accepted by the public as the Promised Prophet. That the Promised Prophet would be a great



destroyer of idols and idolatry (pages 167 and 223, *The Gospel of Barnabas*).

That the believers in Jesus would be able to recognise him easily, just as they recognise their own sons by any of these outstanding characteristics:

- He shall have the seal of Prophethood on his right shoulder.
- He shall not accept charity.
- He shall accept a gift of goodwill.

A piece of cloud shall always cover and give shade over his body (page 167, *The Gospel of Barnabas*) and his body would not throw any shadow.

He will be born south of the land of Palestine (page 223, *The Gospel of Barnabas*).

He will be a destroyer of idols and will efface idolatry (pages, 167 and 223, *The Gospel of Barnabas*).

That even though he would not go to any school to learn how to read or write, yet what so ever he would teach, would always be flawless, valid for all time to come, full of logic, simple to understand, easy to follow, meant for universal application and a blessing for the entire universe.

That the final and complete divine message would be put into his mouth and he would utter the same when in a state of trance.

Even though he would rule over large areas yet he would always lead a humble life, earning his livelihood by his own labours, wear simple woollen clothes with numerous patches, have a very kind, generous and forgiving heart towards those who do harm to him, be full of justice, a protector of the weak, widows and orphans and the upholder of the rights of equality for even slaves and also women so that oppression of any description may be banished and idolatry abolished and replaced by love and peace amongst men of goodwill.

Thus he would initiate “Universal Brotherhood” irrespective of caste, colour, tribe, race or other national distinctions.

Arius informed Salman Pharsi that he realised that Salman would have a very long life of over three hundred years or more; as such he shall surely have the opportunity of meeting the Promised Prophet. The name of the Promised Prophet would be Ahmad and Muhammad, according to the information given by Jesus and the *Old Testament*. Arius requested Salman to go to Yathrib after his death and to wait there for the coming of Ahmad Muhammad, the Promised Prophet and when he came to leave all that had been taught by him to Salman and to accept Ahmad Muhammad, the Promised Prophet, as ordered by Jesus in the Evangel. That he could easily recognise the Promised Prophet by these three simple signs:

1. That he would have the seal of Prophethood on his right shoulder.
2. That he would not accept any kind of charity.
3. That he would gladly accept a gift of goodwill.

Thus Salman Pharsi in accordance with the advice of Arius, set out for Yathrib after his teacher’s death in or about 335 A.D. On the way he was captured by a roaming band of Arab Bedouins and sold as a slave to the Jews of Yathrib.

He faithfully served ten Jewish masters, having been sold ten times on the death of each previous Jewish master. In this way he spent about 285 years of his life in Yathrib awaiting, the arrival of Ahmad Muhammad, the Promised Prophet.

In 622 A.D. when Muhammad, arrived at Madinah Salman took the first opportunity that same night of testing for himself as to whether or not this was Ahmad Muhammad the Promised Prophet, as foretold by Jesus and all the prophets before him. Salman offered some dates saying “*This is charity*”. Muhammad replied: “I am extremely sorry but I do not accept any charity”. So saying he requested Salman to

distribute the dates amongst the orphans and the poor that were present there. Thus the first of the signs given by Jesus to recognise Ahmad Muhammad, the Promised Prophet, proved authentic.

On the next occasion Salman again, presented some dates to Muhammad saying it was a gift of goodwill from his side. The Prophet gladly accepted it, ate a few pieces then gave some dates to each of his family member and distributed the rest amongst those present. Therefore the second of the signs given by Jesus to recognise Ahmad Muhammad, the Promised Prophet, was proved.

A few days later there was a funeral amongst the Muslims of Yathrib and Salman Pharsi attended it. As Muhammad went to lend his shoulder to lift the bier, the cloth on his right shoulder was shifted. Salman, who was just behind, saw the seal of "Prophethood". Hence the most vital sign given by Jesus for the recognition of the Promised Prophet was confirmed before his own eyes.

Immediately, with tears of love flowing from his eyes, he fell at the feet of Muhammad and declared before all that this was indeed Ahmad Muhammad, the Prophet of the final period of the Universe, for whose glad tidings Jesus had come on earth and that Almighty God had thus fulfilled the "Sacred Mission" of Jesus. He accepted Islam declaring that with the coming of Muhammad all the teachings of the previous Messengers which had remained incomplete were now to be completed. Then he related his whole life history, which has been given very briefly above.

The Holy Prophet Muhammad collected subscriptions and paid the price for Salman Pharsi and bought him over from his last Jewish master and freed him.

Salman Pharsi died in 35 Hijrah *i.e.* about 659 A.D. at the ripe old age of about 349 years.

### **J. Roman king Heraclius and the golden casket Sakina from the temple of Jerusalem**

The fame of Muhammad as a prophet, who was propagating that God is one and alone had spread far and wide. Heraclius was anxious to find someone who was opposed to this prophet, and yet who would know all about the said prophet. He wanted to check up through such an opponent to satisfy himself whether or not Muhammad was the Promised Prophet according to the Biblical Foretelling's and other records in his possession.

In the year 7 A.H. or 629 A.D. an Arab trading caravan had gone from Mecca to Syria. King Heraclius was then at his palace at Hims. When he heard of the visit of the Meccans, he called for their leader. Accordingly Abu Sufian, the Meccan leader, went into the presence of the Roman Emperor.

Heraclius asked Abu Sufian: "Do you know anything about the claimant to prophethood from amongst your midst?"

Abu Sufian remarked: "Yes, I do know about him from his very childhood."

Heraclius enquired: "Do you consider him a prophet or an impostor?"

Abu Sufian replied: "Most certainly he is an impostor."

Heraclius retorted: "If he be an impostor then how do you explain that his few men defeated your large armies?"

Abu Sufian admitted that the Meccans, in spite of vast numerical superiority, had lost at Badr but at the battle of Uhah, by a clever ruse, they were able to attack the Muslims from the rear and inflict great losses upon them. Also at their third encounter the Muslims had escaped annihilation, because of the trenches they had dug and so no real battle could be fought.

Heraclius remarked: "These are certainly not the signs of a false

Prophet or an impostor. If he were an impostor there should be only one major flare-up and he would keep on rising steadily until his force was spent out and then his end would come in a big drop. But in this case it is clear that sometimes you win and sometimes he wins. These are not signs of falsehood but of truth. Anyway, please tell me, what does he order you to do and what does he forbid you?”

Abu Sufian replied:

1. “He asks us to bow in humility morning and night in prayers in the same way as we make our wives and slaves bow before us.
2. “He asks us to pay taxes on our wealth for the upliftment of the needy.
3. “He forbids us to eat blood, meat of animals dead (due to disease or natural death) or flesh of carcasses of animals (killed by some animal of prey)”.

Heraclius explained that the first is supplication to God and is the highest form of adoration of the Almighty Creator. The second is charity which we give also to the poor. The third is something good from all points of view including health, morality *etc.* “All these which you have described are evidence of his purity and not of his being an impostor”.

He then enquired from Abu Sufian if Muhammad had ever broken any treaties.

Abu Sufian admitted: “No, not so far, but this time I feel he will break the ten-year treaty signed at Hudeybiyah in 6 A.H.”

Heraclius enquired: “What makes you so confident that he will violate this treaty, when he has not broken any treaties before?”

Abu Sufian stated that the Pagan Meccans, in spite of the signed truce of Hudeybiyah, had not only infringed the said treaty by giving help to the tribe of Banu Bakr in their attack on Khuzaa, (a tribe which was on friendly terms with the Muslims,) but when members of the

Khuzaa tribe had sought shelter in the sanctuary of Kaabah, there also the Meccans had massacred them. The Meccans fearing revenge had sent him to Madinah for an extension of the treaty of friendship which was refused because Ibn Salim, one of the members of the injured tribe, had told their tale of woe to the Prophet, who was now preparing to attack Mecca. Thus he was preparing to break the treaty of peace and friendship with the Meccans.

Heraclius retorted: "Then it is clear that you are the breakers of this treaty and not Muhammad. Anyway, can you give me your personal estimate of his character?"

Abu Sufian declared proudly that the Meccans had given him the title of "Al-Amin" or "The Faithful and True", when he was only 24 years 9 months and 6 days old and admitted that his character was indeed the best amongst all Meccans.

Heraclius smiled and admitted: "I never expected this truth from his enemy" (for further references please refer to pages 309-310 of *Tarik-e-Waqidi* in Urdu by Navalkishore Press, Lucknow).

Then Heraclius brought out from his treasury a "Golden Casket". He disclosed that this Casket was called "Sakina". The word "Sakina" is derived from the verb "*Taskeen*". In Hebrew-Arabic "*Taskeen*" means "to satisfy one's belief convincingly". Hence "Sakina" means some evidence which satisfies fully one's belief. This casket "Sakina" or evidence to satisfy totally was given to Adam, the first man, by God and it contained the pictures of all the leading prophets. This casket had been handed over for safe keeping from generation to generation, until it came to Noah and from him step by step to Abraham, and from him to his son Ishmael and from him to his son Prince Kedar, who received orders from God to give it to his cousin Jacob when he was blessed with the title of Israel. As the Israelites would be needing it during their marches under Moses and at the time of the conquest of Palestine etc., it would be carried in their tabernacle.

Whilst as far as the children of Ishmael were concerned until the

coming of the Promised Prophet of the final period, they as the special chosen people of God would be protected by God Almighty against all attacks on the Kaabah. Hence even though many of the Arabs of Mecca took to “*Idolatry*” and other corrupt practices they were not punished as the Jews were for their disobedience and pagan worship of Baal and Tammuz (*i.e.* Nimrod). Nor was the Kaabah destroyed just as the temple of Jerusalem was twice destroyed. Nor were their menfolk put to the sword and their women and children sold into slavery, a fate the Jews suffered whenever they reverted to Nimrod’s religion. Therefore, it would appear that the descendants of Ishmael received a very favoured treatment from God Almighty, which even the Jews as one of the chosen people did not enjoy as already shown in Chapter 8: G. Thus it is obvious that on account of the Promised Prophet Muhammad they enjoyed the most exalted position in the whole of humanity as descendants of Ishmael, the heir of Abraham.

When Prince Kedar (for descendants of Ishmael see Chapter 8: H) handed over the golden casket “Sakina” to his cousin at Beershaba, Jacob gave him the glad tidings that on that day a son and heir had been born to him at Mecca whose name would be Hamal and from his descendants would come the Promised Prophet of the final period of this earth, according to a dream God had shown to him the previous night. When Prince Kedar returned to Mecca he found that Jacob’s dream was true. That he had after all these years been blessed with a son and heir in his old age through his Arabian wife Gazera (page 289, Vol. 1, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). This casket was removed from the temple of Jerusalem and taken to Rome in 70 A.D. when the Romans ravaged Jerusalem and looted all its treasures.

After giving all this background, Heraclius opened the casket and showed Abu Sufian the pictures of the important prophets, which were depicted on some kind of silken parchment, commencing from Adam, As soon as the page containing Abraham was shown, Abu Sufian said there was a faint resemblance in this face to that of Muhammad’s. Heraclius stated that was his great-grandfather Abraham. When he

turned to the next page, Abu Sufian said there was greater resemblance in this face to that of Muhammad. Heraclius said that it was the picture of Ishmael from whose children was to come the Promised Prophet. When the last page was shown Abu Sufian pointed out Muhammad, Ali, Abu Bakr, Osman and Omar. Heraclius replied that in that case Muhammad was indeed the Promised Prophet of the final period and not an impostor. After the capture of Mecca by the Muslims in 8 A.H. when Abu Sufian converted to Islam he made the above statement on the basis of this knowledge that Muhammad was the true Promised Prophet. Upon hearing this the Holy Prophet Muhammad declared that any Meccan taking shelter in the house of Abu Sufian would be forgiven his past crimes against the Muslims. Thus were all the Meccans pardoned.

In the year 7 A.H. Muhammad sent messages to several of the ruling kings of the world inviting them to Islam. Wahiya Qalbi was sent to Heraclius, who also showed him this Golden Casket "Sakina" and gave the above background, informing him that in 70 A.D. when Jerusalem was razed to the ground by the Romans, this golden casket and other treasures of the temple were carried away to Rome. When the page of Abraham was shown, Wahiya Qalbi said the face had some resemblance to that of Muhammad, and when the next page was shown he said there was a very great resemblance between in this face and that of Muhammad. Then Heraclius said that it was the picture of Ishmael, the eldest son and heir of Abraham, from whom would come the Promised Prophet. When the last parchment was displayed Wahiya Qalbi pointed out Muhammad and those around him as Ali, Abu Bakr, Omar and Osman. Heraclius admitted that Muhammad must be Ahmad, the Promised Prophet.

Wahiya Qalbi said to Heraclius: "Since you know very well that Muhammad is the Promised Prophet of the final period then you should convert to Islam." To this he replied: "You go and explain the Islamic teachings to my chief priest, and if he agrees to become a Muslim, I too shall do so". Accordingly Wahiya Qalbi saw the chief



priest, who was the son of a holy man named Nathaniel.

This priest asked for the exact date of the birth of Muhammad, which Wahiya Qalbi gave him as Monday the 12th day of the Arabic lunar month of Rabiul Awwal 53 lunar years before Hijrah. He sat and calculated this date and day according to the Roman calendar which would correspond to 20th April 570 A.D. Then he said: "You are right". Because on this very date 59 solar years ago one Monday morning he had been to see Emperor Justin II who ruled as the Roman Emperor from 565 to 578 A.D. This Emperor was not only very well-versed in Law but was also a great astrologer. He was surprised to see the contorted face of his friend so full of worry and anxiety. So he had asked him: "What is wrong with you." In reply Emperor Justin II said: "Today has been born a child with his foreskin miraculously Circumcised from before his birth. Those who will not listen to him when he grows up will be denied Heaven. I know of this from foretelling's of Jesus who had foretold that the day on which all idols all over the world fall by themselves and when the idols are lifted, they will fall again and again each time announcing that today has been born the Promised Prophet of the final period, the Saviour of the Universe, who will destroy idols and idolatry (see page 169, *Gospel of Barnabas* also Chapter 17: D 5-11).

"This morning I was surprised to find in the Royal Chapel that the beautiful statue of The Christ had very strangely come out of its firm solid base and was lying on the floor. As I lifted the idol of Christ, it said that this day idols all over the world have fallen upon the ground because of the birth of the Promised Prophet, who was born miraculously with his foreskin circumcised from his mother's womb. This child will be a destroyer of idols and idolatry, so out of fear of him we, idols, have fallen down all over the world". This priest replied that it should not be very difficult to find this child from amongst the Jews. To this Emperor Justin II replied that according to his information this child had not been born in a Jewish family but in a community which was related by blood to the Jews, as such he did not know where he had been born. This child

is from one Ishmael, the eldest son of Prophet Abraham (page 105, *The Gospel of Barnabas*).

The chief priest asked Wahiya Qalbi if it was correct that Muhammad was born with his foreskin already miraculously circumcised from before his birth. Wahiya Qalbi confirmed that this was correct.

Then he made several enquiries about Muhammad based upon the foretelling's of Jesus as to the various outstanding features of the Promised Prophet. On being fully satisfied with the answers he got, he declared openly that there was no doubt whatsoever according to the teachings of the real Jesus that Mohammad was the Promised Prophet and the Comforter of the world, who completes the religion of God on Earth and whom the other prophets of old have foretold about.

"I hereby accept Islam". So saying he proclaimed before the public that Muhammad was the Promised Comforter of the world about whom Jesus and the earlier Prophets had foretold. The Christians were so enraged at this statement that they killed this old high Priest on the spot.

Heraclius, seeing this, grew alarmed at his possible fate at the hands of his subjects. Accordingly he decided to postpone his intention of becoming a Muslim in fulfilment of the teachings of the real Jesus. All this happened in the presence of Wahiya Qalbi, who narrated this on his return to Madinah.

#### **K. The causes leading to the surrender of Jerusalem in 16 A.H. / 637 A.D. and its after effects**

At the time of the birth of both Jesus and Muhammad, Syria and Palestine were part of the Roman Empire. From their borders started the homeland of the Arab tribes.

You have already read how the Jews living in Arabia started making trouble for Muhammad when he shifted his headquarters from

Mecca to Madinah. Their hostility soon affected even the border tribes and skirmishes began to take place. It was to end this mischief and establish law and order that a small band of 3000 Muslims were sent in 8 A.H. Without any cause or provocation this small band of Muslims were attacked by a very large Roman Army comprising over one hundred thousand soldiers under the personal command of Emperor Heraclius himself in what is known as the unprovoked massacre of Muslims at Muta by the Christians.

The Romans, encouraged by their victory, over the Muslims, who were outnumbered to the extent of about 35 Christians to every Muslim, thought they could vanquish and destroy Islam in its infancy because the Muslims were still so few in number.

Therefore in the Year 9 A.H. the Romans prepared to invade Madinah, the very heart of Arabia. Muhammad, however, anticipated their move and marched out with whatever little force he could muster to intercept their advance. When he arrived at Tabuk, the enemy lost heart and did not dare to venture further when they thought of the battle of Muta where only 3000 Muslims without any question of retreat or surrender or flight had fearlessly fought 100,000 Christians to the bitter end. Only a few Muslims were left alive, but the losses of the Romans were almost a quarter of their army or over 25,000 men.

Muhammad never attacked anybody unless they forced him to do so. History is itself witness that Muslims never were the first to shed blood, but when provoked they refused to submit quietly. Thus this struggle was postponed for a time.

The Romans, taking advantage of the temporary lull, decided to join hands with Pagan Iraq to cause further unprovoked aggression on the Muslims in trying to destroy Islam in its infancy. To stop this harassment of the Christians, an expedition under Usama was sent out by Abu Bakr within 19 days after Muhammad's departure from earthly life, because they were left with no option but to defend themselves.

Abu Bakr accordingly began to make preparations for a campaign

in Syria after the completion of the conquest of Iraq. He despatched Khalid bin Sa'id with orders to halt at Tayma and wait for further instructions. He was not to take the offensive and was to confine himself to defending the borders of the infant Islamic state in case he was attacked by the enemy. He was also required to persuade the neighbouring tribesmen, excepting those who had the stigma of apostasy to join him. Khalid bin Sa'id carried out these orders and successfully assembled a host of tribesmen under his banner at Tyama as a precaution against further attacks by Christians.

At a distance of three stages from Tayma, Heraclius the Roman Emperor gathered together Arab tribes of Lakhm, Chassan, and Judham, who dwelt on the borders of Syria, with the object of fighting the Muslims. When the Caliph Abu Bakr was informed of these activities of the enemy, he sent an order to his general: "Proceed—Do not stop. Pray to Allah for help". In compliance with this order, the Muslim forces moved forward and as the enemy dispersed they took possession of his camping ground. The happy result of this skirmish was that the tribesmen who had come to the fight against the Muslims now embraced their Faith. Khalid received fresh orders to march forward but with the necessary precaution of keeping the rear of the army safe. Accordingly he moved on and halted between Zira and Abil. Here he defeated Behan, a Roman chief, who wanted to intercept his march. As Khalid had asked for reinforcements, the Caliph made the necessary arrangements to send him help. Just at about this time the troops that had been sent against the apostates of Yemen, Umar Bahrain and Tiham returned to the capital. 'Ikrama and Dhul Kula' Himayari (as scions of the ruling family of Yemen) were also among them. The Caliph now despatched four different armies to Syria under the command of Abu Ubaidah, Shurahbil bin Sufyan, and Amr bin al As. Of these commanders three had to march from various directions towards Balqa or the highlands of Syria, while Amr bin al-As was to proceed through Palestine. They had separate regions assigned to them for conquest, but the combined purpose of their operations was thus

expressed, "I know that the Romans will soon be engaged with the Muslims. Hence I wish that the armies of the highlands should have no difficulty in marching to the lowlands, and *vice versa*. They should not be interdependent". Tabari tells us, "it happened as he (the Caliph) had guessed".

The total number of soldiers in the four armies mentioned above was 27,000, excluding Khalid's contingent. When Heraclius heard of the movements of the Muslims, he also made preparations for war on a large scale and encamped at Hims. He decided to despatch separate columns against the various armies of the Caliph in order to stop them from joining together. Theodoric, the brother of Heraclius was sent with 20,000 soldiers against Amr bin al-As; George the son of Theodoric with almost the same number against Yazid bin Sufyan; Darackis against Shurahbil bin Husna and Caycar bin Nestus with 60,000 followers against Abu Ubaidah. The advance-guard of Theodoric encamped at Thinia, on the highlands of Palestine. The Muslims were a little perturbed on seeing the large number of the Roman soldiers and consulted Amr bin al-As who commanded the biggest section of their army. He replied: "My opinion is that we should all unite. The reason for this is that if men like us assemble together then they cannot be defeated simply on account of their numerical inferiority. But if we remain dispersed then none of us will have enough men to meet his opponent, as they have sent separate armies against each of us. Let us all join forces at Yermuk".

The Caliph approved of this opinion and confirmed it thus: "Assemble together so that you become one single army. Break the lines of the infidel army with the Muslim force. Remain convinced of the fact that you are the supporters of the cause of Allah, and that He brings victory to the supporters (of His cause) and degradation to those who do not believe in Him. A group of persons like yourselves cannot be discomfited merely because of numerical inferiority. And indeed groups of ten thousands or even more will be ruined if they take to the path of sin" therefore beware of falling on the path of sin. Assemble

under your banners at Yermuk and every chief must offer prayers along with his men”.

Heraclius also changed his strategy on hearing of these arrangements and ordered his armies to collect at one place. They were to select a site which was wide in the front and narrow in the rear. Theodoric was nominated commander-in-chief of the entire army and George was to lead the vanguard. The right and left wings were placed under the command of Darrackis and Caycar respectively. They were also told that fresh reinforcements would arrive soon under Bahan. In compliance with these instructions of the Emperor, the Roman army encamped at Waqusa on the bank of the Yermuk. They had selected this plain because, protected as it was on one side by the river and on the other by a precipitous hill, it would give the Romans courage and shelter. The Muslims soon realised this, and leaving their own position they moved and encamped in front of the Romans. Thus they were sandwiched between the Muslim army in their front and the hills in their rear. When Amr bin al-As saw this he said to his men, “O People! Be of good cheer. The Romans are now enclosed and few of those who are enclosed can really prosper”. For three months the Muslims kept them in this condition, because the river and the hills made it difficult for them to launch an open attack, while the Romans were hesitant to hazard a charge. This confined their activities to petty skirmishes only. But the Romans were beaten in almost every attempt they made. In the month of Safar, when the Caliph received a report of the existing state of affairs; he wrote to Khalid bin Walid that he should hand over immediately the charge of the affairs of Iraq to Muthanna and take his army by forced marches to Syria. Khalid carried out the orders and reached Yermuk in the lunar month of Rabi-ul-Akhir, covering the distance with such rapidity that the legs of his horses gave way. The same day Bahan brought to the Roman army a fresh contingent which was led by priests, who exhorted the soldiers to fight against the Muslims.

It has been recorded by historians that the Romans were two

hundred thousand strong while the number of the Muslim soldiers could not have been more than 46,000, including the 9,000 followers of Khalid and certain other reinforcements. But in spite of their numerical superiority, the Romans remained in their trenches for one month even after the arrival of Khalid. The priests did all they could to excite their feelings by telling them that Christianity was in danger. But this had very little effect, and it was not without great efforts that after the lapse of months they came out of the trenches in the month of Jamadi-ul-Akhir.

The Muslim battalions were under separate commands and had no commander-in-chief over them. On receiving information of the movement of the Roman army, they decided that each battalion should fight under the absolute command of its chief. This type of warfare is known among the Arabs as "*Tasanud*". When Khalid saw this he addressed the entire army and said: "This is an important day which will live down in history. Throwing aside the notions of personal dignity and pride we should follow such a course of action that we make it impossible for the enemy to take advantage of the situation. To fight under separate commands is to divide our strength. You should decide upon a course which will suit the occasion". On being asked to express his own views, he continued, "The Caliph seems to have had an impression that these expedition would be easy. Had he known the conditions that we are actually facing he would have certainly placed the entire charge of the armies in the hands of one commander. Now I am of the opinion that we should have all our forces under one supreme command and every day one of the Amirs (commanders) should bear this responsibility in rotation.

"If you have no objection, then for to-day the supreme command may be entrusted to me". All the Amirs agreed with this proposal and elected him as their commander for that day. As the Romans had drawn up their forces afresh, the Muslim commander also arranged his men in a new order which the Arabs had never seen before. The entire army was split up into forty contingents which were placed under as many

experienced chiefs. The soldiers were told that was the most suitable arrangement when the enemy had the advantage of numerical superiority, for this tactic made the army appear twice as strong as it actually was. The middle flank was commanded by Abu Ubaidah, the right wing by Shurabhil bin Husan and Amr bin al-As and the left wing by Yazid bin Abu Sufyan. One of the contingents was under Abdur Rahman-bin Khalid, who was only eighteen years old at that time. After the battle of Badr the Holy Prophet had introduced the practice of getting the Sura "Anfal" recited to the soldiers before fighting commenced. This duty was performed by the "*Qari*" (*i.e.* reciters of the Qur'an), while the *Qass* (*i.e.* storytellers of brave deeds) told stories of valiant deeds of heroes to create fresh enthusiasm among the soldiers so that they might fight fearlessly in the battle. Accordingly Yazid bin Abu Sufyan would go to every contingent and tell the soldiers, "You are like provisions for (supporters of) Arabia and the helpers of Islam, they are like provisions for (supporters of) Rome and the helpers of infidels and idolatry. O Allah! this day is one of Thy great days. Send Thy help to Thy slaves". The army of Islam had one thousand Companions (of the Prophet) of whom one hundred had the distinction of having fought at Badr. When Khalid was arranging the lines of his soldiers, a certain person said: "How vast is the Roman army, and how small is ours". Khalid replied promptly: "No, our army is far mightier than that of the enemy. The superiority of an army does not depend on numbers, it is the resultant victory or defeat that really counts".

The following incident on the field of battle may be related to illustrate the miraculous powers of Truth. The Roman general George, the son of Theodoric, came forward and said indignantly, "Where is Khalid? Let him come near me". Khalid promptly accepted the challenge, and placing his charge in the hands of Abu Ubaidah he went up to the Roman general. 'The two generals now exchanged promises of safety, and then coming close to each other they stood midway between the two armies. George opened the conversation: "Tell me the truth, for free men tell no lies. Do not deceive me, for noble men



deceive not. I want to know if your Prophet had received a sword from God, which was bestowed on you and which now is responsible for your victories". "No", said Khalid, "Then", inquired George, "how is that you are known as the sword of Allah?" Khalid replied, "The Almighty Allah sent His Prophet Muhammad (Peace be upon him) to us. He preached Islam to us, but in the beginning nearly all of us kept away from him. Gradually some of us embraced his religion while others remained at a distance and continued to oppose him. I was among those who was against the movement. But soon after Allah changed our hearts, made us to bow our necks and guided us on the right path. When I accepted the guidance, the Holy Prophet said 'O Khalid! you are a Sword from the swords of Allah, which has come out of the scabbard to fight against the infidels'."

"And now among the Muslims I am the deadliest enemy of the infidels". George said, "Khalid, you have told the truth. Now tell me what the message of Islam is". Khalid replied, "To confess that none is to be worshipped except Allah and that Muhammad is His slave and Prophet, and to accept as truth the message that the Prophet has brought from Allah". "What if somebody does not accept it?" asked George. "He should be prepared to pay the *Jizya*" replied Khalid (*Jizya* is a tax payable for maintaining an army to give protection). George now inquired as to the position of a person who accepted Islam. "*It is the command of Allah,*" said Khalid, "*that all Muslims are equal in status, whether they belong to the upper classes or to the lower ones, whether they have accepted Islam earlier or later*". "What about the person who embraces the faith today?" asked George "He will enjoy the same position of equality and in fact, one of precedence", replied Khalid. "How is that possible?" George inquired again. Khalid explained, "*when we accepted Islam the Holy Prophet was alive. He received Divine revelations and preached to us the commands of Allah and we used to see with our own eyes his miracles and powers. In these circumstances our conversion to Islam was inevitable. Today you do not see these things and still you embrace with Faith. Hence you have*

*precedence over us.” George then asked, “Can you swear to me that you have told me nothing but the truth, that you have not deceived me, and that you have made no attempt to please me”. Khalid replied, “By Allah! I did not tell you a lie, nor do I hate you or anybody else. I have given the correct answers to what you have asked me. Allah is my Helper”. “Undoubtedly, you are right”, said George, and throwing away his shield he requested Khalid to instruct him in the teachings of Islam!*

Khalid took him to his tent and after giving him a bath he instructed him in the principles of Islam and made him offer prayers, acting himself as the Imam.

Now that one of their commanders had gone over to the Muslims, the Romans launched a general attack which nearly broke the ranks of the Muslim army, although ‘Ikrama and Heritha remained firm. Consequently when Khalid and George came out of the tent they found the Romans penetrating through their lines. Khalid at once cried out to his people, and they responded to his appeal by making a counter charge and pushing the enemy back. Khalid was soon in the thick of the battle, at the head of his forces. Fighting continued with unabated fury till the afternoon, when prayers were offered by mere signs. It was a remarkable sight! George, who was an enemy of Islam in the morning, could now be seen fighting alongside Khalid and launching attacks on the Romans with great enthusiasm and religious fervour. Fortunate as he was, he received martyrdom in the thick of fighting, shortly after offering the prayers which had brought him within the folds of Islam, and thus went triumphantly into the Presence of his Lord. In the evening the Romans began to lose ground, Khalid completed their rout by making a fresh charge with contingents taken from the centre. Thus he separated their infantry from the cavalry. The Roman horsemen, unable to bear the brunt of this attack, turned back and fled. The Muslims were happy at this victory but they did not leave their position in pursuit of the fugitives. Having been thus dislodged the Romans took shelter in the trenches, but their victors soon came upon them, and as there was a hill behind them it was not possible for them to escape.

A very large portion of the huge Roman Army was killed and even the tent of their chief, Theodoric; the father of George, was seized by Khalid. After the conclusion of the battle, Magrib prayers were offered, as its time was about to expire. Even after this crushing defeat of the Romans, stray fighting continued throughout the night and Khalid had to supervise operations from Theodoric's tent.

*The number of Muslims who were slain in this action is stated to have been as low as 3,000 whilst the losses of the Roman Army were over two hundred thousand. Does this not show clearly that God Almighty must have intervened actively?* It was this unbelievable victory which caused a great impression upon the minds of the Romans about the purity and the truth of the teachings of Al-Islam. This incident opened for the Muslims immense possibilities of furthering the teachings of "Surrender to the will of God".

Another remarkable incident of this campaign may also be noted here. Before the battle, the Romans sent an Arab spy. He carefully studied the condition of the Muslim camp for one day and one night and then reported: "They are RAHIBS (Saints or priests) in the night and horsemen in the day In establishing and maintaining the Truth they are so firm that they cut off the hands of their monarch's son, if they find him guilty of theft and pelt him with stones till death if he is accused of adultery".

Following this victory and in order that the Romans might not be able to attack Arabia again from Palestine and Syria it was decided to occupy these two areas.

During October 636 A.D. the real siege of Jerusalem commenced with an army of Muslims under Khalid bin Walid. There were ten days of battles, with neither side giving ground even though the Muslims were badly outnumbered. On the eleventh day the Muslims were joined by the victorious Islamic armies under Abu Ubaidah who had

completed the conquest of Syria.

The defenders of Jerusalem, although they were still outnumbering the Muslims ten to one lost heart and consulted Kumama, the high Priest of Jerusalem, as to what should be done. He had with him some handwritten Scrolls from the “Evangel” regarding the surrender of Jerusalem. After consulting these he declared that Jesus had prophesied that no matter what anyone might do the defenders of Jerusalem would not be able to protect the city against one Omar, son of Khattab, who would be the head of the followers of Ahmad; the Promised Prophet. “The full, detailed description of this person is here. Take me to the walls so that I may see their leader; if he is the same then I shall surrender the city but if not then know for certain that even if anyone attacks this city for as long a period as 30 years with a superior number of forces and equipment yet they cannot succeed in storming this sacred city of King David”.

Accordingly a temporary truce was called and the leader of the Muslims was asked to appear in front of him. Abu Ubaidah stepped forward, watched by Khalid bin Walid on one flank and Abdur Rahman bin Abu Bakr on the other. When Kumama saw Abu Ubaidah from the walls of Jerusalem, he proclaimed to the defenders that:

1. This is not the man whose description has been given by Jesus, therefore he would not be able to conquer Jerusalem!
2. The winter months are ahead when the attackers would not be able to keep warm and fight.
3. Oh defenders of Jerusalem! take courage and fight. An easy and sure victory should be yours.

During the four winter months that followed a bitter battle was fought every day resulting in serious losses to the people of Jerusalem!

When spring set in all hope of victory for the defenders of Jerusalem vanished. Their casualties during the past five months had been staggering, yet the Muslims were unshaken in spite of their small

numbers! Again they consulted Kumama, who was taken once more to the walls of Jerusalem. A truce was called for and again Abu Ubaidah stepped forward.

Then Kumama, through a Nazarene, who knew Arabic, said as follows:

“Know very well that this sacred city cannot fall even if attacked for thirty years according to the foretelling’s of Jesus unless and until a particular person comes and you are not him”.

Abu Ubaidah replied: “Then know very clearly that we shall stay here if necessary for thirty years until the city falls”.

Kumama replied: “What do you want from us? If it is riches we are prepared to give you riches, but, do not trouble us any further”.

Abu Ubaidah replied: “We are not interested in your riches and wealth”.

Kumama asked: “Then what do you desire?”

Abu Ubaidah replied:

- a. “Become Muslims and we accept you as our brothers; then there will be no barrier between you and us.
- b. “If not then surrender and we shall leave you to follow your religion but you will have to pay a small tax for the maintenance of the army for your protection as we cannot allow the treacherous Christian Empire of Rome to stab us by deceit as they had done invariably for the past eight years.
- c. “If not, and if you compel us against our will to take the city by force of arms with much loss of lives then know that we shall have no option left but to take compensation for our losses.

“Therefore think well on the various options before you and act in a manner to your best interest so that you cannot blame us later on”.

Kumama replied: “Your first condition is not acceptable to us, the

second is degrading and as far as the third is concerned we have no option left but to fight”.

Abu Ubaidah thereupon asked: “Can you kindly give us the description of the man to whom this Holy city will fall?”

Kumama replied:

*“His name is Omar. His father’s name is Khattab. He will be the follower of Ahmad, the Promised Prophet of the final period. He will be the second President of those who have surrendered themselves to the will of God”.*

Abu Ubaidah replied immediately:

*“Omar bin Khattab, the follower of Muhammad the Promised Prophet is now the second Khalifa (in English: Caliph i.e. the viceroy or president of the Islamic State)”.* He asked if Kumama would recognise him if he called him from Madinah, his seat of Government.

Kumama replied that he would most certainly be able to recognise him as the fullest descriptions about him had been handed down generation after generation from Jesus. If the descriptions given were exact then only would he hand over the keys of Jerusalem and surrender this Holy city without any further fighting.

Abu Ubaidah, in consultation with his co-generals Khalid bin Walid; Yazid bin Abu Sufyan and Abdur Rahman bin Abu Bakr sent a full account to Khalifa Omar at Madinah and declared a truce pending his arrival.

The message was delivered in Madinah a few days later after morning prayers by the messenger to Omar at “Masjid-e-Nabavi” (The mosque where the Prophet’s body has been laid to rest in Madinah). The message was read out instantly by Omar and public opinion was sought.

Osman opined that there was absolutely no necessity for Omar to leave Madinah and take the trouble to go to Jerusalem as its defenders

would sooner or later have to surrender or suffer the consequences. That would be a complete humiliation for the Nazarenes.

Ali bin Abu Talib disagreed and said it would be a bad policy to crush the spirit of the vanquished. Instead, by acceding to such a simple request of the People of Jerusalem, it might open their hearts and win them over. Love was better than might. That was the repeated example set by the Holy Prophet Muhammad.

Omar accepted the opinion of Ali. In the next few days he made necessary arrangement of the Government, appointed Ali in his place as Khalifa (viceroy) during his absence and explained to him all affairs of the State. Then he set out from Madinah for Jerusalem in March 637 A.D. or Rajjab 16 A. H. taking with him:

1. A camel
2. A slave named Aslam bin Barkha
3. A large leather pouch for carrying water
4. A packet of dates
5. A packet of "*Sattu*" (*i.e.* barley or gram crushed into powder which could be eaten without further cooking but only after adding some water).
6. He tied a metal plate on his back.
7. He did not even take a tent on the journey or extra clothes for changing or wearing.

Some of the people of Madinah accompanied him on the first day's journey, a few on the second day also, whilst the rest returned to Madinah after the third day's journey. Omar and his slave pressed on unaccompanied towards Jerusalem, with the minimum stoppages enroute.

There is no difference whatsoever between the human rights of a Master and a slave under Islamic rule. Accordingly on the first day the

President or Caliph Omar rode on the camel, whilst his slave led the camel walking on foot. Therefore on the next day Omar, President of Arabia, led the camel on foot, whilst his slave rested on the back of the camel. In this manner they continued their journey till they reached the Muslim camp outside Jerusalem.

Still, as soon as it was known that Omar, the Great, was marching from Madinah, everybody who was a disbeliever literally trembled with awe, even though his whole retinue comprised only his slave and his camel. There was no pomp or even bodyguards!

When news filtered in that Omar was coming some of the Muslim generals went to meet him. When Omar saw them wearing garments made of the finest silk, he remarked expressing his deep dissatisfaction: “So soon after the Holy Prophet’s passing away have you fallen into the Persian habits of luxury and easy living? How can Islam progress with such leaders as you?”

The Muslim army were very much concerned at the thought of what the dwellers of Jerusalem would think of the Muslim Kingdom if they saw their great awe-inspiring chief and president in Omar’s shabby attire, his tattered clothes with patches all over, leading a camel with his slave riding on the beast as his entire retinue. Because by rotation it was the day on which by turn the slave was to ride the camel and Omar was to lead it on foot!

Therefore they quickly brought the finest Turkish charger and handsome dress of valuable materials and kept on pleading with him to put it on just once for only a few hours. Much against his wishes and with the greatest reluctance he put on the gorgeous robes over his own humble dress.

The Turkish horse started to prance as soon as Omar mounted on its back. He realised at once that what he had done would make him proud and arrogant and the unruly behaviour of the animal reminded him that he was acting contrary to the “*Sunnah*”—the teachings and examples of the Holy Prophet Muhammad. So he quickly jumped off



the horse and threw off the beautiful silken garments exclaiming: "Miserable things to make one vain and haughty".

He then ordered his slave to get onto the back of the camel and taking its rope in his hand led it to the gates of Jerusalem without any further arguments!

Kumama, the high priest, stood on the top of the wall of Jerusalem examining from the scroll in his hands all the details given by Jesus about Omar, the second President of the followers of the Promised Prophet and after satisfying himself he asked: *"Who is the great Caliph Omar, the man leading the camel or the one sitting on its back and what is the relation between the two of them?"*

The reply was the man leading camel is Omar, the President of Islam, and the man riding it is his slave, Aslam.

Then Kumama enquired: *"Why is the master leading the camel and his slave riding it?"*

The Muslims replied that under Islam there was no distinction between a Master and his slave as far as human rights, equality, justice, prayers, penance, fasting, food or clothing are concerned. They are both alike. The Master is to treat his slave in the same way as he treats himself and his wife and children in all matters. Since, on the previous day, Omar had ridden on the back of the camel and his slave Aslam had led it on foot, so today it was Aslam's turn to ride on the camel and Omar was to lead it on foot.

Then Kumama, after consulting the scroll in his hands, asked: *"Please count the number of patches on Omar's clothes and tell whether some of the patches are of leather?"* After the counting he was told that there were fourteen patches including several of leather.

The people of Jerusalem marvelled at the courage of this simple man, who had come alone all the way from Madinah through many a conquered town enroute without guards. They were all filled with awe and literally trembled at his sight.

Kumama publicly declared from the walls “Oh citizens of Jerusalem! read, here is the original Aramaic Hebrew notings on this scroll recording the foretelling’s of Jesus concerning the surrender of Jerusalem Read it for yourselves and you will find that the man outside our gates is the leader of the followers of Ahmed, the Promised Prophet, and is the man to whom this city shall fall according to the foretelling’s of Jesus. You may do what so ever you like, but you will not be able to defend Jerusalem against him according to the warning of Jesus. I have tested and checked everything from father’s name, his position as head of the religion of the Promised Prophet Ahmad, the manner in which he will arrive leading a camel with his slave resting on the camel, the tattered clothes he would be wearing with more than a dozen patches even though he is the ruler of the Muslim Empire and details of his face, features, colour of skin and his principles of justice towards the weak i.e. his helpless slave, are all tallying with what Jesus had said and recorded in this hand written scroll in Hebrew in Aramaic Script.

“Under such circumstances there is no option but to surrender the city. *Tell me, Oh elders of the city I if you all agree to follow the advice of Jesus.* That seems to me to be the best and only course left open to us”.

They all agreed. Then Kumama came down from the walls. The gates of Jerusalem were thrown open. Kumama personally handed over the keys of the city to Omar in token of surrender. (If anyone is interested in further details he may consult pages 308 to 316 of “*Tarik Waquedi Kamil*” in Urdu published by Nevalkisore Press, Lucknow).

First of all Omar, followed by the crowds of dwellers, went to the temple. On approaching the arch of David, he recited some verses from the Qur’an which speak of the Prophet King David as bowing down to God. He then prostrated himself in humble adoration to Allah.

Thereafter he called Kumama, the high priest, and asked him to show him where to pray in the temple of Jerusalem. Kumama pointed to the “Shakhrah”, the sacred stone left by the ancient Prophets. The impressed crowds watched him pray there also. He visited reverentially

the sites sacred to the Jews as also to followers of Jesus and also prayed there *because the Muslims believe in and respect all the earlier Prophets!*

As a large number of Military Officers and Provincial Governors had gathered there, Omar prolonged his sojourn in the Holy City of Jerusalem for many days and issued various necessary orders, which impressed the Nazarenes as they were full of justice, equality and forgiveness especially towards them and preserved their rights and privileges.

So great was the impact of the visit of Omar to Jerusalem on the advice of Ali and so great the opportunity to the believers of Jesus to study the teachings of Muhammad at close quarters in great detail, that very soon crowds of Nazarenes with their priests started converting to Islam, *realising that the mission of Jesus was to foretell of the coming of "Ahmad, Muhammad, the Comforter of the world, the Promised prophet"*. Since the Promised Prophet had come so they had to abandon the previous teachings of the Evangel, which had been burnt and destroyed by Emperor Constantine in 325 A.D., and follow this Promised Prophet if they desired their salvation.

Not only the Nazarenes spread over the Middle East, Iraq, Iran, Egypt and North Africa, but also the pagans living in nearby areas were so absorbed by the lofty ideals of Islam and the wonderful conduct of its President in tattered humble clothes giving equality to all including even slaves that it shook their conscience. They realised here was something which was undreamt of so far and was practised actually by Islam. It was universal brother hood of love for all. This caused the inhabitants of these areas to participate in a storm of conversions to Islam. Thus Islam spread like wild-fire from mouth to mouth. Everyone hearing its wondrous principles and teachings realised it was incomparably better than any other religion so far on the face of the earth from the time of Adam.

Thus Islam spread to China and India in the East, to Morocco and Spain in the West and to Abyssinia, Somali, and East Africa in the

South. A short period of about three decades saw people of all the known continents, of colours from black, brown, yellow, to fair and white, speaking a variety of tongues, having different manners and customs, bonded together in the common brotherhood of Islam for the first time in the history of mankind since the curse of God on Nimrod, which broke up the unity of the human race at the tower of Babel. Such a spread of love and goodwill between man and man, irrespective of caste or colour or nationality had never taken place before.

The last of the Heavenly books confirms the mission of Jesus as follows:

“And when Jesus, son of Mary said: O Children of Israel! Lo! I am the messenger of Allah (come) unto you (*i.e.* the Jews), confirming that which was (revealed) before me in the Torah and bring glad tidings of a messenger (*i.e.* the Holy Prophet Muhammad), who cometh after me, whose name is Ahmad (this is the other of the two popular names of the Holy Prophet Muhammad). Yet when he hath come unto them (*i.e.* the children of Israel and the followers of Jesus) with clear miracles, (many of them) they say: This is mere magic.

“He (Allah) it is who hath sent His messenger with the guidance and the religion of Truth, that He (Allah) may make it superior over all other religions, however much the disbelievers are averse” (Qur’an 61: 6 and 9).

*It was on the basis of these passages of the Qur’an that the Nazarenes accepted Muhammad as the Promised Comforter of the world, who would be the spirit of truth and would perfect the religion which was left incomplete by Jesus.*

## **L. Why the Jews hated Jesus**

One day about the end of his tenure on earth, Jesus was in the temple of God at Jerusalem, when this incident took place.

“Jesus answered: ‘As God liveth, I have not the devil at my back, but I seek to cast out the devil. Wherefore, for this cause the devil

stirreth up the world against me, because I am not, of this world, but I seek that God may be glorified, who hath sent me into the world. Harken therefore to me, and I will tell you who hath the devil at his back.

“If I work iniquity, reprove me and God will love you, because ye shall be doing His will, but if none can reprove me of sin it is a sign that ye are not sons of Abraham as ye call yourselves, nor are ye incorporate with that head wherein Abraham was incorporate. As God liveth, so greatly did Abraham love God, that he not only brake in pieces the false idols and forsook his father and mother (Chapter 6: E and F), but was willing to slay his own son in obedience to God (Chapter 7: F)”

“The high priest answered: “This I ask thee, and I do not seek to slay thee, wherefore tell us: who was this son of Abraham?”

*“Jesus answered: The Zeal of thine honour, O God, enflameth me, and I cannot hold my peace. Verily I say, the son of Abraham was Ishmael, from whom must be descended the Messiah promised to Abraham, that in him should all the tribes of the earth be blessed’.*

Then was the high priest wroth, hearing this and cried out: ‘Let us stone this impious fellow, for he is an Ishmaelite and hath spoken blasphemy against Moses and against the law of God’.

“Whereupon every scribe and Pharisee, with the elders of the people, took up stones to stone Jesus, who vanished from their eyes and went out of the temple. And then, through the great desire that they had to slay Jesus, blinded with fury and hatred, they struck one another in such wise that there died a thousand men, and they polluted the holy temple. The disciples and believers, who saw Jesus go out of the temple (for from them he was not hidden), followed him to the house of Simon” (pages 457-459, *The Gospel of Barnabas*).

Hence the Jews hated Jesus, because he openly declared that the “Saviour” who will come will be from the children of Ishmael *i.e.* Muhammad.

Thus it will be clear the sacred mission of Jesus was not only to reveal the Evangel and correct the Mosaic Laws but also to announce to the world and to prepare the way for the coming of the Saviour *i.e.* Muhammad, the Splendour of God and His Messenger for whom the entire universe has been created. As such Jesus is the harbinger of the good tidings that the prophet after him is Muhammad, the Promised Prophet of the final period.



## Chapter 14

# The Fruits of Disobedience to Holy Jesus



It is well known that the curse of Allah fell upon King Nimrod at the tower of Babel, and broke up the unity of mankind by causing disputes, fights and separations. As long as this accursed religion continues to exist, *there must be disunity, and the destruction of man by man.*

If Christianity is the real religion of Jesus and not that of the cursed King Nimrod then the historical records of the past 2000 years should surely show that with the spread of Christianity has also developed unity which tends to make mankind into a single brotherhood of love and peace, irrespective of a person's birth, colour, status, culture or nationality.

### A. Some of the consequences

Was St. Paul right in what he did? Could he have had any authority from Jesus? These are the questions posed in one's thoughts. The very last sentences of the Holy Bible give us the answers:

“For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book:

“And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the Holy city, and from the things which are written in this book” (Revelation 22: 18-19).

If this is correct then St. Paul and his followers must have suffered from the curse of Allah. Now let us refer to a very few instances out of thousands.

### **1. Disputes between the Nazarenes and the Brethren**

There were very serious disputes around 61/62 A.D. between St. John and the 112 followers of Jesus (Acts 11: 2-3: 15: 1-2 and 24) now known as Nazarenes, as well as St. Paul and the dissidents including St. Peter and their “Brethren”, who had increased to many thousands by about 60 A.D. This dispute took such a violent form that in 62 A.D., St. John, the 112 Nazarenes and their followers had to flee for their lives from Judea into Syria and other countries.

### **2. The Death of St. Paul in Rome**

“*The Encyclopaedia Americana*”, Edition of 1956 Vol. 24, page 160, shows that Paul was arrested, punished and beheaded in 64/65 A.D. at Rome, under orders of Nero. If St. John was in the wrong and not Paul, then surely St. John would have been arrested, punished and beheaded!

### **3. The cause for the Two Destruction of Jerusalem**

When Jerusalem was filled with followers of Tammuz or Nimrod, what happened? Jerusalem was razed to the ground and obliterated in 607 B.C. by king Nebuchadnezzar. Now Jerusalem was once again full of the Brethren after the flight of St. John and the Nazarenes. The faith of the Brethren was the same Nimrodic faith for which Jerusalem was destroyed earlier. So God’s curse again fell on the Brethren. Jerusalem was once again destroyed and razed to the ground in 70 A.D. by the Romans. Thus Jerusalem was destroyed twice for the same cause *i.e.* because its populace took to Nimrodism, once under the name of Baalism and then under the name of “Brethren”. Does this not open one’s eyes to the curse in the last sentences of Holy Bible quoted above?

Are any more examples still necessary?



#### **4. The Last Warnings of St. John**

Approximately twenty five years later St. John cautions the followers of Jesus to stay far away from the religion of Nimrod of Babylon and warns that this religion (which had been given a new shape by Paul and Peter and their Brethren) would not only delude the world, but eventually it would also lead to its annihilation after seven Empires have come and gone (Revelation Chapter 17 and 18).

#### **5. The Disunity of the Church**

If the Brethren faith was true then like the Nazarenes they would have remained united as one religion with Jesus as its author. But already in the second century, it was split up into three segments *viz*: The churches of Rome, Antioch and Alexandria.

#### **6. The cause of Disunity**

On page 44 of “*Islam and Christian Theology*” by J. Windrow Sweetman, part 1, vol. 1, published in 1945 by Lutterworth Press, London and Redhill one reads:

“And someone had described the third century as one of the most unhappy of the beginnings of the controversy about the relation of the Son of God to the Father. The question of the divinity of Christ took first place in theological discussion ... but the problem was raised as to how this recognition of Christ as Saviour and this worship of Him as Lord could be explained in relation to a religion which had asserted at the cost of its own blood a pure monotheism against the polytheism of the Roman world? Eusebius says that during the years of peace which preceded the Diocletian persecution, the Church fell on evil days and showed signs of degeneracy”.

If the Church was adhering to the doctrines of Jesus during the third century then there could be no scope for disunity but if it was following the cursed religion of Nimrod of Babylon then there was no

chance of unity. What do facts show? Which religion was the church following? The religion of Jesus of Nazareth or some other Jesus?

## **B. The Curses due to the Burning of the Evangel**

At the Nicaean Council of 325 A.D., Emperor St. Constantine decided in favour of the “Trinity in unity” theory advocated by St. Athanasius. In spite of this, Arius persisted that God is Alone and Jesus is inferior because he is a created being, whilst God has never been created but is an everlasting identity from eternity to eternity. He proved this from the original manuscripts in his possession containing the Evangel in Hebrew Aramaic script recorded by Levi and St. John. Therefore Arius was exiled by Constantine at the suggestion of Athanasius and all the original documents in the possession of Arius were seized and burnt.

If the real teachings of Jesus were burnt, then God’s curse would fall positively. Did it so happen?

### **1. St. Athanasius**

History shows that Allah’s curse fell on St. Athanasius. He was exiled five times. At one time, with a price on his head, he had to spend seven years in the deserts of South Egypt, and this caused the loss of his eyesight (page 27 of “*A popular History of the Catholic Church*” by Philip Hughes Universe Book Edition of 1958 published by Burn Oates and Washbourne Ltd, London). Thus St. Athanasius spent his life haunted by the curse of God because of the part he played in burning the *original Evangel of the Real Jesus*.

### **2. Emperor St. Constantine**

Emperor Constantine, in spite of being raised to sainthood by the Church, did not escape from the curse of Allah either as will be clear from the fact that;

His death was that of a pagan Pontifex Maximus according to the

*Cambridge Medieval History* Vol. IV-The Byzantine Empire, Part 1, Byzantium and its Neighbours—Edition 1966. On page 2 commencing from line 18 it states:

“Nothing is more striking in the Eusebian account than the strongly pagan and traditional features of the ceremonial which attended the death of Constantine. The ritual which surrounded the “sacred” palace and the Emperor’s DIVINE person can be traced back to the ruler-worship of the ancient East”.

In other words he died the death of Nimrod the cursed! The Roman Senate even placed him among the pagan gods (page 479 of “*Babylon the Great has fallen!*” by The Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society).

### **3. The Destruction of the Roman Empire**

Constantine had devoted his whole life and energy to mould the Roman Empire into a single united power. But the curse of Allah made him undo what he had achieved. He divided the Roman Empire, on his deathbed, between his three sons Constantine, Constantius and Constans.

This cursed action caused a continuous civil war between the Armies of the three rival *Emperors*. Thus, much of the old Roman world vanished permanently during the chaos and confusion that followed. This act of Constantine laid the very foundations for the total destruction of the Roman Empire. Famine and plagues followed. To maintain a strong army in these conditions meant inflation, devaluation, and heavy taxation.

The Governors of the distant provinces, owing to the weak Central Governments could act independently—thus causing, a breakup of the Roman Empire.

Recruitment to the Roman forces became a permanent problem, which taxed all the resource of the Empire. This made necessary the

recruitment of barbarians in the army. These Barbarian generals eventually took over the Western Empire and set themselves up as Kings. Thus started the Dark Ages of Europe!

#### **4. The Dark Ages**

As a curse for burning of the Original Evangel of Jesus, which was a light of Allah for the guidance of Mankind, the whole of Europe was severely punished and plunged into the Dark Ages—a thousand years of agony, of groping in the dark without any light or guidance!

#### **5. The Church in Christendom**

The following frank confession is found on page 188 of “*Life Everlasting in Freedom of the sons of God*” by the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society (1966).

“For the past sixteen centuries (since 325 A.D.), since the founding of what is called Christendom, there have been conflicts between the various religious organisations of Christendom and the political powers or authorities, between the ecclesiastical powers and the secular powers. True, there have been marriage unions of Church and state, but even within such marriage of the religious clergy and the politicians there have been struggles to determine who is or should be on top, the Church or the State, as to whether the Church should bow to the will of the State or the State to the will of the Church. The Church-State difficulty is not yet settled altogether, the ways of keeping friendly relations varying from country to country, but with difficulties increasing due to the rise of powerful Communist Governments”.

It is evident that the Christians have not yet shaken off the curse that fell upon them in 325 A.D. when they deliberately burnt the Original Evangel dictated by Jesus and recorded by Levi during his lifetime and by St. John a few years later.

### **C. The Cause of the downfall of Emperor Heraclius**

The Western Roman Empire had long ago come under barbarian control owing to the curse of the burning of the Evangel. The Eastern Roman Empire was in a (chaotic state around 610 A.D. The advent of Heraclius (610-641 A.D.) at the head of an army from North Africa did not end the tale of disasters which followed Constantine's decision to divide the Roman Empire among his three sons. The first ten years of Heraclius' reign witnessed sensational Persian triumphs, unequalled since the days of the Achaemedes. Antioch fell in 611, Jerusalem in 614, and the conquests of Syria and Palestine were followed shortly by that of Egypt. Heraclius at one point even contemplated a return to Carthage. In this condition of mind he had the treasures, taken by the Romans from the temple of Jerusalem in 70 A.D., opened. To his great surprise he discovered from these certain records, which said that these would be opened by him when he would be in his present desperate condition. They also contained the advice that he should become the follower of the Promised Prophet, who would be a descendant from the brethren tribe to the Jews and had already begun his preachings. If he obeyed this advice he would regain all his lost territories, but if he did not accept the Promised Prophet then he would lose them again. Also he would find description of this prophet in the last sheet in the golden casket, "*Sakina*".

This gave him renewed confidence. In a series of brilliant campaigns, based largely on the North-Eastern region of Asia-Minor, Heraclius shattered finally the military might of Persia around 629 A.D. and regained Syria, Palestine and Egypt.

His failure to convert to the religion of Islam as required by Jesus of his Nazarene or true followers soon cost him his regained Empire, when the Muslims took over Syria, Palestine and even Egypt by 641/642 A.D. We have seen reports earlier of his attempt find the truth (Chapter 13: J). Does not all this speak for itself for one who thinks?

## **D. The Crusades**

The Latin word “*Crux*” means “a cross”. Hence Crusade stands for a Holy war of the Cross. There were at least six military and two children’s Crusades by the Church.

### **1. The Causes leading to-the Crusades**

Fierce pagan Turanian nomads from Turkestan overran a large portion of the Muslim East during the eleventh century. These Seljuk Turks, as they were known, demolished beautiful cities, massacred their population by the millions and burnt down their Islamic libraries containing valuable books, records and literature, most of which have been lost to the world forever.

After causing unimaginable destruction and bloodshed, it dawned upon these barbarous Turks that they were ruining a culture far more advanced than their own. This realisation made them give up their pagan Nimrodic religion. They circumcised themselves and became devout Muslims, surrendering their lives to the Will of Allah.

These new rulers were shocked to find that in Jerusalem, the Christians were following their previous pagan faith of:

- a. Trinity in Unity.
- b. The blasphemy of calling a created being the only begotten son of God.
- c. Idolatry.
- d. Baptism instead of circumcision.
- e. Instead of following the Mosaic Laws as taught by Jesus they were following the religion of Nimrod.
- f. The sign of the Cross of Tammuz (Nimrod) to ward off evil.

Naturally they protested against these Nimrodic teachings. By presenting the Qur’an they showed, what the real teachings of Jesus

were! They also quoted therefrom that mischief-makers would corrupt the teachings of Jesus and blaspheme against God in his name. Further that Jesus would disown such idolaters on the Day of Judgment. That they as Muslims believed in Jesus as one of the great Prophets They also accepted his miraculous birth and the other miracles performed by him as mentioned in the Qur'an (as read in Chapter 10: A-O).

This protest of the Seljuk Turks simply frightened the Christian Churches. They knew that if this truth came out from Palestine through the Christian pilgrims visiting Jerusalem, then all would be lost for Christianity. It would be revealed that Emperor St. Constantine and St. Athanasius had burnt the Original Evangel together with the Gospel of St. John, and his other works, all in Hebrew Aramaic script, in 325 A.D. That all the books and records on Mithraism were burnt within the next 50/75 years with the backing of the Roman Emperors, so much so that except for excavations no other records were left in Europe or North Africa to show that Christianity was nothing but Mithraism. They were most apprehensive of the fact that Nazarenes, the true followers of Jesus had converted to Islam according to the advice and teachings of Jesus some 250 years earlier. The Christian Churches were very much afraid that if these truths became known to the Christians then they would also convert to Islam. That would be the death knell of Christianity!

Therefore these truths had to be suppressed and kept concealed from the Christian public. That was the sole reason for which the Church decided that Islam, the religion of Surrender to the will of Allah, must be removed in order to save their corrupted religion. Hence to prevent the truth from becoming known to the Christians a campaign of hate against Muslims was started even in spite of the fact that the Muslims are believers in Jesus. This hatred for Islam is still prevalent today. Why?

Accordingly crusades or holy wars of the Cross to perpetuate the sign and initial "*Tau*" or upright cross of Tammuz (Nimrod) were launched by the Church without any logical justification whatsoever

except for the suppression and destruction the truth!

## **2. The Primary Crusade**

Peter, the Hermit of Amiens, Walter the Penniless, and other fanatics led an army of about 10,000 strong in 1096 A.D. They were deceived by the Church into believing that because their cause was right, God would give them an easy and convincing victory. They went through Hungary and Byzantium into Asia Minor. Here they were cut to pieces by a small force of Muslim frontier guards. Thus it became obvious that if their cause was divine or right, then they should have defeated easily the few Muslim Guards they had encountered.

## **3. The First Crusade**

This shocking result, instead of opening the eyes of the Christians to the truth, made them still more fanatic. Accordingly a fully equipped, armed and trained army of 30,000 soldiers was prepared under French Generals in 1096 A.D.

“Man proposes, Allah disposes”. The Christian clergy were out to hide the truth of Allah’s religion of surrender to His will. But Allah wanted the Christians to know Islam from close quarters, so that on the Day of Judgment the Christians would not be able to deny their knowledge of the existence of the religion of “Surrender to His will”. Therefore a period of about 88 years saw them in constant contact with Muslims.

This contact eventually became the cause of the end of the Dark Ages of Europe. It was indeed one of the best opportunities given to the Christian Crusaders by Allah.

This army fought their way through Asia Minor. They took Antioch in 1098 and finally captured Jerusalem in July 1099. The Crusaders celebrated this victory outside the walled sacred city by riding their horses through the blood and over the bodies of the slaughtered Muslims. Was this the way for a religious people to



celebrate or were these Christian crusaders the worst type of pagan barbarians? Were these the teachings of Jesus or of Nimrod of Babylon?

Could such victory ever last? Can it not be compared to the recent forcible creation of Israel by Christians over the blood of the innocent Arabs? Something that they could not do through the numerous Crusades they are now trying to do through the Jews. Can such victories bring about a permanent peace for any length of time in the Holy lands? Does one imagine for a moment that victory through bombs, guns and military strategy is greater than the might of Allah? Will not history repeat itself? Will not justice prevail eventually? Are these the ways to achieve International Peace and Goodwill? Do such questions require an answer? Will not Allah's will prevail ultimately? Has it not so happened in the past?

The Catholic kingdom of Palestine was set up with Jerusalem as its capital by the force of arms and bloodshed. Godfrey of Bouillon was made king under the title of "Defender of the Holy Sepulchre". Their main object seemed attained. The "*Tau*" for Tammuz (Nimrod) had displaced Islam, the religion of "Surrender to the Will of Allah" in the Holy land. For almost 88 years from 1098 A.D. to 1187 A.D. Jerusalem remained a captive city in the hands of these barbarian horse-riders who celebrated their military victories by riding over the blood and bodies of the slaughtered Muslims. This is what Israel is also doing to-day with the backing of the Christian Nations!

To perpetuate their hold upon Palestine there now sprang up the most striking of all the institutions of medieval Catholicism-the religious orders whose members were not priests but soldiers, vowed to poverty, chastity and obedience. They were the defenders by the sword of the Holy Places for Christianity. The most famous of these were the Knight Hospitallers and the Knights of the Temple. Thus everything conceivable according to human intelligence and military strategy had been done. Yet what was the final outcome?

#### **4. The Second Crusade**

After about 48 years of Christian rule over Jerusalem came the news that Muslims were winning back the Holy Land. Bernard of Clairvaux called for the second great Crusade. The call was answered by the Kings of Europe. Romans, Germans, and the French responded. The Holy Roman Emperor Conrad III decided to attack from one side with his German knights, whilst King Louis VII of France would do so from the other. This was in 1147-48 A.D. Their joint armies totalled over a million and a quarter soldiers. Against them were only 4000 Muslim slaves. The Muslim soldiers were on leave for the “Eid” Holidays when this surprise attack was made by the might and strength of entire Europe. So well did these personal slaves of the Muslim Ruler fight, that the Christians were routed, in spite of their numerical superiority of 300 Christians to every single Muslim. Does this not show on whom Allah’s curse fell to make the second Crusade a complete fiasco in spite of the overwhelming odds in their favour! Does it require any imagination to realise that it was the curse of Allah which was still hounding the Christians?

Was this not the curse on Nimrodism from the Tower of Babel?

#### **5. The Third Crusade**

Saladin, an Armenian Kurd educated at Damascus, a devout Muslim, a cultured gentleman, an able statesman, and a brave warrior captured Jerusalem in 1187 A.D., along with nearly all the cities around it. He declared the city open to all Jewish and Christian Pilgrims from any part of the world who would be allowed to come freely and practise their faith in whatever manner they liked.

Christian Europe was roused from end to end. All the Kings of Europe including England joined in this Crusade. Armies several millions strong were collected, trained and equipped.

Emperor Frederick Barbarossa going overland with his army

through Asia Minor tasted Allah's curse by being drowned whilst crossing a river. His army was scattered!

King Philip Augustus of France and Richard I, "The Lion Heart", King of England went together by sea. But Allah's curse which caused disunity amongst mankind at the Tower of Babel fell upon them. The two kings quarrelled and Philip soon returned home from the Holy Land!

Saladin informed Richard that he had already declared Jerusalem open to Christian and Jewish pilgrims if they came unarmed. But armed Crusaders and their knights would not be permitted to enter Jerusalem. Richard remained and fought bravely but he failed to regain control of Jerusalem. Hence Richard had to return from the Holy land deeply disappointed without being able to visit the sacred places! Was this not a curse for King Richard of England?

The curse of the Lord continued to haunt Richard. When this brave Crusader King was returning from the Holy Land, instead of being revered and honoured by the Christians he was captured by the Christians and imprisoned! Can this ever be a reward for one who was pursuing a holy cause—an imprisonment by the Christians for 6 or 7 years? Eventually he had to be located and subsequently ransomed! He reached his kingdom after his Crusade in 1199 A.D. only to die shortly after, thus the curse of Allah haunted the Christians!

## **6. The Fourth Crusade**

An extract on Pope Innocent III who was responsible for this Crusade is given hereunder from page 265 under Chapter 22 of "*A History of Europe*" by H. A. L. Fisher, Warden of New College, Oxford, published by Houghton Mifflin Co., Boston (1939) by kind permission of Curtis Brown Ltd., London:

"The Pontificate of Innocent III"

"As we cross the threshold of the thirteenth century the dream of

world dominion, which had died with an Emperor, springs to life again in the policy a Pope. We come to Innocent III, the proud Roman patrician and trained canonist, who, reaching the Papal chair at the early age of thirty-seven years and profiting by a temporary eclipse of the Empire, brought the Papacy to the summit of its power. This is the Pope under whose rule the Western Church was imposed upon Constantinople, who dared place England and France under interdict, who launched the most successful of the Spanish crusades, who exacted from the rulers of England, Aragon, and Portugal the surrender of their respective countries as fiefs to be held of the Holy See, and did not scruple first to excommunicate King John, and then when the culprit had made an abject submission, to set aside the *Magna Carta* and to excommunicate the barons by whom it was supported. It was this energetic ruler who cleared the Germans out of central Italy and Sicily, made himself master of Rome, preserved against dangerous opposition the Sicilian inheritance of his ward, the child, Frederick, fomented a terrible civil war in Germany, and then made and unmade emperors on terms most favourable to the Roman Church, and finally crushed out the formidable Albigensian heresy in Southern France, and with it the civilization of a brilliant people”.

In 1201 Pope Innocent III called for a further Crusade. This mighty Catholic army with the Pope's blessings went to Venice en route to Jerusalem. From there they made a sudden unexpected attack upon Constantinople, the capital of the Eastern Catholic Roman Empire. These Crusaders sacked Constantinople in 1204 A.D. and massacred its Christian population for several days without even sparing the women and children. The Byzantine Catholics fled for their lives to Western Anatolia. From here these Christians recaptured their Capital in 1261 from the hands of the so-called Holy Crusaders of the Pope. Constantinople never recovered from its destruction by the Roman Catholics. This was the main cause of its fall into Muslim hands in 1453 A.D. Since then it has formed a part of Turkey.

Does this not show what happens as a result of disobeying Jesus and forsaking his religion for Nimrodism? How the curse at the Tower

of Babel keeps on haunting Nimrodism or whatever name one may call it! The Popes taking on the title of Nimrod of “Pontifex Maximus—the Infallible” and the wearing of his royal purple robe with a Crown on his head do not represent anyone but this Blasphemer of Babylon, who started the religion of trinity in unity in rebellion against the Almighty. Nimrodism or Christianity—the name does not change the religion. Nor does calling the former paganism and the latter a divine religion make any difference. Both still remain identical. Both comprise worship of praying before idols, blasphemy of calling a created human being the son of God, that God is a multiplicity or a trinity and paganism of believing in the sign of “*Tau*” for Tammuz or the upright cross, the banner of the Crusaders.

## **7. The Fifth Crusade**

Frederick, King of Sicily, was elected Emperor in 1212 A.D. by the will of Pope Innocent III. One of the conditions was that he would lead a Crusade. Pope Innocent III died before this was fulfilled. Pope Honorius III (1216) got Frederick to renew his pledge every year. When Gregory IX became the Pope in 1227 he insisted that Frederick fulfil his pledge.

The statement of Frederick is recorded on page 279 of “*The Saracen Blade*” by Frank Yearby, published by Hamilton & Co. (Stafford) Ltd., London in 1963 as follows:

“But I had one misfortune—gentle Honorius died two years ago” he said, “Since that time I’ve had to deal with Gregory IX, that same Cardinal Hugo of Asitia from whom I took the Cross. He is Innocent’s image. He plagued me so much that in the summer of 1227 I assembled my hosts for the Crusade. But pestilence broke out amongst us—and more than half my forces died. I had put out to sea when I, too, was struck down. When I returned to port, and put myself under the care of my Saracen leeches, His Holiness branded me a liar, said I was not ill, that my preparations were a farce, and excommunicated me”.

Does this not show how the curse of Allah again struck the forces of Christianity by reducing the army to half and causing disunity between the Emperor and the Church?

Next summer in 1228 Emperor Frederick went to Jerusalem with his forces. But instead of fighting, he made a pact with the Sultan that he would not cause any damage if he was permitted to go to Jerusalem and get himself crowned King of "Entire Christianity" in the Holy Sepulchre. This would raise his status in the eyes of the Catholics even higher than that claimed by the Pope.

Accordingly he was crowned Emperor of Christendom in the Holy Sepulchre in 1228 A.D.

On his return he found that Papal soldiers had taken over his kingdom! A short war drove them out. Gregory again excommunicated him and endeavoured to rouse Christendom against him but alas in vain!

Do not all these historical facts show how the curse of the Lord haunted the Christians? Could this ever have been possible if the Christians had followed the smallest part of the doctrines of the Real Jesus?

## **8. The Children's Crusades**

The six above-mentioned military Crusades including the Primary one of ten thousand strong in 1096 A.D. proved to be miserable failures. The Holy Land continued to remain in the possession of the Muslims. It was thought by Christendom that what armed men could not accomplish might yet be achieved by innocent children. Two children's Crusades were organised in 1212 A.D. The result of these Holy Crusades was to send some 50,000 European children to their death or into slavery! Many were sold into slavery by those very Christian Ship-Owners, whose fleets were engaged and handsomely paid to carry them to the Holy Land. None of them ever reached their destination! An unparalleled disaster for children of such a magnitude in the history of

mankind has never happened. Could such a calamity ever take place if these Christians were following the teachings Holy Jesus? No!

### **E. The Civilisation of Europe**

The Almighty gave the Christians two wonderful opportunities—their 88 years of occupation of Jerusalem and their 800 years of contact in Spain with Muslims.

Thus the Christians were brought into close contact with Muslims. They could attain knowledge from Islam on the two main aspects of human life on earth:

1. Spiritual and religious
2. Material and worldly

As far as the former is concerned, they failed apparently to take advantage of it because of the brain-washing done by the Christian Church's preachings of "*Hate Islam*—the religion of Surrender to the Will of Allah". Any Church advocating hatred to the surrender of one's self to the will and pleasure of the Creator cannot by any stretch of the imagination be a divine religion of goodness. These were not certainly the teachings of the Real Jesus but of course, of Nimrod, the mighty hunter in rebellion against God (Genesis 10:9) *i.e.* Constantine's Christ!

As far as the latter is concerned, the Europeans learned from the Muslims about new plants, new fruits, new colours, new fashions in dress, new designs of houses, new architecture, the manufacture of sugar, spices, rice, lemons, apricots, melon, cotton, muslin, damask, lilac and purple. The manufacture and use of glass, glass mirrors, the mariner's compass, gun-powder, cotton-paper, writing paper, leather and iron goods, swords *etc.* The simple numerals (1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9 and 0) which we now call Arabic numerals, higher mathematics, Algebra, and many subjects of art and science have thus come into Europe from Muslim sources. Its universities taught culture and became the fore-runners of the present European Civilisation.

Finally, the Crusaders' contacts with Muslims contributed to the breakdown of feudalism in Western Europe, to the growth of the middle class, to the strengthening of national monarchies.

Thus it was Islam's influence upon Europe that brought about the end of the "Dark Ages" and established the present civilisation in Europe.

*If Islam's material values can bring about the present scientific progress for the European group of Nations from the U.S.S.R. to America as well as China, surely its spiritual and religious teachings of "Surrender to the Will of Almighty Allah" can also bring about "International Peace and goodwill amongst the Nations". Here indeed is food for thought!*

## **F. The Warnings of Jesus**

In addition to the few examples quoted, countless more could be cited to show how the Church in Europe has burnt fellow Christians who have died at the stake taking the name of Jesus and how Christianity was spread by the sword and fire. The most vivid example was of the Christian Spaniards when they made forcible conversions of the Central and South American Indians, who were following the Nimrodic religion with the very same principles as their own.

Now to conclude this section let us study only one of the several warnings of Jesus:

"Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

"Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns or figs of thistles?

"Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit, but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.

"A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

"Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down and cast



into the fire.

“Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

“Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.

“Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?

“And then will profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

“Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock.

“And then rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon rock.

“And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand:

“And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house: and it fell: and great was the fall of it (St. Matthew 7: 15-27).

If the teaching of St. Paul and the Brethren were correct, then the fruits of their tree would at least be as sweet as those of the Nazarenes, who remained one united group until they accepted the teachings of the Promised Comforter according to the advice of Jesus and they accepted the religion of “Surrender to the Will of Allah”. But if St. Paul, St. Peter and their Brethren were ravenous wolves in sheep-skin then their fruits or followers would break up into different groups and sects and there would be conflicts among them as happened at the Tower of Babel to the people of Nimrod, the cursed. *“In Babylon The Great Has Fallen! God’s Kingdom Rules”* by Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society

(1963) it is stated as follows on pages 496-498:

“As the American nation grew and spread from coast to coast its separation of Church and State by the National Constitution resulted in its lands becoming the home of more than two hundred religious sects, all of which professed to be Christian.

“Christendom as a whole became rent apart with religious sects, Roman Catholic, Eastern Orthodox and Protestant. In South Africa 1,400 religious sects have grown up among the Bantu people since 1910, when Christendom’s missionaries poured in, according to an Associated Press dispatch from Johannesburg, South Africa, published August 12, 1957. Today the religious situation in Christendom is a mockery of the Christian unity that Christ taught his disciples.

“The Reformation movement of the sixteenth century led to shameful religious persecution by both Protestants and Catholics, and to frightful religious wars.

“The basic religious doctrines of the Roman Catholic Church as well as of the Eastern Orthodox Churches remained, such as the “Trinity”, immortality of the human soul, punishment of wicked souls after death in an invisible spirit realm; the division of the religious worshippers into a professional priesthood or clergy and the profane masses or laity; the use of religion in the support of worldly politics, resulting in many Church-State unions, the celebrating of religious holidays with pagan background; the lack of respect for blood of man and beast, as exemplified in the man who founded Babylon and built the first empire, ‘Nimrod a mighty hunter in opposition to Jehovah’. Genesis 10: 8-12; 11: 1-6”.

### **G. Love Thy Neighbour as Thyself**

The basic teaching of Jesus has been one of “Love” and “Toleration” towards others. Just let us see how he showed his love even towards the non-Jews. Note how he cured the Centurion’s Servant (St. Matthew 8: 5-13; Luke 7: 2-10) or the Syro-Phoenician’s daughter (St. Matthew 15: 28; Mark 7: 25-30) and so many other instances. Jesus made no

distinction between man and man, irrespective of his cast, colour, nationality, or belief. Hence his teaching “Love thy neighbour as thyself” implies toleration, love and equality to all others irrespective of their caste, colour or creed.

Was the bitter persecution of the Nazarenes by the Brethren in 62 A.D., which caused them to flee for their lives from Judea, according to these teachings of Jesus? Or was the burning of the Hebrew Evangel in 325 A.D. an act of love towards Jesus? Or were the unwarranted repeated attacks of the Crusaders for the destruction of Islam, “the Religion of Surrender to the will of Allah” resulting in the sacking of Constantinople in 1204 A.D. and the Holy Crusaders putting its Christian population to the sword examples of “Love thy neighbour as thyself”? Or were the destruction of 50,000 innocent European crusading children to death or their enslavement by Christian ship-owners and their Christian ship masters acts of love? Were any of these actions conforming to the doctrines of the real Jesus or for that matter the burning of the French heroine St. Joan of Arc?

Is the apartheid of South Africa, and the denial of the rights to millions of blacks by the few whites of Rhodesia in any manner the teachings of Jesus of “Love Thy Neighbour As Thyself”? Can these Christians by any stretch of the imagination all themselves honestly and conscientiously the followers of *the Real Jesus*?

Does not all this prove beyond doubt that it is Constantine’s Christ i.e. Nimrod’s teachings of “I am the Infallible Pontifex Maxim” and whatever “I” say must go irrespective of its merits? Is it not “Egoism” of the worst type for each one to insist that whatever he thinks is right and everybody else is wrong, or if someone is correct but weaker then the weaker has no justification to his rights! Is not this “Egoism” responsible for so many unreasonable human calamities caused by Christians? A glance over the last hundred years shows clearly that all the major wars were the result of Christian intolerance and the deprivation of others of their rights owing to disobedience to the

teachings of Jesus of “Love Thy Neighbour As Thyself”. Just let us think of:

The Crimean War,	1854-1856
The American Civil War,	1861-1865
The Franco-German War,	1870-1871
The Russo-Turkish War,	1877-1878
The Boer War,	1899-1902
The First Balkan War,	1912-1913
The First World War,	1914-1918
The Second Word War,	1939-1945

#### **H. The Birth of Communism due to denial of “Love thy Neighbour as Thyself”**

Was not this “Egoism” of the rich and the powerful Christians, the cause of the French Revolution?—the denial of the rights of the poorer Christians—the labourers and the peasants! As forecast by Karl Marx—the denial of “Love thy Neighbour As Thyself”, became the basis and the seed of the Russian Revolution. The rise and spread of Communism was most marked in those areas where the Nimrodic mentality of Christianity denied the rights of the masses of the poor and the weak.

It is but small wonder that they abhor the name of God, because they feel that it was Christianity that was the cause of their being held in serfdom and poverty! They little realised that Christ of Constantine was none other than Nimrod and as such had nothing whatsoever to do with *the Real Jesus*, who was not the son of a God, but the son of the Virgin Mary, a human being! And who was not Christ—The Trinity in Unity or Nimrod!

That Christianity had supported the rich to the prejudice of the poor and the helpless! Christ and Christianity meant to them the

religion of God! Hence this spontaneous hatred for God and the denial of Him.

The anti-religious movement which has taken root in Russia and spread to other European and Eastern Countries is thus based on a misconception that any religion which is from God is unacceptable to them, because of their hatred for Christianity and because of Christianity's claim to be a religion from God. Their three chief objections to religion are:

- i. Religion helps in the maintenance of the bourgeois capitalistic system with its consequent crushing of the aspirations of the poor people!
- ii. It keeps the people enslaved to superstition and so hinders the advance of sciences and Progress!
- iii. It teaches them to pray for their needs, instead of working for them and consequently it makes them indolent!

Unfortunately they did not know and still do not realise that Christianity is nothing but the religion of Nimrod, who was cursed at the Tower of Babel. Christianity is not a religion from God and *has nothing to do with Jesus, son of Virgin Mary!* That as long as Christianity will prevail in large areas on the face of the Earth, there can be no lasting peace amongst the different groups of mankind. Hence it is their lack of knowledge of the truth that made them use "God" as the scapegoat of their hatred.

The following is an extract from "*Encyclopaedia of Religions*" by J.G.R. Forlong—University Books Vol. 1, page 421 under "Christianity":

"No single real reform of morals", says Dr. Dollinger, "is due to the Popes; but to them were due the miseries and failures of the Crusades and the loss of Constantinople to the Eastern Church". "Though a sincere Romanist, he confesses that the priests were not only grossly ignorant ...; (to whom concubines were permitted) *but*

*that they were responsible for papal forgeries, and for the violence which condemned whole towns and provinces to slavery. Their faith he says was not only Tri-Theistic, but idolatrous. Europe has to thank the subjects of the great Arab Khalifs for preserving the ancient learning, and Greek philosophy, and for opposing Christian priests, interested only in childish legends and superstitions. They (the priests) corrupted all that they touched, and whatever truth reached them they converted into 'fabulous monstrosities'.*"

These historical proofs establish clearly that had Christianity anything to do with a religion from a Godly source then it would not and could not have driven millions of souls to "Communism" or a hatred for God!

### **I. Oh! What we have believed in is Good Enough!**

If these scientifically advanced groups of European Nations from the U.S.S.R. to the U.S.A. to which China may now be added, do not take heed and decide upon changing their ideologies for the truth, nothing but the absolute truth—The Mission of Jesus according to which The Promised Prophet was to complete the religion left incomplete by Jesus—then they are heading for their own destruction! That is the only way to stop their groping in the dark led by their egoism of "*Oh! what we believe in is good enough!*" If Christianity had indeed been good enough, would there have been so many major disasters? Would the world then be faced with the threat of a Third great world war? Therefore, whatsoever the Europeans believe in is certainly not good enough by any means or standards! That this fact is well known to them will be evident from Chapter 15: S of this treatise under the heading of "European indicates the Only Solution to bring Capitalism and Communism together" Let us for a moment look at some of the many advices given in the Holy Bible in this connection:

"I (Jesus) beseech you therefore, (my) brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies (including your intelligence and conduct as) a living sacrifice, (making it) holy, (by doing such good deeds as are) acceptable unto God, which is your (minimum)

reasonable service, (expected of you towards your Creator).

“And be not conformed to this (unholy) world (of lusts, iniquity, blasphemers by making a mockery of God’s laws as taught by Jesus *i.e.* If anyone commits a sin as small as one jot or tittle and does not follow the Mosaic laws and whose good deeds does not exceed the good deeds of the scribes and Pharisees shall in no case enter into the kingdom of Heaven—St. Matt. 5: 17-19,—disobedient to God by becoming a despiser of those that do good deeds and taunting them with Nimrod’s doctrines that those who follow the laws of God are those who hang themselves from a tree, scoffers walking after their own lust and believing in Nimrod’s theories of sacramental food and drinks makes one into the pure sinless son of God hence the boast of: What we are and what we shall be we know not? and that faith in Nimrod’s teachings that the only begotten son of God has come on earth to save sinners by the sacrifice of his precious life *etc.*): but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind (by getting out of your dream of vanity-Oh! what we have believed in for centuries is good enough), that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable and perfect according to the) will of God.

“For I (Jesus) say through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think (about others and their rights and that we are the superior *etc.*); but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith.

“Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil (and which we have been believing as good enough—the False Christ of Society who is none other than Nimrod, the accursed, who has been deified by Emperor St. Constantine in the Greek manuscript prepared under his orders when he destroyed the Original Hebrew Evangels at the Nicaean Council of 325 A.D.); cleave to that which is good (the pure teaching of the real Jesus of Nazareth—the Jesus who was not the son of a god but the son of a human being *viz*: the Virgin Mary and his teachings referred to above from St. Matt. 5:17-19 that good deeds and following the laws of God are essential instead of sacramental food and drink and faith in Christ, the

Saviour)” (Romans 12:1-3 and 9).

The manner in which European civilization is behaving at the present moment is an explicit evidence of their moral degradation. It does not teach them to practise equality with the poor, the backward, or the members of the Non-European Nations. They always dream about their “Egoism” (“*We are the superiors*”) which unfortunately is nothing but a manifestation of Nimrod’s “Infallibility”! It is evident that they are heading again for a calamity of the magnitude which brought about for them the many centuries of the Dark Ages of Europe!

Let us once again consider the warnings of Jeane Dixon which appear on pages 178-181 of “*A Gift of Prophecy*”:

“Jeane describes the vision thus: Seated on a throne before fluted marble columns was a gorgeously arrayed Roman Emperor who, with great energy and strength, was hurling bits of food towards far-off throngs of ragged barbarians. The hordes gradually inched closer, seizing on the scattered titbits, while beauty radiated from the exquisite pavilion. Watching intently Jeane noticed that the emperor was beginning to cast the food more carelessly, with less vitality, so that some of it was falling near his feet; and at last the barbarians swept across the pavilion like a swarm of locusts, eradicating all traces of the culture and refinement which it reflected.

“As darkness enveloped the scene, Jeane felt that in a symbolic way she had not only witnessed the decline and fall of the Roman Empire, with the subsequent Dark Ages which obliterated the light of learning, but had also been given a subtle warning that America was similarly draining itself of needed strength by a careless disbursement of foreign aid.

“Jeane turned and stared again at the unspeakable litter covering the pavilion floor, and sensed that she belonged to this; that this was her America. Overwhelmed by a feeling of shame; she watched mutely while smoky gray clouds began to churn the debris about, like matchboxes caught in the funnel of a tornado. She lifted her eyes and noticed that above the murky clouds were even, blacker



ones, rolling in angry billows as if sucked by a giant magnet.

“... Jeane interprets this vision as an advance warning that Americans must pay dearly for *the confusion, degradation, and immorality in our political, business, labor, family lives*, for our obsession with material things and our compromises with high principle ...

“... This was the present time, and as the gray clouds began to churn I knew that they represented the struggle between the races—a struggle that will dominate the decades of the 1960s and 1970s. After that came the even blacker clouds, representing a horrible war in which many Asian and African nations whom we have helped with foreign aid will join with Red China (or will it be Russia?) to close in on us and, like the barbarians in the vision of ancient Rome, try to destroy our way of life. This will occur during the 1980s and because of a new kind of ... warfare many will die like ants”.

Let the European Group of nations from America to U.S.S.R. comprising the so called Christians and ex-Christians realise well that what has not saved them in the past from wars, destruction and devastation cannot save them in the future either! History will surely repeat itself, unless they change their ideology from falsehood to the truth!

From:

The Christ of Constantine and of Society, who is Nimrod of Babylon.

To

*The Real Jesus of Nazareth*, who has never claimed divinity.

*The Jesus who taught*: “In vain do they worship me” (St. Mathew 15: 9).

“*The Jesus*, who is not the son of a god as claimed by Nimrod but the son of a human being—the Virgin Mary!

*The Jesus*, who has warned that you cannot attain heaven unless you follow the Mosaic Laws, abstain from sins even as small as a jot or a

tittle and unless your good deeds exceed the good deeds of the Scribes and Pharisees! (St. Matthew. 5: 18-21).

*The Jesus, who is the harbinger of the glad tidings of the coming after him, of the Promised Comforter of the Universe, the messenger of God who would complete the divine message which was incomplete up till the time of the ascension of Jesus (St. John 16: 7, 12 and 13) .*

Even the greatest optimist can forecast safely that these groups of European Nations are heading for a third world war—A Nuclear Holocaust, which would destroy many millions of them along with their beautiful cities and factories as devastatingly as warned in the Holy Bible (Revelation 18) in but one hour! Therefore one cannot help but shudder at:

Scientific World—Whither Bound?

To

Self Destruction!

Or

Universal Peace!!

By What Means?





PART 4

ACCORDING TO EUROPEAN SCHOLARS—

THE RELIGION OF UNIVERSAL  
BROTHERHOOD AND GOODWILL—HOW  
HARMONY BETWEEN CAPITALIST AND  
COMMUNIST CAN BE ACHIEVED—SO THAT  
NUCLEAR WAR MAYBE AVOIDED!





## Chapter 15

# The concept of surrender to the will of God according to European scholars



### A. Introduction

All religionists are fully aware that at some point of time there is going to be a universal religion which MUST have the following outstanding features:

1. It MUST be a religion based on *“Thy will be done on Earth as it is done in Heaven”*.
2. It MUST be named in a manner so as to depict the idea of *“Surrender to the Will of God”*.
3. It MUST teach the *“love of God through love of mankind!”*
4. It MUST provide *“protection, equality and justice amongst mankind irrespective of caste, colour, creed, nationality, or distinction between the rich and the poor!”*
5. It MUST be able to *“stand the test of time by its wondrous universal qualities”*.

### B. The Search for Truths

As a result of the two Wars, that have devastated the world, men and women everywhere feel a twofold need. We require a deeper understanding and appreciation of other peoples and their civilisations

especially of their moral and spiritual achievements. We also need a new vision of the Universe, a clearer insight into the fundamentals of ethics and religion:

How ought men to behave?

How ought nations to conduct their affairs?

Does God exist?

What is His Nature?

What is the relationship between Him and His Creation?

How can man approach Him?

In other words, there is a general zeal to know what the greatest minds, whether of the East or West, have thought and said about the Truth of God.

With these objects in mind a lot of research has been carried out. A group of Oxford Scholars have made a most remarkable contribution for the benefit of the World.

Professors R.A. Nicholson, H.A.R. Gibbs, A.J. Arberry, W.M. Watt and many other European Scholars have brought out many works showing the wondrous qualities of the religion of "Surrender to the Will of God".

### **C. Europeans' Discovery of Surrender to the Will of God**

Goethe, the famous German poet and philosopher, seems to have been moved to raptures over his discovery of the Religion of "Surrender to the will of God", when he declared:

"If Islam be submission to God's Will, in Islam we live and die!"

An English research scholar has remarked:

"That God is great; and that there is nothing else great! He is the Reality. Wooden Idols are not real; He is real. He made us at first, sustains us yet; we and all things are but the shadow of Him; a

transitory garment veiling the Eternal splendour; ‘*Allah akbar*, God is great!’—and then also ‘*Islam*’. That we must *submit* to God. That our whole strength lies in resigned submission to Him, whatsoever He does to us. For this world and for the other! The thing He sends to us, were it death and worse than death, shall be good, nay shall be best; we resign ourselves to God. ‘If this be *Islam*’, says Goethe, ‘do we not all live in *Islam*?’ Yes all of us that have any moral life; we all live so. It has ever been held the highest wisdom for a man ...” (page 56, *The Hero as Prophet* by Thomas Carlyle, published by Oxford University Press, 1909).

The following are extracts from page 11 of the Weekly paper “*Radiance*” Delhi, dated 10th September, 1967 giving the opinions of eminent Europeans on the religion of “Surrender to the Will of God”.

*Lord Headley, Al-Farooq* (England): “I say ‘better Christians’ advisedly, because the charity, tolerance and broad-mindedness in the Muslim faith come nearer to what Christ himself taught than do the somewhat narrow tenets of various Christian Churches”.

*M.K. Cole* (England): “There is no compulsion in religion. In my opinion Islam is the most complete, righteous and original”.

*M. Sadiq D. Wright* (England): “Islam is no mere creed: it is a life to be lived ... From the cradle to the grave the true Muslim lives for God and God alone”.

*C. Mahmuda Connolly* (Australia): “If I were asked what impressed me most in the religion of Islam I would probably say the prayers, because prayers in Christianity are used wholly in begging God (through Jesus Christ) to grant worldly favours, whereas in Islam they are used to give praise and thanks to Almighty God for all His blessings since He knows what is necessary for our welfare and grants us what we need without our asking for it”.

*Prof. H. Mustafa Leon* (England): “One of the glories of Islam is that it is founded upon reason, and that it never demands from its followers an abnegation of that important mental faculty. Unlike certain other faiths, which insist upon their votaries implicitly accepting certain dogmas without independent inquiry, but simply

on the authority of 'The Church', Islam courts inquiry and counsels its disciples to study, search and investigate prior to acceptance".

*H.G. Newitt* (England); "I think the main cause of my embracing Islam was the fact that I found it to be the only religion where faith and truth are truly predominant".

*John Fisher* (England): "The Churches are utterly incapable of grappling with present-day problems. Islam, alone offers the solution".

*Ahmad K. Holmboe* (Denmark): "The difference between Islam and all other religions is that other religions say that through faith you may act; Islam says rather, that through action faith must be born".

*Major Abdullah Battersby* (England): "Islam is the greatest fraternity, and to belong to it is to belong to God ..."

*Abdullah Uno Kuller* (Sweden): "I found that Islam was the only religion that could claim to be the revealed Word of God".

*Sir Archibald Hamilton* (England): "In becoming a Muslim I have merely obeyed the dictates of my conscience, and have since felt a better and truer man".

"There is no religion that is so maligned by the ignorant and biased as is Islam; yet if people only knew, it is the only true solution for the problem of Socialism, inasmuch as it is the religion of the strong for the weak, of the rich for the poor.

"Again, Islam recognises genius and individuality, it is constructive and not destructive.

"Islam teaches the inherent sinlessness of man! It teaches that man and woman come from the same essence, possess the same soul, and have been equipped with equal capabilities for intellectual, spiritual and moral attainment".

#### **D. The Opinion of European Rulers**

Amongst the European Sovereigns, Her Majesty Queen Victoria, the Good and Napoleon the Great were impressed profoundly by the lofty



ideals of Islam.

### **1. Her Majesty the Empress of The British Empire**

The religion of a people is well reflected in their culture and traditions, and these are best learnt through the language in which they are embodied. Desirous of knowing what is Islam, professed by millions of her subjects really was, Queen Victoria carefully learnt Urdu in her old age. As a language is best learnt by speaking it and hearing it spoken, she sent for a number of Muslim orderlies from India. Through them and her Urdu tutors, Munshi Abdul Karim and Moulvi Sir Rafiuddin Ahmad, she came in close contact with Islam, and realised its great beauties and humanitarian principles. Her estimation of Islam may be gathered from one of her letters written in 1891 to the wife of the Governor of Bombay (published in one of the volumes of her letters). Her Majesty writes “I think no attempt should be made to interfere with the Muhammadan religion which contains, when known and understood, so much that is fine, to be respected and admired ...” The words “when known and understood” are very significant (page 117, *Prophet of Islam* by Moulvi Abdul Karim, Calcutta, 1937).

### **2. Napoleon the Great**

Mr. Riply, well-known throughout America particularly for his “Believe it or not” series of films made a careful study of Napoleon’s life, and stated with positive emphasis in the “Express” that he had no doubt that Napoleon while in Egypt had embraced Islam and that he lived and died a Muslim. His frequent references to Islam in his conversation not only in France but while a captive at St. Helena, when the cloak of policy and expediency had fallen away from him, clearly proves that he was a Muslim.

In one of his despatches Napoleon wrote, “I hope the time is not far off when I shall be able to establish a uniform regime based upon the principles of the Qur’an, which alone are true and which alone can

lead man to happiness”.

In an assembly of savants, governors and nobles at Cairo, Napoleon declared, “Surely I have told you on different occasions that I have intimated to you by various discourses that I am an unitarian Mussalman and I glorify the prophet Muhammad”.

That Napoleon’s profession of Islam was not a matter of political expediency, as some people think, has been shown clearly by J. D. Jenkins in the course of a scholarly article on the “*Religious Faith of Napoleon*” in which reference has been made to Napoleon’s Journal at St. Helena, edited by Genera Gourmand, who was a devout Roman Catholic (pages 117-118 of *ibid*).

### **E. The Realisation of the Kingdom of God on Earth according to Europeans**

In “*Islam in Modern History*” by Professor Wilfred Cantwell Smith- Edition 1957 you will read the following findings commencing from page three of this books:

“ ... Islam is the religion of God. This means a great many things; among others, that it began not in the seventh century A. D., but at least on the day of creation, if not before. When God created the world, He provided that the forces of nature should operate according to the pattern that He prescribed inevitably, perfectly, and as it were blindly. The world of nature has no choice but to obey His eternal decree; and in the course of doing so, it at the same time illustrates them, disclosing, for those who have the wit to discern it, His design and providence, as well as His Majesty and Might. The patterned behaviour of the natural world is the sign of its Creator.

“For man also there is a pattern, which he ought to follow. God from all eternity ordained how men ought to behave, both individually and in community. There is a proper form of human conduct: *vis-a-vis* the God Who made us (and to Whom we shall return) and *vis-a-vis* our fellows. There is a right way to live. Man, however, differs from the rest

of creation in that he was made conscious and free. In his case, there is no inherent compulsion: he, alone in the universe, was given the faculty of choosing to conform or not to conform. There is an eternal righteousness, but it is not compulsory.

“Of course, this freedom is a momentous responsibility and it would be more correct to say that man alone was willing to accept it. There is a passage in the Qur’an (33: 72) in which this is magnificently symbolized, in the drama of God’s offering the privilege of option to the heavens (the spiritual forces) and to the earth and mountains (the animal and natural world), but these cowered from it in abject alarm. Man, on the other hand, accepts; thus taking up the tremendous challenge of consciously ordering his own career. He does not have to live in justice, as the stars have to circle in their spheres. But he will try.

“The stakes are high. *Only if men live correctly will their society escape disintegration and chaos:* yet man has the liberty to choose wrongly, to bring down the whole social order crashing about his ears, More: man is an immortal soul, and his individual destiny throughout eternity as well as his society on earth turn on his willingness to pattern his life here and now on the transcendent norms. God has set up a system of final recompense, where by those who accept the patten of “oughtness” will find their reward in an everlasting beatitude, quite beyond this temporal scene, while for those who reject it, who spurn the moral imperative, there is entailed similarly an irretrievable disaster of unlimited punishment. Man is the summit of creation, unique now and for all eternity.

“God has not left mankind without guidance on this matter of how he should live. On the contrary: as soon as man was created he was told what the moral law is. In Islamic terms; Adam was the first “prophet” (or “messenger”). That is, God set man in the universe and at once delivered to him the message: thus-and-so must he do, thus-and-so must he avoid doing. This is right: that is wrong. Human history opens with man knowing what he ought to do—but proceeds with his failing

to do it. The conception is that Adam proved disobedient and his successors neglected, or forgot, or lost, or falsified, the message; so that a day came when humanity no longer knew the pattern! Man's failure to live justly was no longer simply a refusal of justice, but a groping in the dark as to what justice is! To redeem man out of that uncertainty, God in His mercy thereupon sent down the message again. There was thus another revelation, or disclosure, to humanity of what the eternal demands are; another "prophet" chosen as the instrument for proclaiming anew the ancient truths. But the story repeated itself: again, the community neglected, forgot, distorted, what had been revealed. And so it went on—no one knows how many times throughout history persons were chosen to remind mankind of the heavenly norm, and to warn us of the terrors of failing to accept it. This much is known, that they were many of diverse lands and peoples: Indeed, every community is said to have had its warner. Yet in essentials, despite the wide variety of messengers, the message is always the same.

"Amongst the numerous persons whom God has chosen from time to time to convey the message, some name have been preserved, some lost. Of the former, *the best known and also the most significant are (apart from Adam) Abraham, Moses, and Jesus. They, like the other "messengers" ("or prophets"), were themselves "acceptors" of the divine Command (i.e. Muslims); and to their fellow human beings preached acceptance (i.e. Al-Islam). In their case the preaching was, while not fully successful, yet effective to a marked degree, with more lasting results than in any previous instance. Indeed, their followers are still with us in vast numbers. They constitute the Jewish and the Christian communities.*

*"Abraham's achievement was the effective proclamation of God's existence and sole supremacy: never since his day has humanity again totally forgotten that it is He, and He alone Who created the universe, He alone Who deserves to be worshipped. The doctrine of monotheism, established by Abraham, never again quite lapsed. False gods, man-made idols spurned by Abraham's vivid fidelity, have been rejected ever*

since by at least a section of mankind.

“The first step, thus, was taken on the road towards a rehabilitation of history. But other steps remained.

*“In the case of Moses, his followers preserved the message, and took the second step by setting forth across the centuries to put it into practice. They recognized God’s oneness, and also God’s law. At least they recognized that God has a law, by which man must be bound. However, they were far from wholehearted in their acceptance of the revelation. And in course of time they allowed (or caused) their copies of the text in which the written record of the message was preserved, to become corrupted. Their “scripture” became inaccurate. Moreover, they committed one major blunder: they came to believe that the divine command applied only to themselves—instead of understanding that the prescribed pattern was a universal message, for all mankind.*

*“In due course to correct this desperate error, God sent another messenger, Jesus. His followers, besides having certain other special qualities and God-given favours; understood the universalist nature of the faith well; and have been zealous in extending the community to the ends of the earth. But they too made a fundamental, indeed a heinous, mistake! They took to worshipping the messenger, instead of heeding the message. Jesus was, like all others in the long line of those whom God chose to proclaim His command, a human being. He was, admittedly a rather special human being attested by miracles (e.g. a virgin birth) and of quite exemplary moral character, but a human being for all that. Yet his followers—to Jesus’s own amazement and vigorous disclaiming protest—proceeded to deify him, to ascribe to him and his mother wild, even blasphemous and obscene, relations to God Himself. His community of followers, who called themselves Christians’ have through the centuries and across the continents focussed their attention on Christ to the partial neglect on the one hand of God, whose transcendence they thus compromise, and on the other hand, of the full moral order, since they have cultivated personal piety but allowed*

social justice to slide, leaving the conduct of worldly affairs to 'secular' forces not under the dominion of the eternal norms. Though individually upright, they let history go its own way, unredeemed.

"Once more then, man had demonstrated his perversity or failure, his floundering in the persistent rejection or distortion of the supreme guidance which God kept offering to him, and which alone could save him. *Not only were we men incapable by our own efforts of discerning what is right and what is wrong; but even when God tells us and shows us, we refuse to see.*

"The history of mankind up to this point, then, would seem rather a discouraging story. Progress there had been certainly. After the first virtually complete neglect of the eternal commands, or rather a series of repeated neglectings, there had come gradually the recognition in principle of God's supremacy, and then the emergence of two communities of man—one, though limited and introverted, yet acknowledging in principle and dedicated to implementing the divine imperative, and the other beginning to understand that God's pleasure involved the bringing of the whole human world into one family in submission to the truth. Yet both these communities, each in its own way, understood very partially and in some respects misunderstood very seriously what God's requirements really are. Would men never grasp aright the everlasting message? And would they never set forth to practise it in full seriousness, to live as from all eternity it was ordained that men should live: preparing themselves personally for that stupendous bliss of deathless communion with God Himself for which the whole drama of creation is the subordinate prelude, and which will continue long after this temporal world has passed into nothingness; and meanwhile on earth constructing and living the perfect society, transforming human history into a record no longer of reiterated failures but at last of divinely guided success?

"Had the question rested with man, the answer would doubtless have continued to be a despondent 'never'! We human beings are a sorry lot, prone to rebelliousness and error! But God's mercy is

supreme; and His initiative perennial. In one final and dramatic move He salvaged the situation, injecting fully and effectively His supernal guidance into human affairs. Once and for all a final, clear statement of His truth and His justice was sent down; a messenger was chosen who would deliver it, interpret it, live it, with undeviating precision; a community was launched on its career that would preserve the message with a scrupulous fidelity, would carry it in triumph to the ends of the earth, and would obey it to the fullest implication of its practical outworking.

“This time there was to be no error, no distortion, no neglect. This latest, last, decisive declaration of man’s proper function in the universe was no isolated event, was by no means simply the inert statement of a transcendent truth. As we have said, the truth had been disclosed before. What was momentous, superbly creative in this instance, was the event plus its sequel: the application of the truth, its living embodiment in human history from this point. Here was not only a restatement of what God has to say to us, but a society developing around that restatement: a society that, grasping firmly the injunctions which are there revealed, dedicates itself to living according to them, and thereby sets forth on the reconstruction of human life on earth. The society is not exclusive; on the contrary, its welcome to all the world is warm, even insistent, as it earnestly invites others to join in this highest of all enterprises—setting aright at last what man on his own resources had allowed to go awry. Nor is it quixotic, for it proceeds under divine support and with divine blessing, is led as it were by the divine hand. God Himself explicitly promised that He will be with the community to sustain and guide it. Besides, the laws that have been entrusted to it and by which its behaviour is patterned are divine and eternal, are objectively valid; to live in accord with them is to live according to the very structure of the universe!

“In this way, then, Islam, which had existed from all eternity, came down into history in the seventh century A.D. and began its final, full career among men. The only statement of its message whose text has

been accurately preserved, is that in the Arabic recitation ('Qur'an') where it appears in all its fullness, and in language of limpid clarity and surpassing beauty. The only instance of its implementation that has been sustained and fruitful, is that of the group who—banding themselves together under Muhammad's leadership, and then persisting in the enterprise after he was gone—first in Arabia, then in the surrounding lands of the Middle East, and gradually thereafter in successive waves of expanding dominion throughout the world, undertook to organize in accordance with the ordained pattern both their own lives and their social order.

"This group consisted at first of inhabitants of but two Arabian cities, later included other Arabs, and presently was joined by men from every nation, language, group, race, colour, and clime—a group distinguished from the rest of humanity simply in that they accepted, while others did not, the prescription that had been disclosed, and submitted to the divine plan. They are known, therefore, as "acceptors" or "submitters"; in the Arabic (singular), Muslim. By the emergence of this group the mundane version of Islam was launched, translating the idea into organized and continuing practice. Thus a new era in human history was born.

"The year of this Islamic era—1 A.H. (622 A.D.)—is not the year of Muhammad's birth (as would parallel the Christian case), or even that in which the revelations began to come to him, but the year when the nascent Muslim community came to political power. Muhammad and his small body of followers, having shifted from Mecca to Madinah, established themselves as an autonomous community; and Islamic history began.

"We are ready now to justify or elucidate our earlier assertion that for the Muslim, community and history are 'special'. For him they are, as for no other, religiously significant. The Qur'an of course, is in Muslim eyes holy, or 'sacred'. One would be going only slightly too far to say that his society and its history partake of an almost sacred quality also. Here is a community that has explicitly undertaken to live in



accordance with God's plan. Since it has been in existence, to become a Muslim means to join that community; and to take part in the enterprise of fulfilling God's good pleasure on earth. The enterprise is hardly less important than the revelation. The privilege and duty and experience of taking part in it are central to the Muslim's faith.

"In this orientation man comes close to God, or human destiny is fulfilled, insofar as activity approximates to goodness. And goodness, it will be remembered, is here that way of life of which the Qur'an is the revelation and Islamic Society the expression. Man approaches God by participating in the Islamic venture, the historical endeavour of the Muslim community to *realize the kingdom of God on earth*".

## **F. The Branches of Surrender to the Will of God**

To every Muslim *the original pure religion of Adam, Noah and Abraham* the latter in each case being a descendant of the previous-named *are AL-ISLAM—the religion of SURRENDER to the Will of God*. Accordingly, all offshoots derived from that pure original religion are *all Al-Islam*.

### **1. Judaism**

Hence Judaism is a branch of *Al-Islam*. It contains the primitive set of rules known popularly as the Mosaic Laws. These were sufficient for the guidance of the primitive men. When Jerusalem was destroyed in 607 B.C. the Torah and the Psalms were also burnt and effaced by the Babylonians. In trying to reproduce these, many forgeries and false passages got incorporated as shown earlier.

### **2. Nazarenes**

To correct the distorted versions of the Torah and the Old Testament a new great Personage came. He was Jesus, son of the Virgin Mary. He rectified the mistakes in the Old Testament in a Divine Book personally

dictated by himself in Hebrew called the Evangel. Many of these originals were burnt and destroyed by King Constantine in 325 A.D. and replaced with forgeries known to us as the New Testament in Greek and the remaining Originals were hidden from view and suppressed. The Original Hebrew texts thus became unavailable to the followers of Jesus.

### 3. Islam

When both these branches of ‘*Al-Islam*’ became imperfect, a set of divine Laws was required once again by the world. Further, the Holy Bible confirms that both Judaism and the teachings of Jesus are incomplete (St. John 16: 12) and that they would be completed by one, who would come after Jesus—the Comforter of the whole world (St. John 16: 13).

### 4. Others

*Muslims always regard with great reverence the original teachings of all the earlier prophets.* The Holy Qur’an has referred repeatedly to these earlier prophets and their teachings Here is a passage which appears twice in the Holy Qur’an:

“Verily those who believe (*i.e.* Muslims), and those who keep the Jewish religious rules, and the Nazarene rules, and the Sabaeans (*i.e.* anybody else)—whosoever believeth in Allah (as only one) and the last day, (*i.e.* the day of Judgment when all will be raised from the dead) and do aright (*i.e.* follow the laws of God as brought down by any one of the numerous Prophets)—Their reward is with their Lord: And there shall no fear come upon them, neither shall they suffer any grief!” (Qur’an 2: 62; 5: 69).

Thus it will be clear that Islam recognises Judaism and the Nazarene faith (of Jesus of Nazareth) as its branches even though they are presently outdated, full of forgeries as proved earlier and incomplete as mentioned in St. John 16: 12-13. Islam also accepts anybody who believes in the absolute oneness of Allah, the day of

Judgment, and follows the Laws of Allah and does good deeds as those who have surrendered themselves to the will of Allah!

Surely there is no religion on the face of this earth which is so liberally universal and tolerant as Islam to the followers of other creeds according to the findings of Gobineau in *“Les Religions et les Philosophies dans l’Asie Centrale”*.

### **G. The history of perfect Socialistic Secularism.**

The History of the past fourteen centuries shows that wherever the Muslims were in a majority and ruled the country they have invariably given equal rights and treatment to all their subjects irrespective of caste, colour, creed, and nationality. They were given equal opportunity of possessing lands, carrying on business, having full advantage of free education wherever offered by the Government, in addition to their freedom to practise their own religion and be governed by the same as far as their personal affairs were concerned.

The only distinction that the Non-Muslim can point out was that if they did not volunteer for military service in the defence of the country, they were required to pay a small protection tax known as “Jaziah” for the maintenance of the army and police force. It is also a historical fact that whenever Islamic Governments were not able to defend their subjects against foreign aggression they have returned the Jaziah tax to the Non-Muslims before withdrawing. What could be more fair and equitable?

The conquests by the British and the French who created empires all over the world are proofs that Muslims have lived under the domination of other people with full co-operation and goodwill towards their conquerors. They have sacrificed their lives in wars fought for the British to protect their conqueror’s interests against the Germans in the two world wars. Thus the Muslims of the world have shown that even when they are under conquerors they have always acted in a manner which was loyal to their conquerors. Only a religion

that preaches to its followers to be faithful and loyal to even those rulers who do not conform to the religion of their subjects can stand the test of time inasmuch as it is the religion which calls upon its followers to adapt themselves to existing circumstances which may not necessarily be favourable to them. This fact shows the universality and powers of adaptation in Islam, which can meet successfully any situation in life. Thus it has shown that Islam is a universal religion.

This is also proved by the fact that those Muslims who had fled for refuge to Abyssinia during the time of the Holy Prophet, to escape from the persecution of the Meccans, have since lived there as loyal subjects. This is also true with regard to all other states to which Muslims have migrated. The position of the Muslim minorities in Thailand, China, Russia, Burma, India, and elsewhere is ample proof of their loyalty to the various states. During the recent Indo-Pakistan War in 1965, not only did Muslims of the Indian Army sacrifice themselves in the defence of India as their homeland but the Muslim population of India also stood all together for their country. All the major casualties suffered by the Indian Army and the feats of bravery shown were by the Muslims, who once again proved their loyalty and fidelity to the state in which they live.

Under these circumstances Islam has proved itself a unique religion which can flourish not only in victory but also under subjugation! When the followers of Islam have been in the majority they have given good examples of the universal nature of their religion as also when they have been in the minority. No other religious organisation with such universal applicability is to be found anywhere on the face of the earth as Islam. In all circumstances the Muslims believe that what is happening is the Will of the Almighty Creator. They have to live on this earth in whatever circumstances and condition they may be placed in whether as conquerors or as subjects. In many cases they must endure untold difficulties, persecution, or handicaps. In all this they have to reconcile themselves and surrender to the Will of the Almighty by following the example of the Holy Prophet, when at

Madinah as the ruler or at Mecca as the persecuted. They have to strive hard under existing circumstances and to work for the betterment of the entire country—this self-control being known as “*Jihad*” (See Chapter 21: C for *Jihad*). So far no other religion in the world has shown these capabilities and powers of adaptability since the creation of mankind on the face of this earth. This has been possible only because Islam is the uncorrupted divine religion of surrender to “*Thy Will be done on earth as it is in heaven*”.

It may be pointed out over here that Islam does not preach that an ill-fated community was destined to suffer. As a matter of fact the Muslim does not believe that ill luck is God’s will. An individual suffers for his own faults and he must correct himself and believe that by his efforts he will better his lot. He does not have to become dejected or fatalistic. He has faith that God will help him if he does what is good and honest.

## **H. According to European History, a religion of Tolerance or the Sword?**

*Tolerance and persecution* are two opposites. They are never compatible. The question is what does the history of the past fourteen centuries show? Let us analyse some of the major incidents to see if Islam was ever spread with the sword in one hand and the Qur’an in the other.

### **1. Jerusalem**

- a. Jerusalem surrendered to Khalifa Omar in 637 A.D. He granted to all its inhabitants security for their lives, possessions, their Churches and the freedom to worship in whatever form they liked. There was no religious persecution (Chapter 13: K).
- b. On the other hand, when Jerusalem fell into the hands of Christians in 1099 A.D. not only did they ride their horses over

the dead bodies of the Muslims outside the city gate as we have already read earlier (Chapter 14: D-3), but even inside the holy city the Crusaders committed sacrilege by mercilessly massacring its inhabitants comprising 70,000 Muslims, the aged men, the defenceless women and the helpless children who refused to be converted to Christianity under its “THE SWORD IN ONE HAND AND THE BIBLE IN THE OTHER POLICIES”, (see also pages 184-185 of *The Saracens* by Arthur Gilman, London 1887).

- c. In 1187 A.D. Jerusalem was recaptured by Sultan Salauddin (Chapter 14: D-5). The polarisation between Islam and Christianity stood out clearly on this occasion.

The Muslims did not ride their horses over the dead bodies of the Christian Crusaders, in the manner that the Crusaders had disgraced themselves, when they captured Jerusalem.

They also did not slaughter the Christians in Jerusalem as did the Christian Crusaders who had committed the sacrilege of murdering 70,000 innocent defenceless Muslims comprising the aged, the women, and the children.

Thus the glaring difference between Christianity and Islam has stood out for all times. But that was not all. The Muslims showed how much nobler they were because history tells us that not only were all the prisoners of war set free, but even the prize captive—a Christian Princess—who was reserved for marriage to a Muslim prince as a prize-of-war was given her liberty, to return. Further, the Christians were given full freedom to worship in whatever form they liked, the right or the wrong approach being entirely their responsibility. There was no coercion or compulsion to follow Islam!

History cannot quote a single such example save and except from Islam—the religion in which men do not act according to individual desires and wishes, but live in absolute and complete surrender to the Will of God, thus proving by actual facts that it is indeed the only

religion of “*Thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven*”.

## 2. Spain

- a. The History of Spain under Muslim rule for about 800 years (711 to 1502 A.D.), is singularly free from any kind of religious or other persecution! In fact, the toleration shown towards the Christian subjects by the Muslim rulers and the freedom of getting to know each other amongst the followers of the two religions brought about a certain amount of assimilation between the two communities.
- b. What happened when Spain was recaptured by the Christians in 1502 A.D.? Ferdinand and Isabella issued an edict forbidding the professing of Islam throughout the Kingdom! The result was that those who were not in a position to quit Spain immediately were put to death and all the religious books of Islam destroyed so that the Christians might not have an opportunity of learning the truth of what Islam stands for!
- c. Again the glaring difference between Islam and Christianity has stood out thereby proving that Christianity is a religion of “The sword in one hand and the Holy Bible in the other” whilst Islam is a religion of toleration which does not compel others to follow their religion and does not massacre innocent people on grounds of religion!

## 3. Constantinople

- a. When in 1204 A.D. the Christian Crusaders sacked Constantinople they massacred their fellow Christian brethren of the Orthodox Churches for several days and nights—“*Sword in one hand and the Roman Bible for the acceptance of the authority of the Pope as the supreme head of the Church of Christ in the other hand*” (Chapter 14: D-6). Not even the aged, the defenceless women and the helpless

children—all Christians, were spared by the Crusaders!

- b. One of the first steps taken by King Muhammad II, after the capture of Constantinople in 1453 A.D. was to secure the allegiance of its Christian inhabitants by proclaiming himself the “Protector of the Greek Orthodox Church”.

Persecutions of Christians by Christians themselves or by anybody else were strictly forbidden in the Muslim Empire. A decree was granted to the newly elected patriarch, which secured to him and his successors in office, the enjoyment of all privileges, including revenues and exemptions enjoyed by them under the previous rulers!

This incident caused the Greeks to prefer their new Masters and the domination of Islam to that of any other Christian Power! Does not History thus prove repeatedly that Islam is a religion of absolute toleration? That it is utterly false to declare that Islam was spread with the “Sword in one hand and the Qur’an in the other”?

#### **4. European Christians,**

While the Christians of different sects were safe under Islamic rule, which never compelled anyone to renounce his faith, the Catholics of Poland committed horrible atrocities against the Russians of the Orthodox Eastern Church. In the course of about 50 years, they are said to have put to death seventy to eighty thousand souls—nuns, women, girls, boys and even infants! Which of the two religions have used the sword in religious intolerance according to history? ISLAM or CHRISTIANITY? In fact, the Holy Bible makes it absolutely clear that Christianity is not a religion of “Peace” but “*of the sword*”:

*“Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send PEACE, but a SWORD”* (St. Matthew 10: 34).

This sentence of the Holy Bible is known as “*The Verse of the Sword*”.



## **5. Mexico and Peru**

Yet another horrible example of spreading Christianity by the sword in one hand and the Holy Bible in the other is to be found in the footnote on Page 135 of the research carried out by the English Scholar J. Devenport under the heading of “Charges Refuted” of his book *“Mohammed and the Koran”* (published by J. Davy & Sons, London, 1882).

“That the Spaniards thought themselves justified by the Bible, appears by the book which Sepulveda wrote for the express purpose of vindicating them in the murder of twelve millions of Indians, “by the example of the Israelites towards the people of Canaan.” Las Casas says in his “Brevissima relacion de la destruction de las Indias”, I have seen in the islands of St. Domingo and Jamaica, gibbets erected all over the country to hang thirteen Indians at a time in honour of the thirteen apostles. I have seen”, continues he, “young children thrown to the dogs to be devoured alive”.

This is Christianity according to Historical events!

## **6. Biblical records show**

### **a) Prophet Moses**

For violating the laws of God the entire group of people were put to death!

“And he said unto them, Thus saith the Lord God of Israel, Put every man his sword by his side, and go in and out from gate to gate throughout the camp, and slay every man his brother, and every man his companion, and every man his neighbour.

“And the children of Levi did according to the word of Moses: and there fell of the people that day about three thousand men” (Exodus 32: 27 and 28).

**b) Prophet Joshua**

“And Joshua returned and all Israel with him, to Debir; and fought against it:

“And he took it, and the king thereof, and all the cities thereof, and they smote them with the sword, and utterly destroyed all the souls that were therein; he left none remaining; as he had done to Hebron, so he did to Debir, and to the king thereof; as he had done also to Libnah, and to her king.

“So Joshua smote all the country of the hills, and of the south and of the vale, and of the springs, and all their kings: he left none remaining but utterly destroyed all that breathed, as the Lord God of Israel commanded.

“And Joshua smote them from Kadesh -barnea even unto Gaza and all the country of Goshen, even unto Gibeon.

“And all these kings and their land did Joshua take at one time because the Lord God of Israel fought for Israel” (Joshua 10:38-42).

**c) Prophet Samuel**

“SAMUEL also said unto Saul, The LORD sent me to anoint these to be king over his people, over Israel: now therefore hearken thou unto the voice of the words of the LORD.

“Thus saith the Lord of hosts, I remember that which Amalek did to Israel, how he laid wait for him in the way, when he came up from Egypt.

“Now go and smite Amalek and utterly destroy all that they have, and spare them not; but slay both man and woman, infant and suckling, ox and sheep, camel and ass.

“And Saul gathered the people together, and numbered them in Telaim, two hundred thousand footmen, and ten thousand men of Judah.

“And Saul came to a city of Amalek, and laid wait in the valley.

“And Saul said unto the Kenites, Go, depart, get you down from

among the Amalekites, lest I destroy you with them: for ye shewed kindness to all the children of Israel, when they came up out of Egypt. So the Kenites departed from among the Amalekites.

“And Saul smote the Amalekites from Havilah until thou comest to Shur that is over against Egypt” (1 Samuel 15: 1-7).

#### **d) The Laws at the time of Moses**

“But of the cities of these people, which the LORD thy God doth give thee for an inheritance, thou shalt save alive nothing that breatheth:

“But thou shalt utterly destroy them; namely, the Hittites, and the Amorites, the Canaanites, and the Perizzites, the Hivites, and the Jebusites; as the LORD thy God hath commanded thee:” (Deuteronomy 20: 16-17).

### **7. Europeans prove superiority of Religion of Toleration**

J. Devenport has recorded his findings on page 136 of “*Mohammad and the Koran*” under the Chapter of “Charges Refuted” as follows:

“That Muhammad waged wars is certain, but they differed essentially from those of Moses in not being wars of extermination, because the laudable objects of the former were to unite the Arabian tribes in one empire, to reclaim them from idolatry and instruct them in the worship of the one and only God, the Creator of all things.

“Muhammed received generously and with open arms all who would submit to his laws: but *He ever spared the innocent blood of women, maidens and infants. In short, he strictly commanded his followers never to molest, but to treat as brethren, all who would accept and obey the Qur'an.* Moses, on the contrary, slaughtered whole nations, without offering or accepting any conditions of mercy; an example never followed by Muhammad, although in many instances by Christian Powers, and more especially by the Spaniards in their conquest of Peru and Mexico. Nowhere

throughout the Qur'an can be found attributed to the Deity commands wholly opposed to all human ideas of justice and mercy".

On pages 41-42 of *ibid* we read:

"While establishing a sovereignty at Mecca and Medina the Prophet had endeavoured to extend the revolution to the people and princes of the adjacent countries; but the messenger to the Governor of Bossa, near Damascus, was taken prisoner and murdered by Sherheil, an emir of a Christian Arabian tribe, tributary to Heraclius, the Greek emperor. The injury was trifling, but the insult was great. Three thousand men were immediately equipped; the Prophet exhorted them to display their courage in the cause of the Most High.

"At the same time, however, he enjoined them to collect their booty not from the tears of the provincials, but from the public treasuries of the conquered state: *"In avenging my injuries," said he, "molest not the harmless votaries of domestic seclusion; Spare the weakness of the softer sex, the infant at the breast, and those who, in the course of nature, are hastening from the scene of mortality. Abstain from demolishing the dwellings of the unresisting inhabitants, and destroy not the means of subsistence; respect their fruit trees, nor Injure the palm, so useful to Syria for its shade and so delightful for its verdure."*

Muhammad not only gave this pious advice on toleration to his followers, but he also set the finest known example on toleration in the history of mankind when he entered victorious without even a fight or bloodshed into the city where the whole population had not only persecuted him day and night for thirteen years but had also made an attempt on his life. In spite of all this there were no rivers of human blood flowing through the streets of Mecca on Muhammad's triumphant entry there. This is wonderfully described in Chapter 17: H-2.

This certainly goes to show the glaring differences-the beauties of forbearance that is Islam and the barbaric cruelties and massacres in other religions. The incidents of the past fourteen centuries have

proved repeatedly that the religion which can honestly be called the “Religion of Toleration and goodwill” irrespective of cast, colour and creed is only Islam.

Lawrence W. Browne, has confirmed on page 14 of “*The Prospects of Islam*”, London, 1944:

“Incidentally these well-established facts dispose of the idea so widely fostered in Christian writings that the Muslims, wherever they went, forced people to accept Islam at the point of the sword”.

O Houdes, has stated on page 1006 of “*La Grande Encyclopaedia*” 1894:

“The Jihad was not really obligatory except against people who menaced the existence of Islam .... Jihad had to be waged to defend Islam against aggression..... When the war was terminated the Muslims always displayed a great tolerance towards the conquered peoples leaving them their legislation and religious beliefs”.

De Lacy O’ Leary has given his findings on page 8 of “*Islam at the Crossroads*”, London, 1923:

“History makes it clear, however, that the legend of fanatical Muslims sweeping through the world and forcing Islam at the point of the sword upon conquered races is one of the most fantastically absurd myths that historians have ever repeated”.

E. Alexander Powell has pointed out on page 48 of “*The Struggle for Power in Muslim Asia*”, New York 1923:-

“In their wars of conquest, however, Muslims exhibited a degree of toleration which puts many Christian nations to shame”.

## **8. Religion of Toleration by Pickthall**

The fifth lecture of Mr. Pickthall delivered at Madras in January 1927, which appears on page 86 of “*Madras Lectures on Islam*” Series No. 2, “The Cultural Side of Islam,” Published in 1937 reads as follows:-

“Tolerance”

“There is a quality which one associates with a high degree of human culture, and that is tolerance. One of the commonest charges brought against Islam historically, and as a religion, by Western writers is that it is intolerant. This is turning the table with a vengeance when one remembers the various facts: One, remembers that not a Muslim is left alive in Spain or Sicily or Apulia. One remembers that not a Muslim was left alive and not a mosque left standing in Greece after the great rebellion in 1821. One remembers how the Muslims of the Balkan Peninsula, once the majority, have been systematically reduced with the approval of the whole of Europe, how the Christians under Muslim rule have in recent times been urged on to rebel and massacre the Muslims, and how reprisals by the latter have been condemned as quite uncalled for. One remembers how the Jews were persecuted throughout Europe in the Middle ages, what they suffered in Spain after the expulsion of the Moors and what they suffered in Czarist Russia and Poland even in our own day, while in the Muslim Empire, Christians and Jews had liberty of conscience and full self-government in all internal affairs of their communities.

“In Spain under the Umayyads and in Baghdad under the Abbasid Khalifas, Christians and Jews, equally with Muslims, were admitted to the schools and Universities—not only that, but were boarded and lodged in hostels at the cost of the State! When the Moors were driven out of Spain, the Christian conquerors held a terrific persecution of the Jews. Those who were fortunate enough to escape fled, some of them to Morocco and many hundreds to the Turkish Empire, where their descendants still live in separate communities, and still speak among themselves an antiquated form of Spanish!

“The Muslim Empire was a refuge for all those who fled from persecution by the Inquisition; and though the position which the Jews and Christians occupied there was inferior to that of Muslims it was infinitely to be preferred to the fate of any Muslims, Jews, or heretics—nay even any really learned and enlightened man—in contemporary Europe.

“The Western Christians, till the arrival of the Encyclopaedists in

the eighteenth century, did not know, and did not care to know, what the Muslims believed, nor did the Western Christians seek to know the views of Eastern Christians with regard to them. The Christian Church was already split in two, and in the end, it came to such a pass that the Eastern Christians, as Gibbon shows, preferred Muslim rule, which allowed them to practise their own form of religion and adhere to their peculiar dogmas, to the rule of fellow Christians who would have made them Roman Catholics or wiped them out! The Western Christians called the Muslims pagans, paynims, even idolaters—there are plenty of books in which they are described as worshipping an idol called Mahomet or Mahound, and in the accounts of the conquest of Granada there are even descriptions of the monstrous idols which they were alleged to worship—whereas the Muslims knew what Christianity was, and in what respects it differed from Islam. If Europe had known as much of Islam, as Muslims knew of Christendom, in those days, those mad, adventurous, occasionally chivalrous and heroic but utterly fanatical outbreaks known as the Crusades could not have taken place, for they were based on a complete misapprehension”.

### **I. According to Christians the only religion which proved the Protector of the Weak**

T.W. Arnold has written as follows:

“The treatment of their Christian subjects by the Ottoman emperors—at least for two centuries after their conquest of Greece—exhibits a toleration such as was at that time quite unknown in the rest of Europe. The Calvinists of Hungary and Transylvania and the Unitarians of the latter country long preferred to submit to the Turks rather than fall into the hands of the fanatical House of Hapsburg.

“It was to Turkey that the persecuted Spanish Jews fled for refuge in enormous numbers to the end of the fifteenth century and the Cossacks who belonged to the sect of the Old Believers and were persecuted by the Russian State Church, found in the dominions of the Sultan the toleration which their Christian brethren denied

them” (pages 60-61 *The Prophet of Islam and His Teachings* by Maulvi Abdul Karim).

Do not the irrefutable historical records of the past fourteen centuries prove beyond any doubt what a splendid religion of toleration Islam is? It is for the upliftment of the whole world without any question of caste, colour, creed, education, status, rank in life or nationality!

It was this exemplary tolerance of the Muslims that induced Macarinus, Patriarch of Antioch in the seventeenth century publicly to recite with his Christian followers the following prayer:

“O God, perpetuate the Turks (*i.e.* Muslims or Islam) for ever and ever because they take their impost and enter into no account of religion be their subjects Christians, Nazarenes, Jews or Samaritans” (pages 62-63, of *ibid*).

Surely nowhere in the history of mankind has such a fervent prayer been made to God by one of the heads of a religious organisation along with all his followers for the Continuity and success of any other religion but its own except in the case of Islam, thereby proving beyond doubt, what a wonderful religion Islam is for toleration and goodwill towards others who are not even Muslims!

Sir Charles Edward Archibald has confirmed:

“There is no religion which is so maligned by the ignorant as Islam, yet, if people only knew, it is the only solution for the problems of socialism, in as much as it is a religion of the strong for the weak, of the rich for the poor” (page 85, *Wisdom of Prophet Mohammad*, compiled by Mohammad Amin, Barrister-at-Law, Lahore, 1945).

Professor Ram Dev the editor of “*Vedi Magazine*” has given his finding:

“It is wrong to say that Islam was spread with the use of the sword, let some one come forward and try to do so today!” (Page 79 of *ibid*).



## J. Tolerance and Islam

It would not be irrelevant to mention the rules that covered the propagation of Islam to the position of one of the largest religions on the face of the earth. It has been proved from the statements and prayers of Christians themselves that Islam has shown for the past fourteen centuries such a high degree of toleration and protection towards other religions, as was unknown to the world at large and to the European Christians in particular.

The Qur'an orders as follows:

"O Ye who believe! Be careful of your duty to Allah, and be with the truthful" (Qur'an 9:119).

"Lo! thou (O Muhammad) guidest not whom thou lovest (or want to guide and convert to Islam the right path), but Allah guideth whom He wills. And He is the best aware of those who (strive for the right guidance and) walks aright" (Qur'an 28: 56).

*"There is no compulsion in religion.* Truly the right path has henceforth become clearly distinct from (the path of) error. Therefore he who rejects false deities (*i.e.* trinity in unity, son of god and idolatry) and believes in Allah (and the teachings of Islam as completed and taught by the Promised Holy Prophet Muhammad), he indeed has laid hold on the firmest handle, which will never break off. Allah is The Hearer, The Knower".

"Allah is the guardian of those who believe. He brings them out of darkness (of ignorance, idolatry and the wicked religions of Nimrodism) into the light (of guidance of the right path of Islam or surrender unto the Will of Allah). As for those who disbelieve (in the guidance of the Promised Holy Prophet Muhammad and "Surrender to the Will of Allah"), their guardians are false deities (Nimrod, the only begotten son born of the Virgin Queen Mother of the Heavens come to save baptised sinners). They (*i.e.* the son of god and the mother of god, the trinity in unity, *etc*) bring them (*i.e.* their baptised followers) out of the light (of guidance of Allah and his prophets) into the darkness. Such (idolaters and their baptised

followers) are the rightful owners of the Fire (Hell). They will abide therein (forever)!

“Do you remember of him (King Nimrod, the cursed, the mighty hunter in rebellion against God), who had an argument with Abraham about his Lord (Chapter 6: F) because Allah had given him the (first human) kingdom (for the kingdom of Nimrod please refer to Genesis 10: 9-19). How Abraham said: My Lord is He Who giveth life and causeth death, he (King Nimrod) answered: I give life and cause death (for details of this incident please refer to Chapter 6: H—Excommunication—of Abraham by Nimrod). Abraham said: Lo! Allah causeth the sun to rise in the East, so do thou (as you are claiming divinity, trinity in unity with god, claiming to be his only begotten son born of the virgin come to save sinners, show your divine powers and) cause it (the sun) to come up from the West. Thus was the disbeliever (the Infallible Pontifex Maximus) abashed (for the first time in his life). And Allah guideth not the wrong-doing folks” (Qur’an 2: 256-258).

The above quotations from the Qur’an make it clear that:

1. No compulsion was to be used in religion—“To each his own” was the universal maxim—“Unto you your religion, and unto me my religion” (Qur’an 59: 6).
2. In particular, no coercion was to be used even for the conversion of the followers of King Nimrod, who would continue to suffer all the time from the curse of Allah at the Tower of Babel, which broke up the unity of mankind and would continue to break up this religion of Nimrod into various sects with numerous persecutions and disputes between themselves.

If one looks at pages 496-498 of “*Babylon the Great has fallen!*” by the Watchtower Bible and Tract Society it will be observed:

1. Christianity has broken up into more than 200 religious sects in America. All of them believe in the Holy Bible and profess to be Christians.

2. In South Africa 1400 different religious sects had grown up between 1910 A.D. and the 12th August, 1957, all of them were claiming to be Christians.
3. Today the situation in Christendom is a travesty of Christian unity.
4. Christianity is akin to the religion taught by the man who founded Babylon and built the first empire, “Nimrod a mighty hunter in rebellion against God” (Genesis 10: 8-12).
5. There have been bitter persecutions and much blood spilt by Christians of one sect killing Christians of another sect, without even sparing the old and feeble, the helpless women and innocent children!

Duncan Greenless, M.A. (Oxon) on page 27 of “*The Gospel of Islam*”, Adyar, 1948 has pointed out:

“The nobility and broad tolerance of this creed, which accepts as God-inspired all real religions of the world, will always be a glorious heritage for mankind. On it could indeed be built a perfect world religion”.

Gobineau has confirmed in “*Les Religions et les Philosophies dans l’Asie Centrale*” as:

“No religion is more tolerant than Islam to the followers of other creeds” (page 87, *Wisdom of Prophet Mohammad*).

Johnson in “*Oriental Religions*” has given his findings:

“Muhammad’s thoroughly democratic conception of the divine Government, the universality of his religious ideal, his simple humanity, all affiliate him with the modern world” (page 86 of *ibid*).

**K. The Religion of Universal Brotherhood**

**1. Man—Universal Brotherhood—in practice**

Muhammad of Arabia not only proclaimed “*Universal Human Brotherhood*”, but also for the first time in the history of mankind, made it a principle and a fact of common law! The most conspicuous example is seen every year by the whole world on the occasion of Haj. Here millions of Muslims from the different parts of our earth, with varying colours of skin from pure white to yellow, brown and even black, with differing customs and manners and separate languages fraternise together for over a month. All men wear the same pilgrim’s robe which comprises two pieces of unstitched plain white cloth. There is absolutely no distinction between the rich and the poor. The Kings, the merchants and the slaves are all treated on the same footing. They are all men, hence alike before their Creator. They all stand and pray alike—there are no reserved places for anybody This proves to the world again and again each and every year for one who has sense and power of observation that Islam is continuously showing and proving annually to the whole world for 1,400 years now that there is no distinction whatsoever between man and mankind (Chapter 7: H and I).

The Holy Bible has foretold that the army of God, which will fight and defeat the Anti-Christ at the Battle of Armageddon will consist of people dressed in white unstitched linen (Chapter 25: N). from that it would appear that the army of God would comprise those people who show annually the oneness of mankind by wearing this white pilgrim’s robe at the occasion of Hajj.

It was on this teaching of Muhammad that Islam has been defined as:

“I”	Stands for	“I”
“S”	„	“Shall”

“L”	„	“Love”
“A”	„	“All”
“M”	„	“Mankind”

Thus it will be clear that “Islam” stands for “*I shall love all mankind*” or “*Universal Love and Human Brotherhood*”.

## 2. Practice of our Black Brothers as our equal brother!

On pages 332-335 of “*Veiled Mysteries of Egypt*” by S. S. Leader published in London 1912, one reads:

*“Take away that black man, I can have no discussion with him, exclaimed the Christian Archbishop Cyrus when the Arab conquerors had sent a deputation of their ablest men to discuss terms of surrender of the capital of Egypt, headed by the Black African Ubadah as the ablest of them all.*

*“To the sacred archishop’s astonishment, he was told that this man was commissioned by General Amr (Omar was second Caliph of Islam): that the Moslems held the Black Africans and white men in equal respect judging a man by his character and not by his colour!*

*“Well, if the African must lead, he must speak gently, ordered the prelate, so as not to frighten his white auditors.*

*“(Ubadah replied) ‘There are a thousand blacks, as black as myself, amongst our companions. We live only for God, and to follow His will. We care naught for wealth, so long as we have the where withal to stay our hunger and to clothe our bodies. This world is naught for us, the next world is all’.*

*“Such a spirit of class distinction is certainly the greatest hindrance to missionary work in the East, as every impartial observer has noted. How, for instance, can any other appeal stand against that of the Muslim who, in approaching the pagan, says to him, however obscure or degraded he may be, ‘Embrace the faith, and you are at once an equal and a brother’, Islam knows ‘no colour line’.”*

James A. Michener under “*Islam—The Misunderstood Religion*”, in the Reader’s Digest (American Edition, for May, 1955) has clarified:

“More than most religions, Islam preaches the brotherhood of all races, colours and nations within its fold. Muhammad himself probably had exactly the same skin colouring as Jesus—a very sun-tanned white—but today his followers embrace all colours; black men from Africa, yellow men from China, brown men from Malaya, white men from Turkey”.

The Parsi Barrister Homi J. Rustonji has given his finding upon equality of mankind as practised by the various religions as:

“The equality taught by Islam is not to be found, as far as I know, in other religions” (page 84, *Wisdom of Prophet Mohammad*, compiled by Mohammad Amin Barrister-at-Law printed by Lion Press, Lahore, 1945).

Munshi Pren Chand, M.A., has confirmed:

“*Islam never spread by the sword. It spread because it taught that all persons are equal. It is necessary that we should forget the falsely written history books. Muslims, whom we regard as aliens, are really the deliverers of mankind*” (page 81 of *ibid*).

Thus Islam has truly proved by its action and preachings over the past fourteen centuries that it stands for “*I shall love all mankind*”—*A universal religion of Love and Brotherhood*.

### 3. The Causes for the Abolition of Slavery

The result of this teaching of equality between man and man under Islam has often been that the slaves of the family have been made heirs, if they were efficient and capable in preference to the sons of their Masters. This proves clearly that Islam does not recognise any difference in the eyes of God between a master and his slave. Hence Caliph Omar the Second President of Islam, the absolute ruler of Arabia, arrived to accept the surrender of Jerusalem leading his own camel whilst his slave rode on the camel as recorded earlier (Ch. 13: K).

Islam is thus the principle which has been solely responsible for the abolition of slavery which it has changed into a brotherhood of equality between a master and his slave, and thus brings out that “Islam” stands for “*I shall Love All Mankind*”, there being no such thing as low caste or untouchables, every man being equal in the eyes of Allah!

#### **4. Slaves repeatedly nominated Kings by their previous Masters**

The most famous event in the history of mankind of this equality taught in Islam between a master and his slave is to be found in the Kings of the “Slave Dynasty of India” King Muhammad of Ghur appointed Qutubuddin Aibak, a Turkish slave as the sole heir and ruler of his Kingdom in India in 1206 A.D. When the latter died four years later he nominated his slave Iltutmish to become his heir in 1210 A.D. After him came his daughter Queen Raziyya. Upon her death she was succeeded by Nasiruddin Mahmud in 1240 A.D. who was the next slave to become a king. When he died in 1266 A.D. Ghiyasuddin Balban became the last slave king of India.

The world cannot show any examples of slaves being nominated heirs of their masters. This was the equality practised by Islam—the universal religion of love and brotherhood.

#### **5. Brotherhood by Pickthall**

Here are quotations from pages 48-52 of “*Madras Lectures on Islam Series—No. 2*” by Pickthall, which will enable the readers to appreciate more fully the religion of Universal Brotherhood according to European researchers:

“I have to talk to you to-day about Islamic brotherhood as an ideal and an institution. To begin with, I will quote but one passage, out of a hundred which I could quote in this connection from the Holy Qur’an:

“O ye who believe! Observe your duty to Allah with right

observance, and die not till ye have surrendered (unto Him).

“And hold fast, all of you together, to the cable of Allah, and do not separate. And remember Allah’s favour unto you: how ye were enemies and He made friendship between your hearts so that ye became as brothers by His grace and (how) ye were on the brink of an abyss of fire, and He did save you from it. Thus Allah maketh clear His revelations unto you in order that ye may be guided”.

“These two verses of the Holy Qur’an are a reminder of the progress already made in a few years owing to the advent of Islam, and a command to all the Muslims to continue in the way of progress by clinging to the cable of Allah, the Sacred Law, and never again to return to the unhallowed state of warring tribes and hostile classes which had reached such a pitch as to threaten human culture in Arabia with complete destruction. Our Prophet (may God bless and keep him) said: The Muslims are as a wall, one part supporting another. The Muslims are all one body. If thy eye is injured the whole body suffers, and if thy foot is injured, the whole body suffers.

In his speech from Jebel Arafat to a great multitude of men, who but a few months or years before had all been conscienceless idolaters, on the occasion of the ‘Hajjat-al-Wada’, ‘the farewell pilgrimage’, his last visit to Mecca, he said:

“O people, listen to my words with understanding for I know not whether, after this year, I shall ever be among you in this place:

“Your lives and property are sacred and inviolable one to another until you appear before your Lord, even as this day and this month are sacred for all, and remember you will have to appear before your Lord who will demand from you an account of all your acts.

“The Lord hath prescribed to every man his share of inheritance; no testament to the prejudice of heirs is lawful.

“The child belongeth to the parent, and the violator of wedlock shall be stoned.

“Whoever falsely claimeth another for his father or his master, the



curse of God and of the angels and of all mankind shall be upon him.

“O people, ye have rights over your wives and your wives have rights over you. It is their duty not to break their wifely faith, nor commit any act of manifest indecency. If they do so ye have authority to confine them in separate rooms and to punish them but not severely. But if they refrain, clothe them and feed them properly. Treat your women with loving kindness, for they are with you as prisoners and captives. They have no power over anything that concerneth them. Lo! ye have taken them on the security of Allah and made their persons lawful to you by the words of Allah.

“Be faithful to the trust imposed on you, and shun transgression.

“Usury is forbidden, the debtor shall return only the principal; and the beginning will be made with the loans of my uncle Abbas, son of Abdul Muttalib.

“Henceforth the vengeance for blood practised in the time of ignorance is forbidden, and the feud of blood is abolished beginning with the murder of my cousin Rabia ibn Harith ibn Abdul Muttalib.

*“And your slaves! see that ye feed them with such food as ye yourselves eat, and clothe them with the stuff ye yourselves wear; and if they commit a fault which ye are not ready-to forgive then part with them, for they are servants of your Lord, and must not be ill-treated. The slaves who say their prayers are your brothers!”*

“O people! Listen to my words and understand them. *Know that all Muslims are brothers one to another; Ye are one fraternity.* Nothing belonging to one of you is lawful to his brother unless given out of free goodwill. Guard yourselves from committing injustice.

“Let him that is present tell it to him who is absent Haply he who shall be told will remember better than him who hath heard”.

“At the end of his discourse the Holy Prophet, moved by the sight of the devotion of that multitude, most of whom had been the enemies of Islam but a little while ago, exclaimed:

“O Lord! I have delivered my message, and accomplished my

work”.

The hosts below made answer with one voice:

“Aye, that thou hast!”

He said:

“O Lord! I beseech Thee, be Thou Witness to it!”

Had ever man such fullness of success? Was ever man more humble in his hour of triumph?

Notice how Muhammad (God bless him!) never was content with precept. He always strengthened precept with example. Though he had become, in fact, the Emperor of Arabia, he never sat upon a throne and issued edicts. He was always one among his people, his leadership being that of the Imam before the congregation, setting the example, foremost in obedience to the law which he himself proclaimed. When he proclaimed the brotherhood of Muslims he did not exempt himself. He was, and is, the elder brother of all Muslims. Of all he taught he is the great example!

Now this subject of human brotherhood is one upon which the Muslims have no apologies to make to any other creed or nation or community. Here they have a great achievement, as clearly visible to-day as when the Prophet spoke, to show for an example to the nations.

Other religious communities declare their belief in the Fatherhood of God and the brotherhood of men, but they have shown no practical result of that belief to help a struggling world; of so little help has their ideal been that the struggling world, in its convulsive efforts to escape from misery, has turned its back upon religion as one of its oppressors, and sought help in other humanistic formulas, associated through reliance on a false analogy, not with religion but with Atheism or agnosticism—“Liberty, equality, fraternity”—the materialistic gospel of Karl Marx, and so forth.

## **L. The Influences that Propagated Islam**

Islam has no priestly class of people. It has no regularly organised and financially supported missionary Organisation! Then how did Islam proliferate to become one of the largest religions of the world?

History bears incontestable testimony of the causes and method of Islam's propagation.

- a. In the course of the first 13 years of preachings at Mecca, Muhammad made a few hundred converts.
- b. During the next eight years at Madina the figure went up to just a few thousands.
- c. It was only after invitations were issued to all the people and kings of all the surrounding countries that the number of Muslims swelled from a few thousand to over a million on Muhammad's departure from earth two years later.
- d. The number of converts continued daily to rise for the next 30 years after Muhammad's passing away. The bulk of the population were from the shores of the Atlantic Ocean including Spain and North Africa to China (Chapter 17: G-10e).
- e. Thereafter God-fearing people—mostly merchants, who worked during the day for their living and preached during the evening have carried the torch of the light and teachings of Islam to the four corners of the earth and not the priests or missionaries!
- f. Islamic simplicity, sublimity and practicality have acted as the most effective persuasion. Those who came in contact with and understood it were so much influenced by it that they accepted it voluntarily, there was no need for any force to be used!
- g. We have read earlier in Chapter 13: K, under "*The Causes Leading to The Surrender of Jerusalem in 16 A.H. / 637 A.D. and*

*Its After Effects*”, that the good treatment meted out by Caliph Omar and the Muslim army caused such wild enthusiasm, which within a very few years contributed to the spread Islam from the Middle East to the Atlantic Ocean.

T.W. Arnold has written as follows:

“There is no event in the history of Islam, that for terror and desolation can be compared to the Mongol conquest. Like an avalanche, the hosts of Chengiz Khan swept over the centres of Muslim culture and civilisation, leaving behind bare deserts and shapeless ruins where before had stood the palaces of stately cities, girt about with gardens and fruitful corn land ... History has nothing to relate that at all approaches it” (page 66, *The Prophet of Islam* by Maulvi Abdul Karim, Calcutta, 1937).

“In the city of Herat only 40 persons are said to have escaped the Mongol massacre out of the population of 100,000 Muslims. When these ferocious barbarians had had their thirst quenched with blood, they soon realised the beauties of the Islamic Faith and they became Muslims voluntarily. This episode took place, in the thirteenth century of the Christian era” (pages 66-67 *ibid*).

Similar also was the case with the barbarous Seljuk Turks in the eleventh century. These savage infidels destroyed the Muslim kingdoms, burning, massacring and laying the whole area waste. But when they settled down they realised they had destroyed something which was far better than anything they could ever dream of. They also became Muslims voluntarily after getting to know what Islam was.

History cannot cite such instances of conquerors accepting voluntarily the religion of the conquered although the Romans absorbed in similar conditions the culture and literature of the conquered Greeks and made it their own to such an extent that the Roman Emperor Constantine when he had the Hebrew Evangel burnt in 325 A.D., Constantine had the New Testament compiled in the Greek language, which he adopted in preference to Latin, his mother tongue.

So it becomes clear that even the enemies of Islam as also the pagans, when they have understood and realised what Islam is, have of their own free will turned towards Islam, which is such a practical and logical religion that it does not require any propaganda or missionary activity or a priest-class to win over souls to the will of the Creator.

### **M. European view on Education in Islam**

This is an extract from page 9, of “*Madras Lectures on Islam—Series No. 2*” by Pickthall, delivered in January 1927, published in 1937:

“There was no distinction between secular education and religious education in the great days of Islam. All education was brought into the religious sphere. To quote a recent European writer: ‘It was the glory of Islam that it gave to other sciences the same footing which it gave to the study of the Qur’an and the Hadith (the advice of the Holy Prophet), and Fiqh (that is, Muslim Jurisprudence), a place in the Mosque’ ... Lectures on chemistry and physics, botany, medicine and astronomy were given in the mosque equally with lectures on the above named subjects; for the Mosque was the University of Islam in the great days, and it deserved the name of University, since it welcomed to its precincts all the knowledge of the age from every quarter. It was this unity and exaltation of all learning which gave to the old Muslim writers that peculiar equality which every reader of them must have noticed, the calm serenity of orbéd minds.

“In Islam, there are no such terms as secular and religious, for true religion includes the whole sphere of man’s activities. The distinction drawn in the Holy Qur’an is between:

“Good, that which is helpful to man’s growth,

“And evil, that which is detrimental and noxious to it.

“Islam is a rational religion. It has no place for the man who can say, with St. Augustine: ‘Credo quia absurdum est’—‘I believe because it is absurd’. Again and again does the Qur’an denounce irrational religion as religion evidently false. Again and again does it appeal

to men to use their reason and especially their common sense in matters of religion. All historical experience goes to prove that a large measure of free thought is absolutely necessary to human progress, and at the same time that nations which lose faith in God deteriorate.

“Are the two things, the living faith in God and the large measure of free thought, incompatible?”

“A considerable school of thought in the West seems to think that they are incompatible.

“Islam has proved that they are perfectly compatible. In the early, the successful centuries of Islam, an intense faith in God was combined with free thought upon every earthly subject, for Islam held nothing upon earth so sacred as to be immune from criticism. There was only One Supernatural, only One Incomprehensible, Whose unity, having been once accepted, admitted of no further discussion. He was One for all, Beneficent and Merciful towards all alike, and He had bestowed on man the gift of reason, which is extolled by Muslim writers as the highest gift, to be used quite freely in the name of Allah—that is to say, with the purpose of pursuing what is good and eschewing what is evil, for which the Sacred Law affords guidance and safeguards. There is no priesthood in Islam. All the prerogatives and responsibilities which in other religions have been bestowed unto a priesthood, in the system of Islam are vested in the individual human mind. So the most wise and learned men become the natural leaders.

The Holy Prophet has made the following statements:

“To seek knowledge is the duty of every Muslim (Male) and every Muslimah (Female):”

“The ink of the Scholar is more holy than the blood of the Martyr”.

“An Hour’s contemplation in study of God’s Creation is better than a year of adoration”.

“He dieth not who seeketh knowledge”.

“Whosoever revereth the learned, revereth me”.

“To listen to the words of the learned and instil into others the lessons or science is better than religious exercises”.

“He, who leaveth his home in search of knowledge, walketh in the path of Allah”.

“Acquire knowledge. It enableth the possessor to distinguish right from wrong; it lighteth up the path to heaven. It is our friend in the desert, our society in solitude, our companion when friendless. It guideth to happiness, it sustaineth in adversity, it is an ornament amongst friends, and an armour against the enemy”.

“Lo! the angels offer their wings to the seekers of knowledge”.

“Are those who have knowledge on an equality with those who have no knowledge?”

“The preferment of the learned man above the Devotee is as my preferment above the lowest of you”.

James A. Michener under “*Islam—The Misunderstood Religion*”, in the Reader’s Digest (American Edition, for May, 1965) says:

“Many Westerners, accustomed by their history books to believe that Muslims were barbarous infidels, find it difficult to comprehend how profoundly our intellectual life has been influenced by Muslim scholars in the field of science, medicine, mathematics, geography. Crusaders who invaded the Holy Land to fight Muslims returned to Europe with new ideas of love, poetry, chivalry, warfare and government. Our concept of what a university should be was deeply modified by Muslim scholars, who perfected the writing of history and who brought to Europe much Greek learning”.

## **N. European confirms Permanency of Civilising powers of Islam**

Canon Isaac Taylor, who formed a very decided opinion on the civilising power of Islam, writes on page 50 of his book on “*The Life of Muhammad*”, as follows:

“It is not the first propagation of Islam that has to be explained, but

*it is the permanency with which it retains its hold upon its converts. An African tribe, once converted to Islam, never reverts to paganism and never embraces Christianity. When Muhammadanism is embraced by a Black African tribe, paganism, devil-worship, fetishism, cannibalism, human sacrifice, infanticide, witch-craft at once disappear. Natives begin to dress, filth is replaced by cleanliness, drunkenness becomes very rare, gambling is forbidden, the immodest dance and the promiscuous intercourse of the sexes cease. Hospitality becomes a religious duty, female chastity is regarded as a virtue, industry replaces idleness; law, order and sobriety prevail; a feeling of humanity, benevolence and brotherhood is inculcated. Polygamy and slavery are regulated, their evils restrained. Islam, above all, is the most powerful total abstinence association in the world; whereas the extension of European trade means the extension of drunkenness and vice and the degradation of the people. Islam introduces a civilisation of no low order, including a knowledge of reading and writing, decent clothing, personal cleanliness, veracity, and self-respect. Its restraining and civilising effects are marvellous. How little have we to show for the vast sums of money and all the precious lives lavished upon Africa? Christian converts are reckoned by thousands, Muslim converts by millions. These are the stern facts we have to face. It is a pity to ignore them. We ought to begin by recognising the fact that Islam is not an Anti-Christian faith, but a half-Christian faith”.*

Charles R. Watson has written on pages 38-39 of “*What is this Moslem World?*” Published London, 1937:

“It may be boldly asserted that no people in the world give the impression of being so religious-minded as do Muslim. Their whole life is saturated with the consciousness of God”.

Dr. A. Bertherand on page 6 of “*Contribution des Arabes au Progres de Sciences Medicates*” Paris, 1883:

“To seek knowledge is a duty of every Muslim man and woman. Seek knowledge even though it be in China. The Savants are the heirs of the Prophets”. “These profound words of the great reformer



are in indisputable contradiction to those who seek and exert themselves in putting the responsibility of the intellectual degradation of Muslims upon the spirit of the Qur'an. Let them read and meditate upon this great Book and they will find in it, in every passage, a constant attack upon idolatry and materialism; they will read that the Prophet incessantly called the attention and the meditation of his people to the splendid marvels, to the mysterious phenomena of creation. The incredulous, sceptical and unbelieving may convince themselves that the importance of this Book and its doctrine was not to throw back, eventually, the intellectual and moral faculties of a whole people. On the contrary, those who have followed its counsels have been, as we have described in the course of this study, the creators of a civilisation which is astounding unto this day".

Marquis of Dufferin and Ava, on page 24 of his "*Speeches Delivered in India*" published in London, 1890 states:

"It is to Mussulman science, to Mussulman art, and to Mussulman literature that Europe has been in a great measure indebted for its extrication from the darkness of the Middle Ages".

### **O. Chambers' Encyclopaedia on "Civilisation of Europe"**

"We cannot consider in this place" records Chambers' Encyclopaedia,

"what Islam has done for the cause of all humanity, or more exactly, what is its share in the development of science and art in Europe. Broadly speaking, the Muhammadans may be said to have been the enlightened teachers of barbarous Europe, from the ninth to the thirteenth century ... Arabic philosophy, medicine, natural history, geography, history, grammar, rhetoric and the 'golden art of poetry', schooled by the old Hellenic masters brought forth an abundant harvest of works, many of which will live and teach as long as there will be generations to be taught".

### P. The Foretellings of G. B. Shaw

George Bernard Shaw, in his inimitable style, has asserted that within the next hundred years, perhaps even much earlier, England in particular and the rest of the Western world in general are bound to embrace Islam, if they intend to save themselves from the devastations of wars. Although an atheist himself, and while hardly any religion has passed unscathed by his trenchant pen, Shaw thinks that Islam is the only religion that will satisfy all intelligent people who want a religion to guide them spiritually, morally and socially. The strongest argument advanced by him to prove the universal acceptability of Islam is that it has a great power of absorbing every progress made by philosophy and science. In an interview Mr. Shaw paid the following tribute to the Prophet of Islam:

“I have always held the religion of Muhammad in high estimation because of its wonderful vitality. It is the only religion which appears to me to possess that assimilating capability to the changing phases of existence which can make itself appeal to every age ...

“The Medieval ecclesiastics either through ignorance or bigotry painted Muhammadanism in the darkest colour. They were in fact trained to hate both the man Muhammad and his religion. To them Muhammad was anti-Christ. I have studied him—the wonderful man—and *in my opinion, far from being an anti-Christ he must be called the Saviour of humanity!* I believe that if a man like him were to assume the dictatorship of the modern world, he would succeed in solving its problems in a way that would bring it the much-needed peace and happiness. But to proceed: it was in the 19th century that honest thinkers like Carlyle, Goethe and Gibbon perceived intrinsic worth in the religion of Muhammad and thus there was some change for the better in the European attitude towards Islam. But the Europe of the present century is far advanced. It is beginning to be enamoured of the creed of Muhammad. In the next century it may go still further in recognising the utility of that creed in solving its problems and it is in this sense that you must understand my prediction.” (pages 112-

113 of *Prophet of Islam* by Moulvi Abdul Karim).

### **Q. Quotations on surrender to the will of God**

“Who is better in religion than he who ‘Aslam’ (*i.e.* surrendereth) his purpose to Allah while doing good (deeds towards mankind) and followeth the traditions of Abraham, the upright? Allah (Himself) chose Abraham for a friend.

“Lo! those disbelieve in Allah and His messengers, who seek to make distinction between Allah and His messengers, and say: We believe in some (of the Prophets) and disbelieve in others (amongst the Prophets), and seek to choose a way in between;

“Such are disbelievers in truth; and for disbelievers we (Allah) have prepared a shameful doom (*i.e.* everlasting Hell).

*“But those who believe in Allah and His messengers (i.e. all the Prophets from Adam to Jesus and Muhammad) and make no distinction between any of them, unto them Allah will give their wages; and Allah was ever Forgiving, Merciful.*

“Lo! We (Allah) inspire thee (Muhammad) as We (Allah) inspired Noah and the prophets after him, as We (Allah) inspired Abraham and Ishmael and Isaac and Jacob and the tribes, and Jesus and Job and Jonah and Aaron and Solomon and We (Allah) imparted unto David the Psalms”, (Qur’an 4:125,150-152, 163).

“He (Allah) hath ordained for you (mankind) that religion which He commended unto Noah, and that which We (Allah) inspire in thee (Muhammad), and that which We (Allah) commended unto Abraham and Moses and Jesus, saying: Establish the religion, and be not divided therein. (It appears) dreadful for the idolaters that unto which thou callest them (that their idol gods are nothing and that God is One; Alone). Allah chooseth for Himself whom He will, and guideth unto Himself him who turneth (towards Him)” (Qur’an 92: 13).

“Lo! This verily is the true narrative. There is no God save Allah, and lo! Allah is the Mighty, the Wise.

“And if they turn away, then lo! Allah is Aware of (who are) the corrupters.

“Say: O people of the Scriptures (*i.e.* Jews and Nazarenes)! Come to an agreement between us and you: that we shall worship none but Allah, and that we shall ascribe no partner unto Him, and that none of us shall take others for lords beside Allah, and if they turn away, then say: Bear witness that we are ‘Muslimun’ (*i.e.* those who have surrendered unto the Will of Allah).

“O people of the Scripture! Why do ye argue about Abraham (that he is a Jew or a Christian), when the Torah and the Evangel were not revealed till (long) after him? Have ye then no sense?

“Lo! ye are those who argue about that whereof ye have some knowledge: Why then argue ye concerning that whereof ye have no knowledge? Allah knoweth. Ye know not.

“Abraham was not a Jew, nor yet a Nazarene (as the Israelites started from his grandchild whilst Jesus came many centuries later); but he was an upright man who was a ‘Muslim’ (*i.e.* surrendered to the Will of Allah), and he was not of the idolaters.

“Lo! those of mankind who have the best claim to Abraham are those who followed him and this prophet (Muhammad, because all the real teachings of the earlier prophets are no longer available. The Jews having distorted and spoilt the Torah, the Psalms and the Old Testament. Whilst the Christians have burnt and destroyed the Original Hebrew Evangel of Jesus. Hence the truth is no longer in existence with them) and those who believe (in what you are teaching *i.e.* Al Islam the religion of surrender to the laws of Allah—Thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven); and Allah is the protecting friend of the believers” (Qur’an 3: 62-68).

“It is not (possible) for any human being unto whom Allah had given the Scripture and wisdom and the Prophethood that he (the said Prophet) should afterwards have said unto mankind: Be slaves of mine instead of Allah; but (what he said was): Be ye faithful servants of the Lord by virtue of your constant teachings of the Scripture and your constant study thereof.

“And he (*i.e.* the earlier Prophet) commanded you not that ye should take the angels and the Prophets for lords. Would he (the Prophet) command you to disbelieve after he had surrendered (to Allah)?

“When Allah made (His) covenant with the Prophets, (He said): Behold that which I have given you of the Scripture and knowledge. And afterwards there will come unto your followers a messenger (*i.e.* Muhammad) confirming that which ye possess. (Instruct) your followers (that they) shall believe in him (Muhammad, the Promised Prophet) and (that) your followers shall help him. He (Allah) asked: Do ye agree, and will ye take up My burden (which I lay upon you) in the conveyance of this (message)? They answered: We agree. He said: Then bear ye witness. I will be a witness with you (“For Moses truly said unto the fathers—of the Jewish nation—A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren *i.e.* descendants of Prophet Prince Ishmael—like unto me—*i.e.* One who will speak face to face with God just like one speaks to his friend—Exodus 33: 11—him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you. And—after a time at the battle of Armageddon—it shall come to pass, that every soul, which will not hear that—Promised Prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people of this earth. Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of the coming of these days of the Promised Prophet who has to be obeyed implicitly—Acts 3: 22-24).

“Then whosoever after this shall turn away: they will be miscreants (as confirmed in Acts 3:23).

“Seek they other than the religion of Allah, when unto Him submitteth whosoever is in the heavens and the earth (willingly or unwillingly) and unto Him they will be returned.

“Say (O Muhammad)! We believe in Allah, and that which is revealed unto us and that which was revealed unto Abraham and Ishmael and Isaac and Jacob and the tribes, and that which was vouchsafed unto Moses (*i.e.* the Torah), and Jesus (*i.e.* Evangel) and the (other) Prophets from their Lord. We make no distinction

between any of them (*i.e.* all the Prophets from Adam to Jesus), and unto Him we are Muslimun (*i.e.* surrendered).

“And whoso seeketh as religion other than “AL ISLAM” (*i.e.* the surrender to the will of Allah) it will not be accepted from him, and he will be a loser in the Hereafter.

“How shall Allah guide a people who disbelieved (in the Promised Prophet Muhammad) after their belief (and conversion to the teachings of the earlier Prophets) and (after) they bore witness that (they would implicitly follow the promised true messenger Muhammad) after clear proofs had come unto them, and Allah guideth not wrongdoing folk.

“As for such, their guerdon is that on them rest the curse of Allah and of Angels and of men combined.

“They will abide therein. Their doom will not be lightened, neither will they be reprieved:

“Save those who afterwards repent and do right. Lo! Allah is Forgiving, Merciful” (Qur’an 3: 79-89).

## **R. The Remarks of a European Scholar**

The final advice given by Wilfred Cantwell Smith in his book “*Islam in Modern History*” pages 304-305 is as follows:

“Indeed, the various intellectual and moral issues are today themselves internationalized. *We would contend that a healthy, flourishing Islam is important not only for the Muslim but for all the world today.* Some Western political and other leaders have seemed singularly blind to this. Some have apparently adopted in practice if not in theory the absurd as well as offensive doctrine that man lives by bread alone: or as the Marxists phrase it, everything depends on economic development. From their Asian policies, it would even appear that they believe also, as even the Marxists do not, that economic development can be treated in isolation. The West is slow in bringing to fruition its incipient realization that world peace and world progress depend on the progress of ideas

and serious understanding and in realizing that the Muslim segment of human society can flourish only if Islam is strong and vital, is pure and creative and sound, and only if there is at least a moderately happy relation with mutual understanding between it and the rest of man's systems.

"Further, Christians also might well recognize this: Their traditional interpretation of ideological dogmas has stood in the way of their perceiving otherwise obvious truths that the spiritual welfare of Muslims lies in a spiritually strong and vital Islam, *and that both love and duty demand a deep aspiration for this on the part of Christendom, and of all men of goodwill.* It is a profoundly (Christian) fact that the significant realities in the Muslim world (as elsewhere) are ultimately God and men and in this particular area Islam is the relation between them. The spiritual as well as the temporal future of the Muslims turns on whether Islam's contemporary renaissance or reform succeeds in bringing a renewed vitality and power to Muslim society; and its creative vision of God and His justice become for modern life, as for ancient, vivid and personal and deep in the lives of its individual adherents.

"These issues raise in one important and representative instance perhaps *the Crux of both Western Civilization and Christianity is their relations with other men. The fundamental weakness of both in the modern world is their inability to recognize that they share the planet not with inferiors but with equals. Unless Western Civilization intellectually and socially, politically and economically, and the Christian Church theologically, can learn to treat other men with fundamental respect, these too in their turn will have failed to come to terms with the actualities of the Twentieth Century.* The problems raised in this are, of course, as profound as anything that we have touched on for Islam. They are also as consequential. Manifestly, they are outside the scope of this study, except in reminding us that all men today, Muslim or Christian, Oriental or Western face questions that, though differing in form are essentially comparable: the deepest questions for all of us today are those that involve us with each other".

## **S. European indicates the only solution to bring Capitalism and Communism together**

### **1. General world conditions when Communism started**

“Our October Revolution opened a new epoch in world history” said V. I. Lenin at the third Congress of the Communist International in 1921.

The Communist movement today embraces nearly 90 countries; about 500 million people are supposed to be communists.

With these staggering realities before us, we should try to analyse what was the back ground of world conditions at its origin and why it has spread so fast and has so many adherents.

We have already read in Chapter 14: H that it was Christianity which was responsible solely for the origin of Communism. Now the question here is how and why it spread so fast and so far.

We are all aware that at the beginning of this century Christianity had subjugated practically the whole earth.

The Europeans ruled their Empires all over the world.

The British had often boasted that “THE SUN NEVER SETS UPON THE BRITISH EMPIRE”. These Europeans had often contended that with the capture of the “Holy Lands” in World War 1, and the destruction of the Ottoman Empire, they had exterminated “Islam” which was at that time the only religion which actively defended the rights of the poor and the helpless. Thus it was the only opponent to the unquestionable might of Christianity, which denied equality to people even belonging to the same caste, colour, nationality and creed if they were only poor and defenceless.



## **2. The Origin of Communism and why in Russia?**

The Christian Rulers in their pride and arrogance at their subjugation of Islam thought now they could do whatever they pleased in destroying and obliterating Islam from the face of the earth. They attempted to do, what the Seljuks, the Tartars, the Mongols, the Crusaders, Spaniards, and the Italians had attempted in the past but failed in spite of the might of their sword against Islam.

The Czar of Russia with this objective in 1917 bombarded the Shrine of His Holiness Hazrat Imam Ali Reza (the eighth descendant from the Holy Prophet Muhammad) at Meshed and damaged it. This was the signal for Allah's curse falling upon him who represented Eastern Christianity, and it resulted in his being murdered shortly thereafter with all members of his royal family and all his followers and courtiers in the Great Russian Revolution of October, 1917.

Thus it is evident that Allah, to curse and punish Christianity for their centuries of mischief against the poor and the defenceless, had caused the Communistic Revolution to be successful.

The origin of Communism in the European Country of Russia and its daily progress from strength to strength, its being saved from annihilation at the hands of the Superior Nazi armoured might and its constant achievements in greater and more destructive scientific weapons which have the power of wiping out large areas of human civilization in a matter of one hour has even been foreseen in the Holy Bible (Revelation Chapter 18).

This Biblical warning should be an eye-opener for those who have the cause of humanity at heart.

## **3. The Compromise according to European Researchers**

If these two diametrically opposite schools amongst the Europeans *viz*: "Communism" and "Bourgeois Capitalism" do not come to terms with each other on some middle course having a common factor in their

ideologies, which has satisfactory safeguards for both sides, there will remain a constant fear that one day these two opposing groups armed with Nuclear weapons will destroy each other with the horrifying consequences already pointed out in Chapter 2.

The opinion of G.B. Shaw, which we have read a little earlier is shared by other researchers, like Professors Gibbs and Massignon.

Here is a quotation from pages 11-13 of "*Religion of Islam*" by Muhammad Ali, Published in 1936 by Ahmadiyya Anjuman at Lahore:

"Islam has a claim upon the attention of every thinker, not only because it is the most civilizing and the greatest spiritual force of the world but also because it offers a solution of the most baffling problems which confront mankind to-day. Materialism, which has become humanity's ideal in modern times, can never bring about peace and mutual trust among the nations of the world. Christianity has already failed to do away with race and colour prejudices. Islam is the only force which has already succeeded in blotting out those distinctions and it is through Islam only that this great problem of the modern world can be solved. Islam is, first and foremost, an International Religion, and it is only before the grand-international ideal of Islam, the ideal of the equality of all races and of the unity of the human race, that the curse of nationalism which has been and is responsible for the troubles of the ancient and the modern world, can be swept away. But even within the boundaries of a nation or a country there can be no peace so long as a just solution of the two great problems of wealth and sex be not found.

"Europe has gone to two extremes on the wealth question, Capitalism and Bolshevism. There is either the tendency to concentrate wealth among the great capitalists or by community of wealth to bring the indolent and the industrious to one level. Islam offers the true solution by ensuring to the worker the reward of his work, great or small, in accordance with the merit of the work, and also by allotting to the poor a share in the wealth of the rich. Thus while the rights of property are maintained in their fullest sense, an arrangement is made for equalizing conditions by taking a part of the wealth of the rich and distributing it among the poor according

to the principle of Zakat, and also by a more or less equal division of property among heirs on the death of an owner. Thus H.A.R. Gibbs writing towards the close of *Whither Islam* (pages 378-379) says:

“Within the Western world Islam still maintains the balance between exaggerated opposites. Opposed equally to the anarchy of European nationalism and the regimentation of Russian communism, it has not yet succumbed to that obsession with the economic side of life which is characteristic of present-day Europe and present-day Russia alike. Its socialetic has been admirably summed up by professor Massignon: ‘Islam has the merit of standing for a very equalitarian conception of the contribution of each citizen by the tithe to the resources of the community; it is hostile to unrestricted exchange, to banking capital, to state loans, to indirect taxes on objects of prime necessity, but it holds to the rights of the father and the husband, to private property, and to commercial capital. Here again it occupies an intermediate position between the doctrines of *bourgeois capitalism and bolshevist communism*’.

“Similarly Islam’s solution of the sex question is the only one that can ensure ultimate peace to the family. There is neither the free love which would loosen all ties of social relations, nor the indissoluble binding of man and woman which turns many a home into an actual hell. And by solving these and a hundred other problems which puzzle the minds of men today, Islam, as its very name indicates, can bring true happiness to the human race”.

#### 4. The Western point of view

Here is an extract from pages 5 to 7 of Preface to “*Moslems on the March*” by F.W. Fernau, published in 1955 by Robert Hale Ltd., London:

“*The middle* of the twentieth century finds mankind caught in two world-wide conflicts. That between the Soviet Union and the Atlantic West is all too familiar to the peoples of Europe and

America. It involves the issue of peace or war, so that the very existence of the individual is directly at stake. The problems of this conflict, the action it entails, and the possibilities of a solution are subjects of continual thought and discussion. The other issue, that of the emancipation of the peoples of Asia and Africa, seems to be treated as of a secondary interest. Only at times of crisis is it given wider attention for the moment.

“These two world conflicts are closely interconnected, and influence each other. But they demand separate consideration. The upheavals in the Near and Far East cannot be judged simply with reference to their bearing on the “Cold War”, though that element is obviously important from the stand-point of the West. Such one-sided consideration would run the risk of obscuring the longer view and confusing temporary expedients with genuine solutions.

“What is happening among those alien people is a process *sui generis*, of world-wide historical importance, and not merely incidental to the conflict between the Soviet Union and the West. It raises questions that call for at least as much resourcefulness and vigilance, at least as broad and imaginative treatment, as that of the relations with the Soviet Union. Failing that, this chapter of history might one day call irrevocably for the comment: ‘*Too Little and Too Late*’.

“The expansion of modern Europe passed in a mighty wave over the ancient civilizations of Islam, Hindu India, and China. At the beginning of this century there came a turn of the tide. At first the movement was slight and uncertain. Not until after the Second World War did the flood, in a succession of dangerous crises not yet ended, breach the dikes. The Non-European peoples of the Old World are demanding liberation from European tutelage. They are demanding not only political and economic independence but the right to order their own lives, the right to settle for themselves what they choose to do or not to do. That is the great common element. It must not be confused with the ‘united front of the colonial peoples’. The Far Eastern civilizations and Hindu India are civilizations of Asia, in the specific historical and philosophical sense of the word; *whilst Islam is neither Asian nor Western. It is*

*intermediate between “Asia” and “Europe” and also—a fact that must not be overlooked—intermediate between Europe and Black Africa. For that very reason of this intermediate position, the path chosen by the peoples of Islam may become of critical importance to the future development of the whole world. If they shut themselves off in hostility to the West, the bridges leading from Europe to Asia and Africa will have been blocked.*

*“It would be a costly mistake to assume that in our days the west can still dictate the course to be followed by the Islamic World. But there is probably still time for a friendship based on common interests. That calls for knowledge and understanding. The present work aims at placing before the reader with a general interest in the subject the broad features of the Islamic Community, and introducing him to the perplexing events of the immediate past. If it succeeds in so making some contribution to the needed knowledge and understanding, its purpose may be regarded as achieved”.*

On pages 293-294 of *ibid* the following conclusion is given:

*“Let me conclude with what the Rector of the Azhar University at Cairo has said about the relation of Islam with the world; ‘Islam has taught its faithful to live in peace with the adherents of all other religions, and, where necessary, to co-operate with them’. If understanding is shown on both sides and is not frustrated by overbearing arrogance, the road will be clear for partnership between the West and the world of Islam”.*

## **5. The Solution for the Communists**

Now let us look at the Communist side of the picture in the Muslim World of today. We have already read of the three objections of Communism to “Religion” in Chapter 14: H—”The Birth of Communism due to denial of: *Love Thy Neighbour as Thyself*”.

As far as “Islam” is concerned none of these three objections are applicable *viz*:

1. The first objection is that religion helps in the maintenance of

the present social system which has borne the fruit of capitalism, consequently thwarting the aspirations of the poor.

Islam came as the friend of the poor and the destitute, and as a matter of fact it has accomplished an unparalleled upliftment of the poor in history. It raised men at the lowest rung of the social ladder to the highest positions of life. It made slaves not only leaders in thought and intellect (Chapter 15: K-2) but actually kings (Chapter 15: K-4). Its social system is one of an equality, which is quite unthinkable in any other nation or any other society (Chapter 13: K). It lays down, as one of the fundamental principles of religion, that the poor have a right to share the wealth of the rich. This is known as “Zakat” or the “Poor dues”. Every rich Muslim is compelled by Qur’anic Laws to take out of his capital annually a fortieth of the wealth amassed and to donate it preferably to a single poor person, so as to afford him the capital needed to start his own business and thus eradicate poverty and unemployment.

Sir Charles Edward Archibald Hamilton has given his findings:

*“There is no religion which is so maligned by the ignorant as is Islam, yet if people only knew, it is the only solution for the problems of socialism, inasmuch as it is the religion of the strong for the weak, of the rich for the poor”* (page 85, *Wisdom of Prophet Mohammad*).

2. Their second is that it keeps the people subject to superstition and thus hinders the advance of science.

As regards the second contention that religion discourages the advancement of science and learning, this is equally devoid of truth, so far as Islam is concerned as disclosed earlier by European scholars. Islam gave an impetus to learning in a country which had never possessed a seat of learning and was sunk in the depths of superstition. Even as far back as the Caliphate of Omar, the Islamic state undertook the education of the masses, while the Muslims carried the torch of learning to every country where they gained political ascendancy. Schools, colleges and universities sprang up everywhere as a result of

the Muslim influence, and it is no exaggeration to say that it was through Islam that the Renaissance came about in Europe and the end of her Dark Ages as has been repeatedly shown earlier.

3. Their third objection is that it teaches them to pray for their needs instead of working for them and thus it makes them indolent.

This allegation that religion makes people idle by teaching them only to pray is also belied by the history of Islam. Not only does the Holy Qur'an teach men to strive their utmost for success in life, but it also lays down in plain words, that: "Man shall achieve only that for which he strives" (Qur'an 50: 39).

As a matter of fact and history, it is this teaching of Islam which made actually the most neglected nation in the world—the Arabs—a nation of supreme conquerors in all phases of life. And this great revolution was brought about only by awakening in them a desire for work and a zest for hard striving. Islam does teach man to pray—no one will dispute that; but prayer instead of making him idle is to fit him for a still harder struggle, and to carry on that strife in the face of failures and disappointments, by turning to Allah, Who is the source of "All Strength". Thus prayer in Islam is only an incentive to work harder and not a hindrance! This is confirmed by the Hadith, *i.e.* teachings of Muhammad given at the conclusion of this treatise.

Nothing can alter the fact that Islam is the only religion in the world which fits in with the ideologies of upliftment and protection of the poor. It also offers to their masses ideals which are far higher and nobler than whatever the Communists themselves have to offer by way of freedom of thought, action, speech, ideas, possession of private property, the right to family life and children—the various incentives of possession which urge people to achieve greater success, and fuller happiness! The lack of these amenities and freedoms to the masses is the constant source of fear to the Communists that one day these desires of each individual to the basic right of freedom and possession

from within themselves would destroy their hard-won ideologies of the rights of the poor labourers and farmers. Because the Czechoslovaks were becoming a bit liberal and drawing unconsciously towards these lofty principles of Islam, they have been looked down upon as revisionists and provocateurs in much the same way as the Communist Chinese look upon the liberal policies of the Russian Communists.

The importance of Islam to the world has not only been realised by Western Civilization but also lately by the Communists—both Russian and Chinese. They have also joined the race of giving aid to the underdeveloped and developing countries of Asia and Africa, most of them being Muslims.

We remember the conquests of the Seljuk Turks and a couple of Centuries later of the Mongols who destroyed completely Islam, but after a while themselves became ardent Muslims. The Europeans have played their part in the past couple of centuries reaching their highest points at the beginning of the twentieth century. Now the tide of Islam or Universal Brotherhood has started rising again commencing with the establishment of several independent Countries in South Asia and Africa including Indonesia, Pakistan, Sudan, Nigeria, Tunisia, Libya, Algeria, South Yemen *etc.* Will not history repeat itself?

We shall read in the last part of this treatise that whatever one may do to stop them, be they Bourgeois Capitalists or Communists, a stage is going to come when the whole world would come under the influence of a universal religion of Surrender to the Will of Allah—Al Islam. Then there would be one race of mankind. Gone would be the barriers of nationalism, caste, colour and capitalism (Chapter 29 and 30). It will be a state of “One for all” and “All for one”. That would be after the third world war and the battle of Armageddon—Alas! a bit too late, for millions will have lost their lives! Why should not the Europeans of the East and West settle upon this compromise—Al Islam—and thus save themselves from massacring one another? Let them think upon what is the one and only way of avoiding the third world War-The Nuclear Holocaust which will annihilate Europe in but



one hour as foretold in Chapter 2 and Revelation 18?

They have tested unsuccessfully so many ideologies but met with failures, why not then try to compromise on something which is in any case going to assert itself by about the end of this century? One which has been proved repeatedly to be successful again and again over the past fourteen centuries!

Is it not worth-while to give it a try and thus try to save many millions?

## **6. A possible basis for Universal Peace**

The Research Scholar Moulana Muhammad Ali has recorded on pages 177-178 of *“Muhammad, The Prophet”* as follows:

“A general recognition of the true sublimity of the Prophet’s life is bound to come, sooner or later, as foretold in the Qur’an. Of course, such an appreciation must come now, as it did before, in the wake of a general state of peace. Europe’s greed for territorial aggrandizement having now been satiated, it may be hoped that an era of idealism is about to dawn. The time has come when a closer contact with the Muslim world may disillusion Europe of its wrong notions concerning Islam, when it may come to realize, as did the enemies of Islam, thirteen centuries ago, that the fair face of Islam is free from any stigma. It may realize, groping as it is for light which it cannot find in the Church religion, that its salvation lies in the same Islam which it has all along painted in the darkest colours! Strange are the ways of God and little wonder that the history of Islam should repeat itself. Those bent upon its destruction may fall a victim to its moral force, as it happened at the conclusion of the truce of Hudybiyah (See Chapter 17: E-19). The power of God may once more manifest itself and what appears, to all human calculations, the final overthrow may turn out to be the real triumph of Islam.

“That such harsh terms should have been accepted by the Prophet was not without a set Divine purpose. The incident is eloquent

testimony to the fact that warfare was held in abhorrence by him (Chapter 21: C). So far, the Muslims had even had the upper hand in the various conflicts with the Qureysh. Not once were they defeated, notwithstanding the united might of several tribes. They regarded the terms as derogatory to their faith and insisted on rejecting them. They had pledged to the last man to vindicate the honour of Islam. In spite of this, where ever there is the slightest indication on the part of the enemy towards peace, the Prophet welcomed it with open arms. The Muslims were not defeated, but the terms of the treaty seemed to treat them as the vanquished party; yet the Prophet accepted them! Can such be the attitude of one bent upon domineering over others, as is alieged. Is it not conclusive testimony to show how peace-loving the Prophet was? The Qur'an too enjoins the same when it says, 'And if they (the enemy) incline towards peace, thou shall also incline towards it'."

From the historical facts over the past 14 centuries and the findings of leading scholars it will be clear that Islam has always been the religion of peace and goodwill amongst mankind. It can still save us from the imminent disasters which will wipe out large sections of humanity. Should we not study this wonderful religion of toleration, goodwill and universal brotherhood in surrender to the will of God atleast with an open mind?

## **T. The Warnings**

These studies of European Scholars, therefore, become a serious warning for the European Group—the scientifically advanced nations. If they do not agree to surrender themselves to the Will of Allah and live on terms of equality with the rest of the universe in spite of their "superior" scientific knowledge, then they run the risk of being destroyed just as Babylon was. Even now they are so very technologically advanced in nuclear weapons of mass destructions that as already foretold in the beginning of this book (Chapter 2), they are quite capable of eliminating all their beautiful luxurious, and important world-trade controlling cities, in a matter of but one hour after the

commencement of the Third World War! The Biblical warning reads:

“For in one hour so great riches is Come to nought. And every ship-master, and all the company in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off.

“And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, what City is like unto this great city!

“And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great city wherein were made rich all that had ships in the Sea by reason of her costliness: for in one hour is she made desolate” (Revelation 18: 17-19).

That would indeed be a great day of mourning, because it, will wipe out many nations, killing many thousands of millions all over the world. Humanity has little option in this matter *i.e.* either to surrender willingly to Allah in AL ISLAM or be destroyed for one’s disbelief and foolhardiness. The Qur’an warns:

“And for every nation there has been (sent) a messenger. And when their messenger cometh (on the Day of Judgment and gives evidence that they had preached the observance of the laws of God) it will be judged between them fairly, and they will not be wronged.

“And they (the disbelievers taunt and) say: When will this promise be fulfilled, if ye are truthful?

Say: I have no power to hurt or benefit myself, save that which Allah willeth. For every nation (of disbelievers) there is an appointed time (when the disbelieving nations will be destroyed). When their time cometh, then they cannot put it off an hour, nor hasten (it),

“Say: Have ye thought: When His doom cometh unto you as a raid by night (As in the case of Sodom and Gomorrah), or in the (busy) day (like Pompeii by the volcano Mount Vesuvius during the day of the 24th August 79 A.D.); what is there of it that the guilty ones desire to hasten?

“Is it (only) then, when it (the doom) hath befallen you, that ye will believe? What! (believe) now (before it is too late), instead (up till

now) ye have been hastening it on (through disbelief)?

“Then will it be said unto those who dealt unjustly (in preparing weapons of mass destruction): taste the torment of eternity. Are ye requited aught save what ye used to earn?

“And they ask thee to inform them (saying): Is it true? Say: Yea, by my Lord! verily it is true, and ye cannot escape.

“And if each soul, that doeth wrong, had all (the wealth) that is in the earth with which it would seek to ransom itself therewith (still it will be of no use because it will not be accepted); then they will feel remorse within them, when they see their doom. But it hath been judged between them fairly and they are not wronged.

“Lo! verily all that is in the heavens and the earth is Allah’s. Lo! verily Allah’s promise is true. But most of them believe not.

“He quickeneth (*i.e.* gives life) and gives death, and unto Him ye will be returned.

“O mankind! There has come unto you an exhortation from your Lord, (the Qur’an) which is in the breasts (of men) is a balm, a guidance and a mercy for believers.

“Say: In the bounty of Allah and in His mercy: therein let them rejoice. It is better than what they acquire (by all their material and scientific progress).

“Say: Have ye considered what provision Allah hath sent down for you (for scientific development) how ye have made of it lawful (by using science for peace and progress) and unlawful (by producing Nuclear weapons of mass destruction which you have no right to because you are not the Creator of mankind)? Hath Allah permitted you (to make such scientific weapons of destructions), or do ye invent a lie concerning Allah?

“And what think those who invent a lie concerning Allah (will be their plight) upon the Day of Resurrection? Lo! Allah truly is Bountiful towards mankind, but most of them give not thanks (by accepting the teachings and the laws of God sent through His messengers)” (Qur’an 10: 48-61).

Here, therefore, lie not only the problems and warnings for the world at large but also answers for the seekers after the welfare of mankind.

“This day have I (Allah) perfected your religion for you and completed My favour (*i.e.* the message of the Qur’an) unto you (O Muhammad) and have chosen for you as religion ‘AL ISLAM’ (*i.e.* surrender unto the Will of Allah) ...” (Qur’an 5: 3).

This is the last passage of the Qur’an to be revealed announcing that the divine message for mankind which was left incomplete by Jesus (St. John 16: 12 and 13) has at long last been completed!

This announcement of Allah should bring joy and hope into the hearts of all seekers after the truth. Never before had a statement been made in any of the Divine Books, that the religion left incomplete by Jesus has at long last been completed.

*In Islam there is no superstition, no gambling, no alcoholic drinks, no eating of swine-flesh, no eating or drinking of anything unclean or harmful, no usury, no priesthood, no celibacy, no racialism, no class or caste distinctions, no difference between a slave and his master, no intermingling of sexes including dancing and exchange of mates—none of the sensuous ceremonials which go with Eastern or Western civilisation and their worship—equality to womanhood including their individual right to possession of property and business.*





## Chapter 16

# Allah



### A. Definitions

The following definition of God is to be found in *The Reader's Digest Great Encyclopaedic Dictionary* Vol. I, page 373, published by Oxford University Press in 1964:

“god n.

1. Superhuman being worshipped as having power over nature and human fortunes, deity; of fire, Vulcan; of love, blind, Cupid; of war, Mars; of wine, Bacchus.
2. Image, animal or other object, worshipped as symbolising, being the visible habitation of, or itself possessing, divine power; an idol; adored, admired or an influential person.
3. (*pl. theatr.*) (Occupants of) gallery.
4. God, Supreme being, creator and ruler of universe; ‘God the Father, Son, Holy Ghost’ persons of the Trinity; ...”

As against the above definitions, Allah has always meant from the time of Adam, that Supreme Being Who is the One and Only One besides Whom none are worthy of divine worship (see the first part of all the eight’ “*Qalima*” blessed on the eight great prophets—Chapter 8: 1).

The following remark has been made by Pickthall in his “*The*

*Meaning of the Glorious Koran*” under the heading “Translator’s Note” to the first surah (i.e. chapter).

“I have retained the word **Allah** throughout, because **there is “no”** corresponding word in English.

“The word *Allah* (the stress on the last syllable) has neither feminine nor plural, *and has NEVER been applied to anything other than the unimaginable SUPREME BEING*”.

The Qur’an has clarified Allah as:

“Allah! There is *NONE* worthy of divine worship except *HIM*, the Alive, the Eternal. Neither slumber (for even a wink) nor sleep overtaketh Him (for a single night). Unto Him belongeth whatsoever is in the heavens and whatsoever is in the earth. Who is there that intercedeth with Him save by His leave? He knoweth all that which is in front of them and all that which is behind them, while they encompass *NOTHING* of *HIS* knowledge save that which He wills. His throne includeth the heavens and the earth and *HE* is *NEVER* weary of preserving them (Hence He does not take rest weekly or otherwise for even a single moment). He is the Sublime, the Tremendous” (Qur’an 2: 255).

“He (Allah) is the First and the Last; and the Outward and the Inward; and He is the Knower of all things” (Qur’an 57: 3).

“He is Allah, other than Whom there is *No God*, the Knower of the invisible and the visible. He is the Beneficent, the Merciful,

“He is Allah, other than whom there is *No GOD*, the Sovereign Lord, the Holy one, Peace, the Keeper of faith, the Guardian, the Majestic, the Compeller, the Superb. Glorified be Allah from all that they ascribe as a partner (unto Allah).

“He is Allah, the Creator, the Shaper out of naught, the Fashioner. His are the most beautiful names (attributes). All that is in the heavens and the earth glorifieth Him, and He is the Mighty, the Wise” (Qur’an 59: 22-24).

“Praise be to Allah, the Creator-cum-Sustainer of all creations (in the entire universe).



“The Beneficent, the Merciful.

“The (Absolute Sole) Master of the Day of Judgment” (Qur’an 1:13).

“And (remember) when thy Lord brought (all the souls) of the children of Adam, from their storage place and made them testify concerning themselves, (saying): Am I not your Lord (Who creates and sustains you)? They replied: Yea, verily, we do testify. (This testimony was taken by Allah at the time of the creation of all the souls to be put into mankind in their generations at the time of being given birth) lest ye should say on the Day of Resurrection: Lo! of this we were unaware”(Qur’an 7: 172).

“Qaf (this is a letter of the Arabic Alphabet)! By the glorious Qur’an!

“Nay, but they marvel that a warner of their own hath come unto them; and the disbelievers say: This is a strange thing!

“When we are dead and have become dust (is it ever possible that we shall be brought back again into life)? That would be a return far (out of our understanding):

“Nay, but they have denied the truth when it came unto them, so they are now in a confused state (of mind).

“Have they not then observed the sky above them, how We (Allah) have constructed it and beautified it, and how there are no flaws (or disorder or confusion in the separate individual movements of each of the countless millions of heavenly bodies) therein?

“And the earth have We (Allah) spread out, and have flung firm hills therein, and have caused every (*i.e.* very many) lovely (wondrous) kind (of things, fruits, flowers, trees *etc.*) to grow thereon.

“A vision and a reminder for every penitent slave (devotee).

“And We (Allah) send down from the sky blessed water whereby We (Allah) give growth unto (the dry land which had become dead and thus resurrect it with a new life into) gardens of fruits and crops of grain.

“And the lofty date-palms with shoots of fruit-stalks one over another:

“Provisions (made) for men; and We (Allah) give (a new resurrected) life therewith to a dead (dried and barren) land. Even so will be the resurrection of the dead (mankind on the day of Judgment)” (Qur’an 50: 1-3, 5-11).

“Allah produceth creations then He (destroys them e. g. the great deluge which destroyed mankind and) reproduceth it (again through Noah and his three sons the three basic kinds of men viz. Mongoloids and Indian Americans or yellow races through Japhet, the Caucasoid or the white and light coloured people from the children of Shem and the dark skinned Black Africans and Melanesians through descendants of Ham) thus unto Him Ye will be returned (on the day of Judgment)” (Qur’an 30: 11).

The Qur’an is full of examples bringing home the innumerable beautiful attributes of Allah, showing He is the *Unimaginable Supreme Being*.

A Muslim Scholar once asked his pupils what they imagined God as? The correct answer was “Allah is that, which you cannot even imagine”. The moment you give Him a form, it is not Him. Hence the unimaginable!

Shorter Encyclopaedia of Islam—H.A.R. Gibb and J.H. Kramers—*Under Allah* on pages 38-39 is recorded:

“In Cairo at present the rhyme is current ... ‘Everything that comes into your mind is perishing, and Allah is different from that. That is, Allah is different from any thought we can possibly have, for our thoughts are of transitory things’.”

It would be a good thing to refer to the “Pearls of Faith” by Arnold to appreciate the 100 names or attributes of Allah given in the Qur’an.

## **B) Does Allah Really Exist?**

This is the pertinent question with which every atheist is faced. The atheist contends that everything is controlled by Nature. That is the answer one quite often hears today.

Why does the hen incubate her eggs for 21 days and the ostrich for 45?—It is the law of Nature.

How is it that the bat makes use of a quality similar to radar?—It is the law of Nature! And so on go the answers to such questions.

We are in fact no better off than little children who pester their mother with questions “Mummy, why is guava jam red and apple jam yellow?”—The answer is: “That is the law of nature.”

The next question that follows: “But mummy, a guava is green on the outside and white inside whilst the skin of the apple is at least pink or red on the outside?”

The poor exasperated mother would naturally answer—“Oh go away! I am fed up with your string of silly questions from morn till night—Don’t you know it is the law of nature?”

But suppose we were to go to an expert and ask. “Doctor, why is my blood red?”

—Because your blood contains little red discs called corpuscles. There are about 5 millions to each cubic centimetre. Yes, but why are these red?

—Because they contain a substance called Hemoglobin. It absorbs oxygen from the lungs to become the bright red blood found in the arteries. As it flows through the body the blood gives up the oxygen to the organs. Hence the colour of the blood in the veins becomes bluish-brown.

—Yes. But where do these come from?

They are made in the spleen.

—That's marvellous, Doctor. But please explain how is it that the blood, the red corpuscles, the spleen, and a thousand other things, are so co-ordinated into one coherent whole, and work together so perfectly that I can breathe, run, speak, and live?

—Ah! That is NATURE.

—What is Nature, please?

—When I say Nature, I mean the interplay of blind physical and chemical forces.

—But, Doctor, why do these blind forces always act as if they were pursuing a definite purpose?

—How can anybody explain how blind Nature coordinates its activities so as to produce birds which fly and sustain themselves on nothing but thin air, a fish which breathes and lives under the water and man, who requires solid land to live on? Why under three very different conditions? If it is nature then surely all should be on the same basis?

Is it not utterly ridiculous to say that the blind intermixture of physical and chemical forces causes all things to function smoothly?

If the blind law of Nature was a controlling factor then all children born of the same parents would have at least the same span of life presuming of course that no fatal accidents occur. All would die at the same age. But this never happens! Countless number of similar scientific and logical flaws may be cited. Therefore, the common reference to the blind laws of Nature is not only a basic falsity, but is also a pure and simple myth of the insufficiently educated scientists of today bringing home very vividly—"A little learning is indeed very dangerous".

Is it not the height of absurdity even to suggest that blind physical and chemical forces of the law of Nature made all the wondrous patterns and colours of the beautiful peacock's tail, which it cannot see nor design? It would be tantamount to saying that *the blind Law of*

*Nature by an earthquake has set up* the various Wonders of the world like the Hanging Gardens of Babylon, the Colossus at Rhodes, the Great Pyramid of Egypt, the Statue of Zeus at Olympia, the temple of Diana at Ephesus, the Pharos or lighthouse of Alexandria, the Leaning Tower of Pisa, the Taj Mahal at Agra or the Empire State Building at New York?

Let us for a moment place an automobile in a crowded street of one of the large cities of the world, busy with thousands of cars going up and down all the time. Then blind-fold any normal person. Can he under these circumstances drive the car even a few feet without an accident—without causing confusion and chaos? The answer must be *a very definite no—an impossibility!* If that be so then how can anyone with any bit of common sense refer to this “*Blind Law of Nature*” as controlling anything whatsoever let alone the individual separate paths followed by each of the millions of stars in the heaven with their hundreds of millions of planets, satellites meteorites *etc.* each spinning on their own separate courses at different speeds, revolutions, angles *etc.* without causing any confusion and chaos? *Is not all this the work of a Deviser Who has not only His eyes wide open but that He also sees to it that there is not a single flaw or mistake in the entire Universe?*

Immediately the question will arise—who is this all-pervading, flawless, omnipresent?—who makes no mistakes, who makes the specific laws to be followed by each separate being; who controls the various spans of life and different destinies of each individual creation; who sees to it that there is no chaos or confusion; who is not blind like the so-called “Laws of Nature”! The answer is quoted hereunder from the last of the Heavenly Books:

“Allah is He, Who created and then sustained you, then causeth you to die (whensoever He wills) then giveth life to you again (on the Day of Judgment). Is there any of your (so called) partners (of Allah or *e.g.* Laws of Nature) that doeth aught of that? Praised and exalted be He above (all) what they (the ignorant, the scientists, the idolaters) associate (with Him)!” (Qur’an 30: 40).

“Have they not observed the sky above them how We (Allah) have constructed it and beautified it, and there are no (not even a single) flaws (amongst the millions of heavenly bodies with their millions of satellites each following a separate course at a different speed under various conditions) therein” (Qur’an 50: 6).

“Hath not man seen that We (Allah) created him from a drop of seed? Yet lo! He is an open opponent.

“Say: He (Allah) will revive them Who had produced them at the first (*i.e.* originally) for He is the Knower of every (one of His) creation.

“Is not He, Who created the heavens and the earth (and all that is therein) able to create (once again) the like of them? Aye, that He (most certainly) is (able to do): for He is the All Wise Creator.

“But His command, when He intendeth a thing is only that He saith unto it: ‘Be’ and it is.

“Therefore glory be to Him in Whose hand is the dominion over all things: Unto Him (be quite sure) ye will be brought back” (Qur’an 36: 76, 78, 80-82),

We have all seen repeatedly, that no matter how perfect a scheme may be it is only successful sometimes in spite of all our scientific advancements. But on other occasions in a flash of a second it goes completely wrong despite all safety precautions, calculations and testings. Quite often it brings about major disasters, with horrified spectators looking on helplessly!

Was not such the case with Sir Malcom Campbell at the peak of his triumph? How his speed boat shot forward to the roaring cheers from the crowds, to be turned in a moment into shrieks of horror and helplessness as he was drowned in front of their very eyes!

One still feels sorry for Cosmonaut Col. Vladimir Komorov’s successful trip into outer space which ended in tragedy at the moment of his greatest triumph! Did he die owing to any technical or mechanical defect at the time of landing? No! most definitely not!

There were no defects whatsoever. Everything had been checked and rechecked and found to function perfectly before his departure into space. Then what was it?

The world remembers also the terrible death of the American Astronauts Lt. Col. Virgil Grissom, Lt. Col. Edward White and Lt. Commander Roger Chaffee on the 27th January 1967, while fastened in their Apollo spacecraft 218 feet high, atop a Saturn rocket, when it caught fire during a rehearsal at Cape Kennedy. Everything had been checked and rechecked. There was no scientific defect. Everything had been functioning perfectly. Then how can these catastrophes and many more such be explained? What was the real cause or basis for them when there was no human-error or human-failure?

Ali (cousin, and son-in-law of Prophet Muhammad) was asked once by someone, how do you prove that Allah exists? His reply was that when you have made a perfect scheme and made all kinds of provisions to meet any contingency whatsoever and you have tested each and every aspect of it; found them perfect in every way and then when you put it into operation; and in a flash of a second it becomes naught—a complete failure then one is left no option but to admit, without any scope whatsoever for doubt, that Allah has made His existence felt in such a powerful way as to leave us humans, mere helpless spectators of His divine Will! To deceive ourselves we may misname such acts caused deliberately by the definite “*Will and Purpose*” of Allah as accidents! But after everything had been tested and found perfect there is no loophole left for an accident—*Nay—THIS is the very way in which Allah makes His presence felt, THAT HE IS!*

Rabiah Basri, the disciple of Khwaja Hasan Basri, who was the disciple of Ali is reported to have been found rejoicing whenever she was afflicted or had an accident. Upon being questioned, her standard and repeated replies were:-

“Allah has given special attention and remembered me particularly by causing me to meet with this accident or illness; thus it is an

occasion of great joy for me to be thus honoured by the special attention of my Creator”.

This brings to mind the following passage from the last of the Heavenly Books:

The seven heavens and the earth and all that is therein praise Him (continuously), *and there is not an incident that takes place but hymneth His praise (by making His PRESENCE felt); but ye understand not their praise (by calling such incidents foolishly as “accidents or chances”).* Lo! He is ever Clement, Forgiving” (Qur’an 17: 44).

If one would turn to pages 11-18 of “*The Best of 21 years*” published by The Reader’s Digest in 1960, he would read the miracle which even the science of to-day has to admit is the work of “Allah”—it refers to an airman’s fall from 18,000 feet without a parachute yet showing no sign of an injury! To quote a few lines from it:

“He could prove the story if he cared to, I told him. Hadn’t a wrecked Lancaster fallen in the area on the night of March 24-25 (1944)? If so, that would be the plane I had jumped from. The burnt remnants of my parachute pack could be found just forward of the rear fuselage door. Also, he could examine my parachute harness—to see for himself that it had never been used.

“The Kommandant listened to me in silence. ‘A really remarkable story,’ he said, ‘and I hear many!’

“He fired some rapid German at the lieutenant, who saluted and left. The Kommandant handed me a cigarette and we chatted pleasantly for the next quarter of an hour. Then the lieutenant, waving my parachute harness, burst into the office with three other officers, all shouting excitedly in German.

“The Lieutenant flung the harness on to the desk, pointed to the snap-hooks that were still in their clips and the lift webs still fastened down on the chest straps. The Kommandant soberly took in these facts, then leaned back in his chair and studied each of us thoughtfully in turn. I’ll never forget his next words; he spoke in



English:

“Gentlemen! A miracle—no less!”

“He rose, came round his desk, offered me his hand. I took it. ‘Congratulations, my boy, on being alive! What a story to tell your grandchildren!’

“Then I was assailed with slaps on the back, handshaking and vociferous good wishes. The Kommandant dismissed me with, ‘Tomorrow, I promise, your comrades will be told about how you became a P.O.W.’

“In the Kommandant’s office next morning I saw that the Luftwaffe authorities had been busy. On his desk lay some pieces of scorched metal, including the D-handle of a parachute ripcord and a piece of wire that would be the ripcord itself.

“The remains of your parachute pack, the Kommandant explained. ‘We found it where you said it would be. To us it is the final proof’.

“The wrecked Lancaster lay about twenty kilometres from where I had landed, I was told. Four crew members had been burnt to death and been buried in a military cemetery near Meschede with full military honours. From their names and numbers I realized that only “Ginger” Cleary, our navigator, Geoff Burwell, the radio operator, and myself were left. (They had been blown clear in the final explosion, I learned later).

“A German flying-officer and two N.C.O.s marched me into the compound, where some two hundred captured Allied flyers were assembled. I was directed to stand on a bench. Then the Luftwaffe officer recounted my story to the incredulous airmen.

“There was pandemonium. Nationalities were forgotten. I was mobbed by French, German, British and Yank, shaking my hand, shouting questions, forcing upon me gifts of a cigarette or a square of chocolate. Then I was presented with a paper, signed by the senior British officer at the demonstration, who had taken down the German authentication in writing and had it witnessed by the two senior British N.C.O.s. It is only a faded scrap of paper but it will

always be the proudest thing I own:

“Dulag Luft”.

‘It has been investigated and corroborated by the German authorities that the claim made by Sgt. Alkemade, 143I537 R. A. F., is true in all respects, namely that he made a descent from eighteen thousand feet without a parachute and made a safe landing without injury, his parachute having been on fire in the aircraft. He landed in deep snow among fir trees.

“Corroboration witnessed by  
F/LT. H.J. Moore  
Senior British Officer  
F/SGT. R.R. Lamb 1339582  
F/SGT. T.A. Jones 411  
Senior British N.C.O.s.

“Date: 25/4/44”.

“After liberation came in May 1945, R.A.F. Intelligence checked the records at Dulag Luft, found the reports of my strange adventure to be true and included them in the official records of the Royal Air Force!

“Today Pearl and I are living happily in Loughborough, where I am a buyer in a department store. (Geoff Burwell was best man at our wedding). I have taken the first important steps towards following the Kommandant’s advice—to tell my story to my grandchildren. I’ll have to wait, though, till little Valerie and Nicholas provide me with grandchildren to hear it.

“In the meantime, I can only wonder why such a marvellous thing should have happened to a man as ordinary as myself”.

Next let us recall the famous “*TITANIC*”. All human science, calculations, skill combined with “tank-testing” of the model and eventually the final trials had led those who were connected with her to boast that even a piece of cork may sink but even God could not sink the “*TITANIC*”. The cream of the world’s rich sailed joyously on her maiden voyage. What happened? Allah made his presence felt by

making it the biggest maritime disaster in human history to prove to the modern world that all human science and skill is simply nothing before Allah's powers!

This is further brought home to the modern world of today when one remembers an article issued by the leading team of doctors and scientists of U.S.S.R. a few years ago that they had given special rejuvenation treatment to Marshal Joseph Stalin. After that they had watched him for about a couple of years and they were now convinced that he could not age till he was about 150 years old. Within a couple of months the papers carried the headline:

“JOSEPH STALIN DEAD”

Does not each of these abovementioned incidents clearly prove conclusively that there is a “POWER”, Who is far above our scientific knowledge with centuries of achievements put together! Who is this Power, Who can do just what HE pleases? Who makes His presence felt just when it pleases Him and that also in such an unpredictable manner as completely baffles all human intelligence and anticipation. There is no means or calculation or scientific knowledge or power that can alter *His* smallest decision. “Man proposes but *Allah Disposes*” by *making His Presence felt that He does exist in each and every strange incident.*

Has science been able to keep a single person alive for even a moment against Allah's will? The answer is that it is quite impossible. Otherwise today's advanced scientific achievements would surely be able to quote one example of keeping alive for a couple of hundred years a man by the power of science, who under normal conditions had died centuries earlier.

If scientific knowledge was the “Be all and end all” then we would surely be able to have a fixed span of life calculated to the last second for all born under a given set of conditions. But we actually do not know how long one is going to live or, when one of us is going to die. Thus Allah shows His existence every moment in incidents, accidents,

deaths, miraculous escapes from death, successes and failures of operations. “*That it is His will that is being done on Earth as it is in Heaven*”—irrespective of whether anyone wants it or not, accepts it or not, it still makes not the slightest difference!

Thus anybody with common sense and intelligence has no option whatsoever but to admit and realise that there does exist a Power, Who is infinitely greater than all our science, intelligence and calculated precautions put together. In a second, He can bring to naught all our lifelong years, nay, even centuries of scientific progress and we are helpless to do anything about it.

That undeniable Power which is thus making its existence felt very vividly to the scientific world through their disasters in the moment of their greatest success is none but “*Allah, The Alone*”.

Therefore, it is apparent, that none of our wonderful achievements are due only to our knowledge, scientific progress and research, but they are due to the fact that Allah wants mankind to make so much progress and not more. Hence all human failures and successes and achievements are due to Allah’s will and pleasure. That is how He makes his presence felt both in our successes and failures— “*Thy will be done continuously on Earth as it is in Heaven*” and there is *NONE* to question *Him*!

What Allah does is ultimately for our benefit, even though sometimes they are seemingly adverse. More often than not it is HE, who guides us to greater scientific successes and achievements through our failures!

### **C. Is Allah only one?**

Very often a scientist or an intellectual poses this question:

Is it ever possible for only One Creator to pay individual attention to so many millions of varieties of creations and in each of them to so many thousands of minions of different types? For example, on earth

there are plants, fishes, birds, animals and mankind by their millions, each with some differences. Is it not fantastic and unbelievable to suggest 'that only One Creator individually looks after so many? How can such a thing ever be possible logically?

If one were to inspect a factory producing a simple item like a fine polished and shining smooth needle, what does one see? Hundreds of thousands of similar needles are produced. All of them perfect duplicates of the sample are being manufactured.

Each piece is flawless, smooth, shining and perfect according to the various specifications and strength required. In the modern automatic factories only one man perhaps can manage the complete unit producing thousands of duplicate pieces per hour. If that be so then why is it not possible for the One and Only Creator to do likewise and produce millions of Creations each second?

In a visit to the Horticultural Gardens or an organised flower show what does one find normally? All trees and flowers of the same variety arranged neatly and grouped together. This is done to help one to appreciate a particular species of plant in all its different aspects, colours, sizes and shapes. In the Botanical Gardens one sees fully grown palms of the same variety from a few inches in height to some having leaves almost thirty feet long of the same general design and shape! All arranged systematically in what are known as the small and large Palm houses. This is the work of man. To arrange all the duplicates of plants of the same varieties in an orderly manner.

A journey through any forest provides us the opportunity to view nature undisturbed by human arrangements and intelligence. Here you come across a huge tree with plenty of foliage. Next to it is a tree with little or no leaves, a tall tree beside a stunted shrub or a thick one paired off with a lean, each a contrast to the other.

Thus it becomes clear from these common examples that whatsoever man does, it will be symmetrical with systematic arrangements. As against this the works of the Creator are contrasts.

To enable us to appreciate this let us take the thumb impression of any person. In how many people do we expect to find a matching thumb impression? Do you think there is a chance of finding even lone duplicate in a million? If the answer is a “No”, then is there any chance of finding a single duplicate from the time of creation of man till the end of this earth, if we were to examine the impression of the entire palm of a man with all his finger and thumb prints? Here the answer definitely is that it is impossible to find a single copy. If we were to include the whole body of a person and note each and every little detail, the number of hairs, the number of pores, besides the various lines and mark on a human body what conclusion do we arrive at? That even two twin brothers born of the same mother at the same time and looking absolutely alike in all manner are also completely different as far as details of fingerprints, pores, number of hairs *etc.* are concerned!

Let us now turn our attention for a moment towards the various aspects of Nature. There also you will be surprised to find that no two leaves of the same plant, no two petals of the same flower, no two peaks of the same mountain range no two tributaries of the delta of the same river are identical in all respects. Each has its undeniable individual features.

A glance at our Galaxy would also reveal these glaring differences. Each star, planet, satellite, meteor is an individual, and follows a separate course of its own, rotates at a different speed, direction and angle. Each is composed of different elements. No two are exactly the same! Yet in the midst of all this diversity or differences there is no chaos! Every second the Sun or the Moon is not crashing into the Earth or one galaxy into another or the stars of the same galaxy into one another!

From this it is indisputably clear, the more so to the scientists and the intellectuals, that Allah, the Maker, Shaper, Fashioner, Creator of the entire universe is a “One Only” *and to prove this He creates only “Ones”—in each and every case an individual”!* *There are no duplicates or “TWOS” in His works.* That He gives personal individual attention

to each and everyone of His creations to the minutest detail of the lines even in each thumb impression or petal to make them individuals not only on this earth but even in the entire universe! Thus bringing home with full force the first portion of the “Qalima” “*La Ilaaha Illal Laahu*” *i.e.* “There is none worthy of divine worship except Allah” or in other words there is no god but Allah.

The Holy Qur’an puts it as follows:

“Say: He is Allah-the One, the Individual.

“Allah, the eternally besought of all! (*i.e.* the Eternal Creator who has created each and everything in the entire universe and there is not a single item anywhere in the entire universe, which He has not created).

“He begetteth not (any sons or daughters) nor was begotten (by any mother or any parents).

“And there is none ever-complete or infinite like (unto) Him”  
(Qur’an 112: 1-4).

There is this great difference between the works of men and the works of Allah. The same minute and searching investigation, which displays the defects and imperfections of the one, brings out the beauties of the other. If the most finely polished needle on which the art of man has been expended be subjected to a microscope, many inequalities, much roughness and clumsiness, will be seen. But if the microscope be brought to bear on the flowers of the field, no such result appears. Instead of their beauty diminishing new beauties and still more delicate, that have escaped the naked eye, are forthwith discovered – beauties that make us appreciate, in a way which otherwise we could have had little conception of, the full force of the sayings of Jesus:

“Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin:

“And yet I say unto you, that even Solomon, in all his glory, was not

arrayed like one of these” (St. Matthew 6: 28-29).

Even though there are *No two Creations of Allah identical anywhere in the entire Universe yet very strangely there are also no conflicts in the countless millions of His contrasts*. There is complete symmetry and order in *all His works*. If there was more than one such a creator then there would certainly be conflicts. But here is no chaos.

He, Who is able to do all these distinctive acts requiring continuous individual attention to each and every little detail therefore must of necessity *be an Individual*—“A One”.

Even each meal we eat varies from the next. Nay, even each breath we take is different from the next in its volume, chemical composition and resultant changes from oxygen to carbon dioxide etc. This shows that Allah must be not only “A One” but that He is not only omnipresent but He is also continuously paying particular attention to each and every little thing all the time! That He is the One attending to the many billions of individual things all the time without causing any difficulty, chaos or confusion. If there were more than one god then there would be confusion, duplication and chaos.

The last of the Heavenly books provides the answer:-

“Unto Allah belongs the East and the West, and whithersoever ye turn there is Allah’s Countenance (face). Lo! Allah is All Embracing, All Knowing” (Qur’an 2: 115).

This passage, therefore, clarifies that in everything we see around us—ourselves and each part of ourselves—the individual oneness of it proves not only that our Creator is a One but that He is Omnipresent in each and every person, place or thing and the realisation of this “Oneness” is the realisation of His presence and countenance (face)!

The Holy Bible also mentions this fact:

“So God created man in his *“Own Image”*, in the image of God created He him; male and female created He them” (Genesis 1: 27).

Since Allah has no form, the phrase “Own image” thus means the



individual oneness with which He has created each and every person, place or thing *i.e.* “*Individual Ones*” thus proving very clearly that the Creator of all these many billions of “ones” must Himself be a “*One and only One and that Individual is Allah*”.

#### **D. Does “God” Incarnate come on earth to save sinners?**

##### **1. The general belief of pagans and Christians**

The notion “*God in human form has come on earth to save sinners by the sacrifice of his life*” is indeed the very popular belief with millions of people. As shown earlier this teaching was an innovation of King Nimrod’s for his apotheosis *i.e.* his deification into a god.

Egypt, North Africa, Greece, the Roman Empire, Europe, Asia Minor, the Middle East, Central Asia, China, India, the American Indians, in fact all the old civilisations, followed this theory of King Nimrod which they took with them all over the world, when the curse of Allah broke up the unity of mankind at the Tower of Babel. This is the Pagan Gentile faith. The Christians also proclaim that Christ is God incarnate come on earth to save sinners by the sacrifice of his life.

The Hindus of India contend that whenever mankind became disobedient and mischievous God came down on earth in different forms. They believe he came down nine times at different places all over the earth and is still to come down once again for the tenth. The three most popular ones who are supposed to have come down in India are as follows:

Shanker Avatar Bhagwn (about 4000 years back)

Rama Avatar Bhagwan (about 3500 years back)

Krishna Avatar Bhagwan (about 3000 years back)

## 2. A comparison between “God Incarnate” and Allah

The outstanding and common features of all these “Gods” come on earth in human shape to save sinners as against that of Allah are given hereunder on a comparative basis, which will no doubt help the readers to evaluate and distinguish for themselves the differences that exist:

GOD INCARNATE IN HUMAN SHAPE	ALLAH ACCORDING TO THE QUR’AN
All of these “Gods” come on earth were born out of woman. They have departed when their life span on earth was over.	Allah was not born of any woman. He is alive from infinity and will remain alive till eternity, therefore there is no question of Allah being born or that He could ever die.
Many of these “Gods” are claimed to be the only begotten son of God.	Allah neither begetteth any sons or daughters nor was He begotten by a mother. Hence it is blasphemy to suggest He has any begotten son or daughter. (See Qur’an 112: 1-4 quoted under section “C” of this chapter).
All these “Gods” were looked after in their childhood by their mothers and weaned by them.	Allah has no mother or father or any other form of superiors to look after Him. He is self-sufficient. (Qur’an 112: 1-4).
These “Gods” all grew up from little babes into manhood.	Allah does not grow from a baby to manhood. He is constant and eternal. Time has no effect whatsoever upon Him.
All these “Gods” had human bodies.	Allah is infinite, hence He has no bodily form. He is formless, shapeless and boundless.

## GOD INCARNATE IN HUMAN SHAPE

## ALLAH ACCORDING TO THE QUR'AN

Thousands of people saw these "Gods".

Allah cannot normally be seen by ordinary eyes.

These "Gods" required food for their sustenance.

Allah, is eternally self-sufficient. Hence He does not require any thing for His sustenance.

These "Gods" required sleep.

Allah does not require any sleep. He does not doze for even a moment (Qur'an 2: 255).

On the seventh day God rested (Genesis 2: 2)

Allah is never tired of His Creation and never rests even for a wink (Qur'an 2: 255).

These "Gods" required and observed usually a weekly day of rest and prayers.

Allah does not require any period of rest. He is never tired of looking after the entire universe continuously non-stop from eternity to eternity (Qur'an 2: 255).

These "Gods" had very limited knowledge and could see only those things which were before their eyes. They did not know and could not see what was behind them.

Allah has complete knowledge of what is in the entire universe. He knows what was before and behind these "Gods" and whatsoever were the secret thoughts of all creatures. And they did not know any of His knowledge save and except that little bit which He chooses to disclose to them (Qur'an 2: 255).

None of these "Gods" have been able to sustain themselves by themselves without any requirement of food *etc.* When they cannot support even themselves, how can they claim to sustain others?

Allah is the sole sustainer of the entire universe. (Qur'an 1:1). It is He, Who feeds us by providing for each of us our meals. It is He who keeps us alive by providing for the water we drink and the air we breathe. Allah however

## GOD INCARNATE IN HUMAN SHAPE

## ALLAH ACCORDING TO THE QUR'AN

None of these "Gods" were master of time or were capable of keeping themselves eternally alive.

None of these "Gods" have created the "Universe".

These "Gods" came on this earth and now they have all died and gone away. Hence they were mortal beings.

These "Gods" are alleged to have come for the limited purposes of saving sinners and guiding mankind to the right path. But these objectives have not been achieved. There is sin all around us. Hence all such "Gods" are apparently failures.

does not require any sustenance whatsoever.

Allah the Eternal created time and death to show His superiority over His created beings.

Allah is the sole Creator of the entire Universe.

Allah is "Omnipresent". Hence neither does He come to, nor does He go away from any place.

His omnipresence obligatorily makes Him present at all places at all times of the day and night. When He is already eternally present at all places there is not a single place where He is not already present so there is no possibility of His going away to any such place which does not even exist from a place where He has been since eternity even from before the said place came into existence.

Allah is Almighty. He does what He pleases, there has never been, nor can there ever be any failures in His work. This is more than amply evident from His flawless creation of the entire universe. Just realise the millions of stars and the cosmic harmony—each working within their individual systems without any failures, chaos and confusion. Could any of these so-called "Gods come on earth" match

## GOD INCARNATE IN HUMAN SHAPE

## ALLAH ACCORDING TO THE QUR'AN

any of these performances of Allah?—  
No!

These “Gods” were created beings and now they are not on the earth.

Allah is the first because He was in existence before creation was started by Him. Allah is also the Last because He is eternal.

These “Gods” were not unique but were just like others in the world.

Allah is the only one Who is The Unique and there is none comparable with Him in any manner. He is that which we human beings cannot even imagine!

Thus it is clear from the above comparisons that these “Gods” who came on earth were in every manner endowed with only limited faculties and did not have a single one of the divine attributes which Allah possesses.

They however had the power of getting people to acknowledge them as so very great that their followers deified them, but for all that on principle they were mortal beings in each and every respect and did not possess a single one of the abovementioned divine attributes of Allah.

Hence in all religions which accept this theory of “God coming on earth” it becomes obvious that “God” according to these faiths means a great man who has been able to influence others. Therefore God does not imply according to them a Divine Being, but a mortal human being.

A careful study would reveal that the theory of God incarnate coming on earth has originated in Nimrod and has spread all over the earth from the curse of Allah at the Tower of Babel which changed our languages overnight and broke up the unity of mankind, scattering them all over the face of the earth.

*Allah on the other hand stands for that Supreme Being, Who has no beginning and no end, Who has no equals, the Incomparable, the Eternal, the Infinite, the Creator of the universe, the Sustainer, the Sole Master of the Day of Judgment, He is neither Male nor Female nor Plural (i.e. not a trinity) and has no Virgin wives, no begotten sons and no daughters.*

### **3. Analysis on necessity of a God Incarnate**

Analysis shows that the necessity arose for “a god incarnate in human form come to save sinners” when people wanted not only to be wicked but also to justify the continuance of their wickedness. This meant:

- a. The breaking of Allah’s laws. To justify it Nimrod advocated “*God’s laws are a curse*”.
- b. If God was only a One then He could not come on earth, Therefore God had to be a multiplicity. Thus Nimrod taught that there are “Three gods in one” or “a trinity in unity” thus committing blasphemy.
- c. To achieve his purpose of leading a life of shame and sin, this master-mind deceived his followers by making them believe that if they enjoyed food and drinks consecrated to the name of a deity, they would become transmuted into the pure sinless body and blood of the deity himself. Thus he silenced the pinpricks of conscience for his sins, which became fully justified and encouraged! Can anyone believe logically that he can become transmuted into a “God” by feasting and drinking?
- d. It was but natural that when such an impetus to sin was given, something really convincing had to be shown to the public how their sins, which they were thus encouraged to commit would be wiped out. The solution was that a “God” incarnate had to be coined and this “God” had to come down on earth to sacrifice his life and become the “Sin-bearer”!

- e. To justify the absolute necessity of such a “God” incarnate, a new theory had to be placed before the public that man was born with sin. Therefore all his acts were sinful! Hence a “god incarnate” was the “sine qua non” of Nimrodism to save mankind!

#### 4. What is Sin?

Islam upholds the following logical facts:

- a. Man is born pure and sinless.
- b. Children are innocent, even if they commit a sin, as long as they do not realise that what they are doing is something wrong.
- c. Therefore for any act to be a sin it MUST be something which is committed knowingly.
- d. If something is done in innocence and in good faith it is not a sin, even though its result is not what was expected when it was done. In such a circumstance as soon as one realises that something has gone wrong and one is sorry for it and promises never to make this mistake again and either rectifies the mistake or compensates for the damage done and asks Allah for His forgiveness, then it is no longer a sin.
- e. When these principles are appreciated then it becomes simple to codify sin logically into four separate categories *viz*:
  - i. **Minor Sins**—Known as “*Sagira*” or small. These will be easily forgiven as soon as one is sorry and prays for Allah’s forgiveness.
  - ii. **Major Sins**—Known as “*Kabira*” or big. These would be forgiven if one vows never to commit them again—This act in Arabic is called “*Tauba*”. He must offer, to compensate the loss or damage caused to others and pray for Allah’s forgiveness.

- iii. **Sins Against Another**—A sin committed against another person can be forgiven ONLY AFTER the person wronged is fully compensated or he of his own accord willingly forgives. A beautiful illustrative example of this is set by the Prophet Muhammad when he was about to depart from earthly life as recorded by Devenport (Chapter 17: E-28)”.
- iv. **Unpardonable Sins**—To kill anyone deliberately for personal reasons is unpardonable on principle. Islam make its clear as follows:

*“... whosoever killeth a human being for other than manslaughter or corruption in the earth, it shall be as if he has killed all mankind, and whoso saveth the life of one, it shall be as if he had saved the life of all mankind ... (Qur’an 5: 32).*

“Slay not your children, fearing a fall of poverty, We (Allah) shall provide for them and for you. Lo! the slaying of them is a great sin.

“And come not near adultery. Lo! it is an abomination and an evil way.

“And slay not the life which Allah hath forbidden save with right (See Qur’an 5: 32 quoted above for the meaning of right). Whoso is slain wrongfully, We (Allah) have given the power unto his heir (as a lesson to the world and not as an act of retaliation, for it is better if you forgive. One can slay the proved murderer only on grounds of ridding the world of a man-slaughterer), but let him not commit excess in slaying (by killing the relatives of the murderer out of revenge). Lo! he will be helped (only in carrying out justice and no further)” (Qur’an 17: 31-33).

## 5. The Teachings of Jesus on innocence of mankind in its childhood

The Holy Bible gives the the teachings of Jesus as follows:-

“At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?

“And Jesus called a (pure sinless innocent) little, child unto him,



and set him in the midst of them.

“And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as (these pure sinless innocent) little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.

“Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this (pure sinless innocent) little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

“And whoso shall receive one such (pure sinless innocent) little child in my name receiveth me.

“But whoso shall offend one of these (pure sinless innocent) little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea” (St. Matthew 18: 1-6).

“But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Suffer (pure sinless innocent) little children to come unto me, and forbid, them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.

“Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a (pure sinless innocent) little child shall in no wise enter therein” (St. Luke 18: 16-17).

From these it will be clear that Jesus believed that little children were innocent and pure and not born with the “*Original Sin* of the first parents Adam and Eve”. Hence the whole teaching, that man is born with sin and all his good and pious acts are sinful, are even contrary to the teachings of Jesus in the Holy Bible.

The so-called sin of Adam and Eve will be narrated in Chapter 20: B, C and D where Satanism is discussed. It will be obvious that what Adam and Eve did was strictly speaking not a sin at all, but it was a mere disobedience of Allah’s order which robbed them of their heavenly bliss of innocence.

Further Jesus has clarified that he is not “God incarnate” in the Holy Bible in the very next sentences to that quoted hereabove, on the innocence of children *viz*:

“And a certain ruler asked him (Jesus), saying, Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?

“And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me Good (Master)? None is Good (Master), save one, THAT IS GOD (the Alone),” (St. Luke 18:18-19).

Thus Jesus clarified that he is not “God incarnate” and to make somebody a partner of Allah by calling him “Good Master” is a blasphemy. Further the Holy Bible shows that Jesus is not the “Sin-bearer” of the world as under:

“I (Jesus) pray for them: *I pray not for the world, but for them which Thou hast given me; for they are Thine*” (St. John 17: 9).

“And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I (Jesus) judge him not: *for I came not to judge the world.*

“He that rejecteth me (Jesus) and receiveth not my words, hath the One (Allah) that judgeth him ... in the last day (*i.e.* the day of Judgment)” (St. John 12: 47-48).

Jesus has further clarified what one *Must* do if he wishes to attain heaven:

“For I (Jesus) say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the Kingdom of Heaven” (St. Matthew 5: 20).

Hence a “god incarnate come to save sinners” is absolutely contrary to these doctrines of Jesus in the Holy Bible and are therefore the undisputed teachings of Nimrod, the cursed, the only begotten son come to save sinners by the sacrifice of his life in the defence of his religion against Abraham, the friend of Allah, as recorded earlier (Chapter 6: I and J).

## **6. Is man born with an original sin?**

All educated people will appreciate that logically sin has to be something which not only is wrong, but is also to be committed

deliberately out of mischief and against the dictates of ones conscience. So it is something which man can avoid by his own free will!

How can a Just Creator burden an innocent child from birth with any sin? And that also with an “*Unpardonable Original Sin*”? Surely it is most unjust and unfair to burden a helpless child with a Sin which it has not committed. Such a ridiculous suggestion is quite contrary to logic, the teachings of Jesus, and Judaism. On the other hand, according to Islam mankind is pure and sinless at birth. Man can remain pure and sinless as the innocent child, as taught by Jesus, as shown herebefore, if man does not wilfully commit sins by going against his conscience.

When sin is the deliberate act of wrong by a person, then surely each one must bear the responsibility of one’s own actions. Somebody else cannot logically be expected to bear the sins of another. We cannot therefore be held liable for the sins of others, far less for the sin of Adam which has already been forgiven by Allah some 6,000 years back! For the sin committed by the first man and woman please refer to Chapter 20: B, C and D.

Therefore there is no logical necessity for a sin-bearer—a “god incarnate” according to the teachings of Jesus and the prophets before him as also in Islam.

## **7. The Destruction of the religion of “God Incarnate”, the sin-bearer of Babylon.**

Nimrod’s theories are illogical and absurd because he taught:

1. Man was born sinful.
2. His soul has been blackened with a supposed sin committed by somebody six thousand years earlier, which Allah has already forgiven, hence which is no longer a sin.
3. To describe this alleged incident from the life of Adam as an immortal sin of such a very great magnitude implies that any and all good and pious acts done by men instead of being good

deeds automatically become sins.

4. The doers of good and pious deeds hang themselves by the laws of God because the laws of God are a curse for man. Consequently out of these absurd teachings arose the necessity of a God incarnate to sacrifice his life to become the "Sinbearer". Are not such teachings pure and simple blasphemy because by these they raise a mortal being falsely to the level of equality with God in trinity in unity, and "the Only begotten son" even though he does not possess even a single divine attribute.

These blasphemies of Nimrodism were responsible for Jerusalem being razed to the ground twice, the total destruction of Babylon, the horrors of the Dark Ages of Europe and the numerous calamities through which the Christians have passed including the Crusades owing to the curse of Allah according to historical facts as already described earlier. Will not this scourge at the Tower of Babel which broke up the unity of mankind once more destroy greater Babylonia i.e. the cities populated heavily by Nimrodists as warned in the Holy Bible in "one hour" (Revelation 18:16-17) and thereafter "Allah's Kingdom earth" will be established after the great battle of Armageddon? (See Chapter 25 and onward till the end of this research).

Are the present scientific achievements for the benefit of man or are they the very means of his destruction?

Let the "Developed countries" ponder  
on what they are heading towards:

Self Destruction in a Nuclear War

—or—

Universal Peace and goodwill among men?

### **E. It is impossible for Allah to lie!**

For the past many millions of years, Allah has created each and everything out of naught. He has given personal attention to the

minutest details to make everything absolutely distinct. Nobody in the past has ever been able to point out a single mistake or duplicate in His works. In the future also it will be impossible to single out even one defect or copy in all His vast planning, because He is the only absolutely perfect and flawless One. Allah has a purpose for each and everything. So He could never have created anything whatsoever without a specified purpose. Nor without knowing why a particular person or thing has been brought into existence.

Accordingly, it is quite impossible for Allah to lie or to make even a single mistake or a single mis-statement. The Heavenly Books contain “His Laws” which are from infinity and these “Divine Laws” will remain until infinity. Hence it is absolutely unimaginable for any flaws or mistakes or false statements or lies to be in them unless the books have been forged by wicked men to suit their purpose as quite distinct from the purpose of Allah. Such changes have been incorporated by wicked people always with an idea to mislead and deceive the world.

One reads the following Divine Law in the Torah:

“If a man have two wives, one beloved, and the other hated, and they have born him children, both the beloved and the hated; and if the first-born son be hers that was hated:

“Then it shall be, when he maketh his sons to inherit that which he hath, *that he MAY NOT make the son of the beloved first born in preference to the son of the hated, who is indeed the firstborn.*

*“But he shall acknowledge the son of the hated for the firstborn, by giving him a double portion of all that he hath: for he is the beginning of his strength; the right of the firstborn is his”* (Deuteronomy 21:15-17).

Ishmael was born 14 years before Isaac. Therefore the firstborn and heir of Abraham is Ishmael according to Allah and the above quoted Biblical Laws.

Hence it is obvious that Sarah committed a sin against the above laws of Allah according to the Holy Bible when she proclaimed:

“Wherefore she (Sarah) said unto Abraham, cast out this bondwoman and her son: *for the son of this bondwoman shall not be heir with my son, even with Isaac*” (Genesis 21:10).

And further Allah becomes a liar according to the following falsified passage in the present day “Torah”:

“And God said unto Abraham, let it not be grievous in thy sight because of the lad, and because of thy bondwoman; in all that Sarah hath said unto thee, hearken unto her voice: *for in Isaac shall thy seed be called*” (Genesis 21:12). This passage is contradictory to Allah’s Laws for the firstborn; hence it is a forgery because it is impossible for Allah to lie. That Allah never lied and Abraham never broke the Divine Law of First-born is clear according to the Torah itself as already shown earlier (Chapter 7: G, 1-8).

1. Abraham has shown clearly in the Torah that his love for Ishmael and his children is far greater than his love for Isaac, when he pleads with Allah through the medium of the Angels sent to destroy Sodom and Gomorrah, that instead of him being blessed with Isaac he would prefer that his beloved Ishmael got some children (Chapter 7: D, E and F), thus proving beyond any doubt that Abraham always acknowledged Ishmael as his first-born and heir according to the above quoted Divine Law and that his duty and love never wavered from Ishmael to Isaac. Hence neither did Abraham deprive Ishmael of his right of First Born nor did he break the Divine Law as already shown earlier. Therefore it is clear that Allah has not lied but some wicked people have committed a forgery by changing the original text, of the Torah, as confirmed by even Jesus (Chapter 7: G-8 and Chapter 13: C, D, E and L).
2. Abraham gave the golden casket “*Sakina*” which contained the pictures of all leading Prophets to Ishmael, which once again proves that Abraham made Ishmael his heir and firstborn and not Isaac (Chapter 13: J and page 584, Vol. 1, *Tafrihul Askia*

*Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia).*

3. Allah destroyed Jerusalem in 607 B.C. and the Jews, the children of Isaac were slaughtered and/or taken as slaves to Babylon because of their worship of Baal or Nimrod. But when all hope was given up by the children of Ishmael at Mecca for the same crime of worship of idols, they were saved miraculously from the same fate by Allah just 40/50 days before the birth of Prophet Muhammad (Chapter 8: G). Allah has thus shown beyond any doubt to the whole world that Ishmael and his children held a higher position with Allah than the Chosen Nation of Jews who are the children of Isaac.

From these historical facts it is explicit that Allah did never tell a lie or ever agree to make Isaac the heir of Abraham. Therefore this passage in the Torah of today is a total forgery (Chapter 7: G 1-8).

This is further proved from the following passages:

(In Hebrew): “Whyekhlloo ham main min hahemeth wat -tashlek et haeiled tahat hassihim”

Translation: “(And when) was finished all the water from the bottle, and she (Hagar) placed her baby (Ishmael) under one of the shrubs” (Genesis 21:15).

(In Hebrew): “Whyifkar Elohim et eneha wat-tere biteer main wat-telekh wat-temale et hahemeth main wat-task et hannaar”

Translation: “And opened God her eyes and she saw a spring of water (spouting out of the ground, where the little hands and legs of baby Ishmael were hitting the ground, because this spot where he was lying was blessed) and she went (running to her baby child and lifted him in her arms) and she filled the bottle with water (as Ishmael was too small to drink even water by himself) and gave the lad to drink” (Genesis 21: 19).

Thus it is clear that Ishmael was still being bottle-fed when he was saved miraculously from dying of thirst by the sacred waters of the well of Zam Zam at Mecca. Hence he was only a few months old when

Sarah's jealousy caused his separation from his father Abraham. This Biblical fact is also confirmed by the history of Abraham (pages 213-215, Vol. 1, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Isaac was born 14 years after this incident (Genesis 21: 2-5) and was weaned (*i.e.* gave up drinking his mothers milk) when he was about 5 years old. On this occasion a feast was given by Abraham (Genesis 21: 7-8). At this point of time about 19 years, in any case more than at least 14 years had elapsed since Ishmael had been sent away by Sarah as is clear from the Hebrew Texts quoted above. Then how could Ishmael have mocked Isaac when he was not there for the past 14 years or more?

Hence the following texts of the Torah include other glaring "forgeries" (Chapter 7: G, 1-8):

"And Sarah saw the son of Hagar, the Egyptian, which she had born unto Abraham mocking (even though he was not there for the past 14 years or more):

"Wherefore she said unto Abraham, cast out this bondwoman and her son (but Ishmael had already been sent away more than 14 years earlier therefore this an impossibility and a lie) for the son of this bondwoman shall not be heir with my son, even with Isaac (thus Sarah is proved by this to be a sinner and a breaker of the laws of God under which Ishmael was not only the firstborn but also the heir of Abraham)" (Genesis 21: 9-10).

The next indisputable fabrication in the Torah is:

"And He said, Take now thy son, thine "ONLY" son Isaac, whom thou lovest" (Genesis 22: 2)

Now Isaac was NEVER the only son of Abraham. He was always the second son (Chapter 7: G; 1-8). The only time when Abraham had one and only one son was for a period of 14 years. This one and only son of Abraham was Ishmael who was born when Abraham was 86 years old (Genesis 16: 15-16). Isaac, his second, son, was born 14 years later, when Abraham was 100 years of age (Genesis 21: 5). Thereafter Abraham had six more sons through his third wife (Genesis 25:1 & 2).



Abraham had eight living sons when he died at the age of 175 years, (Genesis 25: 7) and was buried by his sons Ishmael and Isaac who were both living (Genesis 25: 9-10).

So it appears that once again an attempt is being made by the forgerers of the Torah to paint Allah as a liar in the Holy Bible. But Allah does not lie. This will be more evident from the foretellings on the birth of Isaac and through him, Jacob. These were given at the very same time to Abraham when he was 99 years old (Chapter 7: D) Since Allah had foretold the birth of Jacob, then by no stretch of imagination can He ever break His promise by requesting the sacrifice of Isaac the person through whom the birth of Jacob was foretold from even one year before the birth of Isaac. But Allah never breaks His promises. So Allah could never have asked for Isaac to be sacrificed until the birth of Jacob had taken place already as was promised by Allah one year before the birth of Isaac (Chapter 7: D). Also no question of the sacrifice of Isaac arose after his marriage and the birth of Jacob. As Isaac was never the one and only son during any part of Abraham's life until his death so he was never required to be sacrificed as confirmed by Jesus (Chapter 7: G-8 and Chapter 13: E and L).

It becomes certain that somebody has reduced wickedly the Divine Book of Torah into a book of falsehood by replacing the name of the one and only son Ishmael, with that of the second son Isaac who was never at any stage the one and only son as proved by Jesus (Chapter 7: G-8). Therefore the original correct text of Genesis 22:2 according to Jesus read:-

“And He (Allah) said, Take now thy firstborn son, Thine ONLY son, *Ishmael*, whom thou lovest”.

It is common knowledge that if one gets his first child, and that also at a ripe old age and then for some reason or other this child has to be kept somewhere far away from the father and that also from the time the child is only a few months old, how very great will be the yearning of that aged father for his only child.

In the case of Abraham we have seen in Chapter 7: B and C that owing to the jealousy of Sarah, when Ishmael, who was so small that he could not even drink water by himself but had to be fed through a bottle, was sent away to Paran or Mecca much to the disgust and horror of Abraham. Therefore how great must be the pangs of love of Abraham for Ishmael an account of the distance and forced absence of the joy of his eyes, especially when it was an outcome of the jealousy of an unjust and unreasonable woman! Quite naturally Abraham was pining for his first born for thirteen years, before the news came that he was going to get his second child Isaac. Can any later child get such love of the pining old father? The Torah answers emphatically “No”. The love of Abraham according to the Holy Bible for Ishmael was much greater than for Isaac as shown in Genesis 17: 18 and 20 hence “whom thou lovest”.

The question of sacrifice of the one and only son of Abraham was a matter of a very great and severe trial by the Almighty Allah to test the limit to which Abraham would go on in his love for Allah, as against that of his love for his one and only son in his old age, his beloved Ishmael, for whom he was pining day and night for thirteen years and with no news whatsoever of any further children. This great test of necessity had to take place at some point of time before Abraham had any knowledge of a second son or 13 grandsons, all of which took place at a time when he was 99 years old. Once this forecast of the second son and thirteen grand-children came, then the very essence of this test of love of Allah as against that of “The One and Only son whom he loved” ended.

Thus the absurdity of the falsefiers of the Holy Bible stands out even more conspicuously when they want us to believe that it was still a serious trial for Abraham to sacrifice, his second son, after he already had his beloved first-born Ishmael safe and sound, for whom he was pining day and night and whom he loved more than Isaac (according to the Holy Bible-Genesis 17: 18 and 20) and a promise of 12 princes or grand-children through him at age of 99 years, when the births of Isaac

and Jacob were foretold. Is it not absolutely ridiculous for Abraham to be called upon to sacrifice Isaac, his second son, in these circumstances?

Further, could Isaac be killed as a child and yet Jacob be born through him after he had been killed? The answer is a categorical “No”. Could Allah therefore order the sacrifice of the one through whom Jacob was to be born according to foretellings made by Allah at the time when the birth of Isaac was foretold? Could half the forewarning of Allah about the birth of Isaac be true and the other half that he would have a son by the name of Jacob be untrue? The answer is an emphatic “No”. Allah does not lie! Therefore the question of the sacrifice of Isaac at any stage did not even arise.

The only juncture at which the sacrifice by Abraham could be any kind of a serious trial for him **MUST** have been before he was told of the birth of Isaac and Jacob and 12 princes to Ishmael and certainly before his second son Isaac was born because the Bible is emphatic on “**THY ONLY SON**”. Isaac in any case was never the one and only son. This great sacrifice also of necessity had to take place before his name was changed from Abram, to Abraham, or “The Father of Nations”. Also before he got the order to differentiate the believers by circumcision. All these things happened when he was 99 years old.

Consequently the great trial of the sacrifice of his one and only son took place before these incidents *i.e.* before the foretelling of the birth of Isaac etc as proved also by Jesus (Chapter 7: G-8): Therefore the prophecy of the birth of Isaac and thirteen grandsons as also the title of “Father of Nations” were apparently a deserving reward for the great sacrifice of Ishmael by Abraham, which **MUST** have and **ACTUALLY** did take place just before all these events *i.e.* a month earlier on 10th of lunar month of Zilhaj as against the visit of the three Angels a month later on 9th of the Lunar month of Muharram to foretell the birth of Isaac and 13 grandchildren, the change of name to Abraham or Father of Nations and the everlasting covenant of circumcision.

Further, Ishmael is one of the eight prophets who were blessed

with a heavenly title (Chapter 8: I). Ishmael's title was "*Zabiullah*" as will be seen from the Divine recitation given below:

"La Ilaaha Illal Laahu Ismail Zabiullah"

Translation:

"There is none worthy of divine worship except Allah and Ishmael is the sacrifice to Allah".

When Allah has given Ishmael the title of one who offered himself in sacrifice to Allah, then it MUST be Ishmael who was given in sacrifice by Abraham when he was the one and only child and not more than 13 years old. Allah cannot lie! It is subsequently clear that mischief-makers have thus corrupted the Holy Bible from a Divine Book from Allah, into a book now containing several spurious insertions.

One is puzzled as to what was the grand object of the falsifiers to replace the name of Ishmael with that of Isaac? The answer is provided in the Torah itself:

"And the angel of the Lord called unto Abraham out of heaven the second time.

"And said, By Myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, THINE ONLY SON (who was ONLY ISHMAEL for 14 years):

"That in blessing, I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed (*i.e.* the children and followers of Ishmael) as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies;

"And in THY SEED (*i.e.* the children of Ishmael), shall ALL THE NATIONS of the earth be blessed; because thou (and thy only son Ishmael willingly) has obeyed My voice" (Genesis 22: 15-18).

Muhammad, the one and only prophet from the descendants of Ishmael, is also the one and only prophet of Allah who has been blessed with the Divine title of "*Rahmat-u1-lil-Aalameen*" (Translation: A

Blessing or Comforter for the entire Universe). The Holy Bible states that "*Ahmad Rahmat-ul-lil-Aiameen*"—translated from Hebrew Aramaic into Greek as "Parakletos" and translated into English as "Comforter"—would come after Jesus. (St. John 14: 26; 15: 26; 16: 7-13). Muhammad was born approximately five and a half centuries after Jesus. The Holy Bible has referred to this aspect of this descendant from that seed of Abraham, who was taken for sacrifice as follows in Genesis 22: 18:

"And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed;"

Since this person according to the Holy Bible was not Jesus and was to come after Jesus, the question arises as to which prophet has come after Jesus from any one of the eight sons of Abraham.

The obvious answer is Muhammad from the descendants of Ishmael the first born of Abraham. Further, Genesis 22:18 also corroborates what would be the title given to him by Allah *viz*: "*Rahmat-ul-lil-Aalameen*" or "The Blessing or Comforter for the entire Universe".

Further, the second part of the said Biblical foretelling reads:

"In multiplying I will multiply thy seed (Ishmael) as the stars of heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore". This was also fulfilled because the circumcised children and followers of Ishmael, *viz*: the Muslims, are at least 1500 Millions all over the world as against the circumcised children and followers of Isaac who comprise about 15 millions Jews. Hence Allah's promise has been fulfilled in the multiplicity, of circumcised children of Ishmael by a margin of almost 100 Muslims to every circumcised follower of Isaac. This fact again shows that it could only have been Ishmael, who was the one and only son of Abraham for fourteen years, and who was taken for the great sacrifice and trial of Abraham, when he had no knowledge whatsoever of any further children *i.e.* before the foretelling of the birth of Isaac and the 13 grandchildren.

When history shows that not a single one of the sons of Ishmael

was a prince or a king of any place, then why did God call them 12 princes? The irrefutable answer is that they were hereditary princes, being the sons of Ishmael who was fourth in the line to the throne of Egypt, because he was the son of Princess Hagar of Egypt. Therefore to call the daughter of the King or Pharaoh of Egypt a “Bondswoman” is yet another of the series of forgeries in the Holy Bible to deceive the world about the Comforter or Blessing for the entire universe i.e. Muhammad because he is from the descendants of Ishmael whilst all the Jewish prophets including Jesus are from Isaac, the second son.

If Allah wanted Isaac to be the only son for fourteen years and the heir of Abraham, it was ever so easy for Him to make Sarah pregnant with Isaac, when Abraham was 85 years old instead of when he was 99 years. Any of these two dates were equally convenient for Him. He could have made Hagar pregnant with Ishmael, 14 years thereafter, instead of 14 years earlier as at present. He had only to order “Be! and it is” When it was so very easy for Allah to do anything that pleases Him, then there cannot be any question of a mistake or blunder by Allah. He has not shown a single mistake or flaw in the entire universe. Therefore He cannot contradict Himself, just to suit some malicious forgers of the Holy Bible, who have spoilt and reduced this sacred book into a book full of forgeries, at least as far as it concerns Princess Hagar of Egypt, the second wife of Prophet Abraham, Prophet Prince Ishmael the first-born and heir of Prophet Abraham and the promised Prophet Muhammad, the seed of that one and only son of Abraham, who was taken for the great sacrifice, through whom the world would be blessed.

The names of the promised Prophet have appeared in the Holy Bible at several places. The falsifiers have deleted carefully the proper names and have replaced them with the qualities of the said Promised Prophet *e.g.*:

“For us (*i.e.* for our salvation) a child will be born, for us (*i.e.* for our salvation) a son (from the descendants of Abraham) is given: and the Government (of the entire Universe) will be upon his

shoulder (also interpreted by Jesus and others as the seal of prophet hood will be upon his right shoulder) and his name will be called Ahmad Muhammad ..." (Isaiah 9: 6).

These two proper names of the promised Prophet *viz*:

"Ahmad" and "Muhammad" have been deleted deliberately and replaced by two qualities *e.g.*, "Wonderful" and "Counsellor". Hence the forged text now reads "and his name will be called Wonderful Counsellor". Neither "Wonderful" nor "Counsellor" are proper names, hence to the ignorant person it would appear that the Bible is a book of lies, when it says "his name will be called Wonderful Counsellor" as both these words are not names at all but merely some qualities. Allah had disclosed the names correctly as "Ahmad Muhammad" but some evil forgers have obviously replaced these proper names with the object of misguiding the world.

For similar reasons the Promised Prophet's name has been erased all over the Holy Bible in both the Old and New Testaments and replaced with words giving certain qualities *e.g.*:

"Gird thy sword upon thy thigh O mighty Ahmad Muhammad" (the two proper names being replaced on this occasion by the forger with the words "with thy glory, with thy majesty" in Psalms 45: 3). This falsified passage now reads:

"Gird thy sword upon thy thigh O most mighty, with thy glory with thy majesty".

In the New Testament the proper name "Ahmad, Rahmat-ul lil-Aalameen" or "Ahmad the Blessings or Comforter for the entire universe" has been changed. The proper name "Ahmad" has been deleted purposely in St. John 14:26; 15:26 and 16:7, whilst "*Rahmatu-lil-Aalameen*" has been replaced by "Parakletos" in the Greek translation and "Comforter" in the English Translation.

That the proper name "Ahmad" was in the original Hebrew Texts is proved by the following amongst other quotations from the last of

the Divine Books:

“And when Jesus, son of Mary said: O Children of Israel! Lo! I am the messenger of Allah (come) unto you (*i.e.* the Jews) confirming that which was (revealed) before me in the Torah and bring glad tidings of a messenger (*i.e.* the Promised Prophet), who cometh after me, whose name is Ahmad. Yet when he hath come unto them (*i.e.* the children of Israel and followers of Jesus) with clear miracles, (many of them) they say: This is mere magic” (Qur’an 61: 6).

Since the Qur’an is the only divine book, which has so far defied forgers as will be clear from Chapter 18 according to the research of European Scholars, so when Allah says that the name of the “Promised Prophet” was originally and repeatedly mentioned throughout the Holy Bible, then it must have been so, but falsifiers have deleted the same in all places except one which has escaped their notice in the Hebrew text, although in the English version they have replaced the proper name Muhammad with qualities thus proving beyond any doubt how these forgers have falsified the Holy Bible. (See Chapter 17: C-6 for the Hebrew Text).

The following passages in the last of the Divine Books shows that Allah has created everything with truth:

“Allah has created (everything) the heavens and the earth WITH TRUTH. Lo! Therein is indeed a portent for believers” (Qur’an 29: 44).

Hence lies and falsehood cannot conceivably be the work of Allah, the Only Being, Who is “*All Perfect*”.

It should therefore be explicit by now that the falsifiers of the Holy Bible, whoever they were, have systematically and thoroughly corrupted references to the Promised Prophet and his forefathers, including Princess Hagar and Prophet Prince Ishmael, the first born and heir of Abraham and replaced them with praises of Sarah and Isaac, because all the Jewish prophets including Jesus are from their descendants.



These forgeries were unfortunately responsible for the failure of the followers of Jesus and the Jews to recognise the Promised Prophet, when he came. These spurious versions of the Old and the New Testament are therefore the “*Causa proxima*” of all our present woes and the fears of the impending destruction of large sections of mankind in the near future.

That the Nazarene priests and learned Jewish Elders however recognised the Promised Prophet Muhammad, through whom the universe would be blessed in spite of all the forgeries will be clear from Chapter 17 D-2, 3, 11, 13, 18 and 35 and as already recorded in Chapter 13: B to K.





## *Chapter 17*

# **The Promised Prophet**

(May Allah Bless Him)



### **A. “Logos”—The Holy Spirit—The Light of Truth**

#### **1. Nebula**

Science and logic both agree that this beautiful creation which we see all around and of which we form a very small and insignificant part must have come out of something substantial.

The astronomers theorise that the entire universe has come out of a vast “Nebula”, a cloud-like gaseous group of atoms which formed a vague, hazy, and indistinct formless mass.

The planet we live in is a very small one revolving round a small-to-medium-sized star called the “Sun” which is itself revolving, with millions of other such stars, in one of the millions of galaxies in a boundless Universe.

The Milky Way, the galaxy to which our Solar System belongs is only of average size yet it is so vast that it would take a rocket hurtling along its diameter at 10,000 miles per minute more than eleven million years to make the journey from end to end. A rocket travelling at the same speed across our solar system from the Sun to its farthest dependent planet, Pluto, would take more than a month.

## 2. The Medium

Religions all over the world, monotheistic or polytheistic, without any exception, admit that the Almighty Creator created first of all a “Medium” and through this medium the entire Universe has been created.

This medium has been described in many of the religious works, even in Hinduism, as a huge formless, shapeless mass of cloud-like substance giving out a glow.

In other words, the description given by the scientific astronomers or the various religious teachers all over the world belonging to different castes, colours, creeds and nationalities are all identical in substance *viz*: the creation out of a vast “Nebula”.

One is struck naturally with the awe-inspiring wonder as to what or who this “medium” must be, through which has come about the millions of galaxies and each galaxy with its millions of stars and each star with its numerous planets, satellites, meteorites, comets and each of them filled with various wonders such as the rings around Saturn or multi-coloured nature on this earth of ours with all its beauties!

One cannot help realising very clearly over here that the “medium” through which everything has been created by Allah is indeed so very immense that objects from it, *i.e.* the entire Universe appear to us on Earth as boundless. But it is still bounded by objects having shapes, designs, form and colours. On the other hand, let us try to think how very much larger and greater must be Allah, Who shows His Omnipresence throughout the entire Universe. He does so not only in each and every little object or atom as already shown earlier under the heading of “Is Allah only one?”, but He is also Omnipresent in all the vast spaces in between the various stars in all the galaxies by guiding each of them on a separate course at varying speeds, angles, direction of travel and rotations.

Allah is indeed the only one Who is “infinite” *i.e.* really boundless,

formless and undefinable. His “Infinity”—is not affected in the least manner nor is He bounded in anyway—if one little portion were to be taken out of Him to create the “medium”, because He is the omnipresent, the all-prevailing, the limitless, the formless and the boundless. In much the same Way His infinity cannot increase if indeed it were possible to add something to Him. Thus any addition or subtraction even if possible would not affect the “infinity” of the indescribable Allah, nor would it reduce Him into a “finite” or limited being. This is also confirmed in the Qur’an as follows:

“None is self-complete like (or describable or comparable to) Him (Allah)” (Qur’an 62: 4).

### 3. The Word of Allah

As in Science this “medium” has been termed “Nebula”, so also each religion has given its own name to this medium. For example, the European Group of Nations popularly call it by the Greek word “Logos” which stands for “The word of God”. It has also been termed in the Holy Bible as the “Holy Spirit”.

One of the names of the Holy prophet Muhammad is “Amr Allah” *i.e.* “The Word of Allah” or in the language of the Europeans “Logos”.

Jesus is quoted on pages 89-91, of the “*The Gospel of Barnabas*” as saying:

“Adam (upon being created), having sprung upon his feet, saw in the air a writing that shone like the sun, which said: ‘There is only one God, and Muhammad is the messenger of God’. Whereupon Adam opened his mouth and said: ‘I thank Thee, O Lord my God, that Thou hast deigned to create me; but tell me I pray Thee what meaneth the message of these words: “*Muhammad is the messenger of God*”. Have there been other men before me?’

“Then said God: ‘Be thou welcome, O my servant Adam. I tell thee that thou art the first man whom I have created. And he whom thou hast seen (mentioned) is thy son, who shall come into the world

many years hence, and shall be My messenger, for whom I have created all things; Whose soul was set in a celestial splendour sixty thousand (astronomical) years before I made anything’.”

Not only Jesus and all the earlier Prophets but also all Muslims believe that the “Logos” or “the Holy Spirit” was the first thing that Allah created. They call him by the name of “*Nur-e-Muhammadi*” or the “Light of Muhammad”. As soon as this “Light of Truth” was created, he adored his Creator. This is further confirmed in the following Divine passage:

“He (Allah) hath no partner. This I (the first to be created in the entire universe) am commanded, and I am the first (in the entire creation) of those, who have surrendered themselves in “ISLAM” (*i.e.* to the will of Allah)” (Qur’an 6: 164).

People asked Muhammad to explain the phrase “*I am the first*” in this passage, as Adam and the other Prophets up to Jesus were born on earth before him, and all these prophets were “Muslims” *i.e.* surrendered to the will of Allah, so how could Muhammad claim to be the first of those who surrendered? It was then that the Holy Prophet Muhammad explained that Allah had created him as “*Nur-e-Muhammadi*” out of Himself many thousands of astronomical years before Allah decided to create the Universe. The creation of “*Nur-e-Muhammadi*” or the “Logos” was just as if you take up a bucket of water from the vast oceans, and find no difference whatsoever in the quantity of water in the Oceans, or with one candle you light another and the former does not lose any of its light, whilst the next candle is kindled. So also, the miraculous creation of “Logos” or the lighting up of the “*Nur-e-Muhammadi*” by Allah, as it is explained variously, made not the least difference or shortage in any way in Allah, Who continued to remain His Infinite Self. It is ever so easy for Allah to create whatsoever He wishes. He has only to order: “Be! and he is” (Qur’an 3: 59), “Let there be light: and there was light” (Genesis 1: 3). Hence all of Allah’s works are miraculous events well beyond the ken of human knowledge and comprehension.

#### 4. The Affection of Allah for His Beloved

Now let us consider intelligently, what would happen if one were to pour the water lifted in a bucket from the vast ocean out of the bucket on the seashore ? You will surely see that the water from the bucket will try to flow back into the ocean mass from which it has been separated. Thus also was the case figuratively with *Nur-e-Mudammadi*! It prostrated itself before its Creator in an effort to reach Him from Whom it emanated. This was the first bowing before Allah. It pleased the Lord so very much, that it is said, He enjoyed this adoration for 3202,009,900,000 years. After this long period He was satisfied with this and He thought of developing a creation out of this *Nur-e-Muhammadi*. Thus started the creation of the Universe (page 46, Vol. 1, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*): In appreciation Allah called this Holy Spirit, His “Mahboob” i.e. “beloved”.

The current Hebrew Texts of the Holy Bible quoted in section “C-6” of this chapter give not only the detailed description but also the name of Allah’s Beloved.

This affection of Allah for His “Mahboob” or beloved finds repeated expression in the “Secret” Code Letters to be found at the commencement of many of the “Surahs” (Chapters) of the Holy Qur’an, These letters “*Alif*”, “*Lam*” “*Mim*” may be interpreted:

*Alif* as the first letter of “*Ahad*” or God the One and Alone.

*Lam* as the first letter of “*La*” i.e. there was nothing else.

*Mim* for the design created by the bowing of the Logos before his Lord, which when added to the centre of “*Ahad*” or “God the One and Alone” gives the name “*Ah-M-ad*” the original name of the Holy Prophet.

Accordingly the “Holy Spirit, the Light of Muhammad or Logos became the first of those who prostrated themselves before the Creator.

These Code letters cover the Secrets and the happiness that exist

between Allah and His beloved.

### **5. The meaning of Ahmed and Muhammad**

The name “Ahmad” represents “The illustrious one who praises the Lord”. From it has come the word “Hamd” which means “praise”. When Allah called him, His Mahboob or beloved, he became “The praised one” or “Muhammad” from the origin of the word “Hamd”.

### **6. The creation of the Universe to honour Allah’s Beloved**

Allah could very well have created the Universe by ordering: “Be!” (Qur’an 3: 59) but to honour His beloved “*Nur-e-Muhammadi*” or “Logos”, He decided to create the entire Universe through *this medium* and bless everything thus created for the sake of His beloved.

Accordingly Allah started devising out of Nur-e-Muhammadi each and every one of the Angels, the countless Galaxies throughout the Universe and all that is therein. Thus He honoured His beloved. *Nothing that was created by Allah was out of anything else!* Each and everything that has been created up till now and those that will be created in the future will all emanate from this Holy Spirit, which has thus become the “Light and Guidance” for the entire Universe. Since all created beings and objects have come out of the same medium, there is a common rule applicable to each one of them in as much as they all have a beginning, a space of time for existence and an end, even though the time period and the course of each is different and individual. Since all creation has come out of one single source, it is but natural that all creations can reach their goal only through this source *i.e.* Holy Logos—*Nur-e-Muhammadi*”, when they receive their blessings from him and are comforted by him.

The Holy Prophet Muhammad, the owner of “*Nur-e-Muhammadi*”, therefore is the most sublime and exalted of all that exists and has been created! Consequently he is supreme in regard to dignity and rank amongst all creations. He is the chief of all archangels



and superior to all creation. He is the “Nur” or “Light” which guides the entire creation to the “All Truth” or Allah. Therefore Allah has given him the title of “*Rahmat-ul-lil-Aalameen*” i.e. *a Blessing or Comforter for the entire Universe* (Qur’an 21: 107).

No other prophet save and except Holy Prophet Muhammad has ever claimed since the commencement of creation that he is the Holy Spirit or Nebula through which everything has been created. It was on this basis that *Muhammad* has confirmed “I was a prophet, whilst Adam was between water and clay”. No such claim has been made by anyone else since the creation of Adam.

This was also confirmed by Jesus to his followers in the undermentioned passages from pages 225-227 of “*The Gospel of Barnabas*”:

“Then”, said the Priest, “how shall the Messiah be called and what sign shall reveal his coming?”

“Jesus answered: The name of the Messiah is Admirable, for God Himself gave him the name when He had created his soul, and placed it in Celestial splendour. God said: *Wait Muhammad, for thy sake I will create Paradise, the world, and a great multitude of creatures, whereof I make thee a present, insomuch that who shall bless thee, shall be blessed, and whoso shall curse thee, shall be accursed. When I shall send thee unto the world I shall send thee as My Messenger of salvation, (i.e. as the Promised Comforter) and thy word shall be true, insomuch that heaven and earth shall fail, but thy faith shall never fail.*

**“Muhammad is his Blessed name.**

“Then the crowd lifted up their voices saying: O God, send us Thy messenger. *O Muhammad, come quickly for the salvation of the world*”.

The Holy Bible also admits these fundamental truths, describing *Nur-e-Muhammadi* as “The Holy Spirit”, “The Spirit of Truth” and “Logos” or “The Word of God” in addition to “Comforter” or Blessings

for the entire Universe as will be seen from the following quotations:

“In the beginning was the ‘Word’ and the ‘Word’ (of God or “Logos”) was with God ...

“The same was in the beginning with God.

“All things were made out of him (Logos) and without him was not anything made that was made (by God).

In him was life; and the life was the light (Nur-e-Muhammadi) of men.

“And the light (Nur) shineth in darkness; and the darkness Comprehended it not” (St. John 1:1-5).

“But Ahmad Rahmat-Ul-lil-Aalameen” (now forged from the Original Hebrew Aramaic Script into Greek as “Parakletos” which stands for Illustrious Comforter. The Arabic translation of the New Testament however still carries the name “Ahmad”), which is the Holy Ghost (Logos) *whom the Father will send in my name*, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you” (St. John 14:26).

“But when Ahmad,-Rahmat-Ul-lil-Aalameen (now forged into “The Comforter”) is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of Truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me” (St. John 15:26)

“Howbeit when he, the Spirit of Truth (i.e. the Promised Prophet Ahmad or Nur-e-Muhammadi or Logos), is come, he will guide you unto all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, (from Allah), that shall he speak (i.e. Qur’an): and he will show you things to come” (St. John 16:13).

It is obvious that the “Holy Light of Truth” himself must be fairer than all beauties that have been created out of him. Grace and blessings all the time should flow from his lips. The burden of the management of Allah’s kingdom, the entire creation, should be upon his shoulders. Therefore he should be the most mighty, full of glory and majesty amongst all creations. What he really is will thus be known to only One, and that is to his Creator—Allah.

If men say he is this or that, it is not of much value because people may be influenced, but if Allah says so in the various Holy Books then there is no scope for contradictions. Disbelievers in the Divine messages would naturally expose themselves for punishment from the Lord as warned by Jesus in the Gospel of Barnabas read before.

The Holy Bible has described him as follows:

“My heart is indicting a good matter: I speak of the things which (are to come about) I have made touching (*i.e.* relating to) the king (of all created things): and my tongue is the pen of a ready writer.

“Thou (*i.e.* this king) art fairer (more wonderful) than (any of) the children of men (because Muhammad had no shadow, which no other person will experience, because he is the Holy Spirit from which each and everything has been created): grace (of God) is poured into thy lips (*i.e.* the Qur’an): Therefore God has blessed thee (the Promised Prophet Muhammad) forever.

“Gird thy sword upon thy thigh O most mighty Ahmad Muhammad (now forged into ‘With thy glory and thy majesty’)” (Psalms 45: 1-3).

“For unto us (*i.e.* for our salvation) a child is (to be) born, unto us (*i.e.* for our salvation) a child is (to be) given: and the Government (of the entire Universe) shall be upon his shoulder (also interpreted as ‘The seal of Prophethood’ shall be upon his shoulder) and his name shall be called Ahmad Muhammad (now forged into ‘Wonderful, Counsellor’) ... The Prince of Peace” (Isaiah 9:6).

## **7. What is Muhammad?**

Here are a few passages from the Last of the Divine messages:-

“Had We (Allah) appointed an angel (as the Messenger for human beings) We (Allah) assuredly (would) have made him (to appear before mankind as) a man; and (Allah has thus) hidden from them (the truth of who or what His Messenger—The Logos or the Holy Spirit of Truth—Nur-e-Muhammadi is in reality. He is that from which the entire Universe has been created). This is a matter in

which they (mankind) have already been covered with confusion (save those few Sufi saints who have been given the secret of ‘Alif, Lam and Mim’ from their Lord through His ‘Wali’ or Saints)” (Qur’an 6: 9).

“Muhammad is not the father of any among you, but he is the messenger of Allah and the Seal of the Prophets (*i.e.* the final prophet of the promised prophet and that no more prophets are going to be born on this earth after him) and Allah is aware of all facts (as to who the Prophet Muhammad is *i.e.* the Logos or the Holy Spirit of Truth, Nur-e-Muhammadi and as to how many millions of galaxies have been created out of ‘This Medium’ or Nebula and how many millions of stars, planets, satellites, meteorites, comets and other wonders comprising the various galaxies).

“O Prophet (Muhammad)! Lo We (Allah) have sent thee as a witness and as a bringer of glad tidings (Qur’an) and a warner (to mankind).

“And as one who invites to Allah by His permission and as a ‘Lamp’ that spreads the ‘Light’.

“Lo! Allah and (all) His Angels (continuously) send ‘salluna’ (*i.e.* prayers of glorification) on the Prophet, (because he is Nur-e-Muhammadi from which everything in the Universe has been created). O Ye who believe! (you are ordered by Allah to) also send ‘Sallu’ (*i.e.* prayers of glorification) on him and offer ‘Sallemu’ (*i.e.* Peace of Allah and salutation) to him with a worthy (*i.e.* respectful) manner.

“Lo! those who malign Allah and His Messenger (Muhammad *i.e.* one who has been honoured by Allah), Allah hath cursed them in the world and the Hereafter and hath prepared for them the doom for the disdained” (Qur’an 33: 40, 45-46, 56 and 57).

Thus the very same things warned of by Jesus in the Gospel of Barnabas have also been reconfirmed in the Qur’an.

So far not a single person in the entire creation has ever claimed to be the “Logos” or the “Holy Spirit” or the “Light of Truth”, from whom

the entire “Universe” has been created save and except Muhammad, the promised and final prophet whose teachings will last forever until the restitution of the earth and the time when those who will not follow him will have the wrath of Allah on them and will be condemned according to the Torah (Deuteronomy 18:18-19) and the New Testament (Acts 3: 22-24) already quoted previously.

## **8. The Covenant of the Prophets**

Allah in order to honour His beloved still further decided to give the most unique position in creation to Muhammad, the Prophet, who is the “Logos” or the Holy Spirit, through whom the entire creation has come about and through whom the Universe will be blessed. This is confirmed from the sacred covenant extracted from Prophet Adam, the first man, and all prophets that came after him up to and including Jesus in the following passage:

“When Allah made (His) covenant with all the Prophets (commencing from Adam to Jesus and said): Behold that which I have given you of the Scripture and knowledge. And afterward there will come unto you (*i.e.* your followers the promised foretold) messenger (Muhammad), confirming that which you possess (*i.e.* Torah, Psalms, Evangel, Ye shall (instruct your followers to) believe in him (and give up all the earlier teachings which would have become corrupted before the advent of Muhammad) and ye shall (instruct your followers) to help him. He (Allah) asked: Do ye agree and will ye take up My burden (which I am placing upon you) in this matter? They (all the prophets from Adam to Jesus) confirmed: We agree. He (Allah) said: Then bear ye witness (to this covenant). I will be a witness with you (to your followers as to whether or not they give up the old corrupted and forged teachings and follow the promised Prophet).

“Then whosoever after this shall turn away: they will be miscreants” (Qur’an 3: 81-82).

Jesus has confirmed that each and every prophet became a

prophet, because he was blessed by the soul of Muhammad i.e. Nur-e-Muhammadi. Further, each prophet was sent as a mercy for only one particular tribe of people. Jesus, for instance was sent for the Jews only as repeatedly confirmed in the New Testament (Chapter 12: C, 5-6). Whilst only Muhammad has been sent for the whole universe.

On pages 105 of *“The Gospel of Barnabas”* Jesus confirms:

“Then answered Jesus: ‘Verily I say unto you, that Satan ever seeketh to annul the laws of God; and therefore he and his followers, hypocrites and evil-doers the former with false doctrine, the latter with lewd living, today have contaminated almost all things, so that scarcely is the truth found. Woe to the hypocrites: for the praises of this world turn for them into insults and torments in hell’.

“I therefore say unto you that the messenger of God is a splendour that shall give gladness to nearly all that God hath made, for he is adorned with the spirit of understanding and of counsel, the spirit of wisdom and might, the spirit of fear and love, the spirit of prudence and temperance; he is adorned with the spirit of charity and mercy, the spirit of justice and piety, the spirit of gentleness and patience which he (individually) had received from God three times more than He hath given to all His creatures (put together). O blessed time, when he shall come to the world: *Believe me that I have seen him and have done him reverence, even as every prophet hath seen him: seeing that of his spirit God giveth to them prophecy (i.e. prophethood).* And when I saw him my soul was filled with consolation, saying: ‘O Muhammad, God be with thee, and may He make me worthy to untie thy shoe latchet, for obtaining this I shall be a great prophet and holy one of God’.

“And having said this, Jesus rendered his thanks to God”.

This covenant of the Prophets and the dire punishment for disobedience is confirmed again and again in the Bible. As an example let us read one of such references:

“Repent Ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord (*i.e.* the Logos or the Holy Spirit of Truth)

“... which before was preached unto you:

“Whom (all that is under) the heaven must receive until the times of the restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all His Holy prophets since the world began (by making the sacred covenant with all the Prophets from Adam to Jesus).

“For Moses truly said unto our (fore) fathers. A (promised) Prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you from your brethren (*i.e.* one who is not a Jew but is brethren to the Jews *i.e.* the tribe of Ishmael), like unto me (who would speak as if it were face to face with God as one speaks to his friend); him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.

“And after the lapse of some period, when the time of reconstitution of the Earth into God’s New Era will come) it shall come to pass, that every soul, which will not hear that (promised) Prophet, shall be destroyed (at the Battle of Armageddon) from among the people (of the earth) (Chapter 29: C 7, a to h).

“Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these days.

“Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our (fore-) fathers (*i.e.* the Prophets from Adam to Jesus), saying unto Abraham (as seen earlier Chapter 7: F and G. 1-8 when Abraham had taken Ishmael to sacrifice his one and only son on mount Monah which took place sometime even before the foretelling of the birth of Isaac. On this occasion Allah had foretold to Abraham in respect of Ishmael, when he was saved from the sacrifice as follows: “And in thy seed through this one and only child *i.e.* Ishmael shall all the nations be blessed, because thou hast obeyed My voice and offered thy son, thy only son Ishmael in sacrifice—Genesis 22: 18 read with 16) and in thy seed (Ishmael’s children *i.e.* Muhammad the Promised Prophet—the Logos and in his children) shall all the kindred’s of the earth be blessed” (Acts 3: 19-25).

From all these references it becomes absolutely evident how unique was the position of Muhammad, the Mahboob or the beloved

of the Almighty Creator for whose honour the entire Universe has been created via him and which will be blessed also only through him.

The Torah, The Old Testament, The New Testament and The Qur'an have all unanimously warned mankind of severe punishment and destruction, if they will not forsake all their old distorted beliefs and accept faithfully and follow the teachings of the Promised Prophet Muhammad, the Logos or the Holy Spirit of Light in terms of the covenant that Allah had extracted from all the Prophets from the time of Adam.

Today's scientific progress in nuclear weapons of mass destruction has given the world the very tools by which Allah will make us destroy ourselves, because of our disobedience to his Universally published commandments:

*O mankind! Even now submit yourselves to His wishes and the tools for salvation will be provided.*

The very same scientific knowledge and nuclear power can be converted to peaceful uses, the development of agriculture, mastering of the Oceans for food and energy. That indeed is the only means to save ourselves from:

“Self Annihilation in Nuclear Holocaust”.

## **B. The part played by Nur-e-Muhammadi for mankind**

### **1. Did Modern Man evolve from Pre-Historic Men?**

Charles Robert Darwin (1809-1882) was an English naturalist, who evolved the theory of *Evolution* in his thesis “*The Origin of Species by means of Natural Selection*” first published in 1859. He propounded the theory that organisms tend to produce off-spring always varying slightly from their parents. The process of *natural selection* tends to favour the survival of those best adapted to their environment. By the operation of these factors new species will arise continuously over a



space of time widely differing from each other and from their common ancestors.

According to this theory of evolution it is contended that the same single type of “Pongidae” or prehistoric apes are supposed to have developed in the course of millions of years into:

- The Gorilla
- The Chimpanzee
- The Orang-utan
- The Gibbon
- The Monkey
- The Baboon
- The Lemur *etc.*

There is so much difference between each of these species, which are supposed to have evolved out of the same “Pongidae” that a monkey can no longer co-habit with an ape or any of the above species except his own and reproduce. They have become totally different in the course of time even though there are basic similarities between them, because they are supposed to have the same origin.

Many who are ignorant of the vast researches carried out on Darwin’s thesis of evolution display their lack of proper scientific knowledge by contending that the present races of man have developed out of “Hominidae” *i.e.* prehistoric apes, over a period of millions of years into:-

Homo Habilis

Australopithecus (Australis in Latin—Southern and pithekos in Greek—ape)

Pithecanthropus (the ape-man from Java)

Sinanthropus (Sinenis in Latin—Chinese and anthropus in

Greek—man)

Swanscombe man

Steinham man

The last of this series of Prehistoric ape-like men being the Neanderthal.

Hence these supporters of the theory of evolution rightly or wrongly affirm that the present three basic races of modern man are:

Caucasoid (fair-skinned man)

Mongoloid (yellow-skinned man)

Black Africans (dark-skinned man)

And they must have each developed out of a totally different species of prehistoric apelike men. Hence at no stage did the present races of men referred to hereabove come out of one single species of prehistoric men. Therefore the question of man ever having been united as one family, or having developed at the same time to the same stage and in the same manner and having the same faculties or speaking the same language and sharing a common belief is a myth according to the fundamental theories of evolution.

If that be so then a Caucasoid would not be able to co-habit with a Mongoloid or a Black Africans and produce offspring just as an ape cannot co-habit with a monkey *etc.* But in point of fact the Caucasoid, the Mongoloid and the Black Africans are not only intermarrying frequently but they are also producing children. So there must be something scientifically wrong with the theory of the evolution of modern men from prehistoric men or apes.

As against the theory of evolution, all religious books without exception tell us that God created man. Adam was the first man and Eve was the first woman (Genesis 1: 27-28). When mankind became wicked Allah destroyed them by the deluge of 2370 B.C. (Genesis 7: 1-24) save and except Noah, his wife, his three sons and their three wives.

The three basic races of mankind are from these three sons of Noah (page 166, Vol. 1, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*) viz. Shem, Japhet and Ham:-

1. **Shem** had a fair-coloured skin. From him has come about the basic race now known scientifically as Caucasoid with colour of eyes, hair and skin light. The hair texture is fine to medium wavy or straight. Beard and body hair are usually abundant. The nose is high and narrow. The lips are thin. The blood group tends more towards “A” than “B”. They are spread over Northern India, Iran, Arabia, the Middle East, North Africa and Europe.

A group was separated in the very early stages, perhaps immediately after the curse of the Tower of Babel. This group had developed in geographical isolation, before the complete specialization of the Caucasoid race to which they belonged. This group is commonly known as the Archaic White. Its members are to be found in Australia.

2. *Janheth* is the father of the Mongoloid race of mankind. His basic characteristics are hair—black, skin—yellowish, eyes—brown, eye-form—slanting but not much recessed with the “Mongoloid” eye-fold. The hair texture is coarse with very little beard and body hair. The noses are moderately broad with a low bridge. The blood group is usually high in “B”. They are to be found all over Asia and the Arctic regions, excluding South West Asia, Persia, South East Asia, and most parts of India.

The American Indians belong to this category of the human race but they were divorced from the main group shortly after the Tower of Babel incident. Thus they have developed in geographical isolation before the complete specialization of the Mongoloid race.

3. **Ham** had a dark-brownish to black skin with woolly hair. From him have developed the dark-skinned races of the world. He is thus the originator of the Black Africans, Dravidians and South Indians and Hamites of Abyssinia, Eritrea and South Arabia.

Thus the three basic types of mankind now in existence all over the world can trace their origin directly from one or more of the three sons of Noah. Hence Noah, himself a descendant of Adam, is really the father of the present human race. Therefore, the modern man has come out of Adam, a created being, and not out of prehistoric apes through a process of evolution. That is the reason why all the three basic races of man whether fair-skinned, yellow-skinned or black-skinned can inter-marry and reproduce children. In the beginning they all spoke one common language and lived as one joint family. This unity of mankind continued from the creation of Adam until the curse of Allah at the Tower of Babel, when they all went to sleep speaking one common language and arose the next morning speaking different languages causing confusion and disunity, as read earlier in Chapter 5: G.

The principles of "Evolution" imply that life would grow progressively more complex as millions of years elapsed. Yet very surprisingly many *LIVING* types of animals and plants are essentially the same as their fossil representatives, some even believed to be over a billion years old! These *Living fossils* pose a very serious question to those scientists who propagate the theory of evolution.

Late in 1938 Miss. M. Courtenay-Latimer, a curator of the museum at East London, a port on the southeast coast of South Africa, was surprised to find a strange-looking fish amongst the catch of a fisherman. She sent the details of this fish to the renowned ichthyologist, Professor J.L.B. Smith of the Rhodes University College at Grahamstown (South Africa). He was stupefied and exclaimed:

"My surprise would have been little greater if I had seen a dinosaur

walking down the street”.

It was the ancient Coelacanth which lived over 350 million years ago and was supposed to have been extinct for about 70 million years!

Jacques Millot, the Director of Madagascar’s Institutes of Scientific Research has acknowledged:

“Throughout the hundreds of millions of years the coelacanths have kept the same form and structure. *Here is one of the great mysteries of evolution ...*” (The article “The Coelacanth” appearing on page 37 in the December 1955 issue of *Scientific American*).

Another amazing discovery was made in the 1953, which came as a jolt to the scientific world. A deep-sea mollusk (*Neopilina galathea*) was recovered off the coast of Central America at a depth of about two miles. These mollusks were assumed to have become extinct about 280 million years ago. But now scientists have realised that *Neopilina galathea* are not only still with us *but also have remained unchanged in a period of over 350 millions of years!* (Page 431. “*Essentials of Earth History*” by Carl Stokes).

In 1910 on the slope of Mount Wapta in British Columbia, Charles B. Walcott made a startling discovery from “Middle Cambrian” rocks, considered 500 million years old. He found 70 genera and 130 species of perfectly preserved remains of such creatures as sponges, jellyfish, and a remarkable array of annelid worms in which even the bristles, scales, and intestinal tract are highly preserved! All are exactly like their modern counterparts!

One is tempted to ask why these creatures of the sea have not evolved. The figure of one half billion years is indeed too long period of time for them to have remained unchanged if there is such a thing as *Evolution!*

After dealing with creatures from the sea, let us refer to the article “Insects in Amber”, which appeared in the November 1951 issue of “*Scientific American*”. Here one gets the following information:

On page 57:

Cockroaches still exist in very much the same form as they did 250 million years ago. (Cockroaches are believed by some scientists to have been in existence for at least 350 million years without any transformation whatsoever. Some may even put that figure at a billion years).

On page 58:

The common black ant has been in existence for over 70 million years without any change.

On pages 60-61:

“... by and large the insect population of today remains *remarkably similar* to that of the earlier age. All the major orders of insects now living were represented in the ancient Oligocene forest. Some of the specific types have persisted throughout the 70 million years since then with little or no changes”.

On page 6 of the May 1961 issue of “*Science Digest*” is an article under the title of “The Dragonfly: Fossil on Wings” in which we are informed that fossils of the dragonfly exactly resembling the modern-day dragonfly have been found in “Jurassic” rocks assumed to be at least 170 million years old.

Now let us turn our attention to reptiles. On the offshore islands near New Zealand have been discovered the *Tuatara* or *Sphenodon*.

Scientists confess: “The skeleton of a reptile found in the Jurassic deposits of Europe is so nearly identical with that of the *living tuatara* that very little change in the bony structure must have taken place during a period of 150,000,000 years” (the article “The Tuatara: Why is it a lone survivor?” by Charles M. Bogert appearing on page 167 in the March 1953 issue of *Scientific Monthly*).

The world famous vertebrate palaeontologist George Gaylord Simpson has recorded his findings on tuatara or sphenodon as: “... one of the most remarkable examples of evolutionary stagnation. It is

almost identical in structure with ancestral forms from the Jurassic, and the evolution rate of this line *has been virtually nil* for the last 135,000,000 years or more” (page 47, *The Meaning of Evolution*).

Living creatures are not the only forms which destroy the very basis of evolution. Let us now consider only one of the plants out of the many that can be referred to.

The paleobotanist Professor Theodore Delevoryas of Yale University has written-about the life-span of the modern “*Cycad*” tree without any change or evolution on page 134 of “*Morphology and Evolution of Fossil Plants*” as follows:

“The true cycads, of the order Cycadales, were in existence since early Triassic times (*i.e.* over 220 millions of years), or perhaps even earlier”.

Thousands of other examples can be cited of specimens having been in existence for hundreds of millions of years, many even surviving for billions of years without any change or evolution whatsoever!

Now let us analyse and try to discover if modern man has come about through a process of evolution out of monkeys or from pre-historic men.

Primitive monkeys and gibbons appeared in Burma over 50 million years ago. The tail-less primitive apes appeared more than 25 million years ago. Whilst the earliest Apelike men known as Olduval in East Africa and Australopithecines in South Africa appeared more than 500,000 years back—perhaps even a million years ago.

Traces of the Neanderthal man, a prehistoric cave dweller during the last glaciation are to be found in various places dating back to about 50,000 years. They are believed to have been in existence for at least 400,000 to 500,000 years. They had receding foreheads and a stocky physique. They had a brain capacity equivalent to modern men according to the available scientific data. They were widespread in

Europe, Asia and Africa. They were the nearest to modern men. But they have disappeared mysteriously from the face of the earth sometime about 10,000 years ago *i.e.* a few thousand years before the creation of Adam. Whatever may have been the cause for their elimination just a few thousand years before the era of Adam, it must be realised that according to scientific research these pre-historic men, if we should call them men, had a basic mental capacity similar to that of the modern man!

Darwin was troubled extremely by the lack of fossil proof for his theory. Yet he believed that fossils alone could provide the only possible direct proof that evolution had in fact occurred.

Time after time, throughout his “*The Origin of Species by means of Natural Selection*” Darwin almost apologetically made such admissions as:

“As by this theory innumerable transitional forms must have existed, why do we not find them embedded in countless numbers in the crust of earth? I will here only state that I BELIEVE the answer mainly lies in the record being incomparably less perfect than is generally supposed” (page 168, *The Origin of Species*, by Charles-Darwin published by Collier, New York, 1962).

Darwin in his theories was, of course, referring to the lack of transitional forms as “missing links” in his proposed evolutionary succession.

The more Neanderthal bones that have been discovered, the more confused the evolutionary picture has become.

Anthropologist Hibben explained it this way:

“It would seem that the Neanderthaloids become more distinctively Neanderthaloid as they progressed rather than less so”. In fact a number of Neanderthal skeletons said to be, younger, “seemed to be more primitive looking than the earlier ones” (page 33, *Prehistoric Man in Europe* by Frank C. Hibben published by University of Oklahoma Press, 1958)



Anthropologists were confused. Some speculated that Neanderthal Man was a dead-end line of human evolution, *i.e.* he became “more primitive” as he evolved;

More crucial was the problem of Neanderthal Man’s sudden disappearance and the equally sudden appearance of modern man. This came as quite a shock to prehistorians. As the evidence began to accumulate, there was *No* neat blending from Neanderthal Man to modern man.

“Neanderthal man ... abruptly disappeared,” says anthropologist Howell, “the evolutionary tendencies that he exhibited during this period are extremely puzzling. For he seems to have gotten more ‘primitive,’ not less so ... He was noticeably different from modern man and became more so as time went on ...

*“In addition to stopping abruptly, the classic Neanderthal is replaced with equal abruptness by people like ourselves. There is NO BLENDING, no gradual shading from one type to the other”* (page 126, *Early Man* by F. Clark Howell published by TIME-LIFE Books, New York, 1968).

No wonder the scientists eliminated Neanderthal Man as a direct link from the supposed chain leading to modern man.

Darwin claimed that the record of bones was incomplete. He assumed that his theory would be proved as more evidence was unearthed. But the opposite has actually happened!

More evidence has merely led to more confusion in the minds of those who support the theory of evolution. If the ordinary man is puzzled by this enigma, so are the scientists.

Anthropologist Howells, a past president of the American Anthropological Association, discussed this very problem:

“We now enter the whole question of the origins of *Homo sapiens* (*i.e.* modern man).

“It is the worst problem in our evolution. Of course we have gaps to

face, *but here it is NOT a question of lack of fossils ...* Yet the problem obstinately remains unsolved.

“Who are we—us, ourselves—and what have we to do with Neanderthals? What are the connections of the two kind of man?” (Page 215, *Mankind in the Making* by William Howells published by Doubleday, New York, 1967).

This brings us to the second category of discoveries—the discoveries of bones which look exactly like those of modern men. Such fossils are labelled Cro-Magnon Man—a generic term for the first clearly recognized example of what anthropologists call full-fledged “Homo sapiens”—humans like you and me.

In any case, the first Cro-Magnon Men to be recognized were found in the spring of 1868 A.D. This was just nine years after the publication of Darwin’s “*The Origin of Species*”.

Soil was being removed to make way for a railroad at Perigord, France that was to run through Les Eyzies-de-Tayac. Five skeletons and some bits of foetal and infant bones were discovered from a rock shelter which became exposed.

These bones revealed a man fully “modern” in the European sense—tall, handsome, having regular features, high forehead, prominent chin, small teeth, thin skull, without the heavy brow ridges so characteristic of Classic Neanderthal Man.

Since then numerous remains of the Cro-Magnons or us the modern men have been found throughout Europe from southern England to Russia. France, especially, is rich in its remains.

What is the status of the Cro-Magnon Man’s evolutionary history? Is he linked to older, more primitive “men” or “near-men”?

Can we really find a connection for the Cro-Magnon Man with some more primitive being?

The answer, admit prehistorians, is “No”!

Here is what experts say of the Cro-Magnon Man:

“Just as we might actually be finding some of the connections to which the threads of evidence seem to be leading, we are frustrated. The evidence itself disappears ... we have only Neanderthals ...

“Beyond and before this Neanderthal occupation we drop off to a still poorer level of information. The human remains are few and piecemeal, and therefore quite incompetent to answer most of the problems they raise.

“And the main one is still the birth of *Homo sapiens*” (pages 343-344, *Mankind in the Making* by William Howells, Doubleday, New York, 1967).

Therefore there is no established scientific link between “Prehistoric Man” and us “Human beings”. “Prehistoric Man” and “Modern Man” are two entirely distinct creatures who have no connection whatsoever between them. They have definitely not evolved from one to the other according to science. Similarly also according to science, man has not evolved out of species of monkeys and/or apes as was supposed erroneously by many.

Numerous examples can be quoted of individual species disappearing. The vacuum thus created was in many instances filled by something totally different. The most vivid example of mass termination of the past dwellers of this earth and their surroundings took place about seventy million years ago. Strange creatures were roaming this earth then. Dinosaurs dominated the land. Pterosaurs (flying reptiles) flitted through the skies. The oceans were alive with giant marine reptiles called ichthyosaurs and mosasaurs. Plant life in this “Age of Reptiles” would seem strange to us. Cycads, ferns and fern-like plants dominated the landscape. The flowering plants, the fruit trees and the vegetations of today were simply not in existence.

The landscape of the earth was so totally different that “We might”, as one palaeontologist put it, “Well imagine ourselves upon another planet”. None of the mammals with which we are ordinarily familiar

existed. There were no dogs, no horses, no cattle, no cats. The array of feathered fowls, the varieties of grains, fruits and vegetables and fish with true scales were absent. No man walked upon the earth to view this strange creation. Only a few of the common insects with which we are familiar, such as butterflies and bees, are known to have existed.

Then suddenly some strange and terrible disasters wrought havoc on this earth, as a result of which the entire world of that time perished with an alarming abruptness. The flying reptiles were totally exterminated. The great dinosaurs vanished completely. The great reptiles of the sea became a thing of the past according to the findings of Scientists!

“There can be no doubt about it. All the dinosaurs, along with various other ... reptiles, became extinct.

“... *Not One of Them Survived*, as is amply proved by the fact that during almost a century and a half of paleontological exploration, the wide world over, no trace of a dinosaur bones or teeth has even been found in any post-Cretaceous rocks, not even in the earliest of them.

“The proof of the geologic record on this score is *Irrefutable*” (page 249 of *Dinosaurs* by Edwin H. Colbert).

The famous geologist Carl O. Dunbar, in his well-known textbook “*Historical Geology*”, is simply awed by the sudden extinction of the Reptilian Age and the equally sudden appearance of Mammals and the modern plants of today—plants upon which mammals and man alike depend for their survival.

Musing about this problem, he has quoted George Gaylord Simpson, one of the most respected men in palaeontology:

“It is as if the curtain were rung down suddenly on a stage where all the leading roles were taken by reptiles, especially dinosaurs, in great numbers and bewildering varieties and rose again immediately to reveal the same setting but in an entirely new cast in which the dinosaurs do not appear at all, other reptiles are mere

*supernumeraries (unimportant, bit-part actors) and the leading parts are all played by Mammals” (page 426, Historical Geology by Carl O. Dunbar).*

Everywhere that scientists look they are faced with this certainty—*Disaster* wiped out the dinosaurs. *These disasters were sudden, simultaneous and worldwide. No sector of this globe escaped the tragedy.*

There is no evidence whatsoever of transition from reptiles to mammals. Then, where did the living things of this present age come from? How did mammals come into existence? What about the present plants? The modern fish? And eventually man, himself?

The Geological record reveals a profound and complete break between the reptilian life that was obliterated and the modern life of today. The new forms of life on this planet—the mammals, the insect, the plants, the fishes, the birds, and even man—are totally different in most respects from the old world. There is no evolutionary connection between the two. This is proof positive that mammals and all that is now in existence *Did Not Evolve* from reptiles!

Let us close this enquiry upon the evidence provided by the fossils so far found covering the period of many billions of years which reveal the following basic facts:

- i. In the very early stages there appeared suddenly many varieties of simple single cell units. Some vanished after a time whilst others still continue to exist. Then came the period of billions of years, during which there were multiple cell units. There is so far no evidence of a neat and clear-cut blending between the single cell units having evolved into multiple cell creations. This was followed by numerous periods of billions of years during which many new and more developed forms, of life have appeared and also disappeared—each clearly distinct from the other.
- ii. Creations have not changed at all from their original forms

over periods of hundreds of millions and even billions of years. They have also not evolved into a higher and more complicated form of life.

- iii. Most of the fossils have not even been claimed to be the ancestors of a higher form of life in our modern times.
- iv. New creations of a higher order have been suddenly appearing at intervals without having any ancestors from which they could possibly have evolved.
- v. There was a time when there was *no "Universe"—an absolute nothing*. Then from where have the countless galaxies with their millions of stars, planets *etc.* been evolved? *Out of nothing? No! Surely Not! Every scientist knows fully well that each of these has had an individual beginning and after a period of time each of them will also come to an eventual end. They will not however continue to exist for ever and ever, continuously evolving themselves into some new, more complicated higher forms of existence. Most certainly not!*

These data thus not only destroy the very basis on which the theory of evolution had been propounded by Darwin, but rather they also clearly establish that, according to the findings of scientists, what in fact has been taking place is the sudden creation of many new species, followed by the total destruction of some of these species without leaving any evolved forms of a higher order of life even after the lapse of billions of years. Whereas the evidence of those species, who have not disappeared but have continued to remain in existence over periods of millions and even billions of years, have done so without any material change taking place or leading them into a higher form of life!

To understand why it is thus and what is the cause of it one should refer back to Chapter 16: C where it has been shown without doubt under the heading of: *"Is Allah only One?" that it is Allah, Who creates each and every thing individually and separately and gives to each a period of time to exist*, then He withdraws them according to His choice

some earlier and others later! *Because Allah is Eternal—Time or His scheme of how much life He gives to any one of His creatures is of no consequence to Him.*

## **2. The Creation of Adam**

The scientists are very much puzzled as to why the Neanderthal disappeared from the face of the earth so suddenly and completely a few thousand years before the advent of Adam, an entirely new creation which suddenly appeared on the scene, from where and how being unknown to the scientists, except for the fact that we are already here!

Was this the only case of one species disappearing suddenly and being replaced by a new variety? Or has this been repeatedly the case with other living vegetation's or animals also?

Researches show that some terrible cataclysms such as the Deluge, the Snow-age, sudden convulsions and upheavals of the earth's surface, or sudden alterations of conditions and other disasters have on numerous occasions in the past wiped out totally the reptiles, the mammals and several other forms of life on earth. As a result there is not a single living thing on the face of this earth, which is 50,000 years old, or even twenty-five thousand or even ten thousand years old!

The oldest living things on the face of the earth are trees. Speaking of the "Bristlecone Pine", the famous scientist Edmund Schulman said:

"Microscopic study of growth rings reveals that a bristlecone pine tree found last summer at nearly 10,000 feet began growing more than 4,300 years ago ... Many of its neighbours are nearly as old; we have now dated 17 bristlecone pines 4,000 years old or more" (Bristlecone Pine, Oldest Living Things by Edmund Schulman published on page 355, *The National Geographic Magazine* Vol. 113, No. 3, March 1958).

Dr Schulman was very much puzzled with the same approximate age limit of about 4,000 years of the Giant Sequoia trees, which he had studied. These trees enjoy near-perpetual life in the absence of gross

destruction. They even appear to be immune to insect attacks.

Because this is so, Dr. Schulman asked the following question as early as 1934:

Pertinent also is the well-known fact that standing snags of this species, other than those resulting from factors of gross destructions, are unknown. Does this mean that shortly preceding 3275 years ago (or 4000 years ago if John Muir's somewhat doubtful count was correct) all the then living giant Sequoias were wiped out by some Catastrophe?" (The article "Longevity Under Adversity in Conifers" by Edmund Schulman, page 399 of Vol. 119 of *Science*, published 26th March, 1934).

That is something to think about! Why is it that these various varieties of still-living trees, each about 4,000 years old seem to be the original trees that grew in their present stands?

One is tempted to ask the question: Did any terrible catastrophe occur which wiped out completely not only the entire animals and plants but even human lives just beyond the historical era *i.e.*, around 4,000/4300 years ago? Had something happened in the recent past to wipe out the old system of things then in existence and bring into being a new system? If it were so then it explains everything logically and scientifically.

The Holy Bible, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*, *Taskiratal Aulia*, the Qur'an and other religious books tell us that about 2370 B.C. or 4,341 years ago from today 1971 A.D., the Deluge drowned and destroyed all living forms of life including the entire human race except for those beings in Noah's Ark. This flood not only brought thick layers of clay, and mud from the sea beds and elsewhere but at the same time lava flowed out of the bowels of the earth—not as a stream as is now being experienced—but as a veritable fiery flood. It filled the valleys, burnt up the, forests, steamed out lakes and buried mountains and covered the earth with a new virgin layer of soil by effacing all signs of previous forms of life and vegetation, thereby giving a new start to many forms of animal and vegetable life on this earth.



“In western North America, the Columbia River basalts comprise more than 60,000 cubic miles of piled up lava sheets spread over a region considerably more than 100,000 square miles...” (page 96, “*Volcanoes as Landscape Forms*” by Charles A. Cotton published by Whitcombe & Tombs Ltd., Christchurch—2nd Ed).

This is just one example out of several that could be quoted from all over the face of the earth.

“A deluge such as that described in the Book of Genesis occurs in the legends and folklore of almost every ancient people ...

“Such agreement among the legends of so many peoples living in distant parts of the world has caused scholars in modern times to wonder *whether* mankind in truth experienced the worldwide catastrophe of a deluge”. (The article “The Changing Level of the Sea” by Rhodes W. Fairbridge appearing on page 70, Vol. 202, No. 5, May 1960 issue of *Scientific American*).

Do the findings and research of scientists support the fantastic world wide calamities of the great deluge? Here are a couple of quotations from different experts out of hundreds that could be quoted:

“We have gained from the mulch pits of the Yukon Valley a picture of *Quick Extinction*. The evidences there are as obvious as in the horror camps of (Hitler’s Nazi) Germany. *Such piles of bodies of animals and men simply do not occur by only ordinary means*” (page 170 of *The Lost Americans* by Dr. Frank C. Hibben the well-known professor of archaeology of the University of New Mexico published by Apollo, New York, 1961).

“We live in a Zoologically impoverished world, from which all the hugest, and fiercest and strangest forms have recently disappeared ... yet it is surely a marvellous fact, and one that has hardly been sufficiently dwelt upon, this sudden dying out of so many large Mammalia, not in one place only but over half the surface of the globe (according to findings and discoveries made upto 1876 A.D., since then the excavations show that this sudden disaster covers the whole face of the earth)” (page 150, Vol. 1, *Geographical Distribution of Animals* by Professor Alfred Russel Wallace

published by Hafner, New York, 1962),

This now clearly explains *Why* so many mammals became extinct. Noah only took representatives of various mammal groups—but certainly not every variety. We have, for example, certain species of elephants with us today—but not all the different species. The woolly mammoth and mastodon, relatives of the modern elephant, died in the deluge never to be replaced again. The representatives of elephants which Noah took on board his Ark have simply not diversified back into those earlier varieties which perished in that flood. Thus bringing home once again the findings of scientists that there is no such thing as evolution but in every case there is a creation! Allah the Individual One always makes His presence felt by creating only Ones as already proved in Chapter 16: C.

This also establishes *why* there is not a single living thing in existence, which is much more than about 4,000 or say about 4,300 years old!

Accordingly the sudden complete disappearance of Neanderthal, the prehistoric man, from the face of this earth just before the advent of Adam, a new creation must also have been due to some terrible world-wide catastrophe about 10,000 years ago. This must have been some catastrophe which was similar to the Deluge which took place about 4,341 years ago to exterminate mankind except for the family of Noah and those animals and birds in his Ark or the sudden world-wide extermination of reptiles and their replacement as equally suddenly by mammals as recorded by scientists here before.

When the human race started afresh from the three sons of Noah after the deluge, it is but natural that the basic races of mankind should only be three throughout the world—each tracing its origin to one or more of these sons of Noah. The very fact that it is so proves clearly that the three basic types of modern man also had their origin a little before 4,300 years ago!

- i. The fair-skinned Caucasoid and Archaic White being the

descendants of Shem.

- ii. The Yellow-skinned Mongoloid and American Indians being the children of Japhet.
- iii. The dark skinned Black Africans, Dravidian, and Hamites trace their origin to Ham.

Whilst on this subject let us consider such newspaper headlines as

“Evidence of 35,000-year-old human remains found”,

“Archaeologists uncovered ancient 20,000 years old artefact”,

“Mammoth hunts in Siberia 39,000 years ago?”

We are assured by these newspapers and magazine columns that man really has been on this earth for a long, long time. Yet shockingly enough, in many cases elaborate conclusions were based on very meagre facts.

The laboratories continued pouring out thousands of dates. Meanwhile, the average man was absolutely certain that science—chemistry and physics—had proved that relatively recent animal and human fossils were anywhere from 8,000 to 53,000 years old. One such date of 64,000 years B.C. was even given. But according to evidence on the scientific method of “Carbon-dating” these dates are only in the range of about 5,500 years old or less according to Dr. Willard F. Libby (Nobel Prize Winner in Chemistry in the year 1960).

When it is clear that man is not the only creature who has appeared suddenly on the scene but there are numerous other creations also who have similarly come about, we would now proceed to analyse what were the so incomparable differences between those whom the scientist called “pre-historic man” or Neanderthals and us.

Religious records show that Allah created the body of Adam. Then for the first time He ordered the immortal soul to enter it. Before this

incident, the immortal soul had never been asked to enter such a shell made out of dark clay. The immortal soul entered but came out immediately and placed a petition before Allah and said "O Lord! it is very dark and dismal inside. I feel stifled". Thereupon Allah ordered that *Nur-e-Muhammadi* be placed in the forehead of the body created for Adam. Thereafter the immortal soul of Adam was ordered to enter the body once again. It found the body beautifully illuminated inside by *Nur-e-Muhammadi* and with the greatest of joy, the immortal soul for the first time entered into a clay *i.e.* the lifeless form of Adam. Adam came to life instantly.

After some time Adam complained to the Lord that he was feeling lonely as there was nothing of a similar type of creation in the Garden of Eden with whom he could communicate.

That was so because the pre-historic Neanderthal or the nearest thing to modern man had already disappeared from the face of the earth some thousands of years earlier in some unknown catastrophe.

Therefore Eve was created by Allah out of one of the ribs of Adam. Hence they were both gifted with immortal souls inside their bodies (pages 59-90, Vol. 1, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

It would thus appear from the scientific discoveries that Modern Man or we ourselves have been in existence for just over 5,500 years and not 8,000 to 65,000 years as was supposed earlier.

All religious books tell us that Adam was created approximately 6,000 years ago. When both these independent sources *i.e.* science and religion give us identical information, can there any longer be any doubt about them? The answer should be an emphatic "No".

The Holy Bible confirms the above as follows:

"And the Lord God formed man of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life (*i.e.* the Immortal soul after placing the Logos in his forehead); and man became a living soul.

"And the Lord God said, It is not good that man should be alone; I

will make an help meet for him.

“And Adam gave names to all cattle, and to the fowl of the air, and to every beast of the field; but for Adam there was not found any help meet for him.

“And the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and He (God) took one of his (Adam’s) ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof;

“And (out of) the rib, which the Lord God had taken out of the man (Adam), made He a woman, and brought her unto the man.

“And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called woman, because she was taken out of Man” (Genesis 2:7, 18 and 20-23).

### **3. The Superiority of Man above Angels and Spirits**

The Qur’an gives the following additional information to that given in the Holy Bible:

“Lo! We (Allah) offered the charge (of keeping everything in order in accordance with the Laws of Allah) to (all types of spiritual creation in) the heavens (including Angels *etc.*) and the earth (i.e. the Animals) and the hills (*i.e.* nature), but they all shrank from bearing it and were afraid of it. And man assumed it ...” (Qur’an 333: 72).

*“And Man Assumed it”* is very significant! *Who was this man? Adam was not yet created, when this offer was made!* It was *Nur-e-Muhammadi* which was to come in the form of man. It was the essence through which the Universe was created! It knew Allah’s laws and could guide the Universe to the right path. It was the “Light of Guidance”. To follow him was goodness. It was for this reason that he became the guide of the Universe. Hence he was selected to be the “Khalifa” or viceroy of Allah on earth. This is referred to in the Qur’an as follows:

“And when thy Lord said unto the spiritual dwellers of Heaven<sup>5</sup>: Lo! I am about to place a “*Khalifa*” (*i.e.* Viceroy) in the earth, they said (through their spokesman and leader—Iblis): Wilt Thou place therein one, who will do harm therein, will shed blood, while we, we hymn Thy praise and sanctify Thee? He (Allah) said: Surely I know that which ye know not, (because I am going to send my Mahboob *i.e.* beloved Nur-e-Muhammadi or Logos as Rahmat-ul-lil-Aalameen or Comforter of the Universe amongst them).

“And He taught Adam (by breathing into him Nur-e-Muhammadi which already knew from much before) all the names, (*i.e.* the attributes or the wondrous qualities of Allah as it was the first thing that Allah created out of Himself and through which Allah had created the entire Universe), then (when He had breathed His spirit, *i.e.* Nur-e-Muhammadi) He (Allah) showed him (Adam) to the spiritual dwellers of Heaven saying: Inform Me of (My) names, if ye are truthful.

“They said: Be glorified! We have no knowledge save that which Thou hast taught us. Lo! Thou, only Thou art the Knower, the Wise.

“He (Allah) said: O Adam! Inform them (My) names, (immediately Adam recited the 101 glorious attributes or names of Allah to be found in the Qur’an), and when he had informed them the (101 glorious) names (of Allah, all dwellers of Heaven stood dumbfounded at the love and knowledge of Allah and His Divine Attributes as expressed through the means of Nur-e-Muhammadi by Adam, who had been created only a few minutes earlier). He (Allah) said: Did I not tell you that I know the *secret of the heavens and the earth*? And I know that which ye disclose and which ye hide” (Qur’an 2: 30-33).

Allah’s will is law. He has not to justify His actions to anyone because there is none to question His actions (Qur’an 21: 23). But Allah

---

<sup>5</sup> The Arabic word “Malaik” has been translated here with reference to the context as “spiritual dwellers of Heaven”, it included not only Angels but all types of spiritual forces including Genii, Fairies, and all forms of spirits throughout the universe.

nevertheless wanted to demonstrate to all the dwellers of heaven—the spiritual world—that even though they were created tens of thousands of years before Adam yet all their many tens of thousands of years of experience and knowledge was far less than the knowledge displayed by Adam after he was only a few minutes old!

#### 4. The two forces in man—Mortal and Immortal Souls

After Allah has shown by this practical example that a few minutes' worship by Adam is worth more than the tens of thousands of years of adoration put in by the dwellers of heaven, He ordered the spiritual world to pay their respects to and honour Adam as follows:

“And then We (Allah) said unto (all the) dwellers of Heaven: prostrate yourselves (the Arabic word “*Sajada*” used here means to salute, to pay respect and honour by prostrating—*Arabic-English Lexicon* by E.W. Lane. It however does not by any stretch of the imagination mean to worship Adam as Allah, the Creator of the Universe, as mischievously and deliberately misinterpreted by Iblis) before (the Nur-e-Muhammadi in the forehead of) Adam (who and whose children *i.e.* the various prophets will be my Khalifas or viceroys). They all (including angels, Jinns *i.e.* genii and fairies and all other types of spiritual dwellers of the Universe) fell prostrate (before Adam in an act of paying respect and honour to him for that is the meaning of the word *Sajada* in Arabic—see *Arabic- English Lexicon* by Edward William Lane—and not in an act of adoration of Adam as Allah), save Iblis (which is the name of Satan as given in the Qur'an. The Holy Bible has given the name of Satan as Lucifer. Hence Iblis and Lucifer are the same) ....” (Qur'an 2: 34).

“He (Allah) asked: O Iblis! What hindereth thee from falling prostrate (*i.e.* paying respect and honour) before that which I have created with both My hands? ...” (Qur'an 38: 76).

Now Allah has no “hands”. Hands always represent forces, so it must mean that man is the only creation which has with it two spiritual forces or “Nafs”. These are:

- a. “*Nafs Ammara*” or the “animal spirit”. All animals are blessed with this spirit or “mortal soul” including the tailless, hairless Apes or animals, whom the scientists call the “Prehistoric men”, which were in existence for at least 400,000 to 500,000 years Yet like all other animals they did not make the kind of the progress made by Adam and his children, but lived merely the lives of wild animals in forests and caves.
- b. “*Nafs Lawwama*” is the immortal soul or the “self-reproaching spirit” or conscience. The dwellers of the heaven are the spiritual forces. Amongst others they comprise Angels, Jinns (Genii), Fairies and various other spiritual forces. These are blessed with only this one type of spirit. They do not have anything to do with the lower forces of “*Nafs Ammara*” or the animal spirit, because they have no material body.

Therefore the children of Adam, are the only creations on earth who are blessed with both spiritual forces *i.e.* the mortal and immortal souls which even angels do not have. This has been confirmed repeatedly in the Qur’an. One example is quoted here:

“Verily We (Allah) have honoured the children of Adam (because Nur-e-Muhammadi will be coming as the Promised Prophet through whom the Universe would be blessed as a child from the descendants of Adam). We (Allah) carry them over the land and the sea, and have made provision of good things for them and *have preferred them above many of those whom We (Allah) have created with a marked preference (i.e. superior to Angels and the other Spiritual forces which have been preferred by Allah blessing them with immortal souls as against the mortal souls given to animals including the prehistoric animals called ‘Neanderthal’ whom scientists have ventured to call the ‘prehistoric man’ (Qur’an 17: 70).*

Hence the phrase “Both My Hands” means with two spiritual forces the mortal and immortal Souls!



## **b) Iblis becomes Satan**

Allah carries on His questioning of Iblis in the same sentence of the Qur'an (38: 76) as follows:

“Art thou (Iblis) too proud (because of your continuous adoration of Me, which had earned for you the leadership amongst the dwellers of Heaven) or art thou (thinking thyself to have reached the stage) of the high exalted (through your prayers to Me that you think you can advise Me that it is not right for Me to demand of all creation to honour My beloved by requesting them to pay respects and salute by bowing their heads before anyone else).

“He (Iblis) said: I am better than him (*i.e.* Adam because I have already put in many tens of thousands of years of service in your adoration. In any case my life is much longer than man's life so I am able to do incomparably greater service of adoration of You than he. Further, man will be the source of bloodshed and mischief on Earth. Whilst I serve Thee only and hymn Thy praise and sanctify Thee. Therefore I adore Thee alone and I wilt not bow my head before anyone but Thee, my Lord. I therefore refuse to bow before a mortal like Adam). Thou createdst me (in space *i.e.* free from materialism of the earth) of (a material free from “Nafs Ammara” hence free from the desire of sin *i.e.*) fire, whilst him thou didst create out of (dirty, black, altered) clay (which is the base material of Nafs Ammara or the animal spirit and which is the source and cause of all sins)” (Qur'an 38: 76-77).

“Iblis said: Shall I fall prostrate before (and adore as a God) that which Thou hast created of (dirty, black, altered) clay (or Thee the Creator of the entire Universe Who is the only One entitled to be worshipped and honoured, which is correct and better Oh! My Lord)?” (Qur'an: 37: 61).

“He (Allah) said: (If you refuse to pay respects to my beloved and salute him by bowing your head as ordered and you want deliberately to confuse it with the Divine Adoration due only to Me) then go down hence! It is not for thee to show pride here (and advise Me on what I, your Lord should do and what is right or wrong in

My Order to prostrate before My beloved Nur-e-Muhammadi in the forehead of Adam for the purpose of honouring and paying respects and saluting him whom I as Allah want to be honoured), go henceforth! Lo! Thou art of those degraded” (Qur’an 7: 13).

The fault of Satan was his refusal to bow before anybody but Allah. His confusion was over bowing down to pay respects to someone his superior as distinct from bowing down to worship Allah, the Creator of the Universe. His refusal to recognise the superiority of *Nur-e-Muhammadi* or *Logos* in the forehead of Adam. Allah had already shown by practical demonstration that a few minutes of association of Nur-e-Muhammadi with Adam had made Adam far superior to the many tens of thousands of years of knowledge and worship put in by the dwellers of heaven. Accordingly, the spiritual forces of the dwellers of heaven with only one “Nafs” or spiritual force were an inferior creation to that of Adam who had two “Nafs” or spiritual forces in them *i.e.* both the mortal and immortal souls!

Therefore the refusal of Iblis, an inferior creation, to bow before and pay respect to Adam a superior creation, who is being made the “*Khalifa*” or Viceroy of Allah amounted to showing of pride, arrogance, ignorance and refusal to obey Allah.

Thus Iblis (or Lucifer the name given to him in the Holy Bible) fell from his high exalted position of the elected leader of the spiritual universe to become *Satan* and in a flash became not only disgraced but also the accursed! He became an outcast—ostracized by the spiritual dwellers of the universe—because of his refusal to bow down and pay respects to Adam and the “Nur-e-Muhammadi” in Adam’s forehead and on account of his deliberate attempt to confuse the meaning of the word “*Sajada*”, which means to bow down to pay respects to a superior (see “Arabic-English Lexicon by Edward William Lane), as against the bowing down to worship and adore Allah—the only One entitled to such Divine worship.

## **5. The Differences between Prehistoric Men and Adam.**

Every *scientist* and “*materialist*” will confirm emphatically the amazing complexity of the animal brain. In the highest animals it is only very slightly less in quality as *compared to the human brain but more in size and comparative weight in some cases*

Scientists have discovered that each and every component found in the animal brain is also to be found in the human brain *viz.:-*

Medulla, Pons, midbrain

Central Hemispheres

Thalamus

Cerebellum and

Corpus Callosum.

All the functions of the various parts of the animal and human brains are identical and comprise:

Visual

Auditory

Sensory

Motor

Posterior Association cortex

Frontal Association cortex

The weight of the brains of the “*Capuchin monkey*” of South America is 5.7% of the total body weight as against that the human brain weighs about 1.8% of its body weight. *So the brain of the monkey is over 200% more than the human brain-weight/body-weight ratio.*

Now let us take the ratio (percentage) of intrinsic cortex to total cortex. This percentage is roughly 10% in rats, 50% in cats, 75% in monkeys, and 95% in men. Recent data indicate that the percentages of

intrinsic cortex in a whale and a dolphin are roughly the same as in a monkey. This means that the whale and the dolphin by weight have a *greater amount* of intrinsic cortex than man with very close to the same ratio.

Professor E.J. Slijpe in his research “Whales” reports that cetacean brain aside from its size, is remarkably similar to the human brain. He emphasises that cetacean cerebral cortex is exceptionally convoluted *just like* the human brain and extends so far back that in the common dolphin it completely covers the cerebellum at the rear of the cranial cavity again *just like* the human brain. Slijpe contends;

“these convolutions are not only very striking in appearance but are an essential criterion for judging the stage of development a given brain has reached”. He sums up his impression by asking, “Must we assume that porpoises, sperm whales and dolphins, by virtue of their highly developed brains have the capacity akin to those of men...”

Then according to scientific data do animals have a greater brain capacity? The indisputable answer must be—YES! Why, then, is the human mind so transcendently superior to the animal brain? Monkeys and gibbons have been in existence in Burma for the past 50 million years. When their brain is of similar material, quality and 200% larger in size than the brain of the modern man then one is indeed puzzled as to why have they, the monkeys and gibbons *etc.*, not acquired those mental qualities which have made us so very much superior to them in spite of all our mental-physical drawbacks when compared to the physical properties of the brain in animals *e.g.*:

Animal instinct causes new-born animals automatically, without any teaching or learning to do what they need to do!

— As against that —

*A new-born human baby, of itself is utterly helpless.* It is born with a *human brain—a blank mind* devoid of any knowledge whatsoever. It does not come equipped with the same kind of instinct as the new-born

animal! *On the contrary it must be taught—or learn—everything done by other human beings as he grows up!* Certainly not by inborn instinct as in the case of animals!

—Further—

The new-born calf is on all fours and walking in a few minutes—It is not taught to walk! *It walks by instinct* in order to fulfil a need for its mother's milk!

— As compared to —

The new-born human child *learns* or is *taught* to walk in about a Year! The human baby is *quite helpless* at birth and *must be fed* and in course of time even *taught to eat!*

It is a well-known fact that animal instinct is far superior to that found in human beings. A horse can hear and recognise his master's voice from even a mile away, similarly a dog will smell his master from a mile away and go running to him. A wolf would smell humans from as far as three miles! All of which is quite beyond human mental capacity.

These simple daily truths bring out very glaringly that at least as far as physical properties and instinct are concerned the animal brain is much better equipped to face the requirements of physical life than the human brain!

As seen earlier (Chapter 17: B, 1-2) our scientists have found out that for more than 400,000 years, probably at least half a million years, a prehistoric man whom we have named "Neanderthal" had been in existence with similar capabilities as the descendants of Adam.

In this long period of half a million years why did they not build skyscrapers like our Empire State Building, accomplish our Nuclear advance, our huge Hydro-electrical projects for irrigation, navigation and power, our wonderful feats such as space travel and landings upon the moon, our super tankers and bulk carriers with even 250,000 tons

capacity or more, which we the descendants of Adam have achieved in as little as about 6,000 years according to Biblical calculations, or in only 1/80th of the time that the pre-historic “Neanderthal” were in existence until about 10,000 years ago when they vanished from the face of the earth. *Why is their achievements similar to that of the monkeys and gibbons etc. in their 50 million years on this earth!*

Adam and Eve, when they were forgiven by Allah and completed their prayers at the Kaabah in Mecca (Chapter 7: H), domesticated animals, used them for ploughing, did cultivation, lit a fire, then used fire for cooking food, weaved wool into clothes *all this within a single day!* (Pages 97-98, Vol. 1, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Therefore *what Adam achieved in as little as a few hours the pre-historic man did not achieve in 500,000 years!* Hence there is that unimaginable difference for some mysterious reason unknown to scientists between the mental capacities of “Pre-historic Men” and the generations of Adam as there is between the human intelligence and the animal brain, in spite of all the superior physical qualities and instinct possessed by the animal brain which according to scientific findings is composed of similar matter, size, quality and capacity as the modern human brain. One is naturally quite puzzled *at the miserable failure of scientists to fathom* as to what could be the reason for this discrepancy? *What we achieved in a day they—the animals and the so-called pre-historic men—did not do even in 50 million or half a million years respectively!*

Where science and materialism fail, we do not have any option left but to turn towards something else. After all, science and materialism are not the “*be all and end all*” of our knowledge! *What should we then turn towards* to give us those answers that science and materialism cannot?

Religion gives us the solution—the indisputable answer is that the human mental capacity although physically and instinctively far inferior to the properties found in animals, has become incomparably

superior only due to the “Logos” or “Nur-e-Muhammadi”. The Prehistoric men were really animals with a mortal soul in them *as against the double soul blessed upon Man* owing to Nur-e-Muhammadi being placed in Adam’s forehead upon creation as read earlier in Chapter 17: B. 2-4. We are thus blessed with two spiritual forces which no other creation has—Nay! not even Angels and other forms of spirits—viz.:

- i. “*Nafs Ammara*” or the mortal animal soul covering the life of our bodies on earth and its termination upon death as in the case of animals. It is this soul which draws us towards materialism and base worldly things, lust and power.

—and—

- ii. “*Nafs Lawwama*” the immortal soul or the self-reproaching conscience as is in the case of Angels, Fairies, Genii and other spiritual forces. It is this force which draws us towards good things, love and higher spiritual achievements and surrender to the will of Allah as against our selfish desires.

This is the only reason for the incomparable differences between us and the animals including the so-called pre-historic man. All other things were basically, materially and scientifically the same, *in fact the physical powers and instinct in animals are physically far greater than in us—the human beings!*

The “Immortal Soul” is something spiritual. It is not composed of any kind of matter. It cannot be touched, seen, inspected, measured, weighed and chemically analysed. Therefore the materialist scientists are helpless! They cannot know anything about the human soul which is something quite beyond their sphere of research and knowledge—*hence their failure to explain why there is so much difference between the human mind and the animal brain* in spite of the latter being superior as far as physical properties and instinct is concerned!

The children of Adam are superior to the entire creation of

animals, including those the scientists have dubbed as the “Pre-historic Men” only because of the “Logos” or “Nur-e-Muhammadi”, which has made us far superior not only to animals as practically demonstrated hereabove but even superior to the world of spirits including the Angels as shown before (Chapter 17: B-3). Adam a few minutes old had clearly demonstrated that his knowledge and worship were far superior. Man is indeed the most unique creation in the entire universe as pointed out earlier from the Divine assertion made in the Qur’an! (Chapter 17: B-4).

It was for this reason that the Almighty Creator did not want to make the pre-historic man the ancestor of us, the superior creation, so Allah totally annihilated them in some worldwide catastrophe some 10,000 years ago according to the findings of scientists as recorded earlier, just as He has destroyed from time to time one type of creation then shortly thereafter replaced same with a totally new and more developed creation! *Never a case of evolution!*

“The extinction of species has been involved in the most gratuitous mystery. No one can have marvelled more than I have at the extinction of species” (page 341, *The Origin of Species* by Charles Darwin, published by Collier, New York 1962).

Because Allah is an individual one, He always creates individually not only each and every type of creation but even each and every individual person, place and created being, as shown in Chapter 16: C. He has never permitted and will never allow evolution as admitted even by scientists in Chapter 17: B-1 and 2.

Thus not only was Adam created afresh but even his mate Eve had to be created out of the rib of Adam as not even a single male or female species of the so-called “Prehistoric Men” were to be had to fill in the gap for either Adam or for Eve!

Therefore the creation of Adam and Eve was something quite unique and apart from that prehistoric animal which might have looked like man and had similar brain capacities but yet achieved



nothing worth the mention during his half a million years on earth until he disappeared some 10,000 years ago.

Hence the ill-informed theories on the evolution of man from prehistoric man are nothing but misconceptions even according to the findings of expert anthropologists. Otherwise we would be having those vast differences between the white, the black and the yellow races if each of the three basic types of mankind had developed through a process of evolution out of at least three if not more different species of pre-historic men as exist between the monkey, the ape, the bear *etc.*, that any one species from the so-called same common ancestor cannot cohabit with, and reproduce from the other species supposed to be, as repeatedly pointed out earlier, belonging to the same origin from which they are supposed to have evolved (Chapter 17: B, 1-2) if there is such a thing as evolution and not creation.

This vast superiority of man over any other known creation unfortunately makes mankind very proud. Because he knows that *he knows Man is indeed unique*. Those who do not believe in religion or are of a scientific bent of mind do not normally realise that this difference is *due to the immortal soul* or the blessings of the Logos or Nur-e-Muhammadi, which was placed in Adam's forehead upon his creation. He commonly refers to it as the "*Mind*"—*The human mind*—which is of an immense capacity, able to comprehend the inter-relationships of space, time and energy. The human mind has made it possible for us to visit the moon! It can write poetry, paint portraits and make all the scientific discoveries that have brought about so much comfort in our daily lives.

Yet, unfortunately, the same phenomenally unrestrained human mind in spite of all its complexity, intricacy and foresight cannot solve its own problems on earth. One is tempted to ask—*why is it thus?* As a matter of fact it was the human mind which created all the problems in the first place.

*What an incredible paradox!*

*The human mind—so great and yet so helpless—Why?*

Man does not know the way to peace—but he is blazing new trails to war. Worldwide well-being eludes him—as the explosions of population and pollution engulf him. Happiness is the well-worn platitude—but disillusionment and despondency are the commonplace reality. Love is all too often a joke and hatred is the brutal truth. The human race is sitting on a time bomb that looks like it's going to explode. And soon!

Man is a phenomenal creature. But he has reached the end of his rope—his moment of truth has come, his time is nearly up. No longer can we waste the little time we may have left by playing the role of the “cool” philosopher—as if we were uninvolved bystanders! No longer can we nonchalantly and condescendingly assume that this problem is insoluble. We have no choice but seriously to consider it.

Man seems bent on self-extermination! But is this logical? Does it make sense in the “great scheme of things” for the human mind to obliterate itself?

*The human mind—so great and yet so helpless—Why?*

*We need an answer Now!* It is to meet this challenge—*Life or Death for Humanity*—that this thesis has been compiled for *men of Good will*.

All our trouble seems to be due to our “*Pride*” that we are the *superior being* and what we conjecture with our limited and insufficient materialistic and scientific knowledge is good enough and that there is no need for us to look towards the “Logos” or “Nur-e-Muhammad” for spiritual and religious guidance—We think we know too much materially and scientifically!! *But in reality in matters concerning our wellbeing and spiritual upliftment we know too little*

Satan made the same mistake of “*Pride upon his achievements*”. He too felt there was no necessity for the spiritual guidance of the “Logos”. But alas! what a terrible fall he had! From the position of the *elected leader* of the entire universe—the spiritual dwellers—to Satan the

accursed. Does this incident not shock our conscience into realising that after all spiritualism and religion are something? At least something worth studying?

Are we not making the same mistake and heading for our own disaster by not realising why Allah created us? When the Almighty has given us two souls we have to use both of them. If we neglect any one of these two gifts then are we not showing ingratitude towards our Creator, and do we not deserve a punishment for such a criminal wastage of a very valuable and useful faculty—the immortal soul?

For example, if we were not to develop the material force in us then we would grow up being inferior to animals *i.e.* we would not know even how to eat or walk because a human child is born with a blank mind as against which the animals know these by instinct. If we do not develop our faculties and acquire knowledge then we could never survive under such conditions, *e.g.*: of not knowing how even to feed ourselves!

Similarly if we do not develop our Spiritual faculty, which is the superior of the two “*Nafs*” in us, then we would not only continue to be inferior to the other Spirits like Angels *etc.*, but we would also prepare such materialistic contraptions like *Nuclear weapons* as would destroy us from the face of the earth! That is precisely what we have been doing for our annihilation! It is all due to our failure to utilise the *Spiritual force* which has been gifted to us and which when developed would make us superior to all creation! So, for our safety we have to try and advance on the spiritual path shown by the “Logos” or “Nur-e-Muhammadi”. We must respond to the call of *our conscience—the immortal soul* and must surrender to the Will of our Maker—“*Thy will be done on Earth as it is in Heaven*”.

This is beautifully brought out by “Nur-e-Muhammadi” when he came on earth as the Prophet Muhammad. He has made it clear in one of the earliest Divine Revelations at Mecca as follows:

“(Allah promised) by the fig (the fig over here refers to Adam and Eve the first man and his wife when they had committed their first disobedience in The Garden of Eden which made Eve pregnant with Cain and thus made them realise their nakedness so “they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons”—Genesis 3: 7, hence this promise made by Allah is about something relating to the generations from Adam and Eve which came about as a result of the said disobedience *i.e.* the human race, see Chapter 20 for further details) and by the Olive (the olive over here refers to the branch with leaves of the olive brought back by the dove when sent out on the second occasion by Noah from his Ark—Genesis 8: 11—after the great deluge which destroyed mankind from the earth except Noah and his three sons and their wives. Hence this reference is to that promise made by Allah which is something relating to the generations of mankind that have come about from the three sons of Noah, *i.e.* the present human race).

“(Allah further promises) by Mount Sinai (this refers to the revelation of the first book of Divine Laws bestowed upon mankind at Mount Sinai through the great prophet Moses—hence it is again a reference to something concerning mankind).

“And by this city (*i.e.* the city of Mecca where this revelation is made) made safe (this allusion is to the campaign of Abrahah, the Abyssinian ruler of Al-Yemen against Mecca, with the purpose of destroying the Kaabah—the Temple of Allah—in the year of the birth of Prophet Muhammad at Mecca *i.e.* 570 A.D. when the people of Mecca had fled away in despair to the surrounding hills saying to the attackers. “You have come to *destroy* “*Bait-ullah*”. *Since it is the House of Allah let Him defend it*”, and how Allah had sent a swarm of flying creatures called “Ababil” which destroyed the entire invading army and thus saved Mecca miraculously as read earlier—Chapter 8: G).

“Certainly We (Allah) created man with the best potential (so that he can attain the highest position amongst the entire creation if he strives to follow the path of both worldly and Spiritual enlightenment as taught by Nur-e-Muhammadi).

“But We (Allah created man not only with a blank human mind with no knowledge at birth and without any natural power of instinct as in the case of animals but also as an absolutely helpless babe *i.e.*) reduced him to (a position which is even) lower than the lowest creation.

“Except those who (as they grew up learnt to) believe and do good works, and theirs is a reward unfailing.

“So henceforth who will give you the lie concerning (this above description of how Allah creates mankind as ignorant and helpless but with faculties to develop into the highest creation if he should try and) about (His wisdom and) judgment (in creating mankind in this very peculiar manner)?

“Is not Allah the wisest of all (planners *i.e.*) judges (to decide how to make each and every creation an absolutely different way)?” (Qur’an 45: 1-8).

Thus “Nur-e-Muhammadi” or Logos has made it clear that if we want the continuity of mankind on earth we have to adopt the religious, spiritual way of life side by side with our scientific progress as against our present lop-sided progress in only scientific material objectives minus spiritualism which is miserably failing us in our hour of need and which could easily have been avoided by the spiritual development of our immortal soul. Then instead of hatred, distrust, fear and wars we could have had universal love, brotherhood, goodwill and cooperation amongst all men.

Here is another interesting warning:

“Closer and closer to mankind comes (the day of) their *Reckoning*, yet they heed not but instead turn away (heedlessly from the Reckoning).

“Whenever there comes to them a renewed reminder from their Lord, they never listen to it except (for the purpose) of making a jest (or a joke of it).

“Their hearts toying with (such) trifles, the wrong-doers hold secret counsel...

“Say: My Lord knoweth what is spoken (publicly or in secrecy) in the heaven and the earth. He is the Hearer, the Knower.

“(As for those who were wicked) before them, not one of the populations which We (Allah) destroyed (by The Deluge, and at Sodom, Gomorrah, Pompeii, Babylon *etc.*) believed, would they (the wicked) then believe (in the warnings of the coming of Armageddon during which all the wicked on earth will be destroyed)? (Most certainly they will not)!

“Then We (Allah) fulfilled the promise unto them. We (Allah) saved (the good amongst) them and whomsoever We (Allah) pleased (to save) and We (Allah) destroyed the prodigals (the wicked).

“Certainly We (Allah) have revealed to you a Scripture, wherein is a Reminder for you (mankind). Have you then no sense?

“How many were the populations, which dealt unjustly, have We (Allah) destroyed completely and in their stead raised up another people! (Have you then no fear that it can be repeated upon you *i.e.* the present civilisation destroyed at Armageddon).

“Yet, when they felt our Punishment (was coming), behold (how) they (tried to) flee from it (without any success).

“(But when they could not escape) they said, Ah! woe to us! We were indeed wrong-doers!

“And they ceased not from their lamentations till We (Allah) made them cut off (from the people on earth), extinct!

“We (Allah) did not create the heaven and the earth and all that is between them in play (but rather Allah created everything for a specified purpose—that mankind obeys Him).

“If We (Allah) had wished to find a pastime, We (Allah) could have found it in Our presence—If We (Allah) was ever desirous of it (rather than make this universe)!

“Nay but We (Allah) hurl the truth against falsehood, so that it knocks out its brains, and behold falsehood vanishes! Ah! woe to you for what you have faith in (such as Nuclear Umbrella for protection during the coming Nuclear Holocaust) besides (Allah).

“Unto Him (Allah) belongs whosoever is in the heavens and the earth. And those who are with Him (Allah) are not too proud to serve Him (Allah), nor do they grow weary.

“They glorify (Allah) by night and day and they are never languid.

“He (Allah) will not be questioned (by anyone) as to what He (Allah) did, but they (mankind) will be surely questioned (by Allah as to what they did)” (Qur’an 21: 1-4, 6, 9-12, 14-20 and 23).

Let us realise it very well, that whether we like it or not a religious spiritual system of life—a *new civilisation based upon religion*—**where wars would be a thing of the past and weapons of war destroyed**—is in any case going to be established and that also very soon—*Make no mistake about it, Armageddon* is just round the corner! Its terrors and devastations, according to the Holy Bible and other authoritative records, are described later in this treatise. To ignore them is to sign the **death warrant of the human race.**

Here is a warning from the last of the Divine Scriptures:

“(Allah promises) by the time of *Asar* (“*Asar*” is the time just before Sunset which marks the termination of the day. Hence this reference is to the time of the Battle of Armageddon when the present civilisation will come to an end and a new civilisation commence in which wars will become a thing of the past and weapons of war will be destroyed).

“Lo! man is in a state of loss (*i.e.* man will be destroyed at the Battle of Armageddon).

“Save those who believe (in surrender to the Will of Allah as taught by Nur-e-Muhammadi) and do good works, and exhort one another to the truth and exhort one another to perseverance” (Qur’an 53: 1-3).

We have already wasted too much time due to the failure of the Church to disclose "*The Prophecy of Fatima*" which Jesus had ordered to be disclosed in 1960! This is also quoted later on (Chapter 26: B). *We are already late by 11 years!* If we want to save ourselves from doom *now is the chance* for mankind to look upon the "Logos", the promised Comforter, for that spiritual guidance of love and goodwill towards all mankind, which our materialistic science has utterly failed in providing!

Jesus has advised as follows:

"But *the Comforter which is the Holy Ghost*, whom the Father will send in my name, *he shall teach you all things* and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you" (St. John 14:26).

*"I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.*

*"Howbeit when the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you unto all truth; for he shall not speak of himself, but whatsoever he shall hear that shall he speak and he will show you things to come"* (St. John 16: 12-13).

*"For Moses truly said unto the (fore-) fathers (of the Jews), A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren (i.e. the children of Ishmael, who is the elder brother of Isaac the fore-father of both Jews and Jesus), like unto me (i.e. one who will speak face to face with Allah as Moses had done which none other had done except the Prophet of Islam, the descendant of Ishmael); him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.*

*"And it shall come to pass. (after the lapse of some time), that every soul, which will not hear that Prophet, shall be destroyed (at the Battle of Armageddon) from among the people (on earth)"* (Acts 3: 22-23).

If we can crush our selfish desire for domination and superiority over others—the under developed nations and coloured races—and surrender to the teachings of the Logos, the Spirit of Truth, we can still



have an universal brotherhood amongst all people irrespective of caste, colour or race and without any distinction for the rich or poor as is being practically demonstrated year after year for years 1,400 now and on each such occasion by not just one or two or a few but by millions of people from all the four corners of the earth and that also for months together when they go for the pilgrimage of Haj to the Temple of Allah at Mecca. Here indeed is food for our thought of how universal love and brotherhood can still be established! To ignore it is to invite our own destruction—the annihilation of mankind on earth!

Scientific World—Whither bound?

To

Self Destruction!

or

Universal Peace!!

How?

## **6. What the “Logos” did for Civilisation of mankind**

Just as the “Logos” was responsible for the chasm between the “Prehistoric Man” and Adam by civilising him, and between the spiritual forces and mankind so also was there a wide gap between man from the time of Adam till the birth of Muhammad who was the Logos or Nur-e-Muhammadi himself, and the period thereafter.

When Nur-e-Muhammadi came on earth as the Promised Prophet mankind everywhere had fallen into such depths of ignorance that it threatened the very existence of man. Europe was in the midst of her *Dark Ages*. *Arabia was even worse off!*

The Promised Prophet Muhammad, the Holy Spirit, the Light of Truth came and guided mankind to “Al Islam” or “Surrender to the Will of the Almighty Creator, without any scope for distinctions of caste, colour, creed, languages or nationality”. He started a force of universal love, unity and brotherhood. He thus laid the foundations for Allah’s Kingdom on Earth—”Thy will be done on Earth as it is in

Heaven”.

The extent to which mankind progressed and developed in thirty years after Muhammad passed away from earthly life, was not achieved by the children of Adam in the 4,500 years before his time. Thus Islam educated the ignorant people of the earth from the shores of the Atlantic to China in such a way as to provide security, rights of woman, basis for abolition of slavery by giving everybody equal rights, and freedom of speech, freedom from fear, the protection of the weak, and social democracy. This was followed by a period of three hundred years in which the greatest philosophers, artists, mathematicians; scientists and educationalists were able to shine out from Islam and instruct Europe whilst she was still in her Dark Ages. Since then man has continued this progress initiated by Prophet Muhammad, the Logos. For example, what man has achieved in the past couple of centuries is greater than what had been accomplished in the previous 6,000 years. This progress is still continuing day by day with more impressive discoveries and scientific achievements. All this is thanks to Nur-e-Muhammadi coming on earth as the final Promised Prophet!

Thus Muhammad, the Logos, taught for the first time since the advent of Man that the sun, the moon, the heavens, the rivers, the hills, the seas, the earth and all elements in them are not only subservient to man, but are also for man's benefit, comfort, upliftment and service. The Qur'an also confirms repeatedly these teachings. One example is quoted hereunder:

“Allah is He, Who created the heavens and the earth, and causeth water to descend from the sky, thereby producing fruits as food for you, and maketh the ships to be of service unto you (for trading, fishing and acquiring food and carrying cargoes), that they may stay afloat (to run) upon the sea at His command, and hath made of service unto you the rivers (of water, Oil and underground natural gas and the underground veins of metals, coal, ores, and chemicals);

“And hath made the sun and the moon, constant in their courses, as so to be of service unto you and hath made of service unto you

the night and the day” (Qur’an 14: 32-33).

These teachings thus removed the fear that man had for the elements—the fear that compelled man to worship the sun, the moon, the stars, the twelve apostolic constellations of the Zodiac, *etc.*, as propagated by King Nimrod.

Thus it was the Logos in the form of the Holy Prophet Muhammad that encouraged the study of the elements and promoted scientific and mathematical developments by his preachings (Hadith.) such as:

“Seek knowledge from thy cradle to thy grave”.

“Verily I heard the prophet Muhammad say: That person who shall pursue the path of knowledge, Allah will direct him to the path of Paradise; and verily the superiority of the learned man over an ignorant worshipper is like that of the full moon over all the stars”.

“If you have to go as far as the extremes of china in search of knowledge, then go”.

For Education under Islam please refer to Chapter 15: M.

These messages of encouragement and counsel of the Holy Spirit, the Light of Truth, caused Muslims to develop new plants, fruits, colours, fashions in dress, designs of houses, new types of architecture, sugar cane and the manufacture of sugar, spices, lemons, apricots, melons, cotton, muslin, damask, lilac and purple. Thus developed the manufacture and use of glass, glass mirrors, the mariners’ compasses, gun-powder, cotton-paper, writing paper, leather and iron goods, the simple numerals 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, and O, higher mathematics, “Al-geber-Aa” (which means in Arabic the vowels) or Algebra, medicines and many other feats of art and science. Universities were started for teaching not only different subjects but also culture and even manners.

Just as one candle lights another and does not become less in its brightness but on the other hand increases the light in places where there was darkness before, so also was the case with Nur-e-Muhammadi or the Light of Muhammad. The Holy Bible has described him as:

“In him was life (of man from the creation of Adam) and the life was the light of (guidance for) men.

“And the light (of the Logos or the Word of God) shineth in darkness and the darkness comprehended it not” (St. John 1: 4-5).

The *Dark Ages* of Europe had set in as a result of the curse of Allah because of the burning in 325 A.D. of the Original Evangel of Jesus in Hebrew Aramaic Script by Emperor St. Constantine, the second Nero. The European Nations were given by Allah an opportunity to rekindle their extinguished torch with the “Light of Logos” by bringing them into very close contact with this light or “Al Islam” from July 1099 A.D., the date of the capture of Jerusalem by the Crusaders to 1187 A.D. when Jerusalem was restored to “Al Islam” or the forces of the Light of Logos, as also the contact of Europe with Spain under Islam for about 800 years.

It was from these contacts with this Light of Logos that the torch of Europe was relighted. From here they learnt about all the progress that Islam had made in the various fields. Thus it was from Islam’s Universities, both in the Middle East and Spain, that the present-day scientific progress, culture and education have collie about in Europe. This is corroborated by several European Scientists. As an example, let us point to just one contribution in the field of chemistry from page 12 of “*An Elementary Chemistry*” by Eric John Holm-yard, M.A., M.Sc., D. Litt., F.I.C., published by Edward Arnold (Publishers) Ltd., London, 3rd Edition Reprint 1957:

“Fortunately, in the seventh century of our era, an event occurred that caused the theoretical and the practical sides to be brought together, and thus the Science of chemistry was set upon a firm footing. This event was the rise of Muhammadanism, or, to give its proper name, Islam. Arabia has been inhabited from time immemorial by wandering tribes of Bedouin, and up to the beginning of the seventh century they had all been idolaters and were continually fighting with one another. The Prophet MUHAMMAD, however preached the One God to them, and

converted them from their idolatrous practices. In their enthusiasm for this new religion they forgot their feuds with one another, and became welded into a strong and united nation. After the Prophet's death, they set out on a war of conquest (against ignorance and illiteracy), and very soon the banners of Islam were floating over all the countries surrounding the Mediterranean, from the Atlantic Ocean to the River Indus.

"When the Muslim conquerors had settled down, they started to encourage learning as much as they possibly could. Trains of camels were sent to Constantinople and other towns to bring back to Baghdad all the books and manuscripts that could be procured, and the Caliphs founded colleges and observatories, libraries and hospitals all over the Empire. In this zeal for learning, chemistry was not forgotten but the Muslims were in the happy position of being able to use both the Greek wisdom and the practical arts of ancient Egypt, for they soon established themselves in the latter country.

"It was in Spain that the Muslims came into closest contact with Western Europe. During the time that they were in possession of the country (711-1492), their Universities were the best in the World, and European students used to flock to Cordova and Toledo and other towns to learn from the Muslim professors. When they had learnt what they could they were naturally anxious to pass on their knowledge to their fellow-countrymen, and so they began translating books of all kinds from Arabic into Latin.

"One of these translators, an Englishman, *ROBERT OF CHESTER*, performed a double service: he not only translated the chief Arabic work on Algebra, and thus introduced this branch of mathematics to Europe, but he also translated a book on chemistry. This was the first book on Chemistry to appear in an European tongue, and the translation of it was finished on February 11, 1144. More translations followed and soon European scholars were able to make progress by themselves".

Victor Robinson on page 164 of "*The Story of Medicine*" has recorded:

“Europe was darkened at sunset, Cordova shone with public lamps; Europe was dirty, Cordova built a thousand baths; Europe was covered with vermin, Cordova changed its undergarments daily; Europe lay in mud, Cordova’s streets were paved; Europe’s palaces had smoke holes in the ceiling, Cordova’s arabesques were exquisite; Europe’s nobility could not sign its name, Cordova’s children went to school; Europe’s monks could not read the baptismal service, Cordova’s teachers created a library of Alexandrian dimensions”.

Hartwing Hirschfeld, Ph.D., M.R.A.S., has stated on page 9 of “*New Researches into the Composition and Exegesis of the Qur’an*” published in 1902 in London:

*“We must not be surprised to find the Qur’an the fountain-head of the sciences. Every subject connected with the heaven or earth, human life, commerce and various trades are occasionally touched upon, and this gave rise to the production of numerous monographs forming commentaries on parts of the holy book. In this way the Qur’an was responsible for great discussions, and to it was indirectly due the marvellous development of all branches of science in the Muslim world ... This again not only affected the Arabs but also induced Jewish Philosophers to treat metaphysical and religious questions after Arab methods. Finally, the way in which Christian scholasticism was fertilised by Arabian theosophy need not be further discussed.*

“Spiritual activity once aroused within Islamic bounds was not confined to theological speculations alone. Acquaintance with the philosophical, mathematical, astronomical and medical writings of the Greeks led to the pursuance of these studies. In the descriptive revelations Muhammad repeatedly calls attention to the movement of the heavenly bodies, as parts of the miracles of Allah forced into the service of man and therefore not to be worshipped. How successfully Muslim people of all races pursued the study of astronomy is shown by the fact that for centuries they were its principal supporter. Even now many Arabic names of stars and technical terms are in use. Medieval astronomers in Europe were pupils of the Arabs.

“In the same manner the Qur’an gave an impetus to medical studies and recommended the contemplation and study of nature in general”.

The fact that Western Civilisation did not turn to the teachings of “*Surrender to the Will of Allah*” or “*Al Islam*” shows clearly that the European Nations took advantage of only the scientific and material development caused by the light of learning spread by the Holy Spirit—Muhammad. They however ignored completely the religious doctrines of Muhammad. Hence their scientific knowledge, without the backing of the spiritual or the religious aspects has made them prepare such Nuclear Weapons, which when used will destroy thousands of millions of us and reduce the Hiroshima and Nagasaki Atom Bomb catastrophies into complete insignificance in the light of the holocaust to come about during a third world war which can only be avoided by—“*Surrender to the Will and Purpose of Allah*”.

The Prophet Muhammad has made the following prediction about the Anti-Christ, who will be annihilated eventually at Armageddon:

“When Dajjal (*i.e.* Anti-Christ) appears, his complexion will be white and his right eye will be blind, while the left eye will shine like a bright star”.

First of all, generally speaking, the Jews and the European Group of nations are the nations with white complexions. The mention that the right eye will be blind could logically be interpreted to mean not the physical blindness but spiritual blindness with no thought of life beyond the grave, and the left eye shining like a bright star then should imply that they will discover all kinds of earthly treasures, comfort and luxury to such an extent that their spiritual life will be neglected completely by them. On various occasions the Prophet had said that men’s right side represents goodness and the left side stands for evil. Therefore the brightness of the left eye stands for love of life and luxury, which will divert man from the right path, and take him towards eternal failure. The Qur’an records:

“On the day (of judgment) when We (Allah) shall summon all men with their records. Whosoever is given his book (of record of what deeds have been done during his life on earth) in the right-hand—such will read their book (with joy) and they will not suffer any kind of harm (or punishment).

“Whoever is blind in this world will also be blind in the Hereafter and yet further from the (right) road” (Qur’an 17: 71-72).

Another foretelling of Muhammad states:

“On his (Dajjal’s) forehead will be written the letters Kaf-Fae-Rae (which when read together is “Kafir” meaning disbeliever). Every Muslim will be able to read this whether literate or illiterate”.

The above words are metaphorical in so far as saying that only believing Muslims will be able to read what is written on Dajjal’s forehead, whether they are literate or illiterate.

Today’s Christendom according to the findings of The Watch Tower Bible Society, as referred to earlier, represents the religion of Nimrod of Babylon and his blasphemous teachings of “only begotten son of God.”

Every Muslim, however illiterate he may be, knows perfectly well that anybody calling a human being “the only begotten son of God” is a disbeliever in the absolute oneness of Allah *i.e.* a “Kafir”. Hence the contention that every believing Muslim would be able to read and understand the word “Kafir” written on the Dajjal’s forehead even when illiterate!

The Holy Bible also states that the army of the Anti-Christ at the Battle of Armageddon will have the “mark of the beast” on its forehead and that this represents the religion of Babylon:

“And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army.

“And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had



received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone” (Revelation 19: 19-20).

“And upon her forehead was a name written, Mystery, Babylon The Great, The Mother of Harlots and Abominations of The Earth.

“And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of martyrs...” (Revelation 17: 5-6).

Now let our Jewish and Christian brethren meditate upon the warnings given by the Lord in their respective Holy Books. One quotation from each are given hereunder for ready reference:-

### **The Torah**

“I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren (*i.e.* not the Jews but from the children of the brethren race to the Jews *viz:* the children of Ishmael), like unto thee (Moses, who will speak face to face with God just like one speaks to his friend—Exodus 33: 11), and (I) will put My words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him (*i.e.* Al Qur’an).

“And it shall come to pass (after a lapse of sometime at the Battle of Armageddon), that whosoever will not hearken unto My words which he shall speak in My name, I will require *it* of him (*i.e.* destroy such)” (Deuteronomy 18: 18-19).

### **The New Testament**

“For Moses truly said unto the (fore-) fathers. A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren (tribe of Ishmael) like unto me (Moses, who will speak face to face with God); him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.

“And it shall come to pass that (after a lapse of sometime at the Battle of Armageddon) every soul, which will not hear that (Promised) Prophet, shall be destroyed (by God) from among the people (on this earth).

“Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these days” (Acts 3: 22-24).

When the first sin of Adam and Eve was forgiven only for the sake of this Nur-e-Muhammadi, then the whole world can also hope for forgiveness also from this source, the “Rahmat ul Lil Aalaameen” or the Blessing or Comforter of the entire Universe, provided it will accept his teachings of “AL ISLAM” *i.e.* “Surrender to the Will of Allah”, as foretold by Jesus in The Gospel-of Barnabas (Chapter 13: B). If not, then the people stand to be condemned just as Satan has been in spite of his continuous adoration of the One and Only God now for over many tens of thousands of years (Chapter 20: A)! Nothing is going to be accepted unless and until they discard what they are believing in and follow; “Whatsoever he shall say unto you” and if they refuse to do so then *they shall be destroyed by God from amongst the people on this earth in the eventual great Battle of Armageddon according to both the Torah and the Holy Bible quoted here above.*

Thus the choice before the Scientific Materialistic world is:

- i. Either surrender to the teachings of Nur-e-Muhammadi!
- or
- ii. Be destroyed in Nuclear Holocausts ending in the Battle of Armageddon!!

*Think and act before the disasters befall! It is in your hands to save yourselves by obedience or await destruction owing to your pride and foolhardiness as was the case of not only Satan and Nimrod but also of mankind during the Deluge then Sodom, Gomorrah etc.!*

O people of the earth, awake from your complacency of what you and your forefathers have been believing in as good enough! Nothing will save you from the Biblical warning of destruction until you, “Surrender yourselves to His Will” *i.e.* “AL ISLAM”, which is in any case going to be brought about as described in the last part of this book

whether any one likes it or not, *by the Saint Saviour assisted by the Real Jesus, the Jesus, who is the begotten son of a human being—a young virgin—Mary*, hence not “the only begotten son of an imaginary god” as blasphemed by King Nimrod, the mighty hunter in rebellion against God, and followed by all religions not from a divine source but from Nimrod, the accursed. Thus would be fulfilled the Biblical Prophecy of the establishment of Allah’s kingdom on Earth after the Great Battle of Armageddon.

*You are hereby warned!*

*Beware* of the coming destruction of mankind during the Nuclear world wars which have been prophesied!

The only way in which this can be averted has also been foretold in Chapter 2: 1, whilst, the coming events and disasters have been vividly described in Chapter 23 to Chapter 30.

### **C. The Beloved of Allah and his name**

Let us all take a look at some of the old foretellings and the sacred scriptures of the different religions, as to who could possibly be the beloved of the Creator of the Universe and his name?

One would be completely dumb-founded with amazement if he were to find that each one of them have given the very same name even though from entirely different sources.

If such identical information is possible from numerous unconnected authorities, they would certainly lead one to the conclusion that the same must be authentic hence irrefutable.

Now let us carefully examine a few of the numerous records that could be adduced.

### 1. The Beloved of Allah according to Astrology

Jamaseph the great astrologer of Persia and one of the head magi has recorded in his works known as “Jamaseph Nama” or the records of Jamaseph:

- i. He predicted the birth of Prophet Muhammad (see page 5, Second part of Silver Jubilee—1945-1970—issue of Jyotish Chayan, published at Calcutta on 21.1.1972).
- ii. He has also predicted that a descendant of this Prophet of Arabia will bring the whole world to the religion of “Surrender to the Will of the Creator” as taught by his ancestor when weapons of war would be destroyed and Universal peace and brotherhood established (Chapter 24: B).

### 2. The Beloved of Allah according to Sikh Scriptures

Baba Guru Nanak, who is the acknowledged founder of the Sikh Community and who is also recognised and revered by the Sindhi Hindu Community, has preached as follows:

“Pakh Padho Qalima Rab da Muhammad nal milaye

“Ho Ya mashuk Khuda yeda ho ya Yallah” (page 141, Bhai Bala’s Janam Sakhi).

*Translation:*

“O Pious People! Recite the Qalima of the Creator adding to it the name of Muhammad.

“Who is the beloved of God by dedicating his very self to Allah”.

### 3. The Beloved of Allah according to Hindu Scriptures

Vyasa is recognised by the Hindus as a Maha-rishi *i.e.* a learned divine. He was a very pious, God-fearing and pure-hearted man He was the man who arranged the Vedas under the various heads. He also wrote a valuable book on mysticism. The Gita and the Maha Bharata too were

the productions of his masterly pen. But his greatest compilation is the eighteen volumes of Puranas. Famous among the Puranas is a book known as “Bhavishya Purana” in which the Maha-rishi makes a wonderful survey of the coming events. It is called “Bhavishya” because it gives an account of the future. The Hindus regard it as the “*Word of God*” and at par with the Vedas.

The copy of the “Bhavishya Purana”, from which the undermentioned prophecies are quoted was printed in the Venkateswar Press at Bombay. We give below the English Translation of the Sanskrit text from Prati Sarg Parv III: 3, 5-8:

“A malechha, *i.e.* a great spiritual teacher, will appear (after many centuries) with his companions. His name will be Muhammad”.

He has further foretold in this passage that a Hindu King or Raja of the time, when Muhammad would be alive, will pay homage to Muhammad as follows:

“A Raja (from India) after giving this Maha Dev Arab (*i.e.* this Arab who is greatly loved by God) a bath in the ‘Panchgavya’ and the Ganges water, offered him the presents of his sincere devotion and showing him all reverence said, ‘I make obeisance to thee’. ‘O ye! the pride of mankind, the dweller in Arabia, Ye have collected a great force to kill the Devil and you yourself have been protected from the malechha’s opponents’. O Ye! the image (*i.e.* the most beloved) of the Most Pious God, the biggest Lord, I am a slave to thee, take me as one lying on thy feet”.

It very strangely so happened, according to the foretellings in “Bhavishya Purana” that there was an Indian Ruler in the days of Muhammad. He was the raja of the town of Dhar near the river Chambal in Malwa Plateau on the Western side of Central India. His, name was Bhoj. Upon seeing the miracle of “The Splitting of the Moon into two halves”, he sent his sacred offerings to Muhammad of Arabia and became a Muslim (see Chapter 17: F-6 for greater details).

#### 4. The Beloved of Allah from the Book of Moses and Joshua

The following was revealed by a Jewish Scribe to Jesus as recorded on pages 427-429 of *"The Gospel of Barnabas"*:

"The scribe then said: 'Pardon me, for I have sinned'.

"Said Jesus: 'God pardon thee; for against Him hast thou sinned'.

"Whereupon said the scribe: 'I have seen an old book written by the hand of Moses and Joshua (he who made the sun stand still as thou hast done), servants and prophets of God, which book is the true book of Moses. Therein is written that Ishmael is the father of the Messiah, and Isaac the father of the messenger of the Messiah. And thus saith the book, that Moses said "Lord God of Israel, Mighty and Merciful, manifest to Thy servant the splendour of Thy Glory". Whereupon God showed him His messenger in the arms of Ishmael, and Ishmael in the arms of Abraham. Nigh to Ishmael stood Isaac, in whose arms was a child, who with his finger pointed to the messenger of God saying: "This is he for whom God hath created all things".

"Whereupon Moses cried out with joy: "O Ishmael, thou hast in thine arms all the world, and paradise! Be mindful of me, God's servant, that I may find grace in God's sight by means of thy son, for whom God hath made all".

"In that book it is not found that God eateth the flesh of cattle or sheep; *in that book it is not found that God hath locked up His mercy in Israel alone, but rather that God hath mercy on every man that seeketh God His Creator in truth.*"

"All of this book I was not able to read, because the high priest, in whose library I was, forbade me ..."

"*Then said Jesus: 'See that thou never again keep back the truth, because in the faith of the Messiah God shall give salvation to man, and without it shall none be saved'.*"

## **5. The Beloved of Allah by Jesus**

Jesus has disclosed the following facts regarding the beloved of Allah in “*The Gospel of Barnabas*”:

- a. His name will be Muhammad (pages 89, 91, 97, 105, 129, 225, 227, 319, 381 and 487).
- b. The very first thing that God created was the Soul of Muhammad (page 91).
- c. God kept the Soul of Muhammad for 60,000 years in Celestial Splendour before he created anything (page 91).
- d. Everything that has been created is for the sake of Muhammad (pages 91, 225).
- e. Whosoever will bless Muhammad will be blessed by God, whosoever will curse Muhammad will be accursed (page 227).
- f. All the earlier prophets from Adam till Jesus became prophets only because of Muhammad (page 105).
- g. The mission of Jesus was to inform the Jews as well as the world of the coming of Muhammad the Messenger of God (page 167).
- h. Blessed is the time when Muhammad will come on earth (pages 91, 105).
- i. Idols all over the earth will fall down upon the birth of Muhammad and when lifted would speak like human beings announcing the birth of Muhammad (page 169).
- j. Muhammad will come on earth as the Messenger of Salvation (page 227).
- k. There will be no more prophets born after Muhammad (page 225).
- l. Muhammad will be born South of the land of Israel (page 223).
- m. A white cloud would give shade over him whenever he would go out under the open skies and that he would be recognised by this sign (page 167).
- n. Destroyer of idolatry and idols (pages 167, 223).
- o. Jesus informs that even though the heaven and the earth shall

fail but the faith taught by Muhammad shall never fail (page 227),

- p. On the day of Judgment all prophets from Adam to Jesus will place themselves under the protection of Muhammad (page 129). And every one shall be blessed due to and through Muhammad (page 131).

## 6. The Beloved of Allah according to the Holy Bible

From Chapter 13 on “The Mission of Holy Jesus” it has been shown repeatedly that the Jews, the Nazarenes and even the Christians had a complete description to the very minutest details of the Promised Prophet. The question therefore is:

How did they come to know of it?

The answer must be found in the several passages of the Holy Bible. Let us examine hereunder one such passage from The Old Testament—Hebrew text with English translation, printed in 1950 in London for the British & Foreign Bible Society pages 1158 and 1159, verses 8 to 16 being Chapter V of the Song of Solomon. This passage is addressed to the Jewish world in general and the women of Jerusalem or mothers of the Jewish race in particular as under:

### *Original Hebrew text transliterated*

8. Hishbati Athkhem beynoth  
Yerushalayeem eem thimseoo  
eth dodi ma thagidu lo sheholat  
ababa ahi.

9. Mah dodex meedoth hyafa  
banasheem mah dodex nieedoth  
shekakha hishbathanu.

### *Translation into English*

8. I (Allah) charge (lay a burden upon) you, O daughters of Jerusalem (or mothers of the Jewish race), if ye find my beloved, that ye tell him that I am sick (out) of love (for him *i.e.* I am deeply in love with him).

9. (Allah said) what is thy beloved (the Jewish race and their prophets) more than (in



comparison to My) another beloved (who is much higher), O thou fairest amongst women? (Then the people of Jerusalem ask the Lord who or) what is Thy beloved (who is) more than the other beloved (*i.e.* the chosen Jewish people), that Thou (Allah) does so charge (burden) us (with the responsibility of honouring him when we find him)?

10. Dodi sha weadom daghul  
Merbaba

10. (Allah replied) My beloved is white and ruddy, the chieftest among ten thousand (*i.e.* if he is in a group of people as many as ten thousand, he would be seen by all towering above them all. And that he would be the commander-in-chief of the army of ten thousand saints who would capture ‘Bait Ullah’ or the House of Allah at Mecca which Muhammad actually achieved in 630 A.D. without even a fight— See Chapter 17: E-21 for this information from the Torah).

11. Rosho kethem paz  
kewoosothaw thaithaleem  
shehoroth Kaoreb.

11. His head is as the most fine gold (due to Nur-e-Muhammadi shining in his fore head), his locks are bushy (*i.e.* copious) and black as a raven.

12. Alhow keyoneem al-afikhay  
mayeem rohasoth behalab  
yosheboth al-melaath.

13. Lehaya kaarughat haboshem  
meghadeloth merkhaheem  
shifthothaw shoshaueem  
nothefoth mor ober.

14. Yadow getelell zahab  
memolaeem batharsheem meaw  
aesheth shaae meoolafath  
sapeereem.

15. Shokaw amoodey shesh  
meyoosadeem al-adneypaz  
mareywho Kalebanon batur  
kaarazeem.

12. His eyes are as the eyes of  
doves by the rivers of waters,  
washed with milk, and fitly set.

13. His cheeks are (covered with  
beard which appears) as a bed  
(sheet made) of spices (having an  
aroma) as sweet flowers: his lips  
like (petals of) lilies, dropping  
sweet smelling myrrh.

14. His hands are (so perfect in  
shape) as (if moulded out of)  
gold rings (with fingers) set with  
(nails like) the beryl: his belly is  
as bright ivory overlaid with (a  
cluster of) sapphires (*i.e.* on his  
fine white body would be the Seal  
of Prophethood looking, like a  
cluster of Sapphires).

15. His legs are as pillars of  
marble set upon sockets of fine  
gold; his countenance is as the  
shining full moon (The faces of  
the women of Lebanon are very  
beautiful. Hence the full moon in  
its glory is referred to meta-  
phorically as "Lebanon" as in this  
Hebrew Text, which I have  
translated as the shining full  
moon) and (he stands up)  
excellent (*i.e.* majestically) as the  
Cedars.

16. Hikor mumeythakeem  
 “Weykhoolo Mahamadeem” Zey’  
 dodi weyzey rayee beynoth  
 Yerushalayeem.

16. His mouth is most sweet: Yea  
 he is called<sup>6</sup> Mahamad This is My  
 beloved, and this is My friend, O  
 daughters of Jerusalem (declares  
 Allah).

From this Biblical passage one gets the following minute details of the “Beloved of the Creator” viz:-

- i. He will be called “*Mahamad*” i.e. Muhammad.
- ii. He is the beloved and friend of Allah,
- iii. He is more important than the Jews, the chosen people of Allah and all the Jewish Prophets put together.
- iv. The followers of the Jewish Prophets i.e. including Jesus are ordered to honour him, when he comes, because *Allah is deeply in love with him*.
- v. It is a fact that Muhammad’s colour of skin was white with a reddish tint.
- vi. “Nur-e-Muhammadi” or the “Logos” was shining in his forehead like shining fine gold.
- vii. Muhammad’s hair was copious and jet black in colour.
- viii. The Biblical descriptions of the eyes also fit in exactly with those of the Holy Prophet Muhammad.
- ix. It is a fact that not only his beard but his whole body had a sweet aroma. It was due to this wonderful fragrance that people could say easily that the Holy Prophet Muhammad had either passed this way a little while earlier, or that he was coming this way or he was in this house.
- x. The poetical description of the lips like petals of lilies also fits in correctly.
- xi. From the mouth of the Holy Prophet Muhammad came out

---

<sup>6</sup> Forgers of the Holy Bible with a view to suppress the name Muhammad and misguide the world have deliberately mistranslated the above quoted Hebrew Text: “Yea he is called Mahamad” with “Yea he is altogether lovely”.

the following:

- a. Whenever he was in a state of trance—the Holy Qur'an, the blessings and guidance of mankind.
  - b. When he spoke everybody present would miraculously hear him just as clearly as those sitting near him or far away from him. There was no difference even when there were crowds of tens of thousands. No loudspeakers were there!
  - c. Those few who did not speak Arabic well would miraculously hear all that he was saying in their their own mother tongues, even though the Holy Prophet was speaking in Arabic!
  - d. Whenever he gave any advice or spoke publicly it always gave one the impression of the love with which a mother would sweetly try and explain to her son. Hence the poetical phrase in the Bible "his lips like petals of lilies, dropping sweet smelling myrrh".
- xii. Whenever the Holy Prophet appeared he would always look miraculously a head taller than those around him. This applied whether he was with a short or tall person. In crowds of tens of thousands also he would always seem a head taller than the crowd and all would be able to see him from wherever they were (pages 39-40, Vol. I. *Minhajun Nabuwat*).
  - xiii. He was the commander-in-chief of the army of 10,000 saintly persons who in 630 A.D. captured Bait-Ullah or the House of Allah at Mecca even without a fight as foretold in the Holy Bible.
  - xiv. The description of his hands, fingers, nails, legs, neck, the majestic manner in which he would stand erect as given in the above passages all describe to the very minutest details the Holy Prophet Muhammad.
  - xv. That the seal of prophethood on his body was like a cluster of Sapphires set on a white ivory background is also true.
  - xvi. His face would glow with radiance just like the full moon

shining in all its glory.

After such perfect description appearing in several passages of the Holy Bible, it is indeed small wonder when one reads that the Holy Prophet Muhammad was recognised by the Jews and the Nazarene followers of Jesus, just as easily as they would be able to recognise their own sons!

## **7. Conclusions on the Beloved of Allah**

Let us for a moment place the quotations of Baba Guru Nanak (Chapter 17: C-2) before a Sikh, what would be his natural reaction? He will exclaim in surprise that he was unaware of the fact that Muhammad is the beloved of Allah according to the teachings of Baba Guru Nanak!

Suppose you confront a Hindu with the quotations from their sacred scriptures (Chapter 17: C-3). He will very rightly declare that if these truths were known to the Indian Public, then the British Government could never have succeeded in their policy of “Divide and rule”, nor would there have been the necessity, upon our getting our independence, to partition Hindustan into India and Pakistan, and all the disasters, communal riots and wars that have taken place on this sub-continent, which were so cleverly planned by our past rulers so as to leave us economically weak and force us to spend our meagre resources upon armaments, thereby preventing the people of the sub-continent of India from developing into one of the mighty and powerful trading nations of the world! We can still get out of this vicious trap by spreading this knowledge in India, that Muhammad is the Beloved of Allah according to Hindu Scriptures and thus creating love and goodwill with Pakistan.

If you bring to the notice of any Jew the original teachings of Moses and Joshua (Chapter 17: C-4) and the Hebrew texts of the Holy Bible (Chapter 17: C-6) he will feel terribly upset as to why the Rabbis and the Scribes have been suppressing such vital truths, which if made public would not only end the entire Middle East conflict between

Israel and the Arab countries but would also bond them all into a common brotherhood for the joint benefit of all of them, thus reducing the chances of the Third World War! *After all, both sides are the children of the same patriarch—Abraham!*

Similarly every European and American would realise *that if the doctrines of the Real Jesus dictated during his life as shown herebefore were not suppressed* then there would not have been those wars, the crusades, the persecution of Christians by Christians, the Christians breaking up into numerous sects and the driving away of a large section of them into Communism!

For example the suppression in this century of the original teachings of Jesus of Nazareth—“*The Gospel of Barnabas*” which was translated into English by Lonsdale and Laura Ragg and published by Clarendon Press, Oxford in 1907—has already made the Americans and the Europeans—Christians on both sides—to fight the two world wars! Now the suppression of “*The Prophecy of Fatima*” since 1960 is going to lead them to their destruction in Armageddon!

These glaring facts bring home very vividly the warning given by the Almighty in the Holy Bible:

*“Babylon hath been a golden cup in the LORD’S hand that made all the earth drunken; the nations have drunken of her wine; therefore the nations are mad”* (Jeremiah 51: 7).

Indeed how very intoxicating is the *magical spell* of Nimrod, the mighty hunter in rebellion against God (Genesis 10: 9), *even after all these 4,000 years! That curse of God on mankind at the Tower of Babel* (Genesis 11: 6-9) *is still haunting the modern world with disaster after disaster yet how unfortunately millions of people are still persisting blindly in their deliberate suppression of the truth as if they were under a spell of intoxication!* Yet they do not realise this basic fact in spite of all their modern advancement and knowledge—*Indeed how very shocking!*

## **D. Birth of The Holy Promised Prophet**

### **1. The martyrdom of Prophet John**

The forerunner to Jesus of Nazereth, the son of the Virgin Mary, was the prophet John, son of Zakariah. He was beheaded by Jewish King Herod, the Tetrarch of Galilee (St. Matt. 14: 3-11).

### **2. The Prophecy by Jesus on the birth of the father of the Promised Prophet**

The Prophet John's body was buried by his disciples (St. Matt. 14:12). They tried to wash the blood-stained clothes but the blood-stains would not be washed away. Because Jesus was one of the disciples of Prophet John, they went and reported the matter to Jesus (St. Matt. 14:12). Jesus foretold that these blood-stains would not come off the clothes until the date of the birth of the father of the Promised Prophet. On this day the blood would become fresh and by itself flow off the clothes miraculously leaving them pure white! On the date of the birth of Abdulla, the father of Muhammad, the Jewish Elders in Syria saw the blood-stains become fresh and drip off miraculously from the prophet John's preserved blood-stained clothes until they became pure white. Thereupon some of the learned Jews came from Palestine and Syria to Mecca to enquire about this new born child. When they saw the Nur-e-Muhammadi on the forehead of the child Abdulla, they recognised him and said this is "Nur-e-Muhammadi" of the Promised Prophet, who is not Abdulla. Hence they realised that Abdulla was going to be the father of the Promised Prophet as foretold by Jesus in relation to the blood-stained clothes of John, the son of Zakariah (pages 10 and 12 of *Ahsan-Ul-Muwaiz* in Urdu by Maulana Md. Ebrahim Qadri Dehelvi, published by Qutubkhana Rashidiah, Urdu Bazar, Juma Masjid, Delhi).

### 3. The Jewish attempt to murder the father of the Promised Prophet

The Jews, who were famous for murdering their prophets, decided to send an armed band of 90 persons from Syria to kill Abdulla. This incident took place when Abdulla had grown up into a young man, but before he got married. Thus they conspired to prevent the birth of the Promised Prophet Muhammad, so as to ensure that the prophethood, which had for so long been amongst the children of Isaac (*i.e.* the Jews) may not get transferred to the children of Ishmael *i.e.* their brethren tribe as foretold repeatedly in the Holy Bible (Deuteronomy 18: 18-19; Acts. 3: 21-25).

One day these Jewish assassins got their golden opportunity Abdulla had gone out hunting alone in one of the surrounding areas. Wahb bin Abdul Munaf, his would-be father-in-law was also out hunting on that day. He saw from a distance that Abdulla was “suddenly encircled on all sides by 90 armed men with drawn swords all proceeding to attack the defenceless Abdulla. His men and he rushed to the rescue. *But before they could even take a few steps he saw that a number of horsemen came down from the sky. These slew all the 90 Israeli attackers. Abdulla was saved even before assistance could reach him.* Wahb bin Abdul Munaf then took Abdulla from amongst the pile of 90 Jewish corpses to his brother Abdul Muttaleb, the father of Abdulla. After relating the incident he proposed that his nephew Abdulla be married to his young daughter Amena. Accordingly they were married. The very night of their marriage, the “Nur-e-Muhammadi” went from the forehead of Abdulla into the forehead of Amena. This was Friday the 12th of the Lunar month of Jamadi-Us-Sani (page 8, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Shortly after Abdulla left for Yathrib (now known as Madinah). He did not return because he died on the return journey.



#### **4. The visit of Angels and Earlier Prophets to the pregnant mother foretelling that her child would be the Promised Prophet**

Amena informed the household members that she was often being visited by angels and the previous prophets who announced that the child in her womb was Muhammad, the Promised Prophet, through whom the world would be blessed. They thought that perhaps some evil spirits might be appearing to Amena so just a few days before the birth, they chained her up, so that the hand-cuffs and the chains made of iron would act as charms to ward off the evil spirits. That night she beheld an aged man come to her. He touched the iron of the handcuffs and chains and they broke and fell away from her neck and hands and she became free. She asked him who he was. The old man replied that he was "Ibrahim Khalil Ullah" *i.e.* Prophet Abraham, the friend of Allah (Chapter 6: F; 8: B and I). He said Allah had ordered him to sacrifice Ishmael, who was then his one and only son. At that point of time he had no news of any more children or grand-children. Therefore he had taken Ishmael to sacrifice him on mount Monah in accordance with Allah's orders. Ishmael however was saved miraculously and a ram killed instead (Chapter 7: F). When this happened and his beloved Ishmael was saved, he had prayed to the Creator that this child be blessed with the Promised Prophet through whom the world would be blessed and which Allah had accepted (Chapter 7: F and G-1, 4, 7-8). This promise of Allah was now going to be fulfilled when the child in Amena's womb was born.

Genesis 22: 18 confirms this:

"And in thy seed (through this one and only child Ishmael) shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed My voice" (Chapter 7: F and G-7-8).

Abraham then said to Amena:

"The child now in your womb whose name will be Muhammad is the only prophet from the descendants of my first son and heir Ishmael" (pages 17-18, *Ahsan Ul Muwaiz*).

Abraham explained that the reason for the visit of angels to her and the earlier prophets were due to the fact that she was to be the mother of the Promised Prophet. Thus Amena became the third woman in the whole of creation to receive direct visits of Angels. The first was her ancestral grand-mother Princess Hagar of Egypt, the second wife of Abraham. (Chapter 7: B and C). The second was the Virgin Mary, the mother of Jesus (Chapter 10: I).

### **5. The Birth of Muhammad (May Allah bless him)**

Amena stated that as soon as the labour pains of child-birth started, an angel came and asked her to drink from a cup in his hand. This drink was whiter than milk and sweeter than honey. As soon as she drank this heavenly drink her pain disappeared and all fear left her (pages 43-44, Vol. II, *Ajaibul Kasas*).

Amena then saw the gates of Heaven open. The angels came down for the adoration of the new babe. Three angels went towards the Kaabah. One angel stayed over the Kaabah, one went to the East and the other towards the west. A light then spread out lighting up the universe. In this miraculous light, Amena stated, she could see distinctly the palaces of Palestine and Syria (pages 18-19, *Ahsan Ul Muwaiz*).

Then four unknown ladies appeared miraculously before Amena to attend to the child birth (pages 43-44, Vol. II, *Ajaibul Kasas*).

The first, who was very tall, said, she was Eve, the mother of mankind.

The second was Sarah, the mother of Prophet Isaac, and grandmother of Jacob whose children were the Israelites, to pave the way for the forgiveness of Jews if they followed this child.

The third was Princess Hagar of Egypt, the mother of Prophet Prince Ishmael. She came, with Otto (a sweet-smelling essence) from heaven, to express her love for this great grandchild from her

descendants which fulfilled Allah's promise to her husband Prophet Abraham : "the world would be blessed through thy seed" (Genesis 22: 18).

The fourth was Queen Asiya, daughter of Mazahim. She was the wife of the Pharaoh of the time of Moses. She was that queen of Egypt, who brought up Moses from a little child when he was found floating in the basket on the river Nile. She was the first person in the Pharaoh's court who believed in Allah upon seeing how the small miraculous snake made by the staff of Moses ate up the bigger snakes of the Egyptian magicians. Whereupon the enraged Pharaoh tortured her severely but in spite of this she refused to give up her faith. Eventually the Pharaoh had her publicly stripped naked and thrown into the fire, thus allowing her to wear the glories of a martyr's crown. This treatment was also given to those magicians, who had converted to the truth taught by Moses upon seeing how the small snake made by the staff of Moses miraculously ate up the larger magical snakes.

In the hands of these four great nurses was Muhammad born with his foreskin already circumcised miraculously, with his navel cord already separated miraculously from his mother's body and his body miraculously pure and clean without any kind of blood or filth on it (pages 10-13, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). Thus was Muhammad born on Monday the 12th of the lunar month of Rabi-ul-Awwal at dawn, *i.e.* the time between the end of the night and the commencement of daylight, 53 lunar years before Hijrah and corresponds to the 20th April 570 A.D.

Immediately upon birth the child Muhammad miraculously did prostration to Allah and recited miraculously in a clear voice with his right hand index finger raised miraculously as if in the act of giving evidence (page 13, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*) and said the following words:

"Ash-hadu an la ilaaha il lal lahu Anna Muhammadur Rasulallah;

"Ya Rabbe habli Ummati".

*Translation:*

“I give evidence that none is worthy of divine worship except Allah, I am Muhammad, the messenger of Allah.

“O Sustainer (of the Universe) bless me (and) those who follow me”.

At once Allah spoke to His beloved as one speaks face to face with his friend and replied:

*Translation from the Arabic:*

“I have blessed you and those who follow you. O Angels, be ye witnesses of the fact that when he has not forgotten his followers upon his birth then how can he forget them on the day of Judgment” (page 44, Vol. II, *Ajaibal Kassas*).

After the adoration of Allah and giving evidence of His Oneness, the child Muhammad picked up miraculously a handful of earth from the ground in his tiny fist. When this incident was related to Abu Lahab (the Uncle of the Holy Prophet), he foretold that one day this child would become the ruler of this world (page 20, Vol. I, *Ahsan Ul Muwaiz*).

Three angels appeared. One of them took a seal and marked the right shoulder and handed over the child to the mother (page 13, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). A voice announced “Ruler of the whole Universe, the Universe is your slave” (page 13, Vol. II, of *ibid*). This is nothing but a repetition of the following Biblical foretelling, which was fulfilled here at the time of the birth of Muhammad:

“For unto us (*i.e.* for our salvation) a child is born, unto us (*i.e.* for our salvation) a son is given: and the government (of the entire universe) shall be upon his shoulder (also interpreted as the seal of Prophethood will be upon his shoulder) and his name shall be called Ahmed Muhammad...” (Isaiah 9: 6).

When Amena looked upon the face of the child it was shining like a full moon and perfume of the finest otto was coming from the body

(page 21, Vol. I, *Ahsan Ul Muwaiz*) as foretold in The Song of Solomon 5: 8-16 (Chapter 17: C-6).

A white cloud then appeared inexplicably and covered him and took him away saying:

“O animals on the face of the earth, fishes in the seas, and the trees remember the name of this child and recognise him well. He has combined in himself all the wonderful and good qualities that were in all the prophets that have come on earth from Adam to Jesus. When the cloud returned and replaced the child; he was clothed in green silk” (page 13, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

## **6. Incidents experienced by Abdul Muttaleb at the time of the Birth of Muhammad**

Abdul Muttaleb, the grandfather of Muhammad, and some other Meccans were at the Kaabah at this early hour before dawn. All of a sudden they were surprised to see the walls of the Kaabah bow miraculously before “Mukam-e-Ebrahim” or the “Station of Abraham” a construction near the Kaabah, where Abraham had stood and prayed during building the Kaabah (Chapter 7: H). Then miraculously the Kaabah spoke as follows:

(Translation from the Arabic): “*Allah is the Greatest, Allah is the Greatest, He is the sustainer of Muhammad, who will purify the Kaabah from idols and idolatry and restore it to (its honoured position of) the House of Allah. Amena has just given birth to this child*”. Abdul Muttaleb hearing the walls of the Kaabah talk and seeing all the idols fall ran home to verify if his daughter-in-law had given birth to a child. He did not find Nur-e-Muhammadi shining in Amena’s forehead. He knew the child was born so he asked Amena: “Please show me, where is my grandchild”. *Amena replied that Muhammad was in the next room but nobody could see him for three days, as the angels and the dwellers of heaven were paying homage to the child*. Abdul Muttaleb tried to force his way into that room but he was confronted by an angel with a drawn sword, who

told the grandfather not to advance any further and that he could not see the child until the spiritual dwellers of heaven had completed their adoration. *Abdul Muttaleb wanted to tell the Meccans but he was struck dumb strangely for three days just as Zakariah had been struck dumb at the time of the birth of his son Prophet John* (St. Luke 1: 57-63). So Abdul Muttaleb could not tell anybody for three days about the miraculous bowing of the Kaabah and the adoration of his grandchild by the inhabitants of heaven (page 14, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

## 7. Incidents at Kaabah at the Time of the Birth

There were a number of people at the Kaabah at the time of the birth of Muhammad, when all the idols fell prostrate. Prominent amongst them were:

Warken bin Naufal

Zaid bin Omar Nafil

Osman bin Habiras

These three picked up and erected the fallen idols. But the idols again fell down on their faces. They propped them up again but the idols collapsed for a third time.

Osman bin Habiras said to his companions that something very serious must have happened, causing the idols to fall repeatedly. In reply the idols recited miraculously in Arabic poetry the following:

(Translation from the Arabic):

*"We idols (all over the earth) have fallen down to bow to a child just born whose light has lit the universe from East to West. All idols all over the world have fallen* (at the exact time of the birth of this child i.e. the Promised Prophet Muhammad), with a view to honour this child! Emperors of the earth have been frightened tonight. The Emperor of Persia was grief stricken and (the Magi) fire quenched. Stopped forever is the heavenly information by which the Jinns (Genii) used to foretell. O! Children of Quassa (Quassa was that

descendant of Ishmael from whom came many of the leading families of Mecca including both the parents of the Holy Prophet Muhammad) leave aside idolatry and come towards Islam, that ye may become owners of the garden of eternal bliss”.

All these three were amazed by the poetry recited miraculously by the idols (page 25, *Ahasan Ul Muwaiz*).

*These idols remained prostrate on the floor for a full twenty four hours. No amount of effort to refit them throughout the world were successful.* It was only on the next day that they were refitted. This was witnessed by many thousands not only at Mecca but also elsewhere.

After three days Abdul Muttaleb took his grandchild to the Kaabah and named him Muhammad (page 13, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

As soon as this child was taken to the Kaabah for the naming ceremony the four corners of the walls of the Kaabah miraculously spoke and declared:

(Translation from the Arabic):

*“There is none worthy of divine worship except Allah and Muhammad is the seal of Prophethood”* (page 47, Vol. II, *Ajaibal Kassar*).

## **8. Incidents in Persia at the time of the Birth of Muhammad**

At the date and time of the birth of the Holy Prophet Muhammad the following miracles took place:

- a. The fire in the Magi temple of the Zoroastrians which had been alight for thousands of years, became quenched for the first time in recorded history. It had always burned ever since it was lit in the days of King Nimrod.
- b. Fourteen towers of the Royal-palace of Nausherwan, the Emperor of Persia, broke and fell.
- c. The famous stone on which the fabulous throne of Persia was

kept, cracked.

- d. The deep and fast flowing river Sawa in the Persian Empire dried up instantly.
- e. The River Samawa in the Persian Empire which had been dry for the past thousand years or more started flowing immediately.
- f. The Tower of the Palace on the river Tigris, which was so strongly built that nothing could damage it for hundreds of years, broke and fell to the amazement of all without any logical reason.
- g. Emperor Nausherwan had a dream that very night in which he saw Arabian camels drag away the Iranian horses across the Tigris and spread themselves throughout Persia.

Nausherwan was very much frightened and grief stricken at all these portents and asked for their interpretation. He was told that a child had been born in Arabia, whose followers would overrun Persia and convert his people to this child's religion during the reign of the fourteenth king of Persia from him (pages 22-23, *Ahsan Ul Muwaiz*).

This was fulfilled when the forces of Islam during the period of Omar bin Khattab, the second Khalifa, defeated the Persian threat during the reign of Yesjerd, the fourteenth king from Nausherwan in the year 31 A. H. (page 12, Vol. II. *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

## **9. Incidents in Yemen at the time of the Birth of Muhammad**

There lived at Yemen a man named Amer, who was praying with his wife before an idol.

At the time of the birth of Muhammad he saw miraculously a "Nur" or "Spirit of Light" spreading light from East to West and from North to South. In this light he saw the gates of Heaven open. Many angels descended, prostrating themselves. In this light he saw the trees and the hills also prostrating themselves. Then the idol in front of him fell on its face. As he went to lift the idol it spoke:



*“The Promised Prophet, who was being looked forward to for hundreds of years has just been born. The trees and the stones shall speak with him. For his sake the moon will be split into two”.*

So surprised was Amer that he asked his wife: “Did you hear what I heard”. She answered: “Yes, but, please ask the idol where this child has been born and what his name is”.

The idol informed them that this child’s name was Muhammad Mustafa and he had been born at Mecca and gave a full description of him as “Nur-e-Muhammadi” through whom the universe would be blessed.

Amer had a deformed daughter. She was also seeing and hearing all that was taking place. She prayed aloud “*O Allah in the name of this Muhammad, who is just born, I pray that I be cured*”. At once she was cured completely.

So impressed were they all at this miracle performed by merely taking his name that the family journeyed to Mecca to pay homage to this holy child. They traced Abdul Muttaleb the grandfather of Muhammad and asked him to show them this wondrous child Muhammad. On seeing his marvellous face, Amer bowed before the child and collapsed out of joy and died on the spot. Thus Amer was honoured as the first martyr out of love for Muhammad (pages 23-24, *Ahsan Ul Muwaiz*).

## **10. Universal Celebration on the Birth of Muhammad**

Not only did the angels of heaven, the trees and the mountains celebrate the birth of Muhammad as is evident from the incidents of Amer of Yemen given herebefore, but all animals also celebrated on the night of the birth of Muhammad. This is evident from the recordings on page 14 of “*Ahsan Ul Muwaiz*”. In fact the whole universe rejoiced at his birth.

## 11. The Roman Emperor

The Roman Emperor Justin II was frightened and alarmed on the date of the birth of Muhammad. Because when he went into the Royal Chapel to pray on that morning he was very much surprised to find that the beautiful statue of Jesus Christ had very strangely come out of its firm base and was lying on the ground. It reminded him of the foretellings of Jesus that on the date of the birth of the Promised Prophet all idols all over the world would fall down (page 169, *Gospel of Barnabas*). As he lifted up the idol of Christ it spoke and again fell on its face onto the floor and declared:

- a. A child had been born with his foreskin circumcised miraculously.
- b. This child would be the greatest personage to come on earth and he would be from amongst the circumcised people.
- c. This Baby was not from a Jewish family but from the brethren of the Jews, *i.e.* a tribe which was related by blood to the Jews!
- d. He would be a destroyer of idols and lay the foundations for the destruction of idolatry.
- e. Those who would not listen to his teachings would be losers in this earth and in the hereafter.
- f. That he would be the light of learning, which would be the cause of filling the earth with wisdom and knowledge and removing the darkness of ignorance.
- g. Those who followed him would be assured of eternal bliss in Heaven.
- h. If the Roman Emperor of that time would not pay heed to his invitation then the Roman Empire would be destroyed.

It was for this reason that Emperor Justin II was very much agitated that Monday morning when he met the priest who became the high priest and adviser to Emperor Heraclius. It was this priest, the son of Nathaniel, who asked Wahiya Qalbi to give him the date of the birth of Muhammad and by his calculations found out that the date given by

Emperor Justin II and Wahiya Qalbi were identical (Chapter 17: J). Then he asked whether this personage was born circumcised from his mother's womb or not? Wahiya Qalbi confirmed that the child was born not only circumcised miraculously but also with his navel cord separated miraculously from his mother. Then he asked if Muhammad was related in any way by blood to the Jews. Wahiya Qalbi replied that Muhammad was from the descendants of Ishmael, the eldest son of Abraham, whilst the Jews were from Isaac, the second son of Abraham.

Wahiya Qalbi was the messenger of Muhammad who carried the invitation to the Roman Emperor Heraclius at Hims in 7 A.H. about 629/630 A.D. to convert to Islam. In reply Heraclius had said if his priest and adviser would accept Islam, he too would.

This priest, after the above-mentioned discussions with Wahiya Qalbi, declared publicly his conversion to Islam (Chapter 13: J). The Christian public who were present, martyred this aged priest on the spot. Emperor Heraclius was alarmed at the hostile attitude of his Christian subjects and decided to defer his own conversion. The result was that a few years later Palestine, Syria, Egypt and other parts of his Roman Empire fell to Islam and Heraclius died a disappointed man. Thus the foretelling given by the fallen idol of Christ to the Roman Emperor Justin II became an established fact only a few years later! Does it not remind one of the Biblical warnings:

“For Moses truly said unto the fathers, a prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren (tribe of Ishmael), like unto me (who will speak face to face with Allah); him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.

“And it shall come to pass, (after a lapse of sometime at the Battle of Armageddon) that every soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people (of the earth)” (Acts 3: 22-23; also similar is Deuteronomy 18: 18-19).

## 12. The Luckiest Year for Mecca

For about five consecutive years preceding the birth of Muhammad, there was a great famine in this area. The trading caravans had not brought in profits. The people had been reduced to poverty. There was general distress all around.

In the year of the birth of the Holy Prophet *i.e.* in 570 A. D., the gloomy situation was transformed into the most prosperous year the Meccans ever knew. They had rains. The famine was ended. Even their trading caravans brought in great and unexpected profits. There was great joy and prosperity all around. Hence this year was given a special name and title of “Sanatul Ibtehaj” or the “Year of Plenty and Happiness” (page 14, *Ahsan Ul Muwaiz*).

## 13. The foretelling of the Nazarene Monk Esau

A Nazarene monk named Esau had come from the Palestine area to stay near Mecca. The reason was that according to the foretellings of Jesus, he was aware that about this time the Promised Prophet would be born at Mecca and that he was the Promised Comforter through whom the world would be blessed. He would complete the divine teachings left incomplete by Jesus, (St. John 16:12-13). He stayed outside Mecca at a monastery at Murrus-Zaharan in Wadi Fathema. He had asked the Meccans to let him know as soon as possible whenever any new child was born. Accordingly Abdul Muttaleb informed him that a grandchild had been born a few days back.

This aged monk stated that the child born on the previous Monday whose name they had given Muhammad was the Promised Prophet because:

- a. His birth had taken place on a Monday.
- b. His name would be Muhammad.
- c. That a special star has become visible in the sky to announce his birth.

- d. He would be born at Mecca about this period.

These were the foretellings of Jesus by which he could realise the Promised Prophet to be this child (page 29, Vol. II, *Manahejun Nabuwat* in Urdu, 6th Edition, printed by Naval Kishore Press, Cawnpore in February, 1918, written originally in Persian by Maulana Abdul Huq Muhaddis Dehelvi and translated into Urdu by Khwaja Abdul Majid).

#### **14. His Foster Mother**

It was a practice amongst the aristocratic Meccans to have their new born children nursed by sturdy-built Bedouin foster mothers during the first two years.

These women belonged to the tribes of Bani Sad. Those who had children born recently used to come to Mecca twice a year. Once at the commencement of spring and then again during autumn. This was a good source of income for these tribal women.

In 570 A.D. there was a great famine in the areas around Mecca. All the grass had been burnt and destroyed, hence even the milk of the animals had dried up.

In the distressing circumstances all women from the tribe of Bani Sad were anxious to go to Mecca, to become foster-mothers to some rich Meccan's children, so that they may get a handsome remuneration with which they may overcome their existing distress.

Amongst them was Halima Sadiya, wife of Abu Zaber. She had given birth recently to a son when she had high temperature due to hunger and starvation. Her breasts were naturally dry and she was so weak that she could hardly move about. Her camel had also given birth to a baby camel which died owing to insufficiency of milk to feed it. When the seasonal time of going to Mecca came, she had been starving for three days and was so weak that she even used to collapse and faint. That night she had a dream in which she saw somebody who took her

to “Nahar Ul Hayat” or the “River of Life” in Heaven and made her drink. In the morning she found herself restored to health. Her camel was so weak and sickly that she with her husband and child arrived at Mecca two days later than the rest of the caravan. She was disappointed to find that all the rich Meccans had already appointed “milk-Nurses” *i.e.* foster-mothers for their children. Frustrated and hungry she fell asleep to dream that she was instructed to call on the Meccan leader Abdul Muttaleb. Next morning she approached Abdul Muttaleb, who informed her that none of her tribe had agreed to become the foster-mother for his orphaned grandchild because they thought they would get very poor reward for looking after an orphan. Halima consulted her husband and agreed to become the foster-mother of the orphan Muhammad.

Amena, mother of Muhammad, warned Halima not to disclose the miracles she would daily experience as it would bring danger to the child.

### **15, The Miracle Performed on his Foster Mother by the babe**

As soon as Halima gave suck to Muhammad both of her dry breasts became full of milk. Muhammad always drank milk from only the right breast leaving the other for his foster-brother who had been sickly due to the lack of his mother’s milk till then (pages 32-33, *Ahsan Ul Muwaiz*).

### **16. Halima’s camel Miraculously Restored to health**

Experiencing this miracle Halima decided to bring her sickly camel to the house where the child was. Immediately the camel was restored to health and miraculously gave so much milk that two large receptacles and a leather cask were filled and yet the camel was full of milk!(pages 32-33, *ibid*).

### **17. Halima's camel Miraculously speaks**

On the return journey Halima's camel raced ahead of the full caravan and spoke miraculously mocking the ladies of Bani Sad that even though they had arrived two days ahead yet her mistress had got the prize child of the entire tribe of Quresh. They were surprised to hear Halima's camel talk miraculously and race ahead. They asked Halima, "Is this not the same camel on which you came?" Halima merely assented but would not say anything more (page 33, *ibid*).

### **18. The Foretellings of the Abyssinian Monks Belonging to the Nazarene Faith**

In the valley of Sadra some goats spoke miraculously to Halima informing her that the child she was carrying was the Prophet of Allah and she was greeted similarly by a number of Abyssinian Nazarene monks in the valley of Huran. An old priest warned Halima as follows:

"Oh most fortunate amongst women! the child in your arms is the Promised Prophet through whom the universe would be blessed according to the foretellings of Jesus. We warn you to take good care of this precious child" (page 52, Vol. II, *Ajaib Ul Kasas*). These monks from the followers of Jesus recognised him because a piece of cloud gave shade over Muhammad, wherever he went under the open sky (Chapter 13: E).

### **19. The Attempt to Murder the babe by Idolators**

Full of curiosity and according to their usual practice upon reaching the market of Akas, these foster-mothers would take their foster-children to a famous fortune-teller from the tribe of Hazeel to know about the future of the child entrusted to them. Halima arrived far ahead of the Caravan. As soon as she produced the child before the fortune-teller he angrily shouted:

*"This child is going to break idols and destroy idolatry from the face*

*of the earth. Kill this child immediately”.*

Halima, full of alarm, snatched up Muhammad in her arms and ran out. As soon as she stepped out of the tent, she miraculously became invisible. This man shrieked to all who were around to hunt out and kill both the woman and the child. He gave a full description of both of them. The whole market responded to his call, but even though Halima and Muhammad were surrounded by them, she escaped eventually and safely reached her home along with the baby Muhammad (pages 33-34, *Ahsan Ul Muwaiz*).

## **20 Baby Muhammad Never Dirtied His Clothes**

Halima has confirmed that Muhammad never dirtied his clothes even once. Only once a day would he urinate and pass out stool at a specific time (pages 40-41, Vol. II, *Manahejun Nabuwat*). As soon as his urine or stool came in contact with the ground, it would be swallowed up at once by the earth leaving behind a pleasant perfume instead of a bad smell as in the case of ordinary human beings. If he went to answer a call of nature in the forest the trees would form a curtain around him and when he returned only a fragrance would come out of the place (Miracle Nos. 35 and 36, page 433, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia* also pages 44-47, Vol. I, *Manahejun Nabuwat*).

## **21 Miracles During the stay of baby Muhammad with Halima**

Because of the famine in the area the goats of the tribe of Bani Sad had become dry and were dying of starvation. When Halima returned all the goats belonging to her family daily experienced the miracle of the grass suddenly sprouting out of the dry ground where they were grazing and so they became healthy and supplied so much milk that this family used to drink milk instead of water and supplied milk to the whole tribe because all cattle belonging to the rest were dry (pages 4-5, *Afzal Ul Muwaiz*).



## **22 The Growth of Muhammad**

When Muhammad was two months old he was crawling about.

The next month he used to walk by taking the support of the wall. He could walk without this support when five months old. At seven months he could run well. The eighth month saw him speak fluently (page 5, *ibid*).

When his foster-brother would take him along to play with other children, he would not play saying: "I am not created for this purpose" (page 6, *ibid*).

## **23. Muhammad's Body threw "No Shadow"**

*His body threw no shadow* (page 40, Vol. I, Manahejun Nabuwat). This is the only case in the history of mankind, that the body of man did not throw any shadow when light fell upon it, even when clothed in ordinary clothes!

## **24. Muhammad Left No Footprints upon sand but upon Rocks**

When he walked upon the sand he never left any footprints on the soft earth. But his numerous footprints on hard rocks are still preserved and can be inspected at various places page 454, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal UI Ambia*).

## **25. Muhammad Tames a Lion Miraculously**

One day a lion attacked the flock of goats belonging to Halima. Muhammad, the child now nearly two years old, was also there. Upon sighting Muhammad the growling lion suddenly stopped in the middle of his charge upon the cattle and like a pet dog came tamely and licked Muhammad's feet and paid homage to him. Then upon his instruction the lion went back without harming anybody (page 7, *Ahsan Ul Muwaiz*).

## 26. The Peculiarities about Child Muhammad

Every day during his childhood a bright light like a little sun used to envelop Muhammad and he would disappear from human sight and then reappear after some time (page 41, Vol. II, *Manahejun Nabuwat*).

Whenever he did anything he used to say: “Bismillah Hir Rahman Nir Rahim” Transation: “I start in the name of Allah the Most Beneficent and Most Merciful”. He used to pick up things with his right hand (page 18, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

When Halima entered the house of Abdul Muttaleb to see the child Muhammad and decide whether or not she would undertake to bring up the babe, she found the whole house was filled with a sweet scent which was coming out of the body of the babe (page 18, Vol. II, *ibid*).

When he was taken to the village of Bani Sad by Halima, the whole village was filled with this same perfume coming out of the body of Baby Muhammad. This feature remained all through his life (pages 44-47, Vol. I. *Manahejun Nabuwat*).

No fly ever sat upon his body or clothes throughout his life (pages 503-504, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Whenever he mounted any animal, however wild and ferocious it might be, it would immediately become tame and docile. As long as he remained sitting on any animal, it would not urinate or pass stool out of its body (page 504, Vol. II, *ibid*).

## 27. The Miracles During the Return of the Child to his mother

After about three years of weaning, a strange incident took place. One day two persons in white dress appeared before Muhammad, whilst he was looking after the flocks of Halima. Halima’s son saw these two cut Muhammad’s stomach. He ran crying to his parent for help to save Muhammad. When they arrived they found Muhammad smiling and safe. Muhammad showed the cut mark on his body and said:

“One of the white-clad persons had cut my chest and stomach with a silver knife. I however did not suffer any pain. The other person in white dress had a bowl with something pure white and very cooling. With this they washed all the organs of my body in the chest and the stomach region and replaced them”.

“They also removed some small black-looking object covered with blood from my heart, before replacing it. Then one of them moved his hand over the wound on my body. The cut immediately sealed up leaving only the scar where the body had been operated upon. I am still feeling a cool sensation and peace throughout my body. These persons addressed me as ‘*Habib-Ullah*’ (Beloved of Allah). Then they disappeared leaving me safe and sound”.

Halima and her husband thereupon took the child to a soothsayer, who upon hearing this incident lifted Muhammad to his breast and exhorted all around to kill this child instantaneously because this child when he grew up would be the destroyer of their religion and idols and would teach a new religion without any idols. Halima snatched the child from the soothsayer and ran home. Her husband felt that it was no longer safe to keep Muhammad with them. So that very night Halima secretly left for Mecca with Muhammad.

Nearing Mecca she had a call of nature. So she asked Muhammad to wait at one of the gates to the Kaabah. But on her return, after a few minutes, she could not find the child anywhere. An old passerby seeing her distress while searching and finding no trace of any child in the vicinity took her to the biggest idol at the Kaabah called Hobal (possibly equivalent of Horus) in spite of her protests that idols all over the world had fallen upon the birth of Muhammad. On going round the idol this old man asked for the whereabouts of Muhammad. Immediately not only did this idol fall, but all the idols round about also fell upon the floor. From the stomach of Hobal came a voice saying:

“Do not take the name of this child in our presence. Idols and idolatry will be destroyed by him. Allah will not allow any harm to befall this child”.

The old man, who had taken Halima there, collapsed out of fright

and fainted at seeing the idols fall upon the mention of the name of Muhammad.

The terrified Halima ran to the nearby house of Abdul Muttaleb and besought his help. A search party was organised instantly by the Meccans but it met with no success. The disappointed Abdul Muttaleb prayed at the Kaabah to Allah. He heard a voice saying: "Fear not, Allah protects the child wheresoever he is".

Thereupon Abdul Muttaleb asked the voice where the child was! The voice answered: "You will find him under a plantain tree at "Wadi-e-Tahama". Abdul Muttaleb hastened to the nearby valley of Tahama and found a child under a plantain tree. He asked the child his name. The child replied: "Muhammad bin (son of) Abdulla bin (son of) Abdul Muttaleb". Joyfully Abdul Muttaleb lifted his grandson and brought him home. He gave a lot in charity to celebrate this happy occasion (page 19, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

## **28. His life before declaration of prophethood**

His mother passed away when he was about 6/7 years (pages 21-22 Vol. II, *ibid*). From this period a veil fell to keep his daily miracles hidden from the public, so that his fame may not grow and attempts may not be made upon his life.

When he was between eight and nine years old his grandfather died (page 22 *ibid*) leaving him an orphan in the charge of his uncle Abu Talib, a man generous by nature but always short of resources, and hardly able to provide for his family.

## **29. He did not learn to read or write**

Young Muhammad therefore had no opportunity to learn to read and write but instead had to start earning his livelihood prematurely. He thus passed his life from infancy facing daily difficulties.

He was a believer in the religion of Abraham and Ishmael, his forefathers. He did not believe in idolatry, hence he was called a

“Hunafa” which meant originally “those who turn away (from idolatry)” but was used subsequently for “one by nature upright” (pages ix-x, Introduction part I, “*The Glorious Koran*” by Pickthall).

### **30. The “Al Amin”**

His exemplary conduct, his acts of charity, caring for the sick, going out of his way to help the poor and distressed, looking after the needs of the orphans and widows won him not only the love of the poor but also the admiration of the rich who bestowed upon him the title of “Al Amin i.e. The Faithful and True” at the age of 24 years 9 months and 6 days (Chapter 13: E and page 24, Vol. II, *Tafribul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

### **31. The Kaabah**

Devenport on pages 5 and 6 of “*Mohammed and the Koran*” has recorded of the Kaabah:

“It was especially revered on account of the tradition that it had been erected by Abraham and Ishmael, and because it was reputed to be the first structure ever raised by the hand of man to the glory of the Most High, The Kaabah, like the temple of Delphi in Greece was regarded as the sanctuary of the entire nation; thither came all who were eminent for their skill in eloquence and poetry, the only intellectual qualifications valued by the Arabians, and within its precincts were suspended the compositions deemed worthy of being held in remembrance. Its vast antiquity also, for history placed its foundation at 993 years before that of the temple of Solomon, or 2000 years before the Christian era, ensured it additional respect. In the south-east corner of this temple is a small stone, set in silver, and fixed about four feet from the ground. It is an object of great reverence with Mohammedans, who believe it to have been one of the stones of Paradise, which having fallen down with Adam from heaven, served afterwards as a pillow for that patriarch. It is said to be white within, but to have been turned black on the outside either by the touch of an impure woman or by the sins of the people or more probably, by the kisses of the numerous

pilgrims visiting Mecca”.

### 32. The Repairs to the Kaabah

About the year 605 A.D., the draperies of the outer wall of the Kaabah caught fire. The building was affected and could not withstand the brunt of the torrential rains that followed. The reconstruction of the Kaabah was thereupon undertaken. Every citizen contributed according to his means out of his honest gains. Everybody participated. The question arose as to whom should be given the honour of fitting the heavenly stone “Aswad” in the position in which Abraham had fitted it previously. When there was danger of bloodshed, somebody suggested that the matter be left to the decision of one chosen by Providence, by being the first to arrive for work from the Eastern Gate. It chanced that Muhammad just then turned up for work. Since he was the “Al Amin” everyone accepted him gladly as the arbitrator. Muhammad placed a sheet of cloth on the ground, put the stone on it and asked one chief from each of the tribes or families in the city to lift together the cloth. Thus every family of Mecca got an equal share in the honour. Everybody gladly accepted this decision of Muhammad. When the stone was lifted in this manner, he fixed the same in its proper place.

In this connection J. Devenport the European scholar has recorded on page 10 of *“Mohammed and the Koran”* as follows:

“About this time the Kaabah, having been injured by fire, was undergoing repairs, in the course of which the sacred stone was to be replaced, and in order to avoid disputes, it was agreed that the honour of laying it, for the second time should belong to him who first entered the sacred precincts; this was Mohammed, whom chance had conducted to the spot. He accordingly deposited the stone with all due ceremony, amid the acclamations of the bystanders, thus consecrating a temple devoted to the service of the very idols which it was afterwards the chief object of his mission to destroy; so that it was not merely a stone which he thus laid, but the foundation of a new religion of which he himself was to be the head and the pontiff”.

### **33. The commencement of Meditation**

From this moment Muhammad, who was about 35 years old, became more and more absorbed in meditation. Like his grandfather, he used to retire with his family during the whole of the lunar month of Ramadan to a cave in “Jabal-an-Nur”. (Mountain of Light). The cave is called “Ghar-i-Hira” (Cave of research). There he prayed, meditated and shared his meagre provisions with any traveller, who happened to pass by.

### **34. The First Revelation**

He was forty years old in 610 A.D. and it was the fifth consecutive year of his annual retreats, when one night the first revelation came to him towards the end of his retreat.

He was asleep or in a trance when he heard a voice say: “*READ!*”: He said “I cannot read”. The voice again said “Read!” He said: “I cannot read”. A third time the voice, more awesome commanded: “Read!” He said “*What shall I read?*,” The voice said:

“Read: In the name of thy Lord, Who Createth.

“Createth man from a clot.

“Read: And it is thy Lord the Most Bountiful

“Who teacheth by the pen,

“Teacheth man that which he knew not”.

When he awoke the words remained as if inscribed upon his heart. He went out of the cave on to the hillside and heard the same awe-inspiring voice say: “O Muhammad! Thou art Allah’s messenger, and I am Gabriel”. Then he raised his eyes and saw the angel, in the likeness of a man, standing floating in space above the horizon. And again the voice said: “O Muhammad! Thou art Allah’s messenger, and I am Gabriel”. Muhammad (Allah bless and keep him) stood quite still,

turning away his face from the brightness of the vision, but whithersoever he might turn his face, there always stood the angel in space confronting him. He remained thus a long while till at length the angel vanished.

This incident had been foretold by Prophet Isaiah in the Holy Bible as follows:

COMFORT ye, comfort ye my people, saith your God.

“The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the LORD, make straight in the desert a highway for our God.

“Every valley shall be exalted, and every mountain and hill shall be made low; and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough places plain:

“And the glory of the LORD shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see it together: for the mouth of the LORD hath spoken it.

*“The voice (of Angel Gabriel) said, Cry, (i.e. read). And he (the Promised Prophet Muhammad) said “What shall I cry” (i.e. read)? All flesh is grass, and all the goodliness thereof is as the flower of the field:*

*“The grass withereth, the flower fadeth: because the spirit of the LORD bloweth upon it: surely the people is grass.*

*“The grass withereth, the flower fadeth: but the word of our God shall stand for ever” (Isaiah 40: 1 and 3-8).*

From the above, the following prophecies were made viz:

- a. When the Angel Gabriel would bring the first Divine message of the Qur'an he would ask Muhammad to “read” and Muhammad would reply that he did not know how to read so what shall he read?
- b. That Muhammad would be the voice crying in the wilderness inviting the world to the path of Allah (See Chapter 7: I for further details and all relative Biblical quotations).
- c. The world shall fade away and all in it would end, but the



“Qur’an” *i.e.* the Word of Allah to be recited out of the mouth of Muhammad would NEVER FADE.

- d. That the people from the desert wilderness of Paran or the valley of Mecca would become exalted and the empire of his followers would spread. Whereas the high and lofty Persian and Roman Empires would be brought low with the spread of Islam!

### **35. Recognised as the Promised Prophet through whom the Universe would be blessed.**

When Muhammad informed his wife Khadija about all that had happened on the previous night, she took the first opportunity, whilst Muhammad rested that day, to pay a visit, to her cousin Waraqa ibne Naufal; a very old man, who knew the Scriptures of the Jews and Christians. After he heard everything, he declared that without any doubt, Gabriel, the heavenly messenger, who came to Moses of old had now come to Muhammad, and that he was chosen by Allah to be the Promised Prophet. This had been foretold in the old Scriptures of the prophets including the Evangel of Jesus. He confirmed that Muhammad is of the seed of Abraham and Ishmael through whom the world would be blessed, according to both the Old and New Testaments of the Holy Bible.

### **36. Hazrat Khadija's Conversion**

Khadija returned quickly to her husband and declared her belief that she was convinced beyond any question of doubt that her beloved husband was indeed the Promised Prophet, who, it had been foretold of old, would come from the children of Ishmael, the first son hence heir of Abraham. The European Scholar J. Devenport has recorded his findings as follows:-

“On the morning of the 24th Ramadan, Mohammed appeared before his wife, apparently, greatly disturbed in mind. He called out

to her “wrap him up, to affuse him with cold water, as his soul was greatly troubled!” and having recovered himself, -proceeded to break to his amazed spouse the secret of his divine mission. Nor did she hesitate one moment to believe it implicitly; and no wonder, for Mohammed, to his honour be it written, had proved a most kind and attentive husband to her, whose affection had raised him above the pressure of want. He had abstained, and, till her death, continued to abstain from availing himself of the right of polygamy. He had proved his truth to her by unvarying affection: how, then, could she possibly have doubted his word? She therefore regarded and believed the vision to be a real manifestation of God’s will” (pages 16-17, *Mohammed and the Koran*).

## **E. Life of Muhammad after Prophethood**

### **I. The Early Converts**

Muhammad returned to Mecca from his retreat a few days after the first revelation with his family and went round the Kaabah several times, as was his custom. Waraqa ibne Naufal as soon as he heard that Muhammad had come out of his retreat, came hurriedly and waited till Muhammad had finished going round the Kaabah. Then he asked him to repeat the whole incident. When Muhammad finished, he congratulated Muhammad as the Promised. Prophet, whose coming had been foretold repeatedly by the numerous prophets in the Holy Bible. He immediately became a Muslim.

His first cousin Ali ibne Abu Talib hearing all this converted to the faith on the same evening. The fourth convert was his servant Zeyd, a former slave. He became a Muslim on the following day. The fifth was his old friend Abu Bakr, who accepted Islam on the second evening. Thus there were five converts within two days after his return from his retreat. All of them were members of the family, close relatives or dear friends.

Amongst the early converts was a Genie (Arabic: Jinn) by the name of Ham ibne (son of) Him ibne (son of) Iblis (*i.e.* the grandson of Iblis,

the Satan). He stated that he was a little child when Cain killed Abel. He had first of all converted to the faith of Abraham. When Moses had come, he accepted the Torah. Finally, he had converted to the teachings of Jesus and the Evangel dictated by him during his life in Hebrew and recorded in Aramaic Script. He conveyed as per the instructions of Jesus, his “Salaams” or Blessings of Peace and good wishes to Muhammad for his success. In accordance with the instructions of Jesus to all his followers, he declared he was becoming a Muslim (pages 56-62 Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

For the first three years of his Mission the Prophet preached only to his family and his intimate friends, whilst the people of Mecca as a whole regarded him as one who was eccentric. Thus Muhammad, by this example, has clearly established the duty of every Muslim, to preach firstly to near and dear ones, thereafter to close friends and relatives, then to neighbours and only after achieving these laudable objects to the public at large.

Here is an extract from page 58 of “*The Hero as Prophet*” by Thomas Carlyle, published by Oxford University Press, London 1909:

“He (Muhammad) spoke of his Doctrine to this man and that; but the most treated it with ridicule, with indifference; in three years, I think, he had gained but thirteen followers. His encouragement to go on, was altogether the encouragement that such a man in such a case meets”.

## **2. Commencement of public preaching**

At the end of the third year of the Holy Prophet Muhammad’s teachings he received the following divine order:

“O thou enveloped in thy (woollen) cloak,

“Arise and Warn!

“Thy Lord magnify,

“Thy raiment purify,

“Pollution shun!

“And show not favour, seeking worldly gain!

“For the sake of thy Lord, be patient!” (Qur’an 74: 1-7)

Whereupon the next morning he went up the very same hill from which his forefather the Prophet Abraham had given the call of one crying in the wilderness summoning mankind to the ways of Allah (Chapter 7: I). He also cried out to the inhabitants of Mecca and when they came he began to preach in public for the first time, pointing out the wretched folly of idolatry in face of the tremendous laws of day and night, of growth and decay, which manifest the power of Allah and attest His Sovereignty. It was then, when he began to speak publicly against their gods, that the Qureysh, the tribe who were looking after the Kaabah and from which came Muhammad, became actively hostile. They began to persecute his poorer disciples, and to mock and injure him. The only one consideration which prevented them from killing him was the fear of the blood-vengeance of the clan to which his family belonged.

Strong in his inspiration, the Prophet went on warning, and pleading, while the Qureysh did all they could to ridicule his teachings, and to discourage his followers.

### **3. The bitter persecution of Muhammad and his followers**

The converts of the first four years were mostly humble folk unable to defend themselves against oppression. So cruel and bitter was the persecution they endured, that the Prophet was forced to advise all who could contrive possibly to do so to migrate to Abyssinia, a Christian country. Still in spite of persecution and the emigration, the little company of Muslims grew in number. The Qureysh were seriously alarmed. The idol-worship at the Kaabah, the holy place to which all Arabia made pilgrimage, ranked for them, as guardians of the Kaabah, as first among their vested interests. At the season of the pilgrimage, they posted men on all the roads to warn the tribes against the

“madman” who was preaching in their midst.

They tried to force the Prophet into a compromise by their persecution and by offering to accept his religion if he would so modify it as to make room for idols of Allah. They tempted him with the kingship of Mecca, huge wealth as well as the most beautiful amongst women if he would only give up attacking idolatry.

When their efforts at negotiation failed, they went to his uncle and guardian Abu Talib, offering to give him the best of their young men in place of Muhammad, as well as all the wealth that he desired if only he would let them kill Muhammad and have done with him. But Abu Talib stubbornly refused.

#### **4. The faith of Muhammad in his teachings**

Seeing the determination of the people of Mecca to destroy and kill Muhammad, his uncle tried to dissuade him as recorded by J. Devenport on page 20 of *“Mohammed and the Koran”*:

“Seeing that Mohammed’s enemies still remained most inveterate against him, Abu Talib earnestly dissuaded his nephew from pursuing his purpose any further, but his (Muhammad’s) reply was, “Though the Qureyshites should arm against me, the sun and the moon (alluding to the divinities which they ignorantly worshipped), the one on my right hand and the other on my left, I would not be shaken from my resolution”. This very same information is given on page 59 of *“The Hero as Prophet”* by Thomas Carlyle.

#### **5. The faith of others in Muhammad’s mission**

The faith that the followers of Muhammad had in this religion of Islam can be gauged from the following extract from pages 20-21 of *“Mohammed and the Koran”* by Devenport:

“Nothing daunted, therefore, by opposition, he again assembled a few guests, chiefly belonging to his own tribe, placed before them,

it is said a lamb and a bowl of milk, and, after the frugal meal, rose up, declared his sacred character, offered the treasures of time and of eternity to whomsoever should become his disciple, and concluded an address remarkable for its native eloquence, by the demand, "Who among you will aid me to bear this burden? Who will be my lieutenant and vizier, as Aaron was to Moses?"

"The assembly remained mute with astonishment, not one venturing to accept the proffered perilous office, until the young and impetuous Ali, Mohammed's cousin, started up, exclaiming, "O prophet! I will; though I am, indeed, the youngest of these present the most rheumy of them as to eyes, the biggest of them as to belly, and the slenderest of them as to legs. I, O prophet! Will be thy Vizier over them!"

## 6 European Scholars on the Prophet of Islam

Devenport writes on pages 133-134 of *ibid*:

"Is it possible to conceive, we may ask, that the man who effected such great and lasting reforms in his own country by substituting the worship of the one and only true God for the gross and debasing idolatry in which his countrymen had been plunged for ages; who abolished infanticide, prohibited the use of spirituous liquors and games of chance (those sources of moral depravity); who restricted within comparatively narrow limits the unrestrained polygamy which he found in existence and practice—*can we, we repeat, conceive of so great and zealous a reformer to have been a mere impostor, or that his whole career was one sheer hypocrisy?* Can we imagine that his divine mission was a mere invention of his own of whose falsehood he was conscious throughout? *No, surely, nothing but a consciousness of really righteous intentions could have carried Muhammad so steadily and constantly without ever flinching or wavering, without ever betraying himself to his most intimate connections and companions, from his first Revelation to Khadijah to his last agony in the arms of Ayesha.*

*"Surely a good and sincere man, full of confidence in his Creator, who makes an immense reform both in faith and practice, is truly a direct*

*instrument in the hands of God; mid may said to have a commission from Him.*

“Why may it not be believed that he was, in his own age and country, a preacher of truth and righteousness, sent to teach his own people the unity and righteousness of God, to give them civil and moral precepts suited to their condition.”

## **7 The Conversion of Omar**

On pages 21-22 of *ibid* by Devenport one reads:

“It was about this time that he acquired a new and important convert in the person of Omar, one of the most uncompromising but most generous of his enemies. Omar had been already highly displeased with his sister, Ameina, for having embraced the new faith, so that finding her one day reading the Koran aloud, he struck her violently, dashing, at the same time, the book on the ground. The maiden, calm and collected, picked up the volume, but still persisted in refusing to give it to her brother, who, now still more exasperated, snatched it from her, but his eye glancing involuntarily over some of its lines, he was seized with wonder, and conviction succeeding to admiration, he became a Mussalman (*i.e.* Muslim) on the spot. He then immediately ran, armed as he was, to the castle of Safa, the asylum of Mohammed, who, upon seeing him approach, exclaimed, “Whence comest thou, O Omar! Wilt thou remain here until crushed beneath the vaulted roof that will fall upon thee?” “I come,” replied Omar, “a true believer in the true God, and in thee, His chosen apostle!”

## **8. The deed of Ostracism**

The exasperation of the idolaters was increased by the conversion of Omar, one of their stalwarts. The miracle of the splitting of the Moon (details are given later in Chapter 17: F-6) brought kings, ministers, and learned men from far off foreign countries, who paid homage to Muhammad and accepted him. Thus the threat to their income from

the idolatry business increased. This embittered the Meccans more and more. Their persecution increased until things came to such a pass that they decided to ostracise the Prophet's whole clan including those idolaters, who protected him as well as the Muslims who believed in him. Their chief men caused a document to be drawn up to the effect that none of them or those belonging to them would hold any intercourse with the clan of Muhammad and his supporters or sell to them or buy from them. *The sahfah* or the *deed of ostracism* was duly signed, sealed and deposited in the Kaabah. Then for three years, the Prophet was shut up with all his kinsfolk in their stronghold, which was situated in one of the gorges which run down to Mecca. Only at the time of the pilgrimage could he go out and preach, or any of his kinsfolk dare to go into the city.

At length some kinder hearts among the Qureysh grew weary of the boycott of old friends and neighbours. They managed to have the document which had been placed in the Kaabah brought out for reconsideration. It was found that all the writing on this parchment had been destroyed by white ants, except the words "*Bismika Allahumma*" ("*In thy name, O Allah*"). When the elders saw this miracle the ban was removed promptly in spite of the protest of Abu Jebel and Abu Lahab, both uncles of Muhammad. The Prophet was again free to go about the city.

But meanwhile the opposition to his preaching had grown rigid and the persecution of Muhammad and his followers continued most vehemently. Thus he had little success amongst the Meccans. An attempt which he made to preach in the nearby city of Taif did not meet with success.

Muhammad returned from Taif with wounds all over his body owing to heavy stone throwing on him causing him to collapse thrice on the return journey to Mecca due to serious loss of blood.

In fact, during the thirteen years at Mecca after commencement of Prophethood, Muhammad suffered so many tortures that all the



tribulations of all prophets from Adam to Jesus put together were far less than the sufferings that the Holy Prophet had to undergo during this period. Yet he did not complain even once! His faith in Allah and his mission to guide people to surrender to the will of Allah remained undaunted!

## **9. The highest honour of seeing and speaking to Allah**

Judged by worldly standards it appeared that the mission of Muhammad during the first eleven years of his prophethood was not a success, at least as far as Mecca and the surrounding areas were concerned. It was in these trying conditions that the greatest divine reward was given to Muhammad of not only speaking directly with Allah as one friend speaks to another but even being granted the sight of Allah Himself which no other man or prophet including Adam, Noah, Abraham, Moses or Jesus had been blessed with, thus becoming openly the greatest of all Prophets.

It was on the night of the 27th of the Lunar month of Rajjab, one year and five months before Hijrah (which was 622 A. D.) The age of the Holy Prophet was 51 lunar years and 9 months. He was in the house of Umme Hani, which was situated between the hillocks Safa and Marwah near the Kaabah at Mecca. The Angel Gabriel came and informed Muhammad that Allah wanted personally to show Himself to His beloved in Heaven. Accordingly he took the Holy Prophet to the Kaabah where he prayed. Then to “Masjid-e-Aksa” or the Temple at Jerusalem on a “Burak” a heavenly steed (an animal something like an Ostrich which could fly and run as fast as a rocket). Here at the sanctuary of the earlier prophets he also prayed.

Then Gabriel showed him round Hell and Heaven giving brief descriptions of the deeds or which the various groups of people were punished or rewarded.

Muhammad met the following prophets at the various stages of heaven (for what is meant by the different stages of heaven please refer

to Chapter 21: D-5) as listed below:

<i>Stages of Heaven</i>	<i>Some of the Prophets who came to pay their respects to Muhammad</i>
First	Adam.
Second	Prophet John, son of Zakariah and Jesus of Nazareth, son of the Virgin Mary. Jesus was in this stage of heaven to give company to his cousin John. Actually the position of Jesus was much higher than only the second stage of heaven.
Third	Joseph, David and Solomon.
Fourth	Enoch.
Fifth	Ishmael, Isaac, Jacob, Lot and Aaron.
Sixth	Moses.
Seventh or Highest	Abraham.
Stage of Heaven	

They all paid their respects to Muhammad, the promised seed through whom the world would be blessed, and asked him to plead with Allah for the forgiveness of their respective followers, when he appeared before his Lord and spoke to Him because he was “Rahmat Ul Lil Aalaameen” *i.e.* The Comforter or the Blessing for the whole Universe.

The Angel Gabriel stopped just before they reached the throne of Allah in the seventh or highest stage of heaven, saying he had no power to proceed any further. He asked Muhammad to go ahead alone into the presence of Allah.

When Muhammad arrived in the presence of Allah he stood with bowed head and his hands placed respectfully one upon the other in front of him and recited amongst other praises the following:

*“Soobhaa Nakallaahoomma wa bihamdika wa tabaarakasmooka  
wa ta’aala jadduka wa laa ilaaha Ghairuka.*

*A-oozu Billaahi minash Shaitaanir rajeem.*

*Bismillaahir Rahmaanir Raheem”.*

Translation:

“Glory be to Thee O Allah, and Thine is the praise and blessed is  
Thy name, and exalted is Thy Majesty; there is no deity besides  
Thee.

“I seek Allah’s protection against the accursed Satan.

“In the name of Allah, the Beneficent, the Merciful”.

*“Alhamdu Lillaahi Rabbil Aalaameen.*

*Arrahmanir Raheem.*

*Maaliki yaumid deen*

*“Iyyaaka naabudu wa iyyaaka nastaaeen.*

*“Ihdinas siraatal moostaqeen,”*

*“Siraatal lazeena anaamta alaihim,*

*“Ghairil maghdhoobi alaihim, waladh dhaalleen (Ameen)”*

Translation:

“Praise be to Allah Who is Lord Sustainer of the entire universe.

“The Beneficent, the Merciful.

“(Sole) Owner of the Day of Judgment.

“Thee (Allah) we worship; Thee we ask for help.

Show us (to those on) the Right path,

“(i.e. By taking us to one who is on) the path of those whom Thou  
hast favoured with Thy Grace.

“Not those, who (like Iblis, the Satan) earn Thine anger (in spite of  
their continuous prayers—See Chapter 20 for how Satan

continuously prays and honours Allah), nor those who are astray (by worshipping idols or committing polytheism)” (Qur’an 1: 1-7).

After reciting some more words in praise Muhammad said “*Allahu Akbar*”—(Allah is Greatest) and bowed before his Lord.

Then he recited a number of times “*Subhana Rabbial Azeem*” (Glory be to The Sustainer Lord, the Great).

Allah acknowledged by saying: “*Sami Allahu, liman hamidah*” (Allah listens to him who praises Him).

Muhammad straightened himself from his bowing position reciting “*Rabbana wa lakal hamd*” (Oh our Lord, Thine is all praise). Saying “*Allahu Akbar*” (Allah is Greatest) he prostrated himself before Allah and recited a number of times “*Subhana Rabbiyal Aalaa*” (Glory be to The Sustainer Lord, the Highest):

After he had adored his Lord to his satisfaction, he got up saying “*Allahu Akbar*” (Allah is Greatest) and sat at the foot of the throne of Allah and chanted: *Attahiyyaatu Lillaahi was salaawatu wattayyibaatu*” (All services rendered by me by words and bodily actions and sacrifice of wealth are in honour of you, Oh Allah!).

Allah replied: “*Asalaamu alaika ya ayyuhan Nabiyyu wa Rahmatullaahi wa Barakatuh*”. (My peace be on thee Oh Prophet! together with My Mercy and My Blessing—indeed what a great honour!).

When Muhammad found that he alone was being blessed by Allah, whilst he was “*Rahmat Ul Lil Aalaameen*” (A Comforter and Blessing for the whole Universe) he pleaded immediately with Allah: “*Assalaamu Alaina wa alaa ibaadil-Laahis saaleheen*” (Let the Peace of Allah be on the worshippers and the righteous servants of the Lord—thus covering all righteous worshippers of Allah from Adam the first man till the last true worshipper at the time of the destruction of the universe—indeed a *Rahmat Ul Lil Aalaameen*—a Comforter and Saviour for the entire creation!)

When Muhammad made such a big request that the Universe be blessed through him, Allah naturally asked what gift have you got to offer in exchange! Muhammad's forthright reply was:

"Ash-hadu an fa ilaaha illal Laahu".

Translation:

"I give evidence that none is worthy of divine worship except Allah".

So exceptionally was Allah overjoyed that He announced:

"Wa ash-hadu anna Muhammadan abduhoo wa rasooluh".

Translation:

"And I (also) give evidence that Muhammad is His (Allah's) slave and His Messenger".

Thus Muhammad was given the unique honour of being declared the slave of Allah, in addition to being His Messenger.

So pleased was Allah at the prayer of Muhammad for the blessing of all righteous servants of the Lord from Adam till the last believer on earth when it will be destroyed and the gift of Muhammad—the evidence of the declaration of the Oneness of Allah that He issued the following Qur'anic Order not only upon the crowd of Angels and spiritual dwellers of the Universe, who were gathered and watching from a distance, but it was also an order for all time to come on all believers in Allah as well as on all mankind for all time to come:

"Lo! Allah and His angels send '*Salaat*' (*i.e.* prayers of glorification) on the Prophet. O Ye who believe! Send. '*Salaat*' (*i.e.* prayers of glorification) on him (*i.e.* the Holy Promised Prophet Muhammad) and offer '*Salimu*' (*i.e.* Peace of Allah and salutation) to him in a worthy (respectful) salutation.

"Lo! those who malign Allah and His Messenger, Allah hath cursed them in the world and the Hereafter, and hath prepared for them the doom of the disdained (see Chapter 13: B where Jesus has given

the same warning in *“The Gospel of Barnabas”*).

“And those who malign believing men and women undeservedly, they bear the guilt of slander and manifest sin” (Qur’an 33: 56-58).

The Angels responded to the above order and chanted the following blessings upon the honoured guest of Allah as under:

*“Allaahoomma salli alaa Muhammadin wa alaa aali Muhammadin kama sallayta alaa Ibrahima wa alaa aali Ibrahima innaka Hameedum Majeed.*

*“Alaahoomma baarik alaa Muhammadin wa alaa aali Muhammadin kama baarakta alaa Ibrahima wa alaa aali Ibrahima innaka Hameedum Majeed”.*

Translation:

“Oh Allah! Exalt Muhammad and the children of Muhammad as Thou didst exalt Abraham and the children of Abraham; Surely Thou art the Praised, the Magnified.

“Oh Allah! Bless Muhammad and the children of Muhammad as Thou didst bless Abraham and the children of Abraham; Surely Thou art the Praised, the Magnified”.

When the Angels finished then Muhammad recited the following momentous prayer whilst still in the sitting posture before the Almighty:

*“Rabbanaa aatena fidduniya hasanatan wa fil akerateh hasanatan wa kina azabin nar.*

*“Aflahumr nag firli wale waalediya wale ustadhziya wale mantawwlada wal jammial momineena wal mominaate wal muslemeena wal muslemaate ala-ah-yaa min hum wal amwat be rahmateka ya arhamar rahemeen”.*

Translation:

“Oh our Sustainer Lord grant us in this Earth what is good for us and in the life hereafter what is good for us and save us from the tortures of the Fire (of Hell).

“Oh Allah forgive us our sins, also our parents, also our teachers, also our families and the whole gathering of those men who do good deeds and those women who do good deeds and those men who have surrendered themselves to Your Will (*i.e.* the Muslims) and those women who have surrender themselves to Your Will (*i.e.* the Muslims, all those of them) who are alive and (all those of them) who have passed away (and bless them all) with Your Blessings Oh, Most Merciful!”

These acts and praises of Muhammad pleased Allah so very much that He disclosed Himself in all His Glory and Majesty to the naked human eyes of His Mahboob (*i.e.* beloved) Muhammad. This visit of Muhammad to Allah in heaven is called “*Meraj-un-Nabi*”.

Thus Muhammad received the unique honour of not only being invited by Allah to visit Him in Heaven, but also seeing Him with human eyes. Such distinction had never been blessed upon any prophet from Adam to Jesus. The Holy Bible also confirms that no man since Adam to Jesus had beheld Allah with his naked eyes as follows:

“*No man hath seen God at any time*” (1. John 4: 12).

In addition to this great honour Muhammad was invited to heaven to speak directly with the Creator just as a beloved speaks to his Loved One! Allah spoke to Moses only on the earth and not in heaven! Such honours were never bestowed upon anybody save and except Muhammad!

Muhammad pleaded with the Lord if it would be possible for Allah to bless all his followers with at least some of the joys of “Mehraj” which he had the good fortune of enjoying this night. Allah out of love for His beloved said, “I hereby bless your true followers with “Mehraj-ul-Momineen” (*i.e.* Mehraj for those who do good deeds) fifty times a day. Let all your followers imitate compulsorily that—which has just taken place fifty times every day imagining that they are in the presence of their Creator and that He is not only seeing them but He is also acknowledging their praises, Personally by even speaking to them and

that He will grant their hearts desires". This is the primary stage and will apply to the entire Muslim community.

The advanced stage (*i.e.* for those who attain "Fana fil Rasul" or "One who loses himself in the Holy Prophet"—this is a stage in Sufiism and will be discussed in Chapter 21), would be those who could lose themselves in the Holy Prophet and imitate these rituals, as the Holy Prophet had already done just now. Even though they could not see Allah with their eyes, yet their soul would get enlightened with the Divine Light and they would imagine that not only were they in His presence but could eventually see Allah in their souls (*i.e.* on attaining the stage known in Sufiism as "Fana fi Allah" or "One who loses himself into Allah").

The European Research Scholar J. Devenport has recorded this event on page 28 of "Mohammed and the Koran" as follows:

"The words spoken by the Almighty to His servant (during Mehraj) we are told is that God ordered that Mussulmans should pray fifty times a day, but that the prophet, by the advice of Moses, begged that the number might be reduced to five, a request which was granted".

Hence anyone performing these rituals five times a day imagining he is in the presence of the Lord and praising Him and that Allah personally acknowledges these praises with "*Sami Allahu Liman Hamidah*" (Allah listens to him who praises Him), and gives blessings upon the Holy Prophet and the Angel's evidence and praises must get inspired with the inexpressible joys of feeling the nearness of their Creator. This is called *Mehraj Ul Momineen*.

Those pious people who establish these daily exercises of mental and/or spiritual contact with their Creator would have naturally a true love for Allah and treat Him as their Friend and Benefactor. This means that if one has a true love for somebody then one cannot do anything which would displease in the least manner the One Whom one dearly loves. Naturally no worldly temptation could induce them to do any



wrong which would displease their Loved One—Allah. When the Lord becomes one's friend then all fear of anybody else would be gone, and replaced by a pure love for the Creator. Such people would of necessity spend their wealth, energies and lives in the way of Allah only to obtain His pleasure and not for the sake of getting any reward in Heaven. This indeed would be the greatest success in the purest form—a pure love without any desire or thought for a reward in Heaven. For what is meant by heaven please refer to Chapter 21: D-6.

Such a remarkable system of adoration of the Almighty, where the Creator and the created are involved in conversation, does not exist in any religion! In fact it is like a living Drama between the Lord and His creatures! Praises recited in His honour are acknowledged directly by Him! Blessings are given by Allah and the evidence of the angels and their praises are all well knit into a homogeneous unit. Another remarkable feature is that in these supplications, each and every part of the body is brought into play by the bowings and the prostrations. So even the body is brought into the worship along with the mind and the soul *i.e. the entire self of men!* This amount of exercise is quite sufficient to circulate the blood around ones body. Yet it is in such manner that it does not cause any strain for a child who may be as young as only four years, or an old man who is over eighty in age. It is such that all can perform without any kind of inconvenience. Is it not something unique and unthinkable that Islam should have such an ideal system of prayers as a blessing and a reward to remind one five times daily about the *Mehraj Un Nabi i.e.* when the Holy Prophet was the guest of Allah! When Allah not only spoke directly with His beloved but also showed Himself to the human eyes of Muhammad. *An honour which no other prophet or man has ever had!*

The Muslim prayers have started from this incident and date. Its rituals can be found in any Islamic prayer book. If one is interested one may refer to “*The Path of Islam*” by Atawoollah Ali Sarfaraz Khan Joomal Al-Quadiree, published by The World Federation of Islamic Missions, 100, Brickfield Road, Durban.

In addition Allah promised His Beloved Mahboob—The Holy Prophet Muhammad—The Blessing and Comforter for the entire universe as follows:

1. Those who will obey these commandments I shall bless up to the maximum limit.
2. That I will accept supplication for forgiveness of sins of your followers.
3. If there be a group of seven persons and if only one be good in that group, then for his sake I would bless all seven.
4. If anyone feels sorry in one's heart after committing a sin *i.e.* repents and determines never to commit the same again, such will I forgive.
5. Allah has said I will give sickness, troubles, and difficulties to Muslims so that it may act as a "Kuffara" (a tax or a levy or a penance) for the waiving of the wrongs of one's sins.
6. Those who do good amongst them I shall bless many folds.
7. Those who persistently do wrongs and pay no heed towards repentance and your teachings, such Muslims, I will condemn into the hands of "Zalims" (*i.e.* Rulers or nations who will torture them—an example being the recent total defeat of the so-called modern progressive socialist Arabs at the hands of a tiny country like Israel and the defeat of Pakistan by India in Bangladesh *etc.*), until they repent and mend their ways in accordance with Islamic principles.
8. On the Day of Judgment I will be lenient in My judgment and will forgive and bless the sins of Muslims and send them to Heaven, provided they have done some good deeds in accordance with My Qur'anic Orders.

There were many other things which were said between Allah and His Mahboob. Further details are to be found in pages 64-99, Vol. II,

*“Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia”.*

Muhammad returned to the Kaabah at Mecca after Mehraj at the dead of that very night As he was setting off for home he saw a tearful old woman almost doubled up under the weight of a bag of grain, which she was carrying on her back. As per his habit he ran to help the old lady and took the bag upon his back and started carrying it for her. She protested that her master was a cruel Jew, who would beat her if he found out that she had not carried her quota of weight of bagged grain and that somebody had helped her. Muhammad assured her that if necessary he would take the beating for her. As luck would have it, the Jew was watching out from his window. When he saw the radiant shining face of Muhammad, it reminded him of the foretelling of God to Moses in Deuteronomy 18 : 18-19 and the explanations given by Moses which were fortunately in his possession and which were to this effect:

“I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren tribe of Ishmael, like unto thee Moses who will not only speak directly with Allah as if face to face as one friend speaks to another but he will exceed thee in as much as 1, Allah, shall invite him to Heaven as My guest and will disclose Myself to the naked human eyes of this Prophet which honour no other person shall have. In the dead of night on his return from heaven en route to his home, he would see an old woman weeping doubled up with the weight of a bag of grain. He would immediately go to her assistance in spite of her protest. His face would be aglow with radiance. That would be the sign by which at least one Jewish family shall recognise him. That I the Lord will put My words in his mouth, and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him.

“And it shall come to pass after a passage of sometime at the Battle of Armageddon, that whosoever will not hearken unto My words (*i.e.* the Qur’an), which he shall speak in My name, I will punish them and destroy them from the face of this earth”.

The Jew immediately roused from their sleep all the members of

his family, took out the “*Torah*” and its notes and came out respectfully to greet Muhammad. In the presence of his family members and slaves, this Jew made Muhammad swear that he would answer truthfully the questions he was going to ask. After getting this assurance, he posed the following questions holding the *Torah* in his hands:

1. *Are you from the descendants of Ishmael, the first born of Abraham?*
2. *Have you been to heaven tonight?*
3. *Did you speak this night directly to Allah in heaven as if face to face as one friend speaks to another?*
4. *Did you see Allah this night with your naked human eyes?*

The Holy Prophet answered “Yes” to all four questions and very much puzzled he enquired from this Jew as to how he could possibly have found out these facts so soon after their occurrence? It was even before Muhammad had even had a chance to speak to anybody. The Jew showed him promptly the above texts of the message of Moses and immediately became a Muslim with all the members of his family and slaves.

It became known in the morning that Muhammad had been to heaven during the night via the temple of Jerusalem (*i.e.* Masjid-e-Aksa as it is now called). At once the disbelievers came and asked: “You must have seen on your way from Kaabah to Jerusalem some Meccan trading caravan returning?” He answered: “Yes he had seen one of them”. Then they asked when the said Caravan would return to Mecca? If he gave the correct answer, they would accept his “Mehraj” to heaven as absolutely correct. Muhammad replied it would arrive on Wednesday. In Arabia the new day commences from sunset. When the time of sunset came on that Wednesday, the Meccan Trading Caravan had not returned. Therefore the disbelievers came to taunt Muhammad. He prayed and the “Sun” stopped from sinking in the Western Horizon for several hours until the caravan actually arrived. (See Miracle No. 5,

page 425, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Therefore all the disbelievers of Mecca were forced against their will to admit publicly by this wonderful miracle that Muhammad had not only influence over the sun, but that he had also in fact been taken bodily to heaven via “AL-AQSA” at Jerusalem on the night of Mehraj and that he had also seen Allah with his naked eyes while awake and that whilst on his journey from Mecca to Jerusalem he had also seen correctly the Meccan Trading Caravan on its return journey from Syria.

Hence Muhammad had two separate occasions during which he not only spoke directly as if face to face with Allah but he also saw Him. The first was in a spiritual state when Nur-e-Muhammadi was created out of the Lord and the second during the night of Mehraj. Both these incidents are confirmed by the only Divine book of all truths, which has not been polluted by forgeries, as follows:

“And He (Allah) revealed (Himself on the Mehraj) unto (the human eyes of) His slave (the Holy Prophet Muhammad) that which He revealed.

“The heart (of Muhammad) lied not (about the seeing of Allah) in what it saw.

“Will ye then dispute with Him concerning what he seeth?

“And verily he (Muhammad) saw Him (Allah) yet another time (before *i.e.* when he was created by Allah as Nur-e-Muhammadi)”.

“The eye turned not aside (upon seeing the Glory and the Majesty of Allah), nor yet was over-bold.

“Verily he (Muhammad) saw the greatest revelation of his Lord (*i.e.* the Glory and Majesty of Allah Himself)” (Qur’an 53: 10-13, 17-18).

This was the most wondrous reward of Allah to Muhammad when things looked their blackest and his mission appeared to be unsuccessful at Mecca. No one has ever been so privileged as Muhammad was with these two sights of Allah while awake. Nobody else has ever seen Allah with his naked eyes since creation as confirmed

in The Holy Bible:

“No man hath seen God at any time” (1. John 4: 12).

Besides the above two incidents, especially during the later part of his life Muhammad used to see Allah almost daily and speak to Him, quite often even more than once daily. These encounters took place when he was in a state of trance or semi-awake condition. These seeings were through the enlightenment of his soul and not through his eyes. Hence these thousands of occasions cannot be compared with the above mentioned two incidents which naturally remain unique.

On page 129: of “*Muhammadanism—An Historical Survey*” by H.A.R. Gibbs one finds the following statements which confirm the opinion of even European research scholars that the Holy Prophet Muhammad not only used to experience the *Presence of Allah* but that he also *lived and acted under continuous Divine Guidance and Light*:

“What seems certain, at least, is that the mystical sense of the Presence of God, was implicit in Muhammad’s activities as a prophet.

“But by contrast their religious devotion was, at its best, the outcome of a profound spiritual experience stimulated by Muhammad’s preaching of the judgment”.

Accordingly it is obvious that not only Muhammad but even his followers were at their best or the highest stage of religious devotion as a result of the outcome of profound spiritual experience of Allah as stimulated by the preachings of the Holy Prophet. It is but natural that those who live in the Creator’s Presence, spending their lives for His Pleasures and living according to His Laws and Orders will not only be successful but will be able to guide and save all those who carry out their instructions.

## 10. The prevailing conditions in Arabia

Devenport has written on pages 2-4 of “*Mohammed and the Koran*”:

“The Arabs believed neither in a future state nor in the creation of the world but attributed the formation of the universe to nature, and its future destruction to time. Debauchery and robbery everywhere prevailed, and since death was regarded as the end, strictly so called, of existence so was there neither recompense for virtue nor punishment for vice. A like moral and religious corruption was to be found among the Christians and the Jews who, for ages had established themselves in the Arabian Peninsula, and had there formed very powerful parties. The Jews had come to seek in that land of liberty an asylum from the persecution of the Romans; the Christians had also fled thither in order to escape the massacres occasioned by the Nestorian Eutychianism and Arian discussions. It is not easy to conceive of anything more deplorable than the condition of Christianity at this time (in fact, the corruption of the teachers of Christianity had alienated the popular mind. “Their lies, their legends, their Saints and their miracles, but, above all, the abandoned behaviour of their priesthood, had brought their churches in Arabia very low”—Bruce’s *Travels*, Vol. i. p. 501). The scattered branches of the Christian Church in Asia and Africa were at variance with each other, and had adopted the wildest heresies and superstitions. They were engaged in perpetual controversies and torn to pieces by the disputes of the Arians, Sabellians, Nestorians, and Eutychians, whilst the simony, the incontinence, the general barbarism and ignorance which were to be found amongst the clergy caused great scandal to the Christian religion, and introduced universal profligacy of manners among the people. In Arabia the desert swarmed with ignorant and infatuated Cenobites, or recluses, wasting their lives in vain but fiery speculations, and *then rushing often armed, in mobs into the cities, preaching their fantasies in the Churches, and enforcing assent to them by the SWORD. The grossest idolatry had usurped the place of the simple worship instituted by Jesus—that of an All Wise, Almighty, and All Beneficent Being, without equal and without similitude; a*

new Olympus had been imagined, people with a crowd of martyrs, saints, and angels, in lieu of the ancient gods of paganism. *There were found Christian sects impious enough to invest the wife of Joseph (Virgin Mary) with the honours and attributes of a goddess* (The so-called *Marianites* are said to have even attempted the introduction of a *heretical Trinity by substituting the Virgin for the Holy Ghost*). *Relics and carved and painted images were objects of the most fervid worship on the part of those whom the word of Christ commanded to address their prayers to the living God alone.* Such were the scenes which the Church of Christ presented in Alexandria, in Aleppo, and in Damascus. At the time of Muhammad's advent all had abandoned the principles of their religion to indulge in never-ending wranglings upon dogmas of a secondary importance, and the Arabian people could not but see that they had lost sight of the most essential point of every religious doctrine—the pure and true worship of God—and that as regarded the most disgraceful and the grossest superstition, they were upon a par with their pagan contemporaries”.

Arabia from before the time of Muhammad was indeed the most backward country on the face of the Earth. Many people all over the world not only worshipped as Gods: images, idols, the Sun, Moon, Stars, Trinity and those elements of nature, which represented a force or power such as high hills, rivers; seas but even animals such as snakes, cows *etc.* The Arabs out did the rest in every way including gambling, drinking, prostitution and oppression of the poor and weak by the rich. *They used to bury their daughters ALIVE just to escape what they considered an abuse of being called “Father-in-law”.* As an example *Wahya Qalbi* before his conversion buried alive seventy daughters. *They used to divorce their wives by merely saying “your body looks like that of my mother”: or “I divorce you” and repeat it three times!* There was no law to protect women from such whimsical divorces. On the death of their fathers the sons used to treat their mothers as their property and rape them! For small insignificant incidents their families used to fight wars lasting even may be a hundred years full of hate and cruelty. In case they belonged to different tribes then regular tribal wars were



fought with all its horrors for many decades. Anybody travelling was in constant danger of attacks from Bedouin tribes of nomads who roamed the vast deserts of Arabia. Anybody falling into their hands was robbed of all his belongings and sold into slavery. Slavery was rampant with no rights or protection for slaves who could even be killed by their masters just like cattle are killed at the sweet will of their owners. There was no unity, peace or security throughout Arabia.

It is therefore small wonder that they persecuted Muhammad bitterly when he preached amongst them that Allah is one and alone and that idolatry was meaningless and the height of ignorance.

### **11. The chance meeting with people from Madinah**

It was in these frustrating conditions during the pilgrimage season in 620 A.D. that Muhammad chanced to meet a little group of people, who heard him gladly. They had come from Yathrib (Chapter 13: F). As read earlier they had heard daily from the Jewish Rabbis in their city about the Promised Prophet, who was soon expected. They recognised him as the Promised Prophet. They went back and related that they had met the Promised Prophet.

### **12. The first delegation from Madinah**

During the pilgrimage season of 621 A.D., a delegation came for the sole purpose of meeting Muhammad. These swore allegiance (for the first oath please refer to Chapter 13: F) to him secretly at Al-Aqabah, a place some distance from Mecca. They took with them a Muslim teacher. Soon there was not a single house in Yathrib, wherein there was not the mention of the messenger of Allah.

When the people of Yathrib heard of the daily dangers to the Prophet's life at Mecca and the daily tortures and persection he was facing, they decided to invite Muhammad to come over to Yathrib, where they would defend him with their lives as they would protect their families.

### **13. The invitation from the people of Madinah**

The following year a delegation of 73 representatives from Yathrib came to Mecca during the pilgrimage season of 622 A.D.

This delegation again secretly met Muhammad at Al-Aqabah just outside Mecca. They invited all Muslims over to Yathrib or Madinah promising to share their wealth and possessions with the Meccan Muslims and to protect the Prophet with their lives (For details of their Oath, the letter from King Tibba *etc.* please refer to Chapter 13: F).

Soon the Muslims who were in a position to do so began to sell their property and to leave Mecca, secretly for some unknown destination.

### **14. The attempted murder of Muhammad**

Qureysh soon realised that Muslims were slowly and secretly leaving Mecca. They hated Muhammad in their midst, but dreaded even more what might happen if he escaped from them for two particular reasons *viz*:

- a. The thirteen years of day and night tortures perpetrated upon Muhammad and the possibilities of revenge.
- b. If he got a large following, then he would surely destroy idolatry, which was their main source of income as custodians of the Kaabah.

At this stage Muhammad lost his chief protector, his uncle Abu Talib, who died just when almost all Muslims had left Mecca for Madinah. Probably only three able-bodied men were left. They were the Prophet, Ali and Abu Bakr.

This gave the Meccans their longed-for opportunity of trying to murder Muhammad whilst he was still at Mecca. They still had to reckon with the vengeance of his clan upon the clan of the murderers. Therefore they secretly cast lots and chose one slayer out of each and

every clan at Mecca, save and except those who were with Muhammad. All these were to attack the Prophet simultaneously and strike together, as one man. Thus his blood would be upon all Qureysh. It would be impossible to retaliate against each and every clan of Qureysh. That was their well-laid-out plan. An English Research scholar has recorded his findings:

“He (Muhammad) went on speaking to who would listen to him; publishing his Doctrine among the pilgrims as they came to Mecca; gaining adherents in this place and that: Continual contradiction, hatred, open or secret danger attended him. His powerful relations protected Muhammad himself; but by and by, on his own advice, all his adherents had to quit Mecca, and seek refuge in Abyssinia over the sea. The Qureysh grew ever angrier; laid plots, and swore oaths among them; to put Muhammad to death with their own hands. Abu Talib was dead, the good Khadija was dead. Muhammad is not solicitous of sympathy from us; but his outlook at this time was one of the dismalest. He had to hide in caverns, escape in disguise; fly hither and thither; homeless, in continual peril of his life. More than once it seemed all-over with him; more than once it turned on a straw, some rider’s horse taking fright or the like, whether Muhammad and his Doctrine had not ended there, and not been heard of at all. But it was not to end so!

“In the thirteenth year of his mission, finding his enemies all banded against him, forty sworn men, one out of every tribe, waiting to take his life, and no continuance possible at Mecca for him any longer, Muhammad fled to the place then called Yathrib, where he gained some adherents; the place they now call Madinah, or *Madinat al Nabi*, ‘the City of the Prophet’, from that circumstance” (page 60, *The Hero as Prophet* by Thomas Carlyle, published by Oxford University Press, 1909).

When Qureysh made this resolve the Prophet received his first revelation ordering him to make war upon the persecutors of Islam as follows:

“Tell those who disbelieve that it they cease (from persecution of

believers) that which is past will be forgiven them; but if they returned (thereto) then the example of the men of old (like the people of Noah, Lot, A'ad, Thamud, Pharaoh, (Jerusalem, Babylon, Pompeii *etc*) hath already gone (before them for a warning).

“And fight them until persecution is no more, and religion is all for Allah. But if they cease then lo! Allah is Seer of what they do.

“And if they turn away, then know that Allah is your Befriender—a transcendent Patron, a transcendent Helper” (Qur'an 8: 38-40).

Thus it will be seen that these Divine Qur'anic orders exhorting to fight are clear and specific on the following aspects:

- a. No war could be fought for the purpose of revenge!
- b. No war could be fought against mischief-makers if they desisted from creating mischief!
- c. No war could be fought on the grounds that the pagans did not believe in Islam!
- d. Those who desisted from mischief would be forgiven their past crimes!
- e. Allah would protect those who believed in Him.

This is the finding of an English research scholar:

“Hitherto Muhammad had professed to publish *his Religion by the way of preaching and persuasion alone*. But now, driven foully out of his native country, since unjust men had not only given no ear to his earnest Heaven's message, the deep cry of his heart, but would not even let him live if he kept speaking it,—the wild son of the Desert resolved to defend (*not attack*) himself, like a man and Arab. If the Qureysh will have it so, they shall have its tidings, felt to be of infinite moment to them and all men, they would not listen to these; would trample them down by sheer violence, steel and murder: well, let steel try it then! Ten years more this Muhammad had (of life left); all of fighting, of breathless impetuous toil and struggle; with what results we know” (pages 60-61, *The Hero as Prophet* by Thomas Carlyle).

Abu Bakr; a man of wealth, had kept two riding camels ready to leave Mecca at short notice. The Prophet only awaited Allah's command. It came at length. That was the night which was selected for his murder! The slayers had already surrounded his house! Muhammad gave his cloak to Ali, bidding him to lie down on his bed so that anyone looking in might think that Muhammad lay there. The slayers were to strike him as he came out of the house, whether in the night or early morning. He knew that they would not injure Ali.

Then he left the house. By a miracle all slayers became *temporarily blind* and did not see him come out of the house. He went to Abu Bakr's house and called him. Together they made good their escape from the hands of the Meccan murderers and avoided capture. Once a search party came quite near them in their hiding place near Mecca, and Abu Bakr was afraid: but the Prophet said: "Fear not! Lo! Allah is with us" (Qur'an 9: 40). After many days of travelling by unfrequented routes, they safely arrived at Yathrib (or Madinah).

### **15. Muhammad's welcome at Yathrib (Madinah)**

As soon as the news of the miraculous escape of Muhammad from the clutches of the Meccan murderers was received, the Muslims of Yathrib decided to give him a befitting welcome. Accordingly for weeks past the people of the city had been going every morning, awaiting the arrival of the Prophet till the heat of the day drove them into shelters. Muhammad accompanied by Abu Bakr arrived in the heat, after the watchers had retired. It was a Jew who called out in derisive tones to the Muslims that he whom they expected had at last arrived.

Such were the scenes of joy and welcome that it is quite impossible to describe them. The ladies of the city all rushed out and danced with "Dhaf" (a musical instrument of the Arabs) and sang welcome songs and hymns in his honour and kissed the feet of the Prophet. They continued this for several hours until they were exhausted. This incident is known as "Moulud-un-Nabi" or the welcome to the

Prophet. Some brought fruits and dates, while others offered sweet drinks and food. The Prophet wept with joy—indeed what a contrast between the treatment of hate and torture he had left behind at Mecca and this spontaneous love by young and old, one and all! Muslims still celebrate every happy occasion with a “Moulud-un-Nabi” in honour of the Holy Prophet as for them there can be no incident of greater joy than the Wonderful welcome given by the people of Yathrib to their beloved Muhammad! The Angels celebrated “Moulud-un-Nabi” when Muhammad visited Heaven on the night of Mehraj-un-Nabi (Chapter 17: E-9).

On his arrival at Yathrib everybody invited the Prophet to be their honoured guest. Muhammad did not know what to do as he did not want to displease anybody. As read earlier in Chapter 13: F, he permitted his camel to go and stop at any house it liked. How the Prophet was tested and all that happened thereafter has already been given in Chapter 13: G. so it is not necessary to repeat the same here.

## **16. The commencement of the Hijrah Era or Muslim calendar**

Immediately after the feasting and merriment of his welcome was over, Muhammad made a speech which was heard by members of all communities including pagans, Jews and Muslims. The people were so impressed by the good advices given by the Prophet in this momentous speech that jointly they all made him the head of their city. Thus started the “Secular Government of Islam” under the control and direction of Muhammad, which made no distinction between caste, colour or creed, the rich or the poor, the master and his slave! As one his first acts he set up an organisation to purchase and free the slaves!

This incident of the establishment of the Secular Government of Islam at Madinah in 622 A.D. is the commencement of the Islamic Era which is known as the “Hijrah”. The Muslim Calendar starts from this year and comprises twelve lunar months as against the solar calendar used by the Western civilisation.

## 17. The training in the art of self-defence

After he had been twelve months in Yathrib several small expeditions went out, led either by the Prophet himself or some other of the fugitives from Mecca, for the purpose of reconnoitring and or dissuading other tribes from siding with Qureysh, who had sworn to make an end of him and Islam. Considering their weakness and the fact that they did not result in any fighting, they can hardly be termed warlike, though they were ready to resist attack. It is noteworthy that in those expeditions only fugitives from Mecca were employed, and never the natives of Yathrib. The reason being that the command to wage war had been revealed to the Prophet at Mecca after the men of Yathrib had sworn their second oath of allegiance at Al- Aqabah, and returned. Their oath foresaw fighting in mere defence, not fighting in the field. Blood was shed in only one of those early expeditions and then too against the Prophet's orders. The purpose of those expeditions was to habituate the Meccan Muslims in going out well trained for war. *For thirteen years they had been strict pacifists and it is clear, from the several passages of the Qur'an that many of them including, the Prophet himself, hated the idea of fighting even in self-defence and had to be inured to it because of the threat posed by Qureysh, who were out to obliterate Muhammad and Islam by the sword!*

## 18. The victory of Badr

In the second year of the Hijrah, the Meccan merchants' caravan was returning from Syria as usual by a road which passed not far from Yathrib. As its leader Abu Sufian approached the territory of Yathrib, he heard a rumour that the Prophet proposed to capture the caravan. He at once sent a camel rider to Mecca for help. A fully armed force of a thousand strong was soon on its way to Yathrib; not with the hope of saving the caravan, as they would in any case be too late, but with the idea of destroying Muhammad and Islam forever!

When reports were received in Madinah that an army of Qureysh

had advanced more than half way to Yathrib with the object of destroying Islam, the Holy Prophet set out in defence with a small force of only 313, which more or less comprised all the Muslim converts.

All three parties—the army of Qureysh, the Muslims and the caravan—were heading for the Oasis of Badr. Abu Sufian, the leader of the caravan, heard from one of his scouts that the Muslims were near the water, and turned back to the coastal plain. The Muslims met the army of Qureysh by the water of Badr. Some of the Qureysh pointed out that as the Meccan caravan had not been attacked, there was no justifiable cause for fighting and that they should return. But those who were out to efface Islam by fair or foul means saw in this occasion an excellent opportunity and caused an attack to be made upon the Muslims without any justification whatsoever. Muhammad in this grave moment of unprovoked attack gave leave to all the Ansars (*i.e.* Natives of Yathrib) to return to their homes un-reproached, since their oath did not include the duty of fighting in the field; but the Ansars refused.

The signal victory at Badr, by Divine help, to the ill-armed Muslims over the fully armed army of pagans gave the Prophet a new prestige among the Arab tribes; but thenceforth there was the feud of blood between Qureysh and the baby Islamic State of Madinah in addition to the old religious hatred.

### **19. The truce of Al-Hudybiyah**

The defeat of Qureysh at Badr had made them more determined to destroy Islam and Muhammad. They prepared a strong army of their own, and attacked Madinah from Mt. Uhud on its outskirts. Despite the heavy odds, the battle on Mt. Uhud would have been a greater victory than that of Badr for the Muslims but for the disobedience of a band of fifty archers, whom Muhammad set to guard a pass against the enemy cavalry. Seeing their comrades victorious, these men left their post. The result was that the cavalry of Qureysh rode through the gap



and fell on the Muslims from their rear. Muhammad was wounded and the cry arose that he was slain, till someone recognised him and cried that out he was still living—a shout to which the Muslims rallied. Gathering round the Prophet they retreated leaving behind many dead on the hillside.

On the following day the Prophet, even though injured, again sallied forth with the remnants of the Muslim army, so that Qureysh might be deterred from attacking Madinah. This strategem succeeded and Qureysh withdrew to Mecca without another fight.

In the fifth year of the Hijrah, the idolaters made a great effort and collected armies from all the clans. This all Arab army of ten thousand fully trained soldiers marched upon Madinah with the avowed intention of destroying all trace of Islam. There they were joined by the powerful Jewish army from the tribe of Bani Qureyzah. Everything looked black for the Muslims, who hardly numbered a thousand. But Madinah was saved miraculously without even a battle being fought.

All this caused more and more bitterness, whilst Muhammad wanted peace and security at all cost. For this purpose he decided upon performing his first "*Jihad*" upon the people of Mecca and their allies and somehow win them over so that there may be lasting peace and goodwill instead of wars and hatred. With this object of having a peace treaty with Meccans and their allies he attired himself and a group of followers as pilgrims, taking with them the customary offerings. Thus a company of fourteen hundred unarmed men set out on their "*Jihad*" to Mecca with the avowed intention of having lasting peace and friendship. It required great strength of mind and control over one's passions to undertake such a perilous task unarmed! For the meaning of *Jihad* and how Muhammad had practised it according to the opinions of European Scholars please refer to Chapter 21: C.

As they drew near the Holy valley they were met by a friend from the city, who warned Muhammad that Qureysh had put on their leopard-skins (the badge of valour) and had sworn to prevent him

entering the sanctuary; their cavalry was on the road before him. On hearing that, the Holy Prophet ordered a detour through mountain gorges and came down into the valley of Mecca. He camped at a spot called Al-Hudeybiyah; from whence he tried to open negotiations for peaceful settlement with Qureysh, explaining that he came only as a pilgrim and offered gifts as token of peace!

The first messenger he sent towards the city was maltreated and his camel hamstrung. He was obliged to return without even being able to deliver his message. Qureysh on their side sent envoys who were threatening in tone and very arrogant. One of them, who was too familiar, had to be reminded sternly of the respect due the Holy Prophet. It was he, who, on his return to the city, declared publicly before the Meccans awaiting his report:

“I have seen many a Roman Emperor and many a Persian Emperor in their pomp and splendour, but never have I seen any man honoured as Muhammad is honoured by his comrades”.

The Holy Prophet sought some messenger who would impose reverence. Osman was chosen finally because of his kinship with the powerful Umayyad family. While the Muslims were awaiting peacefully for Osman's return a troop of soldiers were sent out from the city to molest the Muslims in their camp. But they were captured before they could do any harm and brought as captives before the Prophet, who forgave them on their promise to renounce hostility. When these freed “Prisoners of war” went back to Mecca a few hours later they informed the rest that they had sworn to Muhammad that they would not fight him anymore but that they had promised to have peace with him. Only after this incident proper envoys came from Qureysh.

After some negotiation, the truce of Al-Hudeybiyah was signed in the year 6 A.H. on the following terms:

1. For ten years there were to be no hostilities between the respective parties.
2. This year the Prophet was to return to Madinah without

visiting the Kaabah,

3. But in the following year he might perform the pilgrimage with his followers.
4. Qureysh promised they would evacuate Mecca for three days to allow him to do so.
5. Deserters from Qureysh to the Muslims during the period of the truce were to be returned, but not vice versa.
6. Any tribe or clan which wished to share in the treaty as allies of either the Qureysh or the Muslims might do so.

These humble and humiliating terms of truce proves clearly that Islam was not out to impose itself by force upon anyone. Further, the Holy Prophet was a just and humble person. That arrogance and imposing his will over others did not form any part of his good nature and cooperative sportsman like spirit of “*Jihad*” (Chapter 21: C).

There was dismay amongst the Muslims at the magnanimity of these terms. They asked one another: “Where is the victory that we were promised? It was during the return journey from, Al-Hudeybiyah that the Chapter of the Qur’an (Surah) entitled “Victory” was revealed. This “*Jihad*” of Muhammad *i.e.* the truce even on such unfair terms to Muslims proved, in fact, to be the greatest victory that the Muslims had achieved till then. War had been a barrier between them and the idolaters, but now both parties met and talked together.

The result was that, the idolaters more out of curiosity than anything else asked their brethren, who had become Muslims, as to why they had given up their old faith. In this manner the knowledge and appreciation of the new religion soon spread far and wide. This “*Jihad*” of Muhammad or “*Peace at all cost*” instead of proving to be humiliating, as thought by the Muslims masses, started paying rich dividends after two or three years. This treaty become famous throughout Arabia within a couple of years and gave the impression that for the promotion of peace and goodwill the Muslims were a very

reasonable self disciplined set of people. Soon many pagans, who considered themselves as reasonable people, all started converting to Islam in large groups at a time between 8 and 10 A.H.—the last two years of Muhammad’s life on earth.

## **20. The Truce broken by the Qureysh**

Upon seeing the success the Muslims were achieving in spreading Islam as a result of the truce, the Qureysh broke the treaty two years later, *i.e.* in the eighth year of Hijrah by attacking a tribe that was in alliance with the Muslims and slaughtering them even inside the sacred sanctuary at Mecca. Afterwards they became afraid of what they had done. They sent Abu Sufian to Madinah to ask for the existing treaty to be renewed and its terms prolonged. They hoped that he would arrive before the tidings of the massacre. But a messenger from the injured tribe had been before him, and his mission was fruitless (See also Chapter 13: J and 21: D-1).

## **21. The fall of Mecca**

Then the Prophet summoned all Muslims capable of bearing arms and marched to Mecca at the head of ten thousand Muslims to punish the treacherous treaty-breakers and to obtain compensation for the massacre of the tribe of Khuzaa, even after they had taken shelter inside the sacred sanctuary at Kaabah. Qureysh were overawed. Their cavalry put up a show of defence before the town, but were routed without bloodshed and Muhammad entered his native city as a conqueror. The inhabitants naturally expected vengeance for their past misdeeds. But the “Rahmat Ul Lil Aalamin (*i.e.* The Blessing or the Comforter of the Universe) proclaimed a general amnesty. Only four well-known murderers were on the proscribed list, but the magnanimity of the heart of Muhammad the “Blessing or Comforter for the entire creation” even forgave them (for details please refer to Chapter 21: C). In their relief and surprise, the whole population of Mecca hastened to swear allegiance. The Prophet then entered the Kaabah and as he went before

each one of the 360 idols, and pointing at each of them with his staff, he would declare:

*“The truth has prevailed,  
“Darkness hath vanished away”.*

At this Command of his recited before each of the 360 idols installed by the Qureysh in The Kaabah, these idols by themselves, without anyone touching them, miraculously fell one by one and broke into fragments (Miracle No. 212, pages 101-102, *Maujizat -e-Muhammadia* by Mufti Enayatullah).

Thus Muhammad became the greatest destroyer of idols and idolatry in the world as prophecised by Jesus (pages 167 and 223, *The Gospel of Barnabas*).

The Muslim call for prayers was given that very day and the “Bait Ullah” or the House of Allah was once again purified to its original position, as when built by Abraham and his first born Ishmael (Chapter 7: H).

Thus eighteen years later was fulfilled, the order of Allah given to Muhammad, on receiving which at the end of the third year of Prophethood, he had climbed the very same surrounding hill as Abraham had done earlier (Chapter 7: I). He had likewise given the same call of one inviting mankind from the wilderness of Paran or Mecca to the way of Allah. Thus the order was fulfilled and Mecca abolished idolatry, while the laws of Allah prevailed.

In the last Chapter of the last book of the *Torah* is the farewell message of Moses forecasting that Muhammad would get the Qur’an at Cave Hira on Mount Nur in Mecca and that he would conquer Mecca with ten thousand saintly followers and that he would issue a fiery law abolishing idolatry for all time and would forgive the mischief makers of Mecca. This last sacred advice of Moses has already been quoted earlier from the Holy Bible in Chapter 13: D, which may be referred to here.

## 22. The Battle of Huneyn

*The purification of the Kaabah from a temple full of idols into the worship of Allah, The Alone, Who has no form or shape and is infinite is a very significant event.* The more so because the whole of pagan Arabia held the Kaabah, the house of Allah, as their most sacred and revered place of pilgrimage for the atonement of one's sins. They were fully aware of how the unjust Yemeni Army had been destroyed miraculously a few days before the birth of Muhammad some 60 years earlier, when the people of Mecca had fled away leaving Allah to defend His temple of Kaabah against the might of the Yemeni force (Chapter 8: G). Therefore they knew perfectly well that unless Muhammad was in the right, he could never get the control of Mecca from the local people, who were the custodians. They however nursed one doubt. They still wondered why the Meccans gave up without any bloodshed in a bitter fight.

Therefore to remove this doubt, there was a big gathering of the angry pagan tribes from all over Arabia eager to regain the Kaabah and thus avenge the miraculous destruction of the idols by Muhammad. The Holy Prophet defended the truth with only a small force of twelve thousand men against the pagan army of a hundred thousand or more. At Huneyn, in a deep ravine, the Muslim troops were ambushed by the enemy and almost put to flight. But the victory was complete when it came with Divine help to the Prophet and his bodyguard of a few faithful comrades, who alone stood firm in this battle.

## 23. The capture of Taif

The tribes of Thaqif who led the ambush at Huneyn, fled to their city "Taif". Therefore Taif, a city very close to Mecca, had to be captured. Here again Muhammad displayed the magnanimity of his heart and forgave all the mischief-makers who had killed many Muslims and had even tortured and stoned him almost unto death as already referred to earlier in Chapter 17: E-8.

## **24. The Declaration of Immunity**

Although Mecca had been conquered and its people were now Muslims, the official order of the Pilgrimage had not been changed. The pagan Arabs performed it in their own manner, and the Muslims in theirs. It was only after the pilgrims' caravan had left Madinah in the ninth year of the Hijrah, when Al-Islam was dominant in Western Arabia, that *the Declaration of Immunity*, as it is called, *was revealed*. The Holy Prophet sent a copy of it by messenger to Abu Bakr, leader of the pilgrimage, with the instruction that Ali was to read it to the multitudes at Mecca. Its purport was that after that year Muslims only were to make the pilgrimage, the exception being made for such of the idolaters as had a treaty with the Muslims, and had never broken their treaty, or supported anyone against them. Such were to enjoy the privileges of their treaty for the term thereof. However when their treaty expired they would be treated as other idolaters. *That proclamation marks the end of idol-worship in Arabia*. Thus again Muhammad proved that he is *the destroyer of Idolatry as foretold by Jesus* (pages 167 & 223, *The Gospel of Barnabas*).

## **25. The year of Deputations**

Devenport has recorded on pages 40-41 of "*Mohammed and the Koran*" as follows:

In the ninth year of the Hijrah embassies arrived at Mecca and Madinah from all parts to tender the submission of various princes to the Prophet. The Christian king of Abyssinia, to whom Mohammed had despatched a special messenger, replied:

"Peace be to God, the Holy King, the faithful, true powerful and mighty Saviour! *I attest that there is but one God, and that Muhammad is his prophet*. The Apostle of God hath written to me to ask, in marriage, my daughter, Omome Hababa. I joyfully fulfil his wish, and give, as her dower, 4000 gold crowns."

"About this time, also, Muhammad had a seal made, bearing this

inscription; *Muhammad, the Apostle of God*. This was to be used in sealing the letters written by him to diverse princes, inviting them to embrace Islam. His first letter to this effect was sent to Badham, Viceroy of Yemen, to be forwarded to Khosroes, King of Persia. Khosroes tore the letter in pieces, ordering Badham either to restore the Prophet to his right mind, or to send him his head. As soon as this insult was made known to the Prophet, he exclaimed; “*Thus shall Allah tear asunder the kingdom of Khosroes, and reject his supplication*’. Khosroes was soon after murdered by his son Sirses. Badham, with his people, became Mussulmans, and Muhammad allowed him to continue in his government. Herodius (should be Heraclius) the Roman Emperor, who, as Arab historians assure us, received an epistle addressed to him by Muhammad, with the utmost respect, placing it under his pillow, despatched an embassy to the Prophet, with rich presents. Two other sovereigns, Hawansa and Elmonda, had come, of their own accord, to visit Muhammad, and embrace Islam at his feet. Such success is easily accounted for by the fact that in Muhammad was to be found united, not only great elevation of Character but also a rich persuasive eloquence, so that words falling from his lips having all the force of inspiration, made the deepest impression upon the imagination of the Arabs, and being repeated from mouth to mouth, reached the remotest parts. The Book, also, which Muhammad offered to them and to the whole Eastern world, was full of magnificent promises; a book, moreover, which exacted little but rewarded much, and whence emanated an irresistible authority attracting everything to itself.”

Besides the magnificent conduct of Muhammad, his magnanimity in forgiving those who tortured and tried to kill him, the love and the enthusiastic and persuasive manner in which he invited people to embrace Islam and the many converts he was winning over, came the news of the capture of Mecca without any bloodshed and the complete defeat of the mighty pagan All-Arabian forces, which had ambushed the Prophet in a death trap soon spread far and wide to all the extreme corners of Arabia. Everybody in Arabia were convinced fully that Muhammad represented the truth of Allah. Otherwise he could not have captured the Kaabah without bloodshed and so completely turn



defeat into an incomparable victory over the Arab might at Huneyn. Therefore from all parts of Arabia and the surrounding areas of North Eastern Africa deputations of several thousands started arriving daily at Madinah to swear allegiance to the Prophet and to hear the Qur'an. These included all the Arab kings and all the tribes of Arabia in addition to many others. By now it was the ninth year of Hijrah *i.e.* about 731 A.D. By the tenth year all Arabia had accepted Islam and the Holy Prophet had in fact become the unquestioned and uncrowned emperor of Arabia. But his life still remained as simple as before. There were no palaces for him but his humble mud hut with only a couple of rooms. There were no guards or retinue of servants and slaves. Muhammad did all his work by himself. He did not receive any fat allowances from the treasury. He used to earn his living by mending roads *etc.* He used to eat a meal once in two or three days, *i.e.* whenever he earned enough for a simple frugal meal which consisted usually of a few dates or olive oil with bread or vinegar water and bread. Only one item of food was enough. He would never dine if more than two varieties of food were placed before him. He was so very simple! He accepted no charities or any fees for any religious services rendered! Instead of the fine velvet and silk clothings of worldly emperors, his one old back woollen blanket served as his all purpose clothing, a bed at night, a prayer carpet to pray on, a protection from the sun or cold as the occasion arose. It had more than a dozen patches on it!

He controlled personally every detail of organisation, judged every case and was accessible to every suppliant, rich or poor, black or white, tribal or national distinctions making no difference whatsoever.

The "Rahmat Ul Lil Aalameen" or the "Promised Comforter" or "Blessings for the Universe" did indeed have the joy and satisfaction at the time of his departure from earth that no other Prophet could even dream of. Those uncultured wild barbarian murderers and robbers comprising the pagan Arab tribes of 622 A.D. were in the very short period of ten years in 632 A.D. the world's largest group of brothers. Idolatry was destroyed in Arabia for all time, especially within the two

years of the capture of Mecca. *Women were raised from the status of chattel to complete legal equality with man for the first time in human history! Stopped forever was the burial of daughters alive! Slaves were to be treated, fed, clothed and looked after just as one looks after himself and his wife and children. No difference of any kind between masters and slaves was permitted—thus sowing the seeds of abolition of slavery! He stopped effectually drunkenness and immorality which had till then disgraced the Arabs. He made man sincere and honest in their dealings and transformed tribes that had been for centuries content with ignorance into a people with the greatest thirst for knowledge. Also for the first time in human history he established universal human brotherhood as a fact and principle of common law.* Gone were the days of tribal differences, disputes, wars and bloodshed! It was replaced by the world's most cultured and scientifically advanced nation of the time, carrying high the torch of "Surrender to the Will of Allah", Al Islam, which spread like wild fire in the next approximately thirty years *i.e.* until the Caliphate (Presidentship) of Ali Ibne Abu Taleb from Sinkiang in China on the East across southern Russia, right through without any break to Morocco in the West. Till this day Islamic brotherhood is the dominant religious force in these areas, to which may be added China, Turkey, Pakistan, Indonesia and Malaysia, whilst India, U.S.S.R., Thailand and Philippines have large Muslim minorities.

*Thus sprung up miraculously out of complete chaos and confusion the universal brotherhood of Islam in which all are equals in spite of their different languages, habits, cultures, manners, nationalities and colours of the skin—yellow, brown, fair and black.* This universal group of brothers in faith in the "Surrender to the Will of Allah" comprises the Chinese, Mongolians, Tartars, Cossacks, Turks, Indians, Malaysians, Indonesians, Pakistanis, Afgans, Iranians, Iraqis, Arabs of all groups and types including the Black Africans.

*This universal love and brotherhood without any caste, colour and nationality was not confined only to that period. Nay! you can still witness it each and every year till this day on the occasion of Haj to Bait*

*Ullah or Kaabah at Mecca.* Muslims by their millions from all over the earth gather at Mecca, without any kind of distinction between them (Chapter 7: H and I). Indeed! it is the most wondrous and joyous sight of universal love and brotherhood for even though they do not understand one another's languages yet by signs and expressions they get along as members of one huge family of brothers and sisters trying their best to cooperate with and accommodate one another irrespective of nationality or colour of skin.

When all their meetings at the U. N. O. are not bearing the fruits of International Peace and Goodwill, is it not time for the educated world of today to pause and think for a while?

Does not the example of universal love and brotherhood witnessed every year at Kaabah speak for itself? Will not the world be able to solve her problems by accepting this example which has stood the test of time now for 1400 years! Has any system displayed such universal love and brotherhood without any kind of distinction, or for such a long period covering fourteen centuries?

Does not world history show how time and again powerful nations and cultures have disappeared in a flash leaving only their names in the pages of history for their refusal to surrender themselves to the Will of Allah? Do we require to be reminded how the people of Noah were drowned in the deluge or the people of Lot in the Dead Sea or of the destruction of Nimrod, Babylon, Pompeii, the Egyptian Army of Pharaoh by drowning or the ancient tribes of Thamud and Aad of Arabia *etc.* Did or could any of them escape the disaster when it suddenly came upon them? Is not the world warned of an impending horrible Nuclear Holocaust during the third world war as already mentioned in Chapter 2: H. This will burst with such a suddenness that all the beautiful rich cities controlling the world would be demolished in but one hour as foretold in the *Holy-Bible* (Chapter 25: C-G).

Or are the hearts of men so hardened that they are going to disregard the warnings given in Chapter 2: I, in spite of so many signs

and foretellings until the calamity has suddenly overtaken them. *Then alas! will it not be too late?*

## 26. The farewell Pilgrimage

In the tenth year of the Hijrah Muhammed went to Mecca as a pilgrim for the last time.

It was during this pilgrimage of farewell that two important revelations were made.

The Surah "Succour" (Qur'an 110) was revealed announcing his approaching departure from earthly life followed by the last revelation of the Qur'an (5: 3).

From a hillock known as "Rahmat" (*i.e.* "Blessings") on the plains of Arafat, Muhammad preached to an enormous throng of hundreds of thousands of pilgrims. He reminded them of all the duties Al-Islam enjoined upon them, and that they would one day have to meet their Lord, Who would judge each one of them according to his work. At the end of the discourse, he asked: "*Have I not conveyed the Message?* And from that great multitude, who a few months or years before had all been conscienceless idolaters, the shout went up: "*By Allah! Yes*". The Prophet said: "*O Allah! Be Thou Witness*".

## 27. The Holy Hair

Those who understood the significance of these revelations and the farewell speech approached Muhammad for some small mementoes. The Prophet asked Ibne Umaiya Gazzai (a barber) to shave off his hair, which he asked Anas (his servant) to distribute (to the multitude, page 229, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Each of these pieces of hair has the following miraculous qualities which do not exist with any other human hair:

- i. That these pieces of holy hair throw no shadow (because the body of the Prophet being made out of the pure spirit

*i.e.* “Nur-e-Muhammadi” did not throw any shadow).

- ii. That these pieces of cut hair would keep on growing larger each year (This denotes that Nur-e-Muhammadi has been blessed with eternal life after his creation by Allah).
- iii. A cloud will appear on top of the hair if the hair is taken under a clear blue sky, when the sun is up just as a piece of cloud used to give shade over the Prophet during his life on earth as foretold by Jesus on page 167, *The Gospel of Barnabas*.
- iv. Every few years a new branch of hair would come out with the same miraculous qualities as the original piece.

Shah Waliullah Mohaddis Dehelvi has confirmed that his father Shah Abdur Rahim one day saw the Prophet giving him two pieces of his hair in a dream. In the morning he found these two pieces of hair upon his pillow. These two pieces had all the above miraculous qualities. Whenever “Darood Sharif” (*i.e.* Salutation to the Holy Prophet) is recited the two pieces would disentangle themselves miraculously and stand upright. When the recitation was over they would again get entangled miraculously. One day three disbelievers came to their house. There was not a speck of cloud in the clear blue sky of Delhi. They challenged Shah Abdur Rahim to bring these pieces of “Holy Hair” out into the bright sunshine. Immediately a speck of cloud miraculously appeared over the Holy Hair. This experiment was carried out thrice, at intervals so as to remove the chances of coincidence. All the three pagans became Muslims. On the occasion of the Prophet’s birthday, these Holy Hairs are exhibited. On one such occasion an unclean person was amongst those who came to see the Holy Hair. The lock of the safe in which it was kept would not open. Then Shah Abdur Rahim announced that somebody unclean was present over there. He begged of the congregation that whosoever was unclean should kindly go away. Thereupon one man got up and went away. Instantly the lock opened without any effort (pages 230-231, Vol.

II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Today thousands of pieces of the Holy Hair are held in various places and all of them have the same miraculous qualities. Very many are in India.

The author of this study had got one piece of the Holy Hair in May, 1963. Now in eight years it has multiplied into four pieces out of only one!

The glass casket containing these sacred relics are exposed twice a year:

- i. On the Holy Prophet's birthday (Chapter 17: D-5).
- ii. On the night of "Mehraj Un Nabi" (Chapter 17: E-9).

Anybody after having a bath and with clean clothes irrespective of caste, colour, creed or nationality may come and pay their respects to same on this date at the Author's residence.

## **28. His departure from earthly life**

Soon after Muhammad's return to Madinah, he fell ill. The tidings of his illness caused dismay throughout Arabia and anguish to the folk of Madinah, Mecca and Taif, the home towns. At early dawn on the last day of his earthly life, he came out from his room beside the mosque at Madinah and joined the public prayer, which Abu Bakr had been leading since his illness. There was great relief amongst the people, because they thought he had recovered. When later in the day, the rumour grew that he had passed away, Omar threatened those who spread the rumour with dire punishment, declaring it a crime to think that the messenger of God could die. He was storming at the people in that strain, when Abu Bakr came into the mosque and overheard him. Abu Bakr went to the chamber of his daughter Ayesha, where the Prophet lay. Having ascertained the fact, and kissed the departed Prophet's forehead, he went back into the mosque. The people were still listening to Omar, who was saying that the rumour was a wicked lie,

that the Prophet, who was all in all to them, could not be dead. Abu Bakr went up to Omar and tried to stop him by a whispered word. Then, finding that he did not pay any heed, Abu Bakr called to the people, who, recognising his voice, left Omar, and came crowding around him. He first gave praise to Allah, and then said: "O people! Lo! as for him who used to worship Muhammad, Muhammad has passed away. But as for him who used to worship Allah, Allah is Alive and dieth not". Then he recited the following verse of the Qur'an:

"And Muhammad is but a messenger, messengers (the like of whom) have passed away before him. Will it be that, when he dieth or is slain, that ye will turn back on your heels? He who turneth back doth not hurt Allah and Allah will reward the thankful" (Qur'an 3: 144).

"And" says the narrator, an eye-witness, "It was as if the people had not known that such a verse had already been revealed in the Qur'an till Abu Bakr recited it".

Another witness tells how Omar used to say:

"Directly I heard Abu Bakr recite that verse my feet were cut from beneath me and I fell to the ground, for I knew that Allah's messenger had passed away. May Allah bless and keep him".

Devenport has given his findings in pages 49-54 of "*Mohammed and the Koran*" as follows:

"Muhammad now returned to Madinah, where death awaited him, in the midst of all the mighty projects still meditated by that inexhaustible genius. Shortly after his arrival he was attacked by a bilious fever, and believing that it would prove fatal, he was desirous of being surrounded by those whom he most dearly loved. He chose as his dying place the apartments of his favourite wife, Ayesha. His agony was long and painful, and, during the paroxysms, he often said: 'It is the Jewish poison that is killing me; I feel every vein in my heart cracking.' He retained, notwithstanding, the full possession of his faculties, so much so, indeed, that he arranged all the details of another expedition into Syria, blessed the standard of Islam, and

entrusted it to the zeal, fidelity and valour of Omar, who was to command the troops. Till the third day before his death, he regularly performed the ceremonies of public worship; but when he was so ill as to enter the mosque resting on the shoulders of his servants his feet dragging after him, he ordered his ancient and Faithful friend Abu Bakr to read the service. *On the last time of his attendance, and on the conclusion of the prayers, he edified all present by the humility and sincerity of his penitence, in thus addressing them:—‘Men and brethren, if I have caused any one of you to be unjustly scourged, I here submit my own shoulders to the lash of retaliation. Have I aspersed the good name of any Mussulman? Let him proclaim my faults before this congregation: Has any one been despoiled of his goods? The little that I have shall discharge the debt!’* One present claiming an old debt of three drachmas, Muhammad immediately caused him to be paid, saying, *‘I would rather blush in this world than in that which is to come!’* His daughter Fatemah came frequently to sit by his dying bed: *‘Daughter,’* said he to her, *‘Wherefore weepest thou? Art thou not satisfied with being, both on earth and in heaven, the chiefest amongst women?’* He then gave liberty to his slaves. To his other relatives, who, bathed in tears, surrounded his couch, he said, *‘I shall now instruct you what you are to do after my decease. Having washed my corpse, wrapped it in the shroud, and laid it in the coffin, you will rest it on the edge of the grave, which must be dug beneath the spot where I now am; these duties fulfilled, you will then depart.’* After a pause, he continued: *‘The first who will come to pray for me will be my faithful friend Gabriel, followed by Asraphael and Michael, and after them, the Angel of Death accompanied by his legions. Upon their departure you may enter, in groups, to pray for me and implore for me the peace of heaven. My family must not put on mourning, thus setting an example to be followed by all the faithful. My most earnest wish and desire are that no wailings or lamentations disturb my repose.’* Muhammad now became, for a few moments, unconscious, but having recovered, said, *‘I will dictate a book which shall prevent your ever backsliding into error;’* on which, Omar holding up the Qur’an, immediately exclaimed, *‘The book is written!’* After this all quitted the room, his



beloved Ayesha only excepted. On the day of his decease he bathed his hands in water, crying out, 'O God! fortify my soul against the terrors of death!' Soon after he became faint. 'The moment of his agony,' says Ayesha, 'was come. I was seated by his side, his head reclining on my lap. Suddenly opening his eyes, he raised them towards the roof of the house, and with a steadfast look, but faltering voice, uttered these last broken. Although articulate words, 'O God, pardon my sins: Ah, my companion (Gabriel), I attend thee to the realms above,' and he then peacefully expired on a carpet spread on the floor.

"Muhammad died on the 13th (should be 12th day of) Raby the first of the eleventh year of the Hijrah; and answering to the 8th of June 632 A.D. at the age of sixty-three (according to the lunar calendar or 62 according to solar years), during the last twenty three of which he had assumed the character of a prophet. He was buried at Madinah, not at Mecca; his coffin is, not suspended in the air by the attraction of loadstones of equal power, as has been so ridiculously asserted, but is deposited in the ground, to the right of those of Abu Bakr and Omar.

"Muhammad's death produced a general consternation; the question was everywhere asked, "Can the religion survive him, seeing that the living letter is dead?" Omar replied, that the Prophet could not perish. 'As in the cases of Moses and Jesus Christ,' said he, 'his soul has disappeared for an instant, but it will return into the midst of the faithful.' It required all the authority of Abu Bakr to combat the opinion, which Omar was ready to maintain at the sword's point. 'Is it of Muhammad or of God that you speak, O Omar? The God of Muhammad is immortal; but Muhammad was a man like unto one of us, and perished as we ourselves shall.' Abu Bakr had still some difficulty in allaying the tumult, but at length succeeded by reading those passages of the Qur'an wherein the prophet himself ascertained his mortality.

"The four immediate successors of Muhammad were Abu Bakr, Omar, Osman and Ali, who all reigned under the title of Caliph.

"Under the banners of Omar, Khaled, and other chief captains of

Muhammad, victory followed victory. Persia, Palestine, Syria, and Egypt submitted in rapid succession to their saracenic invaders. In twelve years they reduced to obedience thirty-six thousand cities, towns or castles; destroyed four thousand temples and built fourteen hundred mosques dedicated to the religion of their founder; nor did they stay their progress until they had subjugated the Moors, and brought all Africa, from Alexandria to Tangiers, together with the greatest part of Spain, under their sway.

“On the graces and intellectual gifts of nature to the son of Abdulla, the Arabian writers dwell with the proudest and fondest satisfaction. His politeness to the great, his affability to the humble, and his dignified bearing to the presumptuous, procured him respect, admiration and applause. His talents were equally fitted for persuasion or command. Deeply read in the volume of nature, though entirely ignorant of letters, his mind could expand into controversy with the acutest of his enemies, or contract itself to the apprehension of the meanest of his disciples. His simple eloquence, rendered impressive by the expression of a countenance wherein awfulness of majesty was tempered by amiable sweetness, excited emotions of veneration and love; and he was gifted with that authoritative air of genius which alike influences the learned and commands the illiterate. *As a friend and a parent, he exhibited the softest feelings of our nature:* but while in possession of the kind and generous emotions of the heart, and engaged in the discharge of most of the social and domestic duties, *he disgraced not his assumed title of an Apostle of God. With all that simplicity which is so natural to a great mind, he performed the humbler offices whose homeliness it would be idle to conceal with pompous diction; even while Lord of Arabia, he mended his own shoes, wore coarse woollen garments, milked the ewes, swept the hearth, and kindled the fire. Dates and water were his usual fare, and milk and honey his luxuries. When he travelled he divided his morsel with his servants. The sincerity of his exhortations to benevolence were justified at his death-by the exhausted state of his coffers.*

“The view taken by Thomas Carlyle of this hero-prophet is too original, just and striking to be here omitted:- “The deep-hearted

son of the wilderness,' writes he, 'with his beaming black eyes, and open, social, deep soul, had other thoughts in him than ambition. A silent, great soul; he was one of those who cannot but be in earnest; whom Nature herself has appointed to be sincere. While others walk in formulas and hearsays, contented enough to dwell therein, this man could not screen himself in formulas; he was alone with his own soul and the reality of things. The great mystery of existence glared in upon him, with its terrors, with its splendours; no hearsays could hide that unspeakable fact, "*Here am I*" *Such sincerity as we named, it has, in truth, something of divine. The word of such a man is a voice direct from Nature's own heart. Men do and must listen to that, or to nothing else; all else is wind in comparison.* From of old, a thousand thoughts in his pilgrimages and wanderings had been in this man. *What am I? What is this unfathomable Thing I live in which men name Universe? What is Life? What is Death? What am I to believe? What am I to do?* The grim rocks of Mount Hira, of Mount Sinai, the stern sandy solitudes answered not. The great heaven rolling silently overhead with its blue glancing stars, answered not. There was no answer. *The man's own soul, and what of God's inspiration dwelt there, had to answer!"*

## 29. His marriages for a son

The following is an extract from pages 25-26 of "*Mohammed and the Koran*" by Devenport:

"Muhammad is said to have taken after the death of Khadija, at different periods, eleven or twelve wives, out of fifteen or thirteen who had been betrothed to him, and he is constantly upbraided on this account by the controversial writers who adduce this circumstance as a demonstrative proof of his sensuality. But over and above the consideration that polygamy, though it is forbidden by European law, was in Muhammad's time generally practised in Arabia and other parts of the East, and was far from being counted an immorality, it should be recollected that *he lived from the age of five-and-twenty to that of fifty years satisfied with one wife; that until she died at the age of sixty-three he took no other, and that she left*

*him without a male issue; and it may then be asked, is it likely that a very sensual man of a country where polygamy was a common practice, should be contented for five-and twenty years with one wife, she being fifteen years older than himself; and is it not far more probable that Muhammad took the many wives he did during the last thirteen years of his life chiefly from a desire of having a male issue?"*

### **30 His characteristics**

Devenport has recorded on pages 31-32 of "*Mohammed and the Koran*" as follows:-

"Hitherto the new religion had been exclusively doctrinal but it now became necessary to place it upon a firm and unalterable basis, to devise forms of worship, and institute practical observances, and accordingly, Muhammad appointed, the daily prayers, the hour at which they were to be recited and the point of the heavens toward which the faithful were to turn in their worship. At this time also the first mosque was built, a structure of the simplest and most unpretending character; Muhammad worked at it with his own hand. Now, likewise, was introduced the custom of summoning the faithful to prayer by muezzin (criers), who, ascending one of the minarets cried aloud with stentorian voice, 'God is great; there is no God but one, and Muhammad is his prophet. Come to prayers! God is great, and the only one!' Muhammad may now be regarded as uniting in his own person the offices of monarch, general, judge, and priest; his Divine inspiration was generally acknowledged, nor ever was there devotedness equal to that received by him from his followers; so great, indeed, was the reverence paid him, that whatever had touched his person was deemed sacred. But although possessed of more than imperial power, nothing could exceed the prophet's simple style of living; thus we are told by Ayesha, that he swept out his own chamber, lit his own fire, and mended his own clothes; that his food consisted of dates and barley bread, with milk and honey, which were supplied to him by the faithful".

## **F. The Miracles of Holy Prophet Muhammad (May Allah Bless Him)**

It is indeed a great blessing of Allah if any Prophet performed even one single miracle, however small it might be.

The largest number of miracles performed by the earlier Prophets from Adam were those by the Jewish prophets Moses and Jesus. But their totals were well under one hundred each. The total number of miracles by all prophets from Adam upto Jesus does not add upto even one thousand.

### **1) The Multiplicity of Miracles**

As against that only at the moment of the birth of Muhammad over one million different miracles all over the world took place right from Mecca to even the far corners of America, Asia, Europe and Africa *viz*:

- a. Each and every idol in all the churches, chapels, temples, monasteries and nunneries all over the world fell down and when picked up these idols spoke miraculously and announced that the Promised Prophet through whom the world would be blessed had been born and that he would eventually destroy idolatry! (Chapter 13: B and J; 17: D-6, 7,9 and 11).
- b. The deep flowing river Sawa in Persia dried up in the flash of a second. The river Samawa in Persia which was dry for over 1000 years started flowing at once (Chapter 17: D-8).
- c. The magi fire of the temple of Zoroaster was extinguished for the first time in history (Chapter 17: D-8)..
- d. Fourteen towers and a turret of the Palaces in Persia fell. The stone slab, on which the throne of Persia stood, cracked (Chapter 17: D-8).

Thus over one million miracles were performed in a flash and that even in places thousands of miles apart all over the world—speak for themselves! Does it not make one realise the true significance of how

very much more important was Muhammad, the friend and beloved of Allah than all the other prophets put together as foretold in Solomon's Song (Chapter 17: C-6)?

Apart from these millions of miracles at the time of the birth of Muhammad all over the world thousands of miles away from Mecca, we have already read of many miracles performed by Muhammad as a babe and whilst he grew up (Chapter 17: D-15 to 27). During his life as a Prophet of Allah, he was daily performing many miracles. They were so many that if one were to attempt such a Herculean task to record all the millions of miracles performed by him then certainly one would have no time left in one's whole life to study and follow the principles and teachings of how to surrender oneself to the will of Allah. Everyone will agree that to lead a perfect life in accordance with the rules of Islam is much more important than the satisfaction one gets in the mere studies of miracles, which only again proves that Muhammad is the final messenger of Allah, through whom the universe would be blessed. By now it would be clear and indisputable that Muhammad is the Promised Prophet of the Old and New Testaments (Chapter 13: B and D; 16: E) and the "Comforter" promised by Jesus (Chapter 13: C, H and I).

## **2) Raising the Dead to life**

His Holiness saint Shaikh Mohiuddin Syed Abdul Qadir Jilani of Bagdad (Peace of Allah be on him) (See also Chapter 21: D-3) was a direct descendant from His Holiness Imam Hasan (Peace of Allah be on him) the eldest grandson of the Holy Prophet Muhammad through his youngest daughter, Her Holiness Fatemah and Hazrat Ali ibne Abu Taleb the first cousin of the Holy Prophet (peace of Allah be on them). He has proved before the world that even a saint in Islam has the power to raise not one or two but even thousands of dead from their graves at a time? Let us take up for reference only three incidents from the life of this descendant of Muhammad, whose miracles are also so very numerous that they would require several volumes to record:

- i. A widow had only one young son. She had him married. As the son was returning with his bride and the bridal party, a sudden storm drowned all of them in the Euphrates. Everyday for the next twelve years after this incident she would go to the banks of the Euphrates and cry. Finally, her pitiable condition was brought to the notice of Abdul Qadir Jilani.

He prayed and the sailing vessel rose up from the river-bed intact with the bride and bridegroom and the whole bridal party with the entire crew alive. Thus in one episode several hundreds of people were raised to life after being dead and drowned for twelve years! ,

Seeing this miracle of this descendant of Muhammad many thousands of Seljuk Turks, who had destroyed and obliterated Islam became Muslims (pages 20-22 “*Guldasta-e-Karamat*” printed by Matba Kayumi in 1332 A. H. at Cawnpore. This is an Urdu translation by Abdul Qadir son of Gulam Md. Lahori from “*Munakib Gausiya*” in Persian).

- ii. On another occasion one of his disciples, the only son of an aged widow, died. Upon the appeal of the distressed mother he approached the Angel of Death and asked for the return of the soul of his disciple. An altercation took place between them as the Angel regretted his inability. Thereupon Abdul Qadir Jilani snatched the whole receptacle containing all the souls of the people, who had died that day all over the world. He gave orders to all these thousands of souls to return back to their respective bodies. Immediately all the tens of thousands of souls returned back and all over the world those who had died that day became alive again! In addition, the Angel of death also got a severe scolding from Allah for having displeased His Saint! (Pages 33-35 of *ibid*).
- iii. Abdul Qadir Jilani had met an Egyptian trader at Syria and

they were together for a few days during which they performed their prayers together.

This merchant upon his return to Egypt used to remember this saint daily. He had a very strong desire to go to Bagdad and become his disciple. At last after forty years yearning he got his opportunity. To his great disappointment Abdul Qadir Jilani had passed away from earthly life. In a fit of despondency at the shrine of this saint he picked up a knife to stab himself. At once the grave split open and Abdul Qadir Jilani jumped out of his grave and caught the hand of the merchant, before he could stab himself. You can well imagine his joy. He fell immediately at the foot of the saint. His three hundred servants, who had accompanied him from Egypt followed suit. There and then all became the disciples of this saint and took his blessings given in his bodily form even though he had passed away from earthly life several years earlier. After giving the necessary blessings and making them his disciples this descendant of Muhammad by his grandson Imam Hasan returned back to his grave (pages 84-85 *ibid*).

If one descendant of Muhammad can perform such miracles and hundreds of such examples can be quoted of such miracles performed by his numerous descendants, then how much greater would be the powers of Muhammad himself?

Such miracles do bring out the meaning of the following passage:

“And call not those who have dedicated their lives in the way of Allah: ‘They are dead’. Nay, they are living, only ye perceive (it) not” (Qur’an 2: 154). This is also supported by the Holy Bible (II Kings 13: 20-21) which has already been quoted in Chapter 8: B, when Prophet Elisha raised a dead man to life one year after he had himself been dead!



- iv. Another unusual type of miracle performed by this saint Abdul Qadir Jilani, was that of a woman who had had twenty daughters. She was pregnant again. So her husband, who wanted a son, had threatened to divorce her if she did not get a son this time. Therefore she came crying to Abdul Qadir Jilani. He blessed her and the result was that in addition to the new baby she got, all her twenty daughters miraculously became boys in a flash of a second (pages 32-33, *Guldasta-e-Karamat*).
- v. One day someone passed a remark before His Holiness Imam Jafar Sadiq, the great grandson of Hazrat Imam Hussain, the great martyr of Karbala, disbelieving the miracle of raising the dead performed by his great ancestor Prophet Abraham (for full details see Chapter 8: B). Jafar Sadiq called at once for a peacock, an eagle, a dove and a cock. He had them cut into small pieces and mixed in a container. He had the mixture strewn over a wide range of hills. He called out one at a time to each of the birds and their fragments came flying from different directions and these reassembled and the birds became whole and alive. Thus he repeated and proved that Abraham had in fact performed this miracle of raising the dead (Chapter 8: B).

When saints of Islam have such wide powers then how much greater must be the powers of the Holy Prophet Muhammad through whom the world would be blessed on the day of Judgment? Does it now require any miracle to be quoted? If the answer is “No”, then miracles are not at all necessary to prove the genuineness of Muhammad and the religion of “Islam” or “Surrender to the Will of Allah”. That is the only reason why no importance has been attached to “*Miracles*” by Islam.

Nevertheless just for the satisfaction and peace of mind of

the readers a very few examples are being quoted briefly hereunder:

- vi. Muhammad is the only prophet who raised his mother and father from their graves! He made them recite the Qalima and converted them to Islam and then returned them back to their graves (page 22, Vol. II, *Tafrihu1 Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).
- vii. The only son of an old widow had died. She prayed "Oh Allah! In the name of the Holy Prophet Muhammad, Peace of Allah be on him, may my son be raised from the dead". Her son came back to life. Thus the name of the Holy Prophet was so powerful as to raise the dead to life! This is again a miracle which had not been performed before (Miracle No. 70 on page 441, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fit Ahwal Ul Ambia*).
- viii. Jabar bin Abdulla Ansari, whose two sons were raised miraculously from the dead by Muhammad (pages 374-375, Vol. I, *Manahejun Nabuwat*), one day invited the Holy Prophet to come and eat with a few of his companions. They were all digging the trench to protect Madinah from the attack of the Pagan Clans. They were all hungry for the past three days and food was in short supply.

The food prepared comprising one goat, was sufficient for only a few people but the Holy Prophet invited all the three thousand Muslims who were digging and they all had their fill. Miraculously the food did not get exhausted! The Holy Prophet had said that the bones of the goat prepared were not to be damaged. When the feast was over the bones of the goat were collected together. As soon as the Holy Prophet had touched these bones, the goat, whose flesh had already been eaten up, became whole and alive! There is no parallel to such a miracle of raising the dead to life in the

whole world (Miracle No. 69, pages 440-441, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*, and page 375, Vol. I, *Manahejun Nabuwat*).

### 3) The Miracles relating to inanimate objects

Inanimate objects like rocks, hills, trees *etc.* used to revere and obey the Holy Prophet Muhammad. No other prophet in the world received such honour! (Page 433, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia* and page 370, Vol. I, *Manahejun Nabuwat*).

- i. One day Abu Jahal came with a crowd of Pagan supporters to Muhammad with a magic Brass Idol and asked the idol to abuse the Holy Prophet. The idol instead of abusing the prophet recited the Qalima:

“There is none worthy of divine worship except Allah and Muhammad is the messenger sent by Allah” (page 45, *Ahsan Ul Muwaiz*).

- ii. On another occasion, Abu Jahal came with a group of disbelievers with his fist closed to test and said “O Muhammad! If you will tell me what is in the palm of my hand I shall become a Muslim”.

The Holy Prophet replied: “O Abu Jahal! which is better, for me to tell what is in your hand or for that which is in your hand to tell, who am I?”

Abu Jahal laughed and said: “Nothing could be better”, thinking the Holy Prophet had been trapped by his own statement into an impossibility, because the pebbles in his palm had no life, hence could not speak!

Thereupon the pebbles spoke in such a loud voice several times that all the hundreds of people gathered all clearly heard: “Inni Rasulallah” (Indeed without any doubt you are

the messenger sent by Allah)! This famous miracle only goes to show that even inanimate things acknowledged Muhammad as the Promised Prophet through whom the world would be blessed!

- iii. Once an uneducated tribal Bedouin came to the Holy Prophet and said if you can get that tree to give evidence I, shall become a Muslim. Accordingly at the instruction of Muhammad the tree came crawling on its roots, recited the Qalima in Arabic "That none is worthy of divine worship save Allah and Muhammad is the messenger sent by Allah", thereafter it went back to its original position (Miracle No. 32, page 433, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).
- iv. In the Mosque of the Prophet at Madinah, there was the dead stump of a tree against which the Holy Prophet Muhammad rested when making speeches. When the mosque was extended a pulpit was built. The day the Holy Prophet went to make his first speech from this pulpit, the stump cried out so loudly that the thousands of people in the mosque all heard. Muhammad went and consoled the stump by saying: "Do you want me to be with you on this earth or in the hereafter?" The log preferred Heaven! So it was buried in that very spot. (Miracle No. 29, page 432, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Miracles are things which are impossible according to logical sciences but yet are done by the will and pleasure of Allah to show His greatness. They are performed usually through a prophet or a saint. The greatest of all miracles is the Qur'an which was recited flawlessly in a flowery language over a period of 23 years through the mouth of a man who did not even know how to read or write! The teachings of the Qur'an were so perfect and logical that they spread Islam far and wide from the shores of the Atlantic to China under impossible conditions within a few years! *Therefore Islam is by itself the greatest miracle and does not require the necessity of miracles to prove that "Surrender to the*

*will of Allah” is the right and best course for mankind if they want to save themselves!*

#### **4. A few Unique Miracles concerning the living**

It is but natural that when inanimate objects confirm the Prophet and are obedient to his orders, then the impact upon the living must be infinitely greater.

You have already read about the miracles done by Allah for the sake of Muhammad even before his birth when his father Abdulla was saved by “Heavenly horsemen” who slew the Jewish murderers (Chapter 17: D-3) and how Mecca and its inhabitants were saved from the Yemeni attack by “Ababils”, when all hope was lost (Chapter 8: G). No other prophet has ever performed any miracles before birth. Muhammad is the only exception!

We have read already in the chapter on his birth how his foster mother Halima was cured miraculously by the water of “Nahar ul Hayat” or “River of Life (Chapter 17: D-14) and how both her dry breasts became full of milk upon Muhammad sucking her right breast (Chapter 17: D-15). Also how her camel was restored miraculously to health and full of milk upon entering the house where Muhammad was born (Chapter 17: D-16) and how it spoke miraculously in human tongue to taunt the other women of the tribe of Bani Sad (Chapter 17: D-17).

His remarkable escape from repeated attempts to murder him by the idolators also speak for themselves (Chapter 17: D-19 and 27 and 17: E-14). The ferocious lion stopping in his charge upon seeing the child Muhammad and paying homage to him and obeying his orders to return is yet another example which speaks for itself (Chapter 17: D-25).

When it was reported that the Roman Emperor Heraclius had collected an army to destroy Islam, Muhammad gathered some 34,000

men to meet this threat.

This army set off for Tabuk near the borders of Palestine and Syria in the year 9 A.H. / 631 A.D. On the way it had to pass an area where no water was available for several days journey. When all the water was finished and everyone was on the verge of dying of thirst, the Holy Prophet caused unlimited streams of water to flow out of his fingers until not only all the 34,000 men and all their animals had had their fill, but they also filled up each and every receptacle with water as they knew they would not get water anywhere for the next few days' journey. This unparalleled miracle was repeated on the return journey. Thus say 100 tons of water or even more was produced miraculously from the mere fingers of Muhammad! When the Muslim army arrived at Tabuk, they found out that no army had been collected by the Romans. Therefore they returned without any fighting as Muslims are never the first to attack and *they only fight when obliged by the other side to do so*.

There are thousands of such unique miracles of Muhammad, which no other prophet has performed, such as the deer which used to go about announcing the prophethood of Muhammad (Miracle No. 43, page 434, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fir Ahwal Ul Ambia*) or as the replacing of eyes which had come out of their sockets (Miracle No. 52, page 439, Vol. II, *ibid*) or the one where a child confirmed the prophethood on the date of his birth (Miracle No. 62, page 440, Vol. II, *ibid*).

## **5. Unique influence upon heavenly bodies**

In Joshua 10: 12 to 14 we read that the sun and moon had stayed in their position for about one day until the Israelites had routed the Amorites. This miracle was not repeated by Allah for any of the Jewish Prophets.

We have read earlier that the sun had stood similarly in its position for several hours on the Wednesday following "Mehraj Un Nabi" until the Meccan trading Caravan returned (Chapter 17: E-9).

A similar miracle was displayed by the Holy Prophet in the year 5 A.H. on the evening when the Qureysh with all their clans and the great desert tribe of Ghatafan with all their clans had arrived to attack Madinah. They were tired and so they rested till the next sunrise to commence the War. The Prophet on the advice of Salman Pharsi had caused a deep trench to be dug around Madinah. This was not yet ready. The next morning would be too late. So the Prophet prayed and the sun remained in the sky for many hours without moving—the earth's rotation on its axis being stopped until the trench was completed! Thus Muhammad performed this miracle twice! (Miracle No. 6, page 425, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

This was not all! An even greater miracle was displayed by Muhammad which was not performed by any other prophet. In the seventh year of Hijrah on the return journey after the conquest of the fortresses of Kheybar at the village of Sabha, the Holy Prophet fell into a trance. Whilst in this state he lay with his head on the lap of Ali ibne Abu Taleb. When he got out of the trance it was after sunset. So he asked Ali if he had performed his “Asar” prayers, which have to be finished before Sunset. Ali replied it was not possible for him to do so because he did not dare to move the prophet's head from his lap in case it disturbed him. Thereupon at Muhammad's instance the Sun which had already set arose up from the Western sky for the first time in known history! Thus Ali performed his “Asar” prayers. (Miracle No. 4, page 425, Vol. II, *ibid*).

## 6. Splitting the Moon into two

It was the full-moon night of the 14th of the lunar month of Rajjab, in the eighth year after prophethood and five years before Hijrah *i.e.* corresponding to 617 A.D. (please refer to Chapter 13: I for this miracle foretold by Jesus according to Arius from the line of heirs to St. John, the only heir to Jesus).

On this Friday night (*i.e.* the period after Sunset on Thursday and

sunrise on Friday) a group of pagans along with a group of Jews came to Muhammad and challenged him, that if he was the prophet of Allah, he should prove it by splitting the moon into two. The pagan challengers comprised Abu Jahal bin Hasham, Ass ibnil Vail, Aswad bin Mutlib and several Jewish elders.

The Holy Prophet went on top of a surrounding height known as Abu Kubais and *at a sign of his finger the moon was split into two* one piece going in one direction and the other in another direction. The time was approximately three hours after sunset at Mecca.

The Muslim witnesses on the spot at this time were:

- I. Ali ibne Abu Taleb
2. Zubair bin Mutam Naufil.
3. Anas bin Malik
4. Abdulla bin Abbas
5. Abdulla bin Omar Farooq
6. Huzaifa ibnil Yaman

The disbelievers, the Jews and the believers all ran to their homes and informed all their relatives. Thus the whole of Mecca saw this fantastic occurrence!

Abdullah bin Masood was at this moment at Monah about 6 to 8 miles away. He also saw it there.

Abu Jahal bin Hasham despatched people to all the neighbouring towns and villages. They all confirmed seeing the moon split into two on that eventful night!

All caravans arriving at Mecca for several weeks thereafter confirmed that they saw the moon split into two at this particular time and date, even though they were as far away as Syria and Palestine etc. They also confirmed that all the local people of the numerous towns in the countries had also seen it with great amazement! (Pages 418- 423,



Vol. II, *Tafrilrul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Thus the foretelling made by the fallen idol to Amer in Yemen on the day Muhammad was born (Chapter 17: D-9) that he would split the moon into two was fulfilled (page, 22, *Ahsan Ul Muwaiz*).

Raja Bhoj, King of Dhar—a town near the Chambal River in Malwa Plateau on the Western side of Central India, was enjoying a quiet midnight in his palace garden, when he saw the moon split into two halves, which moved away from each other. Frightened at this sight, he raised an alarm thinking the destruction of the world was at hand. Hundreds of thousands of people of Central India witnessed this disturbing sight. The pundits searched through the various Sanskrit Books and pointed out from “Bhavishya Purana” (Chapter 17: C-3) that it had been foretold that a great personage would be born in Arabia, whose name would be Muhammad, and who would influence the world with his teachings. The splitting of the moon would be one of his miracles! That those who would not follow the teachings of this great prophet would eventually be losers in this earth and in the next life.

Raja Bhoj immediately sent his Prime Minister to Arabia. He met Muhammad at Mecca and became a Muslim. The Holy Prophet gave the name of “Abdulla” for Raja Bhoj. When his Prime Minister returned Raja Bhoj gladly became a Muslim adopting the name Abdulla. The shrine of this King Abdulla (alias Bhoj) is still in existence just outside the town of Dhar.

An annual celebration is also held in his honour at his grave as the Hindu King, who became a Muslim after having seen the miracle of the splitting of the moon (for greater details and Sanskrit books of reference refer pages 10-17, *Asrar-e-Tasovuff*, published in Lahore, May 1925 Edition).

There was a merchant traveller named Sahu, son of Jagandir. He lived at a place called Tarbandan near Delhi. He also saw the split moon on this eventful night. There was a big uproar in this Delhi Area, where

thousands of people witnessed this miracle. They also found out from the Sankrit records that this miracle has been performed by the tenth or final “Avatar” or the final spiritual guide this world would have. Those who would not follow him would be doomed eventually in this life and the next. Sahu had been to Mecca previously with his trading caravan several years earlier. So he set off for Arabia again for trading purposes as well as to meet this great sage. He came to Mecca and went to meet Muhammad. The Holy Prophet upon seeing him invited him to sit at a place of honour beside him. Then he asked Sahu if he remembered and recognised him. Naturally Sahu said, “How can I recognise you?” Then the Holy Prophet said: “Do you remember that when you had come previously many years back, you had taken a boy across a sudden flood that had occurred and put him on his camel”. Sahu said he remembered that incident. Muhammad said: “I am that boy and I bless you six times with long life (*i.e.* 600 years of life) over and above your normal life”. Sahu became a Muslim. He is now known by the popular name of “Baba Ratan Hindi”, who died in 612 Hijrah. His shrine is at Tarbandan (pages 84-87, *Maujizat-e-Muhammadi* by Mufti Maulvi Md. Enayatullah, published by Hajee Malikdin Md. & Sons, Lahore, 1939).

The time when the moon was seen split into two in India was about or shortly after midnight. This time in Western India would correspond approximately to about 3 hours after sunset in Arabia.

When the moon set that night in India, it was still apart in two pieces. This time would correspond approximately to midnight of Greenwich Mean Time of Thursday/Friday. Hence the bifurcated moon was visible for over six to eight hours from India in the East to well beyond Britain in the West and possibly as far as America.

When the full moon split into two was visible in India, Syria, Palestine, Yemen in addition to Arabia and this miracle was visible till after midnight of Greenwich Mean Time before the two halves of the moon rejoined, then the whole of Europe and Africa must also have seen it. One is tempted to ask why no records of this wondrous miracle

have been maintained in Europe and North Africa? As if in answer we get a picture on page 303, Vol. VII, “*Newnes’ Pictorial Knowledge*” published by The Home Library Book Company (George Newnes Ltd.) of 23 and 24, Tavistock Street, London W.C.2. Here one sees the picture of the aged world-famous Astronomer Galileo before the Inquisition of the Christian Church of Rome with the following inscription under the said picture:

“For teaching that the Earth and other planets revolved round the sun the great astronomer Galileo was accused by the Church of heresy. In 1632, when nearly seventy years old, he was summoned to appear before the Inquisition at Rome, where he was made to kneel and affirm that his views were wrong. ‘I am at your mercy’ said the aged astronomer, ‘and I must say whatever you wish me to say’. But his beliefs remained unshaken”.

This proves beyond doubt how the Christian Church took pains to *destroy those truths which exposed their fallacies!* The Pope of Rome is posed before the world as “Infallible” or one who could make no mistake. Is this the “Infallibility” of one, who can never make any mistakes to force Galileo to deny what we all know today as the truth! *Therefore, the absence of this record in Europe and Northern Africa appears to be the work of the Christian Churches to destroy and obliterate the truth.*

We have already read earlier under Chapter 13: I on the “Mission of the Holy Jesus” that Arius had calculated and informed Salman Pharsi that Jesus of Nazareth had foretold that the Comforter, the Promised Prophet, would disclose himself to the world by a miracle that would be done by him in 617 A.D. and which would be seen simultaneously over large areas of the then known earth. This miracle was evidently the splitting of the full moon into two. If the Christian churches were the followers of *Jesus of Nazareth*, then they would have hailed this miracle as the sign given by the *Real Jesus* to know that the identity of the Promised Comforter has become thus disclosed. But the fact that this miracle is not even recorded in Europe as having taken

place in 617 A.D. shows that the church is constantly out to suppress and efface the truth of the teachings of *The Real Jesus*. Yet they have the audacity to call themselves “Infallible”. The Galileo incident and several others of a similar nature speak for themselves.

Jesus has further confirmed in the Gospel of Barnabas that Muhammad the Promised Messiah would have complete control over the moon on page 169:

“Verily I (Jesus) say to you that the moon shall minister sleep to him (Muhammad) in his boyhood, and when he shall be grown up he shall take her in his hands. Let the world beware of casting him out because he shall slay the idolaters...”

The U.S.A. had launched “Orbiter-4” from Cape Kennedy, Florida, on 4th-May 1967. The mission was to photograph 95% of the lunar surface. On 11th May 1967 a wide angle picture was taken of the hidden side of the moon from an altitude of about 3,000 kilometers. *This photograph numbered 67-1805 shows a straight line crack on the moon’s surface which is estimated to be about 240 kilometers long and upto eight kilometers wide in place.*

A careful study of this picture shows that this straight line crack has the following features:

1. It has marked raised rims.
2. It is near the south pole of the moon on the side hidden from view to the earth.
3. The centre of the crack is located at about 65 degrees south and 105 degrees east.
4. This crack on the Moon’s surface cuts through several large older craters and is itself cut and partly obliterated by a small younger, crater about its centre.
5. Cracks by natural causes always are irregular or in waves, but never in a straight line. But this crack is in a perfectly straight line which shows that it must have come about owing to

something unnatural.

6. If one runs one's eyes along the straight line of this crack one very strangely sees numerous newer craters all along the straight line, which have deleted evidently and obliterated the cracked straight line throughout the lunar surface on both sides of this still existing strange straight linear crack.

Thus it becomes proved conclusively that even our scientific achievements *viz*: "Orbiter-4" has photographed that unnatural straight line of crack from where the moon was split into two by the Holy Prophet Muhammad in 617 A.D. and that irrefutable evidence has become exposed once again, after all these 1350 years in spite of all efforts of the European Churches to suppress this miracle which disclosed Muhammad, as the Promised Comforter of the world in 617 A.D. as foretold by Jesus (Chapter 13: I). Here is confirmation obtained by a scientific gadget which has photographed the Moon's surface.

Now let us look at the Holy Bible and see some relevant passages:

"Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my Words: and my Father will come unto him, and make our abode with him.

"He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me.

"These things have I spoken unto you, being yet present with you.

"But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you" (St. John 14: 23-26).

"But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, *ye may remember that I told you of them*. And these things I have said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you" (St. John 16:4).

"Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all

things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all His Holy Prophets since the world began.

*“For Moses truly said unto the (fore) fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you (out) of your brethren (tribe i.e. the children of Ishmael), like unto me (who will speak face to face with God as a man speaketh to his friend—Exodus 33: 11); him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.*

“And it shall come to pass, that every soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall (after a lapse of sometime) be destroyed from among the people (of the earth at the Battle of Armageddon).

*“Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these days” (Acts 3: 21-24).*

From these Biblical teachings it is obvious that our scientific achievements viz: “Orbiter-4” has proved by a photograph the undeniable evidence of where the line of crack occurred when the moon was split into two in 617 A.D. by Muhammad. Hence once again after 1350 years the time has come for the dark ages and destruction of the Christians of the world unless they follow the Comforter, the Holy Ghost, the Promised Prophet through whom the world would be blessed and who would complete the religion left incomplete by Jesus.

The Holy Qur’an contains the following chapter named the “Moon”:

“The hour drew nigh and the moon was split into two parts (each part of the moon moving away from the other).

“And if they behold a portent they turn away and say: Prolonged illusion.

“They denied (the Truth) and followed their own lusts. Yet everything will come to a decision.

“And surely there hath come unto them news whereof the purport should deter,

“Effective wisdom; but warnings avail not!

“So withdraw from them (O Muhammad) on the day when the Summoner summoneth unto a painful doom.

“With downcast eyes, they come forth from the graves as if they were locusts spread abroad,

“Hastening toward the Summoner; the disbelievers say: Alas! This is a hard day.

“The folk of Noah denied before them, yea, they denied our slave and said: A madman; and he was repulsed.

“So he cried unto his Lord, saying: Indeed I am vanquished, so give me help.

“Then We (Allah) opened the gates of Heaven with pouring water.

“And caused the earth to gush forth springs (not only of water but also of lava), so that the waters (or molten liquids) met for a predestined purpose (of obliterating the whole inhabited surface of the earth in the Great Deluge).

“And We carried him upon (an ark which was) a thing of planks and nails.

“That ran (upon the waters) in our sight, as a reward for him, who was rejected (by the disbelievers as a madman).

“And verily We left this incident as a token (for all time for human beings); but is there any that remembereth?

“Then see how (dreadful) was My punishment after My warnings!

“And in truth We have made the Qur'an easy as a reminder; but is there any that remembereth?

“(The tribe of) Aad rejected the warnings. Then how (dreadful) was My punishment after My warnings.

“Lo! We let loose on them a raging wind on a day of constant calamity,

“Sweeping men away as though they were uprooted trunks of palm-trees.

“Then see how (dreadful) was My punishment after My warnings!

“And in truth We have made the Qur’an easy as a reminder; But is there any that remembereth?

“(The tribe of) Thamud rejected the warnings.

“For they said: Is it a mortal man, alone among us, that we are to follow? Then we should fall into error and madness.

“Hath the guidance been sent unto him alone among us? Nay, he is but a rash liar.

“(Unto their warner it was said): Tomorrow they will know, who is the rash liar!

“Lo! We are sending the she-camel as a test for them; so watch them and have patience;

“And inform them that the water is to be shared between (her and) them. Every drinking will be witnessed.

“But they called their comrade and he took and hamstrung (the she-camel).

“Then see how (dreadful) was My punishment after My warnings!

“Lo! We sent upon them one Shout, and they became as the dry twigs (rejected by) even the builder of a cattlefold

“And in truth We have made the Qur’an easy as a reminder; but is there any that remembereth?

“The folk of Lot rejected the warnings.

“Lo! We sent a storm of stones upon them (all) save the family of Lot, whom We rescued in the last watch of the night,

“As grace from Us. Thus We reward him who giveth thanks.

“And he indeed had warned them of our blow, but they did doubt the warnings.

“They even asked of him his guests for an ill purpose. Then We blinded their eyes (and said): Taste now My punishment after My warnings!



“And in truth the punishment decreed befell them early in the morning.

“Now taste My punishment after My warnings!

“And in truth We have made the Qur’an easy as a reminder; but is there any that remembereth?

“And the warnings in truth came unto the house of Pharaoh.

“Those who denied our revelations, everyone of them We (Allah) grasped them with the grasp of the Mighty, the Powerful.

“Are your disbelievers, any better than those (who suffered in the past for their disobedience), or have ye some immunity in the Scriptures?

“Or say they: We are a host victorious?

“The hosts will all be routed and will turn and flee.

“Nay, but the Hour (of doom) is their appointed tryst, and the Hour will be more wretched and more bitter (at the time of the Battle of Armageddon when all the wicked will be destroyed on earth and Allah’s kingdom established of ‘Thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven’).

“Lo! the guilty are in error and madness (about their Nuclear umbrella being able to protect them).

“On the day when they are dragged into the Fire upon their faces (it is said unto them): Feel the touch of hell.

“Lo! We have created everything by measure.

“And Our commandment is but one (commandment which will be fulfilled) in the twinkling of an eye.

“And verily We have destroyed your fellows (on so many occasion in the past); but is there any that remembereth?

“And everything they did is in the Scriptures,

“And every small and great thing is recorded.

“Lo! the righteous will dwell among gardens (of delight) and rivers

(of joy),

“Firmly established in the favour of a Mighty King” (Qur’an 54: 1-55).

This chapter of the Qur’an clearly shows that those who will not accept the miracle of the splitting of the “Moon” into two or in other words the teachings of Muhammad and surrender themselves in “Islam” to the Will of Allah will be destroyed suddenly in a matter of a few hours just like the people of Noah, Aad, Lot, Thamud, Pompeii etc. leaving no trace except in the pages of history, that such and such a wicked set of people once existed as warned by Neamutullah in Chapter 2: H (Couplet 54) of this book!

Do the people of today want to be annihilated as the people of old were in a matter of a few hours leaving no trace save and except their names in the pages of history? Or are we going to rise and investigate with all our scientific knowledge as to how we may yet be saved from the coming disasters of this generation ending in the Battle of Armageddon!

## **G. HISTORICAL FACTS CONNECTED WITH DISBELIEVERS OF PROPHETS**

It would be well to analyse a few facts, which are common to many of the Prophets sent for the benefit of mankind.

### **1. Adam**

We have all read earlier in Chapter 17: B-2 and 3 that Adam was made “Khalifa” (*i.e.* Viceroy) by Allah. Iblis, the elected leader of the spiritual dwellers of the universe, refused to recognise this appointment. The result was that Iblis incurred Allah’s curse and wrath. Allah punished him by making him fall from his highest position of honour in the universe to that of the lowest of the low *i.e.* the Satan!

The questions that arise here are:

- a. Was this the only occasion on which Allah has cursed and dishonoured one who has refused to honour those whom Allah has chosen?

— or —

- b. Is this the recognised and well-established policy of Allah that those who refuse to recognise and honour the prophets and saints whom He has chosen are to be punished, dishonoured and even destroyed?

Let us study a few relevant quotations from one of the Divine Scriptures:

“Those who hide (*i.e.* refuse to accept) the proofs and the guidance which we (Allah) have revealed (and provided), after We (Allah) had made it clear in the scripture: such are accursed of Allah and accursed of those who have powers to curse.

“Lo! those who disbelieve, and die while they are disbelievers; on them is the curse of Allah and of angels and of men combined.

“O mankind! follow not the footsteps of the devil. Lo! he is an open enemy for you” (Qur’an 2: 159, 161, 168).

“Tell My bondmen to speak that which is kindlier. Lo! the devil soweth discord among them. Lo! the devil is for man an open foe” (Qur’an 17: 53).

From these it will be abundantly clear that those who refuse to recognise those chosen by Allah are the accursed. Now let us see what the various historical events over the past 6,000 years of man’s existence reveal!

## **2. Noah**

The people of the earth refused to recognise Noah as the prophet of Allah. The result was that Allah in His anger drowned these disbelievers comprising the whole world in the great deluge, save and except Noah, his wife, his three sons and their three wives (Genesis 6, 7 and 8).

### **3. Abraham**

King Nimrod, the mighty hunter in rebellion against Allah, refused to recognise Abraham as a Prophet of Allah. The result was that Allah in His anger not only wiped out Nimrod's mighty army but He tortured Nimrod for 40 days and nights until his death by violence as read earlier in Chapter 6: I.

### **4. Moses**

The mighty Pharaoh refused to recognise Moses as a Prophet of Allah and heed his words. Allah gave seven warning-plagues. When all these were ignored in His anger He not only drowned the Pharaoh and his mighty army but He also brought an end to the power of the Egyptian Empire (Exodus 2 to 14).

When Moses went up the mount to receive the Ten Commandments and was for forty days with his Lord, the apostate Jews made a golden calf and started worshipping it. Thus for going against the teachings of Moses, Allah in His anger ordered all the apostate Jews including women and children numbering about 3,000 to be slain (Exodus 32).

### **5. Isaiah**

When Jerusalem was surrounded by Sennacherib and his victorious Assyrian Army, the Jewish King Hezekiah rushed his Jewish Priests to Prophet Isaiah and asked him to pray for the safety of Jerusalem against the Blasphemy that was uttered by Sennacherib against Allah. The result was that very night i.e. the night before the attack on Jerusalem was to commence, Allah in His anger killed 185,000 Assyrian soldiers as read earlier (Chapter 2: I).

Sennacherib fled to his home to be murdered by his own son. Thus Allah had expressed His Anger!

When Hezekiah died, his son Manasseh became king of the Jews.

He adopted Nimrodism for his religion. Manasseh had the body of Isaiah, the prophet, whose prayers had saved Jerusalem sawed into two halves, and thus martyred him because this prophet believed in the one God. Manasseh filled Jerusalem from end to end with the blood of martyred believing Jews (2 Kings 21) because they refused the son of God and Trinity.

The result was that Allah's curse fell upon Manasseh. One day when he was out hunting, he was captured by the captains of the army of the King of Assyria, who took Manasseh in chains to Babylon (2 Chronicles 33: 1-11).

## **6. Jeremiah**

As the Jews refused to listen to Prophet Jeremiah and instead took to Nimrodism the result was that Allah in His anger got Jerusalem burnt and razed to the ground in 607 B.C. The Jews were either slain or carried away as captives to Babylon.

At this point of time the Rechabites were also staying inside Jerusalem. They however were believers. The result was that they escaped the massacre which the Jews suffered and they also escaped the captivity which the Jews underwent (pages 64-66, you may survive Armageddon into God's New World by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society).

## **7. Daniel**

King Belshazzar of Babylon made a great feast and drank wine out of golden and silver cups captured by his father from the temple of Jerusalem. Instantly a hand without any body miraculously wrote on the wall of the banqueting hall as if writing on sand the following words: "Mene, Mene, Tekel, Upharsin" (Chapter 5: E-2).

The prophet Daniel interpreted the meaning. But Belshazzar disbelieved. The result was that by Allah's curse Babylon was captured

by Darius and his army of Persians and Medes within the next few hours. Belshazzar also was killed that very night (Daniel 5).

### **8. John the son of Zakariah and Jesus the son of the Virgin Mary**

We have read earlier that both these cousins were not recognised by the apostate Jews. John was beheaded under orders of the Jewish Tetrarch (king) of Galilee (Chapter 17: D-1).

Jesus was not recognised by the entire Jewish community except for about 120 of them (Act 1:15). Of these 120 Jews, a few like St. Peter gave up the teachings of Jesus and at the suggestion of the St. Paul relapsed to Nimrodism or Mithraism as it was then called (Chapter 12 and 14) with its Trinity in Unity of God instead of Allah is one and alone!

The results of Allah's anger were:

- a. Jerusalem was razed to the ground for the second time. This time by the Romans in 70 A.D.
- b. St. Paul was crucified upside down in Rome.
- c. The unity of the Church of St. Peter and St. Paul was broken up into various groups such as the churches of Alexandria, Antioch, Rome etc. (for further details please refer to Chapter 14: A-1 to 6).

### **9. Generalisation**

Sodom and Gomorrah were destroyed by Allah in His anger because of the people's refusal to accept Prophet Lot (Genesis 19:1-29).

Numerous other examples could be quoted conveniently.

Thus it will be clear that those who have refused to recognise the various prophets were invariably the wicked people out to create mischief. These culprits have thus suffered many a strange and unexplainable disaster owing to Allah's scourge.

We, with all these historical facts to guide us, can now be quite sure whether a person is a true prophet of Allah or an impostor. Now let us apply this yardstick of historical incidents and analyse the events concerning Muhammad.

## 10. Muhammad

### a. The pagans and idolatry

Because the Pagans of Arabia did not accept Muhammad in the beginning, the result was that idolatry was eradicated permanently and completely from Arabia during his life on earth. Even till this day there is no idolatry in Arabia!

### b. The Jews

The Jews recognised Muhammad, the Promised Prophet, as they recognised their own children. Many of them in fact converted to Islam. But the apostate Jews refused to heed the warnings. Hence the apostate Jews suffered the following calamities because of Allah's curse as read earlier (Chapter 13: G) viz:

- i. The tribe of Bani Nudir was expelled from Madinah because it upheld that: *"Idolatry and belief in multiplicity of Gods" was better than, belief in the "One Allah" and Surrender to His Will.* Was this not downright wickedness on the part of the apostate Jews? Did they not invite Allah's curse by such blasphemy?
- ii. The tribe of Bani Qureyzah broke their treaty with Muslims and betrayed them in their most dire moment, the so-called *Battle of the Trench*. When the idolaters army retired on account of the miseries caused by Allah's curse and the Muslims were saved without any actual fighting, the apostate Jews fled into their fortress on the outskirts of Madinah. They were forced to surrender. They were given

the option of choosing any man they liked to pass judgment for their crime. Because of the curse of Allah they chose such a friend, who instead of giving any relief condemned the men to the sword and the women and children to be sold as slaves in accordance with the Jewish Laws of Moses for the crime they had committed!

- iii. The Jews of Kheybar trapped Muhammad into attacking their forts with his small band of followers, who numbered about 5,000 in the 7th year of Hijrah. The Jews had a fully equipped army of 50,000 in their strongest fort. However, by the grace of Allah this was the first fort to fall into the hands of the Muslims!
- iv. Thus the apostate Jews were punished repeatedly by Allah for their continuous refusals to accept Muhammad as a Prophet resulting in their being scattered not only all over the world but even being persecuted for centuries throughout Europe, culminating in the Nazi extermination of Jews in Germany! Do not these prove Muhammad the Promised Prophet!

### **c. The Nazarenes**

The Nazarenes, the true followers of Jesus, also converted freely to Islam as soon as they recognised Muhammad as the Promised Comforter who would complete the religion left incomplete by Jesus (Chapter 13: H To K).

### **d. The Christian and Persian Emperors**

The Christian Emperor Heraclius had in his possession the golden casket “Sakina” which was the most important object carried in the “Tabernacle” of the Jews. This item of treasure was carried away by the Romans from the temple when they burnt and razed Jerusalem to the ground in 70 A.D.



As read in Chapter 13: J. Heraclius had shown to Abu Sufian, the leader of the Pagan Meccan trading caravan, the picture of the Promised Prophet of the world from this casket “Sakina”. When Abu Sufian recognised it and said that it was Muhammad, Heraclius knew well the identity of the Promised Comforter through whom the world would be blessed and who would complete the religion left incomplete by Jesus.

We have also read in Chapter 13: J that when the messenger carrying the invitation of Muhammad arrived, he was shown the picture of the Promised Prophet, which he also recognised as Muhammad. Heraclius offered to become a Muslim provided his head priest accepted Islam. The Old Priest after satisfying himself became a Muslim. The moment he announced his decision, he was killed by the Christians! This naturally alarmed Heraclius, so he declined to surrender to the Will of Allah inspite of his promise!

As luck would have it, shortly afterwards Muhammad passed away from earthly life. Heraclius and the Persian Emperor thought this was their golden opportunity to destroy Islam, which had been weakened by the loss of its founder. They decided to attack Arabia simultaneously from two sides. The position was indeed very desperate from a worldly and logical point of view. But what the two mighty Empires had not reckoned with was the warning of Jesus that anybody who cursed or opposed Muhammad would be cursed by Allah, as read earlier in the Gospel of Barnabas (Chapter 13: B).

*Allah thus proved beyond doubt that Islam is the religion of Surrender to the Will of Allah by defeating completely both those two mighty empires at the hands of the ill-equipped small Muslim Armies, thereby once again demonstrating to the world that those who refused to accept the teaching of Prophet Muhammad would come under the curse of Allah as had happened with the disbelievers in the earlier prophets, several examples of which have been quoted hereabove from the records of the Holy Bible.*

Hence contrary to the general expectation that the fire of enthusiasm of Islam would die a natural death after Muhammad had departed, this spirit of Nur-e-Muhammadi or the Logos actually put a further spurt into Islam after Muhammad had passed away from earthly life.

Consequently the curse of Allah fell on the mighty Roman Army. In spite of the fact that the Christians were several times the strength of Muslim forces yet they were defeated totally (Chapter 13: J and 14: C). Jerusalem surrendered to the Muslims (Chapter 13: K).

The good treatment by the Muslims won over the population to Islam. The following 30 years saw Islam spread from the shores of the Atlantic Ocean across North Africa to China. Such a spectacular spread of any religion over such a vast area in such a short time had never been known in history.

The Persian Emperor's mighty well-equipped and trained army attacked Islam trying to stab it in the back. Whatever small force could be mustered was rushed by the Caliph (*i.e.* the Viceroy in place of Muhammad). Allah's curse fell as warned by Jesus (page 227, *The Gospel of Barnabas*, see Chapter 13: B, C and D) and the mighty Persian Army was routed.

The effect was great upon the minds of the Persians. They wondered how their wonderful, first-rate army could be defeated by a handful of ill-equipped Arabs, and they concluded that it must be the doing of Allah. So they converted to Islam realising that Muhammad was not only the true Promised Prophet but that the rapid spread of Islam after Muhammad had passed away also showed that it was Allah's religion and that it had come to stay permanently, even long after its founder was no more.

#### **e. The number of converts**

As against 120 converts that Jesus had when he was lifted to heaven (Acts 1: 9-15), *Muhammad had a following of over a million souls before*

*he departed and several millions within thirty years of his departure from earthly life. Such a wonderful success with so many converts from Christians and pagans in such a short time had never taken place in history.*

During the ninth year of Hijrah and the last year of Muhammad's life on earth, in response to his invitations issued a year earlier, kings and leaders from all over Arabia and North East Africa came with their subjects and followers to accept Islam. During this year many a day saw tens of thousands of converts coming in batches to accept Islam and surrender to the Will of Allah. *Such a spectacle of joy all around had never been known in the history of the prophets' not even in the history of mankind till date.*

*No religion has ever spread like this with people flocking of their own accord all anxious to become Muslims, right from the shores of the Atlantic Ocean to China within a period of 32 years commencing from the 8th year of Hijrah (629 / 630 A.D.), the year of deputations, when invitations were sent out by Muhammad to all the rulers until the martyrdom of Ali ibne Abu Taleb, which marked the end of the rule of "Khulifa-e-Rashideen" (i.e. the Khalifas on the right path of religion). After this incident started the rule of "Kings" who also assumed the title of caliphs. Can any man dream of greater success than what Muhammad had by the Grace and Blessings of Allah, not only during his life but also for 30 years thereafter, during which the pendulum of the movement of thousands of voluntary converts daily was in full swing?*

The momentum of voluntary conversions by pagans into Islam received a serious setback when Muawiyah forcibly made himself king of the Islamic Empire. Today almost half the world is Muslim. *It all started with one man—Muhammad! Can one man alone ever get such a large following by means of the sword?—No—Never—Impossible!*

In the light of these historical facts is it not the height of absurdity to suggest that one man all of a sudden got ideas and he picking up a sword threatened that he alone would kill over a million souls; if they

did not convert to his teachings—this being the number of followers he had before his death! These included wild, rough Arab plunderers, who were ever and anon ready for a fight. Would such people ever give up their religion of idolatry and accept Islam at the point of the sword of one man!—Or was their conversion because they were fully enchanted by the beauties and correctness of Islam?

Of the 23 years of preaching, 13 years were spent by Muhammad in Mecca, where he was persecuted day and night and was in constant danger of his being killed by the pagan Arabs. The number of converts were a few hundred until this time. That leaves only ten years to Muhammad at Madinah. The following main battles were fought during this latter period of 10 years *viz*:

1. **Battle of Badr** in 2 Hijrah (624 A.D.) in which the total number of male Muslims were 313. This small band of converts faced and defeated 1000 Meccans. Not a single Meccan was converted at this battle even though the Muslims were victorious. Hence the question of *conversion by the sword did not arise so far!*
2. **Battle of Uhud** in 3 Hijrah was not a victory for Muslims. So no question of any conversion arose.
3. **Battle of the Trench** in 5 Hijrah was really not a battle at all. Madinah was saved miraculously by strange weather conditions, which forced the pagan armies to withdraw. So no question of any conversion arose so far.
4. **The campaign of Kheybar** in 7 Hijrah resulted in the ending of the Jewish revolt. Not a single person was forced to convert at the point of the sword. The Jews were allowed to live as tenants until their expulsion in the time of Omar (the second Khulifa-e-Rashedeen).
5. **The Surrender of Mecca, the battle of Huneyun and the conquest of Taif** took place in 8 Hijrah. *Not a single man was put to the sword because he was a pagan!*

6. **The Tabuk** expedition in 9 Hijrah did not bring victory for the Muslims, *so the question of conversion at the point of the sword did not arise!*

That brings to an end all the battles in which Muhammad was involved and also to the end of his earthly life in the 10th year of Hijrah.

*From these historical facts it will be clear that not a single person was ever converted to Islam by Muhammad or his followers forcibly.* In fact the teachings of Islam are very clear on this subject e.g.:

*“There is no compulsion in Religion! Truly the right path has henceforth become clearly distinct from (the path of) error. Therefore he who rejects false deities (i.e. trinity in unity, son of god, idolatry) and believes in (the absolute oneness of) Allah (and His teachings of Islam as completed and revealed through the Holy Promised Prophet (Muhammad), he indeed had laid hold on the firmest handle, which will never break off. Allah is The Hearer, The Knower” (Qur’an 2: 256).*

*“Say: O disbelievers!*

*“Unto you your religion, and unto me my religion” (Qur’an 109: 1 and 6).*

Hence it is evident that the propaganda about Islam having been spread at the point of the sword is an absolute myth and without any basis whatsoever in history.

The research of European scholars given hereafter fully supports that there was no question whatsoever at least in the history of this Earth that Islam was ever spread by the sword. Who were the creators of such lies will be clear from the findings of European scholars.

#### **f. The effect of his teachings**

The converts to the teachings of the earlier prophets after a time relapsed to Nimrodism. This was true even in the case of Jews, and this resulted in the destruction of Jerusalem in 607 B.C. and in the case of

the followers of Jesus, when St. Peter, one of the early converts, at the suggestion of St. Paul relapsed to Nimrodism to invite the pagans (Chapter 12 to 14). This led to the annihilation of Jerusalem for the second time in 70 A.D.

As against this it has been seen from the research carried out by Christian Scholars that when one community converts to Islam, they have never forsaken it (Chapter 15: M to O).

Do not all these facts show how very much superior are the achievements of Muhammad as a prophet when compared to all the earlier prophets? Are not these feats unique and unparalleled in the history of mankind till date?

#### **g. Other significant facts**

No man has ever seen Allah with his naked eyes or spoken face to face with Allah in heaven or split the moon into half or made trees crawl and speak save and except Muhammad.

Besides, Muhammad is the only one who has displayed each and every miracle that any of the earlier prophets have performed. But many of those miracles, which Muhammad has displayed nobody else has ever been blessed by Allah to perform in the past.

Muhammad received 26,000 visits from the Angel Gabriel which is much more than the combined total of the visits to all prophets put together (Chapter 8: D). In none of these visits did the Angel Gabriel come in the form of a bird or an animal. Very often he came in the form of a man and was seen by the many people who were present. They realised who he was only after Muhammad would disclose that the visitor was the angel Gabriel.

#### **h. Muhammad and Scientific Progress**

History shows that all the Scientific progress that the world is enjoying today is due to the influence of this one man (Muhammad), who can

be termed the educator and enlightener of the backward primitive Europeans of the Dark Ages! (*Chamber's Encyclopaedia on Civilisation of Europe*). And now we are faced with destruction of the human race due to the curse of Allah because the Nuclear armed scientific world has ignored the spiritual side of the teachings of Muhammad—the advanced civilisation taking advantage of only the material progress brought about by Islam, which ended the “*Dark Ages*” of Europe.

Under such circumstances can there be any doubt about his genuineness, when those who have refused to follow his teachings, be they pagans or Jews or Christians, have suffered from Allah's curse just as the disbelievers in the earlier prophets had suffered in the past?

#### **H. Muhammad according to European scholars**

“A prophet is not without honour save in his own country and in his own house”. Let us examine the worldly wisdom of this quotation from the New Testament in relation to the esteem in which the Holy Prophet Muhammad was held in his own country and in his own house. The truth of the statement from the Bible is profound. Those associated closely with the Prophet were best qualified to judge him, to appraise his character, to estimate the sincerity of his mission, and in fact enable posterity to cast its verdict on Muhammad, the Man.

Muhammad is nearly twenty-five years old when we begin here to take up the thread of his life-story. He is the leader of a caravan and is entrusted with the buying and selling of merchandise by a rich widow named Khadija, who lived in Mecca. When inquiring for an agent to manage her affairs and conduct her caravans, she heard such good accounts of the trustworthiness and fair dealings of young Muhammad that she engaged him as her steward, with whom she had every reason to be satisfied. This brings us to the crux of the question. The honest and upright character of Muhammad was so well known, that his fellow citizens had honoured him with the title of “*Al-Amin*”, or *The Faithful and True*.

The Holy Bible has confirmed that the “Saviour” who will come to the rescue of mankind at the battle of Armageddon will have this title of “*The Faithful and True*” in the following passage:

“And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called *Faithful and True*, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war” (Revelation 19: 11).

It is impossible to explain with any degree of reason and integrity why a later age and a distant clime saw fit to calumniate Muhammad, to slander his mission and to denigrate him in every possible way. As we shall have occasion to see, the allegations against Muhammad, can be put down to tendentious carping and motivated criticism.

Another incident in Muhammad’s life—he was about thirty-five years old at the time—also goes to illustrate clearly the high regard in which he was held “in his own country and in his own house”. The rebuilding of the Kaabah which took place about ten years after Muhammad’s marriage was a very important event in the days of ignorance. A violent storm had flooded the valley of Mecca causing great damage to the ancient temple. The walls were unsafe, and, after some discussion, it was decided to pull them down and rebuild them, for this purpose great blocks of granite were carried down from the neighbouring hills, but timber, which was required for the roof and interior, was very scarce in that barren land. It was, therefore, a fortunate event for the builders of the Kaabah when a Greek ship was wrecked on the coast of the Red Sea within fairly easy distance of Mecca. All the timber from the wreck was bought by the Qureysh, and the ship’s captain, who had some knowledge of architecture, was engaged to help in the rebuilding of the Kaabah. When the walls of the temple had reached a height of some four or five feet, an important matter had to be decided. The sacred and mysterious “Black Stone” was now to be fixed in its place, but so many of the families of the Qureysh claimed the honour of doing this, that a violent dispute arose and the building was suspended for several days. Who was to settle this controversial and difficult question? The debate still continued, when



one of the citizens suggested that the first man who entered the court of the Kaabah by the eastern gate should be asked to decide which of the many claimants deserved the honour of replacing the “Black Stone”. This proposal was agreed to, and all eyes were turned towards the gate in question. Presently, who should be seen approaching but Muhammad! “*Here is Al-Amin!*” or “the Faithful and True” cried the citizens, as Muhammad passed through the gate, “let him judge between us!” Muhammad hit upon the expedient of placing the Black Stone on his cloak, which he had taken off. He then directed that forty men (one from each of the chief clans of the Qureysh) together lift the cloak with its precious burden. When the Black Stone had been raised to the required height from the ground, Muhammad himself set it in its place in the south-east corner of the temple. After this incident, the building of the Kaabah was continued without interruption. Little did the Qureysh foresee the day when these gods of their fathers would be held up to scorn and denounced as vain idols by this man! The quiet and retiring “*Al-Amin*” had as yet shown no sign of the high destiny that awaited him. Little did he know that his earliest convert would be drawn from his own household and though venerated in his own country he himself would be held up to scorn in a later age and a distant clime! For it must be confessed that the figure of Muhammad had, until the turn of the present century and even thereafter, suffered greatly and undeservedly from the hodge-podge of trivialities fathered upon him by later generations of Christians—missionaries in particular! The reason for this odium theologicum of the earlier Western critics is not far to seek. The newest of the revealed religions,—Islam,—had because of the proselytizing zeal of its staunch adherents succeeded not only in detracting from the missionary progress of Christianity but had also made heavy inroads into its hitherto reserved and inaccessible domain. To portray Muhammad as a sensualist and a lecher was the easiest manner, according to the over-simplified logic of the Christian missionaries, to stem the progress of and stop the onward march of Islam.

Professor H. A. R. Gibbs in “Mohammadanism” has recorded:

“Yet through the mass of-all-too-human detail there shines out unmistakably a largeness of humanity—sympathy for the weak, a gentleness that seldom turned to anger save when dishonour seemed to be done to God, something even of shyness in personal intercourse, and a glint of humour—all of which contrasts so strangely with the prevailing temper and spirit of his age and of his followers that it cannot be other than a reflection of the real man”.

### **1. The Hero as a Prophet**

Here are a few passages from Thomas Carlyle’s Lecture—”The Hero as a Prophet” (First published, 1841):

On pages 43-44 of 1909 edition printed by Oxford University Press:

“We have chosen Muhammad ... as the one we are freest to speak of ... I do esteem him a true one. Further, as there is no danger of our becoming, any of us, Muhammadans, I mean to say all the good of him I justly can. It is the way to get at his secret: let us try to understand what he meant with the world; what the world meant and means with him, will then be a more answerable question. Our current hypothesis about Muhammad, that he was a scheming Impostor, a falsehood incarnate, that his religion is a mere mass of quackery and fatuity, begins really to be now untenable to anyone. The lies, which well-meaning zeal has heaped round this man, are disgraceful to ourselves only. When Pococke inquired of Grotius, Where the proof was of that story or the pigeon, trained to pick peas from Muhammad’s ear, and pass for an angel dictating to him? Grotius answered that there was no proof! It is really time to dismiss all that. The word this man spoke has been the life-guidance now of a hundred-and-eighty millions of men these twelve-hundred years. These hundred-and-eighty millions were made by God as well as we. A greater number of God’s creatures believe in Muhammad’s word at this hour than in any other word whatever. Are we to suppose that it was a miserable piece of spiritual legerdemain, this which so many creatures of the Almighty have lived by and died by?

I, for my part, cannot form any such supposition. I will believe most things sooner than that. One would be entirely at a loss what to think of this world at all, if quackery so grew and were sanctioned here.

“Alas, such theories are very lamentable. If we would attain to knowledge of anything in God’s true Creation, let us disbelieve them wholly! They are the product of an Age of Scepticism; they indicate the saddest spiritual paralysis, and mere death-life of the souls of men: a more godless theory, I think, was never promulgated in this Earth. A false man found a religion? Why, a false man cannot build a brick house! If he does not know and follow truly the properties of mortar, burnt clay and what else he works in, it is no house that he makes, but a rubbish heap. It will not stand for twelve centuries, to lodge a hundred-and eighty millions; it will fall straightway”,

On page 45 of *ibid*:

“But of a Great Man especially, of him I will venture to assert that it is incredible he should have been other than true. It seems to me the primary foundation of him, and of all that can lie in him, this”.

On page 53 of *ibid*:

“But, from an early age, he had been remarked as a thoughtful man. His companions named him ‘*Al-Amin*, The Faithful’. A man of truth and fidelity; true in what he did, in what he spake and thought. They noted that he always meant something. A man rather taciturn in speech; silent when there was nothing to be said; but pertinent, wise, sincere, when he did speak; always throwing light on the matter. This is the only sort of speech *worth* speaking! Through life we find him to have been regarded as an altogether solid, brotherly, genuine man. A serious, sincere character; yet amiable, cordial, companionable, jocose even;—a good laugh in him withal!”

On pages 53-54 of *ibid*:

“How he was placed with Khadija, a rich widow, as her Steward, and travelled in her business, again to the Fairs of Syria; how he

managed all, as one can well understand, with fidelity, adroitness; how her gratitude, her regard for him grew: the story of their marriage is altogether a graceful intelligible one, as told us by the Arab authors. He was twenty-five; she forty, though still beautiful. He seems to have lived in a most affectionate, peaceable, wholesome way with this wedded benefactress; loving her truly, and her alone! It goes greatly against the impostor theory, the fact that he lived in this entirely unexcetionable, entirely quiet and commonplace way, till the heat of his years was done. He was forty before he talked of any mission from Heaven. All his irregularities, real and supposed, date from after his fiftieth year, when the good Khadija died. All his 'ambition,' seemingly, had been, hitherto, to live an honest life; his 'fame', the mere good opinion of neighbours that knew him, had been sufficient hitherto. Not till he was already getting old, the prurient heat of his life all burnt out, and *peace* growing to be the chief thing this world could give him, did he start on the 'career of ambition'; and, belying all his past character and existence, set-up as a wretched empty charlatan to acquire what he could now no longer enjoy! For my share, I have no faith whatever in that.

"Ah no! this deep-hearted Son of the Wilderness, with his beaming black eyes and open social deep soul, had other thoughts in him *than ambition*".

On pages 61-62 of *ibid*:

"Much has been said of Muhammad's propagating his Religion by the sword ... Yet withal, if we take this for an argument of the truth or falsehood of a religion, there is a radical mistake in it. The sword indeed; but where will you get your sword; Every new opinion, at its starting, is precisely in a *minority of one*. In one man's head alone, there it dwells as yet. *One man alone* of the whole world believes it; there is *one man* against all men. That *he* take a sword, and try to propagate with that, will do little for him. You must first get your sword! On the whole, a thing will propagate itself as it can. We do not find, of the Christian Religion either, that it always disdained the sword, when once it had got one. Charlemagne's conversion of the Saxon was not by preaching. I care little about tile sword: I will allow a thing to struggle for itself in this world, with

any sword or tongue or implement it has, or can lay hold of. We will let it preach, and pamphleteer, and fight, and to the uttermost bestir itself, and do, beak and claws, whatsoever is in it; very sure that it will, *in the long-run, conquer nothing which does not deserve to be conquered*. What is better than itself, it cannot put away, but only what is worse. *In this great Duel, Nature herself is umpire, and can do no wrong*: the thing which is deepest-rooted in Nature, *what we call truest, that thing and not the other will be found growing at last*".

On pages 70-71 of *ibid*:

Much has been said and written about the sensuality of Muhammad's Religion; *more than was just*. The indulgences, criminal to us, which he permitted, were not of his appointment; he found them practised, unquestioned from immemorial time in Arabia; what he did was to curtail them, restrict them, not on one but on many sides. His Religion is not an easy one: with rigorous fasts, lavations, strict complex formulas, prayers five times a day, and abstinence from wine, it did not '*succeed by being an easy religion*'. As if indeed any religion, or cause holding of religion, could succeed by that! *It is a calumny on men to say that they are roused to heroic action by ease, hope of pleasure, recompense,—sugar-plums of any kind*, in this world or the next! In the meanest mortal there lies something nobler. The poor swearing soldier, hired to be shot, has his 'honour of a soldier', different from drill-regulations and the shilling a day. It is not to taste sweet things, but to do noble and true things, and vindicate himself under God's Heaven as a god-made Man, that the poorest son of Adam dimly longs. Show him the way of doing that, the dullest daydudge kindles into a hero. They wrong man greatly who say he is to be seduced by ease. Difficulty, abnegation, martyrdom, death are the allurements that act on the heart of man. Kindle the inner genial life of him, you have a flame that burns-up all lower considerations. Not happiness, but something higher: one sees this even in the frivolous classes, with their 'point of honour' and the like. Not by flattering our appetites; no, by awakening the Heroic that slumbers in every heart, can any religion gain followers".

On pages 71-72 of *ibid*:

“Muhammad himself, after all that can be said about him, was not a sensual man. We shall err widely if we consider this man as a common voluptuary, intent mainly on base enjoyments,—nay on enjoyments of any kind. His household was of the frugalest; his common diet barley-bread and water: sometimes for months there was not a fire once lighted on his hearth. They record with just pride that he would mend his own shoes, patch his own cloak. A poor, hard-toiling, ill-provided man; careless of what vulgar men toil for. Not a bad man, I should say; something better in him than *hunger* of any sort,—or these wild Arab men, fighting and jostling three-and-twenty years at his hand, in close contact with him always, *would not have revered him so!* They were wild men, bursting ever and anon into quarrel, into all kinds of fierce sincerity; *without right worth and manhood, no man could have commanded them. They called him Prophet*, you say? Why, he stood there face to face with them; bare, not enshrined in any mystery; visibly clouting his own cloak, cobbling his own shoes; fighting, counselling, ordering in the midst of them: they *must have seen what kind of a man he was*, let him be *called* what you like! *No emperor with his tiaras was obeyed as this man in a cloak of his own clouting. During three-and-twenty years of rough actual trial. I find something of a veritable Hero necessary for, that of itself*”.

On page 74 of *ibid*:

“Muhammad’s Paradise is sensual, his Hell sensual: But we are to recollect that the Arabs already had it so; that Muhammad, in whatever he changed of it, softened and diminished all this. The worst sensualities, too, are the work of doctors, followers of his, not his work. In the Qur’an there is really very little said about the joys of Paradise; they are intimated rather than insisted on. Nor is it forgotten that the highest joys even there shall be spiritual; the pure Presence of the Highest, this shall infinitely transcend all other joys. He says, ‘Your salutation shall be, Peace.’ ‘Salaam’, Have Peace!—the thing that all rational souls long for, and seek, vainly here below, as the one blessing. ‘Ye shall sit on seats, facing one another: all grudges shall be taken away out of your hearts’. All grudges! Ye shall

love one another freely; for each of you, in the eyes of his brothers, there will be Heaven enough!"

## **2. The alleged Moral Failures**

W. Montgomery Watt in "*Muhammad, Prophet and Statesman*" has shown:

"Of all the world's great men none has been so much maligned as Muhammad. We saw above how this has come about. For centuries Islam was the great enemy of Christendom, since Christendom was in direct contact with no other organized states comparable in power to the Muslims. The Byzantine Empire, after losing some of its best provinces to the Arabs, was being attacked in Asia Minor, while Europe was threatened through Spain and Sicily. Even before the Crusades focused attention on the expulsion of the Saracens from the Holy Land, medieval Europe was building up a conception of 'the great enemy'. At one point Muhammad was transformed in Mahound, the Prince of darkness. By the twelfth century the ideas about Islam and Muslims current in the crusading armies were such travesties that they had a bad effect on morale. Practical considerations thus combined with scholarly zeal to foster the study and dissemination of more accurate information about Muhammad and his religion.

"Since that time much has been achieved, especially during the last two centuries, but many of the old prejudices linger on. Yet in the modern world, where contacts between Christians and Muslim are closer than ever before, it is urgent that both should strive to reach an objective view of Muhammad's character. The denigration of him by European writers has too often been followed by a romantic idealization of his figure by other Europeans and by Muslims. Neither denigration nor idealization is an adequate basis for the mutual relations of nearly half the human race. We are now back at the questions with which we began. We have an outline of the facts on which ultimate judgment must be based. What are the ultimate judgments to be?

“One of the common allegations against Muhammad is that he was an impostor, who to satisfy his ambition and his lust propagated religious teachings which he himself knew to be false. Such insincerity, it was argued above, makes the development of the Islamic religion, incomprehensible. This Point was first vigorously made over a hundred years ago by Thomas Carlyle in his lectures “On Heroes”, and it has since been increasingly accepted by scholars. Only a profound belief in himself and his mission explains Muhammad’s readiness to endure hardship and persecution during the Meccan period when from a secular point of view there was no prospect of success. Without sincerity how could he have won the allegiance and even devotion of men of strong and upright character like Abu-Bakr and Omar? For the theist there is the further question how God could have allowed a great religion like Islam to develop on a basis of lies and deceit. There is thus a strong case for holding that Muhammad was sincere.

“The other main allegations of moral defect in Muhammad are that he was treacherous and lustful. These are supported by reference to events like the violation of the sacred month on the expedition of Nakhlah (624) and his marriage to Zaynab bint-Jahsh. About the bare facts there is no dispute, but it is not so clear that the facts justify the allegations. Was the violation of the sacred month an act of treachery or a justified breach with a piece of pagan religion? Was the marriage with Zaynab a yielding to sexual desire or a mainly political act in which an undesirable practice of ‘adoption’ belonging to a lower level was ended? Sufficient has been said above about the interpretation of these events to show that the case against Muhammad is much weaker than is sometimes thought”.

### 3. The Foundations of Greatness

W. Montgomery Watt in “*Muhammad, Prophet and Statesman*” we further find:

“Circumstances of time and place favoured Muhammad. Various forces combined to set the stage for his life-work and for the subsequent expansion of Islam. There was the social unrest in



Mecca and Madinah, the movement towards monotheism, the reaction against Hellenism in Syria and Egypt, the decline of Persian and Byzantine empires, and a growing realization by the nomadic Arabs. Yet these forces, and others like them which might be added, would not in themselves account for the rise of the empire known as the Umayyad caliphate nor for the development of Islam into a world religion. There was nothing inevitable or automatic about the spread of the Arabs and the growth of the Islamic community. Without a remarkable combination of qualities in Muhammad it is improbable that the expansion would have taken place, and the military potential of the Arabs might easily have spent itself in raids on Syria and Iraq with no lasting consequences. These qualities fall into three groups.

“First there is Muhammad’s gift as a seer. Through him or, on the orthodox Muslim view, through the revelation made to him—the Arab world was given a frame-work of ideas on which the resolution of its social tension became possible. The provision of such a frame-work involved both insight into the fundamental causes of the social malaise of the time, and the genius to express this insight in a form which would stir the hearer to the depths of his being. The European reader may be ‘put off’ by the Qur’an, but it was admirably suited to the needs and conditions of the day.

“Secondly, there is Muhammad’s wisdom as a statesman. The conceptual structure found in the Qur’an was merely a frame-work. The frame-work had to support a building of concrete policies and concrete institutions. In the course of this book much has been said about Muhammad’s far-sighted political strategy and his social reforms. His wisdom in these matters is shown by the rapid expansion of his small state to a world-empire after his death, and by the adaptation of his social institutions to many different environments and their continuance for thirteen centuries.

“Thirdly, there is his skill and tact as an administrator and his wisdom in the choice of men to whom to delegate administrative details. Sound institutions and a sound policy will not go far if the execution of affairs is faulty and fumbling. When Muhammad died,

the state he had founded was a 'going concern', able to withstand the shock of his removal and, once it had recovered from this shock, to expand at prodigious speed.

"The more one reflects on the history of Muhammad and of early Islam, the more one is amazed at the vastness of his achievement. Circumstances presented him with an opportunity such as few men have had, but the man was fully matched with the hour. Had it not been for his gifts as seer, statesman, and administrator and, behind these, his trust in God and firm belief that God had sent him, a notable chapter in the history of mankind would have remained unwritten.

"Finally, what of your question? Was Muhammad a prophet? He was a man in whom creative imagination worked at deep levels and produced ideas relevant to the central questions of human existence so that his religion has had a widespread appeal, not only in his own age but in succeeding centuries.

"Surely a good and sincere man, full of confidence in his Creator, who makes an immense reform both in faith and practice, is truly a direct instrument in the hands of God, and may be said to have a commission from Him.

"Why may not Muhammad be recognized, as truly a servant of God, serving Him faithfully? Why may it not be believed that he was, in his own age and country, a preacher of truth and righteousness, sent to teach his own people the unity and righteousness of God, to give them civil and moral precepts suited to their condition.

"Muhammad then, was doubtless fully convinced of his own mission as well as that in the name of God, and in the character of His Apostle, he wrought a great reform in his own country. Nor was his belief in his own mission ill-founded. Through mockery and persecution the Prophet kept unflinchingly his path; no threats, no injuries hinder him from still preaching to his people the unity and the righteousness of God and exhorting to a far better and purer morality than had ever upto his time been set before them. *He claimed no temporal power, no spiritual domination, he asked but for simple toleration, free permission to win men by persuasion into*

*the way of truth. He required that men should do justice and have love and mercy, and walk humbly before their God, and as the sanction of all, he taught that there will be a resurrection of the dead as well of both the just and the unjust.*

“The tolerant spirit of ‘Muhammadanism’, as contrasted with the bigotry and fanaticism of Christianity, is thus admirably shown by the celebrated historian, Gibbon: ‘The wars of the Muhammad were sanctified by the Prophet, but among the various precepts and examples of his life, the Caliphs selected the lessons of toleration that might tend to disarm the resistance of the unbelieving. Arabia was the temple and patrimony of the God of Muhammad; but he beheld with less jealousy and affection the other nations of the earth. The polytheists and idolaters who were ignorant of his name might be lawfully extirpated, but a Wise policy supplied the obligations of justice, *the Muhammadan conquerors of Hindoostan have spared the pagodas of that devout and populous Country. The disciples of Abraham, of Moses and of Jesus were solemnly invited to accept the more perfect revelation of Muhammad; but, if they preferred the payment of a moderate tribute, they were entitled to the freedom of conscience and religious worship. In a field of battle, the forfeit lives of the prisoners were redeemed by the profession of Islamism; the females were bound to embrace the religion of their masters, and a race of sincere proselytes was gradually multiplied by the education of the infant captives. But the millions of African and Asiatic converts who swelled the native bands of the faithful Arabs, must have been allured rather than constrained to declare their belief in one God. By the repetition of a sentence and the loss of a foreskin, the subject or the slave, the captive or the criminal, arose, in a moment, to the free and equal companion of the victorious Muslims. Every sin was expiated, every engagement was dissolved, the vow of celibacy was superseded by the indulgence of nature, the native spirits who slept in the cloister were awakened by the trumpet of the Saracens, and in the convulsions of the world, every member of a new society ascended to the natural level of his capacity and courage.*

“For as the soul is more noble than the body, so he was willing to

allow the body its own pleasures, by the reward he promised he might the more easily allure the rude Arabians who thought of nothing but what was gross and sensual, to fall into the worship of the one and only true God, as expounded in his doctrine. *But Muhammad always assigned to the soul its own peculiar pleasures, viz: The beholding of the face of God, which will be, the greatest of all delights, the fullness of joy, and which will cause all the other pleasures of Paradise to be forgotten!* He that beholdeth his gardens, wives, goods and servants, reaching through the space of a thousand years' journey, is but in the lowest degree among the inhabitants of Paradise; *but among them he is in the supreme degree of honour with God, who contemplates His divine countenance every morn. It is, therefore, false that the pleasures of the Muhammadan Paradise consist exclusively in corporeal things and the use of them;* it is false also, that all Muhammadans believe those pleasures to be corporeal, for many contend, on the contrary, that those things are said parabolically, and are to be considered as of spiritual delights in the same manner as the Doctors of the Christian Church maintain that "Solomon's Song" is not a mere Epithalamium, but is to be understood in a spiritual sense as typical of Christ's love for His Church.

"The famous Hyde, in his 'Not: and Biboi, Turcar' Liturg', p. 21, writes, 'That those sensual pleasure of paradise are thought by wiser Muhammadans to be allegorical that they may be then better conceived by human understanding, just as in the Holy Scriptures many things are said after the manner of men. For, writing to the Morocco ambassador, when I mentioned a garden pleasant like that of Paradise, he, checking me, wrote back, *that Paradise was such a place to which nothing in the world could be likened such as neither eye hath seen, ear heard, neither hath it entered into the heart of man to conceive*' To this may likewise be added, the testimony of the famous Herbelot, who, after having shown in his 'Bibliotheca orientalis', *that the Muhammadans place the chief good in the Communion of God, and the celestial joys in the fruition of the light of the Divine Countenance* which makes Paradise wherever it is, writes thus: 'It is not, therefore true which many authors who have opposed Muhammadans have asserted that the Musalmans know

no other happiness in Heaven but the use of pleasures which affect the senses’.

“From what precedes, it follows that much more than is just has been said and written about the sensual character of Muhammad’s religion. No doubt that from a Christian point of view, and taken in the abstract, certain usages of the people of the East present themselves to European criticism as real defects and as great vices, but with a little more of evangelical charity we should treat them less severely. We should take more into account the influence of origin and climate and the material necessity of social obligations.

“Equally mistaken, if not wilfully unjust, are those who find in Muhammad’s sensual Paradise, a reflex of his own character, and represent the Prophet (impostor they call him) as a sensual voluptuary, for, so much to the contrary, he was a poor, hard-toiling, ill-provided man, careless of what vulgar men so eagerly labour and contend for”.

R.V.C. Bodley, on page 338, of “*The Messenger*”, London, 1946 confirms:

“Muhammad’s unique position in religious history is due to the fact that he inspired all he did without being an angel, without having any attributes which were not strictly human. Outside his tremendous personality he had nothing in life to distinguish him from other Muslims”.

John William Draper., M.D. LL.D. on pages 329-330 of “*History of the Intellectual Development of Europe*”, Vol. 1, London, 1875 informs:

“Muhammad possessed that combination of qualities which more than once has decided the fate of empires ... Asserting that everlasting truth, he did not engage in vain metaphysics, but applied himself to improving the social condition of his people by regulations, respecting personal cleanliness, sobriety, fasting and prayer. Above all other works, he esteemed almsgiving and charity. With a liberality to which the world had of late become a stranger he admitted the salvation of men of any form of faith provided they were virtuous. To the declaration that there is but one God, he

added, "And Muhammad is His Prophet" Whoever desires to know whether the event of things answered to the boldness of such an announcement will do well to examine a map of the world in our own times. He will find the marks of something more than an imposture. *To be the religious head of many empires, to guide the daily life of one third of the human race, justify the title of Messenger of God*".

Mahatma Gandhi in "*Young India*", quoted in "*The Light*", Lahore, dated 16th September 1924 has stated:

"I wanted to know the best of the life of one who holds today undisputed sway over the hearts of millions of mankind. I became more than ever convinced that it was not the sword that won a place for Islam in those days in the scheme of life. It was the rigid simplicity, the utter self-effacement of the Prophet, the scrupulous regard for pledges, his intense devotion to his friends and followers, his intrepidity, his fearlessness, his absolute trust in God and in his own mission. These and not the sword carried everything before them and surmounted every obstacle.

"When I closed the second volume (of the Prophet's Biography), I was sorry there was not more for me to read of that great life".

Arthur Gilman on pages 184-185 of "*The Saracens*", London, 1887 reveals:

"It is greatly to his (Muhammad's) praise that on this occasion (conquest of Mecca), when his resentment for ill usage in the past might naturally have incited him to revenge he restrained all his army from shedding of blood, and showed every sign of humility and thanksgiving to Allah for His goodness ... Ten or twelve men who had on a former occasion shown a barbarous spirit were proscribed, and of them four were put to death, but this must be considered exceedingly humane, in comparison, for example, with the cruelty of the Crusaders, who in 1099, put seventy thousand Muslims, men, women and helpless children, to death when Jerusalem fell into their hands; or with that of the English army, also fighting under the Cross, which in the year of grace 1874 burned an African capital, in its war on the Gold Coast. Muhammad's victory

was in truth one of religion and not of politics, he rejected every token of personal homage, and declined all regal authority; and when the haughty chiefs of the Qureyshites appeared before him, he asked:-

‘What can you expect at my hands?’

‘Mercy, O generous brother’,

‘Be it so; you are free,’ he exclaimed”.

Stanley Lane-Poole, on pages 27-29 of *“The Introduction to The Speeches and Table-Talk of the Prophet Muhammad”*, London, 1882 affirms:

“Muhammad was of middle height, rather thin but broad of shoulder, wide of chest, strong of bone and muscle. His head was massive, strongly developed. Dark hair, slightly curled, flowed in a dense mass almost to his shoulders, even in advanced age it was sprinkled with only about twenty grey hairs, produced by the agonies of His ‘Revelations’. His face was oval shaped, slightly tawny of colour. Fine long arched eye-brows were divided by a vein, which throbbed visibly in moments of passion. Great black restless eyes shone out from under long heavy eyelashes. His nose was large, slightly aquiline. His teeth, upon which he bestowed great care, were well set, dazzling white. A full beard framed his manly face. His skin was clear and soft, his complexion ‘red and white’. His hands were as ‘silk and satin’, even as those of woman. His step was quick and elastic, yet firm as that of one who steps ‘from a high to a low place’. In turning his face, he would also turn his whole body. His whole gait and presence was dignified and imposing. His countenance was mild and pensive. His laugh was rarely more than a smile.

“In his habits he was extremely simple, although he bestowed great care on his person. His eating and drinking, his dress and his furniture retained, even when he had reached the fullness of power, their almost primitive nature. The only luxuries he indulged in were arms, which he highly prized, and a pair of yellow boots, a present from the Negus of Abyssinia. Perfumes, however, he liked

passionately, being most sensitive to smells. Strong drink he abhorred.

“He was gifted with mighty powers of imagination, elevation of mind, delicacy and refinement of feeling. ‘He is more modest than a virgin behind her curtain’, it was said of him. He was most indulgent to his inferiors, and would never allow his little page to be scolded whatever he did. ‘Ten years’ said Anas, his servant, ‘I was about the Prophet, and he never said as much as “Uff” to me’. He was very affectionate towards his family. One of his boys died on his breast in the smoky house of the nurse, a blacksmith’s wife. He was very fond of children; he would stop them in the streets and pat their little heads. He never struck anyone in his life. The worst expression he ever made use of in conversation was, ‘what has come to him?’ ‘May his forehead become darkened with mud’. When asked to curse someone he replied ‘I have not been sent to curse, but to be a *mercy to mankind*; ‘He visited the sick, followed any bier he met, accepted the invitation of a slave to dinner, mended his own clothes, milked the goats, and waited upon himself,’ relates summarily another tradition. He never first withdrew his hands out of another man’s palm, and turned not before the other had turned.

“He was the most faithful protector of those he protected, the sweetest and most agreeable in conversation. Those who saw him were suddenly filled with reverence; those who came near him loved him; they, who described him, would say. *I have never seen his like either before or after.*’ He was of great taciturnity, but when he spoke it was with emphasis and deliberation, and no one could forget what he said”.

G.W. Leitner, LL.D., M.A., Ph.D., D.O.L., on page 4 of “*Mohammadaaism*” Lahore, 1893 writes:

“Muhammad himself did not make any claim to infallibility. On one occasion he had a revelation censuring himself severely for having turned away from a beggar in order to speak to an illustrious man of the commonwealth, and he published this revelation, the very last thing which he would have done had he been an impostor, as ignorant Christian call the great Arab”.



The Rev. R. MacGregor in “*Yorkshire Post*” dated 8th June, 1935 contends:

*“The spectacular success of Muhammad in unifying the tribes of Arabia under the worship of the one God, Allah, and in perpetuating his own name as Allah’s prophet, can hardly fail to excite both wonder and admiration. The dire poverty which he endured so courageously in Madinah is well known. His dwelling was a hut with a minimum of furniture ... This was a man who could inspire his followers with zeal, and love for himself. He was calm in danger, and in the cave of Thaur assured Abu Bakr that God was with them. He showed a Spartan endurance of utter poverty, which he shared with his converts in Madinah. By abolishing alcohol and prostitution he made an undoubted reformation in the life of Arabia”.*

LaMartine on page 277 of Vol. II of “*Histoire de la Turquie*”, Paris 1854, asserts:

Philosopher, orator, apostle, legislator, warrior, conqueror of ideas, restorer of rational dogmas, a cult without images; the founder of twenty terrestrial empires and of one spiritual empire, *that is Muhammad!* As regards all standards by which human greatness may be measured, we may well ask, *is there any man greater than he?*”





## *Chapter 18*

# **The Divine Scripture Which Defies Forgeries— The greatest continuing miracle over the centuries**



The Torah, the Psalms and other books of the Old Testament were burnt and destroyed along with Jerusalem in 607 B.C. The Old Testament could not be reproduced in its original form because none knew the contents by heart. The Evangel of Jesus written by Levi in Hebrew in Aramaic script was burnt in 325 A.D. No attempt has even been made to reproduce the Evangel in Hebrew, the language of Jesus! Hence both the Old and the New Testaments are now full of forgeries even according to Christian Research Scholars who no longer consider them to be the “Words of God”.

The Only Divine Scripture which has been destroyed repeatedly over the past fourteen centuries but reproduced without a single error in its original language is known as the “Qur’an”. Millions of copies of the Qur’an were burnt from time to time by the Mongols, the Turks and the Huns right from Sinkiang and Russian Turkish States to the shores of the Mediterranean and by the Christians in Jerusalem, Palestine, Spain, South Italy, Greece, Hungary, Rumania, Bulgaria, Austria, and all the Mediterranean islands as well as by the Communists in Russia and China but the Qur’an still has retained its original text and language because it was known by heart. That is the sole reason why each and every attempt to incorporate forgeries have immediately been detected and corrected. Hence the Qur’an has

become the greatest continuing miracle over the centuries as confirmed repeatedly by numerous Non-Muslim European Research Scholars, some of whose findings are quoted hereafter.

Before referring to the teachings of Muhammad it becomes necessary to find out what is “The Qur’an” which in Arabic means “The Sayings” or “The Recitations” or “The Readings”.

“WHOSE SAYINGS?”

**A. Of Allah or a Man who did not even know how to read or write a single letter!**

When “Qur’an” in Arabic means the “Sayings” then it becomes very necessary to analyse and find out “whose sayings” does the Qur’an comprise? Were they the work of an unlettered man who not only did not know how to read or write a single word, but also did not even know how to sign his own name to the letters dictated by him—hence a seal had to be prepared in the later part of his life, which was stamped onto his letters for the purpose of authentication!

If they were the “Sayings” of an illiterate person, then surely the Qur’an must logically be:

1. Full of grammatical mistakes consisting of many flaws.
2. The language of the Qur’an should be the plain and simple language spoken by the uneducated.
3. It should be possible for intellectual people to produce similar type of work.
4. Under what conditions were these “Sayings” revealed according to the findings of Scholars?
5. Have the olden prophets said anything about the coming of the “Sayings of Allah”, and the method of its revelation?
6. Which sacred Book of Religion is the Truth?

7. What are the objects of the Qur'an according to Europeans?
8. What are the teachings of the Qur'an?
9. How and when was the Qur'an recorded?

**B. Is the Qur'an full of Flaws and Grammatical mistakes showing it to be the work of an uneducated person who did not know how to read or write?**

Fourteen Centuries have passed since the first verses of the Qur'an were revealed. Yet very strangely not a single person, however clever and intelligent he might have been during all these centuries, has as yet succeeded in pointing out a single flaw, a single grammatical mistake, a single contradiction, a single statement which has become false in the Qur'an, which comprises thirty volumes or parts divided into 114 Surahs or chapters.

In the footnote on page 64 of "*Mohammed and the Koran*" by Devenport one reads:

"The following is a metrical account of the verses, *etc.*, of the Qur'an, taken from a very beautiful copy, once the property of the unfortunate Tippoo Sahib (Tippoo Sultan, King of Mysore), but now preserved in the public library at Cambridge:

"The verses of the Qur'an, which is good and heart delighting,  
Are six thousand, six hundred and sixty-six;  
One thousand of it command, one thousand strongly prohibit,  
One thousand of it promise, one thousand of it threaten,  
One thousand of it read in choice stories,  
And know, one thousand of it to consist in instructive parables,  
Five hundred of it in discussion, lawful and unlawful,  
One hundred of it in prayers for morn and even,  
Of such an one I have now told you the whole".

Can such a massive flawless masterpiece with so much perfection as to comprise 6666 verses and having an equal number of 1000 verses no more and no less of each on six subjects *i.e.* commands, prohibitions, promises, threats, choice stories and instructive parables be the work of an illiterate man or are they the “Words of Allah”? What does our intelligence say?

Devenport on page 64 of *ibid* has recorded:

“The Qur’an has always been held by the Muhammadans as the greatest of all miracles and equally stupendous with the act of raising the dead. The miracles of Moses and Jesus, they say, were transient and temporary, but that of Muhammad is permanent and perpetual, and therefore, far superior to all the miraculous events of preceding ages”.

The Qur’an was burnt deliberately and destroyed repeatedly by Kings who exterminated, and massacred large Muslim populations such as, the Seljuk Turks, the Mongols, the Tartars, the Christians in Spain, Italy etc., but the Qur’an was nevertheless soon reproduced by those who had it by heart in its original form without any discrepancies. The other Holy Books when they were destroyed, in 607 B.C. and 70 A.D. when Jerusalem was twice razed and in 325 A.D. when the Evangel was burnt could not be reproduced with their original texts as nobody knew them by heart and none know them by heart even today. *Is not the Qur’an thus the greatest and the most permanent of all known miracles? Can such a massive work comprising 30 volumes be learnt by heart by hundreds of thousands of people unless the contents were the “Words of Allah”?*

### **C. Is the Qur’an in the simple language of the uneducated?**

Pickthall has recorded in the “Translator’s Foreword” to “*The Meaning of the Glorious Koran*” as follows:

“The Qur’an cannot be translated. This is the belief of the old-fashioned Sheykh and the views of the present writer. The Book is

here rendered almost literally and every effort has been made to choose befitting language. But the result is *not the Glorious Qur'an, that inimitable symphony, the very sounds of which move men to tears and ecstasy*. It is only an attempt to present the meaning of the Qur'an—and peradventure something of its charm—in English. It can never take the place of the Qur'an in Arabic, nor is it meant to do so”,

Pickthall has remarked on page XXIX of his introduction to *ibid* as follows:

“There is another peculiarity which is disconcerting in translation though it proceeds from one of the beauties of the original, and is unavoidable without abolishing the verse division of great importance for reference. In the Arabic the verses are divided according to the rhythm of the language. When a certain sound which marks the rhythm recurs there is a strong pause and the verse ends naturally, although the sentence may go on to the next verse or to several subsequent verses. This is the spirit of the Arabic language; but attempts to reproduce such rhythm in English have the opposite effect to that produced by the Arabic”.

Devenport has recorded on page 67 of “*Mohammed and the Koran*” as follows:

“The admiration with which the reading of the Qur'an inspires the Arabs is due to the magic of its style, and to the care with which Muhammad embellished his prose by the introduction of poetical ornaments; by his giving it a cadenced march and by making the verses rhyme; its variety also is very striking, for sometimes, quitting ordinary language, he paints, in majestic verses, the Eternal, seated on His throne, dispensing laws to the universe; his verses become melodious and thrilling when he describes the everlasting delights of paradise; they are vigorous and harrowing when he depicts the flames of hell”.

Hence the Qur'an according to European Research Scholars is such a wonderful work as would move a person to tears and ecstasy by mere recitation. Surely everyone realises that the Qur'an is therefore

not in the simple language of an uneducated person, no it cannot be! Is not this by itself a wonderful miracle that it has come out of the mouth of an illiterate person? Can such a masterpiece, be the work of Muhammad who did not know how to read or write or is the Qur'an the "Words of Allah"?

**D. If Qur'an is the work of a man then it should be possible for others to produce similar works**

The pagan Arabs joined by the Jews and Christians, claimed that there was nothing so spectacular about the Qur'an. In reply Allah revealed several such verses:

"Lo! those who disbelieve in the Reminders (*i.e.* the Qur'an), when it reacheth to them (are guilty of disobedience to the orders of the earlier prophets *viz*: Moses—Deuteronomy 18: 18-19; Jesus—St. John 16: 12, 13; Samuel and many other prophets—Acts 3: 22- 25); for lo! this (Qur'an) is an unassailable Scripture.

"Falsehood cannot come to it from (what has been) before it nor from behind it (*i.e.* anything which will be created by human intelligence by forging the earlier Bibles as shown herebefore or anything to be written afterwards). (The Qur'an is) a revelation from (Allah), the All Wise, the Owner of Praise" (Qur'an 41: 41-42).

"And say: *Truth hath come and falsehood hath vanished away* (from Arabia and the surrounding countries). Lo! falsehood is ever bound to vanish (away eventually from the face of the Earth when the Kingdom of Allah-of Thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven—*i.e.* Al Islam is established after the great battle of Armageddon when there will be international world peace and goodwill for several centuries).

"And We (Allah) reveal the Qur'an which is a healing and a mercy for believers, though it increases the evil-doers in naught save ruin.

"Say: verily, though mankind and the Jinn (*i.e.* Genii) should assemble (their knowledge together) to produce the like of this Qur'an, they could not produce the like thereof though they were



helpers of one another (in this task)” (Qur’an 17: 81-82, 88).

The challenge was thus thrown out to the intelligentsia of the whole world to produce a book like the Qur’an! When they failed, they wanted the Holy Prophet to accept the challenge to produce only one part similar to the Qur’an. They met their second failure when they could not produce even that! So they said they would produce only one chapter similar in language to the Qur’an but here also they miserably failed! This failure is now a continuing failure for the whole world for the past 1,400 years already!

Then as a last resort they challenged Muhammad, to give them any three verses from the Qur’an and within forty days they would contradict it by adding one verse of similar number of beats or rhythms.

The pagan Arabs were famous for their poetry. They had so far not failed to produce verses which would contradict the substance given in the earlier three verses hung up in challenge at the Kaabah.

The following three verses comprising the Surah known as “Abundance” was revealed and hung up on the walls of the Kaabah to meet this challenge:

“Lo! We (Allah) have given thee (Muhammad) Abundance;

“So pray unto thy lord, and (offer) sacrifice.

“Lo! It is thy insulter (and not thou) who is without posterity”  
(Qur’an 58: 1-3).

The world failed and declared: “*Ma Haza La Kalam al Bashr*” which means “These are not the words of a human being (but of Allah)”! Is any more proofs required?

Thus the world had to acknowledge that the Qur’an is the “Sayings of Allah” and not “the Sayings of an unlettered person” through its continued failures to produce in the past 14 centuries a book like the Qur’an or even a sentence of such a high calibre of perfection as the Surah or chapter “Abundance”.

A few quotations from the findings of European Research Scholars given hereunder will make it absolutely clear *that the human mind has not in 1,400 years been able to produce even a single sentence to match the wondrous beauties of the Qur'an*. Can such be then the works of Muhammad, a man who did not even know how to read or write?

Professor H.A.R. Gibbs on page 53 of "*Mohammedanism*", London 1953 has recorded:

"Well then, if the Qur'an were his (*i.e.* Muhammad's) own composition other men could rival it. Let them produce ten verses like it. If they could not (and it is obvious that they could not), then let them accept the Qur'an as an outstanding evidential miracle!"

Harry Gaylord Dorman on page 3 of "*Towards Understanding Islam*", New York 1948 has confirmed:

"It (Qur'an) is a literal revelation of God, dictated to Muhammad by Gabriel, perfect in every letter. It is an everpresent miracle witnessing to itself and to Muhammad, the Prophet of God. Its miraculous quality resides partly in its style, so perfect and lofty that neither men nor jinn (*i.e.* Genies and fairies) could produce a single chapter to compare with its briefest chapter, and partly in its contents, teachings, prophecies about the future, and amazingly accurate information such as the illiterate Muhammad could never have gathered of his own accord".

Hirschfeld on page 8 of "*New Researches*" has recorded his findings:

"The Qur'an is unapproachable as regards convincing power, eloquence and even composition".

Prefessor E.H. Palmer in his "*Introduction to the Koran*", London 1820 has confirmed:

"That the best of Arab writers has never succeeded in producing anything equal in merit to the Qur'an itself is not surprising".

On page 99 of "*The Ins and Outs of Mesopotamia*" one reads:

“A more disunited people it would be hard to find, till suddenly, the miracle took place! A man arose, who, by his personality and by his claim to direct Divine guidance, actually brought about the impossible—namely the union of all these warring factions”.

The English scholar Devenport has recorded on pages 65-66 of “*Mohammed and the Koran*” as under:

“In order properly to estimate the merits of the Qur’an, it should be considered that when the Prophet arose, eloquence of expression and purity of diction were much cultivated, and that poetry and oratory were held in the highest estimation. “The miracle of the Qur’an”, says a Muhammadan author, “consists in elegance, purity of diction, and melody of its sentences, so that every Ajemer who hears it recited perceives at once its superiority over all other Arabic compositions.

“It was to the Qur’an so considered as permanent miracle that Muhammad appealed as the chief confirmation of his mission, publicly challenging the most eloquent men in Arabia, then abounding with persons whose sole study and ambition it was to excel in elegance of style and composition, to produce even one single chapter that might compete therewith.

“According to tradition, Lebid Abu Rabia, a native of Yemen, and one of the seven whose verses constituted the Mallakat (a series of prizes suspended in the Kaabah), was still an idolater when Muhammad announced publicly his law. One of the poems began with the verse, “All praise is vain which referreth not unto God, and all good that proceedeth not from Him is but a shadow.” For some time not a poet could be found to compete with it, but at length the chapter of the Qur’an entitled ‘Barat’ was affixed to the gate of the same temple, and *Lebid was so overcome by the first few verses as to declare that they could only have been produced by the inspiration of God Himself, and he forthwith embraced Islamism*”.

### **E. Under what conditions were these “Sayings” revealed according to the findings of research scholars?**

The famous Christian Scholar and Orientalist H.A.R. Gibbs after many years of research has given his findings on page 44 of “*Mohammedanism—A Historical Survey*” as follows:

“Whatever the psychological explanation may be, it is difficult to resist the conclusion that the term “revelation” was confined to those utterances (which comprise the “Qur’an”), which were not consciously produced and controlled by the Prophet and seemed to him to have been put into his mouth (by a force or power) from without”.

Another English Research Scholar Pickthall on page XI of the Introduction of “*The Meaning of the Glorious Koran*” published by the New American Library under its Mentor Religious Classics writes as under:

“The words which come to him (Muhammad) when in a state of trance are held sacred by the Muslims and are never confounded with those which he uttered when no physical change was apparent in him. The former are the Sacred Book (*i.e.* Al Qur’an); the latter the HADITH or SUNNAH of the Prophet. And because the angel on Mt. Hira bade him ‘Read’, insisted on his ‘Reading’ though he was illiterate, the Sacred Book is known as Al Qur’an, ‘The Reading’, *the Reading of the man who knew not how to Read.*”

Devenport on pages 62-63 of “*Mohammed and the Koran*” has recorded:

“The Qur’an is held by Muhammadans to be not only of divine origin, but also as eternal and uncreated; remaining, as some express it, in the very essence of God, on which account the Almighty made the miracle of Muhammad to consist in an inimitable style, as exhibited in the Qur’an. The first transcript of it has been from everlasting, near God’s throne, written on a table of vast dimensions, called the Preserved Table, on which are also recorded the divine decrees—past, present, and to come.

Muhammadans also believe that before all other things God created this Table of His decrees, and after that His Kullum, or pen: that this table is one entire precious stone of vast magnitude, and that the pen consists of one pearl, from whose slit is distilled the light that serves as the true and only ink employed by God or rather by the angels, in obedience to His commands, in registering the words and deeds of men. A copy from this table in one volume, on paper, was by the ministry of the angel Gabriel, sent down to the lowest heaven, in the month of Ramadan, on the night of power; from whence Gabriel revealed it to Muhammad; piecemeal, some portions at Mecca and some at Madinah, at different times, during the space of Twenty-three years, as the exigency of circumstances required; giving him, however, the consolation of seeing it, bound in silk and ornamented with the precious stones of Paradise, once in twelve months, a privilege which was doubled during the last year of his life”.

“It is said that few chapters were delivered entire, *the most part being revealed in detached portions, and written down from time to time, by the Prophet’s amanuensis, in such and such a chapter, until completed*, according to Gabriel’s directions”.

From the above findings of European Research Scholars it, will be clear that over a period of 23 years as each important incident took place, a portion of the Qur’an was revealed by Muhammad in a state of trance with advice that this revelation would be placed in such and such a position in a specific chapter (Surah). Some parts of one surah were revealed at Mecca and the rest at Madinah and vice versa.

*Now let us ask ourselves, can this be the work of a human master-mind to say that what he was revealing today would be placed in such and such a position in such and such a chapter which was to be disclosed 5 or 10 or even 23 years later?*

Are not such declarations of the position of each verse as they were revealed to be fitted into something which was made public several years later and that too without a single error or correction in the positioning of each sentence in the Qur’an, far beyond the human

intellectual capacity of any man? Are not these then definitely the “Words of Allah”?

Does it not show that Allah has deliberately caused the “Qur’an” to be recited out of the mouth of a man who did not know how to read or write, thus making it the greatest continuing miracle for all time! Has not Allah brought about many strange miraculous situations on numerous occasions before. Just let us refer to one of them—An unarmed shepherd boy David with a few pebbles killed and slew the mighty warrior Goliath? (I Samuel 17: 22-58). Another such miraculous incident was the helpless Moses with the Israelites on the shores of the Red Sea with Pharaoh and his army in hot pursuit, when the sea parted to enable the Israelites to escape and subsequently drowned the entire Egyptian Army (Exodus 13 and 14). The difference is that these miracles were for a temporary period, whilst the Qur’an has been on earth for 1,400 years now and one does not know how many more centuries it is going to remain on earth before returning to Allah? *Is not the Qur’an then the greatest and most permanent of all miracles?*

On page 31 of “*Moslems on the March*” by F.W. Fernau published in 1955 by Robert Hale Ltd., London we read the following findings:

“A world language and the fundamentals of a constitutional system were the permanent legacy of the Arabs to Islamic civilization. The inviolable authority of the Qur’an must be accounted the principal reason for the fact that for more than thirteen centuries the Arabic written language has remained virtually unchanged, a unique case among the living languages of civilized mankind. Arabic is spoken as their mother tongue by at most one fifth of the Muslims, but the knowledge of the language of the Qur’an is still widespread throughout the Islamic world. The Arabic script is used by all the people of Islam, from the Malays to the Black Africans of the Sudan, with the exception of the Turks and of the Muslims living in the Soviet Union. The codification of Islamic law was not the work of the Arabs alone, but that achievement bears unmistakable marks of the Arab genius; it is an achievement that is not inferior to that of

the great creators of Roman Law”.

From this it is obvious that when the Arabic language in the Qur'an has had such an influence, that it has made the written Arabic language unchangeable for 1,400 years, then how much greater effort must be made by Muslims to preserve the purity of the text of the Qur'an, which no other religious book has enjoyed for such a length of time. *Hence is not the Qur'an the greatest and the most amazing miracle the world could ever imagine? Can such be the work of a man, who did not even know how to read or write?*

## **F. What the “Sayings of Allah” are according to the olden Prophets**

The Torah gives the following information on the Qur'an as the “Sayings of Allah”:

“I (Allah) will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren (*i.e.* not the Jews but the Ishmaelites) like unto thee (*i.e.* like Moses who will speak face to face with Allah as Moses did as one friend speaks to another) and I (Allah) will put My words in his mouth and he Shall speak unto them all that I (Allah) shall command him.

“And it shall come to pass, (after a lapse of some time at the battle of Armageddon), that whosoever will not hearken unto My words which he shall speak in My name, I (Allah) will punish him” (Deuteronomy 18: 18-19).

Jesus has confirmed the Qur'an as “Sayings of Allah” as under:

“I (Jesus) have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.

“Howbeit when he the Spirit of Truth (Nur-e-Muhammadi or the Logos) is come, he will guide you unto all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear (from Allah), that shall he speak (*i.e.* Al Qur'an): and he will shew you things to come” (St. John 16: 12,-13).

Hazrat Ali ibne (son of) abu Talib, the Holy Prophet's first cousin, husband of his fourth and youngest daughter Fatemah and father of

Imam Hassan and Imam Hussain, the Great Martyr of Karbala and one of the early Presidents (Caliph) of Islam has explained Islam's claim that Qur'an in Arabic means "Sayings of Allah" as follows:

"Qur'an is neither the Creator nor the created, but it is the Sayings of Omnipotent Allah, from Him it issued and to Him it shall return".

Abdullah son of Abbas the Holy Prophet's cousin (died between 68 A.H. / 687 A.D. and 70 A.H. / 689 A.D.) is reported to have rebuked a man who used the expression "O Lord of the Qur'an;" as follows:

"Fie! The Qur'an is the "Sayings of Allah" and is not subject to or created by a Lord; from Him it issued and to Him it shall return".

The similarities of the above quotations from the various sections of the Holy Bible and Islam establish clearly that all these references are identical and refer to the one and only recordings known to the world as the "Sayings of Allah". In Arabic it is called "Al Qur'an"!

Both Moses and Jesus have stated in the above-quoted passages that the man who would say only those things which Allah would put into his mouth was to come after them and that he would be from a community that was a brethren to the Jewish communities from the descendants of Abraham *i.e.* the Ishmaelites.

In "*Islam and Christian Theology*" by J. Windrow Sweetman, Vice-Principal of the Henry Martyn School of Islamic Studies at Aligarh, in Part I, Volume one, *Missionary Research Series* No. 6, Lutterworth Library Vol. XIX, published under the auspices of the Department of Mission, Selly Oak Colleges by Lutterworth Press, London and Redwood, on page 70, one reads this interesting argumentative passage:

"In consideration of whether the Qur'an is a sign of the Prophet's mission, he points out that Muhammad was an unlettered man and yet produced the Qur'an. A comparison of the Old Testament with the Qur'an is for the disparagement of the former. It deals generally with "Genealogies of the Israelites, their exodus from Egypt, their camping and striking camp and and the names of the places where



they halted. It contains also lofty laws and maxims which dazzle the mind and which man's intellectual capacity and power are unable to compass. But what the Qur'an says of the historical events *is as reminder of the favours of God, as edification, warning and admonition.*" The Gospel, while containing good maxims of morality and excellent parables, is deficient in laws, prescriptions and history. The book of Psalms contains historical events, praises and hymns of great beauty but is also deficient in laws. *There has been no book like the Qur'an since man began to write on parchment.*

"Muhammad's triumph is also a sign of his prophetic mission. *His victory is from God and not from the Devil. His companions were just and righteous men*".

The New Testament are the works of a number of learned scholars such as Matthew, Mark, Luke, John, Paul, Peter, *etc.* None of them claimed that God spoke to them face to face as God spoke to Moses and Muhammad, as one friend speaks to another. Hence their works are not the "Sayings of God". Nor are any of them from a brethren tribe to the Jews, *i.e.* a brethren to the children of Isaac. None of them were Ishmaelites!

## **G. Which Sacred Book of Religion is the Truth?**

This is the very question posed by the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society of Pennsylvania in their Research "*Things in which it is impossible for God to lie*" published in 1965. The contentions contained in pages 20-23 are as under:

Sacred books of great age lie at the bottom of the principal religions practised throughout the earth today. If you, our reader, are a Confucianist, you may have read the nine Chinese classical books, namely, the five king and the four shu, which set forth a system of morality. Or, if you have served as a saffron-robed Buddhist monk, you likely have read the Pali canon of Buddhism, with its three "pitakas" or "baskets," that is to say, the Sermon Basket, the Discipline Basket and the Doctrinal Basket.

You as a Hindu, have probably read Bhagavad Gita and the Vedas, the four Books of Knowledge, the Rig-Veda, the Yajur-Veda, the Sama-Veda and the Atharva-Veda, besides the Brahmanas and the Upanishads.

But if you are Japanese, you may have read the Kojiki ("Ancient Records"), containing the Shinto myths and legends as committed to writing in 712 C.E., or the Yengishiki ("Ceremonial Law"), as committed to writing in 927 C.E. If however, you are a Jew you may have studied the Hebrew Texts of the Old Testaments or as a true Christian you reverentially view The Holy Bible as the word of God.

Other sacred books of ancient times may come to the reader's mind. The users of the religious books named above consider them to be the truth and may even swear by them before giving testimony in court. How, though, can they all be the truth if they differ from one another, contradicting one another? Which one of them is the truth all the way through, without even an inside contradiction of itself? It does not do to take the position of some religionists who try to be very tolerant and who want to avoid religious discussion by saying to a person of a different religion, "Well, that is truth to you, and this is truth to me". A religious person certainly would not take that position when trading or doing business. He would insist that  $1 + 1 = 2$ , not 3, and that two and two make four, not five, and not let himself be cheated.

Truth does not contradict itself or deny the facts. It does not go contrary to reality, nor is it one thing to one person and another thing, even a contradictory thing to another person. It is not True for one period or civilisation but it should always be true for all times. The one truth which applies to all persons, whether they recognize it or not. It does not change because of location or of time. The truth is provable by actual fact. The truth endures, persists, because it is genuine, actually existing, in harmony with reality. All this we have to recognize about religion also. A seeker of pure truth, absolute truth, will not take offence at the question, he will not consider the following question to be narrow-minded or intolerant! Among all the ancient sacred books of religion, which one is the truth? Which one is true of itself, not self-contradictory, and true

by actual fact, right straight through?

In order for a religious book that is used in the worship of God to be the truth, it must be from a truthful source. It must have a truthful author, who is acquainted with fact, reality, truth, and who is unafraid to tell the truth for the benefit of the lovers and seekers of the truth. Really, it should spring forth from the “God of Truth” and should show God as He really is in His qualities, His position, His purposes and His works. When we examine the various basic books of religion, we find that, with the exception of the one sacred book of truth, they all have to do with demonism, encourage demonism, allow for it or lay the basis for it.

Which is that one book of truth, which is not only free from any and all forms of demonism but also has stood the test of 1,400 years of continuous efforts of attempts to destroy it and/or insert forgeries into it without any success and yet has maintained itself in its original form and further proved its wondrous universality for all people and all times.

If one turns back to Chapter 12, he will realise that even the Holy Bible is full of forgeries, copied from Nimrodism or demonism. One will further notice in Chapter 12: K-1 that cardinal John Henry Newman has also confirmed this fact!

If the Holy Bible is not the one book of truth, which must be free from all demonism, then which is that Book?

On page 55 of “*Islam*” by Alfred Guillaume; second edition reprinted 1966 in Great Britain for Penguin Books Ltd, under the heading of “*Qur’an*” one reads:

“We are all familiar with the term ‘word of God’ as the name for the Bible. In the past it was and in some circles today it is believed, that God directly inspired every word therein. But textual criticism and modern study have made it impossible for modern scholars to hold that belief.

“In Islam the doctrine of (Qur’an as) the infallible word of God is an article of faith”.

Pickthall has recorded on page XXIII of his introduction to “*The Meaning of the Glorious Koran*” as follows:

“The arrangement (of the Qur’an) is not easy to understand. Revelations of various dates and on different subjects are to be found together in one surah; verses of Madinah revelation are found in Meccan surahs; some of the Madinah surahs, though of late revelations are placed first and the very early Meccan surahs at the end. But the arrangement is not haphazard, as some have hastily supposed. Closer study will reveal a sequence and significance—as, for instance, with regard to the placing of the very early Meccan surahs at the end. The inspiration of the Prophet progressed from inmost things to outward things, whereas most people find their way through outward things to things within”.

Devenport has pointed out on pages 64-65 of “*Mohammed and the Koran*”:

“In a literary point of view, the Qur’an is the most poetical work of the East. The greater portion of it is in a rhymed prose, conformably to the taste which has, from the remotest times, prevailed in the above portion of the globe. It is universally allowed to be written with the utmost purity and elegance of language in the dialect of the tribe of the Quresh, although very rarely, of other dialects. It is confessedly, the standard of the Arabian language, and abounds with splendid imagery and the boldest metaphors; is generally vigorous and sublime, so as to justify the observation of the celebrated Goethe, that the Qur’an is a work with whose dullness the reader is at first disgusted, afterwards attracted by its charms, and finally, irresistibly ravished by its many beauties”.

The Sacred Books of the past are all, without exception the works of men save and except the Qur’an—the Words of Allah. The same minute and searching investigation, which displays the defects and imperfections of all the religious books on the face of the earth, brings out also the beauties of the Qur’an. If the most finely polished needle on which the art of man has been expended be subjected to a microscope, many inequalities, much roughness and clumsiness, will

be seen. But if the microscope be brought to bear on the flowers of the field, no such result appears. Instead of their beauty diminishing new beauties and still more delicate, that have escaped the naked eye, are forthwith discovered; beauties that make us appreciate, in a way which otherwise we could have had little conception of, the full force of the saying of Jesus:-

“Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin;

“And yet I say unto you, That even Solomon, in all his glory, was not arrayed like one of these” (St. Matt. 6: 28-29).

The same law when applied to all religious books save and except the “Qur’an” has brought out the forgeries therein and shows that the most finished productions of men are simply nothing in comparison with the “Words of Allah”—the Qur’an, which has now remained unequalled for 1,400 years!

There are spots and blemishes in the most admired productions of human genius. But the more the passages of the Qur’an are searched, the more minutely they are studied, the more their perfection appears; new beauties are brought to light every day; and the discoveries of science, the researches of the learned, and the labours of those who refuse to surrender to the Will of Allah in Al-Islam, all alike conspire to illustrate the Wonderful harmony and Divine beauties that clothe the whole of the “Qur’an”. This is even pointed out by *those European scholars who are not Muslims as already read earlier!*

#### **H. The object of the Qur’an—according to Europeans is to correct the Corrupted Scriptures of the Old & New Testaments and guide the Jews & Christians to the Original Religion of Abraham**

The studies of Devenport on pages 72-74 of “*Mohammed and the Koran*” show:

“The first and principal article of the Qur’an is, as we have said the

UNITY OF GOD, and the certainty of the mission of Muhammad, who gives himself the title of the prophet and messenger of God, as understood by Muhammad, as the chief, or rather the only cause of his prophetic mission. 'The Christians,' said he 'having fallen into error, corrupted this dogma by introducing the doctrine of the Trinity'; and God, Who would not leave the essential truths without testimony, sent His prophet to re-establish them. This is the reason why, in the Qur'an, the Muhammadans give themselves the designation of 'UNITARIANS' in opposition to the so-called 'Orthodox Christians' who are denominated 'ASSOCIANTS,' because, according to Muhammad, they associate with God other objects of adoration and religious worship. Thus Muhammad says, 'O people of the Book,'—that is to say, 'O Jews and Christians, let not your worship transgress just bounds; say naught what is contrary to truth, when you speak of God; Jesus, the Messiah, the son of Mary, is nothing more than a prophet of God. Believe then in God and His prophet, and make no mention of the Trinity. Set just bounds to your discourses. *God is Only One God*; all praise be unto Him! God nath no son'."

"Another great object of the Qur'an was to unite the professors of the three different religions then followed in the knowledge and worship of one God; under the sanction of certain laws and ceremonies partly of ancient and partly of novel institutions enforced by the consideration of rewards and punishments both temporal, and eternal and to bring them all to the obedience of Muhammad as the prophet and ambassador of God, who, after repeated admonitions, promises and threats of former ages, was sent at last to establish and propagate God's religion upon earth, and to be acknowledged as Chief Pontiff in spiritual matters, as well as supreme prince in temporal ones. The great doctrine, then, of the Qur'an is the 'UNITY' of God, to restore which, Muhammad asserted, was the chief end of his mission, it being laid down by him that there never was nor ever can be more than one true, orthodox religion, that although the particular laws or ceremonies are only temporary and subject to alteration, according to the divine direction, yet the substance of it being eternal truth is not liable to change, but continues immutably the same, and that whenever this

religion became neglected or corrupted in essentials, God vouchsafed to re-inform and readmonish mankind thereof by several prophets of whom Moses and Jesus were the most distinguished, till the appearance of Muhammad.

“Muhammad never gave himself out as the founder of a new religion, but, on the contrary, he maintains his religion to be that of Abraham, which was revealed to him (Muhammad) by the Angel Gabriel. The sole object of the Qur’an is that of correcting the Scriptures, which he accused the Jews and Christians of having falsified, especially in what concerned his mission”.

Thus it will be clear to all Europeans that every Muslim is ipso facto not only a believer in Moses and all the Jewish Prophets and the Divine Laws given in the Torah, but he is also a believer in Jesus and the Hebrew Evangel, which was burnt and destroyed in 325 A.D.

The Qur’an as a divine revelation became a necessity only when the earlier revelations of the Torah, the Psalms and the Evangel were corrupted and/or destroyed as already proved repeatedly before especially in Chapter 7: G. 1-8; 13: B to K; 16: E and 17: C-6. Hence the truth was no longer with the Jews or with the Christians.

*Therefore it is clear that Islam is the Original religion from the time of Adam. It is also the religion of Abraham. This Islam was also the religion which was followed by all the subsequent prophets, including Moses and Jesus. It was incomplete till the time of Jesus, and was to be completed by Muhammad the “Rahmat-ul-Aalameen” or the Comforter. This is corroborated by Jesus in the Holy Bible as follows:*

“I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.

“Howbeit when he, the SPIRIT OF TRUTH (i.e. Nur-e-Muhammadi—The Logos or the Promised Prophet), is come he (Muhammad) will guide you unto all truth: for he (Muhammad) shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear (from Allah in a state of trance), that shall he speak (i.e. “sayings of Allah” or Al-Qur’an will be recited by Muhammad in a state of trance): and he

(Muhammad ) will show you things to come” (St. John 16: 12-13). This promise is now completed in the “Qur’an” for the “Words of Allah” were recited by a man, who did not know how to read or write even a single letter and all such revelations which form the Qur’an were made by Muhammad in a state of trance!

Hence it is clear from these studies that the teachings of the Original Torah, Psalms and the Evangel are included in the principles revealed in the Qur’an, and that the Qur’an is the only book which gives true and correct guidance not only to the Muslims but also to the Jews and Christians, provided they claim to be the followers of the earlier prophets including Abraham, Moses, David and Jesus. Thus the Qur’an is today the only Divine **Book of truth in the whole World** which is free from demonism, forgeries, interpolations and a living Miracle for the past 1,400 years even according to those who are non-Muslims i.e. the European Researchers!

## I. The basic teachings of the Qur’an according to Europeans

Devenport in “*Mohammed and the Koran*” has recorded: page 68:

“The Qur’an repeatedly enjoins belief in *One God, Resignation to his will, and perfect obedience to his commands*, charity, mildness, abstinence from spirituous liquors, and toleration, ascribing particular merit to dying in the cause of religion; while, as to practical duties, besides the obligation to propagate Islam, the first which are inculcated in the Qur’an, are prayers directed towards the temple of Mecca, at five appointed hours of the day; fasting during the month of Ramadan and alms, to which the one-fortieth part of a person’s property must be appropriated and bestowed even upon foes! Of these three chief duties Muhammad considered prayer so indispensable and necessary that he used to call it the pillar of religion and the key to Paradise; declaring also that there could be no good in any religion wherein there was no prayer”.

Pages 69-70:

“But the injunctions of the Qur’an were not confined to religious



and moral duties. "From the Atlantic to the Ganges," says Gibbon, "the Qur'an is acknowledged as the fundamental code, not only of theology, but of civil and criminal jurisprudence, and the laws which regulate the actions and the property of mankind are governed by the immutable sanctions of the Will of God". Or in other words, the Qur'an is the general code of the Muhammadans; a religious, social, civil, commercial, military, judicial, criminal, penal code; it regulates everything from the ceremonies of religion to those of daily life; from the salvation of the soul to the health of the body; from the rights of all to those of each individual; from the interests of man to those of society; from morality to crime; from punishment here to that in the life to come.

"The Qur'an, consequently, differs materially from the Bible, which, according to Combe, 'contains no system of theology, but is composed chiefly of narratives, descriptions, sublime effusions of devotional emotions, and much sound morality, bound together by no striking logical connexion'. Nor is it, like the Gospels, to be considered merely as the standard by which the religious opinions, the worship, and the practice of its followers are regulated, but it is also a political system; for on this foundation the throne itself is erected; hence every law of the State is derived, and by this authority every question of life and property is finally decided".

Page 71:

"Muhammad's creed was likewise free from SUSPICION and AMBIGUITY, and the Qur'an is a GLORIOUS TESTIMONY TO THE UNITY OF GOD. Rejecting the worship of idols and men, of stars and planets, on the rational principle that whatever is born must die; that whatever rises must set; and that whatever is corruptible must perish and decay, Muhammad's rational enthusiasm confessed and adored an infinite and eternal Being without form or place, without issue or similitude, present to our most secret thoughts, existing by the necessity of His own nature, and deriving from Himself all intellectual perfection. These subjects thus announced, in the language of the Prophet are firmly held and revered by his disciples, and defined with mathematical precision

by the interpreters and expounders of the Qur'an. A philosophical theist might subscribe the popular creed of the Muhammadans".

Foot Note to Page 71:

"The Muhammadans never say that God created man after his own image, holding it the highest impiety and presumption for anyone to attempt to give any description of God's form".

## **J. How and when was the Qur'an recorded?**

Devenport has given his findings on page 65 of *ibid*:

"While Muhammad lived the Qur'an was kept in loose sheets only. His successor, Abu-Bakr, first collected them into a single volume, not only from the palm leaves, skins, and shoulder-bones of mutton whereon they had been written, but also from the mouths of those who had committed them to memory; and, when the transcript was completed, the keeping of it was entrusted to Haphsa, the daughter of Omar, one of the widows of Muhammad, in order for its being consulted as an original"

Pickthall has stated on page XXVIII of his introduction to "*The Meaning of The Glorious Koran*" as follows:

"All the surahs of the Qur'an had been recorded in writing before the Prophet's death, and many Muslims had committed the whole Qur'an to memory. But the written surahs were dispersed among the people: and when, in a battle which took place during the Caliphate of Abu Bakr—that is to say, within two years of the Prophet's death—a large number of those who knew the whole Qur'an by heart were killed, a collection of the whole Qur'an was made and put in writing. In the Caliphate of Osman, all existing copies of surahs were called in, and an authoritative version, based on Abu Bakr's collection and the testimony of those who had the whole Qur'an by heart, was compiled exactly in the present form and order, which is regarded as traditional and as the arrangement of the Prophet himself, the Caliph Osman and his helpers being Comrades of the Prophet and the most devout students of the revelation. The Qur'an has thus been very carefully preserved".

## K. A few comments on the Qur'an

Dr. Maurice, a French scholar has said:

“The Qur'an may be regarded as an academy of science for the scientists, a grammar book for the grammarians, a book of prosody for the poets and an encyclopaedia of laws and legislations. Indeed, no other book anterior to the Qur'an could be held equal to a single chapter thereof”.

The Rev. Bosworth Smith admits in these words:

“The Qur'an is a book which is a poem, code of laws, a book of common prayers, all in one and is revered by a large section of the human race as a miracle of purity and style, of wisdom and of truth”.

Edward Gibbons his given has findings as:

“From the Atlantic to the Ganges, the Qur'an is acknowledged as the fundamental code not only of theology but of civil and criminal jurisprudence, and also the laws, which regulate the actions and property of mankind, and all these are governed by the immutable sanctions of the Will of God”.

Edmund Burke has disclosed:

*“The Muhammadan (Qur'anic) Law is binding upon all from the crowned head to the meanest subject: it is a law interwoven with a system of the wisest, the most learned and the most enlightened jurisprudence that ever existed in the world”.*

Guru Nanak the founder-leader of the Sikhs has confirmed in “*Janam sakhi Kalan*” the oldest of the “*Janam sakhis*” as follows:

“Taurat, Zabour, Engil, taraey padho sun daekhaey Ved

“Rahaey Qur'an kitab kul yag main parwar”.

Translation:-

“The Torah, the Psalms, the Evangel and such like religious books (including) the Veda have I read, heard about (*i.e.* discussed and

researched upon) and seen (*i.e.* studied)

“I find that there remains the Qur’an—the only book in the whole universe—which is suitable for the guidance of (entire), mankind”.



## Chapter 19

# The Divine Laws and their application



The Divine Laws given in the Qur'an are called Shariat. Let us study them from the eyes of a modern Educated European, who is not a Muslim, so that we may get a non-biased point of view and can better appreciate the same.

### A. Shariat according to European scholars

The Research of Professor H.A.R. Gibbs is quoted hereunder from pages 99-100 of *"Mohammedanism—An Historical Survey"*:

"The conception of law in Islam is thus authoritarian to the last degree. 'The Law, which is the constitution of the Community, cannot be other than the Will of God, revealed through the Prophet.' This is a Semitic form of the Principle that 'the will of the sovereign is law', since God is the sole Head of the Community and therefore sole Legislator. Consequently, to violate the law, or even to neglect the law, is not simply to infringe a rule of social order—it is an act of religious disobedience, a sin, and involves a religious penalty.

"We can now examine briefly the content and character of this divine legislation. Muslim jurists lay it down that 'the fundamental rule of law is liberty'. But since human nature is weak, easily led astray, ungrateful, and covetous, it is necessary both in the interests of the individual and in those of the social organism to set certain limits to human freedom of action. These limits constitute the law:

and hence Muslim jurists use the term 'hadd' *i.e.* 'limit', in the sense of 'legal ordinance'.

"These limits, ordained by the Wisdom and loving kindness of God, are of two kinds corresponding to the dual nature of man as soul and body. As soul and body complement one another in the human organism, so do the two aspects of law complement one another in the social organism. The limits ordained for the soul of man define his relations to God, *i.e.* prescribe the principle of religious belief and in particular the acts whereby these are given outward expression, namely, the five 'Pillars of the Faith'. Similarly, the limits set to the bodily activities of man define his relations to his fellow-men. These form the subject matter of law in the narrow sense, *i.e.* questions of Personal status, family organization (including marriage and divorce), holding and disposal of property, commercial activities, and penal law, although the Western distinctions between civil; penal, private, and other kinds of law are not recognized in the Muslim law-books.

"The consequence of this was that law was never quite separate in conception from Duty, and never became fully self-conscious. As the standard definition put it: 'The science of law is the knowledge of the rights and duties whereby man may fitly conduct his life in this world and prepare himself for the future life'. The Shariat was thus never erected into a formal code, but remained, as it has been well said, 'a discussion on the duties of Muslims'. This characteristic determines the nature of the judgment passed upon the various activities of which it takes cognizance, a judgment which goes back to the basic conception of a divine legislation mediating absolute standards of Good and Evil. The majority of actions do not come within the scope of law at all, since the initial principle of liberty assumes that in the absence of revealed information about an action it is morally (and therefore legally) indifferent. Such actions are therefore technically called 'permitted'. The remainder are either good or bad in themselves, but in both cases the law recognizes two categories, an absolute and a permissive. Thus the full scheme comprises five grades or classes:

1. Actions obligatory on Believers.

2. Desirable or recommended (but not obligatory) actions.
3. Indifferent actions.
4. Objectionable, but not forbidden, actions.
5. Prohibited actions”.

## **B. No Priesthood in Islam**

Devenport on pages 70-71 of “*Mohammed and the Koran*” has recorded:

“Muhammad was so alive to the danger attending priesthoods in political States, and of their tendency to corrupt all Governments, that he disapproved of the allowance of any such institution, and desired that every Mussulman should possess a copy of the Qur’an, and *BE HIS OWN PRIEST*, a wise wish in which the Prophet did but imitate the divinely inspired Jesus; for the only religion founded by the latter was pure worship, a religion without priests and external observances, resting solely on the feelings of the heart, on the imitation of God. ‘Never’, says M. Renan, ‘was there a man less a priest than Jesus; never was there a greater enemy than he to those forms which stifle religion under the pretext of protecting it’. They were to call each other ‘brother,’ but Jesus absolutely proscribed titles of superiority, such as ‘Rabbi,’ ‘master,’ ‘father’ ...

“Islam, therefore, *IS WITHOUT A PRIESTHOOD*. The doctors of the law are the doctors of divinity, because the law is the Qur’an: but they are not supported by tithes; their functions are not sacerdotal, but judicial. Their wealth is derived neither from Church property, nor from tithes, nor from State pensions. They are supported by judicial fees in litigated cases amounting to 2½ per cent, and by the revenues of lands appropriated to the mosques. The doctors of the law, indeed, form a corporation no less authoritative than the Church in England, with this difference, *that there is no dissent*”.

### C. How is Shariat to be applied to daily life?

From these researches it becomes clear to mankind that in Islam:

1. Every Muslim has to possess some elementary knowledge of the teachings of the Qur'an. To achieve the same he must have his copy and read it daily.
2. Since there is no *Priesthood* in Islam, the devotee *has to be his own priest!* He may ask for advice from a learned man *i.e.* a Maulvi—a teacher, on points on which he is in doubt, and respect him as his personal guide and benefactor.
3. Thus he is forced to use his own logic and enquire into everything in the light of his personal knowledge, taking into due consideration his environment, culture and civilisation.
4. He has to look at everything in the light of the five general principles laid down by Islam:
  - i. Actions obligatory
  - ii. Desirable or recommended but not obligatory
  - iii. Indifferent actions
  - iv. Objectionable, but not forbidden
  - v. Prohibited actions.
5. Islam encourages its followers to enquire into each and everything and to accept them only when fully satisfied! There is no compulsion anywhere in Islam, save that Allah is one and Alone, and Muhammad is His final messenger.
6. Thus Islam is a religion suitable to fit into every environment at any stage of human civilization with full freedom to its followers. It can be adopted logically to one's daily living conditions under certain broad guidelines.
7. In view of this it is wrong to suggest that any re-interpretation



of Islam is necessary at any stage or at all. It is always compelling its followers to interpret logically according to environmental influences of the individual. That *is the interpretation of the particular time and civilization. Thus it is always up-to-date to the last minute.* There is no such coherent systematic and free religion on the face of this earth except, “Al Islam”.

All the present day disasters through which the Muslims are passing are because of their own follies of not keeping themselves abreast of the current world situations for which the orthodox and the theologians are entirely to blame as they are clinging to what was good for the Muslims a thousand years back, which had made them the enlightened teachers of the Europeans, then in the grip of their Dark Ages.

Wrong education based upon what was in the past instead of what it is today is the root cause of the downfall and calamities that the Muslims are facing everywhere around the world. The answer therefore lies in the encouragement of modern education in science engineering, literature, arts, crafts, medicine, agriculture, chemistry and all other pursuits beneficial to mankind and their application to our daily lives in the light of the five broad guidelines quoted herebefore. This was what they had done under the encouragement of the Holy Prophet, when every mosque was turned into an university, teaching not only the Qur'an and the Hadith (advices of the Holy Prophet) but also all worldly education as mentioned earlier. The world simply has no time to waste if the “Universal Brotherhood” of mankind is to be established. Islam especially must wake up from its deep dream of what the Muslims were 1,000 years back. They have a very important part to play in today's world and not dream of what was once the golden age of Islam.

They have to start living again but this time in the environment of the world of today and not of the long past. If a Muslim is living amongst Europeans, then he must conduct himself intelligently. He

must see what is good in their education, sciences and researches. If in the East or in Africa then to take advantage of what is the best available anywhere and try to raise the standard of living through education and industries. Continuous research into improvements should be the keynote of our activities based upon the fundamental teachings of Islam.

It hardly matters what type of dress one wears whether Arabic or Oriental or African or European. So long as the minimum requirements are fulfilled it is good enough. The same would apply to each and every thing we do! There should be no restrictions whatsoever to do the right thing in a modern way. There is no reason to criticise anybody doing anything from any modern angle, so long as it is not against any of the fundamental rules and is not forbidden directly by the laws of Shariat.

Thus Islam gives unlimited scope for the world's development into one universal brotherhood which is the crying requirement if the people of the earth are to save themselves from the disasters of the Third World War—the Nuclear Holocaust!

Edmund Burke in his *“Impeachment of Warren Hastings”* (Marquis of Hastings was the British Governor General of India 1814 to 1823) has recorded:

The Muhammadan law which is binding on all, from the crowned head to the meanest subject, is a law interwoven with a system of the wisest, the most learned and most enlightened jurisprudence that ever existed in the world”.

#### **D. Index to Legislation**

After having dealt generally with the principles of Shariat, it becomes necessary to point out that the Qur'an has laid down rules for the successful conduct of one's daily life.

These laws cover numerous subjects some of which are mentioned hereunder from which it will be realised that they form a complete code

as to how a man should behave towards fellow human beings. No previous divine laws were so complete. They include amongst others the following subjects:

- |   |                     |                               |
|---|---------------------|-------------------------------|
| 1. Ablution                               | 2. Adultery         | 3. Aggression                 |
| 4. Almsgiving                             | 5. Arbitration      | 6. Avarice and<br>Hoarding    |
| a) Zakat—Annual<br>Charity                |                     |                               |
| b) Zakat—Poor dues                        |                     |                               |
| 7. Backbiting                             | 8. Bequests         | 9. Blood-money                |
| 10. Booty—spoils of<br>War                | 11. Bribery         | 12. Charity                   |
| 13. Children                              | 14. Cleanliness     | 15. Conspiracy                |
| a) Adoption of                            |                     |                               |
| b) Burying of                             |                     |                               |
| c) Nursing of                             |                     |                               |
| d) Prohibition of killing<br>of daughters |                     |                               |
| 16. Contracts                             | 17. Covetousness    | 18. Debts                     |
| 19. Deposits                              | 20. Disobedience    | 21. Divorce                   |
| 22. Dowries                               | 23. Drinks (strong) | 24. Enemies                   |
| 25. Envy                                  | 26. Fasting         | 27. Feeble-mindedness         |
| 28. Fighting                              | 29. Food            | 30. Forgiving                 |
| 31. Fraternity                            | 32. Games of chance | 33. General conduct           |
| 34. Guardians                             | 35. Honest-dealings | 36. Idolatry                  |
| 37. Justice                               | 38. Kindness        | 39. Knowledge                 |
| 40. Marriage                              | 41. Migration       | 42. Modesty                   |
| 43. Months (the Sacred)                   | 44. Murder          | 45. Nick-names<br>(forbidden) |

- |                                      |                  |                               |
|--------------------------------------|------------------|-------------------------------|
| 46. Oaths                            | 47. Obedience    | 48. Orphans                   |
| a) Expiation of                      |                  |                               |
| b) Forbidden                         |                  |                               |
| 49. Parents                          | 50. Persecution  | 51. Pilgrimage (the)          |
|                                      |                  | a) Killing of games forbidden |
|                                      |                  | b) Fishing allowed            |
| 52. Prayer                           | 53. Purification | 54. Qur'an (the)              |
| 55. Ramadan (Fasting)                | 56. Repentance   | 57. Retaliation               |
| 58. Sanctuary (the)                  | 59. Slander      | 60. Slaves                    |
| a) Jerusalem                         |                  | a) Equality of                |
| b) Kaabah                            |                  | b) Freedom of                 |
| c) Turning towards Qiblah in prayers |                  | c) Marriage of                |
|                                      |                  | d) Treatment of               |
|                                      |                  | e) Rights of                  |
| 61. Spending                         | 62. Spying       | 63. Stealing                  |
| a) Squandering                       |                  |                               |
| 64. Superstitions                    | 65. Suspicion    | 66. Trading                   |
| 67. Treaties                         | 68. Usury        | 69. Widows                    |
| 70. Wills                            | 71. Wives        | 72. Women                     |
| a) Wives' property                   |                  |                               |
| b) Witnesses                         |                  |                               |
| 73. Worship                          |                  |                               |

It is not possible to cover so many subjects in detail. But for the purpose of the readers it will be quite sufficient if they get an example to guide them how these rules are to be collected from in the whole of the Qur'an and then interpreted. As marriage and divorce affect all of us in our daily lives, let us see what Islam has to offer to the world in

this context.

## **E. Marriage**

The institution in Islam which is most criticized by Europeans is marriage. Therefore let us analyse this subject.

### **1. The Jewish marriage Laws**

Abraham had three wives of which two *i.e.* Sarah and Hagar were together.

Jacob had two wives and his two concubines thus making a total of four living wives at a time.

Moses had two wives together. David had even more. Whilst Solomon had the largest number of wives all at a time.

Under Mosaic laws which also governed Jesus and his followers there are no restrictions whatsoever to the number of wives a man may have. Mormons, a religious sect known as the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints, used to have 20 or even more wives at a time because polygamy was permitted under the Holy Bible. The system of one wife per man is therefore not from a Biblical source. Then from where is it?

### **2. The Universal Pagan marriage System**

The pagans freely practised polygamy without any restrictions on the number of wives.

Therefore it is evident that before the advent of Islam there were no restrictions whatsoever anywhere in the world on the number of wives a man may have, save and except in Nimrodism (Chapter 5: H), where the restriction was *one man, one wife, with no latitude for divorce.*

### **3. Islam—Monogamy or Polygamy—which?**

The fact that the Holy Prophet had only one wife (*i.e.* Khadija) till the

age of 52 years and that also a widow 15 years his senior as pointed out by John Devenport on pages 25 and 26 of his research "*Mohammed and the Koran*" (Chapter 17: E-29) in spite of polygamy being the usual practice clearly shows that even according to European and Non-Muslim scholars, Muhammad was a monogamist.

Several months after Khadija's death he married a helpless destitute widow named Sauda. This marriage took place one year before Hijrah. Sauda had been the wife of Sakran who had been forced to emigrate to Abyssinia to escape the persecution at Mecca. Sakran had died in exile thus giving his life in the cause of Islam. Hence his wife became a destitute widow without any means in a foreign country for the cause of Islam. Every principle of generosity and humanity would impel Muhammad to come to the rescue of this widow, who returned to Mecca in a state of absolute distress. *According to the custom of the Arabs, marriage was the only means by which he could help the widow of his faithful disciple.* So naturally Muhammad offered to marry her.

Sauda was over fifty years old when she married the Prophet. Her mensuration had already stopped and as such she had passed the capacity of bearing children. Upon marriage it became apparent that Sauda, from before her re-marriage, had become unable to produce any children, hence she was totally unfit for marriage. If a woman is not qualified or suitable for marriage *i.e.* to produce children, then to look after them and rear them up with love in a happy home and family life then she cannot be married at all! Hence her marriage to Muhammad was "*ab initio*" null and void! When this defect in Sauda became disclosed, she petitioned Muhammad not to formally divorce her but to retain her as an elderly woman just like a sister to the Prophet to attend to the personal problems of Muslim ladies, who would be coming for the advice and guidance of the Prophet about which they would be able to speak freely to a woman but would be embarrassed to disclose such personal details to a man and she, Sauda, could act as the go-between and further she gave up her rights to wifely treatment in favour of Ayesha, the virgin daughter of Abu Bakr, who was very

anxious to get his daughter married to Muhammad, which she arranged so that the Prophet may have some male issues thereby, which she (Sauda) was unable to provide. All this happened about one year before Hijrah. Sauda was accordingly relieved from the obligation of leading a married life with the Prophet, but was retained without being divorced as the senior lady of the Prophet's household (as the system of "Sisterhood" did not exist in Arabia), to look after the problems of Muslim women (pages 164-165, *Rahmat Ul Lil Aaalam* and page 348, Vol. II, *Tarihul Askia fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Accordingly Muhammad was re-married to Ayesha one year before Hijrah. She was the only virgin whom Muhammad married in his life. But as Ayesha was a minor, she was not sent over to live with the Prophet. Her mensuration started in the second year from Hijrah when she was 9 years old. Hence she was considered to have come of age to lead a married life according to the prevailing Arab customs. So she went over to live as the wife of the Prophet at the beginning of the second year from Hijrah. This means that Muhammad led the life of a widower for almost three years. During this period from the age of about 52 when Khadija died till 55 years when Ayesha came to him to live as his wife, he did not have any woman living with him as a wife. Yet he did not marry anybody else in this period of about three years! All this conclusively proves that Muhammad was not a man, who was running after women, nor was he interested in having a wife all the time to satisfy his sexual desires—on the contrary, *he has set the most wonderful known example of monogamy in a place where polygamy was the prevalent custom!*

There were a total of about 1,000 male Muslim converts by the third year of Hijrah. The Qureysh came to Madinah with an army of 3,000 men to destroy Islam.

Abdullah ibn Ubeyy, the leader of "the Hypocrites" withdrew with 250 lukewarm Muslims. This left the Holy Prophet with about 750 faithful followers at Mt. Uhud. In this battle a large number of Muslims

were killed because of the disobedience by a band of fifty archers as described earlier in Chapter 17: E-19. Naturally there was confusion at Madinah as to what would be the fate of such a large number of helpless Muslim widows and their thousand or so orphaned children.

Muhammad wept and prayed to Allah for some solution to these chaotic conditions of distress of the widows and the orphans, who came crying to him complaining:

“You took our husbands and our fathers to the field of battle to defend Islam, so it is now upto Islam to look after us and give us protection and look after our welfare!”

It was in response to these prayers that the following Divine Orders were revealed:

“Give unto orphans their wealth. Exchange not the good for the bad (during your management thereof) nor absorb their wealth into your own wealth. Lo! that would indeed be a great sin.

“And if ye fear that ye will not be able to deal fairly by the orphans then marry of the (widowed) women (who are the mothers of these orphans) in your charge, who seem good to you, two or three or four; *but if ye fear that ye cannot do justice (between more than one wife) then you are ordered to marry only one wife* or (marry one of the captives or a slave girl) that your right hands possess. *(Therefore marriage to only one wife at a time is the recommended order under the Qur'an) because it is more likely that ye will not do injustice* (to helpless destitute widowed women, the mothers of helpless orphans or helpless slave-women in your charge).

“And give unto (these distressed widows and/or helpless destitute slave) women, (whom you marry) adequate gifts as their marriage portions (just as you would give if you married well-to-do women); but if they of their own accord remit unto you a part thereof, then you are welcome to absorb it (into your own wealth)” (Qur'an 4: 2-4).

Muhammad had remained a Monogamist till then *i.e.* the third year of Hijrah. He was already 57 years old. The heat of youth, lust and



desires, had already left this monogamist. His position was that of an individual in the beginning until he became a prophet at the age of 40 years and then as a prophet upto when he was 57 years old and a model of monogamy in a country which thrived upon polygamy. *But from this point of time his position, in his old age, changed to that of the Founder-head of the Islamic Republic.* Hence political and other considerations started having an influence upon his personal life from the age of 57 years till his departure from earthly life six years later. *Thus he had to sacrifice many conveniences and even his life as a monogamist for the sake and welfare of Islam in humble obedience to the above Divine orders of Allah and not for his personal satisfaction!*

Indeed how very ignorant are those controversial writers, who accuse Muhammad of polygamy and lust for women! One cannot get away from the fact that Muhammad had only one wife from the age of 25 years till he was 52. Thereafter he did not have any woman living as a wife for about three years until Ayesha came to live with him as wife when he was about 55 years of age. Another remarkable fact is that in the first 27 years of his married life he was contented with a widow 15 years his senior in age and *who had lost her beautiful looks as she grew old and yet he did not marry a second and younger wife in spite of polygamy being the recognised custom of the Arabs!*

The following is quoted from page 58 of “*The Hero as Prophet*” by Thomas Carlyle, published by Oxford University Press in 1909:

“Long afterwards, Ayesha his young favourite wife, a woman who indeed distinguished herself among Muslims, by all manner of qualities, through her whole long life; this young brilliant Ayesha was one day, questioning him: ‘Now am I not better than Khadija? She was a widow, old and had lost her looks! You love me better than you did her?’—‘No, by Allah!’ answered Muhammad: ‘No, by Allah! She believed in me when none else would believe’...” this remark glowingly brings out the true love that Muhammad had for Khadija even long after her death! Is not this an absolute proof that Muhammad was a *monogamist* at heart? His love for Khadija, his

first wife, being with him throughout his whole life and had she lived longer, he would surely never have married another wife—however beautiful or attractive or young she may be!

Then there was that period of about three years during which no one lived with him as a wife! Thereafter Ayesha was his only wife till he crossed 57 years of age! Is this sensuality? Here is a quotation from an English scholar about Muhammad's life before plural marriages were forced upon him:-

“All his ‘*ambition*’, seemingly, had been, hitherto, to live an honest life, his ‘*fame*’, the mere good opinion of neighbours that knew him, had been sufficient hitherto. Not till he was already getting old, the prurient heat of his life all burnt out, and peace growing to be the chief thing this world could give him, did he start on the ‘career of ambition,’ and, belying all his past character and existence, set-up as a wretched empty charlatan to *acquire what he could now no longer enjoy*! For my share, I have no faith whatever in that.

“Ah no! *this deep-hearted Son of the wilderness, with his beaming black eyes and open social deep soul, had other thoughts in him than ambition. A silent great soul; he was one of those who cannot but be in earnest; whom Nature herself has appointed to be sincere.* While others walk in formulas and hearsays, contented enough to dwell there, this man could not screen himself in formulas; he was alone with his own soul and the reality of things. The great Mystery of Existence, as I said, glared-in-upon him, with its terrors, with its splendours; no hearsays could hide that unspeakable fact, ‘*Here am I!*’ *Such sincerity, as we named it, has in very truth something of divine. The word of such a man is a voice direct from Nature’s own Heart. Men do and must listen to that as to nothing else;—all else is wind in comparison.* From of old, a thousand thoughts, in his pilgrimings and wanderings, had been in this man; What am I? What is this unfathomable Thing I live in, which men name Universe? What is life? What is Death? *What am I to believe? What am I to do?* The grim rocks of Mount Hira of Mount Sinai, the stern sandy solitudes, answered not. The great Heaven rolling silent overhead, with its blue-glancing stars, answered not. There was no

answer. *The man's own soul, and what of God's inspiration dwelt there, had to answer!*" (Pages 54-55 of *ibid*).

The social problems before him during the last six years of his life in connection with the rights of women were as follows:

- a. Did the widows and orphans of those heroes, who had sacrificed their lives for the cause of Islam, have a right to be rehabilitated so that they may be saved from starvation and disaster? Or were they to be looked down upon, according to the prevailing Arab custom—Oh! These are widows and orphans and as such have no rights upon society!
- b. Did helpless destitute women, under the Islamic socialistic pattern of society which he was setting up, have a right upon the well-to-do Muslims to give them protection or according to the prevailing Arab custom were they to be forced, due to economic necessities, into prostitution?
- c. Were the divorcees to be condemned and shunned as was the prevailing custom or were they entitled as of right to another chance to show that they were capable of living in love and harmony in married life with their husbands?
- d. According to Arab custom marriage was the only means by which the rich men could come to the assistance of the destitute and helpless womanhood! So should he stick to his cherished principle of monogamy or sacrifice it to save the weaker sex from being downtrodden?—Which?—As matter of fact what does your conscience say?

The Holy Prophet saw in the above quoted divine revelations the only solution for the protection of the rights of distressed widows and destitute womanhood. *Thus Islam lays down for the first time in the history of man's creation on earth, the fundamental rights of woman to such an extent that even destitute widows must be looked after by Muslims in general and to go to their rescue whenever called upon by,*

such exceptional circumstances, as war or calamities' or death of near relatives—*A right still denied to them in many parts of the so called modern socialistic world looking after the welfare of the downtrodden humanity!*

*Muhammad, the monogamist, had no option left under the above quoted Divine Orders but to set the most wonderful example which he did—he rose to that historic occasion by breaking his monogamistic life at the ripe old age of 57 years when the heat of his desires had already left him. He threw open his arms to the crying distressed widows, condemned divorcees and helpless women-slaves by marrying them. Thus he gave them not only protection but also that domestic comfort for which every woman thirsts! In this way he upheld the rights of downtrodden women to domestic comfort and the welfare of their helpless orphaned children—indeed what a noble doctrine! The world has not yet been able to produce something so wonderful for the helpless in spite of all its boasts about socialism! These are also the findings of the research scholar Gertude H. Stern, B.A. (Columbia), Ph. D. (London) in her article “Marriage in Early Islam” (page 57, *Wisdom of Prophet Mohammad* compiled by Mohammad Amin, Bar-at-Law, printed by Lion Press, Lahore, 1945).*

By this practice in accordance with the above quoted Divine Orders, Muhammad encouraged his followers to provide domestic comforts for the destitute widows of the battle of Mt. Uhad as well as a father for their orphaned children! *A right which is still denied to widows in many parts of the world!* Therefore where there was gloom and chaos in the Islamic State of Madinah a few months earlier, there was now joy and radiance all around! Indeed what a wonderful example for the world to follow whenever they are faced with a similar situation as an aftermath of the devastations of a war or an epidemic or other calamities.

On page 71 of “*The Hero as Prophet*” by Thomas Carlyle gives the following information:

“Muhammad himself, after all that can be said about him, was not a sensual man. We shall err widely if we consider this man as a common voluptuary, intent mainly on base enjoyments—nay on enjoyments of any kind. His household was of the frugalest; his common diet barley bread and water: sometimes for months there was not a fire lighted on his hearth”.

From 5 A.H. the Muslims in general started growing powerful and wealthier. But Muhammad still continued the simplicity of his domestic life with its frugal existence as described above till his departure from earthly life in 10 A.H. even though he was the virtual Emperor of the whole of Arabia by that time! It is but most natural in these circumstances, that the wives of the Prophet should desire to be furnished with better amenities of life like their other sisters—the wives of the Muslim public were generally enjoying. If Muhammad was voluptuous or a man after lust or the comforts and pleasures of earthly life, he surely would not have lived in such trying conditions. Nor would he have offered divorce to each one of his wives who wanted worldly comforts if he was after sexual pleasures from their body! The Qur'an has confirmed glowingly these conditions:

“O Prophet! say to your wives: If you desire this world's life and its riches—comforts, then come I will give a provision (of sufficient wealth to enable you to pass the rest of your lives in great comfort) and allow you to depart (from the household of the Prophet with a divorce accompanied with) a goodly departing (full of gifts and money).

“But if you desire Allah and His Apostle and the latter abode (*i.e.* Heavenly bliss in the life hereafter), then surely Allah has prepared for the doers of good among you (*i.e.* social service for the upliftment of the Muslim women, their education, treatment of the sick, and to go to the field of battle at a risk to their own lives in order to be available to attend to those injured in war, were some of the chief duties which were being performed by the wives of the Prophet) a mighty reward” (Qur'an 33: 28-29).

Not one of the wives accepted the offer of divorce from

Muhammad for the comforts of earthly life as offered by Allah in the Qur'an! Clearly this incident refutes the false charge against Muhammad that he was after having many wives! Now let us have a look at the findings of some European Scholars as to why Muhammad married a number of wives especially between 5 A.H. and the end of 7 A.H. *i.e.* between ages of 58 and about 60 years:

“This Surah (*i.e.* Chapter 33 of the Qur'an) contains further references to the wives of the Prophet in connection with which it may be mentioned that from the age of twenty-five till the age of fifty two he had only one wife, Khadija, fifteen years his senior, to whom he was devotedly attached and whose memory he cherished till his dying day. With the exception of Ayesha, the daughter of his closest friend, Abu Bakr, whom he married at her father's request when she was still a child, all his latter marriages were with widows, whose state was pitiable for one reason or another. Some of them were widows of men killed in war. One was a captive, when he made the marriage, the excuse, for emancipating all the conquered tribes and restoring their property. Two were daughters of his enemies, and his alliance with them was a cause of peace. It is noteworthy that the period of these marriages was also the period of his greatest activity, when he had little rest (or time to enjoy his plural wives) from campaigning, and was always busy with the problems of a growing empire.

“The period of revelation is between the end of the fifth and the end of the seventh years of the Hijrah” (Notes on Surah No. 33 by Marmaduke Pickthall, pages 300-301 of *The Meaning of the Glorious Koran*” published by The New American Library of World Literature, Inc. New York, 1955 under its “Mentor Book” Series).

Now let us analyse these Qur'anic legislations on plural marriages. One cannot escape from the following findings:

- a. Islam recommends only one marriage as the ideal when it enjoins:

“... but if ye fear that ye cannot do justice (between more than one wife) then you are ordered to marry one wife...” (Qur'an 4: 3).

- b. Islam is till this day the one and only religion in the whole world that inhibits plural marriages by warning:

“... But if ye fear that ye cannot do justice (between more than one wife)...” (Qur’an 4: 3).

This provision enjoins “*EQUAL*” treatment by the husband to each of his wives, if he should have more than one. Therefore Islam recognises the rights of women and obliges the husbands to give fair, just and equal treatment to their wives. This is beautifully brought out in the following hadith:

“I (Mu’aviyah b. Haiduh) said, O Apostle of God! what is my duty to my wife? He said: “That you give to your wife to eat as you eat yourself and clothe her as you clothe yourself; and do not slap her in the face, nor abuse her, nor separate yourself from her in displeasure” (Hadith No. 414 page 115 of *The Sayings of Muhammad* by Allama Sir Abdullah Al-Mamun Al-Suhrawardy, published by John Murray, London 1954).

It will be appreciated by one and all that it is quite impossible for a man to give equal treatment to two of his own children, both of them being his flesh and blood. Then how is it possible to give equal love, respect, regard and treatment to more than one wife? Logically he cannot do it. If so then he is encroaching upon the rights of his wife. Under such circumstances he is inhibited from plural marriages under the laws of Islam, which protect the rights of a wife as against her husband *e.g.*:

“He is the most perfect Muslim, whose disposition is best; and the best of you are they, who behave best to their wives” (Hadith. No. 417, page 115 of *ibid*).

This is the finding recorded by Andre Servier under the title of “*Woman’s Debt to Prophet Mohammad*”:

“If we were to go by the commandments of the Qur’an and the sayings of the Prophet, the Muslim woman might be regarded as enjoying favourable treatment. The desire to raise woman’s status

shows itself in all sermons of Muhammad” (page 151, *Wisdom of Prophet Mohammad* compiled by Mohammed Amin, Lahore, 1945).

- c. Whenever there is a prohibition to do something there is a natural desire in mankind to break the relevant law. Let us take the example of those countries who by law enforce monogamy which is based upon Nimrodism (Chapter 5: H). What is the result of following the cursed doctrines of Nimrod? You find that in these countries prostitution is practised so freely that several of the monogamistic Governments have had to pass legislations legalising such moral degradation, by saying:

“So long as it is willingly done between any man and any woman whether married to each other or not, it is not a crime”.

The passing of such a law is a direct violation of the fundamental rights of women to marriage. Because, if a man can get away by enjoying any beautiful woman he likes, even every night a different beauty, upon the payment of a fee then why should he take upon himself to feed and clothe a wife for the rest of her life, giving her homely comforts and looking after the upbringing of her children and being true and faithful to her and her alone!

- d. Inhibition on the other hand requires you to comply with logical regulations. In this case under Islam it is so difficult to comply viz: “*To give EQUAL treatment to all wives*”, that one realises that this is not possible and consequently a Muslims willingly avoids plural marriages as impractical!

The number of plural marriages is less than even 1% amongst Muslims as will be shown later from the available statistics. Hence it can well be ignored. It is therefore a complete fallacy to call Islam a *Polygamistic Religion*!

The Rev. T.W. Rees, Calvinistic Methodist Missionary in *Sylhet* says:

“With regard to Muslims of Sylhet and Cachar all my experience



goes to show that it is an extremely rare thing to find a man with more than one wife. I am sure not even one per cent of the Muslims avail themselves of the practice. Probably something like one in a thousand would more adequately represent it. And even in these cases, where polygamy is practised among them, it is generally due to the absence of any issue by the first wife, and sometime by her inability, on account of physical disease or weakness to perform the house-hold duties" (page 34, "*Wisdom of Prophet Mohammad*" compiled by Mohammad Amin, Lahore, 1945).

- e. The above quoted Verses from the Qur'an are the only divine orders permitting plural marriages. Hence it will be clear that if anyone desires to take a second wife, when his first wife is alive; *he can only marry a helpless destitute widow and not a virgin!* Thus it brings to an end the prevalent evil practice found all over that an old man of 60 years having a wife and several grown up children is running after young girls in their teens in many cases not only smaller than his own children but even of the age of his grandchildren!

In this manner Islam even protects the rights of young virgins from the aged wealthy, who might be sunk in their lust to rape young girls.

- f. As a social religion looking after the welfare of the poor destitute widows and orphans it has preached an exception to the normal rule of one wife by encouraging the marriage of widows so that they may not be reduced to destitution and be forced into prostitution, because of economic necessities as is *already the case, in every country practicing Monogamy!* Further their orphaned children may also be well looked after and educated properly and their properties not squandered. In such an exceptional case only two or three or maximum of four wives may be permitted, but that also subject to the rule of equal treatment to all wives.
- g. Islam recognises the rights of property for woman. In case

some widow may have large properties or business which she cannot very well look after, then in such a case she may select a good worker not only as her manager but if he comes upto her expectations she may also marry him as was the case with Khadija when she proposed to and married her business manager, Muhammad.

Jewanlal Kapoor, Barrister-at-Law, has remarked:

“In England it was only in 1871 or thereabout that women were granted rights of property, whereas Islam gave them these rights thirteen centuries ago”.

Hence it will be clear that Islam is basically a monogamistic religion, which inhibits and discourages plural marriages and for the first time has restricted the polygamy of the Holy Bible and Paganism to the upper limit of four wives as a *social necessity for the protection of widows and as a safeguard for destitute women from being forced into prostitution due to their financial difficulties*.

Thus Islam has protected for the past fourteen centuries the rights of defenceless women and destitute widows in such a manner as is not known even to this day in any enlightened and educated country of the modern world by compelling the well-to-do to come to the rescue of distressed womanhood!

Everyone has to admit that not only the marriage rules of Islam but also the rights of women have been so framed as to be universal. It meets the social needs of the human race at all times. And their application can still bring about homely happiness and success all around. It can save the modern scientific world from their present moral and perverted degradation which has already assumed such large proportions as the one which brought about the destruction of the entire humanity by the Great Deluge in the days of Noah.

Exception always proves the rule! The exception for the protection of the rights of women thus proves that Islam is a religion which preaches *monogamy and not polygamy* as even the statistics given

hereafter show! And is far superior to any other system of marriage now being practised anywhere on the face of this earth.

We have read how the unity of mankind was broken by the curse of Allah *at the Tower of Babel* due to the blasphemous teachings of Nimrod (Chapter 5: G). To counteract this disunity and reunite mankind King Nimrod had promulgated *monogamy* (Chapter 5:H). The fact that the different groups of mankind have not re-united but on the contrary are today further apart with more fears of Nuclear wars of annihilation clearly shows that wherever Nimrod's doctrines have been adopted there is greater disunity, chaos and confusion.

Accordingly the adoption of the cursed teachings of Nimrod, the mighty hunter in rebellion against Allah, in enforcing the monogamy law is therefore solely responsible for:

- i. The passing of such laws, as legalise prostitution and homosexuality. This is the "*Causa Proxima*" of the destruction of the happy married lives of many families especially in America, the Scandinavian countries and war-torn Europe.
- ii. This is already paving the way for the destruction of marriage as an institution and reducing mankind to such moral depravity as *Exchange of Mates, Nudist cults etc.*, as was responsible for the *destruction of mankind* by the Great Deluge, as also Sodom, Gomorrah, Pompeii *etc.*—*But this is not all!*
- iii. Those families not already torn asunder by divorce or separation often find themselves confronting a "Cold War" in their homes, with the husband suspicious of his wife having an affair with every male neighbour or friend and vice versa the wife suspecting her husband. Hence "hot confrontation" seems to be the trend on the husband-wife front.

Whenever this happens the children get neglected. Their esteem of parents fall! Naturally children become aloof. So fathers and mothers seem unable to understand the increasing pressures on their teen-age

children, of miniskirts, the pill, growing apathy and contempt for marriage and the continuous bombardment from mass media of *sex, sex, and sex*.

Under such circumstances is it any wonder that increasing number of men, women and teenagers find themselves involved in growing sexual activities before and outside marriage—none of which helps maintain peace on the *home* front.

If you cannot have *peace* at home, can you have *peace* with your neighbours? Or *peace* with your society? Or *peace* inside your country? Or *peace* between nations? Or *World Peace*?

- iv. The natural consequence of granting of freedom of sex would result in illegitimate children, who if they are allowed to be born would not only cause a great shame for their mothers but they would be without their rights to a father's protection and upbringing and would also be looked down upon by society as *Bastards!* In many European countries the percentage of illegitimate children born is too high as will be seen later.
- v. To avoid such an unpleasant situation those Governments who are enforcing Nimrod's law of monogamy have had to legalise abortion *i.e. murder of infants thereby degrading mankind even to the very same stage in which the Pagan Arabs were in their days of illiteracy before the advent of Islam 1,400 years ago, when they used to bury alive their new-born girls!*

The Qur'an is very emphatic on these murders, which are legalised by the "*Modern Society*" of today:

"Slay not your children, fearing a fall of poverty, We (Allah) shall provide for them and for you. Lo! the slaying of them (defenceless, helpless, innocent children) is great sin.

"And come not near adultery. Lo! it is an abomination and an evil way.

"And slay not (any) life, which Allah hath forbidden..." (Qur'an 17: 31-33).

Does all this not shock the conscience of people of goodwill and make them exclaim in abject alarm:

Modern Educated Advanced World—Whither?

to

Destruction of Mankind due to freedom of Sex!

—The results of following the cursed Nimrod's law of monogamy?

If we want to achieve "*Peace, happiness and security*" in the home, without which peace is not possible in the society, or nationally or internationally, then we must first of all have "*Peace with our Creator—and on His terms, not ours*. Any other way will not and cannot work. Therefore without surrender to the "*Will of Allah*"—*Thy will be done on earth as it is Heaven*—and on His terms we cannot achieve any kind of peace. Allah is quite capable of altering and removing the causes which prevent peace and happiness. But the following of Nimrod's laws cannot remove the curse of God at the Tower of Babel which is solely responsible for mankind's disunity and disasters.

#### **4. When is a Muslim required to marry**

Marriage in Islam is a sacred contract which every Muslim must enter into, unless there are special reasons why he should not. The Qur'anic Laws are:

"And marry such of you as are single (single here means specifically (1) widowers who have become single by the death of their wives (2) widows who have become single because their husbands have died, (3) youths not married and (4) Virgins and pious, including (such of) your male slaves and female slaves (who are single and pious). If they be poor, Allah will enrich them out of His bounty. Allah is of ample means, the Knowing.

"And let those (who are pious) who cannot find a (suitable pious) match keep chaste until Allah makes them free from want (by bringing them into contact with a suitable pious match for them)

out of His grace ..." (Qur'an 24: 32-33).

In another verse the marriage-relationship is given as much importance as the blood-relationship:

"And He it is Who hath created man from water, and hath made for him kindred by blood and kindred by marriage; for thy Lord is ever Powerful" (Qur'an 25: 54).

### **5. Whom can a Muslim marry?**

A Muslim can marry another Muslim or one of the followers of the "Books" *i.e.* a Jew who follows the Torah of Moses or a Nazarene who follows the Evangel of Jesus.

A Muslim cannot under any circumstances marry a Pagan or an Idolater or an Adulterer however beautiful, attractive or rich he or she may be. A believing slave girl is to be preferred to a rich disbeliever (Qur'an 2: 221).

A slave when married becomes a legal wife with all the requisite rights and duties. A slave girl when treated like a wife becomes pregnant, automatically becomes a legal wife with all privileges and rights.

### **6. The status of a wife**

Shariat for the first time has raised the status of woman to equality with men in all matters (Qur'an 2: 228) save and except that the wife has to be obedient to her husband because the husband is earning and feeding the wife and looking after her children (Qur'an 4: 31).

### **7. The contract of marriage**

Under Shariat, marriage is considered as a binding contract upon the two partners and not between a superior and an inferior. If for any reason whatsoever they cannot pull along together happily then Islam does not force them to pass their lives in forced misery without any

right to separate. Islam does not therefore recommend that a woman should be forced against her will to lead a life of torture under an oppressive and unreasonable husband. How very fair it is in this respect and how protective towards defenceless womanhood.

The contract of marriage should therefore be as far as practicable in writing and must be duly witnessed by at least two witnesses. The idea being that both parties to the contract will be aware of not only their rights but also of their duties towards the other and their mutual obligation towards their children. Everything is so simple, easy to understand and logical to follow.

## **8. Meher**

For any contract to be legally binding it is necessary that there should be some consideration. A contract without a consideration has no legal force and can easily be rendered void.

Shariat therefore insists there should be some sort of a token or nominal consideration for each marriage contract. This is called the “*Meher*” or the gift to be presented by the husband to his wife on the solemnization of their marriage.

If the “*Meher*” is not presented, in kind or in jewelleries, then it may also be paid in cash on the night of the marriage by the husband before he makes love to his wife. If this is not done then the marriage is technically bad, null and void. The Qur’an orders the prophet and through him all Muslims as follows:

“O Prophet! lo! We (Allah) have made lawful unto thee, thy wives unto whom thou hast paid their Mehers... “(Qur’an 33: 50).

Out of ignorance, some parents fix the ‘*Meher*’ at a very high figure with the idea that the husband would not be able to divorce their daughter, then the marriage is technically null and void because the amount of ‘*Meher*’ is beyond the husband’s means to pay in cash or kind on the night of marriage before he touches his wife.

Should any disputes arise between a husband and his wife leading to eventual divorce and say if the '*Meher*' was fixed at Rs. 100/-and the husband has given his wife jewels worth Rs. 5,000/- then the husband is not entitled to claim back any excess out of the amount he has already gifted and paid out of love to a woman with whom he has lived as his wife.

### **F. Polygamy in India**

An all-India sample survey into polygamy in the country had been carried out recently by Dr. Kanti Prakash of the Indian Statistical Institute revealing the following:

1. Out of every 1000 Muslims there are 8.61 in the urban areas who practise polygamy.
2. Out of the total number of polygamous units in India 72% are Hindus and only 15% are Muslims.
3. Aged Hindus generally go for polygamy with young, immature girls around 15 years of age or even younger.
4. Muslims generally have a polygamous marriage with aged women because widow-remarriage is recommended by Islam.

Since there is no difference between the ways of Islamic life of a Muslim in India and a Muslim living in any other country of the world, it can be assumed safely that polygamy amongst Muslims is less than even 1 %. In fact in India it is as low as only 0.861%. Hence the question "Is Islam Polygamy or Monogamy—Which? Indeed how very ignorant are those who proclaim that Islam encourages polygamy!

The answer has to be that Islam is basically a monogamistic Religion which under strict laws of inhibition permits polygamy only to provide for distressed and helpless widows as a step to prevent prostitution. Hence it is the height of absurdity to call Islam a polygamistic religion encouraging four wives! Facts are hard things to deny. Such independent Statistics refute the lie that is being spread



against Islam.

### **G. Polygamy and the West**

Even the modern West whose abhorrence for polygamy is so much trumpeted bears undeniable evidence, according to the findings of learned European researchers, that their own countrymen are polygamous!

Dr. Rom Landau has stated on page 137 of “*Sex, Life and Faith—A Modern Philosophy of Sex*” by Faber & Faber Ltd, 1946:

“But though in the West the law prohibits polygamy, ‘in spice’ it finds itself forced to condone it ‘in time’ namely by granting divorce. A man may not have two wives simultaneously, but no one can prevent him from having ten wives over a period of years”.

Max Nordan writes on page 301 of “*Conventional Lies of Our Civilisation.*”

“Man lives in a state of polygamy in the civilised countries in spite of the monogamy enforced by law; out of a hundred thousand men there would barely be one who could swear upon his death-bed that he had never known but one single woman during his whole life”.

Dr Westermack, on unimpeachable evidence, tells us that in every civilised society polygamy has prevailed.

Professor H. Licht on page 59 of “*Sexual Life of Ancient Greece*” has confirmed that they “recognised the polygamous tendency of man and acted accordingly”.

M. Letourneau on page 154 of the “*Evolution of Marriage*” has stated:

“The most civilised nations must have begun with polygamy and in reality, it has been thus everywhere and always”.

Professor C. Von Ehrenfels of Praha has gone to the extent of pleading forcefully that polygamy as the general order is much superior

to monogamy. On the basis of scientific grounds, he asserts that a 'Polygamic marriage order has become necessary', and that it will succeed monogamy because it is 'morally superior' (Quoted by Havelock Ellis on page 502, Vol. IV of *The Psychology of Sex*).

Sir George Scott on page 2572, Vol. V of "*Encyclopaedia of Modern Knowledge*" states:

"In our own century there have been not a few who, noting the preponderance of women, have advocated plural marriages for man".

In America it is estimated that there are at least 3,000,000 women out of a total of 12 millions or 25% of womanhood in the marriageable ages who *are condemned by the cursed Nimrod's law of monogamy* to spend their lives as spinsters or take to prostitution!

*In Britain at least 4 million frustrated women will have passed their lives in torture, without the comforting arms of a protecting and loving husband.* They live perpetually in fear of getting illegitimate children without a father's name and love! In war-torn Europe the position is even far worse.

Everyone will agree readily that the situation is really desperate and something logically correct has to be done—but what?

Since this problem involves our European sisters, let us place the various alternatives before womanhood. They should be the best judges to decide upon what would suit them better *viz:-*

1. To legalise free prostitution or not?
2. What are the feelings of European womanhood?
3. The only means to emancipate European womanhood?

### **1. To legalise free prostitution or not?**

The first question that arises is whether or not to legalise free prostitution between any man and any woman whether they are

married women with living husbands or widows or spinsters?

Such laws have already been passed within the past few years in some European countries whilst in several others they are on the way.

The result has been that already numerous night clubs have been formed with legal impunity, where every husband enjoys another's wife and every wife another's husband for the night. Members are however not to enjoy their own husbands or wives!

Denmark has granted officially and legally the maximum amount of sex freedom. The naked display of both sexes and how to enjoy sex is being freely taught in live shows daily all over the place there. The freely available pornographic literature there reveal, in description backed by pictorial exhibitions, all possible forms of sexual aberrations. This is the tourist attraction to that country, where one finds every opportunity of fully satisfying his curiosity. Alas! Those who feel thrilled in this new-found sex-freedom are mostly *MEN*.

Since men seem to be the benefited by this law, let us pose the question to the modern advanced young man from America and Europe:

"Is not fornication all wrong and strictly forbidden by all the scriptures?"

The retort one would get would be something as under:

"Animals are males and females. Mammals reproduce their kind in much the same manner as do humans. *But animals do not marry! Nor is fornication considered something bad or evil amongst animals. So why should man have the institution of marriage?*

"Marriage is not necessary for reproduction! There is a great deal of human reproduction, today, *without marriage!* Indeed, this trend is increasing daily by leaps and bounds and soon marriage may well become out of date at least with the advanced civilisation of today."

Further the un-married state of celibacy is higher than married life according to the Christian Holy scriptures (1 Corinthians 7: 1, 8, 32-34).

THEN, since marriage is not at all necessary for reproduction, hence must the modern youth not conclude that marriage is not desirable?

“Is there, then, any rational or justifiable reason why humans who procreate should marry, while animals, who also bear their young, do not?”

These supporters of free love when making comparisons between animals and mankind seem to overlook several very important factors, *viz*:

- a. That animals never had anything to do with mankind at any stage—the evolution myth having been scientifically exploded earlier (Chapter 17: B, 1-5). Hence animals and humans are utterly dissimilar.
- b. The bull does not take the mother cow to a doctor or a hospital or a midwife for the delivery. The bull, in all probability is nowhere around! Mammals require no help for their young to be born. Normally the cow without any help has her calf born (wherever she may be—out in the open field. As soon as the baby calf is born, he begins to stagger to his feet. In a few minutes he is standing on all fours and starts sucking his mother’s milk as already pointed out in Chapter 17: B-5. No one need teach him or show him where to find his “dinner”. He knows by built-in INSTINCT. He does not need his mother to look after him, teach him and care for him. Instinct guides him automatically. This is true for all animals.
- c. With the new-born human all this is different as already pointed out in Chapter 17: B-5. The human child is utterly helpless and has to be looked after by the mother and to be fed by her. He has a blank human mind and has to be taught even to eat, to walk and talk. All this is a full-time job for the mother, who needs a husband to feed and clothe her and give her shelter whilst she gives her attention to the new born. The human society is thus inter-woven around the family life arising out of the institution of marriage.

- d. The *only* purpose of sex in animals is reproduction. But in humans, reproduction is *certainly not the only purpose of sex*. The purpose of marriage is transcendently higher because the new born baby needs parental care, teaching, guidance and love—and the experience of *human and family life*.
- e. Further man has an immortal soul which the animal has not got!

Hence there is no basis whatsoever for a comparison between animals and us human beings.

## 2. What are the feelings of European womanhood!

How European womanhood feels about the so-called freedom of sex has been aptly described by Mr. P.R. Dubhashi after his tour of the Scandinavian countries in the “*Indian Express*” dated 16th February 1971 as follows:

“Apparently women are not very happy with this sexual freedom. They certainly abhor women being displayed naked and in a blatant manner in clubs and in films like *free love* or *quiet days in crichy*. They would like men to show less of this morbid preoccupation with the fair sex. Indeed movements have sprung up against the excessive sexual freedom of men in these Scandinavian countries.

“Also women find life hard in spite of the fact that they have up-to-date gadgets in service. They have to serve in the office and also look after the homes. One girl said that *Sweden has turned WOMEN into SLAVES* ... It is obvious that prosperity and modernisation cannot solve all problems, psychological, emotional and social. *Indeed they create new ones*”.

It is being increasingly recognised by our European sisters in these Modern Western countries that *the so-called emancipation of women* and the removal of all checks on free sex must reduce women to the position of slaves and playthings of the men. Is this emancipation of women?—No, most definitely not!

Thus a situation is fast developing where the institution of marriage and its legal responsibility will be a thing of the past amongst the so-called advanced nations. If the law gives the European male such freedom that he can everyday enjoy himself with another woman and yet not be saddled with any responsibilities to look after and protect the woman for the rest of his life nor to feed and educate the children with which *he*, repeat, *he* has made her pregnant, then why should *he* take upon himself these heavy responsibilities, in an era of such costly living standards by leading a life of restriction and deprivation?

This is also confirmed by the findings of Mr. Erland Hofeston, head of the State Statiscal Bureau of Sweden which are as follows:

- a. Many young Swedes are shunning the marriage obligation!
- b. In the year 1966 there were 61,101 marriages.
- c. In the year 1971 instead of increasing it has fallen to 39,000 only—a 36% drop within as short a period as five years *i.e.* since the legalising of prostitution! This is the lowest figure of marriages in Sweden in more than a century, going back to the times of the mass Swedish emigration to the United States.
- d. The decrease in weddings is most pronounced and significant at the ages when marriage normally is most usual *i.e.* between the ages of 23-24 for women and 25-26 for men.
- e. In the year 1970 as many as 18% of the births were illegitimate—another all-time record for Sweden.

So it is clear that the Europeans including the Americans are in such a situation as was prevalent on a world-wide scale at the time of Prophet Noah, *which resulted ultimately in the destruction of humanity in the great Deluge. Individual cities have time and again taken to these standards of living, but all of them, be they Sodom or Gomorrah, Pompeii etc. were all destroyed suddenly, without any advance notice in a flash—by an unnatural incident!*

### 3. The only means to Emancipate European Womanhood!

The only means to save America and most parts of Europe from such sudden destruction is to pass such laws which would ensure for every woman a loving husband, who would not only protect her and give her homely comforts, but he will also bring up and educate her children. These are the principles of *Family life, love and security, which every woman thirsts after!* To deny these is to trample upon women's rights and their emancipation from slavery to man's lust.

The following questions arise over here:

- a. Has such a situation arisen before for any government under the guidance of a "Monogamist"?
- b. How was the preponderance of women over men due to a large number of young men being killed in a war tackled?
- c. What were the eventual results—destruction like Deluge, Sodom, Gomorrah, Pompeii *etc.*,—or happiness—which?

Surely no better example can be quoted than that of the 57-year-old monogamist—that glorious son of the wild desert. At the battle of Mt. Uhud a large number of his small band of about 750 followers had fallen. Their widowed wives came with their tearful orphaned children before the 57-year-old Muhammad, the Founder of the Islamic Government at Madinah and lamented that their husbands, the protectors of their innocent children had fallen in battle for the cause of Islam, so it was upto Islam to arrange for them to be in that position where they were when their husbands were alive! The Prophet wept with them and prayed for Divine Guidance. It came as read herebefore in Chapter 19: E-3.

At the age of 57, this monogamist could not easily be expected to give sexual satisfaction to more than one wife but what he could certainly do was to give them homely comfort and love as also protection and education to their orphaned children.

Muhammad, without regard to his own predicament that all his

life he had been a monogamist, married as many widows and destitute slave-women as he could. Thus did the monogamist set the example and for the first time in his life encouraged those of his followers who could comply with the Qur'anic injunctions of equal treatment to marry two or three or even a maximum of four widows or destitute slave girls, thus save womanhood from the the necessity of being forced into prostitution for survival. He however did not set any example of marrying a virgin as his second living wife!

Where there was gloom and desperation a few months earlier, there was now joy and contentment all around amongst the destitute women—widows and their orphaned children!

Cannot this teaching of the 57-year-old monogamist solve the problem to the heart's desires of every European woman and save her from the present tortures and uncertainty caused by laws legalising prostitution, which gave the woman no permanent love, no family life, no security and no protection for her children—*all of which she thirsts for!* This is the only answer to the riddle of the universe—to love—and to be loved—to live a happy contented family life!

Dr. Annie Besant has pronounced thus:

"I often think that woman is more free in Islam, woman is more protected by Islam than by a faith which preaches monogamy. In the Qur'an, the law about women is more just!

"When we see thousands of miserable women who crowd the streets of Western towns during the night, we must surely feel that it does not lie in Western mouths to reproach Islam for its polygamy. *It is much better for a woman, nay by-far happier for a woman to be united to one man only with the legal ties of marriage, with a legitimate child in her arms surrounded with genuine love and social respect than to be seduced, cast out into the streets perhaps with an illegitimate child outside the pale of law—unsheltered and uncared for! To become a victim of any passer-by, night after night, rendered incapable of protected motherhood—despised by all !*"

In many places like Germany there are four women to one man in



the marriageable group, who now stand condemned to prostitution by their own man-made laws, “the cursed Nimrodic Law” of only one legal wife but with no ban on the number of illegal wives *i.e.* prostitutes! Is not each such woman entitled to a legal husband and a happy married family life? Is not Islam the only logical and practical answer to her distressing needs?

Dr. Macfarlane has advocated this teaching of Islam in his revealing book “*The Case of Polygamy*” as follows:

“Whether the question is considered socially or religiously, it can be demonstrated that polygamy is not contrary to the highest standards of civilisation. The suggestion offers a practical remedy for the western problem of the destitute and unwanted female, the alternative is continued and increased prostitution, concubinage and distressing spinterhood”.

It is now for the Western Civilisation to realise whether it is going to be fair and honest towards womanhood or not and

—either —

- a. Grant the birthright of every woman to a legally married husband with security for her children in a happy family and scrap the Cursed Nimrod’s law of monogamy, ban prostitution, prohibit abortion and legalise polygamy

— or —

- b. Trample upon womanhood by denying to them, their rights to happy married lives, refusing to grant security and a father’s love to their children, forcing the women to commit murder by the abortion of their unborn children, which is something hated by all right-thinking women, and reducing them to a life of shame and destitution by legalising prostitution, which is bound to cause the repetition of the historical curse of Allah, by the destruction of those who indulge in it as has happened on each and every occasion in the past when prostitution has

been practised under the garb of emancipation of women as now, *viz*: the destruction of mankind by the Great Deluge in the days of Noah, and then the sudden and complete destruction of Sodom, Gomorrah, Pompeii, *etc.*, all for the same reason of free prostitution—Is this emancipation of women or reducing them to being slaves of men to be always ready at their beck and call? A position which is even worse than that of slaves in the past, because the masters under Islam were forced not only to feed and clothe their slaves but also to look after them all their lives and to treat them as equals with themselves—something which every woman thirsts for—be they free married women or slaves, makes no difference—A happy family life united with one man. But alas! over here that little is not even conceded to the so-called emancipated women of the advanced Western Civilisation. Then is it any longer emancipation of women or is it their reduction to a position worse than even slaves under Islam? Has the modern advanced civilisation become so blind that they are only hastening their sudden destruction in a Nuclear Holocaust?

Scientific World—Whither?

—Self Destruction?

## H. DIVORCE

Now let us study the laws relating to divorce under Islam and see whether it meets the needs of humanity at large and how it may be practised logically to give universal benefit to all concerned, without trampling upon the rights of especially womanhood.

### 1. The Qur'anic Laws on Divorce

“They question thee (O Muhammad) concerning menstruation. Say: *It is a wound (an injury) so let woman alone at such times and go not in unto them till they are healed.* And when they have bathed

themselves, then go in unto them as Allah hath enjoined upon you. Truly Allah loveth those who turn unto Him, and loveth those, who have a care for cleanliness!" (Qur'an 2: 222).

"Allah hath not assigned unto any man two hearts within his body, nor hath he made your wives whom ye declare (to be your mothers) your mothers, nor hath he made those whom ye claim (to be your sons) your sons. This is but a saying of your mouths. But Allah saith the truth and He showeth the way" (Qur'an 33: 4).

"Such of you as put away your wives (by saying they are as their mothers)—They are not their mothers, none are their mothers except those who gave them birth; they indeed utter an ill word and a lie. And lo! Allah is Forgiving, Merciful.

"Those who put away their wives (by saying they are as their mothers) and afterward would go back on that which they have said, (the penalty) in that case (is) the freeing of a slave before they touch one another. Unto this ye are exhorted; and Allah is informed of what ye do.

"And he who findeth not (the wherewithal) let him fast for two successive months before they touch one another; and for him who is unable to do so (the penance is) the feeding of sixty needy ones. This, that ye may put trust in Allah and His messenger. Such are the limits (imposed by Allah); and for disbelievers is a painful doom" (Qur'an 58: 2-4).

"Allah will not take you to task for that which is unintentional in your oaths. But He will take you to task for that which your hearts have garnered. Allah is Forgiving, Clement.

"Those who swear that they give divorce to their wives must wait four months (before any divorce proceeding can take effect) then if they change their mind, lo! Allah is Forgiving, Merciful" (Qur'an 2: 225-226).

"Men are in charge of women, because Allah hath made one of them to excel the other, and because they (the men) spend of their property (for the support of women and the children), so good women are obedient, guarding in secret that which Allah hath

guarded. As for those from whom ye fear rebellion, admonish them and banish them to beds apart, and scourge them (lightly). Then if they obey you, seek not a way against them. Lo! Allah is ever High Exalted, Great.

“And if ye fear a divorce between them twain (the man and wife), appoint an arbiter from his folk and an arbiter from her folk. If they desire amendment (to the proclaimed decision to divorce) Allah will make them of one mind (*i.e.* reconciled). Lo! Allah is ever Knower, Aware” (Qur’an 4: 34-35).

“As for those of your women who are guilty of lewdness, call to witness four of you against them. And if they testify (to the truth of the allegation) then confine them to the houses until death take them or (until) Allah appoint for them a way.

“And as for the two of you who are guilty thereof, punish them both. And if they repent and improve, then let them be. Lo! Allah is Relenting, Merciful.

“Forgiveness is only incumbent on Allah toward those who do evil in ignorance (and) then turn quickly (in repentance) to Allah. These are they toward whom Allah relenteth. Allah is ever Knower, Wise.

“The Forgiveness is not for those who do ill deeds (intentionally) until, when death attendeth upon one of them, he saith: Lo! I repent now: nor yet for those who die while they are disbelievers. For such We (Allah) have prepared a painful doom!

“O ye who believe! It is not lawful for you forcibly to inherit the women (of your deceased kinsmen), nor (that) ye should put constraint upon them, (or) that ye may take away a part of that ye have given them, unless they be guilty of flagrant lewdness. But consort with them in kindness, for if ye hate them it may happen that ye hate a thing wherein Allah hath placed much good.

“And if ye wish to replace one wife (who for some logical and valid reason is unsuitable and uncooperative or is causing trouble) for another (you intend to marry) and ye have given unto one of them a sum of money (however great) take nothing back from it. Would

ye take it by the way of calumny and open wrong?

“How can ye take it (back) after one of you hath gone in unto the other, and they have taken a strong pledge from you?” (Qur’an 4: 15-21).

“If a woman feareth ill treatment from her husband, or desertion, it is no sin for them twain if they make terms of peace between themselves. Peace is better. But greed hath been made present in the minds (of men). If ye do good and keep from evil, lo! Allah is ever informed of what ye do” (Qur’an 4: 128).

“But if they separate (in peace and goodwill), Allah will compensate each (of the two) out of His abundance. Allah is ever All-Embracing, All-Knowing” (Qur’an 4: 130).

“And if they (*i.e.* both the husband and the wife mutually) decide upon divorce (let them remember that) Allah is Hearer, Knower.

“Women who are divorced shall wait, keeping themselves apart, three (monthly) courses. And it is not lawful for them that they should conceal that which Allah hath created in their wombs if they are believers in Allah and the Last day. *And their husbands would do better to take them back in that case if they desire a reconciliation.* **And they (women) have rights similar to those (of men) over them in kindness**, and men are (only) a (very slight) degree above them. Allah is Mighty, Wise” (Qur’an 2: 227-228).

“O Prophet! (*Please advise the menfolk*) when ye (*men*) divorce any women, put them away for their (*legal*) period (*i.e.* the women have to be looked after not only for the four months’ arbitration period but also for three menstruations *i.e.* about three months thereafter if they are not pregnant or the whole period of pregnancy and also the two years of nursing period if the woman desires to nurse her child) and recognise (*i.e. respect*) this period, and keep your duty to Allah, your Lord. Expel them not from their houses (because your houses became their houses upon their marriage to you and remain so until the period of four months for the amicable settlement of the divorce proceedings by arbitration has not resulted in a failure and a further period as referred to above) nor should they (the women)

*themselves go forth* (to discuss about their future until the failure of the four months of arbitration proceedings and at least three menstruation periods thereafter if they are not pregnant) unless they commit an open immorality. Such are the limits (imposed) by Allah; and whosoever transgresseth Allah's limits, he (or she) verily wrongeth his (or her) own soul. Thou knowest not; it may be that Allah will afterward bring about some new thing (or circumstances for the mutual happiness of both the parties involved).

"Then, when they have reached their term, take them back in kindness, or part from them in kindness, and call to witness two just men among you, and keep your testimony upright for Allah. Whoso believeth in Allah and the Last Day is exhorted to act thus. And whosoever keepeth his duty, to Allah, Allah will show a way out for him.

"And for such of your women as despair of menstruation, if ye doubt, their period (of waiting) shall be three months, along with those who have it not. And for those with child, their period shall be till they bring forth their burden. And whosoever keepeth his duty to Allah, He maketh his course easy for him.

"That is the commandment of Allah which He revealeth unto you. And whoso keepeth his duty to Allah, He will remit from him his evil deeds and magnify reward for him.

"Lodge them where ye dwell, according to your wealth, and harass them not so as to straiten life for them. And if they are with child, then spend for them till they bring forth their burden. Then if they (*i.e.* the mother) give suck (to her child) for you give them their due payment and consult together in kindness; but if ye make difficulties for one another, then let some other woman give suck (to the new-born child) for him (the father of the child because the child is supposed to belong to the father in cases of disputes because the father has to arrange to feed his children—this is his responsibility).

"Let him who hath abundance spend of his abundance, and he whose provision is measured, let him spend of that which Allah hath given him. Allah asketh naught of any soul save that which He

hath given it. Allah will vouchsafe, after hardship, ease” (Qur’an 65: 1-2, 4-7).

“(The procedure of enforcing a) divorce must be enacted on two separate occasions (each comprising four months of arbitration) and then (a woman) must be retained in honour (if a settlement has been arrived at during any of the two four-monthly arbitrations) or released in kindness (if any of the two separate occasions of four months of arbitration have failed to bring about a settlement). And it is not lawful for you that ye take from woman aught of that which ye have given them ; except (in the case) when both fear that they may not be able to keep within the limits (imposed by) Allah. And if ye fear that they may not be able to keep the limits of Allah, in that case it is no sin for either of them if the woman ransoms herself (by returning the meher *i.e.* gifts given by the husband). These are the limits (imposed by) Allah. Transgress them not. For whoso transgresseth Allah’s limits such are wrong-doers” (Qur’an 2: 229).

“When ye have divorced women, and they have reached their term (of waiting for three months after the failure of the arbitration proceedings) then retain them in kindness (if you can come to terms again) otherwise release them in kindness. Retain them not (forcibly) to their hurt (if you have failed to come to a settlement by arbitration) so that ye (thereby) transgress not (the limits). He who transgresseth the limits hath wronged his soul. Make not the revelations of Allah a laughing-stock (by your behaviour and following the ridiculous pagan custom of the Arabs of arbitrarily divorcing their wives by repeating thrice “I divorce you” or “you look like my mother” and other such nonsense), but remember Allah’s grace upon you and that which He hath revealed unto you of the Scripture and of wisdom, whereby He doth exhort you. Observe your duty to Allah and know that Allah is Aware of all things” (Qur’an 2: 231).

“And make not Allah, by your oaths (such as saying thrice “You look like my mother” or “I divorce you” to your wife after the pagan custom) a hindrance to your being righteous (and submitting yourself to the four-month arbitration procedure as ordered in the

Qur'an instead of taking the law in your hand) and observe your duty unto Him and make peace among the people (of your house *i.e.* wife, children and relations): Allah is the Hearer, the Knower" (Qur'an 2: 224).

"And when ye have divorced women and they reach their term, *place not any difficulties in the way of their (again) marrying their ex-husbands, if it is agreed between them in kindness.* This is an admonition for him among you who believeth in Allah and the Last Day. *That is more virtuous for you, and cleaner* (that husbands should remarry their divorced wives). Allah knoweth: ye know not!

*"Mothers shall suckle their children for two whole years: (that is) for those who wish to complete the suckling. The duty of feeding and clothing nursing mothers in a seemly manner is upon the father of the child. No one should be charged beyond his capacity.* A mother should not be made to suffer because of her child, nor should he to whom the child is born (be made to suffer) because of his child. And on the (father's) heir is incumbent the like of that (which was incumbent on the father). If they desire to wean the child by mutual consent and (after) consultation, it is no sin for them; and if you wish to give your children out to nurse, it is no sin for you, provided that you pay what is due from you in kindness. Observe your duty to Allah, and know that Allah is Seer of what ye do" (Qur'an 2: 232-233).

"And if he hath divorced her (at the termination of the third separate four monthly divorce arbitration proceedings) then she is not lawful unto him thereafter (*i.e.* after the failure of the third of the four-monthly arbitration proceedings) until she hath wedded another husband (because they have made it quite clear by the three separate arbitration proceedings ending in failures, that they are incapable of living in love with one another). Then if he (the second husband of his free will and not under any pressure or arrangement) divorce her (and she realises that she has made a mistake in her conduct with her previous husband, then) it is no sin for both of them that they come together again if they consider that they are (now) able to observe the limits of Allah. These are the limits of Allah. He manifesteth them for people who have



knowledge” (Qur’an 2: 230).

“O ye who believe if ye wed believing women and divorce them before ye have touched them, then there is no period that ye should reckon. But content them and release them handsomely” (Qur’an 33: 49).

“It is no sin for you if ye divorce women while yet ye have not touched them, nor appointed unto them a portion. Provide for them, the rich according to his means, and the straitened according to his means, a fair provision. (This is) a bounden duty for those who do good.

“If ye divorce them before ye have touched them and ye have appointed unto them a portion, then (pay them) half of that which ye appointed, unless they (thy women) agree to forgo it, or he agreeth to forgo it in whose hand is the marriage tie. To forgo is nearer to piety. And forget not kindness among yourselves. Allah is seer of what ye do.

*“For divorced women a provision in kindness is a duty for those who ward off (evil).*

“Thus Allah expoundeth unto you his revelations so that ye may understand” (Qur’an 2: 236-237, 241-242).

## 2. Hadith on Divorce

Now the question arises, how are these Qur’anic Laws to be interpreted? Are these laws to be enforced in such a manner as would encourage or discourage divorces? For this purpose one has to refer to the counsel given by the Holy Prophet. These advices are called the “Hadith” or “Sunnah”.

With regard to divorce, Muhammad has made the following declaration:

*“Never did Allah allow anything more hateful to Him than divorce”*  
(Sunnan of Abu Dawud Vol. 13, Chap. 3).

In view of this Hadith it becomes absolutely clear that the Qur’anic

laws on divorce have to be so applied that they would act as a very serious obstacle in the way of anyone wanting to give a divorce because Allah and His Prophet hate divorce, even though it is lawful.

### **3. Procedure for enforcing a Divorce**

Under Qur'anic Laws the man and wife have equal rights in all matters including divorce (Qur'an 2: 228). In case there is any dispute and either the husband or the wife want to divorce the other then the husband and the wife are each required to appoint two senior and respectable persons from their respective families as an arbitrator on their behalf (Qur'an 4: 35).

### **4. The first divorce procedure.**

The said arbitrators will try and explore all avenues as to how a mutually acceptable settlement between the parties is possible. If a settlement has been arrived at, at the first or second or third four-monthly session of the divorce proceedings, then the divorce proceedings will be treated as closed, and the man and wife would be advised to live in cooperation and happiness with each other without any question of re-marriage between them, because no divorce has taken place!

If no settlement is arrived at after four months of negotiations, which are compulsory under 2: 226 before any divorce can be granted, the settlement proceedings should be closed with the following questions being asked compulsorily by the two Arbitrators if they have not already done so, *viz*:

- a. Has the husband paid the "Meher" amount to the satisfaction of the wife? If the amount has not been paid then the marriage cannot be annulled!
- b. Was the husband in an anger, when he swore that he would divorce his wife? If he had sworn in anger then such incident is to be treated as null and void. (Qur'an 2: 225) and the husband

would have to undergo a penalty of doing one of the following:

- i. To free a slave (Qur'an 58: 3).
- ii. If he has not got the means to free a slave, then to fast for 60 days without a break (Qur'an 58: 4).
- iii. If he has not the health to fast for 60 consecutive days then to feed 60 needy people (Qur'an 58: 4).
- iv. As long as one of the above acts is not done, the husband and wife cannot live together (Qur'an 58: 3).

As soon as he has complied with the above, he should be advised to take back his wife without any question of re-marriage as in fact *no divorce has taken place by his merely reciting thrice that he has given divorce* in accordance with the hated pagan customs prevalent at Mecca, to destroy which Muhammad had come on earth, hence this pagan system of giving divorce by repeating thrice "I give you divorce" is something totally un-Islamic (Qur'an 2: 224) as also referred to later in greater details in sub-section 10 of this section.

In this manner divorce proceedings can be held on three separate occasions between a husband and his wife. If after the third proceeding no settlement is arrived at and if the wife is not pregnant, then that is to be treated as a final or third divorce. The number of times that any husband repeats before his wife that he is giving her divorce or vice versa as per the customs and practice of the Pagan Arabs is therefore immaterial and invalid, unless and until both he and she appoint an arbitrator each and go through the entire divorce proceedings for each time separately to constitute the first or second or third divorce procedures respectively.

- c. The wife will be asked whether she was having her menstruation on the night on which the dispute arose. If she was having her menstruation, then the husband would be scolded by the two Arbitrators and told that he was trying to commit a sin upon his wife (Qur'an 2: 222) and under such conditions no divorce can be granted.

- d. The wife will be asked at the end of the fourth month of the commencement of divorce proceeding (Qur'an 2: 226), whether she feels she is pregnant or not (Qur'an 2: 228). If the wife is pregnant then the divorce proceedings will be stayed until the birth of the child, (Qur'an 65: 4) and two years thereafter to allow the mother to wean her child, if she so desires (Qur'an 2: 233 and 65: 6 and 1). Only after this period is over will arise the question of whether the two parties still want to go on with the divorce action or whether they have been reconciled in the meantime. The husband has no right to drive his wife away from his house (Qur'an 65: 1) so long as the divorce is not final.
- e. If no settlement has been arrived at in 4 months, then the two Arbitrators will most reluctantly grant divorce. Thus it is clear that under the Qur'anic Laws neither the husband nor the wife have any rights to give divorce to the other directly by merely swearing that "I give you divorce" and repeating it three times or more in the presence of witnesses as was the Pagan Arab custom, before the advent of Islam.

This elaborate procedure is called "the first divorce". After a divorce has been granted after four months of arbitration proceedings and some more time has elapsed then if the husband wants to take his wife back, he is recommended under the Qur'an to do so by remarrying her (Qur'an 2: 232) but this time it must be with her written consent before at least two witnesses (Qur'an 65: 2).

## **5. The Second Divorce Procedure**

This is identical in all respects to the first divorce procedure of 4 months.

## **6. The Third or Final Divorce**

When three times each for four months arbitration has been carried on

for the settlement of disputes arising out of three separate divorce proceedings and if on the third occasion no settlement has been arrived at within four months and if the wife is not pregnant then in that case the husband and wife will be treated as “*absolutely divorced and separated*” because they have made it quite clear by the three separate arbitration proceedings that they are quite incapable of living peacefully and happily together hence there is no option left but to keep them apart for the welfare of the rest of the family (Qur’an 2: 230).

### **7. Steps to prevent remarriage of such trouble-makers who have harassed their families with three separate divorce proceedings of 4 months each**

Every impediment and obstacle has therefore to be placed in their way to prevent such trouble makers from re-marrying each other. Hence Shariat has laid down that when such a third divorce proceeding after three separate 4-monthly periods of arbitration have resulted in failures, then the said husband and wife are not permitted to remarry each other unless and until the wife has been married to somebody else and if that somebody else has given her a divorce out of his choice and free will. The wife will have no option to request for divorce in such a case. But if divorced by her second husband then she may as a special case be permitted to remarry her first husband provided they both guarantee that they are not going to indulge in any further divorce nuisances but live peacefully and lovingly together (Qur’an 2: 230).

### **8. The Exceptions to the rule**

The only two conditions under which the obligatory procedure of 4 months negotiations required under Qur’an 2: 226, can be avoided to give a divorce are:

- a. If there is a fear that the husband might murder his wife or the wife may poison and kill her husband as a result of their disputes, then it is the bounden duty of those living nearby to

separate such trouble-makers and prevent them from living together again. In such an unusual case to go through the elaborate procedure of three divorce proceedings each of 4 months duration as required strictly under Shariat is not considered reasonable nor necessary. Hence in such special cases, some kind of summary procedure has to be adopted.

- b. If two people are married but their ideologies of life are so far apart, that in spite of repeated counsels of the elders, they simply cannot pull along together and their attitude is nothing but one of non-co-operation and hatred towards the other then it is pointless to permit the two to torture one another indefinitely making their marriage a hell for one another.

In such special cases where it is considered *by those who are other than the involved parties—the husband and the wife*,—that these two cannot continue married life together. And also in these special circumstances it is considered that to make them go through the elaborate procedure of three separate divorce arbitration proceedings of 4 months each would prolong unnecessarily the agony for the two concerned and that they are both agreed upon separation, then a summary procedure may be adopted by bringing the husband and the wife together before the elders of the family and amicably settling the question of divorce and separation (Qur'an 2: 227).

In no other condition can the four months of arbitration negotiations, which are compulsory under Qur'an 2: 226 and 4: 35, before each of the first divorce, or the second divorce or the third divorce is granted, be avoided under the Qur'anic Laws.

## **9. Woman's right to divorce**

In case a woman finds that her husband is very cruel and ill-treats her, she has not only the right to divorce her husband (Qur'an 2: 228) but also to free herself from the marriage contract by refunding the "*Meher*" amount paid to her by her husband (Qur'an 2: 229).

Under normal circumstance, she has to go through the compulsory procedure of appointing arbitrators and the four months of compulsory negotiations (Qur'an 2: 226).

But if she fears her husband might kill her then she has equal rights to call a gathering of elders and declare her position and give her story of cruelty and express the danger she fears to her life. If she can prove the correctness of her statement, then she can in such circumstances separate from her husband by refunding the "*Meher*" and sumarily divorce her husband before the gathering of elders.

The Prophet has said: "If a woman is prejudiced by a marriage let it be broken off". *Example:*

The wife of Thabit ibn Qais came to the Holy Prophet and said "O Messenger of Allah! I do not find fault in Thabit ibn Qais regarding his morals or faith but I cannot pull along with him and I cannot bear him". The Holy Prophet said: Wilt thou return to him his orchard (which was given to you as *Meher* by your husband on your marriage)? On receiving a reply in the affirmative and realising that no amount of persuasion and advice was going to resolve the differences and the hate they had for each other and that they were thus creating an unbearable situation for each other, the Holy Prophet sent for Thabit and asked him to take back his orchard in token of the finalisation of the divorce being given by his wife, who was thus ransoming herself out of the marriage agreement (Al-Sahih al-Bukhari by Hafiz Abu Abdullah Muhammad ibn Ismail al-Bukhari 63:11).

## **10. Divorce on whimsical grounds or by swearing oaths not permitted by Qur'an**

An oath is an invocation of the name of Allah or of some person or object held as sacred by the person using the invocation, to witness the truth of a solemn affirmation and to emphasise that affirmation.

Among the pagan Arabs, the use of oaths became so common that

it almost ceased to have any solemn meaning. On the other hand, when they wanted to suppress the rights of women or do some unjust acts, they would resort conveniently to an oath to do so, and then plead that they were bound solemnly by their oaths when pressure was brought to bear on them to desist from their injustice. Such people thus made a twofold mockery of the solemnity of an oath. Firstly, they took the name of Allah lightly, and secondly they used their oaths as an excuse for doing wrong and unjust deeds.

Such practices of the pagan Arabs are condemned in the strongest terms in the Qur'an: 224 and 231. Divorce therefore cannot be granted under Qur'anic teachings on such whimsical oaths of the pagan Arabs as:

- a. "You look like my mother (Qur'an 3: 4 and 58: 2).
- b. For the refusal of the wife to allow her husband during menstruation (Qur'an 2: 222),
- c. By doing anything in a fit of anger (Qur'an 2: 225).
- d. By swearing thrice by either the husband or the wife (as both have equal rights under Qur'an 2: 228) that "I give you divorce". This absurd practice of the pagan Arabs is condemned totally and forbidden in Qur'an 2: 224 and 231.

## **11. Annulment of marriages before living as man and wife**

If a man and woman have just been married but not yet lived as man and wife and if they want to divorce each other for any reason then:

- a. If the "*Meher*" amount has been fixed, then the husband should pay half the amount as compensation (Qur'an 2: 237).
- b. If no "*Meher*" has been fixed then a reasonable amount as would compensate for the expenses incurred should be given (Qur'an 2: 235).
- c. The wife has the right to give up the "*Meher*". That would be considered more pious and reasonable (Qur'an 2: 237).
- d. No waiting period is to be observed by the wife in such a case



before remarrying someone else (Qur'an 33: 49).

## **12. Divorce granted when husband missing**

A wife is entitled to a divorce if her husband is missing or has disappeared and cannot be communicated with over an indefinite period. The necessity for such a divorce obviously is that the untraceable husband is unable to fulfil his compulsory marital obligations of feeding and clothing his wife and children and of educating them. The wife cannot be reasonably expected to wait indefinitely for the husband who has vanished. Therefore some reasonable time is to be allowed according to the special circumstances of each case.

According to Imam Malik she should wait for four years (page 597, Vol. I, *Al-Hidaya* by Abu Al-Hasan Ali ibn Abi Bakr-al-Marghinani).

Imam Ahmad ibn Hanbal and the Shia view agree with this. This period of waiting for four years before assuming the death of one's husband is therefore to be considered a most reasonable period.

The view of Ibn al-Musayyab is that if a person is missing in the course of fighting, then his wife should wait for only a year before presuming him to be dead. This is also considered generally reasonable and is widely accepted.

Under the present conditions of scientific advancement when there are good communications, a maximum period of one year for those missing from a battlefield and four years in all other cases should be considered as the reasonable limits before declaring a woman free to remarry. If eventually the husband turns up, it will be considered that he has become divorced from his wife because of his failure to fulfil his compulsory obligations under the Qur'anic laws. He would have no more rights over his wife. Her second marriage after waiting the reasonable period without any news whatsoever from her husband would be perfectly legal and valid because the first marriage had already

become null and void due to the default of the husband long before her second marriage took place!

### **13. Divorced women's rights to re-marriage**

A divorced woman or a widow, provided they are not pregnant, are free to remarry as soon as the prescribed period known as “*Iddat*” has elapsed. This period comprises three menstruation periods after divorce or four months and ten days from the death of one's husband.

In case a woman is pregnant, she must wait till the birth of the child, before being permitted to re-marry.

### **14. Special conditions which annul marriages**

*If a man or a woman is so diseased before marriage that they cannot produce children or are a danger to the health of the other partner, then such persons are not permitted to marry.* The annulment of such a marriage requires a doctor's examination to determine that the disease is a danger to the other partner's health *and was prevalent before the marriage took place or that one of the two concerned are incapable of bearing children, hence the marriage is meaningless.* But this will not apply to something taking place after marriage because in that event it is the duty of one partner to look after the sick partner out of love and affection.

### **15. The Conclusion on Divorce**

Thus Islam has abolished once for all time the pagan system of enforcing a divorce unilaterally by the husband at his sweet will and pleasure, by swearing as the pagan Arabs did by repeating thrice before his wife “I give you divorce” (Qur'an 2: 224) or “You look like my mother hence you are divorced” (57: 2) or any other such absurdities. Hence Islam has restricted the husband's freedom to divorce whimsically (Qur'an 2: 231).

For the first time in human history a wife has been given under Islam an equality with her husband in all matters including divorce (Qur'an 2: 228).

Mr Justice V. K. Krishna Iyer of Kerala High Court has summarised his judgment as:

“A deeper study of the Muslim Personal Law, disclosed a surprisingly rational modern law on divorce”. Citing a verse from the Qur'an: “And women have rights similar to those against them in a just manner”, he declared: “This statement has been referred to as ‘a revolutionising one’, for it almost equated women with men”.

With those religions that have come out of Nimrodism including the Roman Catholics, marriage is considered unbreakable even where it has made the married lives of the partners a hell for each other. Islam on the other hand because it recognises the sanctity of the marriage tie, which is of such importance to the welfare of humanity, has attached a high degree of respect to the same by making the dissolution of marriage as reasonably difficult as possible. Islam permits divorce only as a last resort when there is not only a good cause but also after all means to effect a reconciliation by three sets of arbitration have been fully exhausted. Marriage by itself is nothing but an agreement to live together in love and to bring up happy children. But when either of the married partners finds himself or herself unable to adjust with the other partner, so much so that the state of affairs in the home reaches such a situation that instead of peace there is nothing but perpetual wrangling, the marriage becomes meaningless as there is no love left between the husband and the wife. Their home life is reduced to a virtual hell and in such a case there is no option left but to end that torture and separate—that is divorce in the true sense under the laws of Shariat. Divorce therefore cannot be resorted to, nor is it recognised under Islam for each little dispute a man and his wife may have in the course of their daily lives. This also cannot be made a ground for divorce. There has to be a permanent rift and that too should be unsolvable.

Is there in any place in the whole world a law so reasonable and practical as Islam for the welfare of the family and society?



## Chapter 20

# Satanism



Unfortunately it is the universal belief that “*Satanism*” must be something horrible, bad and wicked. It has often been conjectured by our elders—of course without any basis whatsoever—that the root of all the evil we see around us is Satan’s work. Our escapist tendencies make Iblis (or Lucifer, the name given to him in the Holy Bible), the scape-goat of all our own defects and drawbacks. However, Satan certainly has no connection at all with any of the sins we commit!

We know already from Chapter 17: B-4 that Satan belongs to the spiritual world. He has only “Nafs Lawwama” or the self-reproaching conscience. This *immortal soul* draws him continuously towards his Creator and His Perfections. Iblis has no “Nafs Ammara” or animal spirit which is the basic cause for sins. *Hence Satan has no natural desire to commit robbery, adultery, murder or any other form of sin. One who does not have the desire or the ability to sin cannot induce others to sin! Is it not absolutely ridiculous, in these circumstances, to try to put the blame for our sins upon the innocent Iblis?*

Iblis had been worshipping Allah whole-heartedly all day long and also throughout the night for a period of many tens of thousands of years before the advent of Adam. This continuous adoration of the Creator had won for him the highest position of respect from the spiritual dwellers of the universe. He was their elected leader!

*Even after his condemnation into Satan, he has not yet given up his*

*continuous day and night long adoration of the Almighty, and will not do so until his death whenever the destruction of this earth takes place!*

To commit a sin, Iblis would have to make a deliberate act. *Why should he be so foolish as to do something by which he gains nothing? Satan is certainly not a fool!* We try conveniently to close our eyes and overlook these basic facts.

He also knows well the punishment that will be given to those who break Divine Laws. *He is still contending that he has committed no sins whatsoever and is innocent in spite of his condemnation into Satan.* He is going to argue his case before Allah on the day of Judgment that he was and still is innocent, as will be seen hereafter. *With this background Iblis fears very much that if he commits any sin whatsoever, it would give Allah the justification of condemning him into hell. So he has everything to lose if he commits even a single sin.* Under these circumstances Satan will always be the last person to commit any kind of sin. *In fact he is always on his guard not to commit any sin whatsoever.*

It may be recalled here that *Iblis never objected to bow his head before Allah and to adore Him as his Creator.* In fact that is what Satan had been doing from many tens of thousands of years before the creation of Adam and that is what he is always doing even now! All that Iblis refused to do was to bow his head before anybody who was not Allah. *As Adam was not Allah, so he naturally refused to bow his head before Adam.*

Further, Iblis contended before Allah that all the spiritual dwellers of the universe including the Angels who had bowed their heads, before Adam, in compliance with Allah's orders had all perpetrated the unpardonable sin of Polytheism" *i.e.* worshipping somebody who was not Allah. *Thus Satan contends that all the spiritual dwellers of the universe are sinners according to the Divine Law that only Allah is to be worshipped. Hence he claims that he is the only sinless being, amongst the entire spiritual world.* Therefore he is at a loss to understand and appreciate how the All Merciful and All Just Allah could have

condemned him into Satan for this right stand on his part? All this is apparently beyond his comprehension and logic.

It will be quite clear from this analysis that Satan has never accepted that he has ever broken any of Allah's laws. He is therefore *anxiously waiting to justify his stand under the laws of Allah that nobody is entitled to be worshipped except Allah, and that he was in the right when he refused to bow before "Nur-e-Muhammadi" in the forehead of Adam.* That his act of refusal to bow before Adam is therefore, *according to Iblis, not a disobedience to His Divine Laws but a fulfilment of them.*

Hence all the allegations that Satan must be the root cause of all our evils and that all our shortcomings are his works are therefore entirely without any foundation or basis.

#### **A. Why was Iblis condemned into Satan?**

When this is the stand of Iblis, then it becomes very necessary to analyse and find out what was so very seriously wrong with this stand for the leader of the spiritual dwellers of the universe that he was condemned by Allah into Satan?

1. In Chapter 17: B-3, we have already read that Allah offered the charge of keeping the Universe in accordance with His Divine Laws to the spiritual world, the animal kingdom as also to the forces of nature but they all shrank from assuming this tremendous responsibility. Only man (because of Logos or Nur-e-Muhammadi) accepted it (Qur'an 33: 72).
2. Thereupon Allah informed the spiritual dwellers of the universe that he was going to create "Man" whom He would appoint as His "Khalifa" or Viceroy (Chapter 17: B-3) because he was the only one who was prepared to assume this onerous responsibility.
3. Iblis, as the leader of the dwellers of heaven, questioned the wisdom of Allah: "wilt Thou place therein one, who will do

harm therein and will shed blood, while we (the spiritual world of Angels, Jinns, Fairies *etc*), we hymn Thy praise and sanctify Thee?” (Qur’an 2: 30).

4. Allah retorted: “Surely I know that which ye know not” (Qur’an 2: 30).
5. Thereupon Allah created Adam with two spiritual forces *i.e.* the mortal soul in animals and the immortal soul blessed upon the spiritual beings (Chapter 17: B-4) as against which all others creations have been created with only one spiritual force. Thus Allah created man as a superior being, when compared with other creations as confirmed in Qur’an 17: 70 (as read in Chapter 17: B-3).
6. The angels and other spiritual forces had been created tens of thousands of years before Adam. Some have even been in existence for several millions of years.
7. Adam was created by Allah breathing into him the soul (Genesis 2: 7), which was the Logos or the “Word of God”, the first thing created by Allah out of Himself. Out of this Nur-e-Muhammadi everything was created and the light of knowledge was imparted through this Logos (St. John 1: 1-5).

“And when I (Allah) have fashioned him (Adam) and breathed into him of My Spirit (*i.e.* the Logos or Nur-e-Muhammadi) ...” (Qur’an 38: 73).

8. As soon as man was created, Allah showed Adam to all the spiritual dwellers of the universe. In order to prove that Adam was a superior being to even the spiritual world, Allah asked the spiritual dwellers of the universe to state, after allowing them to put all their intelligence together, what were His names or Wondrous Attributes. This is mentioned as follows:

“And He taught Adam (by breathing into him Nur-e-Muhammadi which already knew from much before) all the names, (*i.e.* the attributes of the wondrous qualities of Allah as it was the first thing that Allah created out of Himself and through which Allah had



created the entire Universe), then (when He had breathed His spirit, *i.e.* Nur-e-Muhammadi) He (Allah) showed him (Adam) to the spiritual dwellers of the universe saying: Inform Me of (My) names, if ye are truthful” (Qur’an 2: 31).

9. The spiritual world replied to Allah:

“They said: Be glorified! We have no knowledge save that which Thou hast taught us. Lo! Thou, only Thou art the Knower, the Wise” (Qur’an 2: 32).

10. Thereupon Allah asked Adam as follows:

“He said: O Adam! Inform (My) names, (immediately Adam recited the 101 glorious attributes of the wondrous qualities of Allah to be found in the, Qur’an), and when he had informed them the (101 glorious) names (of Allah, all the spiritual dwellers stood dumbfounded at the love of Allah expressed through the means of Nur-e-Muhammadi by Adam, who had been created only a few minutes earlier) ...” (Qur’an 2: 33).

11. Thus Allah proved to the spiritual forces, who were in existence for even millions of years, that their vast knowledge and combined experience was so insignificant that they could not match the same with the few minutes of Adam’s existence!

“... He (Allah) said: Did I not tell you that I know the secrets of the heaven and the earth? ...” (Qur’an 2: 33).

12. When Allah had proved to all concerned that His decision to appoint Adam His Khalifa or Viceroy was justified fully and that man was indeed a far superior creation than even the spiritual dwellers of the universe, He issued the following command:

“And then We (Allah) said unto (all the) spiritual dwellers: prostrate yourselves (the Arabic word Sajada used here in the Qur’an which has been translated as “Prostrate yourselves” means to bow down in salutation and to pay respect and honour—see Arabic English Lexicon by Edward William Lane. The Urdu word

“Kadam Bosi” carries similar dictionary meaning as the Arabic word “Sajada”. It is commonly used to denote the love, respect and honour that one pays to his elders *e.g.* father, mother, grandparents, teachers, spiritual guide, religious personages *etc.*, by falling at their feet and kissing them. Therefore the Arabic word “Sajada” used in the Qur’an does not by any stretch of the imagination mean to worship Adam as Allah, the Creator of the Universe, as wrongly interpreted by Iblis because of which he was condemned into Satan as, will be seen hereafter) before (the Nur-e-Muhammadi in the forehead of) Adam (who and whose children *i.e.* the various prophets and saints will be My Khalifas or Viceroy), they all (including angels, Jinns *i.e.* Genii and all other spiritual dwellers of the universe) fell prostrate (*i.e.* *did “Sajada” before Adam in an act of paying respect and honour to him i.e. “Kadam Bosi” and not in an act of adoration of Adam as Allah*), save Iblis ...” (Qur’an 2: 34).

13. Iblis thus found himself isolated! He was the only one who had not done “Sajada” or “Kadam Bosi” by bowing his head before Adam because he considered himself a superior being to Adam on the following amongst other grounds:
  - a. His life was much longer than the lives of Adam and his descendants, so he would be able to do more adoration of Allah than what man could do. Therefore he was superior to man on this count alone.
  - b. That man having “Nafs Ammara” would commit sins, whilst the spiritual forces to which Iblis, the Jinn, belonged, made him a superior being to Adam because he had no desire to sin. He had only the immortal soul or “Naf Lawwama” which he had developed and which continuously drew him closer towards his Creator.
  - c. That Iblis had become the elected leader of the spiritual forces in the universe owing to the development of his immortal soul by his many tens of thousands of years of continuous worship, so he was the only person who was fit to be appointed Khalifa or Viceroy of Allah over the

universe.

- d. When Allah appointed Adam as His Khalifa, somebody who was much inferior to himself in every respect *viz*: longevity, abstinence from sin and his continuous worship of Allah, according to Satanic logic, he was obviously filled with jealousy and hatred for the honour given by Allah to Adam, who did not deserve the same.

Iblis therefore wanted to prove by his argumentative logic that he was right in disobeying what he considered to be the wrong and unjustifiable order given by Allah that all the spiritual dwellers of the universe *i.e.* the spiritual world should bow before Adam. He further felt that the spiritual dwellers had committed the sin of “Polytheism” by bowing before Adam. If he did not prove these charges then he stood accused of disobedience to Allah.

He was naturally very scornful towards the angels and the spiritual world and taunted them by saying they had committed sacrilege and Polytheism by bowing their heads before Adam, which according to him amounted to the worshipping of Adam, a created being, as Allah and that bowing in any form and for any purpose whatsoever according to Satanic logic amounted not to honouring someone as a superior being, but amounted to his divine adoration which according to the Divine Laws was reserved for only Allah. Hence Iblis mocked all the angels and followers of Allah’s command that they had committed sin and that he was now the only person who was sinless in the whole of the heavens as he worshipped and bowed his head only to Allah and to no one else. This is very briefly referred to as follows:

“The spiritual dwellers of the universe fell down prostrate, every one.

“Save Iblis, he was scornful (towards the dwellers of heaven) and became one of the disbelievers (in Allah’s command as to how a superior being is to be honoured by doing “Sajada” or paying respect by bowing down)” (Qur’an 38: 74-75) .

14. When Iblis did not do “Sajada” or “Kadam Bosi” *i.e.* bow down before Adam and pay respects to him in accordance with Allah’s command and when he taunted the others who were obedient to the Almighty, he was questioned:-

“He (Allah) asked: O Iblis (this is the original name of Lucifer, the Satan)! What hindereth thee from doing “Sajada” *i.e.* falling prostrate before (for paying respect and honour to) that which I have created with both my hands (*i.e.* With two spiritual forces? ...)” (Qur’an 38: 76).

15. Iblis replied:

“He (Iblis) said: I am better than him (*i.e.* Adam because I have already put in many tens of thousands of years of service in adoring and worshipping You my Lord. In any case my life is much longer than man’s so I am able to do more service of adoration of You than he. Further, man will be the source of bloodshed and mischief on Earth. Whilst I serve Thee only and hymn Thy praise and sanctify Thee. Therefore I adore Thee and Thee alone and I will not bow my head before anyone but Thee my Lord. I therefore refuse to bow before a mortal like Adam). Thou created me of (a material free from “Nafs Ammara” hence free from desire of sin *i.e.*) fire, whilst him Thou didst create out of (dirty, black, altered) clay (which is the base material of Nafs Ammara or the animal spirit)” (Qur’an 38: 77):

“...Iblis said: Shall I do “Sajada” *i.e.* fall prostrate before that, which Thou hast created of (dirty, black, altered) clay (or Thee, the Creator of the entire Universe, which is correct and better Oh! My Lord)?” (Qur’an 17: 61).

16. Allah is “All Merciful” and “Oft Forgiving”. He therefore hates to condemn and punish any of His creations. But when they commit a wrong, and persist in doing so, and thereafter they are not sorry nor penitent, rather on the other hand they try to justify their wrongs as right then only does the punishment of Allah come upon such mischief-makers.

When Allah found that Iblis was not amenable to reason and that he persisted in calling Allah's law wrong and wicked, contending "Sajada" to be divine worship of Adam therefore all the obedient spiritual dwellers of the universe were sinners and that he, Iblis, the disobedient, was the only sinless being, then out of disgust Allah had no option left in these circumstances but to condemn Iblis into Satan Which He most reluctantly did.

"He (Allah) said: Then go down hence. It is not for thee to show to pride here (and advise Me on what I, your Lord should do and what is right or wrong in My order to do "Sajada" *i.e.* to prostrate before my beloved Nur-e-Muhammadi in the forehead of Adam for the purpose of honouring and paying respects and saluting him whom I as Allah want to be honoured), so go forth. Lo! thou art of those degraded" (Qur'an 7: 13).

17. Iblis, when he was outcasted, asked:

"He (Iblis) said: My Lord! give me life till the day when they (mankind) are raised (from the dead as a reward and in consideration of the many tens of thousands of years of adoration I have already done of You)" (Qur'an 7: 14).

18. Allah granted Satan's request for life till the destruction of mankind on this earth:

"He (Allah) said: Lo! thou art of those (who) have been granted life (until the day when mankind are destroyed on this earth)" (Qur'an 7: 15).

19. There upon Iblis vowed that he would get mankind to commit the same sin for which he had been ostracized:

"He (Iblis) said: Now, because Thou hast sent me astray, verily I shall lurk in ambush for them (whilst they are following) on Thy Right Path (by inducing them to commit the same crime for which I have been condemned *i.e.* refusal to do Sajada)" (Qur'an 7: 16).

20. Allah warned that those who follow Satan's footsteps would all be condemned:

“He (Allah) said: The truth is and the truth I speak.

“That I shall fill hell with thee together with such of them as follow thee” (Qur’an 38: 85-86).

Now what was the crime for which Iblis has been condemned from the position of leader of the spiritual dwellers of the universe to Satan the degraded in spite of his continuous adoration of Allah for many tens of thousands of years and which he is still continuing to perform even after being damned?

Satan was guilty of only one fault—*his refusal to do “Sajada” i.e. to bow before and pay respects to anybody but Allah*. Since Iblis was the elected leader of the spiritual forces only because of the amount of prayers performed by him, and as spiritual forces have no desire to commit sins, he naturally considered himself not only the most holy person in creation, after Allah of course, but also one who could do no wrong. Hence he thought he was the highest and most perfect” amongst all the created beings. Iblis contends: *if there is no creation better than himself save and except Allah (the Creator), then there cannot be any question of his doing “Sajada” or prostrating himself before anybody even for the purpose of saluting and paying respects to somebody who according to the logic of Satan was inferior to him*. Therefore, his refusal to recognise the superiority of Nur-e-Muhammadi or Logos in the forehead of Adam. Hence his refusal to bow before Adam and pay respects that any Khalifa, or Viceroy of Allah is entitled to, from a lower class of creation—a creation with only one “Nafs” i.e. the spiritual forces of the universe.

As against that man had two “Nafs” as mentioned earlier (Chapter 17: B-4). Therefore mankind is indeed a much superior creation, in spite of Satan’s refusal to recognise this basic fact. Further, as read earlier Nur-e-Muhammadi is the first thing created by Allah out of Himself, the entire universe being created out of Nur-e-Muhammadi. Hence Nur-e-Muhammadi is much above all created beings! This includes Iblis also!

Further, Jesus gives us the following information about the incidents that took place at the time of the creation of Adam on pages 89-91, "*Gospel of Barnabas*" translated by Lonsdale & Laura Ragg (1907):

"Jesus answered: 'When God had expelled Satan, and the angel Gabriel had purified the earth whereon Satan spat ...

"God gave His soul to men, while all the holy angels sang: 'Blessed be Thy holy name O God our Lord.'

"Adam, having sprung up upon his feet, saw in the air a writing that shone like the sun, which said: 'There is only one God, and Muhammad is the messenger of God'. Whereupon Adam opened his mouth and said: I thank thee, O Lord my God, that Thou hast deigned to create me; but tell me, I pray Thee, what meaneth the message of these words: 'Muhammad is messenger of God.' Have there been other men before me?"

"Then said God: 'Be thou welcome, O my servant Adam. I tell you that thou art the first man whom I have created. And he whom thou hast seen is thy son (*i.e.* descendant), who shall come into the world many years hence, and *shall be My messenger, for whom I have created all things; who shall give light to the world when he shall come; whose soul was set in a celestial splendour sixty thousand (astronomical) years before I made anything.*'

"Adam besought God, saying: 'Lord, grant me this writing upon the nails of the fingers of my hands.' Then: God gave to the first man upon his thumbs that writing; upon the thumb-nail of the right hand it said: 'There is only one God,' and upon the thumb-nail of the left hand it said: 'Muhammad is messenger of God.' Then with fatherly affection the first man kissed those words, and rubbed (the thumb-nails on) his eyes, and said 'Blessed be that day when thou (Muhammad) shalt come to the world'."

"Seeing the man alone, God said: 'It is not well that he should remain alone,' therefore he made him sleep, and took a rib from near his heart, filling the place with flesh. Of that rib made He Eve, and gave to Adam for his wife. *He set the twain of them as lords of*

*Paradise*, to whom He said: ‘Behold I give unto you every fruit to eat, except the apples and the corn’ whereof He said: ‘Beware that in no wise ye eat these fruits, *for ye shall become unclean, insomuch that I shall not suffer you to remain here, but shall drive you forth, and ye shall suffer great miseries.*”

From the above quotations in the Gospel we are informed by Jesus:

1. That Nur-e-Muhammadi was the first thing created by God and that he was placed in celestial splendour by Allah.
2. That after a lapse of 60,000 astronomical years, Allah started to create other things for the sake of Muhammad.
3. That Muhammad’s coming on earth would be to enlighten the world *i.e.* remove the Dark Ages and ignorance.
4. That the eighth Qalima (Chapter 8: I), was displayed across the heavens in shining letters from before the creation of Adam.
5. That Adam paid respect with fatherly love to Muhammad by kissing his thumb nails and then rubbing them over the eyes just as the devout Muslims still do till today whenever Muhammad’s name is recited in their presence.

One is tempted to ask—Is there any evidence to show that Iblis is still praying continuously day and night to Allah even after his condemnation into Satan? The answer very surprisingly is—Yes!

One day the Prophet Moses asked Allah if there was anybody who was worshipping Allah even more than him. Allah replied that there was such a one who was spending all his time both by day and throughout the night *in the absolute and pure adoration of Allah to the exclusion of all else*. Then Moses asked out of curiosity whether he believed in the Oneness of Allah even more than what he (Moses) did? Allah answered: Yes. Thereupon Moses asked “Can he teach me more about the Oneness of Allah than what I already know?” Allah again answered: Yes. Thereupon Moses asked “Where is this person, who can teach me more than what I know about the *‘Perfect Oneness of Allah’* so that I may see, how he adores his Lord all day and night without any rest?” Allah ordered Moses to go to Iblis and take education from him



on the Absolute Oneness of Allah and see how he was adoring continuously his Creator by day and by night even after his condemnation into Satan. The Prophet Moses according to divine orders met Satan and took from him education on the Perfect Oneness of Allah and also saw how Satan was adoring ceaselessly Allah even after his condemnation into Satan. For further details please refer to verses 41 to 64 of the “qasida” of the world famous Persian Sufi Poet Fariduddin Attar (pages 12/16 published by Intizani Press, Cawnpore).

Thus it will be clear that Satan is a “**FIERCE MONOTHEIST**” *who is following very strictly Allah’s divine Laws but unfortunately according to his own interpretations* which are in certain aspects not only erroneous but also imperfect because they are based upon his hatred for the respect shown by Allah and the spiritual dwellers of the universe to the Khalifa or Viceroy of the Universe *i.e.* Nur-e-Muhammadi and Adam who are the forerunners of all the prophets and saints. He is trying logically to establish that he is right in his “*Fierce Monotheism*”. *Thus Iblis is deceiving many by making them believe that they are logically in the right if they accept his “fierce monotheism”, and that pure “Monotheism” with its system of prophets and saints as intermediaries is not the right way.*

When Satan cannot commit any worldly sins, which are governed solely by our own “Nafs Ammara” the “Mortal Soul” or the “Animal Spirit”, and when he is adoring Allah all day and night then it becomes a baffling mystery as to how Satan can misguide us and *get us to enact the same faults for which he was condemned?* Further, how did he get Adam and Eve sent out from the Garden of Eden? Does he admit that he has committed a sin in this respect at least? Or does he claim that he has acted in a manner which fulfils the Divine Decrees?

## **B. How Did Iblis Tear off the Heavenly Bliss of Innocence of Adam and Eve?**

We all fully well know that it was Iblis, who was responsible for Adam and Eve losing their heavenly bliss of innocence. If Satan took all precautions not to sin himself, how could he have caused Adam and Eve to sin? This problem raises the following intriguing questions:

1. What was the loss caused to Adam and Eve?
2. What was this forbidden fruit—was it really an apple or was it something else?
3. What were the consequences arising out of what Adam and Eve did?
  1. The loss caused to Adam and Eve by Iblis, according to the Holy Bible was the heavenly bliss of ignorance:

“And they were both naked; the man and his wife, and were not aware of their nakedness, and were not ashamed” (Genesis 2: 25).

2. What was this forbidden fruit, the so-called apple of their eyes?—according to the Holy Bible:

“And Adam knew Eve his wife (for the first time when they embraced one another. Uptil then they had not touched one another, hence they did not know about the nakedness of the other or the physical and other attractions it offers to the other): and she conceived (as a result of their first knowledge of one another) and bare Cain, and said (out of joy), I have gotten a man from the Lord” (Genesis 4: 1).

Hence it will be apparent that the forbidden fruit they had, *viz: the apple of their eyes* was their first child who was named Cain. This child or *apple of their eyes* being born as a consequence of the act that Iblis was supposed to have induced them to perpetrate.

That Cain was definitely the forbidden fruit, which Adam and Eve had out of what Satan induced them to do, is further shown from the following passages in the Holy Bible:

“And after the passage of time (of several years when Cain grew up), Cain broke the fruits (Of the trees that grew) on the ground and brought them as an offering unto the Lord.

“But unto Cain and his offerings, He (Allah) had not respect. And Cain was very wroth, and his countenance fell” (Genesis 4: 3 and 5.)

Further, the historical deed of Cain killing his one and only brother Abel again confirms that Cain was that forbidden fruit, *the apple of their eyes that Adam and Eve had, out of their disobedience which robbed them of their bliss of ignorance*, and was to be the cause of much pain to them when he would murder their second child.

The Bible has recorded this fact as follows:

“And Cain talked with Abel his brother: and it came to pass, when they were in the field, that Cain rose up against Abel his brother, and slew him” (Genesis 4: 8).

3. What were the consequences Adam and Eve suffered as a result of the prohibited act according to the Holy Bible:

“And the eyes of them both were opened (after they had touched one another resulting in sexual intercourse), and they (now) knew that they were naked; so they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons” (Genesis 3: 7).

According to the Ishmaelites' tradition, Adam and Eve enjoyed something which was forbidden. That forbidden thing looked like a grain of wheat. As soon as they had enjoyed it, they became aware of their nakedness. The mouth of the passage through which a child is seeded by a man into a woman's body has the outward appearance of a grain of wheat. Hence it was the seeding of Cain through Adam into the womb of Eve that robbed them of their robe of innocence and made them aware of the nakedness of each other.

According to these traditions, they also stitched leaves of the fig tree to cover up those parts of their naked body which afforded attraction to the other.

Thus both the Biblical and Islamic interpretations of this incident are identical.

This is the personal observation of the author. You take any child irrespective of his or her sex and you will notice that a look of innocence will sparkle from their eyes. They are not unduly disturbed when they come across the nakedness of the other sex. They still are in the very same state of the bliss of ignorance which was enjoyed by Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden!

### **C. The act of temptation by Iblis**

Ishmaelite or Islamic traditions tell us that Iblis for the purpose of inducing Adam and Eve to commit a disobedience of Allah's command sat in the mouth of a snake and approached Adam and tempted him by saying that if he touched Eve, he would have knowledge of something very enjoyable, which would create for him children like himself and Eve and thus give a continuity of their generations, for an indefinite period which would be long after they would have been dead and gone. Adam refused to be tempted.

Then Iblis, still in the mouth of the snake, approached Eve with the same proposal. Eve was tempted and consulted Adam but he refused.

Thereupon Iblis not only suggested to Eve but on her agreement he also explained to her how to prepare an intoxicating drink for Adam. This drink she gave to the unsuspecting Adam. When he drank it, he was so intoxicated that he was not aware of what Eve did with him until they had already had their first intercourse. The results were:

- a. Eve became pregnant with Cain in her womb.
- b. Both of them became aware of their nakedness, *i.e.* the attraction and enjoyment the various parts of their body afforded to the other of them after their first act of touching one another.
- c. If they were to behave normally towards each other, then they

must cover certain parts of their body so as to hide it from the sight of the other of them.

- d. So they took fig leaves and covered their bodies with the same
- e. Eve thus became the mother of the human race.

The Holy Bible also confirms these facts:

“Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which the LORD GOD had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?

“And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden:

“But the tree (*of life*—Genesis 3: 22 and 24) which is (*i.e.* roams about) in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat (*i.e.* enjoy) of it, *Neither Shall Ye Touch It Lest You* (*i.e.* your garb of innocence) Die (by your becoming aware of one another’s nakedness).

“And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die (but on the contrary you will create children thus making the human race carry on from generation to generation for an indefinite period even long after your own deaths).

“For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened (to a new knowledge and experience), and ye shall be as gods (*i.e.* able to reproduce a creation like yourselves—your own children), knowing good and evil (*i.e.* you will come to know what is the difference between good *i.e.* purity and innocence as against evil *i.e.* aware of your nakedness).”

“And when the woman saw that the tree (of life—Genesis 3: 22 and 24) was good for ... (her satisfaction) and that it was pleasant to her eyes, and a tree (*i.e.* thing) to be desired to make one wise, she did eat (*i.e.* enjoyed the joy thereof with her husband) and gave also unto her husband with her; ...

“And (as soon as they had committed the act upon one another) the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves

aprons (as without it they could no longer behave normally towards the other without being attracted by the nakedness of the other)” (Genesis 3: 1-7).

In “*Sexology*” November, 1953 issue on page 234 under the heading of “Sex and the Serpent” by Wilfred D. Hambly, D. Sc., Curator of African Ethnology (retired), Chicago Natural History Museum, one reads:

“The serpent has been the symbol of Sexual passion for thousands of years. The Christian Bishop’s staff was originally a rod with a serpent twined round it. *Identified in the public mind as the prime cause of expulsion from the Garden of Eden*, the serpent has represented sexual forces throughout the intervening millennia (*i.e.* for the past several thousands of years).

“Historically, the serpent is found as a sexual symbol among the Greeks and Romans, and as an object of worship in ancient Egypt. Archeological studies reveal the sexological significance ascribed to snakes by both North and South American Indian tribes. Various religious faiths stigmatise snakes as the beginning of all transgression. Among African natives serpents have many weird meanings. If certain species of snakes appear in a hut, the husband believes this indicates that his wife has conceived”.

Ongoing through this article it can be accepted that these traditions all over the world have their origin in the fact that what the snake induced Adam and Eve to do, had made Eve pregnant and she thus became the mother of the human race.

On page 236 of *ibid* is the following confirmatory reference:

“The Ashanti people of West Africa believed that the python has an influence on human fecundity (productiveness) and this idea they express in a legend. Originally there were two pairs of men and two pairs of women (instead of the common belief that there was originally only Adam and Eve *i.e.* only one couple). All the women were barren (instead of the rest of the world’s belief that Eve was barren in the Garden of Eden) until a python was sent by the sky god Qnyame (*i.e.* Satan) to inhabit a river (in the Garden of Eden).

The python bade the men and women (*i.e.* Adam and Eve) to stand face to face on the banks of the river while he sprayed them with water. The women conceived and gave their children”.

The Holy Bible also confirms what the result of this incident was:

“And Adam called his wife’s name: Eve; because she was (as a result of this temptation of the serpent becoming) the mother of all living (human beings)” (Genesis 3: 20).

#### **D. The Consequences**

According to Ishmaelite or Islamic traditions Allah was fully aware that Satan would tempt Adam and Eve and get their garb of innocence torn off. So he had warned them repeatedly as follows:-

“O mankind! Eat of that which is *lawful and wholesome* (*i.e.* good for you) in the earth and follow not the footsteps of the devil. Lo! he is an open enemy for you” (Qur’an 2: 168).

When Eve had succumbed to the temptation and got pregnant, there remained no longer any reason for Allah to allow them to continue their lives in the Garden of Eden with all its comforts. From then on they would have to lead the ordinary lives of human beings on earth as was ordained by Allah from before *i.e.* upon attaining maturity.

After they had committed the act both realised that certain parts of their body offered an irresistible attraction to the other. Therefore if they were to behave normally then they must cover up those parts of their body that tempted the other. They found that leaves of the fig tree were suitable for this purpose. So they used them.

When they had covered themselves with fig leaves, Allah who had, been watching the whole drama, called out to Adam. Where are you and why are you not in the open; why are you hiding yourself amongst the bushes? (Genesis 3: 8 and 9).

Adam replied that he was afraid because he was naked so he hid himself (Genesis 3:10).

Allah asked: Who told you that you are naked? Have you tasted the forbidden tree of (production of human) life, which I had ordered you not to touch? (Genesis 3: 11).

Adam replied that it was the fault of the woman, whom God had created out of him.

It was Eve who had made him taste it (whilst he was intoxicated) (Genesis 3: 12).

Then Allah asked Eve and she replied that it was the serpent who had tempted and induced her (Genesis 3: 13).

Allah then asked the serpent why it had done so. The latter replied that it was Iblis who had sat in his mouth and had spoken from his mouth and had tried in vain to entice Adam but had succeeded in tempting Eve.

Iblis was the leader of the spiritual dwellers because of his many tens of thousands of years of continuous prayers. He naturally expected Allah to appoint him “Khalifat-ullah” or Viceroy of Allah over the Universe. He was filled simply with hatred and jealousy for Adam, when the latter was appointed “Khalifat-ullah” against which he protested vehemently as read earlier. He put up so many arguments refusing to bow before Adam pointing out that he was better than Adam in every way. The result was he became Satan. This caused him to decide upon taking revenge upon mankind. Accordingly he swore before Allah that he would misguide mankind into committing the same faults for which he was condemned. To achieve it he had to get mankind to multiply as otherwise he was not likely to succeed, because Adam was very conscious of his obligations and duties.

The questions of Allah and the replies of Iblis have been dealt with herebefore.

Then Allah informed Adam that his life of bliss and sweet contentment had ended and from now on he would have to win his bread out of the sweat of his brow (Genesis 3: 19). Accordingly he was



thrown out of the Garden onto a place which is believed to be known as “Adam’s Peak” in Ceylon.

Eve was informed that she had to bear the pangs of childbirth (as she was pregnant *i.e.* with Cain) and she was to spend her life under and in obedience to her husband. She, was thrown to a place called Jeddah, which in Arabic means the place of our grand-parents. Eve’s grave is still preserved there!

Allah took away the legs of the serpent and said that from now on it would crawl upon its belly (Genesis 3: 14) and there would be a permanent enmity between mankind and the serpent’s generations (Genesis 3: 15). As soon as man saw a snake he would try to kill it, whilst the snake would try to bite and destroy man.

Iblis thus got his first victory over Adam by getting him intoxicated when Eve committed the act by which she became pregnant. This was the only manner in which Satan could get Adam involved into something which was prohibited till then. The logical question arises that in these circumstances can Allah punish Adam for a fault which he did not intentionally or willingly commit? Can Adam be called a sinner when he was not even conscious of the deed until it had already been committed? Moreover Iblis was allowed to operate freely and entice Adam. Satan having failed, he tempted Eve and succeeded. Can Allah punish Adam for such a fault or lapse? Can such an incident be called the sin, which is upon all human beings from the moment they are born? Or is it merely an act by which every husband has to have intercourse with his wife to get children?—Something which is sanctified by marriage and considered good and holy according to all religious books including the Holy Bible.

Adam was sorry for what had happened and prayed for forgiveness. *It was not granted as long as Adam prayed directly to Allah.* Thereupon Adam prayed for forgiveness for the sake of that beloved of Allah, whose name is with Allah’s name in the heavens. *Immediately, this reference was made,* Allah not only forgave Adam but he reunited

Adam with Eve at Mount “Rahmat” or “Blessing” on the plains of Arafaat (or meeting place) as read earlier in Chapter 7: H, but Allah also blessed them for the sake of His beloved and gave them domain over the whole earth and all that is therein and now also permitted them to multiply and occupy it (Genesis 1: 28-30).

What was the name of this beloved of Allah is also known. It is Muhammad according to even the current Hebrew Texts of the Old Testament reproduced in Chapter 17: C-6 and the teachings of Jesus (Chapter 13: B, C and D).

The effect of this incident was the commencement of the present human race. But instead of leading a sheltered life with everything found for Adam and Eve in the sanctuary of the Garden of Eden, mankind now had to fend for itself and labour to make a living. This is therefore nothing but the normal course of things which were to come about when Adam and Eve would have become mature enough to fend for themselves. That maturity in this case came upon them when they realised their capabilities to reproduce children or in the language of the Holy Bible, when they became aware of their nakedness!

When Allah asked Iblis why he had tempted Eve, he replied:

“O Lord of all creation, was it not Your intention that mankind should multiply and there should be many amongst them to honour You? As long as Adam remained away from Eve how could she produce children? Therefore I have merely helped in the fulfilment of Your Divine intentions by teaching them how to produce children. As such I have got them to do only that which is a fulfilment of Thy Divine plan. Surely there cannot be any objection to such a good and noble deed that I have got done through Eve by inducing her to become pregnant through Adam? Have I not thus helped Eve to become the mother of mankind? Thus fulfilling Your Divine intentions? This is certainly not a sin but a good deed”.

It is the common practice that parents look after their children and try to give them all possible comforts, as long as they are innocent and defenceless. Everything is found for them as long as they are dependent

children. But when they mature, they are required to fend for themselves. That exactly was also to be the case with Adam and Eve at some stage or another. Allah gave them all comforts and ease in the Garden of Eden. This state of bliss was to continue until they matured fully and were able to fend for themselves or until they would disobey and touch one another. Thus it appears as if Satan succeeded in getting Adam and Eve out of the sanctuary of the Garden of Eden, before they had matured fully in the hope that it would give him a better opportunity of trapping mankind into his way of thinking and getting them to commit the very same acts for which he was degraded into Satan.

When Adam and Eve were sent out of the Garden of Eden, Allah clothed them in skin (Genesis 3: 21). When Adam prayed for forgiveness in the name of Allah's beloved He not only forgave them but He also blessed them very profusely and made them masters of the earth. Adam's reference to His beloved pleased Allah so much that in short He gave them again a "mini-paradise". He made man not only the master of this planet, but He also made all other creations in it for service to man. Thus Allah has shown that due to "Nur-e-Muhammadi", the "Spirit of Truth" being placed in the forehead of Adam, the entire creation of this earth was made over to mankind for their benefit. Jesus has confirmed this as follows (page 97 of *Gospel of Barnabas*):

"Then said God: "Depart, cursed one from My presence!"

"Then Satan Departed; whereupon God said to Adam (and) Eve, who were both weeping: "Go ye forth from paradise, and do penance, and let not your hope fail, for I will send your son in such wise that your seed shall lift the dominion of Satan from off the human race: for he who shall come as My messenger (*i.e.* prophet of God), to him will I give all things."

"God hid Himself and the angel Michael drove them forth from paradise (of The Garden of Eden). Whereupon Adam, turning round him, saw written above the gate, 'There is only one God and

Muhammad is The messenger of God.’ Whereupon, weeping, he said: ‘May it be pleasing to God, oh my son (*i.e.* descendant Muhammad the Messenger of God), that thou come quickly (to our assistance) and draw us out of misery.’

“And thus,” said Jesus, “Sinned Satan ...

The Torah also confirms these facts as under:

“And God blessed them, and said unto them. Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have domain over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.

“And God said: Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of the earth, and every tree, in which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat.

“And to every beast of the earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to everything that creepeth upon the earth, wherein there is life, I have given every herb for meat: and it was so” (Genesis 1: 28-30).

When Allah blessed Adam and Eve and asked them to multiply and occupy the earth, Satan got the chance to make a claim that he had done the right thing in inducing Eve to get herself made the mother of the human race through Adam and that it was in accordance with the Divine decree that Adam and Eve should have children, hence he had not got Adam and Eve to commit any sin at all in the Garden of Eden, but *it was something which was natural, right and according to the Divine intentions of Allah!*

From all the arguments put up by Satan it becomes more than clear that he is taking as his basis the Divine Laws. Then he is interpreting same according to his logic, which is defective, and is contending that he is sinless and Allah has unjustly made a scapegoat of him by condemning him into Satan without any rhyme or reason.

In this manner he is convincing logically the innocent and unsuspecting masses to follow the Divine Laws argumentatively according to his interpretation, of “Fierce Monotheism”. Thus large

sections of mankind, believing in “Monotheism” are unwittingly trapped into “Fierce Monotheism” believing that they are doing the right thing but are in fact unknowingly committing the very same deeds for which Satan was demoted from the highest position in the spiritual world to the lowest in creation.

## E. SATANISM—VS— SHARIAT

Therefore it becomes absolutely essential to distinguish very clearly the fine differences between the interpretations of the Monotheistic Divine Laws of Shariat and Satanism or “Fierce Monotheism”, if we are to save ourselves from Satan’s snares of argumentative logic. These are being displayed subject-wise hereafter:-

### 1. How Allah’s Chosen Have to be Honoured

#### *Shariat or Monotheism*

“(Say: O Allah! Owner of Sovereignty! Thou givest sovereignty unto whom Thou wilt and Thou withdrawest sovereignty from whom Thou wilt. Thou exaltest whom Thou wilt and Thou abaseth whom Thou wilt. In Thy hand is the good, Lo! Thou art able to do all things (according to Thy sweet will and pleasure)” (Qur’an 3: 26).

From the above verse of the Qur’an it is clear that Allah reserves to Himself the absolute right to honour whomsoever it pleases Him and nobody has any

#### *Satanism or Fierce Monotheism*

“Allah! There is no God save Him, the Alive, the Eternal. Neither slumber nor sleep overtaketh Him. Unto Him belongeth whatsoever is in the heaven and whatsoever is in the earth... His throne includeth the heavens and the earth, and He is never weary of preserving them. He is The Sublime, The Tremendous” (Qur’an 2: 255).

Satan bases his teachings of “Fierce Monotheism” upon this verse of the Qur’an and contends intellectually:

There is none, worthy of

authority to question the wisdom of Allah's decision.

When Adam was created and his superior qualities over the combined intelligence of the spiritual universe were established through the assistance of Nur-e-Muhammadi, then Allah ordered the spiritual dwellers of the Heavens to honour Adam and pay their respect by prostrating themselves before him or doing "Kadam Bosi" to him or in Arabic "Sajada," thus setting the example in the Qur'an itself and showing the particular manner in which Allah desires those whom He chooses to be honoured. Hence the Qur'an teaches us the precise manner in which mankind is obliged to honour those chosen by Allah by prostrating themselves or doing "Kadam Bosi" *i.e.* "Sajada" if he is a follower of the Qur'an.

He who disbelieves in this system laid down in the Qur'an of prostrating out of love and respect before the chosen of Allah as polytheism (in Arabic "Sheirk") Allah has called such, even where he was Iblis, the leader of the spiritual dwellers of

divine worship except Allah. All others are created beings. Hence they do not deserve any special reverence or honour. Therefore any and all respect and honour is reserved for Allah only.

Satan contends that in the light of the above quoted Divine Law he had no option left but to ignore Allah's command to prostrate himself before Adam as it was against the above law hence his refusal to bow before and pay respect to those chosen by Allah *viz:* Nur-e-Muhammadi in the forehead of Adam *i.e.* Allah's Khalifa (Viceroy) *e.g.* the Prophets and Saints that would come from amongst the children of Adam.

In reality, this was out of his hatred for mankind because they were given the position of honour, which he expected should be given to him because he was the all-perfect elected leader of the spiritual "sin-free" universe. Hence he considers he was the only one entitled to the distinction of being raised to the status of Viceroy over the universe instead of mankind. Satan thus does not recognise

the universe, as Satan.

This was also the teachings of Holy Prophet Muhammad. During his life many people used to fall at his feet out of respect and kiss them. This is the specific manner in which Muhammad has also given the examples for his followers *i.e.* the Muslims, to honour their elders—father, mother, spiritual guides or religious teachers and saintly persons, will be evident from the numerous Hadiths and examples quoted of not only Muslims falling at the feet of their elders but even of Jews who used to fall at the feet of Muhammad out of reverence for him (pages 74-76 Vol. 1, *Tafsir Raufi*, published 1293 A.H. or 1876 A.D.).

This is further supported by the undermentioned Divine Orders:

“O ye who believe! Obey Allah and obey the messenger otherwise you render all your good actions useless” (Qur’an 47: 33).

“That ye (mankind) may believe in Allah and His messenger, and may honour

that Allah had the right to appoint anyone He likes to a position of honour and respect but that it should be decided only by the merit of the amount of adoration put in by the recipient of the honour.

Therefore Satan out of jealousy and hatred also does not recognise that a high standard of adoration of Allah is at all important. This is because at the very moment of creation of Adam by putting Nur-e-Muhammadi into him Allah had shown that where the millions of years of experience of the spiritual world had failed, there Adam, a few minutes old, had succeeded in reciting the 101 glorious names describing the powerful wonders and attributes of Allah (Chapter 17: B-3, 4 and 4b). Thus Allah proved before all that the few minutes of worship of Allah done by Adam, through the guidance of Nur-e-Muhammadi, was far greater and of a higher calibre than the millions of years of adoration already put in by the spiritual universe. Hence Adam and the prophets and saints that would

Them both and may revere  
 Them both and may glorify  
 Them both at early dawn and at  
 the close of day” (Qur’an 48: 9).

Thus it will be clear that no distinction is made in these orders between Allah and Muhammad as far as obedience, honour, respect and glorification of Them are concerned! The only distinction being that Allah is to be worshipped whilst His Messengers and His saints are to be honoured, revered, glorified and obeyed.

The above is the general rule applicable to all prophets, saints and spiritual guides but as far as Muhammad is concerned a truly unique Divine order has been conferred in the Qur’an. The whole universe honours and pays respect to Allah. The only known exception is in the case of Muhammad, where Allah Himself not only gives His respect and honour to Muhammad but he also orders the entire universe including the spiritual forces and all followers of Allah’s orders that prayers for peace and respectful salutation have to be rendered to

come from his descendants would be far superior and above those, who followed merely rules and prayed all day long!

Iblis, who had become the leader of all the spiritual dwellers of the heavens, even above all the Angels, because of his many tens of thousands of years of uninterrupted adoration of Allah, thus became the Satan in the flash of a second for having shown only one single disrespect to Nur-e-Muhammadi, by refusing to prostrate himself before anybody but his creator, Allah Himself. Indeed this does show

what a high position Nur-e-Muhammadi holds in the respect of Allah. It is small wonder that Allah has warned in Deuteronomy 18: 18 and 19 and Acts 3: 23 that those who will not pay heed to the promised Prophet Muhammad will be eventually destroyed by Allah from amongst the people of the earth in the great battle of Armageddon (Chapter 13: B, C, and D and Chapter 29: C- 7a to h), that is the time which is now fast approaching us. Therefore



Muhammad! This most unique Qur'anic Divine Order reads:

“Lo! Allah and His angels send ‘Salluna’ (*i.e.* prayers of glorification) on the Prophet (Muhammad). Ye who believe! also send ‘Sallu’ (*i.e.* prayers of glorification) on him and offer ‘Sallemu’ (*i.e.* Peace of Allah and Salutation) to him in a worthy manner (*i.e.* in a respectful manner preferably whilst standing)” (Qur’an 33: 56).

Thus anybody refusing such honour to Muhammad as ordered by Allah in this Qur’anic verse becomes “*Ipso facto*” a follower of Iblis the disobedient!

It may be noted here that this is the one and only Divine Order to be found in any book in which Allah is rendering prayers of glorification, peace and honour to anybody!

The unique position of honour that only Muhammad holds before Allah is even confirmed by the earlier prophets. A relevant example is cited hereafter in Chapter 20: E-12.

the following problems arise before each one of us *viz*:

- a. Do we want to be amongst those who would survive Armageddon?

—or—

- b. Are we anxious to be with those who will surely be destroyed at the Battle of Armageddon?

It is for each individual to decide for one-self, which of the two groups he or she is going to be with! Those who are mocked and ridiculed because they surrender themselves to the will of Allah, or those who follow their own lust, thinking themselves to be very clever and thus spend their lives making their own rules according to their own sweet will!

## 2. Differences between prostration to honour and divine worship

### *Shariat or Monotheism*

When a Muslim bows or prostrates to do the divine worship of Allah, he has to comply with the following five obligatory conditions *viz*:

- 1) To be pure and clean and with ablution.
- 2) Intention to worship the Creator.
- 3) The recitation of the words: “Allah Hu Akbar” (*i.e.* Allah is the Greatest) when from a standing or sitting position to a bowing down position.
- 4) To place the forehead and tip of the nose and the open palm of both hands; the knees and toes on the ground.
- 5) Then to recite at least three times “Soobhana Rabbiyal Alaa” (*i.e.* Glory be to my Lord the Highest).

If any one of these obligatory requirements are not complied with fully and completely then the entire act of Divine Worship becomes null and void. It will not be a worship

### *Satanism or Fierce Monotheism*

Satanism however holds the view that to bow one’s head before anybody but Allah tantamount to worshipping that person or thing as divine, hence the unpardonable sin of polytheism has been committed by the doer, even where he had no intentions to worship when bowing down and even if he did not comply with any of the five obligatory conditions required under Shariat, without which no divine worship could ever take place.

It is on this basis that Iblis and his followers taunt and mock anybody bowing before and/or paying respect to Nur-e-Muhammadi, which was not only in the forehead of Adam, but also in the foreheads of his descendants from whom prophets and saints have been born, just as he taunted and made fun of the spiritual dwellers in the universe, when in compliance with Allah’s orders they prostrate before Adam in salutation, and thereby

of any kind by any stretch of the imagination.

The following quotations from the Qur'an are very informative:

"With truth have We (Allah) sent it (Qur'an) down, and with truth had it (Qur'an) descended. And We (Allah) have sent thee (O Muhammad) as naught else save as a bearer of good tidings and a warner.

"And (it is) a Qur'an that We (Allah) have divided,' that thou (O Muhammad) mayest recite it unto mankind at intervals (as and when occasion arises); and We (Allah) have revealed it by (a series of) revelations.

"Say: Believe therein or believe not, lo! those who were given knowledge before (*i.e.* the Jews and the followers of Jesus) about it (*i.e.* revelation of the Qur'an), when it is read unto them (they) fall down prostrate on their faces (before thee O Muhammad) adoring,

"Saying: 'Glory to our Lord! Verily the promise of our Lord

honoured him respectfully as the "Khalifa" or Viceroy of Allah.

It is often suggested by the followers of Fierce Montheism that one commits the unpardonable sin of polytheism of "Shirik" even if one bends to tie one's shoelace according to these absurd satanic contentions!

When you ask, who has been worshipped when one bends to tie one's shoelace, their ridiculous explanation will be, it does not matter "*who*", *so long as you have bent your head, you have already sinned!*

Such an argument is naturally nothing but nonsense! What is forbidden is the divine adoration of Allah to be done to anyone but Allah and to do which five obligatory conditions are the '*Sine qua non*'.

Bowing to kiss the feet of the Prophet or to kiss the feet of parents or spiritual guides or teachers or other saintly persons is only a method of showing our love and respect for our elders. There is no question of divine adoration in such acts. To call such act Polytheism or "Sheirk"

must be fulfilled.

“They (the Jews and the followers of Jesus) fall down on their faces (before thee O Muhammad), weeping, and it increaseth humility in them” (Qur’an 17: 105-109).

This passage of the Qur’an records merely a common everyday feature during the last few years of Muhammad’s life, for not only Muslims but even Jews as also the followers of Jesus, when they heard the Qur’an being recited used to get moved. Consequently out of respect they used to fall weeping upon the feet of Muhammad to pay their respects humbly and not as an act of Divine Worship which is reserved only for Allah.

Accordingly when Muslims used to bow before Muhammad to kiss his feet, it was not considered “Polytheism” because it was not with any intention to ‘worship Muhammad but only out of love and respect for him. Similarly Muhammad has encouraged the reverence of parents, spiritual guides, teachers and other holy saintly personages, including

is nothing but an imitation of the stand taken by Iblis, which resulted in his fall from the high position of the elected leader of the spiritual dwellers of the universe into Satan.

The Qur’an is very clear on this point and repeatedly warns:

“And follow not the footsteps of the Satan. Lo! he is an open enemy for you” (Qur’an 2: 168 and 6: 143).

Therefore anybody refusing to prostrate before his elders out of love and respect is nothing but a pure and simple follower of Satan, the accursed.

Immediately one follows Satan’s “Fierce

Monotheism” then all his continuous adorations throughout the day and night also will receive the same treatment from Allah as Satan’s continuous worship did *viz*:

### **It will be rejected!**

Allah has warned in Qur’an 1: 7 that Muslims are not to follow the path of those who incur Allah’s anger, despite their continuous day and night

visiting shrines of saints, by falling on their feet and kissing them out of love, respect and as a salutation (pages 74-76, Vol. 1, *Tafsir Raufi*). Those who refuse to honour their elders in this manner as taught by the Qur'an are therefore disciples of Satan, the cursed.

prayers to only Allah by refusing to pay respects to His chosen Khalifas *i.e.* the prophets and saints!

### 3. Allah's absolute authority to forgive or punish

#### *Shariat or Monotheism*

"If the Allah took mankind to task by that which they deserve, He would not leave a single leaving creature on the surface of the earth: but He reprieves them unto an appointed term, and when their term cometh—then verily (they will know that) Allah is ever seer over His slaves" (Qur'an 35: 45)

When this verse was announced, someone asked Muhammad, if this rule applied also to him. The Prophet replied that he too would go to heaven by Allah's grace, and not by his good deeds alone as declared repeatedly in the Qur'an *i.e.*:

"... But Allah chooseth for

#### *Satanism or Fierce Monotheism*

"... whoever believeth in Allah and the Last Day (*i.e.* day of Judgment) and doeth right surely their rewards is with their Lord, and there shall no fear come upon them nor shall they grieve" (Qur'an 2: 62).

Based upon this Divine decree Satan contends that to attain heaven and eternal success, one has to do the following three things:

1. To believe in the absolute oneness of Allah.
2. To pray continuously to Allah which is the best of all good deeds.
3. To admit that on the Day of Judgment you have to give an

His mercy whom He wills, and Allah is of infinite Bounty”.

“... But those who keep their duty to Allah will be above them (disbelievers) on the Day of Resurrection. Allah giveth without stint to whom He wills” (Qur’an 2: 105, 212).

“He (Allah) punisheth whom He wills and showeth mercy unto whom He wills, and unto Him ye will be returned.

“Ye cannot escape (from Allah) in the earth or in the sky, and against Allah there is for you no friend nor helper” (Qur’an 29: 21-22).

“Unto Allah (belongeth) whatsoever is in the earth; and whether you make it known what is in your minds or hide it, Allah will bring you to count for it. He will forgive whom He wills and He will punish whom He wills. Allah is able to do all things” (Qur’an 2: 284).

account of the good right deeds done and if they are more than one’s bad deeds, then one is sure to go to heaven and get eternal rewards.

Hence Satan and his followers argue that the time spent in the worship must be the only deciding factor to attain Allah’s forgiveness and rewards. If any man prays to his Creator as much as any Prophet has done then according to Iblis they are both logically on the same level of perfection and deserve equal honour and reward! If a person prays more than what a prophet of Allah has done, then according to Satanic logic the said performer of prayers is even superior to the prophet of Allah! By this logic Iblis claims that since he has put in more service of Allah over the past many tens of thousands of years than any one or all the Prophets put together he is therefore far superior to all the Prophets of Allah put together! Because he has done more adoration of Allah than anybody else, he is therefore entitled to heaven and

the sight of Allah, before any of the prophets or saints are gifted with the reward of Allah's Countenance and His Peace. (See Chapter 21: D-5 for what is heaven and Chapter 21: I for Allah's Peace).

Satan and his followers therefore concentrate upon praying all the time and take pride upon the same as their keys to heaven. When they have the keys of heaven in their hands, then what is the necessity for the grace of Allah or the need to have any intermediaries, be they prophets or saints?

This pride has been the cause of the downfall of Iblis from the leader of the heavens into Satan the cursed!

Anybody therefore following these principles of Satan is bound to be doomed as repeatedly warned in the Qur'an.

#### **4. How to obtain grants from Allah**

##### *Shariat or Monotheism*

"And when My servants question thee (O Muhammad) concerning Me (Allah), then

##### *Satanism or Fierce Monotheism*

"We (Allah) verily created man and We (Allah) know what his soul whispereth to him, and

surely I am nigh. I listen to the prayer of the suppliant, when he calleth Me (whilst praying in your company or in your name O Muhammad). So let them hear My call (which I am making through thee O Muhammad) and let them trust in Me (by following the Qur'an and My teachings through thee O Muhammad), in order that they may be led aright (by thee O Muhammad)" (Qur'an 2: 186).

When Adam was trapped by Satan to commit a disobedience and was sent out of the Garden of Eden, he cried to Allah for forgiveness, but he was not forgiven. Eventually, he prayed for forgiveness in the name of Muhammad. This is confirmed even by Jesus on page 97 of the *Gospel of Barnabas*.

Immediately when this reference of the Beloved of Allah was given, Adam was not only forgiven but he was made the master over the earth by Allah. This shows that even though Allah is the forgiver of sins, yet He did not forgive Adam, one of His chosen prophets as long as he prayed directly to Allah. But the

We (Allah) are nearer to him than his jugular vein" (Qur'an 50: 16).

Satanism therefore contends that the only correct method to achieve success is to approach Allah directly for all your requirements. Because Allah is closer to us than our jugular vein.

Similarly Iblis demands that prayers are to be made directly, only to Allah and not through any intermediary as Allah is the "Hearer" of all prayers and the "Granter" of all requests. Hence Satan feels there was no necessity whatsoever to approach Allah through any intermediaries be they the prophets or the saints *i.e.* the Khalifas (Viceroys) of Allah, whom Allah has created for the salvation of sinners. Iblis therefore contends that anybody praying to Allah through an intermediary is thus giving honour to those who are the beloveds of Allah. This Iblis regards logically as the sin of "Polytheism" and argues that whatever requests are made they must be directed only to the Granter of same. Hence if a



moment Adam gave a reference to Muhammad, His beloved, then Allah not only forgave him at once but also gave him back a mini-paradise on earth. This particular sentence in Heaven and on the Gate of the Garden of Eden, even according to Jesus reads:

“There is only one God and Muhammad is His Messenger” (pages 89, 91 and 97, *Gospel of Barnabas*). From this incident it would be clear that if we want anything from Allah, then the only sure way of getting it is by asking for it in the name of Muhammad just as Adam, the first man and a chosen prophet had done to obtain his forgiveness after being banished from the Garden of Eden. This is the teaching of all the Prophets who have come on earth commencing with Adam and ending with Jesus!

When Adam was unsuccessful in getting anything by praying to Allah directly, then we too cannot expect our prayers to be heard by praying straight to Allah but through Muhammad

request is made through an intermediary then the position of that intermediary becomes synonymous with that of Allah the Granter of requests, thus the sin of Polytheism or belief in multiple gods is committed, according to Satan’s “Fierce Monotheism”.

By these acts Iblis shows that he accepts and abides by only those divine laws which fit in with his “Fierce Monotheism” and rejects those divine laws which require Iblis to pay respect to Nur-e-Muhammadi and to route His prayers for forgiveness through this medium who is the beloved of Allah.

Because Iblis is approaching Allah directly with His many tens of thousands of years of adoration and prayers and, not through Nur-e-Muhammadi, his prayers for forgiveness and his restoration to His previous place of honour amongst the spiritual dwellers of the universe is not being granted! Yet Satan has persisted for now about 6,000 years since the advent of Adam but without success!

the beloved of Allah.

Allah's divine decree is very emphatic on this point:

"We (Allah) have not sent any messenger, but to be obeyed in accordance with Allah's will! And when they (the people) had wronged themselves (by committing sins) if they come to thee (O Muhammad!) and ask forgiveness (*i.e.* in thy name) from Allah and if the Messenger also asks for forgiveness (for them then) they (the sinners) would find Allah Forgiving, Merciful" (Qur'an 4: 64).

Thus Allah also confirms in the Holy Qur'an that He accepts only those applications for mercy and forgiveness which are made in the name of Muhammad and otherwise not. Thus the teachings of all the prophets and that of the Qur'an are the same on this point!

Thus it becomes absolutely obvious that Allah is not at all bound to accept any prayers made directly to Him unless and until they are routed through or in the name of Muhammad the Beloved of Allah!

Everyone will agree that it is Allah's prerogative to decide how He would like to be approached. After all, He is the sole creator of the entire Universe. Therefore Satan is without doubt completely in the wrong in trying argumentatively to impose his will upon Allah's wishes and likes. Are not Satan and his followers in these circumstances making not only fools of themselves but also causing annoyance to Allah by approaching Him directly instead of through His Beloved Muhammad? Can such beings ever get the forgiveness and blessings of Allah? Satan's example is itself the answer! Qur'an 1: 7 as well as 5: 35-37 are the warnings to stay away from such adorers of Allah who only earn Allah's anger by their 'Fierce monotheism'!

## 5. Qalima

### *Shariat or Monotheism*

Allah has issued from time to time eight Qalimas (Chapter 8: I). The first half of all eight are common *viz*: “There is none worthy of divine worship except Allah”. The second half gives the honour bestowed upon each of the eight chosen prophets by Allah *viz*:

1. Adam
2. Noah
3. Abraham
4. Ishmael
5. Moses
6. David
7. Jesus
8. Muhammad

But this does not mean that Muslims believe in only these important eight prophets. On the contrary, they believe in all prophets and all the doctrines given by them including their books. This is confirmed in the Qur'an as follows:

“... we believe in Allah and

### *Satanism or Fierce Monotheism*

The mention of the names of eight chosen prophets next to the mention of Allah as in the Qalima amounts to an honouring of eight chosen prophets in a manner which according to Satanic logic is tantamount to approximate divinity just because the two names are in the same sentence. Hence Satan contends that Allah has made eight mistakes in his orders by issuing the eight Qalimas to honour His chosen from amongst the prophets, because no honour is due to any created being according to Satan's “Fierce Monotheism”.

Thus it will be evident that Satan and his followers accept part of the divine decrees and reject another part of it. Such will meet with a terrible doom according to the following Divine Decree:

“Lo! those who disbelieve in Allah and His messengers and seek to make distinction between Allah and his messengers and say: We believe in some

His angels and His Scriptures (*i.e.* Torah, Psalms Evangel or in other words all the original scriptures revealed through the various prophets, but unfortunately not one of them are available today free from forgeries save and except the Qur'an) and His messengers—we (Muslims) make no distinction between any of His messengers ..." (Qur'an: 2:285).

(messengers and their teachings) and disbelieve in others (messengers and their teachings) and seek to choose a way in between (out of their pride and/or ignorance).

"Such are disbelievers in the truth, and for such disbelievers (in the teachings of their prophets like Moses *etc.* for the Jews and Jesus for his followers to

accept the promised prophet Muhammad when he is disclosed), We (Allah) have prepared a shameful doom (at the Battle of Armageddon when all disbelievers will be destroyed from the face of this earth).

"But those who believe in Allah and His messengers and make no distinction between any of them, unto them Allah will give their rewards; and Allah is ever Forgiving, Merciful" (Qur'an 4: 150-152).

## 6. How Does Allah guide

### *Shariat or Monotheism*

“Allah explains to you and guides you by the examples of those (saintly people), who are above you (in the eyes of Allah) and would turn to you in mercy (if you accept such saintly persons as your spiritual guides). Allah is the Knower, the Wise.

“And Allah would turn to you in mercy (if you follow the instructions of your spiritual guides); but those who follow their own vain desires (through pride of their argumentative knowledge or pride of the prayers they perform in the worship of Allah, in the same manner as Iblis) would have you go tremendously astray.

“Allah would make the burden (of responsibility of your deed's) light for you (if you have acted in subjugation to your spiritual guides' instructions and not in the vain pursuit of your own arrogant desires), for man was created weak (*i.e.* with insufficient ability to detect one's own faults towards which one is

### *Satanism or Fierce Monotheism*

Satanism contends that any book of Divine Law *e.g.* the Qur'an as the last of them is to be followed according to one's own knowledge, and interpretation especially as the Qur'an is written in a simple, coherent style.

That is the sure guidance, which cannot go wrong as it is not controlled by the whims of a man, even a saint, but 'are a set of Divine Laws for the guidance of mankind in general.

Hence there is no need for a spiritual guide at all, when a book like the Qur'an is there to meet all the requirements of perfect guidance. The Qur'an is indeed perfect in all respects! But what Iblis overlooks is that a man, when he makes a mistake, is usually unable to detect it by himself! Satan in his pride and hatred for Adam and Nur-e-Muhammadi has made many a wrong interpretation which has already resulted in his condemnation into Satan.

blind)” (Qur’an 4: 26-28).

It is because of this that he is suffering. If he can overcome his pride based on the quantum of his prayers and his hatred of Nur-e-Muhammadi and if he were to fall on the feet of Muhammad even now and pray in his name to Allah, he can still achieve forgiveness of Allah, but he is blind to his own faults and is determined never to accept any guide but his own interpretation. So he is continuing to remain doomed. Indeed what a pity! A shameful doom awaits him!

What Satanism overlooks is that we are often not able to interpret correctly many of the divine orders in the Qur’an. If we are to rely only upon ourselves, then we would only make confusion worse confounded. That is exactly why so many different sects have come about in the various religions, all of whom are accepting the same religious books as their basis. Christianity is a beautiful example of being divided into thousands of sects all of whom believe in the Holy Bible. Hence it will be clear that man by

himself is unable to interpret correctly, unless guided by some spiritual teacher. Otherwise there cannot be so many divisions in the same religion.

Therefore Satan's fanatical and fierce monotheism is totally absurd and wrong. This business of "*I am right and everybody else is wrong*" is nothing but the substance of Satan's arguments before Allah, which got him expelled from heaven. Therefore anybody contending that *what we have believed in* for many centuries is good enough is totally wrong and this is even proved by the numerous wars and now the threat of a Nuclear Holocaust. There can be *only one right path*. That is by humble surrender to the will of Allah and accepting some spiritual person as a guide in achieving this complete surrender to Allah.

## 7. Intermediary

### *Shariat or Monotheism*

"O ye who believe! Be mindful of your duty to Allah and seek out a "Wasilah" (*i.e.* a saintly living person, who has

### *Satanism or Fierce Monotheism*

Satan contends that when Allah is nearer than your jugular vein (Qur'an 50: 16) and when Allah hears whatsoever is being

been blessed by Allah with authority to plead for others, and whom you can easily contact for your daily problems of life. Such a one you must accept as your spiritual guide who can guide you in the path) to approach unto Him (Allah) and “Jahedu” (*i.e.* strive to gain a mastery over your passions and selfish desires in the manner as directed by the “Wasilah” or your spiritual guide) in order to attain the way to Him (Allah), that ye may succeed.

“As for those who disbelieve (in the above order of Allah given in the previous verse to seek a “Wasilah” or intermediary to approach unto Allah), lo! if all (the good deeds and things) that is in the earth were theirs, and as much again therewith, to offer as a ransom from the doom on the Day of Resurrection, it will not be accepted from them (just as it has not been accepted from Ibils in spite of his many tens of thousands of years of *direct* worship of Allah *without* going through an *Intermediary—the Khalifa of Allah*). Theirs will be a painful doom.

said (Qur’an 2: 186), then He also hears the prayers of all. Therefore there is no necessity for any intermediary to plead before Allah. Consequently anybody praying through the intermediary of a living spiritual guide or through a saint who has completed his earthly life, is committing polytheism, because he is asking something through somebody who does not possess the said thing, hence cannot grant it from himself, whilst Allah is the sole Granter of all requests. Satan however does not appreciate that because we are sinners, so if we want to get anything from Allah we should go through one of His chosen saints otherwise there is every chance of failure. Satan considers this method of approach as tantamount to polytheism. His followers refuse to obey or recognise the Divine order given in Qur’an 5: 35 to seek out a “Wasilah” *i.e.* a living saintly person, through whom one could approach Allah.

Allah has thus made it very clear in Qur’an 5: 35-37 that anybody, even if he has to his



“They will try hard to come out of the fire (by arguing with Allah, that we have worshipped Thee and Thee alone, just as Satan has done and refused to recognise intermediaries, just as Iblis refused—calling it polytheism), but they will not come forth from it (just like Satan—because both have committed the same fault of not recognising intermediaries). Theirs will be a lasting doom!” (Qur’an 5: 35-37).

credit all the goodness in the world and that much once again also of piety in his favour—if such a thing was possible—and if he approaches with all this directly to Allah without going through an intermediary, then even all this volume of goodness will not be acceptable to Allah on the Day of Judgment. For his pride and arrogance in his prayers he would be condemned just as Iblis has been into Satan, in spite of his many tens of thousands of years of adoration of only Allah!

It is after all Allah’s prerogative to decide how he should be approached—whether in pride upon one’s prayers or in humility through an intermediary! What could be more pleasing to the Almighty Creator than to be approached for our requirements through His beloved—Muhammad and his saints!

## 8. The Spiritual Guide

### *Shariat or Monotheism*

#### **a. Order to accept**

“Seek the help (of an Intermediary—Qur’an 5: 35— and follow his instructions) with patient perseverance and prayers. Lo! It is truly hard to do so, save for those who are humble-minded.

“Who know that they are going to meet their Lord, and that unto Him they would be returning” (Qur’an 2: 45-46).

“O ye who believe! obey Allah and obey the Prophet and do not make your (good) deeds worthless (by disobedience in accepting a spiritual guide just as Iblis had done for which he had been punished into Satan in spite of his many tens of thousands of years of continuous adoration of Allah)” (Qur’an 47: 33).

“Those who break the covenant of Allah after ratifying it (by promising on the hands of their spiritual guide), and then sever connection with (their spiritual guide) that which Allah

### *Satanism or Fierce Monotheism*

#### **b. Satan is the guide of those who have no spiritual guide**

“And if anyone withdraws himself from ‘Dhikir’ of the Beneficent (Dhikir is a special “Sufi” ritual of prayer in which the organs of the body and not the tongue or mouth recite the name of the Lord. This can be done only by the blessings of a saintly person and under his guidance. Otherwise it is quite impossible. Therefore this passage refers not only to one who withdraws himself from the teachings of a spiritual guide but also to those who are without a guide), We (Allah) assign unto him a devil, who becometh his comrade.

“And lo! they surely turn them from the way of Allah, and yet (unfortunately) they deem that they are rightly guided!

“Till when he cometh unto Us (Allah), he saith (unto his comrade): Ah! would that between me and thee there were

ordered to be joined and (instead) make mischief in the earth; Those are they, who are losers” (Qur’an 2: 27).

“O ye who believe! Obey Allah and obey the Messenger and those (saintly people) who are in authority of you (as your spiritual guides) ...” (Qur’an 4: 59).

“Follow those (saintly, whom you accept as spiritual guides), who ask you no fee, and who are rightly guided, (Qur’an 36: 21).

“Lo! those who swear allegiance (in Arabic “*Baiat*”) unto thee (the Prophet at the time of revelation of the Qur’an and now the saintly whom one accepts as his spiritual guide), swears allegiance only unto Allah, The Hand of Allah is above their hands (*i.e.* the person swearing allegiance and the saintly guide accepting the ‘*baiat*’ or allegiance). So whosoever breaketh his ‘*baiat*’ (covenant), breaketh it only to his soul’s hurt, whilst whosoever keepeth his ‘*baiat*’ (covenant) with Allah

the distance of the two horizons (*i.e.* the distance between East and West or North pole and South pole)—an evil comrade!

“And it profiteth you not on this day. Because ye (both) did wrong that ye will be sharers in the doom.

“And let not Satan turn you aside. Lo! he is an open enemy for you.

“Friends on that day will be foes one to another, save those (saintly people whom you accepted as your spiritual guide) who kept their duty.

“O My slaves! For such of you (who accepted the saintly as spiritual guides), there is no fear on this day, nor shall ye grieve” (Qur’an 43: 36-39, 62, 67-68).

“Your friends are Allah, His Messenger, and the (fellowship of the saintly) believers, who establish worship and pay the poor-dues (*Zakat*) and bow down humbly.

“And those who taketh Allah and His messenger and the (fellowship of the saintly) believers for friends (*i.e.* as

(through his spiritual guide) on him will He bestow an immense reward” (Qur’an 48: 10).

“Those (saintly people) are they whom Allah guides, so follow their guidance (by accepting them as your spiritual guide). Say (O Muhammad unto mankind): I (and those saintly who will come after me) ask of you no fee for it. Lo! it is naught but a reminder to (His) creatures” (Qur’an 6: 91).

There are numerous such orders in the Qur’an, inclusion here is prevented owing to the limited space

spiritual guides will know that), lo! the party of Allah, they are the victorious” (Qur’an 5: 55 & 56).

“O mankind! ... follow not the footsteps of the devil. Lo! he is an open enemy for you.

“He enjoined upon you only the evil and the foul and that ye should tell concerning Allah that which ye know not (*e.g.* to bow one’s head only before Allah and none else in defiance and disregard to Allah’s orders to honour those above you in piety—the prophets and the saintly spiritual guides).

“Those who hide proofs (of why Iblis became Satan) and the guidance (given in the Qur’an 5: 35 to seek an Intermediary—a saintly living person as a spiritual guide), which We (Allah) have revealed, after We have made it clear in the scripture (Qur’an): such are accursed of Allah (as warned in Qur’an 5: 36-37), and accursed of those who have power to curse” (Qur’an 2: 168, 169, 159).

## 9. After Death

### *Shariat or Monotheism*

“O ye who believe! Seek the help (of an Intermediary—Qur’an 5: 35 and follow his instruction) with patient perseverance and prayers: Lo! Allah is with those who patiently persevere.

“And call not those who have dedicated their lives (*i.e.* attained self-annihilation in Allah—Chapter 21: E-1 to 4) in the way of Allah “They are dead”. Nay! they are living only ye perceive (it) not. (see Chapter 8: B, how somebody dead raised a dead man to life—shows that those who spend their lives in Allah’s service are not dead even after actual death).

“And surely We (Allah) shall test you (especially through your spiritual guide) with something of fear and hunger and loss of wealth and lives and crops; but give glad tidings to those who patiently persevere.

Who (the chosen ones) say when a misfortune striketh them: Lo! we belong to Allah and Lo!

### *Satanism or Fierce Monotheism*

Satanism maintains that life terminates upon death, until the Day of Resurrection. So it is meaningless if one goes to the grave of one’s relative and prays for the soul of the departed, and it is absolutely wrong and a “*Sheirk*” or polytheism to go to the shrines of prophets and saints and pray for their assistance to plead before Allah.

From this has developed the common belief amongst the modern educated youth of today that this life is the only real thing and death is the termination of everything. So let us enjoy ourselves as much as we can, without any fear or consideration of the hereafter as there is no scientific evidence before us of what happens after death, save and except the decay of the body and its eventual disintegration into nothingness!

If one looks up the Holy Bible (II Kings 13: 20-21) he will read how a dead man was raised to life immediately the dead man’s body touched the dead

unto Him is our return.

“Such are they on whom are blessings of their Lord and a mercy. Such are the ones that receive the right guidance” (Qur’an: 2:153-157).

body of Prophet Elisha, on being lowered into his grave. Thus making it clear that there is life even after death! (See Chapter 8: B).

## 10. Anniversaries

### *Shariat or Monotheism*

Shariat recognises the observance of Birth and Death Anniversaries of Prophets and Saints in the following passages:

“Peace on him, the day he was born, and the day he died, and the day he shall be raised alive.

“Peace on me the day I was born and the day I die, and the day I shall be raised alive!” (Qur’an 19: 15, 33).

“Their (the prophets and saints) salutation on the Day (of Resurrection) when they will meet Him (Allah) will be: Peace. And He (Allah) has prepared for them a goodly recompense” (33: 44).

### *Satanism or Fierce Monotheism*

Satanism on the contrary holds that the observance of Birth and Death Anniversaries of prophets and saints in accordance with Qur’anic orders is tantamount to granting of honour to created human beings, who have already completed their lives and are now dead.

Therefore such observance of anniversaries mean that honours, which would have gone eventually to Allah, are being showered upon dead prophets and saints by people when observing such occasions. Iblis does not agree that Allah has the right to permit such honours to even those whom Allah loves and desires that they should be honoured.

Thus according to Satanism such observances are manifestations of polytheism or “*Sheirk*”.

## 11. What is the Right Path?

Poor old Satan reasoned and argued on the rights and wrongs in Allah’s orders, when he should have appreciated the above facts and obeyed. To make things worse Satan condemned those Angels and other spiritual dwellers of the universe, who obeyed Allah as polytheists! Allah has certainly given us the power of reasoning. It is good to reason and then believe. But that does not permit us to go to the extent of challenging Allah in His Orders. The blunder was not really with the power of reasoning, but the wrong interpretation taken deliberately out of pride based upon the tens of thousands of years of continuous prayers to Allah, which had made Iblis the elected leader of the spiritual dwellers of heaven. This made him so very confident that he felt, happen what may, Allah cannot conceivably condemn Iblis, as long as he continued to adore and worship Allah, alone. So he is still continuing his constant worship of the Almighty. Further, a man’s life span was not only so small that he could never match or even come near the quantum of prayers performed by Iblis but that man would also create mischief on earth and cause bloodshed whilst Iblis was praying continuously day and night to Allah. Hence according to Iblis, he was incomparably superior to man! Therefore Iblis does not accept that quality of prayer counts, because Allah had proved to the spiritual world that Adam’s few minutes of prayers upon his creation when he recited the 101 glorious names of Allah as far superior to that of the millions of years of worship performed by the dwellers of heaven.

Thus his pride in his prayers made him blind to the fact that there is indeed an incomparable difference between bowing with the intention to adore and worship Allah, and bowing out of love and respect for the purpose of honouring our elders *e.g.* prophets, saints,

(*i.e.* those who are loved and honoured by Allah) in addition to our parents and religious teachers.

At the very most all that Satan should have done was to ask for an explanation of Allah's orders instead of refusing to obey them and condemning as "*Polytheists*" all those who obeyed Allah!

One must further realise that Allah's orders can never be wrong. What is beyond the "ken" of human reasoning is not necessarily unreasonable or wrong. Far from it! Science has shown repeatedly that what we believed in before have, with the advancement of knowledge and the new discoveries made, been proved repeatedly totally wrong. So also is the case here. If we have a saintly spiritual guide, who is in a much higher stage than we are, he can guide us not only through the various logical traps laid for us by Satan, but he can explain and enlighten us as to what is wrong in the interpretations of Satan and his followers in preaching the fierce oneness of the Almighty to the exclusion of those loved by Allah, whom Allah wants to be honoured.

Thus Satan and his followers by their continuous day-and-night-long prayers direct to Allah, alone, are not only vexing Allah, but they are also causing a revulsion in Allah against such worshippers, who do not honour and respect those whom Allah wants to be honoured. Hence Allah out of disgust is going to condemn such worshippers for their absolute fierce oneness of Allah as warned repeatedly in the Qur'an. A couple of quotations are given here for ready reference:

"(Allah) said (to Iblis) Go forth from hence, degraded and banished. As for such of them (out of mankind) as follow thee, surely I will fill hell with all of you" (Qur'an 7: 18).

"(Allah) said (to Iblis): Go and whosoever of them (*i.e.* mankind) followeth thee (and thy principle)—Lo! hell will be your (and their) payment, an ample payment" (Qur'an 17: 63).

No Muslim prayer is possible without the recitation of the first chapter of the Qur'an which comprises seven small "ayats" or verses. The first three and a half comprise praises of Allah and the balance are



prayers for guidance along the “Right Path”

We have read earlier under “How does Allah guide” (Chapter 20: E-6), that the Creator guides mankind through saintly persons (Qur’an 4: 26-28).

In this first Chapter of the Qur’an it has been defined clearly that those who claim to be able to guide others come under three basic categories, of which only the first of them is correct and the other two are on the wrong path and hence to be avoided. These three categories comprise:

1. The saintly upon whom are the Blessings of Allah, (Qur’an 1: 6)
2. Those who worship Allah alone such as Satan and thus incur the displeasure and condemnation of Allah (Qur’an 1: 7) and
3. Those who are astray (Qur’an 1: 7)

The second of the above-mentioned category comprises those priestly type of worshippers of Allah who are commonly known as dogmatics or “Fierce Monotheists”. These people believe in the absolute fierce oneness of Allah, just as Satan to the exclusion of honouring elders by bowing out of love before the shrines of the prophets and the saints. They believe in praying directly to Allah without going through the medium of a saint or spiritual guide. To maintain this stand of theirs, when pointed out suitable verses from the Qur’an, these dogmatics or “Fierce Monotheists” spend their entire energy in finding out hair-splitting interpretations of the Divine Laws to support their stand to pray directly to Allah alone. Thus they waste their lives in trying to argue and convince others to their ways of thinking. The result is more often than not that the very essences and moral values of the Divine Laws get lost in this mass of arguments, counter-arguments, and bickerings of these intellectuals. Many believers get ensnared by the arguments of the one or the other. Hence the unity of the religion is broken up into groups each professing their own ideology thereby creating chaos. Thus is the right path lost sight of. This is nothing but what Iblis had done! He argued with Allah that

by bowing before Adam in compliance with His divine orders, all the spiritual dwellers of Heaven had committed the sin of Polytheism or “Sheirk” and that Iblis was the only sinless and pure one in the entire universe. But alas, what was the result! Iblis incurred the displeasure of Allah to become the Satan! Now the very same blunders are being perpetrated by these dogmatics all over the world. Thus even though they are believers in the absolute oneness of Allah, yet their manner of approach to the observance of the Divine Laws according to their pride of knowledge of interpretation and their lust of argumentatively imposing their thoughts upon the masses, incurs for them the displeasure of Allah. These people are referred to in this Qur’anic prayer for Divine guidance as

“Those who earn Thy anger (even though they worship Thee continuously)” (Qur’an 1: 7).

The Qur’an has clarified this in numerous places. Just a few quotations are given hereunder:

“As for those who “Shiaun” (*i.e.* sunder or break up) religion and become schismatic (*i.e.* break up in sects), no concern at all hast thou (O Muhammad) with them. Theirs is a case for (the wrath of) Allah! He will then (surely) tell them the truth of what they used to do” (Qur’an 6: 60).

“Lo! Those who hide aught of the scripture, which Allah hath revealed, and purchase a small gain (honour and wealth) therewith, they eat into their bellies nothing else than (hell) fire. Allah will not speak to them on the Day of Resurrection, nor will He make them grow. Theirs will be a painful doom.

“Those are they who purchase error at the price of guidance and (purchase) torment (for their souls in hells) at the price Of (Allah’s) pardon. How constant are they in their strife to reach the (eternal) Fire (of hell)!

“That is because Allah hath revealed the scripture with the truth. Lo! those who find (a cause for) disagreement in the scripture are in open schism.

“And when it is said unto him: Be careful of thy duty to Allah, pride (of his knowledge of interpretations and his constant and regular worship) taketh him to sin (just as was the case of Iblis). Hell will settle the account, an evil resting-place” (Qur’an 2: 174-176, 206).

The third group are those who are astray i.e. disbelievers in the oneness of Allah and believers in multiplicity of gods, son or daughters of God and idolatry.

The last four verses of chapter 1 of the Qur’an read:

Thee (Allah), we worship, Thee we ask for help.

“Guide us (to one who is) on the Right path (by bringing us in contact with a pious spiritual guide).

“(One who is on) the path of those whom Thou hast favoured with Thy grace”.

“Not those who earn Thy anger (like Satan and his dogmatic crowd in spite of their continuous prayers and belief in Fierce Monotheism), nor those who are astray (*i.e.* believers in son of God, trinity, idolatry *etc*)”.

From the above passages, it would be clear that Satanism by its practice of Fierce Monotheism commits the following:

1. *Insults Allah* by contending that the keys to heaven lie in the quantum of prayers performed and not upon the Grace of Allah.
2. *Insults Allah* by arguing that if one prays as much as any prophet or a saint then one is as good as that prophet or saint. Consequently, since Iblis has done the greatest amount of praying, so he is the best of all creation—in spite of Allah’s condemnation!
3. *Insults Allah* by declaring as Polytheists, those who obey Allah’s order to honour and pay respects to Prophets and Saints.
4. *Insults Allah* by refusing to recognise that “Salvation” of the entire creation will be through Muhammad. Hence they do not

feel any necessity of an intermediary, whether a prophet or saint, to plead for forgiveness of one's faults or sins.

Allah has clarified, as read herebefore, that he who does not have a spiritual guide has Satan as his guide! The latter misguides him by wrong interpretations of the Divine Laws yet the individual thinks that he is right, when in reality he is insulting Allah as Iblis had, because of which he was condemned into Satan.

As against that Shariat or Divine Law is based upon the proper appreciation of the following facts:

- a. The very first thing created by Allah was Nur-e-Muhammadi also known as the Nebula, the Medium, the Word of Allah, the Logos, the Holy Spirit, The Light of Truth *etc.* (Chapter 17: A-1 to 3).
- b. The moment the first thing or Nur-e-Muhammadi was created it fell before its Creator and adored Him. (Chapter 17: A-4).
- c. The reward that Allah gave to Nur-e-Muhammadi, because it adored Allah immediately upon its creation was the creation of the universe to honour Nur-e-Muhammadi (Chapter 17: A-6).
- d. The entire creation was made out of Nur-e-Muhammadi (Chapter 17: A-6)
- e. It was due to Nur-e-Muhammadi that Adam became superior to the dwellers of heaven (Chapter 17: B-3).
- f. It was due to Nur-e-Muhamrnadi that mankind was blessed with two forces (Chapter 17: B-4).
- g. Nur-e-Muhammadi was responsible for civilisation of mankind (Chapter 17: B-5 and 6).
- h. All those who ratified the covenant about honouring Nur-e-Muhammadi became the prophets and saints throughout the world (Chapter 17: A-8).
- i. That the world would not be blessed only upon the amount of prayers performed, but especially by the Grace of Allah. That this would apply even to Muhammad (Chapter 20: E-12).
- j. That he who did not revere Nur-e-Muhammadi, even where he

had put in many tens of thousands of years of adoration of Allah and was the elected leader of the dwellers of the heaven became a Satan and an outcast, because of his stubborn refusal to honour and love one, who is Allah's beloved (Chapter 1: B-4, b).

## 12. What have the earlier Prophets taught?

It would be most interesting to see over here if any of the earlier prophets have thrown some light on these theories *viz*:

1. Will all creation attain eternal bliss only by the dint of the quantum of prayers performed or will it be by the Grace of the Creator?
2. Will the Saviour of mankind himself be blessed by Allah only on account of his good deeds or on account of the Grace of the Almighty?

If those two issues can be clarified by the teachings of any of the earlier prophets, it would certainly help the universe to realise whether Shariat is right or Satanism.

Holy Jesus has given the following vivid descriptions of what will happen after the destruction of the universe at the time of judgment on pages 127-133 of "*The Gospel of Barnabas*" translated by Lonsdale and Laura Ragg (1907):

"When these signs be passed, there shall be darkness over the world forty years, God alone being alive, to Whom be honour and glory forever. When the forty years be passed, God shall give life to his messenger, who shall raise again like the sun, but resplendent as a thousand suns. He shall sit, and shall not speak, for he shall be as it were beside himself. God shall rise again the four angels favoured of God, who shall seek the messenger of God, and, having found him, shall station themselves on the four sides of the place to keep watch upon him. Next shall God give life to all the angels, who shall come like bees circling round the messenger of God, Next shall God

give life to all his prophets, who, following Adam, shall go every one to kiss the hand of the messenger of God, committing themselves to his protection, Next shall God give life to all the elect, who shall cry: O Muhammad, be mindful of us! At whose cries pity shall awake in the messenger of God, and he shall consider what he ought to do, fearing for their salvation. Next shall God give life to every created thing, and they shall return to their former existence, but every one shall besides possess the power of speech. Next shall God give life to all the reprobates, at whose resurrection by reason of their hideousness, all the creatures of God shall be afraid, and shall cry: "Let not Thy mercy forsake us, O Lord our God". After this shall God cause Satan to be raised up, at whose aspect every creature shall be as dead, for fear of the horrid form of his appearance. 'May it please God,' said Jesus, 'that I behold not the monster on that day. The messenger of God alone shall not be affrighted by such shapes, because he shall fear God only'.

"Then the angel, at the sound of whose trumpet all shall be raised, shall sound his trumpet again, saying: "Come to the judgment, O creatures, for your Creator willeth to judge you". Then shall appear in the midst of heaven over the valley of Jehoshaphat a giltering throne, over which shall come a white cloud, whereupon the angels shall cry out: 'Blessed be Thou our God, Who hast created us, and saved us from the fall of Satan'. Then the messenger of God shall fear, for that he shall perceive *that none hath loved God as he should*. For he who would get in change a piece of gold must have sixty mites; wherefore, if he have but one mite he cannot change it. But if the messenger of God shall fear, what shall the ungodly do who are full of wickedness?

"The messenger of God shall go to collect all the prophets, to whom he shall speak, praying them to go with him to pray God for the faithful. And every one shall excuse himself for fear; nor as God liveth, would I go there, knowing what I know. Then God, seeing this, shall remind His messenger how He created all things for love of him, and so his fear shall leave him, and he shall go nigh unto the throne *with love and reverence*, while the angels sing: 'Blessed be Thy holy name, O Lord, our God'.

“And when he hath drawn nigh unto the throne, God shall open (His mind) unto His messenger, even as a friend unto a friend when for a long while they have not met. The first to speak shall be the messenger of God, who shall say: *‘I adore and love Thee, O my God, and with all my heart and soul I give Thee thanks for that Thou didst vouchsafe to create me to be Thy servant, and madest all for love me, so that I might love Thee, for all things and in all things and above all things; therefore let all Thy creatures praise Thee, O my God’*. Then all things created by God shall say: *‘We give Thee thanks, O Lord, and bless Thy holy name.’* Verily I say unto you, the demons and reprobates with Satan shall then weep so that more water shall flow from the eyes of one of them than is in the river of Jordan. Yet shall they not see God (that is the punishment of hell!—see Chapter 21: D-5).

“And God shall speak unto His messenger, saying: ‘Thou art welcome, O my faithful servant; therefore ask what thou wilt, for thou shalt obtain all.’ The messenger of God shall answer: ‘O Lord, I remember that when Thou didst create me, Thou saidst that Thou hadst willed to make for love of me the world and paradise, and angels and men, that they might glorify Thee by me, Thy servant. Therefore, Lord God, Merciful and Just, I pray Thee that Thou recollect Thy promise made unto Thy servant’.

“And God shall make answer even as a friend who jesteth with a friend, and shall say: ‘Hast thou witnesses of this, My friend Muhammad?’ And with reverence he shall say: ‘Yes, Lord.’ Then God shall answer: ‘Go, call them, O Gabriel.’ The angel Gabriel shall come to the messenger of God and shall say: ‘Lord, who are thy witnesses?’ The messenger of God shall answer: ‘They are Adam, Abraham, Ishmael, Moses, David, and Jesus son of Mary’.

“Then shall the angel depart and he shall call the aforesaid witnesses, who with fear shall go thither. And when they are present God shall say unto them: ‘Remember ye that which My messenger affirmeth’ They shall reply: ‘What thing, O Lord?’ God shall say: ‘That I have made all things for love of him, so that all things might praise Me by him.’ Then every one of them shall answer: ‘There are

with us three witnesses better than we are, O Lord.’ And God shall reply: ‘Who are these three witnesses?’ Then Moses shall say: ‘The book that thou gavest to me is the first’ (*i.e.* Torah) and David shall say: ‘The book that thou gavest to me is the second’ (*i.e.* Psalms); and he who speaketh to you (*i.e.* Jesus) shall say: ‘Lord, the whole world, deceived by Satan, said that I was Thy son and Thy fellow, but the book Evangel) that thou gavest me said truly that I am Thy servant; and that book confesseth that which Thy messenger affirmeth.’ Then shall the messenger of God speak, and shall say: ‘Thus saith the book (*i.e.* Qur’an) that thou gavest me, O Lord.’ And when the messenger of God hath said this, God shall speak, saying: ‘All that I have now done, I have done in order that every one should know how much I love thee.’ And when He hath thus spoken, God shall give unto His messenger a book, in which are written all the names of the elect of God. Wherefore every creature shall do reverence to God, saying: ‘To Thee alone, O God, be Glory, and Honour because Thou hast given us to Thy messenger’.”

Thus it will be clear from the foretellings of Jesus that even Muhammad, the Saviour of the world, would not go to heaven by his own efforts and prayers, but by the Grace of Allah as mentioned in the Holy Qur’an (Chapter 20: E-3). Further, that the whole universe was created for honouring Muhammad, the messenger of Allah, and that all would be blessed through him. Thus Muhammad would be the intermediary for all the prophets from Adam to Jesus and also for their followers, as he would be for those who believe in him.

That these facts were confirmed in the four divine books *viz.* Torah, Psalms, Evangel and Qur’an. The first three of these have been corrupted and/or destroyed. The Qur’an is still the only divine book, which is intact even according to the findings of European Scholars (Chapter 18) and *is the only Sacred Book of Religion, which contains the absolute truth and nothing but the pure truth throughout!*

On pages 317-321 of *ibid* Jesus has given the following information:

“Jesus answered: ‘Every one, be he who he may, must go into hell.



It is true, however, that the holy ones (*i.e.* the saints) and prophets of God shall go there to behold, not suffering any punishment; and the righteous, only suffering fear. And what shall I say? I tell you that thither shall come (even) the messenger of God, to behold the justice of God. *Thereupon hell shall tremble at his presence. And because he hath human flesh, all those that have human flesh and shall be under punishment, so long as the messenger of God shall abide to behold hell, so long shall they abide without punishment.* But he shall abide there (only) so long as it taketh to shut and open the eyes.

*“And this shall God do in order that every creature may know that he hath received (some) benefit from the messenger of God (even though he did not believe in him and hence was not entitled to it).*

“When he shall go there all the devils shall shriek, and seek to hide themselves beneath the burning embers, saying one to another: ‘Fly, fly, for here cometh Muhammad our enemy!’ Hearing which Satan shall smite himself upon the face with both his hands, and screaming shall say: ‘Thou art more noble than I, in my despite, and this is unjustly done!’

“As for the faithful, who are in seventy-two grades, those of the two last grades, who shall have had the faith without good work—the one being sad at good works, and the other delighting in evil—they shall abide in hell seventy thousand years.

“After those years shall the angel Gabriel come into hell, and shall hear them say: ‘O Muhammad, where are thy promises made to us, saying that those who have thy faith shall not abide in hell for evermore?’

“Then the angel of God shall return to paradise, and having approached with reverence the messenger of God shall narrate to him what he hath heard.

“Then shall his messenger speak to God and say: ‘Lord, my God, remember the promise made to me thy servant, concerning them that have received my faith, that they shall not abide for evermore in hell.’

“God shall answer: ‘Ask what thou wilt, O my friend, for I will give thee all that thou askest.’

“Then shall the messenger of God say: ‘O Lord, there are of the faithful who have been in hell seventy thousand years. Where, O Lord, is Thy mercy? I pray Thee, Lord, to free them from those bitter punishments.’

“Then shall God command the four favourite angels of God that they go to hell and take out every one that hath the faith of His messenger, and lead him into paradise. And this they shall do.

*“And such shall be the advantage of the faith of God’s messenger, that those that shall have believed in him, even though they have not done any good works, seeing they died in this faith, shall go into Paradise aft the punishment of which I have spoken.”*

Thus Jesus had confirmed that not only those who believe in Muhammad, even where they hated to do good deeds and delighted in evil deeds would still be saved after 70,000 years of punishment, but even those who hated Muhammad and did not believe in him would also get complete relief in hell owing to Muhammad so long as he would stay there to inspect how Allah’s justice was being meted out. Thus Allah would show to the world that Muhammad is indeed the “Rahmat-ul-Lil-Aalameen”, the Blessing and the promised Comforter for the whole universe. Alas, that would be much too late! A wise person is he who takes advantage whilst he still has the opportunity.

Does this theory of Jesus that everything created will be destroyed leaving Allah alone and that He would re-create everything again on the day of Judgment, find support? The answer is: “Yes”. It can be substantiated from almost all religious books and records. As example a very few quotations are given hereunder from the last of the divine books:-

“... Lo! we belong to Allah and lo! (upon our death) we are returning unto Him.” (Qur’an 2: 156).

“How disbelieve ye in Allah when ye did not exist, it is He, Who gave life to you! Then He will give you death, then (resurrect you

to) life again, and then unto Him ye will return (to face His Judgment)” (Qur’an 2: 28).

“And cry not unto any others as gods along with Allah. There is no god except Him. Everything will perish save His Countenance. His is the command and unto Him ye will be brought back” (Qur’an 28: 88).

“Allah is He, Who created and then sustained you, then causeth you to die, then resurrects you (on the day of Judgment) again to life. Is there any of your (so called) partners (of Allah) that doeth aught of that? Praised and exalted be He above (all) what they (the disbelievers) associate with Him” (Qur’an 30: 40)





## *Chapter 21*

### Sufism



#### **A. Introduction to Sufism**

When Muhammad departed from this earthly life, he had a following of over a million converts all over Arabia following Shariat (the general Qur’anic rules for the masses). No prophet ever before had such a large number of converts from paganism in such a short period. He also had about four hundred and fifty ascetics including a few mystics around him. These were known popularly as “Ashab-e-Rasul” (Companions of the Prophet) or “Ashab-us-Safa” (Companions of the pure of the companions of the prophet, who were always the first to line up for prayer). These were dedicated people, who had sacrificed their all for the cause of Islam. The whole day long they would teach or tend to the needs of the sick, the widows and orphans and all night they would pray. Thus they spent their time in worship, living the humble and simple life of the Prophet and searching the Qur’an and Hadith (the teachings). They did not engage in worldly business. Their total possessions consisted usually of the two pieces of rough woollen blankets or gowns, which they wore on their bodies. These served as their bed at night, their protection against cold and their praying carpet by day. They had given up not only the luxuries that wealth could buy, but were also devoted to poverty and service to mankind. For a living they gathered sticks and they often fed on fallen dates. Every morning a bowl of porridge used to come from the Prophet’s house and everyone would take a sip of it and pass it on to the next man, so the bowl went

round but miraculously its contents remained undiminished. The last person was usually the Prophet. He urged his followers to feed these devotees. The Qur'an contains a reference to these devotees who lived in the Veranda of the Prophet's Mosque:

“(Alms are also) for those (*i.e.* Ahsab-us: Safa), who have taken to poverty by dedicating their lives to the cause of Allah—they cannot go about the land (doing business to earn their livelihood); The ignorant man thinks them to be rich because of their abstaining (from begging); you can recognise them by their mark (of the simple rough woollen clothes to denote that they have given up worldly comforts and riches); They do not beg from men importunately (because they rely only upon Allah); and whatever good thing you spend upon them, surely Allah knows it (and treats it as if such charity had been given to Him).” (Qur'an 2: 273).

A reference to these Ashub-us -Safa is to be found in Chapter 9 page 81 of “*The Kashf Al-Mahjub*” translated by Professor R.A. Nicholson of “E.G.M. Gibb Memorial Trust” published by Luzac & Co. Ltd., London in 1959:

“Know that all Moslems are agreed that the Apostle had a number of Companions, who abode in his Mosque and engaged in devotion, renouncing the world and refusing to seek a livelihood. God reproached the Apostle on their account and said: “Do not drive away those who call unto their Lord at morn and eve, desiring His face” (Qur'an 6: 52). Their merits are proclaimed by the Book of God, and in many traditions of the Apostle, which have come down to us. It is related by Ibn Abbas that the Apostle passed by the People of the Veranda, and saw their poverty and their self-mortification and said: ‘Rejoice! for whoever of my community perseveres in thy state in which ye are, and is satisfied with his condition, he shall be one of my comrades in Paradise’.”

On pages 31-32 of “Sufism” by A.J. Arberry, second impression published by George Allen & Unwin Ltd, London, in 1956, we read:

“Muhammad's immediate companions and followers are pictured in pious legend as innocent of these excesses; despite their position

of privilege, they maintained the simple dignity and austerity of habit which they had learned from the Prophet.

“When Abu Bakr succeeded to the leadership, and the world in its entirety came to him in abasement, he did not lift up his head on that account, or make any pretensions; he wore a single garment, which he used to pin together: so that he was known as the ‘man of the two pins.’ Omar bin al-Khattab, who also ruled the world in its entirety, lived on bread and olive-oil; his clothes were patched in a dozen places some of the patches being of leather; and yet there were opened unto him the treasures of Chosroes and Caesar. As for Osman, he was like one of his slaves in dress and appearance; of him it is related that he was seen coming out of one of his gardens with a faggot of firewood on his shoulders, and when questioned on the matter he said, ‘I wanted to see whether my soul would refuse.’ When Ali succeeded to the rule, he bought a waistband for four dirhams and a shirt for five dirhams; finding the sleeve of his garment too long, he went to a cobbler and taking his knife cut off the sleeve level with the tips of his fingers; yet this same man divided the world right and left.

“So the ‘Righteous Caliphs’ appeared to al-Kharraz, famous mystic of the third/ninth century; and the report of their holiness was widely accepted”.

## **B. The Derivation of “Sufi”**

Some scholars contend that “Sufi” has come out of the Arabic word “Safa” which means pure or clean, because of the clean and pure lives led by these mystics.

Other equally authoritative sources contend that it is a contraction of “Ashab us Safa” or the Companions of the first line of those who pray. This is because these ascetics spent all their time in the mosque praying and preaching and following the examples of the Prophet. They did not go after worldly pursuits. They have also been referred to as the people of the Veranda, because they used to sleep in the Veranda of the Prophet’s mosque at Madinah, and they maintained no other home.

These were the close companions of the Prophet.

“Suf” in Arabic means wool. Hence “Sufi” stands for the coarse woollen dress worn by these dedicated souls. Allah has referred to the coarse woollen dress of the Prophet in glowing terms as follows:

“O thou wrapped up in thy woollen cloak!

“Keep vigil the night long, save a little—

“A half thereof, or abate a little thereof

“Or add (a little) thereto—and recite the Qur’an with respect (*i.e.* when in pure and clean state),

“For We (Allah) entrust thee-with a word of importance (*i.e.* Qur’an)

“Lo! the vigil of the night is (a time) when impression is more keen and speech more certain.

“Lo! thou hast (to do) during the day a series of business.

“So remember the name of thy Lord and devote thyself with a complete devotion (to Allah during the night when you are not required to engage in worldly affairs and business)—

“Lord of the East and the West; there is no God save Him; so choose thou Him alone for thy defender—

“And bear with patience what they utter, and part from them with a fair leave-taking” (Qur’an 73: 1-10).

This Surah or Chapter of the Qur’an is known as “AL MUZAMMIL” or “The one wrapped in his woollen cloak”. This word appears in the first verse quoted above. After his first trance and vision, Prophet Muhammad went to his wife Khadija and told her to wrap him up in his woollen cloak, and that was afterwards his habit on such occasions. This was one of the very early Meccan revelations.

On account of this incident Muhammad has often been referred to as “Kamliwala” or as one wearing a woollen cloak in Urdu poetry. The woollen cloak has thus stood out as a sign of one who has given up



the world to follow the example of the ascetic life of the Prophet. Hence the word “Sufi” stands for “woollen” or those who have dedicated their lives to the service of Allah for His pleasure.

Professor Nicholson on pages 34-35 of *“Kashf Al-Mahjub”* has described a Sufi as follows:

“*Sufi* is a name given and has formerly been given, to the perfect saints and spiritual adepts. One of the Shaykhs (*i.e.* a Sufi Khalifa or a Sufi Pir) says ... He that is purified by love is pure, and he that is absorbed in the Beloved and has abandoned all else is a *Sufi*’.”

“Purity, then, is a resplendent and manifest idea, and Sufism is an imitation of that idea”.

“The Sufi is he that is dead to self and living by the Truth; he has escaped from the grip of human faculties and has really attained (to God)”.

### C. Jihad

Islam stands for Surrender to the Will of Allah—“Thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven”.

The Qur’an has warned clearly in numerous places what a Muslim is required to do. Let us read but one such quotation:

“(Allah swears) By the declining day

“Lo! mankind is in a state of loss,

“Save those who believe (in the oneness of Allah, with no equals or rivals) and do good works (in accordance with divine orders), and exhort one another to the truth and exhort one another to persevere” (Qur’an 103: 1-3).

It will thus be evident that a Muslim has to surrender himself to Allah and to live according to His will and orders. This is easier said than done! To achieve this every Muslim must first of all gain control and mastery over his own passions, especially:

- Pride
- Anger
- Greed
- Jealousy
- Revenge
- Hatred
- Injustice
- Lust (except for love of his wife)
- Other forbidden things.

To attain these lofty ideals of self-control takes one several years of serious effort and patient striving. It is the greatest struggle, which one has to fight with oneself. Only upon gaining a victory over oneself does one become a true Muslim!

As one is apt to make mistakes and be blind to one's own faults the Qur'an has ordered as follows:

"O ye who believe! Be mindful of your duty to Allah, and seek out a "Wasilah" (*i.e.* an Intermediary—a living saintly person who can guide you) into surrender to Him (Allah), and "Jahedu" (*i.e.* strive to gain mastery over your passions and selfish desires in accordance with thy guidance of the Wasilah or spiritual guide) in order to attain the way to Him (Allah), that ye may succeed (in becoming a true Muslim)" (Qur'an 5: 35).

"And seek help (of a Wasilah or spiritual guide and follow his instructions) with patient perseverance and prayers! It is indeed hard (to follow such instructions of your spiritual guide to gain control over your passions) except for those who are humble and meek".

"O ye who believe! Seek help (of a Wasilah or Spiritual Guide and follow his instruction to gain control over your passions) with patient perseverance and prayers. Lo! "Allah is with those who patiently persevere" (Qur'an 2: 45 and 153)

From the above Qur'anic quotations it will be explicit that all Muslims are required to do "Jihad" upon their passions. They have to

continue on striving until they gain victory over themselves!

The word “Jihad” is derived from the word “Jahd” meaning to make efforts, to try to achieve, to persevere.

The Arabic verb “Jahada” means to strive for, to toil, to be diligent, studious, to patiently persevere towards goodness, justice and perfection. “Ijtehada” means to take pains, to form the right judgment. The Qur’an supports these contentions in the following verses:

“So obey not the disbelievers but *Jahidhum behi Jehadan kabiran* i.e. strive to win them over with the utmost strenuousness of (self control taught) in this (Qur’an)” (Qur’an 25: 52).

“Whosoever *Jahada* (i.e. striveth), *Yujahedu* (i.e. striveth) for his own soul; verily Allah is not at all in need (of any efforts) from the entire creation.” (Qur’an 29: 6)

“And *jahedu* (i.e. strive) to attain Allah as ye ought to *jehadih* (i.e. strive). He had chosen you and had not laid upon you in religion any hardship, the faith of your forefather Abraham (is yours). He had named you Muslims (i.e. Surrendered to the Will of Allah) of old time and also in this (Scripture)... “(Qur’an 22: 78).

We have already read earlier (Chapter 17: E-13 to 18) how the Meccans had planned to murder Muhammad and upon his escape to Madinah they had waged wars upon him at Badr, Uhud, and the War of the Trench on the outskirts of Madinah. Muhammad was fed up with these wars and he wanted peace with the Meccans. In his efforts for peace with the Qureysh, he went to Mecca unarmed in a pilgrim’s garb with religious offerings. He was prevented from entering, but after some incidents, this “Jihad” resulted in the truce of AL HUDEY-BIYAH in 6 A.H. ensuring peace for a period of ten years (Chapter 17: E-19). Even though the terms offered by Qureysh appeared humiliating, yet to the surprise of all Muhammad willingly accepted them in his efforts or “Jihad” to have peace with the Qureysh of Mecca. (For the terms see Chapter 17: E-19). The English Research scholar Stanley Lane-Poole has written on pages XLV-XLVI of his introduction

to “*The Speeches and Table-Talk of the Prophet Mohammad*” (1915) with regard to this agreement and its after-effects as follows:

“The next year (A.H. 6) a ten years’ truce was concluded with the Qureysh, in pursuance of which a strange scene took place in the following spring. It was agreed that Muhammad and his people should perform the Lesser Pilgrimage, and that the Qureysh should for that purpose vacate Mecca for three days. Accordingly in March 629, about two thousand Muslims with Muhammad at their head on his famous camel, El-Kaswa,—the camel on which he had fled from Mecca,—trooped down the valley and performed the rites which every Muslim to this day observes.

It was surely a strange sight which at this time presented itself in the valley of Mecca, a sight unique in the history of the world. The ancient city is for three days evacuated by all its inhabitants, high and low, every house deserted; and as they retire, the exiled converts, many years banished from their birthplace, approach in a great body, accompanied by their allies, revisit the empty homes of their childhood, and within the short allotted space fulfil the rites of pilgrimage. The ousted inhabitants, climbing the heights around, take refuge under tents and other shelter among the hills and glens; and clustering on the overhanging peak of Abu-Kubeys, thence watch the movements of the visitors beneath them, as with the prophet at their head they make the circuit of the Kaabah and the rapid procession between Es-Safa and Marwah; and anxiously scan every figure if perchance they may recognise among the worshippers some long-lost friend or relative. It was a scene rendered possible only by the throes which gave birth to Islam.

“When the three days were over, Muhammad and his party peaceably returned to Madinah; and the Meccans re-entered their homes. But this pilgrimage, and the self-restraint of the Muslims therein, advanced the cause of Islam among its enemies. Converts increased daily and some leading men of the Qureysh now went over to Muhammad. The clans around were sending in their deputations of homage.”

Thus it will be seen that the “Jehad” or the “achieved self-control”

over their passions had won for the Muslims very rewarding dividends.

But this state of good relations did not last for long. The Meccans saw that Muhammad was winning everyone over to his religion by his wondrous examples of “Jihad” or self-control. Out of jealousy and hatred for Muhammad, they deliberately broke the truce by massacring inside the sanctuary of the Kabaah itself one of the tribes who were the allies of the Muslims (Chapter 17: E-20 and Chapter 21: D-1).

Let us recount what was the character of the people of Mecca and their conduct towards the prophet. During the first thirteen years of his preachings, there was hardly a day when he and his followers were not insulted, molested, attacked, tortured and even wounded. The prophet himself invariably got the worst treatment. It was normal for him to return home daily bleeding from head to foot. No other prophet from the time of Adam till Jesus had suffered so much torture. Abu Sufian’s wife had had the prophet’s uncle Hamza stabbed from the back and killed. After that she not only dismembered each and every part of his body and mutilated these but she even tried to swallow the heart of this martyr. The Meccans had tortured to death all Muslims that fell into their hands. The prophet also knew well the names of each and every one of the forty persons from the forty clans of the Qureysh who had surrounded his house at Mecca with the avowed intention to murder him when he escaped from amongst their midst that night (Chapter 17: E-14). When this was the bloodthirsty nature of the Qureysh and if Mecca was to fall into the hands of the Muslims, then what could one expect but the revenge they so rightly deserved?

It is but natural to expect that all these cruel murderers should be slaughtered and a river of blood should flow down the streets of Mecca. A Scottish scholar in his comments upon the victory of Muhammad over Mecca has written as follows:

“Now was the time for the Prophet to show his bloodthirsty nature. His old persecutors are at his feet. Will he not trample on them, torture them, revenge himself after his own cruel manner (*i.e.*

speaking generally of the Qureysh tribe to which Muhammad also belonged)? Now the man will come forward in his true colours; we may prepare our horror and cry shame beforehand.

“But what is this? Is there no blood in the streets (of Mecca)? Where are the bodies of the thousands that (he presumed for the sake of argument to) have been butchered? Facts are hard things.”

Then this Professor goes on to quote from Stanley Lane-Pool, (pages XLVI-XLVII of *ibid*) which will show how Muhammad carried out his Jihad against the captured Mecca:

“But the final keystone was set in the eighth year of the flight (A. D. 630), when a body of Qureysh broke the truce by attacking an ally of the Muslims; and Muhammad forthwith marched upon Mecca with ten thousand men, and the city, defence being hope-less, surrendered.

“The day of Muhammad’s greatest triumph over his enemies was also the day of his grandest victory over himself. He freely forgave the Qureysh all the years of sorrow and cruel scorn they had afflicted him with and gave an amnesty to the whole population of Mecca. Four criminals, whom justice condemned, made up Muhammad’s proscription list, when he entered as a conqueror the city of his bitterest enemies. The army followed his example and entered quietly and peaceably; no house was robbed, no woman insulted. One thing alone suffered destruction. Going to the Kaabah, Muhammad stood before each of the three hundred and sixty idols and pointed to it with his staff, saying, “Truth is come and falsehood has fled away!” and at these words all the idols and household gods of Mecca and round about were destroyed.

“It was thus that Muhammad entered again his native city. Through all the annals of conquest, there is no triumphant entry like unto this one” (*Muhammad, Prophet and Statesman* by W. Montgomery Watt).

This incident brings out the meaning of Jihad as taught by Muhammad. This is the “*sine qua non*” to be a true Muslim, who lives for Allah and by Allah in complete surrender to Him and in absolute

control over his passions as ordered in Qur'an 6: 163. This is the first stage or step towards becoming a "Sufi".

Today if these lofty ideals of Muhammad's Jihad against Mecca and even his accepting the humiliating terms of truce in 6. A.H. just for the sake of having peace with Qureysh could be followed by the Arab States in bringing Israel into a permanent peace agreement, will it not be much better than the present state of hostilities which is doing harm to both sides? Is not peace on any reasonable terms with a little give and take better than war for both sides? One has to realise that Israel has come to stay up till the Battle of Armageddon. Thereafter there will be only one single government, neither an Israel nor the Arab Governments nor the multi-governments, nations and races of today. We shall read about this universal brotherhood and the wonderful period to follow in the last chapters of this research when there will be the universal surrender by mankind to the will of Allah.

If no peaceful settlement is arrived at between the Arabs and Israel, then this could easily spark off the dreaded Third World War—the Nuclear Holocaust, because of the backing given by the two Nuclear blocs to the two protagonists. We shall read the Biblical and other warnings in this respect in the following chapters.

Is not the threat of the next world-war most alarming for every right-thinking person? Every effort should therefore be made to achieve lasting peace on the following broad principles:

1. The State of Israel to be recognised by all Arab States as something which has come to exist. Hence she must be guaranteed her safety.
2. Israel to be given unhindered use of not only the Gulf of Aqaba but that her ships as well as ships carrying her cargoes to be permitted to use freely the Suez Canal.
3. Israel to return the lands occupied in the 1967 conflict and restrict her boundaries to the pre-1967 limits by an act of her parliament.

4. Israel to pay adequate compensation for the settlement of Arab Refugees and destruction of Arab properties in Israeli-occupied territories including the original Palestine.
5. The money now being spent on war could be used for industrialisation and improving the lot of the suffering masses in the area.
6. Joint Schemes to be developed for the use of the waters of Jordan River so that the desert lands of these areas may again be converted into "A land flowing with milk and honey" for the common advantage of all concerned!

After all, both sides must realise that they come from the descendants of the same Patriarch—Abraham. The Arabs are the descendants of his first-born Ishmael. The Jews are the children of Jacob, the son of Isaac, the second son of Abraham. Hence the two sides are really ancestral brothers! Then why all this bloodshed between two groups of brothers? Why this insane policy of "The nearer the blood the nearer bloody?"

Everyone will agree that "*Jihad*" or self-control as practised by Muhammad against Mecca in 6 A.H. at the truce of Hudeybiyah can still bring about happiness and joy in West Asia (Chapter 17: E-19). Why not give it a serious thought and effort?

#### **D. The Origin of Sufiism**

Upon his conversion, Omar (Chapter 17: E-7) made a statement to Muhammad that he loved him very much but not more than his wealth, children and wife. Thereupon the Prophet placed his hand upon the breast of Omar and asked him what he felt then. His answer was, "I love you more than my wealth, children and wife but not more than myself". The Prophet again placed his hand on Omar's breast and asked him to express his feelings. Omar replied, "I now love you even more than my own self". Such were the wonderful experiences of those coming in contact with the Prophet. Incidents of this nature were common daily



occurrences. *Muhammad used to instil love into his followers.* It was therefore small wonder when the envoy of the Qureysh returned to Mecca from Al Hudeybiyah (Chapter 17: E-19) that he made the statement: “I have seen many a Roman Emperor and many a Persian Emperor in their pomp and splendour *but never have I seen any man so honoured (out of love and respect) as Muhammad is by his comrades*”.

Pagan Arabia was further dumbfounded by the wondrous inimitable language of the Qur'an, which Muhammad used to recite in a state of trance. They well realised that Allah was speaking through him for otherwise it was impossible that such wonderful language should come from the mouth of a man, especially one who did not even know how to read or write, unless divinely inspired!

The Qur'an further revealed that Moses had numerous conversations with Allah, whilst many of the other earlier Prophets had heard Allah's orders or had communications from Him.

This quite naturally inspired them with love and a desire to draw near unto the Creator. One family in particular went out of its way to try and attain proximity with Allah. They comprised Ali bin Abu Taleb (the cousin of the Prophet), his wife Fatemah (the youngest daughter of the Prophet) and their two sons Hasan and Hussain. Besides them there were about 450 others known as “Ashab-us-Safa” who also were very much interested in these mystical experiences. The leaders of this group were Awaysu-e-Qarani (the mystic who was presented the last clothes that the Prophet wore before his departure from earthly life), his grandson Hasan Basri, Haritha and Kumayl Bin Ziad to whom Ali had dictated the famous supplication known as *Doa-e-Kumayl*.

### **1. Ali—The Spiritual Heir**

When Muhammad was blessed with the honour of visiting Allah in Heaven on the night of “Mehraj-un-Nabi” (Chapter 17: E-9) he had been given a cloak by Allah with instructions to present it to that leader amongst the Muslims who gave a particular reply. This person

eventually would be the spiritual heir of the Prophet.

Accordingly, after his return he asked Abu Bakr what he would do if this heavenly mantle of the prophet devolved upon him. Prophet hood was not implied. Abu Bakr replied that if he was blessed with the cloak he would use it for the spread of Islam all over the world. When Omar was asked the same query, he stated he would try to establish justice and equality throughout the earth. Osman contended that he would try to spread the knowledge of the Qur'an throughout mankind. Ali's answer was that he would try to hide the sins of humanity with this cloak. As this idea of Ali's was the right answer, *the Prophet presented this divinely-gifted cloak to him, convinced that Ali was his spiritual heir.*

Another incident which brings out vividly that Ali was the spiritual heir of the Holy Prophet is quoted hereunder from the research carried out by an eminent English Orientalist:

"After some three years of small success, he (Muhammad) invited forty of his chief kindred to an entertainment; and there stood up and told them what his pretension was: which of them would second him in that? Amid the doubt and silence of all, *young Ali, as yet a lad of sixteen, impatient of the silence, started-up, and exclaimed in passionate fierce language, 'That he would!'* The assembly, among whom was Abu Taleb, Ali's father, could not be unfriendly to Muhammad; yet the sight there, of one unlettered elderly man, with a lad of sixteen, deciding on such an enterprise against all mankind, appeared ridiculous to them; the assembly broke-up in laughter. Nevertheless it proved not a laughable thing; it was a very serious thing! As for this young Ali one cannot but like him. A noble-minded creature, as he shows himself, now and always afterwards; full of affection worthy of a Christian knighthood. He died by assassination in the Mosque of Baghdad, a death occasioned by his own generous fairness, confidence in the fairness of others: he said, if the wound proved not unto death, they must pardon the assassin; but if it did, then they must slay him straightaway so that they two in the same hour might appear before God, and see which

side of that quarrel was the just one!" (pages 58-59 of *The Hero As Prophet* by Thomas Carlyle).

*One day Ali asked the Prophet to teach him how he could attain the nearness of Allah.* Muhammad asked him to sit facing him as if in prayer and to watch carefully what he was doing. He held his breath, stiffened his tongue so that it may not move, closed his eyes, brought his body up erect in the sitting position with both hands clasping the thighs near the respective knees. He then moved his head with a jerk diagonally from the right uplifted position, to the left lowered position. The result was that the organs of the body gave out miraculously a sound "La Ilaaha Illal Laahu Muhammadur Rasoolullah" *i.e.* There is none worthy of divine worship except Allah (and) Muhammad is the messenger of Allah. He repeated this performance three times. Then he blessed Ali and asked him to do likewise thrice, which he did. This is called "Dhikr" and will be referred to later in this Chapter (Chapter 21: E).

*'Then Muhammad proceeded to teach Ali the mystical meaning of the secret Code letters appearing before the beginning of many of the Surahs (Chapters of the Qur'an) like "Alif Lam Mim" which is equivalent in English to A. L. M. to be found at the beginning of the Surah 2 etc. Such knowledge which was given to Ali was not to be written down but to be learnt by heart.* Hence it is known as "Ilm-e-Sina" or "Knowledge by heart" as against the Qur'an which was recorded in writing and is known as "Ilm-e-Safina" or knowledge recorded on sheets (of parchment, cloth, barks, skins etc). Both these categories of knowledge may be classified under the Qur'anic phrase "Ilm-e-Ladunni" or knowledge emanating from Allah.

*As Ali was the only person in whom the Prophet confided the knowledge of these mystical letters of the Qur'an, he is also called "Sharik-Ul-Qur'an", which in these circumstances means that he is the only person to whom the Prophet disclosed the mystical secrets of the Qur'an. Here are a few traditions of Ali which will bear out what has*

been said before:

*“The Prophet of Allah enlightened me (Ali) on a thousand branches of knowledge, each branch opening a thousand gates”.*

*“When I (Ali) asked the messenger of Allah about anything, never did he refrain from telling it to me, and when I had nothing to ask him, he himself started enlightening me”.*

*“Do ask me” said Ali “whatever you want me to tell you about. By Allah! I can tell you about everything that is going to happen until the crack of Doom. You enquire of me about the Book of Allah, I know whether it descended during the day or in the night or whether it came down in the hills or on the plains”.*

Some traditions of the Prophet will also elucidate further the concept of “*Ilm-e-Sina*”. “*Ali is the treasure of all my knowledge*”.

Except Ali there was no one to announce: “Do ask me (*i.e.* Ali) whatever you want me to tell you about”.

Abdulla Ibn-Abbas records: “Of ten parts of learning Ali was given full nine, and the remaining one is shared by you all. By Allah, in the tenth part too Ali has his share”.

The following tradition is quoted from Sahih Bukhari and Suyuti’s Itqaan: “Verily the Holy Qur’an has been revealed in seven phases or aspects of which there is no phase which has not a manifest and a latent meaning. And verily Ali Ibne Abu Taleb with him is the manifest and the latent”.

When Ali mastered this knowledge, the Holy Prophet declared that if anybody wanted to have the mystical knowledge of the Qur’an they had to make an approach through Ali. This was proclaimed by the Holy Prophet Muhammad in the following public announcement:

*“Madinatul ilm wa Ali-un Bab-aha”*

Translation:

*“I am the city of knowledge and Ali is the gate of that city (through whom you can obtain the mystical knowledge)” (page 392, Vol. II,*

*Tafrihul Askia Fil Awhal Ul Ambia*).

On the return journey from his “Farewell Pilgrimage” (Chapter 17: E-27) the Prophet announced at Ghadir-e-Khum, an Oasis between Mecca and Madinah, that he had received a message from Allah to declare as follows:

*“Man Kunto Maulaho Fa Aliun Maulaho Allahhumma Wala Man Walaho Wa Aada Man Aadaho”.*

Translation:

*“He whose spiritual guide I am, Ali is also his spiritual guide, Oh Allah, You keep him as Your friend who keeps him (Ali) as his friend (and spiritual guide) and You (Allah) treat him as Your enemy who treats him (Ali) as his enemy”.*

Whilst making this statement the Prophet took Ali to his breast and pressed him very hard unto his own breast so much so that Ali felt as if his ribs would pierce into his lungs.

In this manner Muhammad conveyed all the Divine secret knowledge to Ali, which had to be given from breast to breast. In this condition, he lifted Ali and showed him to the multitude. Thus he made Ali his spiritual heir in the presence of the entire community of Muslims. Omar was the first person to congratulate Ali on his appointment as the spiritual heir of the Prophet (page 315, Vol., II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

This was the second occasion on which the secret knowledge was passed miraculously from breast to breast by pressing them together. The first such miraculous incident is quoted hereunder from pages 39-40 of “*Translation of Eastern Poetry and Prose*” by Reynold D. Nicholson, published by Cambridge University Press in 1922:

“Ibn Ishak said: Wahab son of Kaisan told me that ‘Ubaid said to him: Every year during that month (*i.e.* the month of Ramadan) the Messenger of Allah would sojourn (on Mt. Hira near Mecca) and give food to the poor that came to him. And when he passed the

month and returned from his sojourn, first of all before entering his house he would repair to the Kaabah and walk round it seven times or as often as it pleased Allah; then he would go back to his house. Now in the year when Allah sent him, in the month of Ramadan in which Allah willed concerning him what He willed of His grace, the Messenger of Allah set forth to Hira as was his wont, and his family with him. And when it was on the night on which Allah honoured him with His mission and took mercy on His servant thereby, Gabriel brought to him the command of Allah. 'He came to me', said the Messenger of Allah, 'whilst I was asleep, with a coverlet of silk brocade whereon was some writing and said, 'Read'. I 'said, 'I do not read. He pressed me with it so tightly that me thought it was death; then he let me go and said, 'Read'. I said, 'I do not read, He pressed me with it again so that me thought it was death; then he let me go and said 'Read'. I said, 'I do not read.' He pressed me with it the third time so that me thought it was death and said, 'Read.' I said 'what shall I read?' He said:

"Read in the name of thy Lord Who created,

"Who created Man of blood coagulated.

"Read! Thy Lord is the Most Beneficent,

"Who taught by the Pen,

"Taught that which they knew not unto men" (Qur'an, Surah 96: verses 1-5).

"So I read aloud, and he departed from me at last. And I awoke from my sleep, and it was as though these words were written on my heart".

After this incident, Muhammad used to recite by heart the Holy Qur'an and explain its inner meaning. Muhammad in like manner conveyed this secret divine knowledge from his breast to Ali's breast and nobody else. Since then this knowledge of "Ilm-e-Sina" or "Knowledge by breast" has been passed down in like manner from generation to generation through the spiritual heirs appointed by Ali.

Thereafter the Prophet announced at Ghadir-e-Khum:

“I will soon be called away and will have to depart from your midst, but I leave behind amidst you *Two Great Things viz: The Book of Allah (i.e. the Qur’an) and my Ahle-Bait* (which in this context means Ali, his spiritual heir and those who belong to Ali). Should ye be attached *jointly to these Two*, never, never will ye go astray after I have departed, for verily *these Two will never be separated from each other until they both meet me at the Spring of Kauther* (in Heaven on the Day of Judgment)”.

This tradition of the Prophet is famous under the name of Hadith-e-Saqlain (page 279, Vol. II, *Saheeh Muslim*).

*My Ahle-Bait*, in this particular context therefore means *Ali, his spiritual heir, and only those who would be appointed spiritual heirs by Ali and subsequently by those spiritual heirs as appointed by such appointed spiritual heirs of Ali to whom would be passed this “Ilm-e-Sina” in like manner from breast to breast to enable them to interpret and explain correctly the Qur’an in the light of prevailing and changing conditions of the world, so that the Qur’an may become a living guide through these so-called “Ahle-Bait”*. The latter would thus guide mankind to the right path in accordance with the conditions of Scientific and Social development after many centuries of progress. *Thereby the Qur’an remained not only a Divine book of guidance, but through these repositories of “Ilm-e-Sina” or spiritual heirs of the school of Ali or “Ahle-Bait” of the Prophet Muhammad it became a living Qur’an for all time to come. Thus both the qualities i.e. “The Living Qur’an that talks” and “Ahle-Bait of the Prophet” were combined into the same persons—the spiritual heirs of Ali who possess both the attributes of Hadith –e-Saqlain. And these two qualities will remain combined in such spiritual heirs of Ali until the end of this earth. They never will be parted as assured by the Holy Prophet until they meet him at the Spring of Kauther on the Day of Judgment.*

Upon the martyrdom of Osman, Muawiyah, the governor of Damascus wanted to become the first king of the Islamic Empire. He came with an army to fight Ali, the then elected Khalifa or President.

When Muawiyah realised that he could not possibly fight Ali and was faced with defeat at the battle of Siffeen, what he did to divert the minds of the Muslims was to raise the Qur'an on his lances saying, we shall follow the injunction only of the Qur'an. Whereupon Ali announced:

*"These Qur'ans (which have been raised on lances) are silent, whilst I'm the "Natik-ul -Qur'an" i.e. "the living Qur'an that speaks" (page 276 of Izalat-ul-Khifa Maqsad 2, also page 62 Khair-ul-Bareeyah).*

Further, there are those who pride themselves upon their worldly knowledge. These boast vociferously that they cannot appreciate how a spiritual person can convey the secret knowledge of the meaning of "Alif Lam Mim" and other coded letters to be found at the beginning of many of the Surahs (Chapters of the Qur'an) from breast to breast by the spiritual guide pressing his breast against the breast of the next person, who is to be appointed a spiritual guide and thus convey the secret knowledge or Ilm-e-Sina. Therefore they arrive arbitrarily at the conclusion that such a phenomenon is quite impossible for Ali or his sons Hasan and Hussain to have passed on from breast to breast this knowledge of Ilm-eSina which they might have acquired from the Holy Prophet. Hence, according to them, there is no such thing anymore in existence as "Natik-ul-Qur'an" or the Qur'an that speaks. It ended with Ali and his two sons. Further, they argue that no one who is not one of the members of "Panjatan" or the "Holy five" i.e. The Holy Prophet Muhammad, Ali his spiritual heir, Fatemah his youngest daughter and his two grand-sons Hasan and Hussain can become Able-Bait. Since all these five have departed from earthly life so they disbelieve in Hadith-e-Saqlain wherein the Prophet has announced that he was leaving behind two things for the guidance of the Muslim masses from generation to generation until the end of this earth viz:

The Qur'an and the Ahle-Bait to explain the Qur'an in the light of circumstances that may be prevailing after many centuries.

According to them, this Hadith-e-Saqlain has ceased to exist even though the Prophet had said that these two will never part until they



meet the Prophet at the Spring of Kauther (in heaven) on the Day of Judgment. According to the above quoted verse of the Qur'an, such are the enemies of the Prophet.

Everyone will appreciate that material knowledge and spiritual experiences are two absolutely different things. There is nothing whatsoever in common about them. Spirituality is not to be found in books! It is something which may be acquired after serious personal effort, patience, concentration and meditation so that one can reach the stage of "Fana" (*i.e.* losing oneself into the Almighty Allah). It is basically through individual efforts spread over several years of experience that one acquires the spiritual stage of "Fana". So it is something which is beyond the scope of logic. Because the intelligentsia have not had the experience so they feel that nobody else can reach such a stage. Such an argument appears very hollow to a spiritualist who has such experience. A world-renowned educationalist has described wonderfully the difference between these two states as follows:

"My ego hesitated a little about the reply to that, and sense-perception heightened the difficulty by referring to dreams. 'Do you not see', it said, 'how, when you are asleep, you believe things and imagine circumstances, holding them to be stable and enduring, and so long as you are in that dream-condition, have no doubts about them? And is it not the case that when you awake you know that all you have imagined and believed is unfounded and ineffectual? Why then are you confident that all your waking beliefs, whether from sense or intellect, are genuine? They are true in respect of your present state; but it is possible that a state will come upon you whose relation to your waking consciousness is analogous to the relation of the latter to dreaming. In comparison with this state your waking consciousness would be like dreaming! When you have entered into this state, you will be certain that all the suppositions of your intellect are empty imaginings. It may be that state is what the Sufis claim as their special 'state' (*i.e.* "Fana" or mystic union or ecstasy), for they consider that in their 'state' (or ecstasies), which occur when they have withdrawn into themselves

and are absent from their senses, they witness states (or circumstances) which do not tally with these principles of the intellect, perhaps that 'state' is death; for the Messenger of God (God bless and preserve him) says: 'The people are dreaming; but when they die, they become awake'. So perhaps life in this world is a dream by comparison with the world to come; and when a man dies, things come to appear differently to him from what he now beholds" (pages 24-25 of *The Faith and Practice of Al-Ghazali* by W. Montgomery Watt, published 1963 by George Allen & Unwin Ltd., London).

The Qur'an also confirms that when a person dies:

"Certainly you were unaware of it (during your life on earth), but now (upon your death or upon your attainment of "Fana" in Allah) We (Allah) have taken off thee thy covering, and thy sight today is distinct" (Qur'an 50: 22).

*Those who believe in the Sunnah (i.e. the teachings of the Prophet) realise very well that the laudable object of Hadith-e-Saqlain and the appointment of Ali as Moula or spiritual Heir at Ghadir-e Khum was to provide the Muslim population wherever they may spread in the course of time in the coming several millenia until the end of this earth with a spiritual guide in each and every locality and town who could be approached easily by the Muslim public of that locality with their day-to-day problems in the light of the conditions prevailing in that area after many centuries and advice be obtained looking at the particular circumstances of the questioner. These devoted heirs of Ali vowed to lead a life of following the Sunnah i.e. teachings of Muhammad and asking nothing for their counsel are referred to in the Divine Scripture as follows:-*

"And there is a type of man, who dedicates his life (to follow the Sunnah of Prophet Muhammad by taking a vow upon ordainment to the spiritual school of Ali) to earn the pleasure of Allah, and Allah is full of kindness to such devotees" (Qur'an 2: 207).

"Follow (the advices of) those (the Ahle-Baits), i.e. accept them (as your spiritual guides) who ask you no fee and who are rightly

guided” (Qur’an 36: 21).

“Those (the Ahle-Baits) are they whom Allah guides, so follow their guidance. Say (O Muhammad unto mankind): I (and my Ahle-Baits) ask of you no fee for it (*i.e.* for giving guidance) ...” (Qur’an 6: 91).

This wise and pious system set up by Muhammad at Ghadir-e-Khum by appointing Ali as his sole spiritual heir, with authority to appoint his spiritual heirs or to use the words of the Prophet “Ahle-Baits” has spread all over the Muslim world. Such holy men appointed in terms of Hadith-e-Saqlain are now popularly known as the “Sufi Khalifas”. They are to be found in each and every town and area, where there is a sizeable Muslim population. These living Qur’ans-cum-Ahle-Baits are always ready to help and guide other fellow human beings, without any question of caste, colour or creed, whether they are Muslims or not, making no difference, giving good advice free to all who come to them, thus becoming a living Qur’an-cum-Ahle-Bait for the guidance of all mankind as was promised by the Holy Prophet in Hadith-e-Saqlain.

This system has been described glowingly and vividly in the Qur’an as follows:

“Allah is the Light (which lights up or guides) the heaven and the earth. The example of His light (being spread to guide mankind) is (Prophet Muhammad, who is) as a lamp stand or pillar on which is a lamp. The lamp (of the light of spiritual guidance of Muhammad) is in a glass (which is a reference to Ali the spiritual guide or Moula appointed by the Holy Prophet at Ghadir-e-Khum on his farewell pilgrimage according to Hadith-e-Saqlain). This glass is (*i.e.* Ali by his spreading the spiritual teachings through his spiritual heirs or Ahle- Baits became) as it were a bright shining star (thereby living Qur’ans are always eager and willing to give the right guidance free of charge to mankind without any distinction of caste, colour or creed), lit from a blessed Olive-tree (is a reference to patriarch Abraham the friend of Allah and the father of all circumcised Nations of believers). (This particular lamp or Muhammad) is

neither of the East (*i.e.* not from the Jews who are also the descendants of Abraham but who had settled mainly in Palestine and the East) nor of the West (*i.e.* not from Nazarenes or the followers of Jesus, another of the descendants of Abraham, who spread out mainly towards the West from Palestine), whose oil (*i.e.* the teachings of Islam because of its simplicity and piety) would almost glow forth (of itself because of its inherent beauties) even though no fire touched it (*i.e.* without any great effort to spread same. Even today Islam does not have any regular Missionary Organisation worth the mention to propagate Islam). (This system of the Prophet appointing Ali as his spiritual successor or “the Qur’an that speaks” with instructions to appoint spiritual successors or “living Qur’ans” generation after generation to give free correct guidance and thus light up the path to be followed is referred to here as) light upon light (*i.e.* One Able-Bait appoints another before his departure from earthly life)—Allah guides to His light (*i.e.* to the Ahle-Baits of the Prophet or the spiritual successors of Ali, the living Qur’an *i.e.* the Sufi halifas now spread all over the Muslim world) whom He pleases (*i.e.* blesses) and Allah sets forth (His guidance) in parables for men (to understand), and Allah is the Knower of all things.

“(This lamp of spiritual guidance started by the Prophet at Ghadir-e-Khum through Ali, his spiritual heir for the appointment of spiritual guides for mankind from generation to generation) is to be found in houses (*i.e.* Khanqahs or places of these spiritual guides or Able-Baits) which Allah hath allowed to be exalted in order that “*Dhikr*” (for the explanation of the word *Dhikr*” please see the very next section *i.e.* Chapter 21: E of this book) of *His name may be duly performed therein*. (These Sufi heirs of Ali or the Ahle Baits of the prophet—the living Qur’ans knowing the secret Ilm-e-Sina) thus glorify Him (Allah) therein in the mornings and evenings” (Qur’an 24: 35-36).

Saad bin Waqqas related that the Apostle of Allah said to Ali: “You are to me as Hazrat Haroon (Prophet Aaron) was to Hazrat Moosa (Prophet Moses) but there will be no prophets (born) after me” (page 278, Vol. II, Book of Hadith by Muslim).

The Jews and the Christians are also fully aware according to the Holy Bible that along with the Promised Prophet would come a great personage by the name of Ali or Eli, according to the Hebrew manner of pronouncing proper names as recorded in Chapter 13: C. Hence the importance of Ali is also confirmed by the current versions of the Holy Bible. Consequently Ali becomes the greatest saint not only amongst the Muslims but even amongst those who believe in the Holy Bible!

As the soul of Prophet Muhammad *i.e.* Nur-e-Muhammadi was directly responsible for the guidance of all Prophets from Adam upto and inclusive of Jesus as confirmed repeatedly in the Gospel of Barnabas; so also according to Sufis the soul of Ali, the highest saint of Islam, was responsible for the elevation and guidance of each and every saint from the creation of this earth till its destruction (pages 85-86, Tafsir Roufi—Translation of Qur'an published 1293 A.H.—1876 A.D.). Thus amongst all Muslims, irrespective of whether they are Shias or those following the Sunnah—the teachings of Muhammad, the highest position of honour is given to Ali, who is the originator of Sufiism or the system of Ahle-Bait of the Holy Prophet or Natik-ul-Qur'an, the talking Qur'an or the spiritual guides having the secret knowledge of Ilm-e-Sina to guide mankind from generation to generation, until the end of this earth in terms of Hadith-e-Saqlain.

At the time of Muhammad's departure from earthly life there were about 450 Ashabus- Safa or Sufi spiritualists as against over one million converts. This worked out to about one spiritualist to 20,000 followers.

About two centuries back there was one spiritual guide or heir of Ali to an average of about 50,000 Muslims. But during the last two centuries there has been a population explosion, whilst the number of spiritual heirs has remained practically the same. As a result there is now only one Sufi Khalifa per approximately a million Muslims.

Let us take a look at some well-known historical facts to appreciate better the vast differences between the two states of intellect and spiritual experiences.

Whenever the Holy Prophet addressed any gathering he always spoke in a manner, as if a mother was explaining something out of love of her children. His voice was soft but steady. Even in gatherings consisting of a hundred thousand or more, he would not shout, yet his voice was as clearly heard by those sitting a hundred yards away as by those who were near him. Logically this is not possible without loud-speakers, electric amplifiers *etc.* Nevertheless it was miraculously so. This is a manifestation of “Telepathy”.

If there were people speaking different languages, which was quite common during the last two years of the earthly life of Muhammad then the audience would hear miraculously the speech in their own native mother tongues at the same time irrespective of the fact that amongst those present were people speaking a dozen or more different languages. Muhammad used to converse freely in the languages of foreigners, when they came to speak with him. *This is the miraculous power of telepathy which the Prophet used to display daily!*

Whenever Muhammad used to send any envoy to foreign kingdoms, the envoy concerned would miraculously be able to speak the local language as soon as he crossed the border of that country. *For example the following envoys who knew only Arabic were Wahiya Qalbi but he spoke with Emperor Heraclius in Greek, Abdullah Bin Hazafa Sahmi in Persian with the Persian Emperor, Omar bin Ummia Zameri in the Abyssinian language with the Emperor of that state, Hatib ibne Abi Baltaah Lahmi with the authorities in Alexandria in their local language, Shaja ibn Abi Wahub Haras Yamani spoke to Syrians in their language and so on* (page 237, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). *Such was his power of “Telephathy” which he could even gift to his envoys.*

The Meccans had broken the truce of Hudeybiyah of 6 A.H. They had joined the tribe of Banu Bakr and murdered several members of the tribe of Khuzaa by night in the sanctuary of Kabaah where they had taken shelter. The survivors of this tribe of Khuzaa appealed that very night in their prayers from Mecca for Muhammad’s help. Immediately

Muhammad replied from Madinah that very night “Labbaik, Labbaik” i.e. “I am present, I hear your complaint”. The next morning Muhammad announced that their friends the tribe of Khuzaa had been attacked by Banu Bakr and the Meccans the previous night and their envoy will reach Madinah in three days and that he had already assured them of his help in the telepathic reply he had given to them at Mecca from Madinah the previous night (page 265, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Omar sent an army in the year 20 A.H. under the command of Sariya to Persia. The Persians had prepared an ambush by hiding an army on the slopes of mountains at a place called Nahavand, which was about 1500 miles away from Madinah. The battle of Nahavand took place on a Friday. At that time Khalifa Omar was delivering the Friday Sabbath sermon in the Mosque of the Prophet. By his spiritual power Omar saw the Muslim army falling into the trap set by the Persians. Omar could not restrain himself. He shouted out the warning thrice:

“O Sariya (the commander of the Muslims)! take shelter of the mountain, urgently take shelter of mountain” (page 217, Vol. III. *Mishkat Sharit* and page 89 of *Tarik Ul Khulefa* by Jalaluddin Seoti).

After the prayers were over, many of the Muslims led by Saad bin Waqqas and Abdur Rahman bin Auf and others questioned Omar as to what he meant by the strange phrase he had repeated thrice:

“O Sariya! take shelter of the mountain, urgently take shelter of the mountain”.

Omar tendered his apologies and said he was sorry that he had uttered something in the middle of his sermon, which was not a part of it. Omar then explained, he saw through his Spiritual power that the Muslim army sent for the conquest of Persia was marching into a valley where an ambush had been prepared, so he could not help himself and shouted the warning out to Sariya, the Commander of this army to take shelter of the mountain. His mental telepathic warning had been heard by Sariya and the Muslims army had been saved! Everybody present

noted down the date and time of this incident. When Sariya returned with the victorious army from Persia, the people of Madinah surrounded him and asked what happened at that particular date and time. Sariya replied that he was leading the Muslim Army into a valley flanked by mountains at a place called "Nahavand" about 1500 miles away from Madinah. He suddenly heard the warning shout in the voice of Omar. Omar, the Khalifa, was not anywhere in sight. Sariya was much puzzled. He immediately did as instructed by the voice of Omar. If he had not received this warning from Omar then the whole Muslim army would have been massacred. This resulted in a signal victory for the Muslims in the battle of Nahavand. Here is but one of many such historical events of the power of spiritual telepathy which could be quoted.

Syed Abdul Qadir Jilani, the great descendant of Hasan (see Chapter 21: D-6) used to deliver his speeches in Baghdad. These were heard and recorded simultaneously by his Khalifas in the various towns in which they had settled from Samarkand, Bokhara, Tashkant in Russian Turkistan to Fez in Morocco, Alhambra and Madrid in Spain. Whenever they would meet one another once in five to ten years they used to compare their notings of the speeches of Syed Abdul Qadir Jilani and surprisingly they were correct verbatim, even though recorded simultaneously at places which were thousands of miles apart. How was it possible without any of our modern scientific discoveries? (pages 96-97, *Bahjatul Asrar wa Madanul Anwar* in Arabic by Shaikh Nuruddin Hasan Bin Yousuf Bin Jarirul Lahmi Ashshat Nufi, 606 A.H.). Is this not quite beyond the scope of the intellect? Can worldly people explain logically how it took place without radio, electricity or any other modern gadgets? Do they not have to admit defeat? This is what the Sufis call spiritual telepathy.

Do you laugh at these, are you cynical or sceptical? Well you are entitled to your worldly intellectual knowledge, just as much as a Sufi is entitled to his spiritual experiences! If you had the knowledge that is imparted by the Divine Creator to his beloved Sufi Khalifas in terms of



Hadith-e Saqlain you would certainly not be laughing.

It is very disappointing that people condemn and mock things which they do not comprehend. It is indeed a sad thing that if people cannot do this or that or something else, they are inclined to argue: "Oh! but that is impossible, quite impossible, such things are beyond human knowledge". This, of course, is nonsense, because a very short time ago, it was stated that man could never send a message across the Atlantic by radio. Then it was said that man would never fly the Atlantic in an aeroplane. It was contended that no one could possibly go faster than the speed of sound because people would die. It was also reported that man would never be able to get into space because the heat generated would burn him up. Things which were considered utterly impossible yesterday are commonplace events today. Now we not only bounce television programmes off an artificial satellite and radio messages off the Moon, Mars, and Venus but have also put man repeatedly on the Moon and are now planning visits to Mars and who knows what else?

Let me assure you that when the Saint Saviour is disclosed, he would bring the whole world to one religion. He would fill earth with so much piety and goodness as the world was filled with wickedness at the time of his birth (Chapter 21: D-6; 26: A, 1-6; 29 and 30).

When this takes place after the Battle of Armageddon in a few years as mentioned in the last part of this book, the people would be able to communicate with each other even though thousands of miles apart by telepathy. They would not require the scientific toys of today *i.e.* telephones, telex, radio, the telegram and television to communicate with one another! Just as the Sufi Khalifas of the past 1,400 years have been doing in terms of Hadith-e-Saqlain so would the mass public also be able to do after their spiritual emancipation by the Saint Saviour, the Imam Mahdi. They would come to know the wishes of Allah and start acting upon them even before the same have been announced! Allah would grant the wishes of such people even before they have prayed for

the same! That would be so because the people have surrendered themselves completely to live according to the wishes of Allah—*Thy will be done on earth as it is done in heaven*. Then only would the general masses realise the stage in which these Sufi Khalifas of Ali have always been for the past fourteen centuries, and why they have been given the title of Natik-ul-Qur'an, or the Qur'an that speaks and Ahle-Baits of the Holy Prophet in accordance with the declaration of Hadith-e-Saqlain at Ghadir-e-Khum, because they have been living in a stage of "Fana" or complete surrender to Allah, acting only according to His decrees—the Sunnah of Muhammad and not on their own wishes or desires. Hence they have been blessed with miraculous powers and an insight which is far beyond the ken of ordinary people, who are in a stage in which they are like one dreaming but imagining it to be real as compared to the stage in which these Sufi Khalifas are—indeed an incomparable difference between the two conditions.

## 2. The Spiritual Heirs of Ali

Ali appointed four spiritual heirs or "Ahle-Baits" of the Prophet Muhammad in accordance with the "Sunnah" to carry on the guidance of the Muslim masses just as the Prophet, himself, had done in appointing four Khalifas of Islam about which we shall read hereafter (Chapter 21: D-3). Even Allah had created four great Angels for the purpose of administering the whole of the universe (Chapter 20: E-12). Hence four nominees is common to all.

These spiritual Heirs appointed by Ali in terms of Hadith-e-Saqlain were each given power to appoint at least one but usually four or more spiritual heirs of the school of Ali or "Ahle-Baits" of Prophet Muhammad to carry on the mystical teachings of the Qur'an from generation to generation as promised in Hadith-e-Saqlain. These first four spiritual heirs of Ali or "Ahle-Baits" to use the word coined by the Prophet for this purpose were:-

1. Hasan (his eldest son, who was poisoned),

2. Hussain (his second son, the Great Martyr of Karbala),
3. Khwaja Kumayal Bin Ziad, and
4. Khwaja Hasan of Basra (or Hasan Basri) (pages 2-3, Vol. I Tazkira Auliaye Hind Kamil by Mirza Muhammad Akhtar Delhavi, 1928).

This system of having four Khalifas followed by both the Holy Prophet Muhammad and Ali has brought to an end for all time the system of the Jewish Prophets of appointing a “wasi” or only a single “Apostolic Heir” for each prophet.

The Jewish system was a good one so long as it was meant for only one race *i.e.* the Jews. To control only one community one “Wasi” or “Apostolic Heir” was not only natural but also quite adequate.

This system of one prophet for one community continued on uptil and inclusive of Jesus, the second last of the Prophets of the world. The Holy Bible confirms that Jesus had come for only the Jews in the following passages:

“... Preaching the word to none but unto the Jews only” (Acts II: 19).

“The word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus ...” (Acts 10: 36).

“... Jesus sent (them) forth, and commanded them, saying go not into the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not.

“But go rather to the lost sheep of the House of Israel” (St. Matt. 10: 5-6).

“I pray for them, (*i.e.* Jews who followed Jesus): I pray not for the World, but (only) for them, which Thou hast given me ...” (St. John 17: 19).

Jesus has given the following further clarification on the position of Muhammad the Messenger of God, on page 101 of *“The Gospel of Barnabas”*:

“Verily I (Jesus) say unto you, that every prophet when he is come

hath bourne to *one nation only* the mark of the mercy of God. And so their words were not extended save to that people to which they were sent. But the messenger of God when he shall come, God shall give to him as it were the seal of His hand, insomuch that *he shall carry salvation and mercy to all the nations of the world* that shall receive his doctrine”,

Hence each and every prophet uptil Jesus was for only one nation but Muhammad was the saviour for peoples all over the earth. Therefore in the case of Muhammad it was absolutely necessary to have numerous “apostles” or “Khalifas”. Otherwise how could the whole world be effectively covered?

Further, if the Jewish system of “Wasi” was to be accepted by Islam, then whom would Ali appoint as his “Wasi”—Hasan or Hussain?

If Ali appointed either as his “Wasi” then he would be going against the “Sunnah” or teachings of Muhammad, which required that both his sons had to be given equal respect and position. In support the following popular “Sunnah” is quoted from page 78 of “*Ali The Caliph*” by the Arab Shia scholar Salmin:

“Jabir, son of Abdulla Ansari, relates that once he asked the Prophet that after his devotion to God and His Prophet who else were to be obeyed next. The Prophet said: ‘First my Caliphs (*i.e.* Abu Bakr, Omar and Osman) are to be obeyed, next the Godly saints of whom *Ali is the first and next after him are his sons Hasan and Hussain and their sons*’.

Thus the “Sunnah” or this famous well-known order of Muhammad is to accept not only both Hasan and Hussain but also the sons of both of them with equal respect. This Sunnah thus destroys completely the system of “Wasi” or “Apostolic Heir” of the earlier Jewish Prophets, because according to even the Shia research scholar it orders respect to the Khalifas of the Prophet (*i.e.* Abu Bakr, Omar and Osman), then Ali, then Hasan and Hussain the two sons of Ali through Fatemah, the daughter of the Prophet, and then their sons (*i.e.* the sons

of both Hasan and Hussain).

From Hasan Basri spread out the fourteen schools of Sufism known as the “Fourteen Khanwade” (page 3, Vol. I, *Tazkira Auliaye Hind Kamil*). When Hasan Basri died a voice from heaven announced in Arabic as follows:

“Surely Allah has chosen Adam and Noah and the children of Abraham and the children of Hasan (Basri)!” (page 8, *Tazkiratul Abedin* by Haji Muhammad Abid, 1333 A.H.).

But Hasan Basri did not marry! So he had no children! Hence the reference to children of Hasan Basri represents his disciples—the fourteen spiritual schools of Sufiism or “Khanwade” which have originated from him (page 3, Vol. 1, *Tazkira Auliaye Hind Kamil*). One may rightly question: Why was Hasan Basri given such a great honour even upon his death? The answer is: because he was the fourth Khalifa of Ali in terms of Hadith-e-Saqlain. If this be the honour given to the fourth, then what is the position of the three who were above him? They are obviously in such a high status that it is not possible to express it fully in writing.

Till the present day not a single Sufi prayer is recited to Allah for forgiveness and success, without invoking the assistance of Muhammad, Ali, the “Four Pirs” (the abovementioned four spiritual heirs appointed by Ali as “Ahle-Baits” for the guidance of the world) and the “Fourteen Khanwade” and their descendants and disciples, because Islamic mysticism known as Sufiism has been spread all over the world from this source and the “Ilm-e-Sina” is still being handed down from generation to generation from breast to breast in terms of Hadith-e-Saqlain amongst the Sufi schools.

Each person who is appointed a *Khalifa* of the school of Ali or spiritual guide must appoint and pass on the *Ilm-e-Sina* to at least one person and usually to four and sometimes even more, before he leaves this earthly life. Consequently the line of “Ahle-Bait” appointed by Muhammad at the Oasis of Ghadir-e-Khum on his farewell pilgrimage

by appointing Ali as *Maula* (spiritual guide) or Ahle-Bait to give guidance and explain the Qur'an has continued till now and will continue in an unbroken chain until the end of this earth as foretold by the Holy Prophet in Hadith-e-Saqlain.

Some scholars would like to point out that they have always understood that *Ahle-Bait* meant only the direct descendants of the Holy Prophet Muhammad, so how did Ali appoint his third and fourth Khalifas to the position of Ahle-Bait, when they were not related by blood to him?

"Ahle-Bait" in Arabic stands for housewives. This is supported by two groups of verses of the Qur'an. The wives of Prophet Abraham are addressed in the Qur'an 11: 71-73 as "Ahle- Bait" or housewives of Abraham. In Qur'an 33: 32-33 the word "Ahle Bait" has again been used in the plural number feminine gender for the wives of Prophet Muhammad. But this word has been used by Prophet Muhammad generally to include not only his wives but also all relatives of his wives *e.g.* Fathers-in-law, sons, daughters, sons in-law, grand-children *i.e.* all the members of his family, who are connected in any way with any one of his wives became the Ahle-Bait of the Prophet by blood relationship. Hence "Ahle-Bait" covers all "members of the House" of the Holy Prophet. The prominent "Ahle-Bait" besides his wives were Abu Bakr (elder father-in-law), Omar (younger father in-law), Osman (elder son-in-law, husband of Ruquiah and on her death of Umme Kulsum, the second and third daughters of the Prophet), Ali (youngest son-in-law), Fatemah (fourth, and the youngest daughter and the only child of the Prophet to have issues), Hasan and Hussain (both sons of Fatemah and Ali).

The Prophet has also included in his "Ahle Bait" his other relatives *viz:* those not connected with any one of his wives. For example, one day the Prophet went to the house of his uncle Abbas. He called his uncle and all his sons and made them sit near him. Thereafter he covered them all with his cloak, just as he had once done with his daughter Fatemah, her husband Ali and their two sons Hasan and

Hussain. After covering them with his cloak, Muhammad prayed three times thus: "Oh Allah! they are my 'Ahie-Baits' so You forgive them". Three times *i.e.* after each occasion the Prophet prayed, the walls and the roof of the house of Abbas said miraculously "Ameen" which means "Oh Lord! let it be so" (page 410, of *Tuhfa Isnaeashria* by Shah Abdul Aziz Mohaddis Dehlavi).

Whenever any slave belonging to a non-Muslim family used to convert to Islam in Madinah, Muhammad used to purchase the said slave from his non-Muslim master and set him free. Many of these slaves out of gratitude refused to leave the Prophet even though they were all freed. They however preferred to live with him just like members of his family sharing in his conditions of absolute poverty and passing their lives in the same humble manner as the Holy Prophet did. They thus dedicated their lives voluntarily to his service. Hence they were known and respected as the inmates of the family or "Ahle-Baits" of the Prophet even though they were not related to him by blood.

Charity is forbidden not only to Muhammad, but also to all his "Ahle-Baits" for all time to come. In this connection the Prophet has announced:

"Verily charity is forbidden to me and my Ahle-Baits and includes my slaves because a slave is the soul (*i.e.* part and parcel) of his master" (pages 937-938, Vol. II, *Minajun Nabuwat*).

On this basis all these voluntary slaves of Muhammad, who had dedicated their lives to follow the Sunnah or teachings of the Prophet also became his "Able-Baits". From time to time the Prophet has declared some of these so-called slaves by their individual names as his "Ahle-Baits". These names are Salman Pharsi, Abdulla bin Masud, Zaid and his son Osman, Bilal bin Reba from Africa, Suhaib *etc.* As an example the declaration relating to Salman Pharsi is quoted hereafter:

The day the trench was being dug around Madinah to prevent the army of the Clans from attacking the sacred city, the Holy Prophet declared: "As Salman minna Ahle-Bait" *i.e.* "Salman is my Ahle-Bait"

(page 74 of *Hussain, The King of Martyrs* by Shia scholar S. V. Mir Ahmed Ali; also page 206, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia* and page 924, Vol. II, *Minajun Nabuwat* by Shaikh Abdul Huq Mahaddis Dehlavi). Now Salman Pharsi (the disciple of Arius from whose custody the original Hebrew Aramaic Evangels of Jesus recorded by Levi and John were seized at the council of Nicaea in 325 A.D. under orders of Emperor Constantine and burnt by Athanasius about which we have read earlier in Chapter 12: F, 2-12) was not related in any way with the Holy Prophet. He had converted to Islam, according to the teachings of Jesus as conveyed to him by Arius (Chapter 13: I).

Therefore Muhammad has made it absolutely clear that even those who are not his blood relations become his “Ahle-Bait” if they dedicate their lives to follow the “Sunnah” or teachings of the Holy Prophet Muhammad and thus lead a life vowed to purity, piety and humility. Here are a few of the well-known and popular traditions of the Holy Prophet:-

- a. One day the Holy Prophet was asked, who are your “Aal” *i.e.* descendants or Ahle Baits, to whom we are to express our love, show our respect and maintain good behaviour? Muhammad replied: “Those who are “Safa” (from which the word “Sufi” has been derived) *i.e.* the pure of heart, who maintain their words, fulfil their promises, dedicate their lives to observe my teachings (*i.e.* Sunnah), and have a greater love for me than for any other human being, and after Allah remember me the most” (page 31, *Nuska-e-Sahihah Dalaelul Khairat* by Syed Abu Abdulla Muhammad bin Sulaiman Ul Jazuli—a descendant of Hussain the second son of Ali d. 870 A.H.).
- b. “Kullo Takkiun mm aale” which means that “All who follow my teachings (*i.e.* the Sunnah) are my children—*i.e.* “Ahle-Baits’. This clarifies blood relation is not necessary.
- c. Ibn Abbas has reported that one day as the Prophet was passing by Masjid-e-Nabavi (the Mosque of the Prophet at Madinah) his eye fell on the “Ashab-us-Safa”, (*i.e.* those close



companions of the Prophet who had dedicated their all for the sake of love of Allah and from whom the word ‘*Sufi*’ has been derived as read earlier). He saw their poverty and their self-mortification and said: “Rejoice! *For whoever of my community perseveres in the state in which ye are, and is satisfied with his condition, he shall be one of my comrades in Paradise*” (page 81, *Kashaf Al-Mahjub* by Syed Ali Al Hujwiri alias Dataganj Bakhsh translated by R.A. Nicholson, 1959). This group comprised spiritualists. The vast majority of these 450 Ashab-us Sufa or the Sufis were not in any way related to the Prophet. Thus it becomes apparent that the following of the Sunnah and to lead a life in imitation of the life of the Prophet is the one and only basis which makes one an Ahle-Bait.

These declarations shatter the myth that only blood relations can be the Ahle- Baiti of the Holy Prophet and are further supported by the following divine verses:

“Lo! verily the friends of Allah are (the Ahle-Baits of the Prophet) on whom there is no fear, nor do they grieve!

“(They are) those who believe and keep their duty (by following the Sunnah of the Prophet).

“Theirs are good tidings in the life of the world and in the Hereafter—There is no changing of the words of Allah—That is the Supreme Triumph” (Qur’an 10: 63-65).

From these it will be apparent that Ali, the Natic-ul-Qur’an, or the Living Qur’an, the knower of the secret knowledge or “Ilm-e-Sina” had every right to appoint those, whom he found suitable to the post of his “Spiritual Heirs” or “Ahle-Baits” of the Prophet even though they were not his blood relations and that these Khalifas also had been blessed with the Ilm-e-Sina to make them the Living Qur’an which speaks. Also those spiritual heirs had been blessed with the power to appoint those, whom they found to be fit for the purpose even though they were not

related by blood to the Holy Prophet as spiritual heirs of Ali or *Ahle-Bait* of the Prophet so long as the persons so appointed in terms of “Hadith-e-Saqlain” had dedicated their lives to follow the “Sunnah” or teachings and examples of the Holy Prophet. This is even till today the one and only guiding principle for the appointment of such spiritual heirs of Ali, according to Hadith-e-Saqlain, who ipso facto become *Ahle-Bait* of the Holy Prophet Muhammad irrespective of the fact whether they are related by blood or not. Those who are related by blood to the Holy Prophet *i.e.* “Syed” naturally get greater respect and a higher status than those who are not “Syed” by birth. However, both are nevertheless the “Ahle-Baits” of the Prophet or spiritual heirs of Ali in the light of “Hadith-e-Saqlain”. The respect with which the heirs of Ali or the *Ahle-Bait* of the Prophet are to be treated can be gauged from the following famous hadith:

“And the Holy Prophet says: Whoever dies for the love of my Ahle-Baits shall die as one whose sins are forgiven; and behold whoever dies for the love of my Ahle-Baits shall die as one who had repented; and behold whoever dies for the love of my Ahle-Baits shall die as a true believer who has perfected his faith; and behold whoever dies for the love of my Ahle-Baits shall be taken to Paradise with all the pomp and ornamentation with which a bride is taken to her husband’s home; and behold whoever dies for the love of my Ahle-Baits two doors leading towards heaven shall be opened for him in his grave; and behold whoever dies for the love of my Ahle-Baits, Allah shall make his grave the visiting place of the Angels of Mercy; and behold whoever dies for the love of my Ahle-Baits shall die on the Sunnah (*i.e.* amongst those who follow the teachings of the Prophet); and behold whoever dies with enmity towards my Ahle-Baits it shall be written between his eyes (*i.e.* on his forehead) on the day of judgment that he should despair of Allah’s Mercies” (Recorded by Imam Salabi in connection with the commentary on Qur’an 42: 22 in his *Tafseer-e-Kabeer* on the authority of Jareer Ibne Abdullah al Bajalli, who heard it from the Holy Prophet himself. It has also been recorded by the Shia scholar Zamakhshari in his *Tafseer* (*q.v.*) as being conclusively proved. This is an extract

from sermon “Asma”. Both Shia and Sunni authorities accept same).

Imam Shafei has commented:

“Ahle-Bait of Allah’s messenger, your love is a duty imposed upon us in the Holy Qur’an, and whoever does not recognise and respect you, their prayers are void” (see also page 32 of *The Right Path*, part I by the Shia scholar Muhammad Amir Hyder Khan, Maharaj Kumar of Mahmudabad, published July 1962).

### 3. Ali—The seal of Rightful Khalifas,

Muhammad combined very admirably in himself two functions which were indeed poles apart *viz*:

- a. The Reviver of the religion of Surrender to the will of Allah or Al-ISLAM, which had its origin in Adam followed by Noah and Abraham

—and—

- b. The President of the Social Secular Democratic Islamic State.

He did not want these two different offices to be mixed up. Very wisely he wanted them to stay apart. Accordingly he issued two separate sets of orders in respect of these two distinct responsibilities. We have already read that for the religion of Islam he had appointed Ali as his spiritual heir. As far as the Empire of Islam is concerned, he had ordered not only before the entire Muslim public but also the Jews and the other nonbelievers in a public function that his successors would be as follows:

- a. The first Khalifa would be Abu Bakr,
- b. The second Khalifa would be Omar,
- c. The third Khalifa would be Osman,
- d. The last Khahfa would be Ali,
- e. The period of the reign of the rightful Khalifas would be for a period of 30 years from his departure from earthly life.

Muhammad minced no words in making this emphatic decision, which he made even more popular than the Hadith of Ghadir-e-Khum at which Ali was appointed his spiritual Heir before only Muslims. This famous declaration was made at the public ceremony during the laying of the foundation stone of Masjid-e-Nabavi (*i.e.* the Mosque of the Holy Prophet), which is still in existence at Madinah and where the Prophet's body is lying at rest. The Holy Prophet personally laid the foundation stone of Masjid-e-Nabavi. Beside it he ordered Abu Bakr to place a stone and affix the same. When this was done, he ordered Omar to place a stone beside Abu Bakr's and to affix it. After that he ordered to Osman to place a stone beside Omar's stone and to affix it. Thereupon the Holy Prophet Muhammad announced publicly before the entire Muslim and non-Muslim population, who were present at the foundation-laying ceremony of the Masjid-e-Nabavi as follows:

1. Abu Bakr would be the first Khalifa of Islam.
2. Omar would be the second Khalifa of Islam.
3. Osman would be the third Khalifa of Islam.

The people present there asked who would be the next Khalifa after these; Muhammad replied that it would be Ali, the leader of the Saints (page 116, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia* also page 12 of *Mojezat-e-Muhammadia* by Mufti Enayatullah published by Hajee Malik Din Muhammad & Sons, Lahore, 1939). This famous Hadith of Masjid-eNavabi has made it absolutely clear as to who would be the temporal heads of the State of Islam founded by Muhammad. Muhammad never left anything in doubt. He was always very lucid. Similar Hadiths were recited by the Holy Prophet on several occasions. One of them was quoted by the Arab Shia scholar Salmin on page 78 of "*Ali the Caliph*" which you have read already in Chapter 21: D-2. Three more similar Sunnahs were declared by the Holy Prophet adding that the Khilafat shall remain for 30 years and thereafter it will become a kingship (pages 12-13 and 100-101 of *Mojezat-e-Muhammadia*).

This decision of Muhammad to appoint four temporal Khalifas was a "Divine Decree", which was made known to the entire human

race right from the time of Adam, the first man, would be absolutely clear from what has been recorded earlier in Chapter 13: J. The casket “Sakina” was presented by Allah to Adam. It contained the pictures of the leading prophets. The last sheet contained the picture of Muhammad as the last and the Promised Prophet and it also showed that he was surrounded by his four Khalifas *viz*: Abu Bakr, Omar, Osman and Ali. This casket was taken to Rome along with all the treasures from the temple of Jerusalem when the entire city was razed to the ground in 70 A.D. by the Romans.

Muhammad and all his four disciples were recognised by Abu Sufian the leader of the pagan Meccan trading caravan to Syria as well as by Wahiya Qalbi the messenger sent by Muhammad inviting the Roman Emperor Heraclius to accept Islam. The Roman Emperor had shown to both the contents of this casket “Sakina” (to refresh one’s mind read again Chapter 13: J).

One afternoon Abu Zar Gafari, Abu Bakr, Omar, Osman, Ali and several others came to the Holy Prophet. He then picked up some small stones. These pebbles miraculously started reciting the Name of Allah, he put them down and they become quite. Then he picked them up and gave into the palm of Abu Bakr, and the pebbles again started reciting the name of Allah, he put them on the ground and they stopped. In this manner the pebbles were given to Omar, Osman and Ali in this order and everyone heard the stones reciting the name of Allah. But when others picked them up they did not speak. Thereupon the Holy Prophet announced that Abu Bakr, Omar, Osman and Ali would be his four, Khalifas after him one after another in this serial order (pages 371-372, Vol. I, *Minajun Nabuwat*).

On another occasion the Holy Prophet announced that my four companions are Abu Bakr, Omar, Osman and Ali (page 459, Vol. I, *Minajun Nabuwat*).

The people of Jerusalem had been informed from their copy of the Holy Bible that their city would surrender to one Omar son of Khattab,

the second Khalifa of the Promised Prophet Muhammad. The historical fact of Jerusalem surrendering actually to Omar in 16 A.H. (637 A.D.) thus confirms once again that the believers in the earlier scriptures were also fully aware that Muhammad the Promised Prophet would have several Khalifas, of whom Omar would be the second (for greater details see Chapter 13: K).

The Qur'an, also refers to the four Khalifas of Muhammad by the deeds that each would perform in the following verse:

“Muhammad is the Apostle of Allah; those who are with him are firm in their beliefs against (the temptations of) unbelievers (*i.e.* once a person converts to Islam he rarely relapses into idolatry or paganism—Chapter 15: N) whilst they (*i.e.* companions of the prophet) are full of compassion towards each other (*i.e.* they do not have any misunderstanding amongst themselves as shown repeatedly by the Shia research scholar Allama Jarullah Zamakhshari). Thou wilt see them bowing down, prostrating themselves (in prayers), seeking grace from Allah and (His) good pleasure. On their faces are marks (on their foreheads) because of the effects of prostration; that is their description in the Torah and their description in the Evangel (Revelation 7: 3). Like a seed (when Muhammad is buried) it sends forth a (straight) stem (this is a reference to the commencement of a just and fair Government by Islam under Abu Bakr) then makes it strong (that is what Omar achieved from North Africa to India and China) then it becomes thick (this refers to the spread of Qur'anic knowledge which is what Osman did amongst the new converts), then firmly stands on its stem (which completed the development of Islam by Ali the seal of the Khalifa-e-Rashdeen). These (the developments by the four Khalifas of Muhammad) filled the sowers (*i.e.* Islam) with wonder and delight (for what they achieved in the short period of 30 years is unique in the History of mankind). As a result it fills the unbelievers with rage on account of these achievements (the spread of Islam from North Africa to India and China in such a short time). Allah has promised those among them who believe and do righteous deeds, forgiveness and a great reward” (Qur'an 48: 29).

That this famous Hadith of the “Foundation of Masjid-e- Nabavi” was well known and acceptable to Ali, the spiritual Heir of Muhammad, will be apparent from the following statement of Ali himself:

“The Prophet’s uncle Abbas said to me (Ali) when Muhammad was on his death bed; ‘by the look on the face of Muhammad, Peace of Allah be on him, I am afraid that the Messenger of Allah is going to depart very shortly from earthly life. So O Ali! go and ask the Holy Prophet to appoint you as his Khalifa after him’; I (Ali) replied: ‘I know well the Holy Prophet will not nominate me as the first Khalifa (of the state of Islam) and I also will not ask him to nominate me as the first Khalifa (of the state of Islam)’” (page 342, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

That this famous Hadith is well known and not only admitted but even quoted by Shia scholars will be clear from page 78 of “*Ali the Caliph*” by the famous Arab Shia scholar Muhammad Ali-Al-Haj Salmin (published Bangalore 1931):

“Jabir, son of Abdulla Ansari, relates that once he asked the Prophet that after his devotion to God and His Prophet who else were to be obeyed next. The Prophet said; ‘First my Caliphs (*i.e.* Abu Bakr, Omar and Osman the first three Khalifas) are to be obeyed, next the Godly Saints, of whom Ali is first, and next to him are his sons Hasan and Hussain and their sons”.

The English Research scholar Professor A.J. Arberry has recorded on pages 31-32 of “*Sufism*” (published by George Allen & Unwin Ltd, London, 1956):

“Muhammad’s immediate companions and followers are pictured in pious legend as innocent of these excesses; despite their position of privilege, they maintained the simple dignity and austerity of habit which they had learned from the Prophet.

“When Abu Bakr succeeded to the leadership, and the world in its entirety came to him in abasement, he did not lift up his head on that account, or make any pretensions; he wore a single garment, which he used to pin together, so that he was known as the ‘man of

the two pins'. Omar b. al-Khattab, who also ruled the world in its entirety, lived on bread and olive oil; his clothes were patched in a dozen places, some of the patches being of leather; and yet there were opened unto him the treasures of Chosroes and Caesar. As for Osman, he was like one of his slaves in dress and appearance; of him it is related that he was seen coming out of one of his gardens with a faggot of firewood on his shoulders and when questioned on the matter he said, 'I wanted to see whether my soul would refuse'. When Ali succeeded to the rule, he bought a waistband for four dirhams and a shirt for five dirhams; finding the sleeve of his garment too long, he went to a cobbler and taking his knife cut off the sleeve level with the tips of his fingers; yet this same man divided the world right and left.

"So the 'Righteous Caliphs' appeared to al-Kharraz, the famous mystic of the third ninth century; and the report of their holiness was widely accepted".

Now let us turn towards history. When Muhammad departed from earthly life, two groups of Muslims gathered about 6 miles away on the outskirts of Madinah at a place called "Thaqifah Bani Saidah". They comprised the Ansars or the original residents of Madinah and the Qureysh, the emigrants from Mecca. Each side wanted someone to be selected from amongst them respectively as the Khalifa after the Prophet. There was fear that there may be bloodshed amongst the two parties. When this report came in, an urgent conference was held amongst the relatives of the Prophet in the presence of the body of Muhammad.

Abu Bakr, the father-in-law of the Prophet due to his daughter Ayesha, was about 60 years old. Omar, another father-in-law through his daughter Hafza, was then about 50 years of age. Osman, the husband of two daughters of the Prophet one after the death of the other was about 60 years old. Ali, the husband of the youngest daughter of the Prophet was only half their age *i.e.* about 30 years. (see page 22 of the Illustrated Weekly of India dated 20th February 1972—"The Shias" by the Shia scholar Hashim Amir Ali). Accordingly it was



decided at this conference of the elders of the family of the Prophet that Ali, the youngest of them, should be left behind to prepare the body for burial, whilst all the elders should rush to stop this imminent fight by one group of Muslims with another group of Muslims so soon after the death of the founder. The unity of Islam had to be maintained at all costs!

Accordingly Abu Bakr, Omar and Osman left. After a lot of arguments a consensus was arrived at. The unanimous choice of the two sides eventually fell upon Abu Bakr, the Prophet's elder father in law, because he had been not only the life-long companion of the Prophet, but was also the one who had sacrificed his all for the cause of Muhammad and Islam and he was amongst the first five to convert to Islam.

Abu Bakr, however, was very much afraid to assume this high office of Khalifa, because of the very onerous responsibilities it carried with it. Therefore, for three days continuously Abu Bakr, even though elected Khalifa unanimously, refused to take up the assignment and offered it to anyone who was willing to accept it. The Shia research scholar Allama Jarullah Zamukhshari in his book *"Al-Mawafekatoe-Baina Ahlal-Bait was Shaba"* has recorded that Abu Bakr offered this assignment on three separate occasions to Ali within this period of three days, because Ali had been appointed Moula or Spiritual Guide of all Muslims at Ghadir-e-Khum, but Ali declined it all the three times saying that as the Holy Prophet had not only appointed Abu Bakr to lead the daily prayers during his last sickness but the Prophet himself had also prayed behind Abu Bakr and none else during his life-time. This clearly showed that the Holy Prophet wanted Abu Bakr to be the first Khalifa after his death in accordance with the declaration of the Prophet made at the laying of the foundation of "Masjid-e-Nabavi". In the end it was Ali, who according to this Shia scholar, reasoned and prevailed upon Abu Bakr to take up this responsible assignment in the interest of Islam. This fact shows that Abu Bakr became the first Khalifa owing to the persuasion and desire of Ali. Abu Bakr worked hard to set

up a good and just government. Whatever he did, he always consulted Ali and acted upon his advice. In this way he made the kingdom of Islam a well-administered organisation.

Abu Bakr, on his death-bed, as was customary, consulted Ali as to who should be appointed as the next Khalifa. Upon the advice of Ali, he nominated Omar, the younger father in law of the Prophet, as his successor in the best interest of Islam. Omar was also very much afraid of the onerous responsibilities of the office of Khalifa. So he personally approached Ali and offered the Khalifa-ship to Ali, because Ali had been appointed Moula or Spiritual Guide of all Muslims by the Prophet at Ghadir-e-Khum but Ali declined the offer and eventually succeeded in inducing Omar to accept same reminding him of the declaration of the Holy Prophet at the laying of the foundation of Masjid-e-Nabavi. The incident of Omar offering the Khalifa-ship to Ali and Ali declining it finds mention even in numerous Shia books (page 224, Vol. II, *Riaz-Un-Nazarah* and page 13, *Khair-Ul-Bareeya*).

Omar appointed Ali as the acting Khalifa in his stead, when he went to accept the surrender of Jerusalem upon the advice of Ali as read earlier in Chapter 13: K. In fact Omar always acted upon the advice of Ali.

Omar made the foundations of the empire strong and permanent by destroying the Empires of two powerful enemies of Islam along its borders *viz*: The Roman Empire on one side and the Persian Empire on the other. They were both out to destroy and obliterate Islam as recorded earlier. He spread the influence of Islam along the Northern African coast of the Mediterranean on the one side and upto India and China on the other.

Upon the death of Omar, a committee of leading Muslims again approached Ali with the request that he become the next Khalifa because he had been appointed Moula or Spiritual Guide of the Muslims by the Prophet at Gbadir-e-Khum. Ali again declined the offer of being made a Khalifa for the third time and passed it on to Osman,

who was the elder son-in-law having been married to Ruquiah, the second daughter of the Prophet, and on her death to Umme Kulsum the third daughter of the Prophet. Hence the Prophet gave Osman the title of ‘Zui-Nurain’ or one who combines two lights in himself. When the committee approached Osman to become the Khalifa, he became frightened of the responsibility. He approached personally Ali along with all the members of the committee to point out to Ali that since he had been appointed Moula at Ghadir-e-Khum, he should accept the nomination of Khalifa. Ali refused again and induced Osman to accept (page 387, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*) reminding him of the declaration of the Holy Prophet at the laying of the foundation of Masjid-e-Nabavi.

Ali’s refusal to become the Khalifa is confirmed by Shia scholars also e.g.:

“After the death of Caliph Omar, when people in thousands gathered round Hazrath (Ali) requesting him to assume the Caliphate and beseeched him to accept their rulership, Hazrat (Ali) delivered the following Khutba (sermon):

“Let me alone—go in search of somebody else.

“If you leave me alone, I shall be like you—just a citizen of the Islamic state, and in that case if the ruler selected by you governs and acts honestly and piously I shall in worldly affairs be more obedient to him than any of you. As a matter of fact I like more to guide and advise you than to rule over you” (Khutba No 95, page 66, *Najhul Balagha* by Syed Mohammad Askari Jafery).

Osman spread the book knowledge of the Qur’an of “Ilm-e-Safina” or the written knowledge to all the new converts throughout the Muslim Empire from North Africa to India and China, as he was an educationist. He also acted continuously upon the advice of Ali.

It will thus be seen that Ali not only avoided the nomination of Khalifa of Islam repeatedly on each of abovementioned three occasions, but he also induced and/or recommended those whom he thought were

suitable for the tasks before them as also he used to guide them with his advice. Hence Ali was in fact not only the maker of the Khalifas but also their guide in all important matters. Only after the three primary stages of administration, consolidation of Islam and elementary knowledge of the Qur'an had been completed did the necessity arise for the spiritual upliftment of the people for which Ali was the only suitable guide. Hence Ali was the "Khatimul Khalifat" or Seal or the Essence of the "Khalifa-e-Rashadeen" or the righteous Khalifas. His martyrdom ended the thirty-year-period of the rule of the rightful Khalifas.

In fact, whenever any decision had to be taken by the three earlier Khalifas, they only arrived at the same on the advice of Ali. If any important prayers to overcome some difficulty were to be performed, then all the three earlier Khalifas used to get Ali to lead the said prayers, because he was the Moula or Spiritual guide of all Muslims appointed by the Holy Prophet at Ghadir-e-Khum which included the Khalifas themselves. This again goes to show not only their love but also their respect for Ali. Hence Ali was not only their guide in all matters but he also was the spiritual and guiding force behind the three earlier Khalifa-e-Rashadeen. This would be evident from a few sayings of Omar quoted hereafter from leading Shia sources:

- a. "I seek refuge in Allah from living with people amongst whom there is no Ali" (page 197, Vol. II, *Riaz-Un-Nazarah*).
- b. Whenever Omar had a problem he would ask the advice of Ali and when Ali solved the same, Omar would say: "O Ali Allah forbid that I survive you!" (page 197, Vol. II, *Riaz-Un-Nazarah*).
- c. Omar used to pray: "O Allah! please do not send down on me any calamity when Ali is not with me to solve my difficulty" (page 194, Vol II, *Riaz-Un-Nazarah*),

If the argument of those who say that Ali should have been the "First Khalifa of Islam" was correct then in that case why should Muhammad not also have been the first Prophet?—If such a thing had

happened then the position of honour which Muhammad now enjoys as the greatest Prophet would certainly have been lost completely because:

- i. If Muhammad was to be the first Prophet then there would be no necessity whatsoever for any of the thousands of prophets that came from Adam till Jesus! Thus Muhammad's position would be reduced from "The Greatest Prophet" to that of only a mere Prophet, as there would be no other prophets with whom he could be compared to give him the honoured position of the greatest prophet. Let us read over here a statement of Jesus:

"Jesus answered: 'There are written in the (messages and teachings of the) prophets many parables, wherefore thou oughtest not to attend to the letter, but to the sense. For all the prophets, that are one hundred and forty-four thousand, whom God hath sent into the world have spoken darkly. But after me shall come the *Splendour*' (i.e. Muhammad the Messenger of God, whom God created first of all and after sixty thousand years He created the Universe for his sake and made a gift of it to him) of all the prophets and holy ones, and he shall shed light upon the darkness of all that the (earlier 144,000) prophets have said, because he (Muhammad) is the Messenger of God (i.e. Muhammadur Rasul Allah)'." (page 33, *The Gospel of Barnabas* and footnote of page 33 of *ibid*. See also pages 79 81, *ibid*)

- ii. All the earlier prophets became prophets because they were blessed by "Nur-e-Muhammadi" or the "Light of Muhammad, i.e. his Soul". Jesus has said as follows:

"Then Jesus answered: ... 'Believe me that I have seen him and have done him reverence, even as every prophet hath seen him: Seeing that of his spirit, God giveth to them prophecy. And when I saw him, my soul was filled with consolation, Saying: 'O Muhammad, God be with thee, and may He make me

worthy to untie thy shoelatchet, for obtaining this (honour to untie thy shoe lace) I shall be a great prophet and holy one of God’,” (page 105, *The Gospel of Barnabas*). If there were no other prophets then Muhammad would have lost all this honour, which makes him the one whose light and soul gave his blessings to make all the other prophets without any exception!

- iii. The position of Muhammad would also be reduced from “One who perfected the religion of Allah on earth”, which was incomplete till the time of Jesus (Chapter 13: B and St. John 16: 12 and 13) to that of a mere messenger of Allah. Thus the honour of perfecting the religion of Allah and completing it would also be lost, if Muhammad came as the first and only prophet.
- iv. The position of Muhammad revealing a divine scripture which defies destruction and forgeries which the other divine scriptures of the earlier prophets including the Torah, the Psalms, the Old Testament and the Evangel of Jesus have suffered earlier would not arise because there would be no other scriptures with which the Qur’an could be compared, as it would be the only scripture if it was revealed as the first and only book through Muhammad, if he were the first Prophet. Hence the wonders of this continuing miracle over the centuries (Chapter 18) would have been lost sight of.
- v. The position of Muhammad would also be reduced from “The Seal of the Prophets”, and one who completed prophethood after 144,000 Prophets had come as mentioned by Jesus on page 33 of “*The Gospel of Barnabas*”, to merely that of a prophet of Allah if Muhammad came as the first prophet.
- vi. Since Muhammad, the greatest Prophet, has come so there is now no more any necessity for any further prophets to be born on earth, because the divine messages have become complete in the Qur’an and no further messages nor any alterations due to the changing circumstances on earth are required to be

revealed by Allah through a prophet. Therefore no more prophets will be born. This is even confirmed by Jesus as follows on page 225 of *"The Gospel of Barnabas"*:

The Priest enquired: "After the coming of the Messenger of God, shall other prophets come?"

"Jesus answered: 'There shall not come after him true prophets sent by God, but there shall come a great number of false prophets, whereat I sorrow'."

- vii. Thus the highest honour of being the "Seal of Prophethood" has been blessed upon Muhammad.

Therefore anybody suggesting that Muhammad should have been the "First Prophet", for he is the greatest of all the 144,000 Prophets (according to Jesus in *"The Gospel of Barnabas"* or about 124,000 according to Islamic sources) is therefore totally in the wrong and is conjecturing something, which is quite contrary to the manner in which the Divine Creator works.

Muhammad being admittedly the greatest Prophet the world has ever seen naturally had to come last of all for the above mentioned reasons. This is also supported vividly, as read earlier, by the findings of scientists that man, the highest form of creation on earth has also come last of all (Chapter 17: B. 1-6). So it is Allah's rule to send the highest and the best of His creations at the end, so that they may be better appreciated, respected and honoured. So also Ali had to come as the last of the Khalifa-e-Rashideen or the Rightful Khalifas to get all the honour and respect that was rightly due to him as the greatest Khalifa. All those who follow the Sunnah accept Ali as Khatimul Khilafat or Seal of the Rightful Khalifas (page 10 of *Nafahat-Ul-Uns* by Nooruddin Muhammad Abdur Rahman Jami Nakshbandhi) just as they accept Muhammad as "The Seal of the Prophets".

If Ali would have been the "First Khalifa" of Islam, then likewise his position of honour would have become reduced to that of a mere "Khalifa-e-Rashideen". Accordingly, Ali, the appointer, the maker and

guide of the first three Khalifas, had to come last as the Seal or “Khatimul Khilafat”, the termination of the rightful “Khalifa-e-Rashedeen”. Hence Ali has been given far greater honour than the three earlier “Khalifa-e-Rashedeen” as also confirmed in Qur’an 48: 29 quoted herebefore, that the fourth and last of the Khalifas would be the greatest of them. It was for this reason that Ali deliberately refused the offer of Abu Bakr, Omar and Osman to become the first, second and third Khalifas respectively as confirmed repeatedly even by Shia sources.

The Arab Shia scholar Muhammad Ali-Al-Haj Salmin in his Preface to “Ali the Caliph” has recorded his findings:

“Ali has set the best example in this respect. He accepted Caliphate when many years had elapsed (since the departure of the Holy Prophet from earthly life) and already three Caliphs had finished with their administration. He never spoke a word against them (*i.e.* the first three Khalifas or Caliphs).

“If we call ourselves lovers of Ali (*i.e.* Shia un Ali), we must follow in his wake (and never utter anything against the first three Khalifas).

“Ali never spoke ill of anyone, and why should the admirers of Ali (*i.e.* Shia un Ali) cross his path in this respect?”

It was the spiritual teaching of Ali that set Islam on such a sound footing that even when Islam’s administration fell immediately after the martyrdom of Ali into the hands of worldly people such as not only Muawiyah but also his son Yazid, the whoremonger and drunkard, still Islam survived the crisis and lasted as a great religious force.



#### 4. The Lovers of Ali

The respect with which Ali was held by the first three Khalifa-e-Rashideen can be gauged from the numerous incidents quoted by the great Shia scholar Allama Jarullah Zamakhshari in his research "*Al-Mawafekatoe-Baina Ahlal-Bait was Sahaba*".

Two of them are mentioned hereunder as a ready reference:

- i. One day Omar was distributing funds from "Baitul-Maal" *i.e.* the State Treasury. He gave 1,000 Dinnars each to Hasan and Hussain (the two sons of Ali), but he gave his own son only 500 Dinnars. When his son protested against this apparent discrimination Omar replied: "You go and get a father like Ali and I shall give you that which I have given to the sons of Ali". Thus Omar, the then Khalifa of Islam, showed by his acts the superiority of Ali and the members of his family over himself and his family! Was this not love?  
When this incident was reported to Ali, he declared: "I heard the Holy Prophet (May Allah bless him) saying that Omar is the torchlight of those who will be blessed in heaven". As soon as Omar heard this he ran to Ali and got him to write out a certificate duly attested by the signature of Ali confirming that Omar would be the torchlight of the dwellers of heaven. Omar, to show his respect for Ali, gave orders that when he died, this certificate of Ali was to be placed upon his breast and buried with his body. So great was the reverence Omar had for Ali and his descendants! This incident therefore establishes clearly, that even according to Shia scholars there was no misunderstanding or disputes between the first three Khalifas and Ali and their families on any issue whatsoever. In fact, they were all the real and true lovers of Ali and the members of his family.
- ii. One day Abu Bakr smiled when he saw Ali. Thereupon Ali asked why. Abu Bakr replied: "O Ali, upon seeing you I

remembered that the Holy Prophet (May Allah bless him) had one day announced: No one shall cross *Pul-Sarat* (for meaning of *Pul-Sarat* please refer to the next section Chapter 21: D-5) without the permission of Ali” (this information is also to be found in books by other Shia scholars viz: page 82 of *Khair-UL-Bareeyah* and page 34 of *Kanz-UL-Ummal*). This study by the Shia scholar Allama Jarullah Zamakhari establishes the high position of respect in which Ali was held by the early Khalifas. A position which they did not enjoy themselves! Thus it proves that the early Khalifas indeed were all the true and devoted lovers of Ali and his family.

Upon getting the above reply Ali smiled at Abu Bakr, who, in his turn, asked why. Ali replied: “I shall not give my permission to anyone to cross “*Pul-Sarat*” into heaven, who does not love and respect you, O Abu Bakr!” This reply of Ali to Abu Bakr establishes clearly that there was no misunderstanding or dispute whatever between the two of them on any issue. This is also again and again confirmed by this Shia scholar in his abovementioned thesis “*Al-Mawafekatoe-Baina Ahlai-Bait was Sahaba*”.

Let us see if in later generations, there was any scope for misunderstandings between Ali and the early Khalifas.

Omar, to cement his love for Ali and Fatemah married their daughter Umme Kulsum in 17 A.H. and paid a dowry of forty thousand dirhams. From this marriage Omar had a daughter named Fatemah and a son named Zaid. This incident brings to an end all speculations of supposed or imaginary disputes between their families.

Imam Sajjad Zainal Abedin chose for his daughter-in-law, the daughter of Qassim (son of) Muhammad (son of) Abu Bakr, who was also the grand-daughter of Abdur Rahman (son of) Abu Bakr. From this marriage Imam Muhammad Baqr had a son, Imam Jafar Sadiq. This again proves that even after several generations there was love and respect between these families.

It is noteworthy to record over here for general information that all the spiritual schools in Islam originated from Ali. But the school of “Shariat” or the following of the rules of the Qur’an originated from Abu Bakr. His successor was Salman Pharsi. The next successor was Qassim (son of) Muhammad (son of) Abu Bakr. It stopped there and did not proceed any further until his grandson Imam Jafar Sadiq took it up, infused into it the spiritual force of the house of Ali and rejuvenated the same. This school is now known as the “Nakshbandhiya” system. The question that arises over here is—if there was any kind of misunderstanding between the families of Abu Bakr and Ali, then Imam Jafar Sadiq would not have reactivated this system started by Abu Bakr. The fact that he did so after several generations had passed confirms beyond doubt that there was no misunderstanding whatsoever even after all these years between the families of Ali and the first three Khalifas!

This incident of Imam Jafar Sadiq reviving the Shariat school of Abu Bakr brings home vividly two important points:

- i. The statement of Ali recorded by the Shia scholar Zamakhshari that Ali would not give permission to anybody who did not love and respect Abu Bakr to cross “Pul-Sarat” into heaven, and
- ii. That anybody saying anything against Abu Bakr therefore directly insults Imam Jafar Sadiq, who revived the school of Abu Bakr and blessed the same.

Further, it was Ali, who refused three times the offer of Abu Bakr to become the first Khalifa, and it was Ali, who not only induced Abu Bakr to accept the post of Khalifa but it was also Ali, who guided him in all matters.

*Thus a disrespect of Abu Bakr is ipso facto a disrespect of both Ali and Imam Jafar Sadiq.* Such surely cannot be “Shia un Ali” or the lovers and friends of Ali and his family by any stretch of the imagination.

Similarly, anybody insulting Omar also insults Ali who was his father-in-law and also offends Ali, because it was Ali who induced Omar to become the second Khalifa, when Omar had offered the Khalifat to Ali, but which Ali did not accept. Further, it was Ali who was the guiding force behind Omar. Under these circumstances anybody challenging the appointment of any of the first three Khalifas is disputing with the wisdom of Ali as to why Ali induced them to become the first three Khalifas instead of becoming the Khalifa himself in spite of their repeated offers to Ali! This is a direct insult to the repeated decisions of Ali. Further, it is an insult to the Holy Prophet because of the Hadith of Masjid-e-Nabavi and to Allah because of His decision of the Casket “Sakina”. Such are disbelievers in the Qur’an also. Under these circumstances can such people who disrespect the first three Khalifas ever be the friends of Ali or are they “Mushriks” *i.e.* enemies of Islam?

### 5. “Pul-Sarat”—Heaven & Hell?

“Pul-Sarat” is a thing which does not appear in the Holy Bible nor in European legends or religious beliefs, so it requires a detailed explanation.

“Pul-Sarat” is the spiritual bridge or barrier which separates Heaven from Hell. Without crossing Pul-Sarat nobody can enter into Heaven. Pul-Sarat is stated to be not only finer than a hair but also sharper than a razor’s edge.

Many European scholars are intrigued about what is really meant by Heaven and Hell. Being a Sufi possessing the secret knowledge of Ilm-e-Sina which makes one the “Natik-ul Qur’an” I have to point out at the very outset that Heaven and Hell are two stages which cannot be compared with anything to be found on earth. The best way to explain these spiritual conditions is allegorical.

Let us take for instance an inventor who has perfected a wonderful machine. After a time as it grows older, it starts developing defects

(owing to, let us say, wear and tear). Eventually it becomes so full of defects that it is no longer usable economically. I put it to you, what would the inventor do with this machine, which he had made after spending so much time and energy on it? Would he destroy it or just put it aside? I would say confidently that he would never destroy something on which he had spent so much time and effort! He would always keep it as a memento. This is human nature!

Now let us turn our thoughts towards Allah. He has created all of us out of His Divine Love, giving His individual care and attention to each and every one *to the extent of making our thumbprints even different let alone our whole body* as read earlier in Chapter 16: C. Further, Allah is “**The All Merciful, The All Beneficent, The Oft Forgiving**”. He creates each one in one’s mother’s womb as an innocent child. As we grow, we learn to disobey and make mischief. *We very conveniently forget why we were created by Allah!* Some even become very wicked! But when an inventor is not prepared to destroy his invention when it becomes full of defects and useless without any of the abovementioned Divine attributes of Allah, then how can Allah burn the wicked full of faults in a Hell of fire, scorpions and snakes to cause torture to those condemned?

Allah has created the Universe which is simply pervaded with wondrous beauties, each more amazing than the other. To quote the words of Jesus:

“... Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin.

“And yet I (Jesus) say unto you, That even (King) Solomon (the ruler of the Kingdom of Israel as well as the kingdoms of the Genii) in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these (lilies which are nothing but merely a blade of grass).

“Therefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field; which today is, and tomorrow is cast into the oven, shall He not much more clothe you (*i.e.* Has not God made man the most advanced and wonderful

of all His known creations) O ye of little faith?" (St. Matthew 6: 28-30).

The Creator of such beauties in a blade of grass must Himself be very much more amazingly magnificent and majestically beautiful. Something quite indescribable by human intelligence! Just think for a moment if He were to reward the good with the revelation of His Grandeur then what would happen to the lucky soul which is recipient of such an honour? The Prophet Moses when he asked God to show Himself, was told that he could not bear the shock of the wonderment that is Allah, so he was ordered to look at Mount Sinai, then God threw just a little flash of His glory on Mount Sinai, which immediately burnt into "Surma" an Oriental medicine for improving one's eye-sight, whilst Moses fell in a trance upon the ground due to the grandeur of only the reflection he saw of Allah on Mount Sinai. So also the lucky soul would be intoxicated with ecstasies of joy and fall into a state of trance, sometimes dancing, sometimes chanting hymns of praise and sometimes shouting phrases of delight which would convey the following thoughts: "Oh Wonder of Wonders! Oh Most Beautiful of all Beauties! Oh Joy of all Joys!" *etc.* This may last for millions of years by getting just one glimpse of only one of the many millions of phases or aspects of the Lord. This state of spiritual bliss, of contentment and tranquillity, with no more desires left for anything more in the soul concerned, is what has been described in worldly terms in the Qur'an as "Heaven" in the following language.

*"Far removed from it (the tortures that the wicked will suffer) will be the righteous.*

*"Who giveth his wealth (to the needy) that he may grow (in his love for Allah through service and love to mankind).*

*"And none of his (good) deeds are with any desire for a reward (i.e. fame on earth or luxuries in heaven).*

*"Except as seeking (to please) the will of his Lord Most High.*

*"He verily will be content" (Qur'an 42: 17-21).*

*"But Ah! thou soul at peace!*

*"Return unto thy Lord, content in His good pleasure!"*

*"Enter thou among My bondmen!*

*"Enter thou My garden!" (Qur'an 89: 27-30).*

*"Their reward is with their Lord: Gardens of Heaven (i.e. the seven stages of Heaven) underneath which rivers (of joy) flow, wherein they dwell for ever. Allah hath pleasure in them and they have pleasure in Him. This is (the spiritual reward of contentment and peace in store) for him who loves his Lord" (Qur'an 48: 8).*

If one wants to see God, then he must first of all realise that Allah cannot be seen normally by human eyes:

*"No man hath seen God at any time (uptil the time of Jesus). If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and His love is perfected in us" (1 John 4: 12).*

God can only be realised within your own self if you divorce yourself from all worldly attachments; love mankind, erase yourself and lose yourself into Allah (please refer to Chapter 21: E to I).

*To the heirs of Ali, who have spiritual wisdom, the seven heavens are not like a seven- storeyed house. Far from it! It certainly represents seven stages viz:*

- 1) The vision of Allah given to a blessed soul from a great distance represents the lowest stage or the first heaven.
- 2) The delight of seeing the Almighty from a short distance is recognised as the second stage or heaven.
- 3) Viewing the Creator from closer quarters thus represents the third stage.
- 4) Visualising the Lord God as next to you would be the fourth stage.
- 5) The honour of being able to touch and establish a link with His Majesty which would cause some of the many aspects of the Glory of Allah being radiated through this honoured soul is

the fifth broad stage of honour.

- 6) Higher is the stage where a soul is linked with the All Magnificent Allah, thus radiating a few of the different glorious aspects of Allah to their followers.
- 7) Finally there is the stage where a soul loses its identity totally into its Maker and thus radiates many of the numerous glories of the Almighty.

These last three stages or to use the common parlance of 5th, 6th and 7th heavens are attained by Prophets and saints including the Sufi Khalifas or spiritual Heirs of Ali in terms of Hadith-e-Saqlain and they can plead and obtain forgiveness for their followers:

“Lo! verily the ‘Walis’ (*i.e.* friends) of Allah are (the Prophets and the Saints) on whom there is no fear nor shall they grieve.

“(They are) those who believe (in Allah) and keep their duty (according to the Sunnah or teachings of Muhammad).

“Theirs are good tidings in the life of the world and in the Hereafter. There is no changing of the words of Allah. That is the Supreme Triumph” (Qur’an 10: 63-65).

After dealing with what is to be expected in heaven, let us turn our eyes towards other relevant qualities of Allah brought out in the Qur’an:

“So who henceforth will give the lie to thee about the judgment?

“Is not Allah the most conclusive of all judges?” (Qur’an 95: 7-8).

These verses clarify that nothing will escape the judgment of the Lord. But if Allah is the All Merciful then surely He cannot inflict corporal punishment of any kind! *Most certainly the All Loving Allah will not inflict any corporal tortures! His decree would be simply:*

1. The wicked soul would be denied the joys of seeing the *Most Gloriously Beautiful Allah*, as they do not deserve this honour!
2. The wicked would be brought to “Pul-Sarat”, the spiritual barrier between those blessed and those who have been denied



the sight of Allah.

3. "Pul-Sarat" being finer than a hair, they would not only be able to see the joyous ecstasies of the blessed but they would also hear hymns and joyous exclamations *e.g.* "Oh Most Glorious of All Beauties and Wonderment!" and so on. In fact, the wicked souls would be so very close to those souls blessed with the delights of the vision of the Most Wonderful Allah, that they would even be able to feel the vibration of the thrills of joy that the blessed would be experiencing!
4. They will thus realise the wondrous indescribable joys of the blessed and what they are missing! They would be so near to the blessed souls, that there will be no space whatsoever between those denied the vision and those blessed! This nearness is figuratively described as "Pul-Sarat", which would be less than the thinness of a hair or the fineness of a razor's edge. Then they will vividly feel the impact of "*So near and yet so far!*"
5. In a matter of a few seconds, they would be so filled with jealousy for the blessed and hatred for their own selves that they will recollect each and every minutest and smallest wrong, disobedience or sin they have committed during their life on earth with the greatest disgust against themselves.
6. In this manner *those denied the vision of the Almighty Beauty would by themselves, without any punishment being inflicted by Allah, develop a delirious "Fiendish frenzy"*. No earthly fire or snake-bites or scorpion's stings of poison could cause even a millionth of the spiritual torture that the wicked would thus experience at their self-inflicted hatred for their own evil deeds! As their souls are immortal as already discussed in Chapter 17: B-4 to 6, the self-inflicted spiritual tortures become an eternal "*Hell*" for the wicked.

Here are a few quotations from the Holy Bible:

"Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are

in the graves shall hear His Voice.

“And shall come forth; *they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation*” (St. John 5: 28-29).

“And as I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God, and the books (of what deeds one has done on earth) were opened: and another book (containing the names of those blessed with Heavenly bliss for their good deeds on earth) was (also) opened, which is the book of (eternal) life (in heaven): and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books (of ones deeds on earth), *according to their works*” (Revelation 20: 12).

“But in Vain they do worship me (Jesus), teaching for doctrines, the commandments of men” (St. Matthew 15:9).

“But let every man prove his own work, and *then shall he have rejoicing in himself alone*, and not in another.

*“For every man shall bear his own burden.*

*“Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap”* (Galatians 6: 4, 5 and 7).

Thus it will be clear that almost all other religions believe that each and every one of us *have been created for a purpose*—To do the will of the Almighty Creator—Thy will be done on Earth as it is in Heaven. Further, that every one of us will be raised from the dead on the Day of Judgment and will have to give an account of all our deeds on earth and will be rewarded or denied the reward of the wondrous sight of Allah according to what we have done in our earthly life.

Jesus has further described this condition of the wicked on page 131 of “*The Gospel of Barnabas*” as follows:

“Verily I say unto you, the demons and reprobates with Satan shall then weep so that more water shall flow from the eyes of one of them than is in the river Jordan. Yet shall they not see God”—so even according to Jesus hell is the denial of the sight of the most wonderful God!

Surely such a revelation of what the spiritual hell is likely to be, will send a shudder of concern bordering upon fear down the spine of each and every person, who has any conscience in him, irrespective of his caste, colour and creed and will not only restrain him but should also prevent him from committing any further crimes and sins as also to repent for what has been done before due to his ignorance or inattention or improper appreciation of what Heaven or Hell is likely to be. This knowledge will surely make one realise as to “Why one has been created” so that he can even now correct himself and hope for the mercies of *“Allah, the Oft Forgiving”*!

This little note brings out the meaning of “Pul-Sarat”, the spiritual barrier, which is between those blessed with eternal spiritual bliss—the sight of the Most Wondrous Allah (*i.e.* Heaven), and those who did not realise why they were created by Allah and their self-inflicted spiritual torture (*i.e.* Hell)!

## 6. The Twelve Great “Imams”

Hereunder is given the translation of “*Darood-e-Ibrahim*”, a prayer recited repeatedly by Muslims in all their supplications five times a day:-

*“Oh Allah! Exalt Muhammad and the children of Muhammad as thou didst exalt Abraham and the children of Abraham, surely Thou art the Praised, the Magnified.*

*“Oh Allah! Bless (multiply) Muhammad and the children of Muhammad as Thou didst bless (multiply) Abraham and the children of Abraham; surely Thou art the Praised, the Magnified”.*

From this prayer it becomes evident that Muhammad is going to be blessed in the very same manner as Abraham was in respect of his descendants.

Abraham had eight children (Genesis 16: 15 & 16; 21: 2-8; 25: 2) of which two were blessed sons—Ishmael (Genesis 17: 20) and Isaac

(Qur'an 19: 49)!

- a. *Ishmael* was the first born, whom Abraham loved the most (Chapter 7: G-1 to 8). It was he, who was the one and only son of Abraham for fourteen years. It was in this period of 14 years that Abraham was ordered to sacrifice his one and only son. Hence it was Ishmael who was taken for the sacrifice. Allah accordingly foretold at the time of this incident that the seed of Abraham through this one and only son would be the personage through whom the whole world would be blessed. Thus Ishmael became the first Prophet from the children of Abraham. From Ishmael have descended two very great personages *i.e.* Muhammad (the greatest Prophet) and Ali (the greatest Saint). Both of them came on earth long after all the prophets of the world including those from the descendants of Isaac had completed their tenure on earth. As such only three great personages have come from the eldest son of Abraham.
- b. *Isaac* was the second son of Abraham (Genesis 21: 2-8) from whom have descended not only the Jewish race but many prophets also. The Jews accepted all these prophets except the last two from this line.

They also rejected the Promised Prophet Muhammad only because he did not come from the lineage of Isaac in spite of all the advices of their own prophets as read earlier in Chapter 13: D-G.

The last two of the Jewish Prophets were Prophet John, the forerunner to Jesus, and Jesus. These two were however acknowledged by the Christians. As read earlier, in spite of all instructions and advices of Jesus in Chapter 13: B, C, H, I and J, the Christians have not only ignored Muhammad but they have heaped a lot of falsehood upon him also as proved by even European scholars in Chapter 17: H, 1-3.

If Muhammad is to be blessed in the same way as Abraham then he also should have eight children and from them there should be two blessed sons, who should carry on his lineage and they should meet

similar circumstances as the descendants of Abraham viz: the eldest child should have three important personages of which one is to be the first ‘Imam’ to be followed by a large number comprising all the ‘Imams’ from the second and after they have completed their tenure, then would appear the last two ‘Imams’ from the first son—one being the greatest Saint after Panjatan or ‘the holy five’ and the other the greatest Imam. Just as the Jews have rejected the three great personages from the eldest son of Abraham, so also should the followers of the second son reject the ‘Imams’ from the eldest son!

*Muhammad* also had eight children. Four were sons but they all departed from earthly life in their childhood. The other four were daughters. The first three daughters had no issues. Fatemah, the youngest daughter was the only child out of the eight to be blessed with children. Her first two were sons viz: Hasan and Hussain and thereafter she had only daughters. Hence these two grandsons have been referred to by the Prophet as his two sons (page 275, Vol. III, *Mishkat Sharif*). Anyway his lineage is carried on through these two grandsons. So it will be clear that the same situation exists for both Abraham and Muhammad except that because Muhammad is a descendant of Abraham so in his case his blessed sons are a stage later! viz: his grandsons are his blessed sons instead of his own sons. It will be seen as we go on that this difference of one generation gap persists in relation to Muhammad only to emphasise the fact that Muhammad is a descendant of Abraham.

Hasan was a year older. So he had one year more of the love and the association with the Prophet than his younger brother Hussain. Further, when the Holy prophet was going to bless his descendants, Hasan was not only the first person to enter into the cloak of the Prophet but also to sit on his right lap or the more honoured position. This goes to show that he is the more loved of the two just as Ishmael, the eldest son was the most loved son of Abraham. Hasan was soon followed into the cloak, by Hussain who sat on the left lap of the Prophet. This should accordingly be treated as second position to the

right lap. Then Fatemah and finally Ali entered the cloak of the Prophet. When all five were under the cloak, Muhammad blessed them all as his Ahle-Bait (page 269, Vol. III, *Mishkat Sharif* and page 506, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). From this incident they are known as “Panjatan” or the “Blessed Five”. Hence for all purposes Hasan and Hussain became the two blessed sons of Muhammad even though they were a generation later *i.e.* grandsons (page 275, Vol. III, *Mishkat Sharif*). From this very important incident all five of them were generally considered by all Muslims as a single unit with the Holy Prophet himself and not as separate units.

This is supported by the following Hadith:

“The Holy Prophet Muhammad has stated that when Allah created Adam and put the immortal soul into him; Adam lifted his eyes and looked towards the right side of the Garden of Eden. To his surprise he saw five shining faces, who were bowing and prostrating themselves before the Almighty Creator. Adam out of curiosity asked Allah: ‘O Lord! who are those five whom I see having similar faces as mine?’. Allah replied: ‘These five will be from your descendants but they will not be made out of clay as your body is rather they are from My Spirit. The whole universe has been created by Me for their sake. Their names have been derived out of My Names *viz*: I am *Mahmood* (The Praised One) and he is *Muhammad* (The Praised One); I am *Aali* (Supreme) and he is *Ali*; I am *Faatir* (Creator ) and she is *Fatemah*; I am *Ehsan* (Beneficent) and he is *Hasan*; I am *Mohsin* (The Generous) and he is *Hussain*. I (Allah) swear by My Honour that if anybody comes before Me with the least disrespect or hatred for any one of these, them shall/ certainly cast into Hell without any consideration. Know well Oh Adam! These five are my Chosen and Blessed and for their sake will I forgive and bless unlimited numbers. And if you (or your generations) have any difficulties then approach Me in the name of these Blessed Five’.

“Muhammad further stated that if anybody wants their safety they must establish friendship with us five as one single unit and pray through our names *i.e.* Panjatah or the Blessed five” (pages 4-5 of

*Asdullah* by Nazir Ahmed Simab published by Shaik Barkatali Mohsinali, Lahore).

Hence the status of each one of them including Hasan and Hussain is incomparably higher than that of an “Imam”—who is merely a spiritual or a temporal head. So the “Imams” naturally will have to start from their children *i.e.* a generation later. Hence this one generation gap persists in all stages as far as Muhammad is concerned, to bring out the fact that he is a descendant of Abraham.

The prophet had foretold that Hasan was a “Syed” and would avoid a great war amongst Muslims and thus prevent a lot of bloodshed (page 514, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*, and page 271, Vol. III, *Mishkat Sharif*). When Ali was martyred, the people of Madinah and Mecca spontaneously elected Hasan as their Khalifa. Muawiyah, the governor of Damascus, wanted to become the sole ruler of the Islamic Empire. He gathered together a large army and marched upon Madinah. The Muslims came out hurriedly to meet this challenge to democracy. But Hasan did not want the massacre of thousands of Muslim lives which would be the consequence if the war was fought. He voluntarily gave up his election as Khalifa for the life-time of Muawiyah, on the condition that it would revert to the Muslims (of Mecca and Madinah) to choose the next Khalifa upon Muawiyah’s death *i.e.* from out of Hasan, if alive, or Hussain *i.e.* one of these two sons of Ali. Muawiyah accepted the agreement (page 514, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). By the conspiracy of offering the hand of Yazid, his son, in marriage, the wife of Hasan was induced to poison Hasan. That is how Hasan was removed from the field of the next Khalifa (page 51.5, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). Then Muawiyah in violation of his agreement set about forcing the people to accept Yazid as the next Khalifa (page 283, *Tarikh Khalifa-e-Arab wa Islam* by Syed Shah Muhammad Kabir Danapuri, published by Navalkishore Press, Lucknow 1914). In this manner Muawiyah deprived Hussain of the right of becoming the next Khalifa.

Upon the death of Muawiyah, Yazid martyred at Karbala almost all the male members of the family of the Prophet through a specially selected army comprising non-Muslims (Chapter 21: D 8 and 9). Those martyred included four sons of Hasan as against Hussain and two of his sons (page 543, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). The fifth son of Hasan *i.e.* Imam Hasanul Mussanna was left for dead on the field of Karbala (page 122, Vol. II, *Rahmatul Lil Aalameen* by Sulaiman Munsoorpoori). It will thus be seen that the actual sacrifice of Hasan at the hands of Yazid was twice as great as that of Hussain. Hasan not only lost his life but also four sons; whilst his second son Imam Hasanul Mussanna was badly injured at Karbala and left for dead or in other words six casualties. Hussain lost his own life along with two sons *i.e.* three sacrifices.

After Karbala eight sons of Hasan and one of Hussain were alive. Just as Ishmael had twelve sons (Genesis 17: 20 and 25: 13-16) so also Hasan, the eldest son of Ali had 12 sons! (page 121, Vol. II, *Rahmatul Lil Aalameen*).

It will thus be seen that whatever happened to Abraham also has happened to Muhammad as foretold by Darood-e-Ibrahim. Further, as Muhammad is a descendant of Abraham, so everything connected with Muhammad is happening with a generation's gap inasmuch as his grandsons are his two blessed sons. Since the "Panjatan" or the Holy Five are treated as one unit with Prophet Muhammad so their status is much higher than that of "Imams" or Spiritual or temporal Heads. As such the "Imams" of Islam have to be from the children of these blessed grandsons instead of sons of Muhammad *i.e.* again there is the generation's gap.

Now the following questions arise:

- a. Are the "Imams" going to come from the children of any one of these two grandsons or from both?
- b. How many "Imams" are going to come?
- c. Who are they?



1. The first of these questions is answered by the Arab Shia scholar Salmin, who has quoted on page 78 of “Ali the Caliph” the following hadith:

“Jabir, son of Abdulla Ansari, relates that once he asked the Prophet that after his devotion to God and His prophet, who also were to be obeyed next? The Prophet said: ‘First my Caliphs are to be obeyed, next the Godly saints of whom Ali is first and next after him are his sons Hasan and Hussain and their sons’.”

Therefore the “Sunnah” or order of the Prophet is to accept the sons of both Hasan and Hussain after them and not the sons of only one of them (see also page 276, Vol. III, *Mishkat Sharif*) According to this Hadith the children of both these two grandsons of Muhammad *i.e.* Hasan and Hussain will be blessed with “Imams”. Hence the descendants of these two are to get “Imams” in the same manner as the sons of Abraham *i.e.* Isamael and Isaac were, *viz*:

- i. The first of the saintly guides or “Imam” would be a child of Hasan.
  - ii. He should be followed by a number of descendants from Hussain as “Imams”.
  - iii. After all the Imams from Hussain have completed their tenure, on earth would come the remaining two great personages from the children of Hasan.
  - iv. That one of these two descendants should be the greatest saint and the other the greatest Imam after Panjatan.
2. The next question is: “How many ‘Imams’ are coming?” According to tradition twelve very great spiritual guides or “Imams” were to descend from Panjatan (Hadith No. 571, page 124, Vol. XI, *Kanzul Ummal*). Therefore in accordance with “Darood-e-Ibrahim”:
  - i. The first of these twelve “Imams” has to be a son of

- Hasan, the eldest grandson.
- ii. He should be followed by nine Imams from the descendants of Hussain the second grandson.
  - iii. After the nine Imams from the family of Hussain must come from the children of Hasan two great “Imams”.
  - iv. One of these has to be the greatest saint and other the greatest of the Imams.

The above has to be the break up of the twelve Imams if Darood-e-Ibrahim is correct, the two greatest coming right at the end from Hasan the eldest son just as Muhammad and Ali had come right at the end. Thereby repeating in principle the blessings of Allah on Holy Prophet Muhammad just as He had blessed Abraham *viz*: the first of the Abrahamic Prophets was Ishmael to be followed by many prophets from Isaac, the second son, till Jesus, who was the last prophet from the descendants of Isaac. There was nobody to guide the people of the world after Jesus was lifted alive to heaven and became “Ghaibun Nabi” *i.e.* the “Prophet who disappeared from view”. Thus it will be seen that after all the Jewish prophets had completed their tenure on earth and only when their teachings were destroyed in 325 A.D. (Chapter 12: F, 2-12), that the necessity arose for yet another prophet. Then came the greatest prophet Muhammad and the greatest saint Ali both from the children of Ishmael, the eldest son of Abraham.

3. The questions that arise here are:
- i. Did it actually happen in this manner?
  - ii. Are only three “Imams” going to come from the children of Hasan?
  - iii. Have only nine “Imams” come from the descendants of Hussain the second grandson?
  - iv. Will the children of Hasan produce the greatest saint and the greatest “Imam”?

From the family of Hussain commencing with his eldest son came only nine “Imams”—each the son of the previous Imam. The coming of only nine Imams from the family of Hussain has been confirmed by

both Hasan and Hussain (pages 25-26 of *The Living Imam* by the Shia scholar Yousuf N Lalljee, Bombay). It naturally follows that exactly three places are left blank by Allah for some three Imams from the children of Hasan the eldest son of Ali. This is the requirement of “Darood-e-Ibrahim” and the Hadith quoted by the Arab Shia scholar Salmin on page 78 of “*Ali the Caliph*” in accordance with which the sons of both Hasan and Hussain are to be accepted.

The “Nine Imams” from the children of Hussain are:

- 1) Imam Sajjad Zainal Abedin,
- 2) Imam Muhammad Baqr,
- 3) Imam Jafar Sadiq,
- 4) Imam Musa Kazim,
- 5) Imam Ali Musa Raza,
- 6) Imam Muhammad Taqi,
- 7) Imam Ali Naqi,
- 8) Imam Hasan Askari, and
- 9) Imam Abul Qassim who disappeared miraculously and thus escaped from being murdered at the age of 5 years from the town of Samarah in Iraq, when his father Imam Hasan Askari was martyred on 8th Rabi-ul-Awwal 260 A.H. (page 569, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia* and page 133, Vol. II, *Rahmatul Lil Aalameen* by Sulaiman Munsoor-poori). His mother was Princess Nargis Khatoon, the Italian Princess, who converted from Christianity and accepted Islam (pages 2-5, *Durre-Maqsood* by the Shia scholar Khan Bahadur Aulad-e-Hyder Bilgrami).

This ninth Imam Abul Qassim carried on his administration for 69 years after his disappearance through four Khalifas or legates appointed by him one after another upon the death of the previous Khalifa as follows:

First was Usman ibne Sayeed. His period was from 260 A.H till 304 A.H.

The second was Abu Jafar Muhammad ibne Usman. He was the son of the first Khalifa of this Imam. His period was from 304 A.H. to 305 A.H.

The third was Abul Qassim Hussain ibne Ruh. His period was from 305 A.H. till 326 A.H.

The fourth and last was Abul Hassan Ali ibne Muhammad Samarri. His period was from 326 A. H. till 329 A.H. He received the following written note from Imam Abul Qassim:

“You are going to die in six days. May Allah grant patience to your brothers in the faith on your departure. So be prepared, but appoint no one in your place, because from the date of your death the period of my Ghaibat-e-Kubra will begin. Henceforth no one will see me, until Allah makes me appear. My reappearance will take place after a very long time ... (pages 14-16, *The Living Imam* by Yousuf H. Lalljee, Bombay).

Thus it will be clear that Imam Abul Qassim has totally disappeared from view at the age of 74 years in 329 A. H. *i.e.* 69 years after his first disappearance on 8th Rabi-ulAwwal, 260 A.H. just as Jesus who also totally disappeared 40 days after his first disappearance!

Let us now compare hereunder a few of the numerous peculiarities between the prophets from Isaac the second son of Abraham with the Imams from the descendants of Hussain the second son of Ali and see if both the sets have had similar experiences *i.e.* in accordance with Darood-e-Ibrahim:

- 1) Abraham had two blessed sons *viz*: Ishmael the eldest and Isaac the second.  
The two blessed sons of Muhammad are really his grandsons Hasan, the elder and Husain, the younger *i.e.* there is a one generation gap.
- 2) Ishmael, the eldest son of Abraham had twelve sons.  
So also Hasan the eldest son of Ali had twelve sons.
- 3) All Abrahamic prophets came from the children of Isaac save

and except three great personages from Ishmael the eldest son. Likewise only nine Imams have come from the children of Hussain as per list given above leaving three places blank for some three great personages from the children of Hasan, the eldest son of Ali.

- 4) Several of the Jewish Prophets were martyred by Jewish kings. In the same manner several of the “Imams” from amongst the children of Hussain, the second son, were martyred by Muslim kings.

- 5) The second last of the Jewish prophets was John, son of Zakariah. He was murdered by the Jewish King Herod, the Tetrarch (St. Matthew. 14: 1-12).

Coincidentally the second last Imam from the children of Hussain *i.e.* Imam Hasan Askari was murdered on 8th Rabi-ul-Awwal 260 A. H. by the Muslim king of that period (page 569, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

- 6) The Jewish Elders tried to capture Jesus, the last of the Jewish Prophets and have him killed, but Jesus escaped.

Similarly Imam Abul Qassim, the last of the nine from the children of Hussain escaped capture and death from the soldiers who killed his father Imam Hasan Askari.

- 7) Jesus has disappeared from view, being lifted to heaven in a live condition (Acts 1: 9).

Very strangely Imam Abul Qassim has also disappeared from view. He was then 5 years old. He disappeared from the town of Samarah in Iraq on 8th Rabi-ul-Awwal 260 A.H., but is still in a live condition (page 133, Vol. II, *Rahmatul Lil Aalameen* by Sulaiman Munsoorpoori).

- 8) Jesus accordingly became “Ghaibun Nabi” *i.e.* the Prophet, who disappeared in bodily form from the view of the common people.

Imam Abul Qassim also become “Ghaibul Imam” when he disappeared without dying from the view of the common

people.

- 9) Jesus will return in bodily alive condition (Acts 1: II) at the time of the Battle of Armageddon.

Imam Abul Qassim will also reappear in a live condition in bodily form at the time of the battle against the Masih Al-Dadjjal or the false Prophet (see Chapter 29; C, 6 and 7) *i.e.* the Battle of Armageddon.

- 10) Jesus will come to give help to the Saint Saviour—The Mahdi. He will recite his prayers behind the Mahdi, thus making himself the disciple of the Mahdi—“*Khalifatal Mahdi*” (Chapter 29: C-7, b to c).

According to the statement of Ali quoted from page 68 of “*Imam uz Zaman Ki Aamad*” by Khwaja Hasan Nizami it will appear that Imam Abul Qassim, will come leading an army from the East to the help of the Mahdi:

“An army will come from beyond Khorasan (this is a reference to the army of Muslims from the Turkish Republics of Russia, China as also the Pathan tribesmen of the North West Frontier of Pakistan). The Imam who would be leading this army will have the title of “*Khalifatul Mahdi*” *i.e.* one of the Khalifas of the Mahdi. He would be by blood relationship a cousin of the Mahdi. He will be flying a ‘Black Flag’. Muslims are exhorted to join this army.

- 11) Thus both the last important sons of the two second sons *i.e.* Jesus and Imam Abul Qassim are the Khalifas of the Mahdi, the last great personage from Hasan, the eldest son of Ali.

In other words both these last great sons of the two second sons would have equal respect and status *i.e.* “*Khalifatul Mahdi*”.

The Holy Bible, as we shall read later, also informs us that there would be two saints (*i.e.* one would be the Mahdi or the Saint Saviour and the other the Khalifatul Mahdi) at the time of the Battle of Armageddon (Chapter 25: P) in addition to the return of Jesus.

- 12) The first Prophet to become “Ghaibun Nabi” *i.e.* to be lifted bodily to heaven without dying on earth was Enoch (in Arabic—Idris). He was the sixth generation from Adam. He was the second Prophet on this earth. He disappeared from view at the age of about 365 years (Genesis 5: 21-24). When he disappeared from view and could not be contacted by the common people, even though alive and in bodily condition, it became necessary for other prophets to come to guide mankind. So about 144,000 (minus two) prophets according to the teaching of Jesus and the Holy Bible have come after the disappearance of Enoch to guide the world from time to time. According to Islamic ideas about 124,000 Prophets have come on earth. This small difference is immaterial because the Qur’an does not mention any figures about the number of Prophets but Muslims say vaguely “about” and not a definite figure, whilst the Holy Bible always has given a definite figure of 144,000.

The next popular Prophet to become “Ghaibun Nabi” was Elijah. He appointed Elisha as the next prophet at the time of his disappearance in bodily form (II Kings 2: 9-15). Following Elijah also came so many other Jewish Prophets after his nominee Elisha.

The third famous Prophet to become “Ghaibun Nabi” was Jesus. He was bodily lifted in a live condition in the presence of his followers (St. Luke 24: 50-51 and Acts 1: 9).

After Jesus came Muhammad, the last prophet, who has delivered unto mankind the complete divine scripture known as “Qur’an” and has completed the religion (Qur’an 5: 3) which was left incomplete by Jesus (St. John 16: 12-13).

- 13) It will be apparent from the above that once a prophet disappears from view and cannot be easily contacted by the common people to solve their day-to-day problems, his tenure on earth ends. Such “Ghaibun Nabi”, even though they are

alive with their bodily forms, cannot any longer stop the people from becoming evil nor are they able to give day-to-day guidance to laymen, so another prophet becomes a necessity. As such their post of a prophet becomes vacant and others have actually come to fill in the blanks according to the above historical and Biblical records.

- 14) Muhammad was the last prophet. There will be no more prophets after him, because he has completed the religion of Allah and delivered the complete divine message—the “Qur’an”. So when Jesus will come back on earth at the time of the Battle of Armageddon, he will not come in his right as a prophet because the religion and the divine message have been completed already and as such no more prophets are required. As a matter of fact Jesus would be coming to render help to the Saint Saviour, the Imam of the time. As such he would be the “Khalifatul Mahdi” as shown above.
- 15) Some years after the disappearance of Jesus, *i.e.* his being lifted bodily to heaven, the *curse of Allah* fell upon the Jews for the martyrdom of their prophet John, son of Zakariah, and their attempt to kill Jesus, as also for trying to distort the religion taught by Jesus and falsifying the Evangel by the New Testaments in Greek of Mark and Luke who were not the disciples of Jesus *etc.* as read in Chapter 12—but were Gentiles.

The result was that Jerusalem was razed to the ground in 70 A.D. by the Romans, who did not spare anybody.

In much the same way, some years after the martyrdom of Imam Hasan Askari and the escape in 260 A.H. and the final disappearance of Imam Abu Qassim in 328 A.H. Allah decided to punish the wicked Muslim Rulers.

On the one hand the Christian Crusaders led by French generals with an army of 30,000 came through Asia Minor taking Antioch in 1098 A.D. and finally capturing Jerusalem in July 1099, where they massacred the entire Muslim civil population comprising 70,000 aged



men, defenceless women and innocent children.

On the other hand the barbarous Seljuk Turks in the eleventh century A.D. like an avalanche swept over the centres of Muslim culture and civilisation from the Turkish Republics of Central Asia to Asia Minor leaving behind bare deserts arid shapeless ruins where before had stood the majestic palaces of stately cities, girt about with beautiful gardens and fruitful corn-land—History has nothing to relate that at all approaches it save and except a similar disaster brought about a couple of centuries later by the Mongol hosts of Chengiz Khan.

Such a horrible situation prevailed that Islam was shaken to its very foundations and the Muslims had lost faith. An “Imam” to act as a *“Reviver of Islam”* became an absolute necessity. If the tenure of the Ghaibul Imam Abul Qassim had not been completed then he would certainly have re-appeared and attended to the problems thus created. Just as Jesus did not re-appear to save Jerusalem or to correct the Jews, so also, Ghaibul Imam Abul Qassim did not re-appear to solve the threat to Al-Islam. This only shows that Ghaibul Imam Abul Qassim had completed his tenure just as all the three Ghaibun Nabi including Jesus had completed their allotted periods when they finally and totally disappeared from the view of the common people.

All this brings home very vividly the great importance of “Darood-e-Ibrahim” according to which whatever happened to the descendants of Isaac, the second son of Abraham, has been experienced also by the children of Hussain, the second grandson of Muhammad.

- 16) After a century of such chaotic conditions, when Islam was crumbling, Allah out of His Mercy sent an “Imam” of the rank of *“Imam-Ul-Aulia”* or the Imam of all saints after Panjatan as “Mohiuddin” i.e. *Reviver of the Religion*. This “Imam” came centuries after Gbaibul Imam Abul Qassim had disappeared not only from view but also after he had declared in 328 A.H. that his tenure was over and he would not be contactable for an indefinitely long period as read here before. Hence he

naturally could not render the assistance that Islam needed to rescue her from the disasters she had been faced with. We shall read hereafter about this great “Imam” who saved Islam from chaos, confusion and destruction.

- 17) The present situation of the entire human race is much worse than it has ever been since the creation of man. Today we have the Nuclear Bombs—and very unfortunately plenty of them! According to Dr. Linus Pauling, the American Nobel Prize-winning scientist, there are enough bombs to wipe out every man, woman and child 150 times over! (“Technocrat”, December 1968). Hence a desperate need has arisen for a Saint Saviour to rescue mankind from this threat of total annihilation! One who will lead those who have surrendered to “Thy Will be done on earth as it is in Heaven” through the Battle of Armageddon to—Universal Peace and Goodwill—where wars will become a thing of the past—when weapons of war will be destroyed!

At the time of the Battle of Armageddon many saints, who have disappeared from view, will also reappear to render assistance to the Saint Saviour—The Mahdi. Amongst them will be both Jesus and Imam Abul Qassim who will both be holding equally honoured positions of “Khalifatul Mahdi” as revealed hereabove.

Now let us enquire as to how many “Imams” there are from the descendants of Hasan, the elder son? Who are they? When did they come? Surprisingly one finds that there will be just three such Imams. As it so happens these three complete the foretelling that there would be twelve great “Imams”. These remaining “Imams”—the three great personages from the descendants of Hasan, the eldest son of Ali are as under:

- i. The first Imam after Panjatan was Imam Hasanul Mussanna. He was born on 12th Ramadan 29 A.H. He was appointed Imam by his father Hasan in 45 A.H. (page 74 of Astana, issue of November 1962, Delhi). He was thus appointed the first

“Imam” within 5 years after the martyrdom of Ali. Hence his period as “Imam” commenced much before that of his cousin Imam Sajjad Zainal Abedin, whose period as “Imam” commenced from 59/60 A.H. or about 14 years later, thus bringing to mind that there was also a fourteen year gap between the births of Ishmael and Isaac, the two blessed sons of Abraham. What a coincidence indeed!

Accordingly Hasan is represented amongst the Imams by this son, whose face and features were identical with those of his father Hasan, who was a living image of the Holy Prophet Muhammad, himself. Hence his name “Hasan, the second” or Hasanul Mussaana (page 48 of *Astana*, Nov. 1962), thereby clarifying his position that he was the blessed child. He married his cousin Syeda Fatemah Soghra, daughter of Hussain (page 122, Vol. II, *Rahmatul Lil Aalameen* by Sulaiman Munsoorpoori). Thus all their children are termed “Hasani-Hussaini Syeds”!

At Karbala Imam Hassaul Mussanna fought so very bravely that he killed 35 of his enemies. When he fell from his horse he had 35 injuries on his body (page 117, *Liali Ashra* by Md. Sultanuddin Ahmed Chishti Jamali, Calcutta, 1319 A.H.). He was so badly injured that he was left for dead amongst the martyrs. His wife Fatemah Soghrah was also present at Karbala (page 117 of *ibid*). Amongst the five brothers *i.e.* the five sons of Hasan who were at Karbala, four were killed instantaneously. He had fainted due to his injuries and loss of blood. His injured body was picked up after the battle of Karbala by Asma Bente Kharja bin Asad Fazui, who took the injured “Imam” to her home (page 122, Vol. II, *Rahmatul Lil Aalameen*). Her father was the brother of the mother of the injured person. She obtained permission of Ibne Ziad, the commander of Yazid’s forces, to treat this injured person on the grounds that he was her close relative—first cousin. Because Kharja bin Asad Fazari was a very influential man of Kufa the permission was granted to save the life of Imam Hasanul Mussanna (page 177, *Liali Ashra*). After a prolonged treatment of several months

he recovered (page 122, Vol. II, *Rahmatul Lil Aalameen* and page 48 of *Astana*, Nov. 1962).

Just as Prophet Ishmael, the eldest son did not come into much prominence save and except for his offer to sacrifice himself to Allah but was saved by the Angel Gabriel replacing him by a ram, so also Imam Hasanul Mussanna did not come much into prominence. He also offered his life with the other martyrs at Karbala but was fortunately saved from death by his coasin Asma just as Prophet Ishmael had been by the Angel Gabriel. What a coincidence! All this only goes to show the great significance of “Darood-e-Ibrahim”.

- ii. Regarding the second “Imam” from the children of Hasan *i.e.* the eleventh “Imam” the Prophet had declared that the Angel Gabriel had informed him that one great saintly head or Imam from the descendants of Hasan would come on earth after nine “Imams” or religious heads from the descendants of Hussain had completed their tenure on earth. He would be born in the fifth century A.H. from a 60-year-old lady. This “saint” would save “Islam” from the chaos and confusion that would be prevailing (such a condition was actually caused by the barbarous Turks who had destroyed many a Muslim Kingdom, burning, massacring and laying whole areas waste) and bring the shattered Islam back to full glory. If another prophet would have been born after me, said the Holy Prophet, then it would have been this child. He will be the greatest saint of the earth as I am the greatest prophet. He would have as much power and piety as the nine Imams from the children of Hussain put together. His name would be “Abdul Qadir” and title “Mohiuddin”. Seven different famous Hadiths of the Holy Prophet Muhammad confirming these facts have been quoted on pages 10, 15, 61-64 and 71 of “Guldusta-e-Karamat” by Mufti Ghulam Muhammad Sarwar Lahori. This saint is a descendant of Imam Hasanul Mussanna, the second son of Hasan by his wife Syeda Fatemah Soghra daughter of Hussain.

This saint—Syed Abdul Qadir—had the same face and features as the Holy Prophet Muhammad, as also of Hasan and his son Imam Hasanul Mussanna, all of them being identical. Syed Abdul Qadir was born at Gail, a city in the province of Jilan, the night before the month of Ramadan or the month of fasting in the year 471 A.H. (See *Iqtibas-Ul-Anwar and Nafhat-Ul- Uns*). Thus he was born 211 years after Imam Abul Qassim originally disappeared from the view of common people and 143 years after he finally and completely disappeared from all contact with the people of this earth. Abdul Qadir used to fast during the whole month of Ramadan in each year from the year of his birth by refusing to drink his mother's milk during the period of fasting from before sunrise till sunset even though he was one day to thirty days old during the first month of Ramadan. No other new-born child has as yet given such a miraculous performance in the history of mankind! As soon as he could talk, to the surprise of all he recited by heart 17 parts out of the 30 parts of the Qur'an! When he was only four years old he started raising the dead to life! This miraculous power remained throughout his life! He raised many thousands from their graves! You have already read about some of his miracles in Chapter 17: F-2. When he used to deliver his Sermons in Bagdad, he used to be heard by his disciples simultaneously from Taskant to Madrid as read earlier in Chapter 21: D-1 (pages 96-97, *Bahjatul Asrar wa Madanul Answar*). Islam was in a very shaky condition at the time of Syed Abdul Qadir Jilani with Muslims having lost heart and faith due to the barbarous attacks by pagan Turks on one side destroying many Islamic Empires as already read in Chapter 15: Land the Christian Crusaders' victories at Jerusalem on the other hand (Chapter 14: D-3). It was he who revived Islam to its sound footing by converting the pagan Turks to Islam, who not only revived the Islamic Empire but

also won back Jerusalem from the Crusaders (Chapter 14: D-5). Hence he was given divinely the title of “Mohiuddin” or the Reviver of the Religion of Islam (pages 34-35, *Hay at Dastagir*, by Muhammad Muslim Ahmed Nizami, 1375 A. H.). He is accordingly famous as Shaikh Mohiuddin Syed Abdul Qadir Jilani, the “Imam-Ul-Aulia” or the Imam of all saints after Panjatan (pages 103-105 of *Ghausul Azam* by Nazir Ahmed Saimab). Many learned Shia scholars recognise him also as one of the “Imams” (page 173, *Baherul Ansab* by Shia scholar Aqa Muhammad Taber Irani, also see *Bahoorul Ansab* by Syed Muswi and page 13 of *Ghausul Azam* by Nazir Ahmed Saimab). He is the eleventh Imam after Panjatan. He is also the eleventh descendant from Hasan. His body lies buried in Bagdad. He is so far the greatest saint of Islam after “Panjatan” i.e. the Holy Five comprising the Prophet, Ali, Fatemah, Hasan and Hussain. He had in himself the combined total of the piety and powers of the nine Imams from the children of Hussain, the second son of Ali (page 25, *Ouldasta-e-Karamat*).

When the Holy Prophet Muhammad went to heaven on the night of Mehraj (Chapter 17: E-9), he was asked by the Angel Gabriel to go ahead alone in front of the throne of Allah, where even Gabriel could not go. As soon as Muhammad found himself in front of the throne he found it difficult to mount it. Immediately, by the order of Allah, a Soul appeared and asked the Prophet to place his feet upon his shoulder. No sooner was this done than he could reach the pedestal of the throne. Muhammad asked Allah who this soul was which appeared to be like one of his children. Allah replied that it was the soul of Abdul Qadir, who is a descendant of your grandson Hasan. If I had not decided to end prophethood with you, then this descendant of yours would have been blessed with prophethood also (page 10, *Guldasta-e-Karamat*). Whereupon the Holy Prophet announced not only in heaven, but repeatedly after his return that as my feet are upon the shoulder of Abdul Qadir, so also will his feet be upon the shoulders of all the saints

(after Panjatan) of Islam. As I am the greatest amongst Prophets so also this descendant of Hasan will be the greatest amongst the saints after Panjatan (pages 10-13 of *ibid*).

The night this child was born the Holy Prophet appeared with all the saints and his companions and the angels to the mother of this child and informed her that as I am the greatest prophet so also will your child be the greatest saint (page 15 of *ibid*).

On his shoulder was the mark of the foot of the Holy Prophet from the time of his birth. This footmark used to glow with light all the time (page 15 of *ibid*).

- iii. The twelveth and last great spiritual head or Imam after Panjatan has again got to be an Imam from the descendants of Hasan according to Darood-e-Ibrahim. The following well-known Hadiths have been recorded in "*Mishkat Sharif*" by Abdul Haq Mahaddis Dehalvi, published by Navalkisore Press, Lucknow:

On page 329, Vol. V, *Mishkat Sharif*:

Abu Ishak was told by Ali: "You see this son of mine, patting his eldest son Hasan on the shoulder, the Holy Prophet (May Allah's peace be on him) has said that this son of mine is a 'Syed' and from his descendants would come a child answering the following description:

- a. "His name would be the same as that of the Holy Prophet *i.e.* Muhammad.
- b. "This child's father's name would be the same as the Holy Prophet's fathers name *i.e.* Syed Abdulla.
- c. "His mother's name would be the same as the Holy Prophet's mothers name *i.e.* Syeda Amena.
- d. "This child's face and features would be the same as those of the Holy Prophet's as well as Hasan's as both were identical.
- e. "He would be the greatest saint of the world after the Panjatan *i.e.* The Holy five comprising the Prophet, Ali, Fatemah, Hasan

and Hussain.

- f. “He would fill the earth with as much piety before his departure from earthly life as it was filled with wickedness at the time of his birth around the last part of the 14th century A.H. (The 14th century A.H. ends in 1980 A.D.). His date of birth has been disclosed by Jeane Dixon as 5th February 1962 (Chapter 26: A-1) and the same date has been given by the Tibetan clairvoyant Dr Rampa (Chapter 26: A-5).
- g. “He would bring the people of the world into a single community with only one religion of ‘Al Islam’ or Surrender to the will of Allah’ prevailing. This has been confirmed by both Jeane Dixon and Dr Rampa (Chapter 26: A-6).
- h. On page 327, Vol. V of “*Mishkat Sharif*”:

“He would create such a wonderful condition of piety and spiritual revival that even the dead would petition Allah to give them permission to come out of their graves just to see the wondrous conditions brought about by this child” (for greater details please refer to Chapter 26: A, 1-6 for his birth as foretold by American and Tibetan sources, Chapter 29 for events concerning him; and Chapter 30 for the conditions he would bring about).

Upon hearing all this praise about this duplicate of the Holy Prophet, the people asked: “Oh Prophet will it be you who will be coming back again?” But Muhammad declined to reply, leaving everything open to speculation!

These facts about the Mahdi, the greatest of the Imams, are well known to the educated Shias also as will be clear from the following quotations from “Durre-Maqsood” by the Shia scholar Khan Bahadur Aulad-e-Hyder Bilgrami:

- i. The Mahdi’s father’s name would be Syed Abdulla (page 260 of *ibid*).
- ii. The Mahdi’s mother’s name would be Syeda Amena (page 260 of *ibid*).
- iii. The Mahdi’s name would be Muhammad (page 260 of



*ibid*).

- iv. The Mahdi would bring all the people on earth to one religion (page 260 of *ibid*).

Thus the Shias also know well that Ghaibul Imam Abul Qassim is not the Mahdi because of the following reasons:

- a. Ghaibul Imam's father's name was Imam Hasan Askari and not Syed Abdulla, which would be the name of the father of the Mahdi.
- b. Ghaibul Imam's mother was not a "Syeda" *i.e.* a descendant of the Prophet but an Italian Princess, who converted to Islam (pages 2-5 of *ibid*).
- c. Ghaibul Imam's mother's name was Nargis Khatoon (pages 2-5 of *ibid*). Therefore she has no connection with Syeda Amena, the mother of the Mahdi (page 260 of *ibid*).

It will be clear therefore that not only the Sunni, *i.e.* those who follow the Sunnah but also the Shias accept that the Mahdi is quite a different person from Ghaibul Imam Abul Qassim. *i.e.* the last Imam from the children of Hussain or the tenth Imam.

*A very strange and important point to note about the three "Imams" from the children of Hasan is that all three of them have the same face and features as those of Prophet Muhammad and his grandson Hasan! None of the children of Hussain were blessed with this peculiarity—something which is quite significant in itself and does not require any elaboration.*

Some groups of so-called "lovers of Ali" recognise the nine descendants of Hussain as their Imams. They generally do not acknowledge as their spiritual guides any of the descendants of Hasan, the elder son of Ali in spite of the Hadith quoted by the Shia scholar Salmin that the sons of both Hasan and Hussain are to be accepted and not of only one of them. Yet they pretend that they believe in "Panjatan", the Holy Five, which includes Hasan, just as the Jews and

the Christians also admit according to the Holy Bible that the eldest son of Abraham was Ishmael and that he was also a blessed son but because they do not really believe in him so they fail to recognise his descendants *viz*: Muhammad and Ali in spite of the advices in the Holy Bible as already read in Chapter 13: C.

The Holy Qur'an gives us the following information:

"Surely they disbelieve in Allah and His apostles, who desire to make a distinction between Allah and His apostles and say: We believe in some and disbelieve in others; and thus desire to take a course between (this and) that.

"These are truly the unbelievers, and We (Allah) have prepared for such unbelievers a disgraceful punishment" (Qur'an 4: 150-151).

However, the feigning of ignorance by the Jews and the Christians and the distortion of the Holy Bible did not succeed in stopping the coming of Muhammad, the greatest prophet, and Ali, the greatest saint. So also the pretence of ignorance and their denial and suppression and deliberate mutilation of the Hadiths concerning the "Imams" from the children of Hasan including the first Imam, the greatest saint and the greatest Imam after "Panjatan" cannot stop the birth of these greatest personages.

All this only goes to show that some groups of so-called "lovers of Ali" who are dealt with at length later in Chapter 21: D 8 and 9, are following the same policies as the Jews and the Christians *i.e.* recognising the descendants of the younger son only and refusing to recognise the descendants of the elder which includes the greatest Imam and the greatest saint after Panjatan only because they are descended from Hasan the elder son just as the Jews and Christians refused to recognise Muhammad, the greatest prophet, and Ali, the greatest saint, only because they were descended from Ishmael the eldest son of Abraham, thus bringing home very vividly the importance and significance of "Darood-e-Ibrahim".

## 7. The Saints of Islam—The Imams

Besides these twelve great “Imams” (*i.e.* three from the children of Hasan and nine from the descendants of Hussain) there are a very large number of famous saints of the Sufi schools who have enlightened the world.

Many of them are often referred to as “Imams” because they are spiritual guides or Khalifas in terms of “Hadith-e-Saqlain” (already referred to in Chapter 21: D-1). These so-called “Imams” or Khalifas are guides not for the whole of Islam like the above twelve great “Imams” but they are guides for the people of their particular areas or countries or the group of people they are with.

Hence there is a big difference between the above twelve “Imams” and these saintly Sufi “Imams” or Khalifas or Spiritual Guides. A very few of these are being referred to hereafter.

From the children of Hasan come Syed Ali Al-Hujwiri alias Dataganj Bakhsh, (the patron saint of Pakistan at Lahore), Khwaja Syed Osman Harooni Chishty (the spiritual guide of the patron saint of the Indian Sub-continent), Makhdoom Sabir Allauddin Chishty of Kaliar (the saint who did not eat a single grain of food after his ordainment), Syed Ahmed Refai (the spiritual heir of Shaikh Mohiuddin Syed Abdul Qadir Jilani, the “ImamUl-Aulia”), Syed Nasiruddin Chirag, Dehlavi (who caused light to burst forth from his fingers when the King of Delhi forbade the sale of oil to this saint), Syed Abul Hasan Ali As-Shazli from whom have come the leading saints from Egypt to Morocco.

Some of the famous saints from the children of Hussain are Khwaja Syed Moinuddin Hasan Chishty Sanjari of Amjer (the saint who converted the Hindus of Pakistan and India to Islam), Syed Qutbuddin Chishty (New Delhi), Syed Nizamuddin Chishty (New Delhi) and so on.

The Ismaili groups are the followers of Syed Imam Ismail, who was a very pious and holy person. He was the son of Imam Jafar Sadiq, the

great-grandson of Hussain. From Imam Ismail have descended the Fatimid Caliphs of Egypt. The present followers of this group comprise the Nizarites, the Eastern Ismaili, the Ismaili Khojas, the Western Ismailis of Yemen and Syria, the Dawoodi Boharas of India, the Sulaimani and the Sunni Boharas and so on.

These names are only a very few of the many thousands of saints who by their numerous daily miracles and piety have spread the Sufi schools of Ali in terms of Hadith-e-Saqlain so much so that they are always to be found where ever there are Muslims.

Besides the “Imams” or Khalifas of the Sufi Spiritual Schools there are four famous Imams of the Shariat Schools. These great theologians have explained the Qur’anic Laws of Shariat in the light of the Sunnah. As all four have explained from the same basic sources and facts there are no important or substantial differences between them. These comprise the four popular “Sunni” schools:

1. Imam Nauman bin Sabit Abu Hanifa was born in 80 A. H. in Iran. His father, as a child, had been blessed by Ali and foretold that he would get a very pious son (page 735, *Tuhfa Isnaeashria*). His mother was Syeda Khadija Soghra, daughter of Imam Sajjad Zainal Abedin (page 5, *Nafhat-Ul-Uns*).

He became the disciple of his cousin Imam Jafar Sadiq, who was very pleased with the depth of knowledge with which Imam Abu Hanifa would explain the laws of Shariat in the light of the Hadith (pages 787-788 of *Tuhfa Isnaeashria* which has quoted several references, “*Sharah Tajrid*”, “*Nahajul Huq*” and “*Minhajul Karamat*” all by the Shia scholar Ibne Muthar Hully) Hence it will be clear that learned Shia scholars also recognise Imam Abu Hanifa as a great teacher of the Sunnah and the Shariat laws.

Imam Jafar Sadiq gave his daughter Syeda Fatemah Miskin in marriage to Imam Abu Hanifa in accordance with the instructions he received from the Holy Prophet and Ali in a

dream (page 5, *Nafhat-UL -Uns*).

When Imam Abu Hanifa went to the shrine of the Holy Prophet at Madinah he said: “As Salaam Alaika ye Syedal Mursalin” *i.e.* “Peace of Allah be on you Oh! Head of all Prophets” immediately a voice came out of the grave in reply: “Wa Alai Kum as Salaam ya Imam Ul Muslimin” *i.e.* “Allah’s peace also be upon you Oh! Imam of Muslims”. Thus was he blessed with the title of “Imam Ul Muslimin” (page 73, part 1, *Taskirat Ul Aulia* by Shaikh Fariduddin Attar, Published by Maulvi Haji Abdul Quyyum, Calcutta 1380 A.H.= 1961 A.D.).

His followers are known as Hanafi. They are the largest group amongst the “Sunni” and comprise Muslims from Albania and Turkey in the West to Turkestan in U. S. S. R., China and India in the east including all countries in between *e.g.* Iraq, Iran, Syria, Lebanon, Jordan, Arab Gulf countries, Afghanistan, Pakistan and even Burma.

2. Imam Malik was born in Madinah in 95 A.H. His followers are known as Maliki. They are the Muslims of Northern Africa. Students come from far and near to hear him.
3. Imam Muhammad Bin Idris Abu Abdulla Shafei was born in 150 A.H. in Egypt. His followers are the Shafei who dwell in Arabia, on the coastline of India, Malaysia, Thailand, the Philippines and Indonesia. He was the disciple of Imam Muhammad the disciple of Imam Abu Hanifa, the disciple of Imam Jafar Sadiq, the fourth Imam after Panjatan.
4. Imam Abdulla Ahmed Bin Hambal was born in 164 A.H. in Baghdad. The Hambali are found in South Iraq and Northern Arabia. He collected together 30,000 Hadiths.

Those who follow the “Sunnah” *i.e.* teaching of the Holy Prophet however accept all these saints and holy personages as “Imams” without any distinction as to whether they are from the descendants of Hasan or Hussain or any particular son of Hussain or even outsiders.

Their only yardstick is whether the particular man concerned follows the Hadiths *i.e.* the teachings of the Holy Prophet. If so, he is a Khalifa to be obeyed, respected and honoured in terms of the following Sunnah of the Prophet referred to earlier:

“Kullo Takkiun min aale” which means: “All who follow my teachings (*i.e.* the Sunnah) are my children *i.e.* Ahle-Baits”.

The Qur'an has described these saintly people as follows:

“Lo! verily the Walis (*i.e.* friends) of Allah are (those) on whom fear cometh not, nor do they grieve!

“(They are) those who believe and keep their duty (by following the Sunnah of the Prophet).

“Theirs are good tidings in the life of the world and in the hereafter—There is no changing the Words of Allah—That is the Supreme Triumph” (Qur'an 10: 63-65).

## **8. Abdullah ibne Saba—the enemy of Ali and his sons**

History informs us that a very learned Jew named Abdullah ibne Saba, a native of Sana in Yemen (page 5. *Tuhfa Isnaeashria* by Shah Abdul Aziz Mohaddis Dehlavi), had decided that he should destroy Islam by any means. He realised well that he could not do so whilst remaining outside the folds of Islam. Accordingly he planned to convert with the idea of sowing disunity and mistrust from within.

He came to Abu Bakr, the first Khalifa, and offered to become a Muslim. Abu Bakr by his power of telepathy realised that this learned Jew had come out of hatred to break up the unity of Islam. So he refused to convert the Jew. This naturally filled Abdullah ibne Saba with a great hatred for Abu Bakr. Therefore he started his preachings against Abu Bakr. The only story he could create was that Abu Bakr usurped the right of Ali to become the one and only Khalifa! This is the origin of such falsehood.

When Omar became the Khalifa, Abdullah ibne Saba again

approached him offering to become a Muslim. Omar, realising by his spiritual powers this man's hatred for Islam, also refused, thus causing even greater hatred in the Jew against both Abu Bakr and Omar. Hence his preachings against both of them. Both the above incidents are quoted from pages 5-6 of "*Tuhfa Isnaeashria*" by Shah Abdul Aziz Mohaddis Dehlavi.

Next he came to Osman, who also realised from his power of telepathy the intentions of this learned Jew. However, as he was an educationalist, he thought to himself that no great harm could be done by one person and perhaps his evil intentions might change when he understood Islam better. Accordingly he accepted the offer and converted Abdullah ibne Saba by making him promise that he would abide by and follow the Quaranic Laws of Shariat and the Sunnah (pages 5-6 of *ibid*).

Abdullah ibne Saba, out of his hatred for Abu Bakr and Omar in addition to his hatred for Islam, immediately set about collecting such Hadiths and verses of the Qur'an by slightly twisting the interpretation of which he could cause chaos and confusion amongst Muslims (page 6 of *ibid*). These have been referred to by Allah in the Qur'an:

"He (Allah) it is Who hath revealed unto thee (Muhammad) the scripture (Qur'an) wherein are clear revelations—They are the substance and essence of the Book—and others (which are) allegorical (hence not the substance of the divine teachings of the Qur'an). But those in whose heart is perversity follow that part thereof which is allegorical by seeking to create discord by trying to explain its hidden meanings. None knoweth its explanation save Allah and those who are of sound instruction, say: ...

"Our Lord! cause not our hearts to stray after Thou hast guided us, and bestow upon us Mercy from Thy Presence. Lo! Thou, only Thou art the Bestower" (Qur'an 3: 7-8).

He was rather surprised that none in Madinah or Mecca were even prepared to listen to him in view of the above Qur'anic injunctions and

also because they personally knew how pious and good both Abu Bakr and Omar were. As such he had no option left but to move out to the newly conquered peoples like Kufa, the seat of the ancient pagan Persian Empire and other such places including Iraq, Syria and Egypt, where the people were not personally aware of the noble qualities of Abu Bakr and Omar (pages 5-6 of *ibid*).

He well realised from his unsuccessful experiences with the people of Madinah and Mecca that if he were to achieve his object of destroying Islam he had somehow to destroy the following Hadith which has been quoted by the Arab Shia scholar Salmin on page 78 of "*Ali the Caliph*":

"Jabir, son of Abdulla Ansari, relates that once he asked the Prophet that after his devotion to God and His Prophet, who also were to be obeyed next.

"The Prophet said: 'First my Caliphs (*i.e.* Abu Bakr, Omar and Osman) are to be obeyed, next the Godly saints of whom Ali is first and next after him are his sons Hasan and Hussain and their sons'."

Therefore to destroy Islam he set out to achieve the following targets:

1. The image and honour of the Khalifas of Muhammad—The first three "Temporal" Heads—had to be split up! Somehow they should be destroyed! They should be accused of some wrong or other. They should at least be declared usurpers of the Khalifat.
2. Similarly the House of Ali which was the fountain of spiritual guidance for Islam must be split up—*i.e.* some of them to be accepted and others to be derecognised!
3. Further, Ali and his sons should also be killed and destroyed, as otherwise Islam cannot be destroyed!
4. Madinah should be destroyed, because the people of this city were looked upon as the people who had lived with the Prophet and observed the Sunnah—the teachings of



Muhammad—as long as they remained, he could not misguide the followers of Islam.

5. Mecca, the place from where Muhammad began his preachings had to be eliminated also if Islam was to be destroyed forever.

Thus Abdullah ibne Saba well realised that unless these five “Corner-stones” of Islam were effaced he could not hope for any success as was already obvious from his efforts to preach disunity in Madinah and Mecca, which had forced him to leave these cities and shift to Kufa and other places in Iraq, Syria and Egypt.

To achieve his first object—to split up the unity of Khalifa-e-Rashdeen, *i.e.* the rightful Khalifas—he started preaching as follows:-

- a) When Ali was appointed spiritual heir of the Prophet at Ghadir-e-Khum, then no question arose of Abu Bakr being the first Khalifa, Omar being the second Khalifa and so on.
- b) When it was pointed out that the Hadith of Masjid-e-Nabavi was well known, his retort was that the Hadith of Masjid-e-Nabavi was an old Hadith, whilst Ghadit-e-Khum was something declared long thereafter. So the later Hadith; had an over-riding effect upon the earlier teachings of the Prophet! As such the Hadith of Masjid-e-Nabavi was no longer valid. Therefore it must be set aside and ignored.
- c) When his attention was drawn to the casket “Sakina” which disclosed that Muhammad would have four Khalifas as was known to the world from the time of Adam, the first man (Chapter 13: J), his reply was that when Muhammad appointed Ali at Ghadir-e-Khum, it cancelled all previous orders whether they were made by Allah Himself or anybody else did not matter. Accordingly Abdullah ibne Saba made himself even greater than Allah! This is nothing but the claim of King Nimrod, the accursed of Babylon, who as the Mighty Hunter in rebellion against God (Genesis 10: 9) was the first

man to claim to be even superior to God (Chapter 6: G). Is this not blasphemy?

- d) When his attention was drawn to the foretellings of earlier Jewish Prophets regarding the surrender of Jerusalem to the second Khalifa of the Promised Prophet (as read in Chapter 13: K), his reply was: “Just because I, Abdullah ibne Saba, disbelieve in the same so it cannot be correct even if history records it as such!”. Abdulla ibne Saba thus posed as the “Infallible Pontifex Maximus”—the teachings of King Nimrod, the cursed of Babylon (Chapter 5: F-7 and 6: G).
- e) When the numerous praises of Abu Bakr and Omar were pointed out from the Qur’an, his reply was that they were praises relating to Ali, which were deliberately misinterpreted, as there could be no praise of anybody else but Ali in the Qur’an.
- f) When it was pointed out that Ali had said that he would not permit anyone, who did not love and respect Abu Bakr, to cross “Pul-Sarat” into heaven (Chapter 21: D-4), his reply was that this was a false statement attributed to Ali. Even if it was correct then Ali had exceeded his authority. So Ali’s statement automatically became null and void in the opinion of the learned Jew—the Infallible Pontifex Maximus—the one who could make no mistakes and do no-wrongs!
- g) When his attention was drawn to the certificate given by Ali to Omar that he would be the torch-bearer of those in heaven, (Chapter 21: D-4) his reply was that Ali had no right to give such a written document. So Ali had exceeded his authority and power and as such the certificate of Ali to Omar was to be treated as null and void just because Abdullah ibne Saba considered it should be so—the Infallible Pontifex Maximus!
- h) When it was pointed out that all the three first Khalifas had been induced by Ali to accept their post, his reply was that Ali could not have done so. He insisted that Ali’s right to be the one and only Khalifa had been usurped and because his

decision in this matter was final so it over-ruled even Ali's decision, who apparently was nobody of any consequence compared to the pious and holy Abdullah ibne Saba—the Infallible Pontifex Maximus!

Yet in spite of all the above Abdullah ibne Saba pretends that the religion founded by him is that of the lovers of Ali and his children! As we go on it will become clear that certainly he is not a believer in any member of the “Panjatan”—The Holy Five.

- i) Thus Abdulla ibne Saba falsified each and everything including the meaning of the Qur'an, the Orders of Allah, the statements of the earlier prophets, the Hadiths of the final Prophet, the numerous statements of Ali and to substantiate these fabrications he wove round them the baseless stories of alleged atrocities committed against Ali by the early Khalifas with the sole object of breaking up the unity of Islam and trying to destroy it (pages 215-216, *A Literary History of the Arabs* by Professor R. A. Nicholson, Cambridge, 1956, also pages iii-iv of the preface to *Ali the Caliph* by the Shia scholar Salmin).

It is very important to note over here that Omar, Osman and Ali *i.e.* three out of the four Khalifa-e-Rashedeen were martyred. In the case of Osman it is clearly established that Kanana, the Egyptian, was the murderer (page 197, *Asadullah*). He was a follower of Abdullah ibne Saba (page 107, *Firdaus Asiya* by Abdur Rab Qadri Dehlavi). Since the object of Abdullah ibne Saba was to destroy Islam by any means at his disposal, so it can be assumed that the murderers of the other two or the rightful Khalifas *viz:* Omar and Ali were also from the same source. As a matter of fact Abdullah ibne Saba and his followers were responsible for all the chaos caused in Islam (*Tabari*, i, 2942, 2) *e.g.:*

Ali became the next Khalifa upon the martyrdom of Osman. The people of Madinah wanted the murderers of Osman to be tried and

punished. The leaders of this group were Talah and Zubair, both very pious people and also close companions of the Prophet. They obtained the support of Ayesha, the youngest widow of the Prophet, who had then gone to Mecca for Haj Pilgrimage. They decided to go from Mecca to Basra instead of returning to Madinah (pages 172-173, *Khalifa-e-Rashedeen* by Moulana Abdus Shakoor, Lucknow).

Ali, by his spiritual powers, came to know that if he were to seek out and punish the murderers of Osman it would lead to the first battle between Muslims resulting in the death of over 10,000 Muslims including many of the companions of the Holy Prophet, besides weakening the Muslim power and getting a bad name for himself into the bargain. That was why Ali hesitated to take any immediate action.

The delay on the part of Ali in taking any steps in the matter gave the impression that because these Egyptian murderers—the followers of Abdullah ibne Saba—had declared themselves to be the lovers of Ali, so Ali was trying to defend them. In this way Ali was getting a bad name even though he was completely innocent!

Abdullah ibne Saba thus encouraged the people to rise against Ali for not taking any action against the murderers of Osman. This was according to his well-laid-out-plans to discredit Ali, just as he had been trying to discredit Abu Bakr, Omar and Osman as usurpers of the Khalifat!

This mischief eventually led to an open rebellion. Talah and Zubair, backed by Ayesha, rose against the inaction to punish the murderers of Osman. The two Muslim armies met near Basra. Ali tried his best to persuade them not to take any drastic action as that would not help in tracing and punishing the murderers of Osman. Three days of negotiations followed. All the points of misunderstanding were ironed out and it was decided that the next morning both Talah and Zubair would personally come over to Ali and surrender to him (pages 173-174 of *ibid*).

Ali now felt he could safely act against the murderers of Osman.

So he asked the Egyptians led by Abdullah ibne Saba to leave his army as he knew who were the murderers of Osman. This disclosure by Ali frightened Abdullah Ibne Saba. He set up a separate camp in between the two Muslim Armies with a view to stop them from coming to terms the next day (pages 173-175 of *ibid*).

That very night the cunning Abdullah ibne Saba divided his followers into groups. Certain groups were to shower arrows on to each of the two Muslim camps from different directions, whilst two other groups were to rush to the two camps shouting that the other side had started an unprovoked attack upon them whilst negotiating peace! That is how he got both the sides to fight the first battle amongst two groups of Muslims in which over 13,000 Muslims, many of them companions of the Holy Prophet, were martyred (pages 173-175 of *ibid*).

Abdullah ibne Saba made good his escape with his followers in the confusion that followed. Thus he achieved his object of getting the Muslims to rise against the house of Ali and weaken the Muslim power in his attempts to destroy Islam.

When both sides had already agreed to a settlement then this battle of Jamal cannot be said to be a war against Ali by Ayesha or Talah or Zubair. Rather it was something cleverly managed by Abdullah ibne Saba, the Jew, who was pretending to be a lover of Ali (pages 172-175 of *ibid*). Is not such a person an avowed enemy of Islam?

Ali immediately saw through the clever treachery committed by Abdullah ibne Saba and his followers. He realised that the spiritual warning he had had that over 10,000 Muslims including the companions of the Holy Prophet would lose their lives if he proceeded against the murderers of Osman had now very sorrowfully become a fact.

Ali was accordingly most concerned over the safety of Ayesha, the widow of the Holy Prophet. So he ordered his two sons Hasan and Hussain to lead an attack on the spot where their grandmother was.

They were to cut off the legs of the camel on which Ayesha was seated, and when she would fall they were to catch her before she touched the ground. Immediately Ayesha was thus rescued. She made a statement declaring that she had nothing against, her son-in-law Ali and that she had been misled (pages 173-175 of *ibid*).

Talah was killed in this battle. When he was dying he saw a person near him and asked him to which side he belonged. The man replied that he was on the side of Ali. Thereupon Talah said, "Give me your hand". Taking the hand of this man he declared: "I Talah hereby do baiat on the hands of Ali through your hands and surrender myself to Ali. Go and inform Ali accordingly". So saying Talah died. When Ali was informed of this, he wept and said I wish I had died before this incident. Then seeking out the body of Talah and his son Muhammad he blessed them both. When somebody asked: "Was not Talah your enemy". Ali replied: "No, most certainly not—he is my brother." (pages 174- 175 of *ibid*).

A man came and told Ali that he had killed his enemy whilst he was escaping from the battlefield. Ali asked: "Who was he?". The man replied: "Zubair". Ali retorted: "You will be cast into Hell for deliberately killing the cousin of the Prophet". the man enquired: "Was he not your enemy"? Ali replied: "No"! This man went and committed suicide for having killed an innocent person outside the field of battle (page 174 of *ibid*).

Under these circumstances it will be quite clear that neither Ayesha nor Talah nor Zubair had fought the battle of Jamal against Ali, but it was Abdullah ibne Saba and his followers the "Sabaites" or so-called "Shia un Ali", who were the the root cause of the battle of Jamal and the death of 13,000 Muslims (pages 173-175 of *ibid*).

Hasan appointed his second son Hasanul-Mussanna as the first of the twelve "Imams" in 45 A. H. (page 74 of *Astana*, issue of November 1962, Delhi). Abdullah ibne Saba, the founder of Shia un Ali, refused to recognise Hasan for appointing Hasanul Mussanna as Imam with the

idea of causing a split in the House of Ali. Accordingly he and his followers disbelieve in Hasan because they deny to him the right to appoint any “Imams” from out of his children. Hence they do not recognise the first of the twelve great “Imams”.

Further, Abdullah ibne Saba was a Jew. The Jews had accepted Isaac the second son of Abraham and had refused to acknowledge Ishmael and his descendant the greatest prophet *etc.* So in keeping with this principle the Jew decided to ignore as Imam any of the children of Hasan. This incident brings home the significance of “Darood-e-Ibrahim” Accordingly Abdullah ibne Saba and his so-called lovers of Ali became disbelievers in Hasan. Anybody disbelieving in any member of the Panjatan becomes a disbeliever in all the “Holy Five” and will be condemned as promised by Allah—the Hadith of Muhammad on the position of the Panjatan even at the time of the creation of Adam as read here before in Chapter 21: D-6.

The Holy Prophet had declared that there would be twelve great Imams (Hadith no, 561, page 124, Vol. XI, *Kanzul Ummal*). The prophet had foretold that nine “Imams” would be from the children of Hussain (page 25 of *Guldusta-e-Karamat*), the three remaining coming from the children of Hasan. So to fill up the remaining three places Abdullah ibne Saba, with the idea of depriving the children of Hasan from becoming Imams, decided arbitrarily to include Ali, Hasan and Hussain as the three remaining “Imams”. Thereby he reduced the position of honour of these three to just “Imams” or spiritual heads from “Panjatan” or the Holy five, who are joined as one single unit with the Holy Prophet Muhammad according to the information given by Allah at the time of creation of Adam (Chapter 21: D-6). Hence the status and respect of Panjatan are much higher than those of “Imams”. In this manner Abdullah ibne Saba refused to acknowledge that Hasan, the elder grandson, of the Prophet had any right to appoint his son as the first of the twelve “Imams”. This is also tantamount to ignoring the Hadith quoted by the Arab Shia scholar Salmin on page 78 of “*Ali the Caliph*” that the sons of both Hasan and Hussain are to be

acknowledged by Muslims. From this incident it is apparent that Abdullah ibne Saba was not only a disbeliever in Hasan but also a disbeliever in the Holy Prophet Muhammad and his teachings—The Sunnah! According to historical records Abdullah ibne Saba became a travelling missionary. “He went from place to place seeking to lead Muslims into error” (*Tabari*, i, 2942, 2).

The German research scholar Wellhausen has concluded:

The dogmatics of the Sabaites are derived from Jewish rather than Islamic sources—See his account of the Sabaites in his most instructive, “Die religious-politischen Oppositionen parteien in alten Islam” (page 89 and subsequent pages of *Abh. dor Roig. Ges. der Wiss-enshaf ten zu Gattingen*, Phil.-Hist. Klasse, 1901).

This finding has also been recorded by the Shia scholar Dr. Hashim Amir Ali in his article “The Shias” which appeared in the Illustrated Weekly of India, Bombay dated 20th February, 1972. On page 22 one reads:

*“The Sunni tradition is, therefore, based upon the social memory inherited from early Islamic experience in South-West Arabia. It reflects the zeal of the newly converted (from paganism to Islam under the teachings and guidance of the Prophet himself) with the urge to keep itself alive, unchanged and intact (according to the Sunnah i.e. the original teachings of Muhammad). For such a tradition to accept the inevitability of change as a principle is to agree to its own dilution and gradual eclipse.*

*“Shias, on the other hand, were born later, in a more northern clime and were themselves the product of change. In Kufa (the city which rose on the foundations of Ctesiphon, the seat of the Persian Kings), they were much influenced by the heterogeneous elements of Hellenic philosophy, Jewish traditions and Persian cosmology”—as against the Sunnah or the teachings of Muhammad. Therefore Shiaism or the religion originated by Abdullah ibne Saba is not based upon the teachings of Muhammad, but upon other outside influences i.e. Jewish traditions, Persian Paganism and Hellenic philosophy and*



spread from Kufa, the old capital of the Persian Empire.

Further, Islam originated at Mecca and spread from Madinah in South-West Arabia, whilst Shiaism originated from Kufa the seat of the ancient Persian Kings. Hence Shiaism has nothing to do with the Sunnah or the teachings of Muhammad and is based upon a deviation or a change from the original Islam under Jewish influence and has incorporated Hellenic Philosophy and Persian cosmology according to even Shia scholars.

It must also be remembered here that Muhammad was the last Prophet. After him there will be no more Prophets. This has also been confirmed by the earlier Prophets. Jesus has said the same thing on page 225 of *"The Gospel of Barnabas"*. As such the changes introduced by Abdullah ibne Saba are completely unauthorised, because he was not a Prophet and as such he had no right to include Hellenic Philosophy and Persian cosmology to create "Shiaism". Also, he did not have any authority to select parts of the teachings of Muhammad and reject parts of it—the refusal to recognise the first three Khalifas and also not to recognise as "Imams" any of the three descendants of Hasan, amongst whom were expected the greatest saint and the greatest Imam but to recognise only the nine descendents of Hussain and complete the list of 12 "Imams" by adding arbitrarily three members out of 5 from the "Panjatan" or Holy Five. The Qur'an is very emphatic about such mischief-makers:

"And amongst mankind are some who say: We believe in Allah and the Last Day, when they (in reality) believe not.

"They think to beguile Allah and those who believe but (in fact) they beguile none save themselves; but they perceive not!

"In their hearts is a disease, and Allah permits the increase of their disease. A painful doom is theirs because they lie.

"And when it is said unto them: Make not mischief in the earth, they say: we are peace-makers only!

"Are they not indeed the mischief-makers? But they perceive not.

“And when it is said unto them: Believe as the people (following the Sunnah) believe they (the Hypocrites) say: Shall we believe as the foolish believe? Are not they indeed foolish? But (unfortunately) they perceive not!

“Allah does mock them by leaving them to wander blindly in their disobedience.

“These are they who purchase error at the price of guidance...”  
(Qur'an 2: 8-13 and 15-16).

The English Orientalist Professor Reynold A. Nicholson on pages 215.216 of “*A Literary History of the Arabs*” (published by Cambridge, 1956) has recorded about the teachings of Abdullah ibne Saba as follows:

“He went from place to place, seeking to lead the Muslims into error. We hear of him in the Hijar, then in Basra and Kufa, then in Syria. Finally he settled in Egypt, where he preached the doctrine of paligenesis (raya). ‘It is strange indeed’, he exclaimed, ‘that any one should believe in the return of Jesus and deny the return of Muhammad ... Further-more, there are a thousand Prophets, every one of whom has an executor (wasi) and the executor of Muhammad is Ali, ... Ibne Saba, therefore regarded Abu Bakr, Omar and Osman as usurpers. He set on foot a widespread conspiracy in favour of Ali, and carried on secret correspondence with the disaffected in various provinces of the Empire. According to Shahrastani he was banished by Ali for saying ‘Thou art Thou’, (Anta, Anta) *i.e.* ‘Thou art God’. This refers to the doctrine taught by Ibne Saba.”

On pages 6-7 of “*Tuhfa Isnaeashria*” by Shah Abdul Aziz Mohaddis Dehlavi, published by Noor Muhammad of Ashaul Matabe, Karachi, we are informed that it was Abdullah ibne Saba who taught:

“Indeed know well that Ali is God and there is no god other than Ali” (this teaching of Abdullah ibne Saba is also confirmed on page 107 of Firdaus Asiya).

Ali has quoted the following Hadith in respect of Abdullah ibne

### Saba and the Sabaites:

“The Prophet said to me ‘O Ali! There is a resemblance in you to Jesus; the Jews were at enmity with Jesus so they charged his mother (The Virgin Mary) with a falsehood (that she had an illicit affair before her marriage and that she was not a virgin); and the Christians love him so much, as to give him dignity which does not befit him; I mean they call him son of God’. After that Ali said these two (groups of) men will perish because of me; One (group) who shall surpass all bounds in his love for me, and praise me in what I do not possess. The second (group), my enemy, and by his enmity to me will suspect me of falsehood” (pages 413-414 of *Ali the Caliph* by the Shia research scholar Salmin).

From all this it would be apparent that whatever happened to the teachings of the descendants of Abraham as informed in “Darood-e-Ibrahim” will also happen to the teachings of Muhammad in relation to his descendants e.g.;

Abraham was not called “God” or “Son of God” but Jesus was called as such by a group of Christians and hated by a group of Jews. Similarly Muhammad is not called “God” but Ali has been declared “God” by Abdullah ibne Saba the founder of Shiaism, whilst Ali is hated by some.

According to the above Hadith both these two groups of people would be condemned to Hell.

Salmin on pages iii and iv of the Preface to “*Ali the Caliph*” has confirmed:

“Stories and traditions which bear great hatred of the first three Caliphs towards Ali are merely the coinage of the later people, who much anxious to show their love for Ali and his family and sons, could not find other means than this. Besides the rivalry amongst the learned acted as a base for the common people to spread their self-fabricated stories to throw the seeds of dissensions and cause a general break down of Islam”.

It is such lies, created by the fertile mind of Abdullah ibne Saba, the “Mushrik”, the accursed, which caused misunderstandings amongst Muslims. One of them for example was that Abu Bakr burnt the house of Fatemah, which is nothing but a pure and simple lie without any basis whatsoever.

One day a friend of Ali from Kufa asked Ali if it was true that he had been deprived of his position of Khalifa by Abu Bakr and Omar. Ali was so very much upset by this false statement that he wept publicly at the Mosque at Kufa and asked who was spreading such falsehood. The friend replied that the people of Kufa were believing it. Immediately Ali delivered a lecture to all the people who had gathered around him in the mosque at Kufa. Ali warned the people of Kufa and entreated them to desist from such lies. They informed him that Abdullah ibne Saba had been preaching this. Thereupon Abdullah ibne Saba was arrested and banished from Kufa by Ali (pages 181-182 *Tuhfa Isnaeashria* which has quoted from “*Atwaq fi Mubahas al Amama*” by the Shia scholar Imam Mayad Billah Yahya ibne Hamza Zaidi).

It might be recalled over here that *when Ali became the Khalifa, Abdullah ibne Saba wanted to come and pay his respects to Ali because Abdullah claimed to be the founder of and the first “Shia un Ali” or “the Friends of Ali”. But Ali retorted that if Abdullah ibne Saba came before him then he would certainly behead Abdullah in accordance with the following hadith:*

“The Holy Prophet (peace of Allah be on him) had told me, said Ali: Oh Ali! although you are already one blessed with heaven, but I tell you that you will become further blessed in heaven if you will kill those persons who will be coming soon after me, who will claim themselves to be “Shia un Ali” (*i.e.* the friends and followers of Ali) but in actual fact they are not Shias. Such people shall be easily recognised because they would speak against Abu Bakr and Omar. Such people are not Shias but they are “Mushrik” (*i.e.* enemies of Islam) and should be put to death wherever you meet them” (page 314, Vol. XI, *Kanzul Ummal* by Ali Al Muttaqi Al-Hindi). This once again proves that there was no misunderstanding between Ali and

the first three Khalifas. That the mischief-maker and the creator of all the false stories was Abdullah ibne Saba, the Jew!

*Abdullah ibne Saba thereupon fled from Ali at Madinah to Kufa. When he was banished by Ali from Kufa (page 182, Tuhfa Isnaeashria) he went to Damascus, the seat of Muawiyah, the enemy of Ali and his children. Here he found a valuable patron. Under this official patronage he was able to gather a large number of converts from amongst the supporters of the government of Muawiyah. These converts to the teachings of Abdullah ibne Saba called themselves “Shia” or those who had broken away from the teachings of Islam. If Abdullah, the founder of “the Shias”, was a lover of Ali, would he have fled from Ali or would he have submitted himself to Ali and obeyed his teachings?—Which?*

*Abdullah ibne Saba the founder of “Shia un Ali” was therefore never a lover of Ali. His only goal was to break up the unity of Islam and destroy it. He well realised that the ways to achieve his objective were as follows:*

- a. The ruler of Damascus or his sons, who were the enemies of Ali, should be his disciples. So he induced Yazid, the son of Muawiyah, to convert to his teachings in spite of the fact that Yazid was a drunkard, whoremonger and a murderer. Therefore Abdullah ibne Saba, the Jew, was only bent upon mischief. He, the founder of Shiaism or Shia un Ali, was certainly not the lover of Ali and his children by any stretch of the imagination as subsequent events prove beyond doubt.
- b. All male members of the family of the Prophet, *i.e.* all the sons of Ali should be killed. To achieve this aim Abdullah ibne Saba got Yazid to offer his hand in marriage with all the world’s comforts and riches to the woman who poisoned Hasan. That is how Hasan was martyred—by poison. Thereafter when Yazid became the Monarch of the Islamic Empire Abdullah ibne Saba induced his followers at Kufa to send over 150 letters of invitation to Hussain, the second son of Ali, to come over to Kufa and accept their “baiat” *i.e.* to make them his disciples

because of the bad character of their ruler, Yazid (page 528, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

- c. As soon as Hussain got out of his Sanctuary at Madinah, Abdullah ibne Saba had planned with Yazid to send an army comprising Shias, Jews and others to murder Hussain with all the male members, who would be accompanying him. Can such a person, irrespective of what he calls himself, be a friend or the lover of Ali and his children?
- d. After murdering the sons and grandsons of Ali, *i.e.* the male members of the family of the Prophet, he planned through his disciple Yazid to destroy Madinah, the city from where Islam spread all over the world!
- e. Finally, to destroy the Kaabah and thus obliterate Islam from the face of the earth.

This was the master plan of the Jew as to how to destroy Islam through his followers, the Shias headed by Yazid, his most important disciple. Can such a person or his followers including Yazid ever be the lovers of Ali?

### **9. Martyrdom of sons of Ali, Destruction of Madinah and Attack upon Kaabah**

Abdullah ibne Saba induced his favourite disciple, Yazid the drunkard, murderer and whoremonger when he forcibly became the ruler of the Islamic Empire, upon the nomination of his father Muawiyah, to put his scheme into operation for the massacre of the children of Ali, and the destruction of Islam.

He explained to Yazid that this was the only way to consolidate his position to become the absolute undisputed ruler of the entire Islamic Empire—something which he could not become so long as any of the sons of Ali, the rightful claimants to be the “Imam” or “Guide” of the Muslims, remained alive!

Accordingly, when Hussain was induced, by over a hundred and

fifty written requests from the people of Kufa, to pay them a visit, Yazid planned to attack and kill all the male members of the party comprising the family of the Prophet.

This army of Yazid comprised 82,000 “Shias” or followers of Abdullah ibne Saba and some Jews *etc.* The Sabaites were not Muslims at all. They were the followers of the religion started by a Jew, who was out to destroy Islam by any means at his disposal, the Jews being quite famous for the murder of numerous prophets and saints.

With that object this army of Sabaites, under orders of Yazid, not only massacred the innocent and unsuspecting Hussain and the male members of the family of the Holy Prophet who were present with him at Karbala, but they also sacked Madinah for three days in the following year, murdering over 10,000 companions of the Holy Prophet and their children. These Sabaites or so-called Shias even converted Masjid-e-Nabavi, or the mosque of the Prophet in which his body lies at rest, into a stable for keeping horses. That portion of Masjid-e-Nabavi which was known as “Riazul Jannah” or “Piece of Heaven” and contains the grave of the Prophet was deliberately covered with the urine and filth of these horses (pages 306-307, *Marajal Bahrain fi Zikar Sbahadatal Hasnain* by Muhammad Abdur Rab Qadri Dehlavi and pages 551-553, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). Could such people ever be Muslims *i.e.* those who follow Muhammad?

Thereafter this same army of Sabaites under the orders of Yazid attacked the Kaabah. This attack continued for 64 days. They eventually stoned it and set fire to the coverings thereof. That very day Yazid died (pages 553-554, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). Thus ended the plot of Abdullah ibne Saba, the Jew and the founder of Shia un Ali, to destroy Islam, which was his only object in founding this new sect upon hatred and the blood of innocent martyrs comprising the family of the Prophet at Karbala and his companions and their children at Madinah and the destruction of the Kaabah.

It will be obvious that such “Shias” or followers of Abdullah ibne

Saba were not at all Muslims but rather that they were the enemies of Ali and Islam and were doing their utmost to obliterate Muhammad and his teachings from the face of this earth as warned by the Prophet to Ali in the Hadith quoted before on which basis Ali not only refused to grant an interview to Abdullah ibne Saba but also threatened to kill him if he did not desist.

Abdullah ibne Saba was in Damascus when Yazid's army arrived after massacring Hussain and other innocents including even small male children at Karbala. Yazid, out of joy, asked Shimar, the slayer, of Hussain, what reward he wanted for the killing of Hussain. His reply was: "It was your order, Oh Yazid! that killed Hussain". After making this statement Shimar went and sat down in a corner and started beating his breast and head for what he had done. Imam Zainal Abedin's eye fell upon Shimar whom he informed as under:

"You can go on beating yourselves even till Doomsday but it will not get for you the forgiveness of the crimes you have committed".

The reason for this remark was that his father, Hussain, had a dream the night before his martyrdom at Karbala in which the Holy Prophet informed Hussain that he would be martyred the next day and that he should bear all the trials with patience and forbearance and further that the army who would martyr him would never be blessed and would be condemned by Allah to eternal Hell. Hussain immediately woke up everybody in his camp and told all the members of his family that he had just been informed by the Holy Prophet (may Allah always bless him) in a dream that he with other male members were going to be martyred in the morning (page 365, Ajaibal Kasas). Further we learn from page 293 of "*Tazkira ul Karam Tarikh Khulafae-Arab wa Islam*" by Syed Shah Muhammad Kabir of Danapur that upon hearing of this dream everyone in Hussain's Camp sat up the whole night and prayed with him. In the morning they put on otto (sweet fragrance of flowers), put on their best clothes, went to the womenfolk—their mothers, wives, sisters, daughters—and took their leave and blessings and told them that they were entrusting them to the



sole care of Allah and that they should patiently bear all the tribulations and trials in store for them and not to mourn over their death because “martyrs” are not dead according to the following:

“O ye who believe! Seek help with patient perseverance and prayers.  
Lo! Allah is with those who patiently persevere.

*“And call not those who are slain (i.e. dedicated their lives) in the way of Allah: ‘dead’. Nay, they are living, only ye perceive not.*

“And surely We (Allah) shall test you with something of hunger, and loss of wealth and lives and crops; but give glad tidings to those who patiently persevere.

“Who say, when a misfortune striketh them: Lo! we are Allah’s and Lo! unto Him is the return.

“Such are they on whom are the blessings from their Lord and His mercy. Such are the rightly guided” (Qur’an 2: 153-157).

With this they gladly and courageously went out to wear the honours of martyrdom at Karbala. How very anxious each one was for this honour can be gauged by the last few incidents given hereunder after about 60 people had already been martyred at Karbala:

1. When Jafar and his brother Abdur Rahman bin Aqil bin Abu Taleb (both first cousins of Hussain) were martyred, then came two boys in their early “teens”, Muhammad and Aun, both sons of Hazrat Bibi Zainab (sister of Hussain) with the permission and blessings of their mother (pages 186-187, *Anaser as Shahadatain* by Muhammad Nasir Ali, Cawnpore). Hussain refused saying they were not mature enough. Immediately their mother intervened saying “My dear brother, don’t you want my sons to wear the honours of Martyrdom!” Thus it will be clear how very anxious everyone was for these honours in the camp of Hussain instead of chaos, confusion, and mourning and wailing and how the ladies were encouraging their near and dear male relations not to miss this wonderful and glowing opportunity to wear the crowns of

martyrdom along with Hussain at Karbala!

Next came Abdulla bin Hasan (his eldest nephew) whom Hussain gave permission after a lot of pleading to go into the field of Karbala where he killed 82 before being blessed with the honours of martyrdom (pages 187-188 of *ibid*).

Then came the turn of Imam Hasanul Mussanna, the second son of Hasan, about whom we have read earlier (Chapter 21: D-6) and how he was subsequently saved after having fallen with thirty-five wounds on the field of Karbala and taken for dead.

He was followed by his young brother Kassim bin Hassan. Hussain flatly refused to give him permission because he was in his' teens. So he went and sat down in a corner and cried. Thereupon he remembered that his father Hasan upon his death-bed had written something and tied it upon his hand and said: "When you are in the most difficult position then open and read it. It will achieve what you want." So he opened and read it and rushed with joy and enthusiasm to his uncle saying: "See what your elder brother has written!" It was the order to go to his martyrdom at Karbala! Hussain could not say anything but had meekly to grant the permission (pages 188-189 *Anaser as Shahadatain*).

Whenever Hussain used to hesitate in giving permission his sisters used to intervene and plead that permission be granted to wear the honours of martyrdom at Karbala. They used gladly to bless each one who went out! So eager were all of them for martyrdom!

Next Omar bin Hasan and Abu Bakr bin Hasan, both sons of Hasan, came and took permission of their uncle Hussain (pages 190-192, of *ibid*) to wear the crown of martyrdom.

Then came the turn of the 18-year-old Ali Akbar, the second son of Hussain. Hussain gave him permission to go out because his eldest son Imam Zainal Abedin was absolutely bedridden with high fever, and unfit even to stand, let alone fight. This permission was given in spite

of Imam Zainal Abedin's pleading that it was his turn to go out before his younger brother was permitted to go out!

Hussain had a third son named Ali Asgar, who was still so small that he was fed only on milk. This little baby put his tongue out of his mouth due to thirst as the water and food had been stopped by the army of Yazid for the past three days. So everyone was hungry and thirsty. He took the baby Ali Asgar out to plead for water for this innocent child. The answer he got was an arrow in the throat of Baby Ali Asgar instead of water! Can such beasts, irrespective of what they call themselves, be the friends of Ali or Muslims? (pages 203-204 of *ibid*). Now only Hussain was left to be martyred by the followers of Abdullah ibne Saba!

Thereupon Hussain declared his last wishes to all the ladies of the family as follows:

"Do not beat your breasts. Do not cry aloud. Do not tear your clothes. Do not let down your hair. Do not grumble at the fate that awaits you upon my departure. These are against the 'Shariat' of the Holy Prophet Muhammad. You may however have tears flowing from your eyes but no sound must come out of your mouths. Bear with patience and forbearance all the difficulties you are going to be faced with" (pages 202-203 of *ibid*).

After giving these last advices Hussain went forth courageously. He fought so bravely for several hours that he killed over 410 enemies. So when Yazid's army found that they could not succeed against Hussain the order was given to rain a thousand arrows on him. It was only then that he fell from his horse, covered with wounds from head to foot. As he fell he was surrounded by attackers. The time was a little before sunset on Friday the 10<sup>th</sup> of Muharram 60 A.H. The time of Asr prayers was finishing. So he said to his attackers: "Just give me a few minutes to finish my Asr prayers as I have not yet missed a single prayer in my life and I do not want to appear before Allah without finishing my last prayer! After that you may do what you please." So saying he

commenced his prayers and when he bent down in prostration before his Creator then Shimar beheaded him! Indeed what a glorious example! No wonder that His Holiness Khwaja Moinuddin Hasan Chishty of Ajmer, the patron saint of the Muslims of the Indian sub-continent has paid the following glowing tribute in Persian:

“Shah ast Hussain, Baadshah ast Hussain,

“Din ast Hussain, Din panah ast Hussain,

“Sar dad, na dad dast dar daste Yazid,

“Huqqua kae binayae La Illaha hast Hussain”

*Translation:*

“The king (of martyrs) is Hussain, The emperor (*i.e.* king over kings) is Hussain.

“The religion (of Islam) is Hussain, The Shelterer or protector of the religion (of Islam) is Hussain.

“He gave his head, but not his hand (*i.e.* Surrender) into the hands of Yazid.

“Verily in truth the very foundation of the adoration of the one Allah (*i.e.* Islam) is Hussain”.

Those who claim to be the lovers of Hussain and the family of the Holy Prophet Muhammad (may Allah bless them all) have a very rich heritage before them as to how they should behave when beset with troubles and tribulations and danger to their lives and how they must not miss even a single time's prayers which Hussain did not do even in the trying conditions at Karbala.

One is tempted to ask what made them so cheerful and carefree? What made them so anxious to go courageously to their martyrdom? What made them advise their womenfolk not to grieve or mourn their death when they took their leave to go to their certain death?

Just a few of the reasons amongst others are given hereunder:

1. They had reached that stage which is known under Sufiism as

“Ah! Thou soul at Peace!” (Qur’an 89: 27)—“Allah hath pleasure-in them and they have pleasure in Him” (Qur’an 97: 8). For greater details on what is a “Soul at Peace” please refer to Chapter 21: I.

2. They were going to present Allah with that, which Allah had blessed them with—their lives! Can there be any greater gift possible from mankind to his Creator? How very fortunate they were indeed to get such a wonderful chance!
3. They were sacrificing their lives at the altar of Allah for His cause—“*Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven*” i.e. “Islam” in accordance with the following Qur’anic Orders:

“Say: Lo! my worship and my sacrifices and my living and my dying are for Allah the Lord of the entire universe.

“He hath no partner. This I am commanded, and I am the first of those who surrender (unto Him—Thy will be done on Earth as it is in Heaven)” (Qur’an 6: 163-164).

4. By this sacrifice they were *en bloc becoming the saviours of all Muslims*—i.e. “whosoever have surrendered their lives to the will of Allah” from the time of Adam till the destruction of this earth. In fact this was the prayer of Hussain, when he fell injured from his horse, he said: “Oh Allah, on account of this sacrifice of ours at Karbala, make us the saviours of Muslims” (page 218, *Anaser as Shahadatain* by Muhammad Nasir Ali, Cawnpore).
5. This martyrdom at Karbala was completing the sacrifice of Prophet Abraham when he had taken his one and only son Ishmael for sacrifice in accordance with Allah’s Orders but Ishmael was saved due to the ram from heaven being sacrificed by the stroke struck by Abraham. Now this mass sacrifice by the descendants of Ishmael was completing that sacrifice which Allah had demanded from Abraham!
6. As Death is the end of the tests and trials of earthly life, so also for the pious Death is the gateway to the reward of Heaven

which is *the sight of the Most Glorious and indescribable Allah*. That is why the pious look forward to their date of death! Because for them it is the date of their greatest reward—the sight of the Most Wonderful Allah! The Qur'an informs us:

“Peace be on him the day he was born, and the day he died, and the day he shall be raised alive”. (Qur'an 19: 15).

“Their salutation on the day when they meet Him (Allah) will be: Peace. And He (Allah) has prepared for them a goodly recompense” (Qur'an 33: 44),

7. In Islam “Martyrs” are not considered as dead as read here above from the verses of the Qur'an and so there can be no mourning for one who is not *dead*. Further, the date of death is the date of the greatest reward for the pious souls. Hence death can never be an occasion for lamentation for the prophets and saints.

How the ladies of the family of the Prophet behaved is given a little later, which will throw further light on this subject.

According to the Shia records known as “*Baharul Anwar*” and “*Jala-al Oune*”, when the remnants of Imam Hussain reached Kufa after the massacre at Karbala, the Shias of Kufa burst out into lamentations. Hazrat Bibi Umme Kulsum (sister of Hussain) on the basis of the dream her brother had on the eve of his martyrdom at Karbala passed the following remarks:

“Was it not you, the Shias of Kufa, who invited my brother? Was it not you who martyred him and his? Now what is the use of this show of grief?” (pages 301-302, *Marajul Bahrain Fi Zikr Shahadatul Hasnain* by Muhammad Abdur Rab Qadri, Dehlavi).

A similar remark was also passed by Imam Zainal Abedin to the Shias of Kufa and the Shia army of Yazid:

“Was it not you who invited us and martyred us? Now no useful purpose will be served by beating your heads and your breasts, nothing will ever come out of it (page 236, *Anaser as Shahadatain*

by Muhammad Nasir Ali, Cawnpore).

Upon being proved by Shimar that it was the orders of Yazid, which had martyred Hussain at Karbala, Yazid ordered all members of his family to observe seven days of mourning with beating of breasts and lamentations for the atonement of the sins for the massacre of Karbala (pages 297-298, *Tazkira Ul Karam Tarikh Khulafa-e-Arab wa Islam* by Syed Shah Muhammad Kabir of Danapur).

Hence both Imam Sajjad Zainal Abedin as well as his aunt Hazrat Bibi Umme Kulsum have made it absolutely clear that that no useful purpose would be achieved by beating one's breast and head even uptil Doom'sday as it would not get the crimes committed at Karbala, washed away.

Thereupon the clever Abdullah ibne Saba, taking advantage of the confusion thus created as to what should be done to obtain the forgiveness of the sin for these crimes, propagated that the only way now left for salvation for the crimes committed at Karbala was to declare themselves from "Shia" *i.e.* those who had broken away from Islam into "Shia un Ali" *i.e.* the group of Ali or friends of Ali, and *approach Ali directly* as he was the head of the family instead of through Imam Sajjad Zainal Abedin *i.e.* the living descendant of Ali—the living "Imam". Is this not the height of disrespect and disbelief?

To support this argument of ignoring Imam Sajjad Zainal Abedin—the living Imam—and going over his head to his grandfather Ali directly, Abdullah ibne Saba, the clever Jew, preached that because every one of the thousands of Jewish Prophets and saints had appointed a "Wasi" so also Muhammad must have a "Wasi" and that the "Wasi" of Muhammad was Ali. The system of "Wasi" is not Islamic as already shown earlier (Chapter 21: D-2), because not only did Muhammad appoint four Khalifas (Chapter 21: D-3), but Ali also appointed four Khalifas (Chapter 21: D-2). That is not all—because even Allah had also created four great Angels for the carrying out of the administration of the Universe (Chapter 20: E-12). Hence the system of "four" is Islamic

because it is to cover the whole of mankind as against the Jewish system of Wasi, which was meant for only one community *viz*: the Jews. That this why most of the Sufi Khalifas appoint four Khalifas before their death.

These preachings of the Jew, Abdullah ibne Saba for discarding the living “Imam” and going over his head and approaching Ali directly appeared not only the way out of the present impasse but also very alluring to the Shia army of Yazid and the Shias of Kufa who were most anxious to create some excuse by which they could at least console their conscience for the crimes they had committed at Karbala. Thus is the origin of “Shia un Ali” from Northern Arabia with the practice of beating of their breasts during the month of Muharram in each year as their only means of salvation for the martyrdom of Hussain and other members of the family of the Prophet at Karbala as also for the destruction of Madinah and the massacre of over 10,000 companions of the Prophet and their children and their converting the Masjid-e-Nabavi into a stable and desecrating the grave of the Holy Prophet as also for their attempt to destroy the Kaabah and with it Islam!

Could these so called “Shia un Ali” have committed such further crimes after the massacre at Karbala—such as the destruction of Madinah, the sacrilege of Masjid-e-Nabavi a year later to be followed with an attack upon the Kaabah especially after the hue and cry that arose all over the Muslim Empire upon the martyrdom of Hussain at Karbala, if this army was following the Sunnah *i.e.* the teaching of Muhammad? Or had they blind faith that if they merely believed in Ali as “God” (pages 6-7, *Tuhfa Isnaeashria* and page 107, *Firdaus Asiya*) and beat their breast for their crimes then they would be saved from Hell just as the Christians claim that “Blind faith in Christ, the son of God” is enough for their salvation from any and all sins in spite of the contrary teachings of Jesus himself on this point:

“But in vain do they worship me (Jesus), teaching for doctrines the Commandments of men” (St. Matthew 15: 9).



Now let us look for a moment at the last “Sunnah” or the famous parting advice—*the last request of Muhammad made upon his death-bed which is:*

“My family must not put on mourning (*i.e.* put on black clothes as a mark of mourning in the fashion of the Jews and Christians), thus setting the example to be followed by all who are the faithful (*i.e.* the Muslims on the occasion of the death of their near and dear ones). My most earnest wish and desire are that no wailings (*i.e.* weeping aloud) or lamentations (*i.e.* beating of breasts and head *etc.*) disturb my peace in my grave”. This well-known Hadith has been quoted by many Orientalists including John Devenport on page 50 of “Mohammad and the Koran” and is supported by the “Sermon” given by Ali at the time of the burying of the Holy Prophet Muhammad (Peace of Allah be upon him) as follows:

“May my beloved parents be sacrificed upon you! Your death has put an end to Prophethood and the divine messages from the heavens, which had not happened due to the death of any others (*i.e.* the earlier prophets) in the past. Your passing away from earthly life has caused the greatest grief that can affect the general mass of Muslims (without any distinctions as to whether they were close relatives or not). This is indeed the greatest grief that can ever befall Muslims. It is so great a grief that in front of it every other grief becomes insignificant and forgotten. People are too much grieved upon your death. If you had not ordered us to have patience and if you had not prohibited us from wailing (*i.e.* crying out aloud) and lamentation (*i.e.* beating of one’s breast and face in grief), we should surely have wept ceaselessly. Your passing away will always continue (for all Muslims) to be our-greatest eternal grief which cannot be suppressed or forgotten (by the Muslims)! But alas! death is inevitable and unavoidable. None can escape it. Mention us also before Allah. Do not ever forget us from your heart and thoughts” (Sermon No. 236 of *Nahj-Ul-Balagha*). Syed Mohammed Askari Jafery has quoted this sermon as Khutba 239 in his translation of *Nahj-Ul-Balagha*.

The Holy Prophet, when he took “Baiat” or promise from the new female converts to Islam upon the capture of Mecca and thereafter, made them promise as follows:

1. Allah is One and Alone and none is comparable with Him in any manner. His help to seek at all times of need and distress.
2. Not to steal.
3. Not to commit adultery.
4. Not to spill blood unjustly.
5. Not to kill their daughters.
6. Not to speak ill of anybody falsely.
7. With all one’s heart, with all one’s strength, and with all one’s ability to follow the Sunnah (*i.e.* the deeds and the teachings of the Holy Prophet).
8. In mourning (upon the death of some close relative) not to scratch one’s face (or beat one’s breast), not to pull one’s hair, not tear one’s clothes in grief, not to put on black clothes as a sign of mourning and not to sit by the grave of the dead relative wailing and beating one’s breasts (page 137, Vol. II, *Rahmatul Lil Aalameen* by Sulaiman Munsoorpuri).

Therefore any kind of display of mourning by anybody for any reasons whatsoever including the death of the Holy Prophet, himself or any of his descendants including the famous martyrs of Karbala is prohibited by the Prophet and confirmed by Ali.

The best lesson in this respect can be had from what the ladies of the family of the Holy Prophet actually did on the fields of Karbala on that eventful Friday, the 10th of Muharram, 60 A.H. which corresponds to the 10th October 680 A.D. as one by one each of their male members were martyred by the army of Yazid!

The mothers, the wives, the sisters and the daughters of the fallen heroes—each one of them without any exception—used to recite the following verses from the Holy Qur’an:

“O ye who believe! Seek help with patient perseverance and prayers.

Lo! Allah is with those who patiently persevere.

“And call not those who are slain (*i.e.* dedicate their lives) in the way of Allah ‘dead’. Nay, they are living, only ye perceive not.

“And surely We (Allah) shall test you with something of hunger, and loss of wealth and lives and crops; but give glad tidings to those who patiently persevere.

“Who say, when a misfortune striketh them: Lo! we are Allah’s and Lo! unto Him is the return (*i.e.* when to take us away from this earthly life).

“Such are they on whom are blessings from their Lord and His mercy. Such are the rightly guided” (Qur’an 2: 153-157).

After reciting the above verses from the Qur’an they used to spread out their prayer carpets and perform two rikats of Prayers of thanksgiving that their fathers or husbands or sons or brothers had not failed these ladies in the very high estimation they had for them.

That was because their menfolk had not fallen to the temptation of safety, worldly comforts and wealth offered by Yazid if they only accepted the following conditions, which Abdullah ibne Saba wanted to introduce through Yazid, for the destruction of Islam:

1. Yazid to be made the head of the religion of Islam with liberty to make such changes as he deemed fit. In other words Yazid the murderer, whoremonger and drunkard was to be raised to the status of a Prophet!
2. Drinking of wine, which was prohibited under Islam, had already been sanctioned by him as lawful and should be accepted!
3. Prostitution and freedom of sex, which was prohibited under Islam, was declared by him as desirable and should be accepted!

So it will be seen that the heroes of Karbala had willingly one by one sacrificed their lives at the altar of Allah to uphold the religion of

“Surrender to the will of Allah” or Al-Islam as taught from Mecca and completed at Madinah by Muhammad as against the teachings of Abdullah ibne Saba which originated from Northern Arabia (Kufa *etc.*) and believed in a change. Thereby the entire group by their martyrdom at Karbala became the Saviours not only of all Muslims but also of Islam from the clever machinations of the Jew, who was out to destroy Islam through his followers—Yazid and his army.

Indeed, what a wonderful example of patience and forbearance has been displayed by these ladies! The world cannot cite a more glowing teaching than these heroines of Karbala—“Ah! Thou Soul at Peace!” (Qur’an 89: 27)—“Allah hath pleasure in them and they have pleasure in Him” (Qur’an 98: 8).

It will now be apparent that the faith of the Sabaites or the so-called “Shia un Ali” is from Jewish origin combined with Persian paganism and Hellenic philosophy and originated from the city of KUFA, the ancient Persian Capital. Even the Shia scholar Dr. Hashim Amir Ali has admitted that the Shias originated from Northern Arabia, hence not from the Sunnah, or Islam which originated from Muhammad at Mecca and was spread by him from Madinah—both in South West Arabia. Further, that the Shias are a product of change. This is also according to the findings of other scholars including even Orientalists as quoted here before.

The Jews were notorious for murdering their prophets and saints. So also the massacre of Hussain and the other innocents at Karbala by the Shias, *i.e.*, those who profess to be their lovers, only goes to prove that their founder must have been a Jew, which Abdullah ibne Saba was. Therefore the Sabaites or Shia un Ali were following the Jews in the practice of murdering their own religious heads. Hence their conduct was quite opposed to the “Sunnah” or teachings of Muhammad and Islam.

Their recognising as “Imams” or spiritual guides the nine descendants of the second son of Ali shows that here also they are

following the “Jews” who recognised only the children of Isaac, the second son of Abraham and did not recognise Muhammad, the greatest Prophet and Ali the greatest Saint simply because they were the descendants of Ishmael, the eldest son of Abraham. So also the followers of Abdullah ibne Saba or the so-called Shia un Ali refuse to recognise the “Imams” from the children of Hasan like Hasanul Mussanna, the first Imam, who was appointed an Imam by Hasan about 14 years before Imam Sajjad Zainal Abedin was appointed an Imam by Hussain. If they do not recognise the first “Imam” just because he was a son of Hasan, the elder son of Ali, then there is no question of recognising the subsequent Imams from Hasan *viz*: Shaikh Mohiudin Syed Abdul Qadir Jilani, the eleventh Imam, the “Imam Ul Aulia” *i.e.*, the Imam of all Saints after Panjatan, the great reviver of Islam after its destruction by Seljuk Turks and the Crusaders and whose influence continued and saved Islam in spite of the terrible destruction caused by the Mongols and Chengiz Khan—the particular descendant of Hasan who according to the Holy Prophet Muhammad would have as much piety in him as the total piety of the nine “Imams” from the children of Hussain (page 25, *Guldasta-e-Karamat*)!—the only child upto date who has observed the Ramadan month of fasting from his birth (Chapter 21: D-6)! The saint who raised the dead throughout his life from the age of only four years! The “Saint” who recited by heart 17 parts out of 30 of the Qur’an without being taught!—Yet in spite of all these he is not even recognised by the followers of Abdullah ibne Saba or his “Shia un Ali”!

Similary also the Sabaites will not recognise the third important child of Hasan, the seal of the Imams, the greatest Imam, the last and twelveth Imam from Panjatan only because he is not a descendant of Hussain just as the Jews and Christians do not recognise Ishmael, the eldest son of Abraham and his descendants Muhammad, the greatest Prophet and Ali, the greatest Saint just because they are not the descendants of Isaac! Thus bringing home very vividly once again the significance of “Darood-e-Ibrahim”. Hence such disbelievers in the

children of Hasan are going to be condemned by Allah just as the disbelieving Jews and Christians have suffered, as warned by the Holy Prophet Muhammad (Chapter 21: D-6).

When Umme Salma, the last living wife of the Prophet, heard that the army of Yazid, who massacred Hussain and others at Karbala, were Sabaites, who instead of being sorry for their crime were abusing Abu Bakr, and Omar, then she announced the following Hadith:

“The Holy Prophet (may Allah bless him) has said that shortly after his departure there will come a group of people who will claim themselves to be “Shia un Ali” (*i.e.* friends and followers of Ali) but in actual fact they are not Shias; such people will be easily recognised because they will speak against Abu Bakr and Omar. They are “Mushriks” (*i.e.* Blasphemers against Allah and enemies of Islam) and should be put to death” (pages 32-35, *Mojezat-e-Muhammadia*).

When Imam Muhammad Baqr heard that there was a group of people in Persia who claimed themselves to be “Shia un Ali” but were abusing his wife’s family *i.e.* Abu Bakr and also Omar, the son-in-law of Ali, and Osman, the son-in-law of the Prophet, he immediately wrote a letter condemning them in the severest terms possible. He ordered them *to desist from abusing the first three Khalifas of Islam, as otherwise, if he got an opportunity he would behead the lot of them and by their slaying attain heaven!* (page 75, *Tabkat Ul Kubra by Shaikh Abdul Wahab Sherani*).

From these historical facts mainly from Shia sources and especially from “*Al-Mawafekatoe-Baina Ahlal-Bait was Sahaba*” by Zamakshari, it would be clear that the best lovers of Ali and his family were Abu Bakr, Omar and Osman according to Shia scholars and they were followed by those who accepted the “Sunnah” recognising Ali as the “Moula” or Spiritual Guide appointed by the Holy Prophet at “Ghadir-e-Khum”. Further, that the “Sabaites” who profess themselves to be “Shia un Ali” but abuse Abu Bakr, Omar and so forth are indeed the insulters of Allah, the Prophet, the Qur’an, and are not only the enemies

of Ali but they are also the murderers of his family hence they are “Mushriks” or enemies of Islam, *e.g.*:

“Lo! As for those who “Shiaun” (*i.e.* break up into sects) the religion (of Islam) and become Schismatics, no concern at all hast thou (O Muhammad) with them. Their case will go to Allah, Who then will let them know (that their severe punishment is for) what they used to do (in their attempts to break up the unity of Islam with false, baseless hatred)” (Qur’an 6: 160).

The Shia scholars as well as the enlightened Shias, along with the Sufis and the Sunnis, *i.e.* all those who follow the *Sunnah*—the teachings of Muhammad which originated at Mecca and spread from Madinah revere the first three Khalifas and also recognise Ali as the the seal of the rightful Khalifas and the greatest of them, whose system of Hadith-e-Saqlain for spiritual guidance of mankind is still continuing (Chapter 21: D-2). They also observe the anniversary of the martyrdom of Hussain at Karbala and recognise the twelve “Imams” from the descendants of both Hasan and Hussain (Chapter 21: D-6) as also all the saints of Islam (Chapter 21: D-7). They recognise Muhammad as the last prophet, hence nobody has any right whatsoever to change his teachings in any manner for any reason. Amongst the various groups of Shias there are many who acknowledge and follow the *Sunnah*. For example the Dawoodi Boharas, whose respected head His Holiness the late Dr. Syedena Taher Saifuddin Saheb personally visited the shrine of the Holy Prophet Muhammad at Madinah and paid his humble respects. This clearly establishes that his community acknowledges the *Sunnah*. Similarly His Highness Prince Karim Aga Khn, the present head of the Ismaili Khoja Community, by performing his “Eid Prayers” in public behind a Sunni Imam and further by directing his followers to adapt the Hanafi Sunni school has made it apparent that his community also are the acceptors of the *Sunnah*. Therefore it will be seen that even though they call themselves by different nomenclatures yet they are on principle one—all following the “*Sunnah*” hence they are all “Sunni” or the followers of the teachings of Muhammad—hence

a single community! For this reason there is no major difference between the different groups of “Sunni” including Sufis and all those Shias, who accept the Sunnah.

As opposed to those who follow the “Sunnah” or the teachings of Muhammad are the “*Sabaïtes*” or followers of Abdullah ibne Saba who falsely style themselves as “Shia un Ali”. If these *so-called* “Shia un Ali” were the true followers of Ali and the lovers of his descendants, then they are bound to remain united in a single group governed by certain basic principles as the different followers of the “Sunnah” are.

Unfortunately those who had broken away from the Sunnah, had within the short period of about 500 years *i.e.* by 500 A. H. broken up into 72 different sects each with different dogmas and basic differences in their beliefs (page 192, *Gunyatat Talebeen* by Syed Abdul Qadir Jilani).

This does remind one of the following famous Hadith:

“The Holy Prophet has said: A time will also come for my followers as has come upon ‘Bani Israel’ (*i.e.* the children and followers of Israel—the Jews and the Christians). My followers will imitate them step by step in all their activities and beliefs. Bani Israel will break up into 71 sections, the Christians into (at least) 72 groups but sorry to say my followers shall divide themselves into 73 sects (*i.e.* even more divisions than Bani Israel and the Christians). All of them will be cast into the fire of hell save and except only one group, which will follow my Sunnah and pay respects to my companions” (the chief amongst them are Abu Bakr, Omar, Osman and Ali followed by Hasan and Hussain and the sons of both of them. See page 110, Vol. XI, *Kanzal Ummal* by Ali Al-Muttaki Al-Hindi who died in 975 A.H. = 1567 A.D., also page 35 *Mojizat-e-Muhammadiyah* by Enayatullah).

The new religion founded by Abdullah ibne Saba from Kufa with a view to destroy the teachings of Muhammad is fundamentally contradictory to Islam because of their disbeliefs in the following:



*The Sabaites disbelieve in: For the undermentioned reasons:*

ALLAH

1. Because they say Ali is Allah (page 216 of Literary History of the Arabs by R. A. Nicholson, pages 6-7 of *Tuhfa Isnaeashria* and page 107, *Firdaus Asiya*).
2. Because Allah had made it clear to Adam the first man that Muhammad would have four Khalifas. This was disclosed by Allah to Adam when he was presented the casket "Sakina" which contained the pictures of the leading prophets. The last sheet showed Muhammad surrounded by his four Khalifas viz: Abu Bakr, Omar, Osman and Ali (Chapter 13: J). The Sabaites disbelieve in this disclosure by Allah, so they have made Ali their Allah.
3. Because Allah had made it known to the earlier prophets that Jerusalem would surrender to Omar bin (son of) Khattab the second Khalifa of the Promised Prophet (Chapter 13: K). Even though this is now a historical fact yet the so-called "Shia un Ali" disbelieve that such a historical surrender of Jerusalem to Omar the second Khalifa of Muhammad ever took place!

## QUR'AN

Because the Qur'an contains the praises of Abu Bakr, Omar, Osman and Ali. The Sabaites contend there can be no praise of anyone else in the Qur'an but of Ali (Chapter 21: D-3).

## MUHAMMAD

1. Because Muhammad had declared at the laying of the foundation of Masjid-e-Nabavi that his Khalifas would be Abu Bakr, Omar and Osman in that order and after them they should follow Ali and the sons of Ali (Chapter 21: D-3).
2. Because Muhammad repeated again and again that his four Khalifas would be Abu Bakr, Omar and Osman in that order and after them would be Ali and the sons of Ali (Chapter 21: D-3).
3. Because they burnt Madinah for three days killing 10,000 companions of the Holy Prophet and their children in their efforts to obliterate Islam, which spread from Madinah.
4. Because they turned Masjid-e-Nabavi into a stable.
5. Because they desecrated the grave of Muhammad with the urine and filth of their horses.
6. Because they tried to destroy the Kaabah for 64 days in their efforts to obliterate the place from where

Muhammad commenced his preachings of Islam.

ALI

1. Because Ali refused to accept the suggestion of his uncle Abbas to approach the Prophet to make him the first Khalifa of Islam (Chapter 21: D-3).
2. Because Ali thrice refused the offer of Abu Bakr to become the first Khalifa of Islam according to the Shia scholar Zamakshari (Chapter 21: D-3).
3. Because Ali induced and at last prevailed upon Abu Bakr to become the first Khalifa (Chapter 21: D-3).
4. Because Ali declared that he would not give any one the permission to cross "Pul-Sarat" unless and until he loves and honours Abu Bakr according to Shia scholars (Chapter 21: D-4).
5. Because Ali refused the offer of Omar to become the second Khalifa and induced Omar to accept the post (Chapter 21: D-3).
6. Because Ali gave a certificate to Omar that he would be the torch-bearer in heaven (Chapter 21: D-4).
7. Because Ali refused to accept the offer of Osman to become the third Khalifa and induced him to accept

the post (Chapter 21: D-3).

8. Because Ali threatened to kill Abdullah ibne Saba if he came before him in accordance with the Hadith of the Prophet (Chapter 21: D-8).
9. Because Ali exiled Abdullah ibne Saba from Kufa for preaching the false stories that Abu Bakr, Omar and Osman had usurped the Khilafat which belonged to Ali and also for the creation of false stories that the three earlier Khalifas had committed atrocities upon Ali and his family, all of which were without any basis or truth (Chapter 21: D-8).

#### HASAN

1. Because they refuse to accept the Hadith quoted on page 78 of "*Ali the Caliph*" by the Arab Shia scholar Salmin that the sons of both Hasan and Hussain are to be accepted after them.
2. Because they refuse to accept that Hasan had the right to appoint his son Hasanul Mussanna in 45 A.H. as the first of the twelve "Imams".
3. Just as the Jews, refused to accept Ishmael the eldest son of Abraham as a prophet and also refused to accept Muhammad, the greatest Prophet and Ali the greatest Saint

because they are from Ishmael, so also the Sabaites following the Jew refused to accept Imam Hasanul Mussanna as the first Imam. They also do not accept that the greatest Saint amongst the Imams and the greatest Imam, who would be coming, would be from the descendants of Hasan.

4. Because the Jews accept as Prophets and Saints the descendants of only Isaac the second son of Abraham, so also the Sabaites believe only in the children of Hussain, the second son as their Imams.
5. Thus they bring home the significance of Darood-e-Ibrahim (Chapter 21: D-6). This clearly shows that they are following a Jew, which Abdullah ibne Saba in any case was.

## HUSSAIN

1. Because they deceived Hussain by inviting him to come to Kufa.
2. Because they martyred Hussain at Karbala.
3. Because on the date on which Hussain achieved his greatest reward from his Creator *i.e.* on 10th of Muharram 60 A.H. instead of joining in his joys at achieving heaven by his great sacrifice at

Karbala and at his becoming the Saviour of Muslims they beat their breasts in public and have regular public mourning sessions on the occasion instead of observing the five-times-daily prayers, reciting the Qur'an, fasting, giving charity, feeding the poor and hearing about their heroic deeds, their courageous manner and trying to imitate what they did and thus honour and truly love them.

4. This martyrdom of Hussain proved that the Sabaites were following the practice of the Jews in killing their own prophets and saints. Hence their religion is from a Jewish source and has nothing whatsoever to do with Islam.

IMAM SAJJAD  
ZAINAL ABEDIN  
IMAM MUHAMMAD  
BAQR

Because he said nothing will be achieved by beating one's breast till Doomsday.

Because he wrote to the Shias of Persia to desist from abusing Abu Bakr and Omar otherwise if he got an opportunity he would behead them in accordance with the Hadith of the Prophet.

IMAM JAFAR SADIQ

Because he revived the Shariat school of Abu Bakr after five generations had passed, thus proving beyond doubt that there was no misunderstanding

between the families of Abu Bakr, Omar and Osman on the one hand and the families of Ali on the other. Hence all the teachings of the Sabaites are false creations to destroy Islam.

## ISLAM

They disbelieve in the Islam taught by Muhammad which originated at Mecca and spread from Madinah in South West Arabia, whilst Shiaism was started later from Northern Arabia (*i.e.* Kufa *etc.*) and was based upon a change from the original teachings of Muhammad and incorporated into it the heterogeneous elements of Hellenic philosophy, Jewish traditions and Persian cosmology (“*Shias*” by Dr Hashim Amir Ali on page 22 of the Illustrated Weekly of India, Bombay dated 20.2.1972).

## E. Dhikir

*Dhikir* was a miraculous blessing by Muhammad to Ali, which became the keynote of all “*Sufi Rituals*”. It can only be performed under the guidance of a “PIR” (Spiritual guide) and that also only after he has been able to induce Allah to bless the “MURID” (disciple) with the miraculous gift to get one’s organs, instead of the mouth and tongue to recite the Qalima! Hence it becomes very clear that it is not humanly possible for anyone to perform “Dhikir” by making ones organs recite the Qalima by his own effort or skill. This is something quite beyond human ability and is a miraculous blessing upon the followers of the mystic schools of Ali out of the grace and kindness of Allah.

## 1. The importance of Dhikir

“Recite (the Qur’an) that which has been inspired in thee (O Muhammad) of the scripture, and establish worship. Lo! Worship preserveth (thee) from lewdness and iniquity, But verily the ‘Dhikir’ of Allah is more important. And Allah knoweth what ye do” (Qur’an 29: 45).

Islamic prayers can be performed by any and everyone. But Dhikir can only be possible, if one is blessed with the miraculous gift of enabling one’s organs and not the mouth and the tongue to recite the Qalima. Hence there is logically an incomparable difference between the ordinary prayers and recitation of the Qur’an as against the miraculous gift of Dhikir. *Hence Dhikir is much more important than the recitation of the Qur’an and the establishment of the worship of Allah according to the above quoted passage from the Qur’an.*

## 2. What does Dhikir achieve?

“Then do ‘Dhikir’; I (Allah) will remember you. Give thanks to Me, and reject not Me” (Qur’an 2: 152).

“Those who believe will get ‘*Qalb mutmainna*’ (i.e. Satisfaction of heart’s desire or Peace of conscience) in the ‘Dhikir’ of Allah. Verily in the ‘Dhikir’ of Allah there is ‘*Qalb mutmainna*’ (Ah! Thou soul at Peace!—See Chapter 21: I for fuller explanation).

“For those who believe and do righteousness: Joy is for them and bliss (their) journey’s end” (Qur’an 13: 28-29).

“(By doing Dhikir) Everything that is (in one’s mind and heart) will fade away.

“There will remain *only the Countenance of the Lord, The All Mighty, The All Glory*” (Qur’an 55: 26-27).

Thus “Dhikir” is done to lose oneself into “The Countenance of Allah, The All Mighty, The All Glory.” This is the essence of spiritual teaching and is called “Fana”.



### 3. How often is Dhikr to be done?

“Verily in (Muhammad) the messenger of Allah, ye have a beautiful example (of correct conduct) for him who looketh unto Allah and the Last Day, *and who engages much in the ‘Dhikr’ of Allah*” (Qur’an 33: 21).

“O ye who believe! *Do ‘Dhikr’ of Allah and do this often*” (Qur’an 33: 41).

“Lo! I, even I, am Allah. There is no God save Me. *So serve Me and establish worship for my Dhikr*” (Qur’an 20: 14).

### 4. What about those who withdraw themselves from the Dhikr of Allah?

“*And if anyone withdraws himself from the ‘Dhikr’ of the Beneficent (i.e. does not do Dhikr and come under the guidance of a Spiritual Guide, without whom Dhikr is not possible) We (Allah) assign unto him a devil who becometh his comrade;*

“*And lo! They surely turn from the way of Allah and yet they deem they are rightly guided*” (Qur’an 43: 36-37).

“*But he who turneth away from the ‘Dihikir’ of me his will be a narrow life, and I shall rise him up (amongst those) blind to (the sight of Allah amongst) the assembly on Day of Resurrection*” (Qur’an 20: 124).

### F. What is The Goal of Sufiism

On pages 33-34 of “*Kashf Al-Mahjub*” by Prof. Nicholson, one reads:

Here follows the story of Haritha, who declared that he had true faith in God. The Prophet asked: ‘What is the reality of thy faith?’ replied Haritha: ‘I have cut off and turned myself away from this world, so that its stones and its gold and its silver and its clay are equal in my sight. And I have passed my nights in wakefulness and my days in thirst until methinks I see the Throne of my Lord manifest, and the people of Paradise visiting one another, and the

people of Hell wrestling with one another (or, according to an alternative reading: ‘making sudden attacks on one another’). The Prophet said, repeating the words thrice: ‘Thou knowest, therefore persevere;’

## 1. Tariqat

According to the actual experiences that Sufis have undergone when doing “Dhikir” they (by the blessings of Allah, as without it “Dhikir” is quite impossible) pass through the following stages:

After a few minutes they lose control of all their senses and are in a state of trance. They are not aware of themselves or what they are doing or what is happening to them. They are not aware if they are even breathing or not. They also do not know how long they have been in this state.

When in this condition if someone were to burn them, or pierce a needle into them there would be no reaction at all, because they are totally unconscious about themselves and their feelings.

This is called the “Tariqat” or the path. In this stage a strange calm—quietness, voidness, and blankness sets in. This is the first stage of “Fana” or the fading away from the consciousness of one’s own existence—the egoism which is the cause of all disputes.

Professor Reynold A. Nicholson on page 141 of *Translations of Eastern Poetry and Prose* published by Cambridge University Press, 1922, has quoted the undermentioned two statements from the life of Bayazid al-Bistami by Faridu’din ‘Attar:

- a. “He said: ‘All this talk and turmoil and noise and movement and desire is outside of the veil; within the veil is silence and calm and rest’.”
- b. “He said, ‘Dost thou hear how there comes a voice from the brooks of running water? But when they reach the sea they are quiet, and the sea is neither augmented by their incoming nor

diminished by their outgoing”.

## 2. Marifat

The next stage is known as “Marifat” or “Pure love of Allah to the exclusion of everything else”. Here is a quotation from page 267 of “*Kashf Al-Mahjub*” by Prof. Nicholson:

“The Apostle (*i.e.* Muhammad) said: ‘If ye knew God as He ought to be known, ye would walk on the seas, and the mountains would move at your call.’ Gnosis of God is of two kinds; cognitional (*ilmi*) and emotional (*hali*). Cognitional gnosis is the foundation of all blessings in this world and in the next, for the most important thing for a man at all times and in all circumstances is knowledge of God, as God hath said: *‘I only created the genii and mankind that they might serve Me’* (Qur’an 51: 56), *i.e. that they might know Me. But the greater part of men neglect this duty, except those whom God hath chosen and whose hearts He hath vivified with Himself.* Gnosis is the life of the heart through God, and the turning away of one’s inmost thoughts from all that is not God. The worth of everyone is in proportion to gnosis, and he who is without gnosis is worth nothing. Theologians, lawyers, and other classes of men give the name of gnosis (*marifat*) to right cognition (*ilm*) of God, but the Sufi Shaikhs call right feeling (*hal*) towards God by that name. Hence they have said that gnosis (*marifat*) is more excellent than cognition (*ilm*), for right feeling (*hal*) is the result of right cognition”.

When a person has purified himself with the pure love of Allah and excluded all else from his heart then he naturally interprets everything with that love. With the result that the standard translation of the “Qalima—”There is nobody worthy of Divine Worship except Allah, and Muhammad is the Messenger of Allah”—is now improved upon and interpreted by him as follows:

“There is nobody worthy of Divine Love except Allah and Muhammad is the way to achieve that divine Love or Allah”.

When he does “Dhikir” he does it with this improved interpretation of the “Qalima” in his mind. Naturally there is a spontaneous outpouring of love for Allah which finds beautifully lucid expressions in such prayers, which were first made public by the early Muslim sage, the virgin Rabia Basri, who was the disciple of Hasan Basri, the fourth Khalifa of Ali as follows:

“O my Allah, whatever share of this world Thou wishest to bestow upon me, please give it on Thine enemies, and whatever share of the next world Thou wishest to bestow upon me kindly give it to Thy friends. Thou art enough for me”.

“O my Allah, if I worship Thee in fear of Hell, then burn me in Hell, and if I worship Thee in hope of Paradise, then exclude me from Paradise, but if I worship Thee out of love for Thine own sake, then please withhold not from me Thine everlasting Beauty” (pages 135-136 of *Translation of Eastern Poetry and Prose* by R. A. Nicholson).

### 3. Haqiqat

The third stage is called “Haqiqat” which means the reality or the truth. When a person has reached the previous stage of “Marifat” and does “Dhikir” out of love of Allah and prays for the sight of the “ETERNAL BEAUTY” which is Allah, then Allah will definitely bless him with his heart’s desires, when he is in a state of trance or “Fana” (*i.e.* absence from himself). All of a sudden in this stage of blankness, one gets a wonderful experience of the light of the Creator, the Infinite, the Boundless, the Most Beautiful, the Most Wonderful. The Qur’an describes it as:

“Certainly you were unaware of it, but now We (Allah) have removed from you, your veil (of self consciousness) so your sight today is sharp (and you see the Majestic Awe-inspiring Glory of Allah)” (Qur’an 50: 22).

“All that is there (in one’s mind and heart) will fade away (“Fana”).

“But (forever) will remain the Face of thy Lord,—the All Mighty, the All Glory.”

“Then which of the favours of your Lord will ye deny?

“Of Him seeks (its subsistence) every creature in the heavens and on earth: every day doth He (shine) in (a new) splendour.

“Then which of the favours of your Lord will ye deny?” (Qur’an 55: 26-30).

“(When) proofs (of Allah’s vision) come unto you from your Lord, so whosoever seeth it, it is for his own good, and whosoever is blind, is blind to his own hurt ...” (Qur’an 6: 105).

The following passages are from “*The Faith and Practice of Al-Ghazali*” by W. Montgomery Watt published by George Allen & Unwin Ltd., London, 1963.

(Pages 24-25)—“My ego hesitated a little about the reply to that, and sense-perception heightened the difficulty by referring to dreams. ‘Do you not see’, it said, ‘how, when you are asleep, you believe things and imagine circumstances, holding them to be stable and enduring, and, so long as you are in that dream-condition, have no doubts about them? And is it not the case that when you awake you know that all you have imagined and believed is unfounded and ineffectual? Why then are you confident that all your waking beliefs, whether from sense or intellect, are genuine? They are true in respect of your present states; but it is possible that a state will come upon you whose relation to your waking consciousness is analogous to the relation of the latter to dreaming. In comparison with this state your waking consciousness would be like dreaming! When you have entered into this state, you will be certain that all the suppositions of your intellect are empty imaginings. It may be that that state is what the Sufis claim as their special ‘State’ (Sc. Mystic union or ecstasy), for they consider that in their ‘States’ (or ecstasies), which occur when they have withdrawn into themselves and are absent from their senses, they witness states (or circumstances) which do not tally with these principles of the intellect. Perhaps that ‘state’ is death; for the Messenger of God (God bless and preserve him) says: ‘The people are dreaming; but when they die, they become awake’. So perhaps life in this world is

a dream by comparison with the world to come, and when a man dies, things come to appear differently to him from what he now beholds, and at the same time the words are addressed to him: 'We have taken off thee thy covering, and thy sight today is sharp' (Qur'an 50: 22)".

(Pages 60-63)—"In general, then, how is a mystic 'way' (tariqat) described? The purity which is the first condition of it (sc. as bodily purity is the prior condition of formal Worship for Muslims) is the purification of the heart completely from what is other than God Most High, the key to it, which corresponds to the opening act of adoration in prayer, is the sinking of the heart completely in the recollection of God; and the end of it is complete absorption (fana) in God. At least this is its end relatively to those first steps which almost come within the sphere of choice and personal responsibility; but in reality in the actual mystic 'way': it is the first step, what comes before it being, as it were, the antechamber for those who are journeying towards it.

"With this first stage of the 'way' there begin the revelations and visions. The mystics in their waking state now behold angels and the spirits of the prophets; they hear these speaking to them and are instructed by them. Later, a higher state is reached; instead of beholding forms and figures, they come to stages in the 'way' which it is hard to describe in language; if a man attempts to express these, his words inevitably contain what is clearly erroneous.

"In general what they manage to achieve is nearness to God; some, however, would conceive of this as 'inherence' (hulul), some as 'union' (ittihad), and some as 'connection' (wusul). All that is erroneous. In my book, 'The Noblest Aim', I have explained the nature of the error here. Yet he who has attained the mystic 'state' need do no more than say:

"Of the things I do not remember, what was, was; Think it good; do not ask an account of it. (Ibne al-Mu'tazz).

"In general the man to whom He has granted no immediate experience at all, apprehends no more of what prophetic revelation really is than the name. The miraculous graces given to the saints

are in truth the beginnings of the prophets; and that was the first 'state' of the Messenger of God (peace be upon him) when he went out to Mount Hira, and was given up entirely to his Lord, and worshipped, so that the bedouin said, 'Muhammad loves his Lord passionately'.

"Now this is a mystical 'state' which is realized in immediate experience by those who walk in the way leading to it. Those to whom it is not granted to have immediate experience can become assured of it by trial (sc. contact with mystics or observation of them) and by hearsay, if they have sufficiently numerous opportunities of associating with mystics to understand that (sc. ecstasy) with certainty by means of what accompanies the 'state'. Whoever sits in their company derives from them this faith; and none who sits in their company is pained.

"Those to whom it is not even granted to have contacts with mystics may know with certainty the possibility of ecstasy by the evidence of demonstration, as I have remarked in the section entitled The 'Wonders of the Heart' of my 'Revival of the Religious Sciences'.

"Certainty reached by demonstration is knowledge (ilm); actual acquaintance with that 'state' is immediate experience (dhawq); the acceptance of it as probable from hearsay and trial (or observation) is faith (iman). These are three degrees. 'God will raise those of you who have faith and those who have been given knowledge in degrees (sc. of honour)' (Qur'an 58: 11)

"Behind the mystics, however, there is a crowd of ignorant people. They deny this fundamentally, they are astonished at this line of thought, they listen and mock. 'Amazing', they say. 'What nonsense they talk!' About such people God most high has said: 'Some of them listen to you, until, upon going out from you, they say to those to whom knowledge has been given, 'What did he say just now'? These are the people on whose hearts God sets a seal and they follow their passion' (Qur'an 47: 16). He makes them deaf, and blinds their sight (Qur'an 2: 7).

"Among the things that necessarily became clear to me from my practice of the mystic 'way' was the true nature and special

characteristics of prophetic revelation. This basis of that must undoubtedly be indicated in view of the urgent need for it”.

#### 4. Wahdaniat

This is the fourth or final stage of Islamic Sufiism. It means “Absolute Oneness”. Unlike the previous stage where you saw Allah in your soul in a state of trance at a distance in a stage of absence from yourself, here you see your own “self” and everything else melting away into the Infinite, the Boundless. This is the final stage of “Fana” *i.e.* “fading away” or ‘passing away’, which leads to the attainment “Baqa” or life after “Fana” *i.e. immortality in Allah.*

This experience is beyond the senses, beyond comprehension, beyond all expression. It is the pure unitary consciousness, wherein awareness of the universe and of the multiplicity in it is obliterated completely. It is ineffable peace. It is the Supreme Good. It is: one, without any second. It is the “Very Essence”.

Such experiences bring about feelings of an exalted peace, blessedness and joy. This becomes identified with the peace of Allah, the gateway to the Divine and the gateway for the salvation of many millions of sinners, who come in contact with these sufis.

A very limited number of the sufis have disclosed this experience publicly, but here are a couple of statements that have escaped from the mouths of a very few, when in a state of intoxication with the Divine Glory.

Abu Yazid al Bistami (died 875) the founder of the Nakshbandhya Sufi Spiritual school declared:

“Glory be to Me! How great is My Majesty” (page 201 of *The Teachings of the Mystics* by Walter T. Stace, published 1960 by the New American Library, New York).

Munsur Al Hallaj stated “Annal Haque” or “Verily I am the (ALL) TRUTH.” For this statement he was accused of pantheism and



martyred at Baghdad in 922 A.D. by the “Dogmatic” Muslims. When they beheaded him, his body and his blood still continued to recite “Annal Haque”. Do what they liked it, would not stop proclaiming “Annal Haque”. They burnt the body but the ashes continued to reiterate “Annal Haque”. Alarmed these “Dogmatics” threw the ashes into the Euphrates. Immediately the river rose shouting “Annal Haque” and started flooding and drowning Baghdad. Thereupon the frightened population rushed to his spiritual guide Abul Kassem Junaïd Baghdadi; when he refused to open his door and give an audience they broke open the door of the room in which he had locked himself up when the “Dogmatic” had refused to listen to him not to molest Munsur. When he refused to talk to them, they forcibly bodily took Abul Kassem before the raging waters shouting “Annal Haque”. Seeing the chaos that had spread as a punishment for the unjustified and unreasonable martyring of the innocent Munsur, he was moved and said “Enough Munsur”.

At once the waters became calm and receded. If Munsur had not attained “Fana” *i.e.* melted away into the Almighty, then how did all this happen? If Munsur had already been killed, burnt and destroyed by the fanatics then whom did Abul Kassem address and why did the raging waters of Euphrates stop reciting “Annal Haque” and recede after the words “Enough Mansur”. Was this not a stage of “*Baqa from Fana*” or attainment of eternal life in Allah after self-immolation—the “Goal” of all Sufiism!

On page 101 of “*Translations of Eastern Poetry and Prose*” by Nicholson one reads:

BABA KUHI OF SHIRAZ.

“(Died in A.D. 1050. He was a dervish contemporary with Abu Sa’id ibn Abi ‘I-Khair, and his DIWAN, preserved in the British Museum is the oldest collection of mystical odes in Persian that has come down to us).”

“In the market, in the cloister—only God I saw.

In the valley and on the mountain—only God I saw.  
 Him: I have seen beside me oft in tribulation;  
 In favour and in fortune—only God I saw.  
 In prayer and fasting, in praise and contemplation,  
 In the religion of the prophet—only God I saw.  
 Neither soul nor body, accident nor substance,  
 Qualities nor causes—only God I saw.  
 I opened mine eyes and by the light of His face around me  
 In all the eye discovered—only God I saw.  
 Like a candle I was melting in His fire.  
 Amidst the flames outflashing—only God I saw.  
 Myself with mine own eyes I saw most clearly,  
 But when I looked with God's eyes—only God I saw.  
 I passed away into nothingness, I vanished,  
 And lo I was the All-living —only God I saw.”

For further references, one can refer to “*The Translations of Eastern Poetry and Prose*” by R.A. Nicholson, Cambridge university Press, 1922; “*Readings from Mystics of Islam*” by Margaret Smith, Luzac & Co. Ltd., 1950; “*Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*,” London; 1906; “*Rumi: Poet and Mystic*” translated by R.A. Nicholson, George Allen & Unwin Ltd. London, 1950; “*The Conference of the Birds*,” by Farid al-Din Attar translated by S.C. Nott, The Janus Press, London and many other relevant works.

### **G. Sama (or) qawwali (or) hymns.**

Devotional hymns have always from times immemorial provided ecstasy. These are called Sama in Arabic or Qawwali in Urdu or Hymns

in English. Of the four Divine books mentioned in the Qur'an one of them consists entirely of devotional songs to be sung accompanied with music. This is the "second of the Divine books. (Chapter 8: J-2). Here are some quotations from it:

"Praise ye the Lord. Sing unto the Lord a new song,

"and His praise in the congregation of saints.

"Let them praise His name in the dance:

"let them sing praises unto Him with the timbrel and harp (*i.e.* these hymns are to be sung accompanied by music from musical instruments).

"For the Lord taketh pleasure in his people:

He will beautify the meek with salvation.

"Let the saints be joyful in (His) glory:

"Let them sing aloud upon their beds" (Psalms 149: 1, 3-5).

"Praise the Lord from the earth, ye ... Mountains, and all hills; ... Creeping things, and flying fowl" (Psalms 148: 7-10).

The music taught by Allah to Prophet King David was so compelling that the sick used to feel relieved and evil spirits used to leave the afflicted persons. This will be evident from the following Biblical quotations:

"And Saul's servants said unto him, Behold now, an evil spirit from God troubleth thee.

"Let our lord now command thy servants, which are before thee, to seek out a man, who is a cunning player on an harp and it shall come to pass, when the evil spirit from God is upon thee, that he shall play with his hand, and thou shalt be well.

"And Saul said unto his servants, Provide me now a man that can play well and bring him to me.

"Then answered one of the servants, and said, Behold, I have seen a son of Jesse the Bethlehemite, that is cunning in playing, and a

mighty valiant man, and a man of war, and prudent in matters, and a comely person, and the Lord is with him.

“Wherefore Saul sent messengers unto Jesse, and said, Send me David thy son, which is with the sheep.

“And Jesse took an ass laden with bread, and a bottle of wine, and a kid, and sent them by David his son unto Saul.

“And David came to Saul and stood before him: and he loved him greatly; and he becomes his armour bearer.

“And Saul sent to Jesse, saying, Let David, I pray thee, stand before me; for he hath found favour in my sight.

“And it came to pass, when the evil spirit from God was upon Saul, that David took a harp, and played with his hand: so Saul was refreshed and was well, and the evil spirit departed from him” (1 Samuel 16: 15-23).

The Qur’an also confirms the above passages of the Psalms, the second of the divine Books, which were revealed through David as under:

“And assuredly We (Allah) gave David the grace or art (of music of the sound of winds in the hills and trees and of the birds) from Us (saying): O ye hills and birds, sing the Zabourah (*i.e.* the Holy Book of Psalms blessed upon Prophet King David which comprises only Psalms—hymns) of praise (of Allah and is sung accompanied with the musical art blessed upon David as mentioned hereabove)!” (Qur’an 34: 10).

“... And We (Allah) subdued the hills and the birds to hymn (His) praise along with David (when he sang the devotional Psalms accompanied by music which was the art blessed upon him by Allah). We (Allah) were the doers thereof” (Qur’an 21: 79).

“And thy Lord is best aware of all who are in the heavens and the earth. And We (Allah) preferred some of the Prophets above others, and unto David, We (Allah) gave the Zabourah (the Divine book of Psalms—hymns so that people may sing My Praise accompanied with music)” (Qur’an 17: 55).

“... and We (Allah) imparted unto David the Zabourah (Psalms—or the Divine Book of hymns of Allah which are to be sung accompanied by music)” (Qur’an 4: 163).

When Muhammad entered Madinah, the girls of the town ran out and welcomed him with songs accompanied by music and dancing as already described in Chapter 17: E-l5.

The Prophet was always very delighted with the singing of these devotional themes in the praise of Allah or his honour. He approved of them being accompanied even by music as long as they were purely of a devotional character.

Muhammad not only heard the devotional songs but his companions also sang them as is evident from the following passage from page 397 of “*Kashf Al-Mahjub*” by Nicholson:

“It is permissible to hear poetry. The Apostle heard it, and the companions not only heard it but also spoke it. The Apostle said: ‘Some poetry is wisdom;’ and he said : ‘Wisdom is the believer’s lost she-camel : wherever he finds her, he has the best right to her;’ and he said too, ‘The truest word ever spoken by the Arabs is the verse of La bid:’

‘Everything except God is vain,

‘And all fortune is inevitably fleeting.’

“Amr b. al-Sharid relates that his father said: “The Apostle asked me whether I could recite any poetry of Umayya b. Abi’I-Salt, so I recited a hundred verses, and at the end of each verse he cried, “Go on”. He said that Umayya almost became a Muslim in his poetry”.

There were 181 poets and songsters including 169 men and 12 women who used to sing and recite hymns regularly before the Holy Prophet Muhammad. In fact he used to order them to sing these hymns whenever he was tired as they used to refresh him. Some of these thousands of occasions have been referred to on pages 1033-1047, Vol. II, *Madarejun Nabuwat* by Shaikh Abdul Huq, son of Saifuddeen Dehlavi Qadri. Hence religious hymns or sama or Qawwali formed a

regular feature in the life of the Holy Prophet Muhammad!

According to a hadith recorded by Anas bin Malik, one day Muhammad was sitting with a large number of his companions in Masjid-e-Nabavi. Angel Gabriel came and announced that the poor and humble amongst his followers will enter and enjoy heaven half a day before the rich. A day of Allah stands for 1000 years. Therefore half a day equals 500 years. The Holy Prophet was very pleased at this news and asked if there was anybody who could sing him a hymn. A bedouin who was present announced that he could. Muhammad ordered him to sing. The result was that the Prophet and many of his companions fell into a trance with ecstasy. So much so that the Prophet's mantle fell off his body. When they came round to their normal senses Muawiyah asked the Prophet if this was a good thing to do. Muhammad replied: "Muawiyah, shut up. He who hears the praise of his beloved and does not get enthralled by it is not his true lover." After that the Prophet picked up his mantle, cut it into 400 pieces and distributed them as mementoes amongst those that had fallen into a trance with him inside Masjid-e-Nabavi (page 38 of December 1925 issue of *Israr-e-Tasawuf*, Lahore).

One day Khalifa Omar saw Hassam bin Sabit standing on the pulpit of Masjid-e-Nabavi reciting hymns. He angrily questioned Hassam about his authority to sing inside the mosque. Hassam retorted that the Holy Prophet Muhammad used to ask him to stand on this very pulpit of the mosque and sing the hymns. He was following the same tradition now. Omar was so ashamed that he bowed his head and let him continue (page 1036, Vol. II, *Madarejun Nabuwat*). Therefore singing of hymns inside Masjid-e-Nabavi was encouraged by Muhammad and his companions!

Thus if the songs are in praise of Allah, the Prophets and saints it is good. Therefore religious incantations are acceptable and praiseworthy things under the Islamic Law of Shariat! The Qur'an also supports:

“O ye who believe! Forbid not the good things which Allah hath made lawful for you and transgress not. Lo! Allah loveth not transgressors” (Qur’an 5: 87).

Kab, the son of the famous Arab poet Zuhair, son of Abu Sulma, had been condemned to death. Kab appeared before Muhammad one day and sang an ode in his praise. So pleased was the Prophet that he not only forgave this criminal but he also bestowed upon him his own mantle as a reward! (page 19, *Translations of Eastern Poetry and Prose* by R.A. Nicholson published by Cambridge University Press, 1922). This shows how very fond Muhammad was of hymns which were sung to him inside Masjid-e-Nabavi

Thus it will be clear that Islam very much encouraged “Devotional Songs” both accompanied with or without music from the life time of the Holy Prophet Muhammad, commencing with his public welcome on his arrival at Madinah (Chapter 17: E-15).

Sufis have encouraged particularly Devotional songs in accordance with this practice of the Prophet. These are now known as “Sama” or “Qawwali”. They are often accompanied with music. These induce ecstasy and uplift the souls of the audience. They rely not only upon the traditions of the Prophet but also upon the encouragement given to devotional songs throughout the Qur’an. A few such divine revelations are quoted hereunder:

“Only those believe in our (*i.e.* Allah’s) revelations who, when they are reminded of them, (a) fall down prostrate (in divine worship) and (b) hymn the praise of their Lord, and (c) they are not scornful (to either of these two methods of devotion *i.e.* (a) prayers and (b) Sama or Qawwali)”. (Qur’an 32: 15).

“But hymn (*i.e.* sing) the praise of thy Lord and be of those who make prostration (in prayers).

“And serve thy Lord (in these two manners *i.e.* hymns and prostration) till the inevitable (death) cometh unto thee” (Qur’an 15: 98-99).

“Therefore (O Muhammad) bear with what they say, and hymn the praise of thy Lord before the rising of the sun and before the setting of the sun;

“And (particularly) in the night-time hymn His praise after the (prescribed Night or ‘Isha’) prostrations” (Qur’an 50: 39-40).

It is on the basis of these Qur’anic Orders that the Sufis have regular all-night sessions of Qawwali or Sama. Especially on the Sabbath nights *i.e.* the night between sunset on Thursdays and sunrise on Fridays they often have full-night sessions of Sama or Qawwali. The Sufis regard Fridays as their official prayer day so they try and avoid doing any business from sunset on Thursdays until the Friday afternoon congregational prayers. Thus maintaining the original Sabbath day as was prescribed from the time of Adam (Chapter 4: B and C).

#### **H. The removal of the veils**

These sages before being blessed with the divine gift of being able to do “Dhikir” by means of the organs of their bodies, usually have to pass many years of “Jihad” *i.e.* trials and training under the watchful eyes of their “Pir” or Spiritual Guide so that they may gain control over themselves—their desires, and thus attain “Fana” in Allah.

From the following quotations from page 139 of “*Translations of Eastern Poetry and Prose*” by Nicholson, it would appear that it took Bayazid al-Bistami thirty years of “Jihad” *i.e.* perseverance and trials to reach the goal. He was about 40 years old when he took to Sufiism and was about 70 years of age when he reached enlightenment!

“Someone went to the door of Bayazid’s house and shouted: ‘Whom are you seeking?’ Said he: ‘Bayazid’. The Shaikh said, ‘Poor Bayazid! For thirty years I have been seeking Bayazid and have not yet discovered any trace of him’. When this saying was repeated to Dhu ‘I-Nun, he exclaimed, ‘God forgive my brother Bayazid for he is lost with those who have become lost in God’.



“He said, ‘I came forth from Bayazid-ness as a snake from its skin. Then! looked. I saw that lover, beloved, and love are one; for in the world of unification all can be one’.

“He said, ‘I went from God to God, until they cried from me in me, “O Thou I”.’

“He said, ‘Nothing is better for a man than to be without aught, having no asceticism, no theory, no practice. When he is without all, he is with All”.

“One day he was speaking of the Truth and was sucking his lip and saying, ‘I am the wine-drinker and the wine and the cup-bearer.’ He said, ‘Thirty years the high God was my mirror, now I am my own mirror’—*i.e.* ‘that which I was I am no more, for ‘I’ and ‘God’ is a denial of the Unity of God. Since I am no more, the high God is His own mirror. Lo! I say that God is the mirror of my own self, for He speaks with my tongue and I have vanished’.

“He said, ‘For a long while I used to circumambulate the Kaabah. When I attained unto God, I saw the Kaabah circumambulating me’.

“He said, ‘For thirty years I used to say, “Do this” and “Give this,” but when I reached the first stage of gnosis, I said, “O God, be Thou mine and do whatsoever Thou wilt”.

“He said, ‘The gnostic’s lowest rank is this, that the attributes of God are in him’.

“He said, ‘A single atom of the sweetness of gnosis in a man’s heart is better than a thousand pavilions in Paradise’.”

This process by which one does “Jehad” or trains oneself to gain mastery over oneself and then contemplates upon Allah and His Absolute Oneness, thus losing oneself in the “Very Essence” is called the removal of the “Veils” which separate us from our “Creator and Maker”. This procedure has been explained elaborately in “*Kashf Al-Mahjub*” translated by R. A. Nicholson as:

1. On Poverty and Purity (Chapter 2 to 5).
2. On Blame ... (Chapter 6)
3. The Uncovering of the First Veil: Concerning the Gnosis of God (Marifat Allah)—(Chapter 15).
4. The Uncovering of the Second Veil: Concerning Unification (Tawhid)—(Chapter 16).
5. The Uncovering of the Third Veil: Concerning Faith (Chapter 17).
6. The Uncovering of the Fourth Veil: Concerning Purification from Foulness.—(Chapter 18).
7. The Uncovering of the Fifth Veil: Concerning Prayer (as-Salaat).—(Chapter 19).
8. The Uncovering of the Sixth Veil: Concerning Alms (as-Zakat).—(Chapter 20).
9. The Uncovering of the Seventh Veil: On Fasting (as-Sawm)—(Chapter 21).
10. The Uncovering of the Eighth Veil: Concerning the Pilgrimage—(Chapter 22).
11. The Uncovering of the Ninth Veil: Concerning Companionship, together with its Rules and Principles (Chapter 23).
12. The Uncovering of the Tenth Veil: Explaining their Phraseology and the definitions of their terms and the verities of the ideas which are signified.—(Chapter 24).
13. The Uncovering of the Eleventh Veil: Concerning Audition (Sama)—(Chapter 25).

For the purpose of this research a summary is being quoted from pages 98-100 of the “*Translations of Eastern Poetry and Prose*” by Nicholson:

“ABU SA’ID IBN ABI’L-KHAIR

“The great Persian mystic (A.D. 967-1049), to whom many quatrains are attributed. See Professor Browne’s *Literary History of Persian*, Vol. II, Pages 261-269 and my *Studies in Islamic Mysticism*, pages 1-76.”

“He was asked, ‘When shall a man be freed from his wants?’ ‘When God shall free him,’ he replied; ‘this is not effected by a man’s exertion, but by the grace and help of God. First of all, He brings forth in him the desire to attain his goal. Then He opens to him the gate of repentance. Then He throws him into self-mortification, so that he continues to strive and, for a while, to pride himself upon his efforts, thinking that he is advancing or achieving something; but afterwards he falls into despair and feels no joy. Then he knows that his work is not pure, but tainted, he repents of the acts of devotion which he had thought to be his own, and perceives that they were done by God’s grace and help, and that he was guilty of polytheism in attributing them to his own exertion. When this becomes manifest, a feeling of joy enters his heart. Then God opens to him the gate of certainty, so that for a time he takes anything from any one and accepts contumely and endures abasement, and knows for certain by whom it is brought to pass, and doubt concerning this is removed from his heart. Then God opens to him the gate of love, and here too egoism shows itself for a time and he is exposed to blame, which means that in his love of God he meets fearlessly whatever may befall him and reeks not of reproach; but still he thinks “I love” and finds no rest until he perceives that it is God who loves him and keeps him in the state of loving, and that this is the result of divine love and grace, not of his own endeavour. Then God opens to him the gate of unity and causes him to know that all action depends on God Almighty. Hereupon he perceives that all is He, and all is by Him, and all is His; that He has laid his self-conceit upon His creatures in order to prove them, and that He in His omnipotence ordains that they shall bold this false belief, because omnipotence is His attribute, so that when they regard His attributes they shall know that He is the Lord. What formerly was

hearsay now becomes known to him intuitively as he contemplates the works of God. Then he entirely recognises that he has not the right to say “I” or “mine”. At this stage he beholds his helplessness; desires fall away from him and he becomes free and calm. He wishes that which God wishes; his own wishes are gone, he is emancipated from his wants, and has gained peace and joy in both worlds ... First, action is necessary, then knowledge, in order that thou mayst know that thou knowest naught and art no one. This is not easy to know. It is a thing that cannot be rightly learned by instruction, nor sewed on with needle nor tied on with thread. It is the gift of God’.

“The heart’s vision is what matters, not the tongue’s speech. Thou wilt never escape from thy self until thou slay it. To say “There is no god but Allah” is not enough. Most of those who make the verbal profession of faith are polytheists at heart, and polytheism is the one unpardonable sin. Thy whole body is full of doubt and polytheism. Thou must cast them out in order to be at peace. Until thou deny thy self thou wilt never believe in God. It is thy self, which is keeping thee far from God and saying, ‘So-and-so has treated thee ill,’ ‘such and such a one has done well by thee,’ points the way to creatureliness; and all this is polytheism. Nothing depends on the creatures, all depends on the Creator. This thou must know and say, and having said it thou must stand firm. To stand firm means that when thou hast said ‘One thou must never again say ‘Two’. Creator and creature are ‘Two’. Do not double like a fox, that ye may suddenly start up in some other place; that is not right faith. Say ‘Allah’ and stand firm there. Standing firm is this, that when thou hast said ‘God’ thou shouldst no more speak or think of created things, so that it is just as though they were not—Love that One, Who does not cease to be when thou ceasest, in order that thou mayst be such a being that thou never wilt cease to be!”.

### **I. Ah! Thou Soul at Peace!**

From the foregoing it would appear that human beings can be divided into two broad mental categories *viz*:

- a. One who lives with his materialist ideals drowned in Egoism—

I know—This is mine— This is right, thats wrong. I'd be happy if only I had ... This day dream continues with: "If only I had some more" or "If only I had married ..." or "If I had a more satisfying job" or "If I had better health", Is happiness an impossible dream—always—"If only..."? Why is happiness the impossible dream which seems to be just round the corner, off in the vague future, but never really right now?

One can well appreciate such remarks from downtrodden humanity—the suffering masses, the poor. But what makes most Europeans, as also Americans, and Japanese *etc*, who enjoy a much higher degree of human comfort than most other people of the earth to be so often dissatisfied? Why can't these people atleast claim to be the happiest?

—and—

- b. The Sufi—the "Soul at Peace"—who out of his love for service to mankind, surrenders himself completely to his Creator, so much so that he realises that everything around him, including himself, are temporary phases which are not going to last. So it is the height of folly to think—"If I had this or that then I would be happy". All that is real is only Allah!

Hence it is the greatest foolishness to run after worldly things—comforts, luxuries, wealth *etc*. To accept the existence of any of the millions he sees around him including his own self is therefore nothing but deceiving oneself—a temporary dream! That everything is merely the manifestations of Allah, Who reveals Himself in each and everything from an atom to the entire universe *by making each an individual!* as read earlier in Chapter 16: C. Thus in everything the reality is nothing but the one and only Allah. The Qur'an teaches:

"All that is there will fade away (Fana).

"But (forever) will remain the Face of thy Lord—The All Mighty,

The All Glory” (Qur’an 55: 26-27).

For them this life is nothing but a dream—the real awakening is in Death—Fana-fil-Allah or lost in Allah.

When one is convinced of this basic truth and becomes a Sufi or a “Soul at Peace”, then nothing that the world can offer him is a temptation; Its luxuries, comforts *etc.* become simply nothing before him. He prefers to live as humbly as possible. Likewise the worldly discomforts, torture, poverty, diseases, hunger *etc.* no longer make him feel unhappy because he has no more any desires in him save and except the pure and absolute love for “The Creator” and he expresses this through his love for “the Created human society”. The Qur’an teaches as follows:

“Therefore remember *ME* (Allah), and I will remember you, Give thanks to *ME* and reject (forget) *ME* not” (Qur’an 2: 152).

Let us for a moment look at two famous prophets of the past to clarify what is meant by people being in the two mental stages described here above :

- i. Prophet King Solomon had an annual revenue of 666 talents of gold (I Kings 10: 14) which is equivalent to 960,000 ounces of solid gold. His great throne was ivory inlaid with the best gold (I Kings 10:18-20) with all kinds of jewels. Rulers from near and far used to come to admire all the beauties and wonders collected by Solomon, the Queen of Sheba being one of them!

Solomon was the wisest and the richest man on earth of his time (1 Kings 10: 23-24). Further, Solomon married beautiful women from all over including many princesses. He had 700 wives many of them being princesses and 300 concubines. These one thousand women gave him every imaginable pleasure (1 Kings 11: 1-3). One is naturally tempted to ask:

“Can there be any greater happiness?”

You will therefore be shocked to learn that in spite of all these comforts, pleasures, riches, wisdom and power, Solomon was indeed the most unhappy man on earth according to his own statements and findings recorded in the Holy Bible (Ecclesiastes 2: 1-26)

- ii. Now let us look at a “Soul at Peace” from the Holy Bible. Prophet Job was a very pious man, who had surrendered himself to his Creator. He was blessed by the Creator with a lot of wealth, children and happiness (Job 1: 1-3).

As read earlier in Chapter 17: B, 2-4 and 20: A-D, Iblis or Lucifer had fallen from his honoured position of leader of the spiritual universe to that of Satan on account of Man—his refusal to bow before the Logos or Nur-e-Muhammadi in the forehead of Adam! Since then Satan has been pleading before his Creator pointing out all the defects and drawbacks of mankind and boasting before his Lord—Am I not far better than man?—Am I not still continuously worshipping you by day and night Oh Allah! and that also even in spite of being condemned by You into Satan?—Am I not Your greatest worshipper in the entire Universe?—Your most adoring creature in the whole of creation.

Allah is not prepared to hear such boasts from Satan! So He keeps on pointing out from time to time those men, whose worship is much more acceptable to Him. One of such persons was Job. Satan thereupon contended that Job honoured God so sincerely only because God had blessed him with every comfort—wives, children, houses, food, fruitful lands, cattle *etc.* so much so that he was considered one of the wealthy persons of his time.

To be able to appreciate Satan well one must realise the following important points:

1. Satan, like all spiritual dwellers is blessed with only one “Soul”—*Nafs Lawwama*— the immortal soul which is all the time trying to draw him towards his Creator and goodness.
2. As against that Man possesses two souls—“*Nafs Lawwama*” in

addition to “*Nafs Ammara*”—the animal spirit or mortal soul which draws him towards evil—the worldly temptations—the sins!

3. Therefore Satan has no desire or ability in him as such to do any evil! Accordingly he is not on the same footing as Man. As such how can he justifiably compare his continuous acts of prayers to the mistakes committed by men? Comparison can only be possible between two items which are on the same footing and made of the same ingredients.
4. Man’s nature is such that it not only draws him towards evil but it also leaves him dissatisfied—King Solomon being a perfect example of this.
5. Therefore it is very easy for anybody from the Spiritual world to become a “Soul at Peace with his Creator”.
6. For Man it is extremely difficult—perhaps not even one in a hundred-thousand reach the stage—“Ah! Thou Soul at Peace”.
7. In spite of all his many tens of thousands of years of adoration of Allah (some records say that Satan has been praying for the past 70 millions of years) Satan has never been—a Soul at Peace!—Why?
8. Before the advent of Adam, Satan was praying with the object of becoming the greatest worshipper of his Lord—Hence not out of pure love for his Creator. He got his reward for it by becoming the elected leader of the spiritual dwellers of the Universe. He certainly did not deserve anything more!
9. If Satan had any little bit of love for Allah, then he certainly would not have refused to bow before Adam, when ordered to do “*Sajada*”. One never questions any request made by one’s beloved—a true lover never tries to use his logic in such matters! This clarifies that Satan was never a lover of the Almighty. If that be so then what is the value of such adoration—his 70 millions of years of prayers?
10. One may ask out of curiosity as to what are the reasons for Satan continuing with the worship of God after his



condemnation into Satan? Satan is afraid that if he does a single wrong then Allah will condemn him into Hell! Such adoration out of fear is on principle no worship at all of the Almighty! Rabia Basri the famous virgin lady Saint has brought this out very vividly in her following prayer:

“O my Allah, if I worship Thee in fear of Hell, then burn me in Hell, and if I worship Thee in hope of Paradise, then exclude me from Paradise, but if I worship Thee out of love for Thine own sake, then please withhold not from me Thine everlasting Beauty” (pages 135-136 of *Translation of Eastern Poetry and Prose* by R. A. Nicholson).

This is the basic spiritual teaching of Muhammad—“Ah! Thou Soul at Peace!” (Qur’an 89: 27).

11. This brings out beautifully—Those who act out of *fear of God never had His love!*—Hence beware of those whose virtue *lies in the fear of Allah!* instead of love of the Creator which can be expressed through love of mankind, amongst other ways also.
12. As such Satan was never a “Soul at Peace”! and never a true lover of Allah but one who acted only for a reward in the past and now out of fear of Hell—Hence; one may rightly ask what is the value of such 70 millions of years of worship?

On the other hand Job was truly a happy man because his soul was at peace with his Creator and that this was not influenced by the riches, children and comforts he was enjoying It was also not out of fear of God or the temptation of Heaven! Allah, to prove that Satan was in the wrong and that Job was a “Soul at Peace” living contentedly in complete surrender to the will of God—Thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven—irrespective of whatsoever circumstances He may put him into—God took away all he had in a single day including all his children (Job 1: 13-19). What did Job do? He fell on the ground and prayed to the Lord thus:

“And said: Naked came I out of my mother’s womb and naked shall I return thither: the Lord gave, and the Lord hath taken away:

blessed be the name of the Lord” (Job 1: 21).

Can there be a better example of a “Soul at Peace with the Creator”?

These losses were followed by sickness and boils on the body of Job from the sole of his foot to the top of his head (Job 2: 7). His wife asked Job to curse God and die rather than live under such tortures (Job 2: 9). But Job’s reply was:

“Thou speakest as one of the foolish women speaketh” (Job: 2: 10).

Job still did not utter a single complaint—Yet another glorious example of:

“Ah! Thou soul at Peace!”—Thus was Satan snubbed and abased by God!

Job’s three friends when they heard of all these sad events came together to comfort him. The Holy Bible describes their arrival as:-

“And when they lifted up their eyes (from) afar off, and (when they saw that Job was so badly disfigured that they) knew him not, they lifted up their voice, and wept; and they rent everyone his mantle, and sprinkled dust upon their heads towards heaven.

“So they sat down with him upon the ground seven days and seven nights, and none spake a word unto him: for they saw that his grief was very great” (Job 2: 12-13).

Yet Job did not put the blame upon God. One may rightly ask—can there be a better example of the contentment in surrender to the will of Allah?—“Ah! Thou soul at Peace!”? This brings out beautifully the difference between Satan’s and Job’s worship!

Here is a wonderful example which very vividly brings out the vast difference according to the Holy Bible between Solomon who had everything conceivable whilst Job had not, yet Solomon was most unhappy but Job in spite of all his miseries was a “Soul at Peace!”

There was only one prophet who suffered even more than Job. He also was tried by Allah not only to put an end to the continuous boasts

of Satan of being the greatest worshipper of the Creator in spite of being condemned into Satan when he had done no wrong (Chapter 20: A-D)! but also to prove once for all time—what is a “Soul at Peace”. The sufferings of this prophet was accordingly for an infinitely longer period than that of Job, who suffered his trials for a period of only a few weeks. Yet this prophet did not complain even once!—certainly not even to the extent that Job did at the height of his sufferings when he prayed for his own death from his terrible tortures as under:

“After this opened Job his mouth, and cursed his day.

“And Job spake, and said,

“Let the day perish wherein I was born, and the night in which it was said, There is a man child conceived.

“Let that day be darkness; let not God regard it from above, neither let the light shine upon it.

“Let darkness and the shadow of death stain it; let a cloud dwell upon it; let the blackness of the day terrify it.

“As for that night, let darkness seize upon it; let it not come into the number of the months.

“Lo, let that night be solitary, let no joyful voice come therein.

“Let them curse it that curse the day, who are ready to raise up their mourning.

“Let the stars of the twilight thereof be dark; let it look for light, but have none; neither let it see the dawning of the day:

“Because it shut not up the doors of my mother’s womb, nor did sorrow from mine eyes.

“Why died I not from the womb? Why did I not give up the ghost when I came out of the belly?

“Why did the knees prevent me? or why the breasts that I should suck?

“For now should I have lain still and been quiet, I should have slept

then had I been at rest” (Job 3: 1-13).

We have read earlier that the sufferings of Muhammad during his first thirteen years of prophethood at Mecca was not only more prolonged but was also much more intense (Chapter 17: E, 2-5). So much so that he suffered even a greater amount of tortures than the total quantum of sufferings faced by all prophets that have come on earth from Adam till Jesus, including the trials of Job (Chapter 17: E, 8-14). In fact Muhammad was even “Ostracised” for three years by the Meccans (Chapter 17: E-8). Further he was stoned almost to death by the people of Taif. Whereupon the “Angle of Destruction” appeared before him and said:

“I come with Allah’s permission to you and I beg of you to authorise me to destroy Taif for what they have done unto you”.

Muhammad’s reply was:

“I have been sent as ‘Rahmatul Lil Aalameen’ *i.e.* as a Blessing and a Comforter for the entire universe, so I pray that Allah change their hearts and they become Muslims *i.e.*, Surrendered to will of Allah—I came not as a destroyer” (page 55, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). This prayer was granted by the Creator and Taif converted to Islam a few years later (Chapter 17: E-23). This brings out very vividly the vast difference between Prophet Job when he was suffering and Muhammad, who never for a moment lost his confidence and faith (Chapter 17: E, 3-5) even according to Orientalists.

One may quite rightly ask: What was it that made Muhammad so patient during his terrible tortures for thirteen long years at Mecca with no hope for peace from molestation in sight? What made Muhammad as also his grandchildren when martyred at Karbala so cheerful in all adversities and tortures? Rabia Basri has disclosed this secret of Muhammad and his saints. Whenever this virgin saint was afflicted, she used to rejoice also! When asked what she was celebrating, her standard answer was:

“Every day I used to get the usual attention of Allah just like the

many millions of His creations, but today it is my very good fortune that He has chosen to honour me by singling me out of these many millions for His special attention by afflicting me with this torture or difficulty or sickness *etc.*, so for me this is a very auspicious occasion for rejoicing and celebration". This is the recognised practice of Sufi Saints!

When a person reaches such a stage of contentment and peace with his Creator, it is said that he has reached the stage known as "Fana Fil Allah" or "lost in Allah".

The Qur'an has described this stage as "Qalb Mutmainna" or "Ah! thou soul at Peace!" Here are just a few references from the Qur'an:

"But ah! thou soul at peace!

"Return unto thy Lord, content in His good pleasure!

"Enter thou among My bondmen!

"Enter thou My Garden (of spiritual peace contentment and delight at seeing the infinite beauties of Allah)" (Qur'an 89: 27-30).

"Far removed from it (*i.e.* tortures of the soul which the wicked will suffer) will be the righteous.

"Who giveth his wealth that he may thereby increase (his love for Allah).

"And none of his deeds are done by him with any idea of a reward in return.

"Save and except as seeking (to please) the will of his Lord, the Most High.

"Surely he will be content (Ah! thou soul at Peace)" (Qur'an 92: 17-21).

"Their reward is with their Lord! Gardens of (Spiritual) delight underneath which rivers (of joy) flow, wherein they dwell for ever. Allah hath pleasure in them and they have pleasure in Him. This is (in store) for him who loveth his Lord!" (Qur'an 98: 8).

Muhammad had reached the stage of “Qalb Mutmainna” *i.e.* “Ah! thou soul at Peace” which is another way of describing “Fana Fil Allah” or “Lost in Allah”! The world with all its treasures and comforts had no more any meaning left to him. So when better times came to Muhammad especially during his last two years of earthly life at Madinah when he was virtually the Emperor of the whole of Arabia, yet Muhammad did not live luxuriously in a palace of gold and silver decorated with beautiful carvings of ivory, loaded with costly precious diamonds and jewelleries, surrounded by many servants like King Solomon in spite of the request of his wives whom he offered divorce if they wanted the pleasures and comforts of this life (Chapter 19: E-3). To quote the words of a few European scholars:

“The dire poverty which he endured so courageously in Madinah is well known. His dwelling was but a hut with a minimum of furniture. This was a man who could inspire his followers with Zeal and love for himself” (The Rev. R. MacGregor in *Yorkshire Post* dated 8th June, 1935).

“Philosopher, orator, apostle legislator, warrior, conqueror of ideas, restorer of rational dogmas, a cult without images; the founder of twenty terrestrial empires and one spiritual empire, that is Muhammad! As regards all standards by which human greatness can be measured, we may well ask, is there any man greater than he?” (page 277, Vol. II, *Histoire de la Turquie* by La Martine published Paris, 1854).

Thus Muhammad has left behind the finest example in human history of perfect and complete HAPPINESS—Qalb Mutmainna—“Ah! thou soul at Peace!”

From these it becomes clear that palaces, riches, power, wives, children do not form the elements for perfect happiness of the soul or mind! But absolute and complete surrender to the will of Allah—Thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven—does! All this vividly brings out—Why was man created? Most certainly not for worldly pleasures and comforts, but to carry out the wishes of the Almighty *in the manner*

*in which He wants it!* We have no choice whatsoever if we are seeking for real and true Happiness—all else is wind!

*If all the people of this earth were to “Surrender” to the will of Allah in the manner in which He wants it then there could be no disputes between Man and Man.* We would all become one community of brothers—all striving for the one common goal of surrender to the will of our Maker by trying to help and cooperate with one another in our problems.

Hence the Sufis act only in accordance with the will and desire of the Creator and not out of their own wishes as they do not consider their own existence apart from that of Allah. Therefore all their actions are in fact not their deeds at all but the doings of Allah and show the great love and concern they have for the well-being of those around them—not their own self. They thus lose their identity totally into their Creator. Hence it is He, Who acts through them as He pleases!

These Sufi principles bring out very dearly:

- i. *No one deceives us more often than we do ourselves!*
- ii. *The most difficult person to make friends with is your own self!*—Our selfish desires.
- iii. *While we dream we think we are being real* but in fact our reality is only a kind of dream and death the awakening as warned in Qur'an 50: 22.
- iv. *Those who cannot give friendship to others, will rarely receive it and never hold it!*
- v. The best service that anybody can give to Allah is love for fellow-men. This is brought out beautifully in the following poetry by Leigh Hunt:

“Abou Ben Adhem (may his tribe increase),  
Awoke one night from a deep dream of peace,  
And saw within the moonlight in his room,  
Making it rich and like a lily in bloom,

An angel writing in a book of gold—  
*Exceeding* peace had made Ben Adhem bold,  
 And to the Presence in the room he said,  
 “What writest thou?”—the vision raised its head,  
 And with a look made of all sweet accord,  
 Answered, “The names of those who love the Lord.  
 “And is mine one?” Said Abou,  
 “Nay not so,” Replied the Angel. Abou spoke more low,  
 But cheerily still, and said, “I pray thee, then,  
 Write me as one who loves his fellowmen”—  
 The Angel wrote, and vanished. The next night  
 It came again with a great awakening light,  
 And showed the names whom love of God had blessed.  
 And lo! Ben Adhem’s name led all the rest”.

- vi. The life of the Holy Prophet Muhammad from his childhood till before being declared a Prophet is a glorious example of this service to mankind—So much so that at the young age of 24 years he was publicly declared—“Al Amin”—The Faithful and True. That is indeed some example to follow! It also explains his wonderful success—a following of over a million souls before his departure from earthly life! An achievement unparalleled in the annals of human history!

It is small wonder that George Bernard Shaw has passed the following opinion about Muhammad at an interview:

“I have studied him (Muhammad)—the wonderful man—and in my opinion, far from being an anti-Christ *he must be called the Saviour of humanity. I believe that if a man like him were to assume the dictatorship of the modern world, he would succeed in solving its*



*problems in a way that would bring it the much needed peace and happiness”* (page 112 of *Prophet of Islam and his Teachings* by Maulvi Abdul Karim, published in Calcutta, 1937).

In answer to the prayers of the distressed people of earth, Allah out of His Mercy will soon disclose a youth—the duplicate of Muhammad—The Mahdi—The Saint Saviour—about whom we shall read in greater detail a little later, who is going to bring all the people on this earth at the Battle of Armageddon to the one religion of Surrender to the will of Allah and establish an era of peace, when wars would be things of the past and weapons of war will be destroyed!—*Qalb Mutmainna* or “Ah! thou soul at Peace!”—That is real Happiness!—That is the goal of Sufism!

Abraham achieved “Ah! thou soul at Peace!” before the age of 16 years, when he replied to the Angels that if it is Allah’s will that I perish in Nimrod’s fire, I am willing! (Chapter 6: F). His second wife Hagar achieved it at the age of only 18 years when Angel Gabriel asked her to return to the house of Abraham as she was pregnant (Chapter 7: B), and when left in the wilderness of Paran at the age of 19 years with the six months old Ishmael (Chapter 7: C). Ishmael achieved it at the age of only 13 years when he retorted to Satan: “If it is Allah’s will, that I be sacrificed, then I shall not be found lacking” (Chapter 7: F). Pharaoh Senusrit 1, was the first king to reach this stage when he did not bring his daughter Hagar and grandson Ishmael from Paran to his palace (Chapter 7: C) only because they were there by Allah’s will! Indeed all great examples of surrender to the will of Allah—Al Islam!





## Chapter 22

# How Universal Peace amongst Mankind is Achievable



It's a different world today. For thousands of years, the heads of many nations, have been seeking Peace. Unfortunately none have found it—a lasting and permanent world peace! Until some three decades ago, there was always time to continue trying. But no longer is that true today!

### **A. World Tensions and Evils leading whither?**

The many Conferences held during the past few years by the heads-of-state on domestic and world problems show that the conditions all around us are appalling. These leaders today face problems quite beyond their ability to solve. International tensions are drifting the world towards a final, supreme crisis!

Evils also have multiplied. Things are happening faster and faster. Eruptions of violence everywhere have greatly increased the danger of nuclear war. And that could mean human extinction!

*Heads of nations are after all human! They are liable to passions and emotional instability in the throes of some heated crisis. One could miscalculate, or lose his head in such a nerve-shattering situation and set off the world into a devastating nuclear war!*

It has **suddenly** become imperative that we find the answer to

humanity's **No. 1 problem**—the question of **survival**. Time is fast running out on us. You and I are staking our lives on “*world peace*” being achieved first! Hence “**world peace**” is a matter of **life and-death urgency** if it is to be brought about **before the Nuclear Holocaust!**

### **B. Why Men do not find lasting Peace?**

During the last decade—the sixties—the volume of scientific knowledge nearly doubled! The genetic code was being deciphered, organ transplant was introduced, sub-atomic particles were discovered, computers reduced man's work-load, men walked on the moon, trips to the planets were being planned and the dream that man could create life itself seemed imminent. By reading newspapers and magazines, it was easy for one to get the idea that, given enough time and money, anything and everything was possible for science. There seemed to be no limit to the powers of what science can do in the hands of men.

After spending many millions of dollars to develop weapons as deterrents to future wars, mankind found the threat of war not only just as real but also much more ominous in its potentials for destruction. What many refer to as unity and friendship, like American Chinese cooperation or American-U.S.S.R. ties, is often nothing but a bond of common hatred and prejudices!

When such failures face us, it is but natural that *science* and *technology* will be blamed for many of the problems that threaten the continued existence of man on earth.

Dr Samuel Silver, Professor of Engineering science and Director of the space science laboratory at the University of California at Berkley has summarized his dismay:

“There is a feeling, which is growing in the United States and in other western countries, that the advances made through science and technology have somehow failed their promise, that the hope placed in them by mankind for the attainment of a more satisfying life and of a happier and more tranquil world has suddenly been

betrayed. There is in consequence a growing sense of dismay and frustration regarding science and technology ..." (page 39, *Science Journal*, October, 1969).

"... I have become concerned that public expectations of spectacular achievements are far greater than science and technology can produce ... science and engineers are not omnipotent" (Dr. Edward David, science adviser to President Nixon has made this statement in the editorial in "*Science*" dated 28th May 1971 ).

"... The public needs to understand that science and technology cannot be applied successfully to the fulfilment of every wish" (Dr. Philip Abelson, the editor of "*Science*" in the issue dated 21st August 1970).

"Far too few people have any notion of the power and limits of science" (Dr. F. S. Dainton, Vice-Chancellor of the University of Nottingham in *Science Journal* October, 1969).

The most basic limitation of science is that its observation and testing technique is essentially restricted to the physical senses of man—to what he can see, touch, taste, smell or hear. What cannot be tested and observed in this manner is quite outside the scope of science.

Such "real intangibles" as satisfaction, love, beauty, which are felt intuitively and are very real to the individual beholder, are quite outside the scope of ability of science to define and measure. So also is the spirit or soul in man. If we cannot scientifically measure how long the soul is going to keep us alive then how can we measure, analyse and find out by means of scientific instruments what the Almighty Creator is? Science is limited—indeed very limited—when it comes to answering the big questions of life. The discoveries of science have not doubt inundated us with physical knowledge yet it has not only completely failed to supply spiritual knowledge, but also the moral and ethical guidelines that would effectively govern the use of that knowledge. Science thus is a complete failure, by its very nature, to provide man with a satisfying insight into the meaning and purpose of human life. After all, science is not the "end all and be all" of human knowledge.

Nevertheless it has to be admitted that man is the most intelligent being not only on Earth but also in the entire solar system according to the data we have been able to collect by our visits to the moon and our rocket probes of Mars, Venus *etc.* Perhaps we are the most intelligent in the whole universe! The Qur'an however informs us:

“Verily We (Allah) have honoured the children of Adam. We (Allah) carry them on the land, (air) and the sea, and have made provisions of good things for them, *and have preferred them above many of those whom We (Allah) created (throughout the universe) with marked preferment*” (Qur'an 17: 70).

When **Man** is so very intelligent and superior to all other known creations, then **Why** has man been unable to achieve a lasting world peace? Consider for a moment the unlimited intellectual powers of man! One should think that these would enable him to live on a plane of Peace, happiness and universal plenty. He produces the most intricate mechanisms—technological and scientific miracles! Yet these same human minds seem utterly helpless before man's moral, spiritual and ethical problems!

**Why** this incongruity?

Why is man as he is—so able, yet so helpless? **How** and **When** has he become so plagued with the evils in human nature? Why has the evil in us gained mastery over our intellectual and creative capacities? The scientifically advanced world of today does not know how to find a way out of the present impasse! Unless the solution is provided, humanity is indeed in mortal danger of extinction!

Conflicts and evils, have existed from way back in history. Human problems, throw light on human conduct and behaviour right from the time that Cain murdered Abel. So for the answer we must go all the way back to the question of “*Origins*” because human survival now depends on that answer.

Therefore we need to **understand** the origin of **man**. What is man? Is man an animal—merely the highest of the animal kingdom? Is he a

sort of transmigration product from a former butterfly or some other tiny insect? Is there anybody who has not wondered at the question—**“What am I?”**

### **C. Origin of Mankind**

Two opposing theories are popularly advanced for the origin of MAN—Nay of the entire Universe!

Since both cannot be correct, let us ponder over them for a few moments. Unless we can find the correct answer, surely we are lost.

The most popular conjecture with the educated is that the formation of the Universe came about through a process of nature and its future destruction is left to time. That, like everything else, human life developed over a period of millions of years, from lower animal species, by the process of evolution. Hence we humans became formed and shaped as we are purely by accident or chance by blind natural causes and resident forces? And that death is the end of all existence, so that then; is neither recompense for virtue nor punishment for vice. Such theories naturally do not find any necessity for God. Therefore the scientifically advanced people of today feel they are free to do just what they like without any fear of God, Who does not even exist for them. Their principle in life being: *“Laugh and be merry, for tomorrow we shall die”*. Hence their conscience is so badly corrupted that by legislation they are encouraging prostitution in many an European Country and its after effects the murder of innocent children under the excuse of abortions, without feeling guilty for these heinous crimes! It does remind one of the old English Pirates’ song:

“Drink and be merry, the devil will be done!

“Yo-Ho-Ho! And a bottle of rum!”

Biologists and the proponents of the evolutionary doctrine however fail to show any definite purpose for the presence of the human family on this planet. Neither do they tell us why man is as he

is. Man possesses such awesome intellectual powers that he can fly to the moon and return safely, but at the same time he is utterly helpless before the onslaught of the world's problems, sufferings and evils.

In spite of these glaring facts some want us to believe the whole solar system grew out of an idly floating gas bubble! Still, one must ask—whence the bubble?

The only answer to “Whence the bubble?” is **That Humanity was created** and put on this earth by an **All Intelligent and Almighty Creator for a Definite Purpose.**

Before we consider the second theory on the origin of man let us see how far the first contention can stand the test of enquiry on the basis of scientific evidence already adduced in this treatise. These lead us to the following conclusively proved facts:

- i. That Allah does exist! (Chapter 16: B)
- ii. Man definitely did not evolve from animals! (Chapter 17: B, 1-2.)
- iii. Man is totally different from animals in spite of the similarity of the construction of the brain (Chapter 17: B-5).
- iv. The Immortal Soul gifted to Man due to the Logos is the sole cause of our superiority over other creations including “Angels” or spirits on one hand and “Animals” (Chapter 17 B, 3-6).
- v. Allah has created each and every thing including us humans in such a strange manner as to conclusively prove His “Oneness” by creating only individual “Ones” so much so that one leaf of the same branch is different from the other, no two petals of the same flower are absolutely alike, nor two twins even though looking alike are identical as far as thumb impression, pores in one's body, the number of hairs and the various lines and marks on one's body are



concerned (Chapter 16: C).

- vi. Hence the conjecture of evolution is nothing but a pure and simple myth and an absolute falsity according to science (Chapter 17: B-1).
- vii. Why are the European Group of Advanced Nations from U.S.S.R. in the East to America in the West unaware of these basic facts? The answer has already been provided in Chapter 14: E to H. The Europeans took advantage of only the material developments of Islam in order to draw themselves out of their “Dark Ages.” Thus they have made tremendous material and scientific progress. But all that without the spiritual, moral and social aspects of Islam has made their development lopsided. It is for this reason that in spite of all their scientific and material knowledge they are unable to solve the basic problems that are threatening mankind with destruction!

We can get out of our dilemma only by rejecting evolution and realising that Allah *has created mankind for a definite purpose*.

#### **D. Why was Man Created?**

“I (Allah) created the Genii and Mankind only for the purpose that they might serve Me” (Qur’an 51: 56).

Here is the emphatic answer given by the Creator Himself! There is now no scope left for any kind of doubts!

“And (remember) when thy Lord brought forth (all the souls of mankind *i.e.*) of the children of Adam from their storage and made them testify concerning themselves, (saying): Am I (Allah) not your Lord? They said: Yea! Verily we do testify (that Allah is our Creator. This testimony was taken by Allah) lest ye should say on the Day of Resurrection: Lo! of this we were unaware” (Qur’an 7: 172).

Thus it will be clear that man has been created by Allah for the sole

purpose of surrender to His will—Al Islam, which has its fundamental basis in the doctrine of the Unity of Allah and that His Divine Will be done on Earth as it is all the time being done in the rest of the Universe, as a result there is no chaos or confusion there! It is only here because MAN out of all the creation has been given the option to follow or not!

This religion had its origin amongst mankind according to the findings of Professor Wilfred Cantwell Smith at least when the first man Adam was created and told what to do and what not to do, which he in his turn taught Eve, his wife, and their children and grandchildren—the Oneness of Allah and the observance of His Divine Decrees as already quoted in Qur'an 15: E. As people became disobedient and destroyed these teachings, from time to time more and more prophets (Adam being the first prophet) were sent to each and every nation of the world to propagate this basic truth and guide them to the right path of surrender to His Will and orders:

“And for every nation there is a messenger (sent from Allah to guide them). And when their messenger cometh (on the Day of Judgment) it will be judged between them fairly, and they will not be wronged” (Qur'an 10: 48).

“Lo! We (Allah) have sent thee with the Truth, a bearer of glad tidings and as a warner; and there is not a nation (on the face of this earth) but a warner hath passed among them” (Qur'an 35: 24).

The penultimate prophet was Jesus of Nazareth, son of the Virgin Mary. He has stated as follows:

“I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.

“Howbeit when he, the Spirit of Truth (*i.e.* Nur-e-Muhammadi or Prophet Muhammad) is come, he will guide you unto all truth; for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear (from Allah), that shall he speak (Al-Quran—“The Sayings”); and he shall show you things to come” (St. John 16: 12-13).

The last passage to be revealed of the Qur'an reads:

“... This day are those, who disbelieve, in despair of (ever being able to harm) your religion; so fear them not but instead fear ME (Allah)! *This day have I perfected (i.e. completed) the religion (of Surrender to the will of Allah which commenced from Adam and was incomplete till Jesus) for you and thus completed My favour through you, and have chosen for you as religion AL-ISLAM* (The religion of surrender to the Will of Allah on earth as it is in Heaven) ...” (Qur’an 5: 3).

For the first time the Qur’an taught that man is “Ashraf-ul-makhlukat” or the best of all creation (Qur’an 17: B, 3-5). He is thus superior to even angels, if he does good deeds and leads a pure life and worse than the lowest form of animals if he refuses to develop himself from the state in which he is created with a *blank Human mind!* He is in any case superior to all elements such as the stars, suns, planets, moons, mountains, rivers, seas, the metals, minerals, chemicals, vegetations, fishes, animals and all flying creatures. It is this teaching which has enlightened the world and enabled mankind to achieve its present scientific advancement when people learnt that they are superior to all these elements, nature and animals. Hence they should give up worshipping them as “gods” and instead use them for their benefit. Thus it is this doctrine of Unity and Omnipotence of Allah, which has enabled the human mind to cast off its bondage and slavery to the natural forces. Whenever human beings will fail to recognise His Unity and Omnipotence, then a fear of the powers of the elements will get the better of them and they will be afraid of the elements such as the Nuclear and other destructive weapons which are now being developed daily. The solution therefore does not lie in an armament race, of experimenting and producing more and more powerful weapons for the destruction of mankind but in researching upon and recognising that Allah is One and that He is the Creator, Sustainer and Protector from harm for the entire Universe *i.e.* “Rab-ul-Aalameen” (Qur’an 1:1). When He is the “Rab” of all nations, then He is in the position of a “Protecting Sustainer” looking after the safety and welfare of His creation. Once we realise this it will become obvious that He takes equal

care of all, bringing and encouraging all to their goal irrespective of their objects in life. If it is worldly ambitions then they will suffer for it, but if spiritual they will benefit by it. He hearkens to the ambitions of all, whatever their religion or nationality. He is equally merciful to all and is anxious to forgive the sins of all. He rewards the good deeds of all irrespective of any differences. He has created them all alike, and blessed them. Therefore mankind will succeed and have peace only if they will surrender to Him and follow the dictates of their conscience instead of their lust as is generally the case:

“Nay, but those, who do wrong, follow their own lust without knowledge ...

“So set thy purpose (O Muhammad) for religion as a man by nature upright—the nature (made out) of Allah, in which He hath created man. There is no altering (the laws of) Allah’s creation. That is the right religion, but most men know not” (Qur’an 30: 29-30).

And He expects of us to surrender to “His will”. There is unity in all He does. The natural corollary of this doctrine of “Divine Unity” is the Unity of the human race, which is confirmed as:

“Mankind is one community, and Allah sent (unto them) Prophets as bearers of good tidings and as warners, and revealed through them the Scriptures with truth that He might judge between (*i.e.* show to) mankind concerning wherein they differed concerning it, through hatred one of another (even) after clear proofs had come unto them. And Allah by His will guided those who believe unto the truth of that concerning which they differed. Allah guideth whom He will unto a straight path” (Qur’an 2: 213).

## **E. How Is Universal Peace Achievable?**

Let’s start by examining our greatest failure in the search for peace—**“WAR”**.

**WAR** has always been the most catastrophic of man’s follies. It has been *an incredible waste which accomplishes little, if anything! Its price*

*is enormous in terms of wasted money, resources, land, property, and most important of all—the loss of human lives. The victor is more often than not—the vanquished and the loser—the destroyed! And yet, despite the fantastic waste, nations find themselves either at war or continuously preparing for it! On an international scale, it amounts to nothing less than mass lunacy!*

You'd think that with so much conflict, men would at least settle for some periods of meaningful peace. Yet, the insanity of war has plagued man ever since Cain murdered Abel.

In fact, the overall global situation has, in the so-called “enlightened” twentieth century, deteriorated. World War I was supposedly “The War to end all Wars”. That is until World War II, which—with the advent of nuclear weapons—had to be “The War to end all wars”. Further conflict culminating in nuclear World War III threatens not only “ending all wars,” but with it everything else, including the human race! Therefore *peace* has now become a *must* for humanity. The alternative is the ultimate catastrophe.

Despite this urgent situation, the nations, since 1945, have fought some “100 wars and other major conflicts” (Unesco, “*Courier*,” Nov. 1970). At least 25 military conflagrations and civil disruptions rage somewhere in the world at this very moment.

Hence the killing and the destruction continue unabated even today! Armies continue to march off to war only to return and bury their dead. And families grieve. On and on would go the endless bloodshed, except that today, there's the Bomb—plenty of them! The American Nobel Prize-winning scientist Dr. Linus Pauling, has warned the people of the earth in “Technocrat” issue of December, 1968, that there are enough bombs to wipe out every man, woman, and child on earth up to 150 times over! We have finally come to the tragic position as warned by the late American President John F. Kennedy:

*“Mankind must put an end to war, or war will put an end to mankind.”*

Meanwhile, as the nations' Armageddon draws nearer with each passing day, men sit around the peace tables, groping for solutions, plaintively asking—Why can't nations live together in peace?

If mankind is anxious to save the world from the disasters of the Third World War—the Nuclear Holocaust—then we must:

1. Realise that *Allah has created man on Earth for a very definite purpose* and not as a big joke!
2. Try to find out *the specific reasons for which we are on earth and try to achieve those targets before the Nuclear Holocaust overtakes us!*
3. Try to *find out the specific causes which are preventing mankind from coming to peace and goodwill with all*—this is the most important subject. It requires some clarification. We know well from Chapter 20 that Satan or Lucifer (according to the Holy Bible) or Iblis (according to the Quran) has no time nor any desire to misguide us! If anything he sets the example of fierce monotheism—the absolute unadulterated worship of Allah. As such he is certainly not the cause of any of our drawbacks and failures!

#### **F. Who is this other Satan, the Devil?**

Yet many will insist upon and will want us to believe that it is *Satan, the Devil*, who is preventing us from coming to terms with one another and is thwarting us in achieving universal peace and goodwill between man and man.

*Who is this other Satan, the Devil?*—when it is not Iblis or Lucifer! What are the functions of this other Satan and how does he influence us towards evil? Fortunately the Qur'an assists us in our quest to find this other Satan:

“And if anyone withdraws himself from the Dhikir of the Beneficent (as read earlier in Chapter 21: E, 1-4 Dhikir is a special

“Sufi” ritual of prayer in which the organs of the body and not the tongue or mouth recite the name of the Lord. This miraculous performance can be done only through the blessings of a saintly person and under his guidance. Therefore this passage refers to all persons who do not have a Spiritual guide), *We (Allah) assign unto him (i.e. Mankind or each man and woman who does not have a spiritual guide to save him) a devil who becometh the comrade of such persons (i.e. mankind or each and every man and woman).*

*“And lo! they (i.e. the devils assigned to each individual) surely turn them from the way of Allah, and yet (unfortunately) they deem that they are rightly guided;*

“Till when he cometh unto Us (Allah), he saith (unto his Comrade): Ah! would that between me and thee were the distance of the two horizons (*i.e. the distance between East and West or North pole and South pole*)—an evil comrade!” (Qur’an 43: 36-38).

A further clarification is given hereunder from the Quran:

“Say: I seek refuge in the Lord of mankind,

“The King of mankind,

“The God of mankind,

“From the evil suggestions of the evil side in man (the Arabic word “Nas” has been translated above as mankind in verses 1-3 above hence “Khan-nas” means the hidden evil side of man—in the Arabic-English Lexicon by E. W. Lane, he has described it not only as the whispering, withdrawing evil but also as the devil. In both Arabic and Urdu there is an equivalent word “Ham-zat” which refers to the evil self of each person who lives with them or in plain language the evil side of each individual or the desires of the body).

“Who whispers into the breasts (thoughts or hearts) of mankind.

“(Those who give evil suggestions are) from among the Genii and mankind” (Qur’an 114: 1-6).

“And say: O my Sustainer-Protector! I seek refuge in Thee from Hamzat (*i.e. the evil side of man*), the Satan.

“And I seek refuge in Thee! O my Sustainer-Protector! from this presence (*i.e.* Hamzat) being with me” (Qur’an 23: 97-98).

From the above it will be clear that each individual has two aspects within himself. The Bible also confirms man comprises two units—flesh and spirit (St. John 3: 6). They are:

- i. The good qualities which is controlled by “Nafs Lawwama”—the Immortal Soul, which tries to draw us towards our Creator and His Laws.

—and—

- ii. The bad qualities which have their origin in “Nafs Ammara”—the animal spirit (Chapter 17: B-4), which is the other or the hidden or the evil side in each person and has been referred to in numerous passages of the Qur’an as devil or “Satan” or the “evil side of man”.

Since no man wants to show his evil side openly to others, he does his evil deeds as a sly fox, so that nobody may come to know of it, otherwise he may be accused as a bad man. These evils—the other Satan, the Devil—therefore comprise his selfish passions viz:

Pride, Anger, Greed, Jealousy, Revenge, Hatred, Injustice, Lust *etc.*

Therefore this is the Devil or the Satan referred to in the various scriptures, which controls each one of us, who does not have a spiritual Guide to teach us “Jihad” or self-control over our passions as already explained earlier in Chapter 21: C.

Now it becomes clear that the Satan or the Devil, who misguides each one of us is none other than our uncontrolled passions,—our own “Animal instincts” or “Self”. It is therefore total ignorance and lack of knowledge to associate this individual wickedness of our “self,” with “Iblis” or “Lucifer” who is in no way concerned with the evils we commit at the dictates of our selfish passions, pretending such evil deeds to be our right to do so, hence they cannot be bad deeds—indeed how wrong are we in our selfishness!



So it is our uncontrolled passions—our animal self—which is the Satan or Devil that is the real cause of the evil we see all around us. Such evil deeds naturally do not have anything to do with Iblis or Lucifer.

Without illustrations it becomes difficult to realise how very resourceful and deceiving one's "Self" can be!—we must not forget for a moment that it is as much developed as the maximum height of knowledge that each individual reaches at any given point of time. So it is as clever as each of us are at any particular stage of our lives. This "Nafs Ammara" or the animal instinct being purely materialistic in its outlook and conception can very easily overcome and defeat our spiritual or good side by pointing to the materialistic gains it can achieve as against the spiritual gains such as Heaven which nobody can claim to have seen or touched or lived in or experimented upon, hence it contends that it is only in the imagination of men. Whilst evil gives definite materialistic gain or profit in each step as we go along, as such it is much more attractive and contends: "Who knows what is going to happen after death?" Here are a couple of examples from the lives of a very learned man and a great spiritual leader:

Imam Fakhruddin Raazi, a very learned scholar on Islamic law, after many years of research had compiled 360 arguments proving Allah is one and alone. His "Nafs Ammara" or the devil attached to him started giving counter suggestions at the time of his death in his mind breaking up systematically one by one each of these 360 arguments of life-long efforts and studies on the basis of the knowledge acquired through these years of research. So much so that about 355 arguments were effectively countered by this devil attached to him—his "Nafs Ammara"!

Since Ibils is a confirmed believer in the absolute Oneness of Allah, so it was not he who tempted Imam Raazi to destroy his faith in Allah. Then who was this Satan or devil?

When Imam Fakhruddin Raazi was in this state of perplexity he received a telepathic message from his spiritual guide Mohiuddin

Akbar Al-Arabi from Damascus who through his spiritual powers had been carefully watching all that was happening to his disciple at Herat in Afghanistan. Imam Raazi died in 606 A. H. at Herat. The telepathic message was:

“Say: Without any question or any arguments or any evidence I believe in the absolute Oneness of Allah, the Alone”.

Thus was Imam Raazi saved from this devil or Satan—the materialistic side of his hidden self at the very last moments of his life. This brings home that our individual knowledge and achievements are not enough to spot the evil in each one of us and that we very definitely require a spiritual guide to find out our drawbacks and weaknesses and to teach us how to control it by serious training and efforts—Jehad (Chapter 21: C). Man is and will always remain blind to his own drawback's, faults and weaknesses *i.e.* the Satan in him!

One day His Holiness Shaikh Mohiuddin Syed Abdul Qadir Jilani, the Imam-ul-Aulia stated that he was challenged by what appeared as a shining cloud of light, which said: “I am Allah—you have reached such a perfect stage of piety that you are not required any longer to perform your prayers”. Instantly his “Nafs Lawwama” flashed the protecting warning: “When the Holy Prophet did not get such an exemption from the performance of five times daily prayers, then who are you to be given such a facility, surely it is Satan, who is trying to misguide you”. Thereupon Syed Abdul Qadir Jilani retorted:

“There is no other power besides that of Allah. I seek refuge in Allah from the accursed Satan”. The temptation vanished immediately it was declared to be the Satan!

Iblis is praying continuously day and night to the Almighty, so the question of his requesting anybody else not to pray does not even arise! Then who was this devil or Satan when it was not Iblis? Surely it was none other than the Satan who is attached to each person—his “Nafs Ammara” or “animal instincts” which become equally powerful and resourceful as the stage to which each person perfects himself. So it is

no wonder that it could project a “lighted cloud as Allah” especially when it is realised that Syed Abdul Qadir Jilani, the Imam-ul-Aulia, was performing many miracles daily (Chapter 17: F-2).

Do these examples not show how very powerful and deceptive can be our “Nafs Ammara” or “Khan-nas”, the devil attached to us *i.e.* our own hidden or darker self—our animal instincts! No wonder the U.N.O. cannot achieve the desired universal peace, because of the deception being played upon us by our Nafs Ammara or Animal Spirit which leads us to believe that the suggestions our representatives are discussing are for our good and materialistic benefit, but it does not realise that nothing real or substantial can ever be achieved on a permanent long-term basis unless and until we give up materialism and humbly surrender ourselves to the will of Allah and agree to abide by His wishes and control our passions under the guidance and training of a Spiritual Guide as read under Jihad (Chapter 21: C). If we can achieve this laudable target then everyone would be thinking in exactly the very same way about all things for the universal good of all—gone would be the days of strife and wars!—Is it not a target worth thinking about and trying to achieve?

1. Not force our wishes or opinions of either *Capitalism or Communism* or any other “isms” upon others who are not willing for it but to adopt a really democratic way of life in consultation and cooperation with the wishes of the weaker for the common good of all.
2. Dedicate our time and energies for the upliftment of the down-trodden humanity—The under-developed countries.
3. Try to save the many millions who live on starvation diets in the Under-developed countries!
4. Meditate upon how world peace, happiness and freedom from fear and freedom from want can be achieved in a world full of tension, fear of nuclear destruction and suppression of the

rights of the weaker nations.

5. Be convinced that the development of the more and more fearful modern scientific Nuclear Weapons cannot act as a deterrent and bring about universal peace and happiness.
6. The Qur'an advises:

"Lo! those who believe (in this scripture *i.e.* Muslims), and those who are Jews and the Nazarenes (*i.e.* the followers of Jesus of Nazareth) and Sabaeans (*i.e.* anybody else)—whoever believeth in Allah (as the one and only God) and the Last Day and doeth right (good deeds)—surely their reward is with their Lord, and no fear shall come upon them, neither shall they grieve (either on earth or in the hereafter)" (Qur'an 2: 62).

"...This day those who disbelieve are in despair of (ever harming) your religion; so fear them not, instead fear Me (Allah)! This day I (Allah) have perfected your religion for you (O Muhammad!) and completed My favour through you, and have chosen for you as religion—AL ISLAM ..." (Qur'an 5: 3).

"And they who disbelieve and deny Our (Allah's) revelations such are the rightful owners of hell (on this earth and the hereafter—the punishment for Satan, the Devil).

### **G. Has Allah ever saved any from the might of the Human Devil?**

"O ye who believe! Remember Allah's favours unto you, how a people were minded to stretch out their hands against you (when you were in a helpless condition, unable to defend yourselves, yet He saved you!); so keep your duty towards Allah. In Allah let believers put their trust" (Qur'an 5: II).

"...And whosoever keepeth his Duty to Allah, Allah will appoint a way out for him.

"And will provide for him from (a quarter) whence he hath no expectation. And whosoever putteth his trust in Allah, He will suffice him. Lo! Allah bringeth His command to pass. Allah hath set a measure for all things" (Qur'an 65: 2-3).

From the above it would appear to the incredulous people of today that the Qur'an is advising that "Surrender to the will of Allah" is quite sufficient to protect them against the scientific might of the nuclear armed governments of today! Has such a thing ever happened in the past? Can any convincing proofs be adduced? Well—here are a few out of the hundreds of miraculous examples that could be quoted of protection from the Human Devil:

- a) We have already read earlier in Chapter 4: C that shortly after the present human race started on earth through the creation of Adam by Allah, that two angels petitioned the Almighty to come on earth and educate mankind to the right path. This happened during the time of Prophet Enoch (*i.e.* between 3096 B.C. when Adam died and 3039 B.C.). These angels taught many scientific things to mankind in a period of about 40/45 years before they were punished for drinking wine, idolatry (under this caption also comes such things as relying upon anything other than God for your protection against "Nuclear" attacks *e.g.* Nuclear defence umbrella and interception systems), free adultery (calling it emancipation and freedom of women) *etc.* The result was that a very scientifically advanced civilisation sprang up before the Great Deluge, just as we have this day. The amount of technical knowledge they possessed can easily be gauged by the happenings described about the famous battle of "*Mahabharata*" in the old Sanskrit books of India. Just to mention a few items here will suffice:
  - i. In this war there was an aerial attack by some kind of mechanical flying contraptions (Aeroplanes?).
  - ii. The scientists of old had discovered the art of making destructive instruments of war derived out of the knowledge of splitting an "Atom".
  - iii. These "Atom Splitting Contraptions" were thrown by aircraft in this war. These weapons of war used to burst

into flaming holocaust destroying vast areas (Atom or Nuclear Devices?).

- iv. These weapons had radioactive effect upon people of the area who gave birth to freaks and deformed children. Some of them even had four hands instead of two, or four legs instead of two *etc.* Images of these strange creations of that period because of their peculiarities are even till this day worshipped in India as “Gods” and “Goddesses” each with four hands and four legs! This will give one an idea of the stage of scientific achievement they had reached in those bygone days!

This olden civilisation took to evil ways in much the same manner as the two “Fallen” angels did (Chapter 4: C). The most famous of the “Pre-Deluge” scientifically advanced people have been referred to on page 64, Vol. I, *The Reader’s Digest Great Encyclopaedic Dictionary*, first edition, published 1964 as follows:

“**Atlantis**, A fabled island in the ocean west. of the Pillars of Hercules; was beautiful and prosperous, the seat of an empire which dominated a part of Europe and Africa, but was overwhelmed by the sea because of impiety of its inhabitants.”

It will thus be clear that the wonderful, scientifically advanced civilisation of *Atlantis* could not protect itself against the actions of Allah, Who caused their civilisation to sink under the water—The Great Deluge which destroyed everything on the face of the earth!

They already had such knowledge as we have again just discovered *viz:* flying into space and Nuclear weapons of war! If they can be wiped out by the Almighty in a sudden world-wide catastrophe in which their scientific nuclear weapons proved to be of no avail so can we be destroyed if we commit the same mistakes and/or crimes of not paying heed to Allah and refusing to lead our lives in the manner in which He wants us to do.

With this background before us, one can appreciate much better the ridicule, the contempt, and the disbelief that were heaped upon Noah and his family. It was just one family warning the people of the earth equipped with nuclear arms and scientific might to desist from their evil ways and surrender to the will of God. But the disbelieving people of the earth did not pay any heed just as the people of today, who are also not paying any heed to the threats of annihilation of mankind on earth! But what happened? The Great Deluge—miraculously all over the earth at the same time in one single catastrophe drowned the entire surface of the earth which sank below the rushing liquids, comprising sea water, lava, rain, fresh water from springs, mud, clay and what not (Chapter 17: B, 1-2). Some places never to rise again whilst others as a new virgin land each with a new coating of earth, lava, mud or clay! Only those in *Noah's Ark* were *miraculously* saved through all this turmoil even though they did not possess a single scientific nuclear equipment for their defence and protection—No Nuclear Umbrellas or intercepting devices—just nothing at all! *But they had Allah—Who only is sufficient as Protector*—So they were saved! As such we must obey Allah as warned in the Qur'an instead of placing our faith upon the "Nuclear" Bombs created out of our selfish desires—the other Satan—to gain control of the world!

- b) The unarmed Abraham was pitted against the Mighty Powerful King Nimrod—the Satan in human form (Chapter 6)—what happened?—Abraham broke the idols of the blessed virgin mother of God with the blessed child and escaped miraculously unhurt from the huge fire into which Nimrod in accordance with the call of his passions—the Devil—had thrown Abraham (Chapter 6: F). Then he *miraculously*, even without fielding a single soldier, destroyed within a few minutes the huge army of Nimrod, the Mighty Hunter in rebellion against Allah (Chapter 6: I). Thereafter Abraham was instrumental, after a series of *miraculous* incidents, in the violent death of Nimrod—the sacrifice by which he became the

Saviour of his followers the sinners (Chapter 6: J)! Allah's decrees showed how futile and useless were all the advancement and scientific knowledge of Nimrod, the Devil in human form, the originator on this earth of the religion of "The only begotten son of god born of the Virgin Queen of the Heavens—the god incarnate come on earth to save his Baptised sinners by the sacrifice of his life to a violent death against the forces of darkness or Abraham, the friend of Allah—the one who would sit on the right hand of god on the day of Judgment and dispense justice by condemning the doers of good deeds into hell yet rescuing the Baptised sinners!

- c) How Lot and his two daughters were saved from the wicked satanic intentions of the people of Sodom and Gomorrah, who were destroyed in the miraculous disaster creating the Dead Sea out of nothing which our science cannot logically explain! (Chapter 7: D).
- d) How Moses safely escaped with the unarmed Israelites from the clutches of the powerful Pharaoh, the Human Devil, after ten miraculous calamities upon the Egyptians ending in the *miraculous* drowning of the entire Egyptian army including the Pharaoh himself (Exodus, Chapters 7 to 14). This is an incident which science is even unable to fathom!
- e) How unarmed Jerusalem was miraculously saved, even without a fight, from the armed brute force of the might of Sennacherib, King of Assyria, the slave of his passions, when his entire army of 185,000 men *miraculously* died in one night—the night before the attack, whilst asleep (Chapter 2: I)! Here again science finds itself helpless to explain how it could have happened that 185,000 healthy people suddenly died without any logical reason!
- f) How the unarmed shepherd boy David, single-handed, without any arms but with merely a sling and a few pebbles



*miraculously* killed and slew the mighty Giant Goliath, the slave to his passion—the Devil in human form, and defeated the powerful Philistine Army! (1 Samuel 17: 32-51). Science miserably fails to provide an explanation as to how an unarmed boy can defeat and destroy the armed might of the Philistines! One against thousands!

- g) How the Kaabah was miraculously saved after the Meccans had fled away in the face of the might of the Yemeni Army bent upon satanic mischief! (Chapter 8: G). Science is dumbfounded by the same.
- h) How Abdulla, the father of Prophet Muhammad miraculously escaped from the band of 90 armed Jewish murderers—The Devils! (Chapter 17: D-3). This is also beyond the scope of science.
- i) How baby Muhammad *miraculously* escaped the satanic idolaters' attempt to murder him! (Chapter 17: D-19). Science has to admit its inability even to understand such incidents.
- j) How unarmed Muhammad was miraculously saved from the band of 40 Devilish Meccan murderers! (Chapter 17: E-14). Science has to admit its defeat and weakness in such matters.
- k) Another vivid example from the Holy Bible is as to what two communities living in the same city experienced:
  - i. The Jews had taken to the worship of Baal *i.e.* the Sacred Heart, the Only Begotten son of god, born of the Virgin Queen of the Heavens who had come on earth to sacrifice his life to save sinners (*i.e.* the religion of Nimrod of Babylon).

—and—

- ii. The Rechabites, who were obedient to Allah and followed His orders (Jeremiah 35: 18-19).

When Jerusalem was burnt and razed to the ground by Babylon in 607 B. C. the Jews were killed mercilessly and/or carried off as slaves to Babylon.

But the Rechabites who were also at Jerusalem did not suffer any loss whatsoever! They *miraculously* escaped!

Further, the Jews were following the very same religion as that of their attackers from Babylon—yet it did not save them! Therefore the same religion is no safe-guard!

World history shows that those who have followed the same religions have often been attacked by their co-religionists. The same religion has not been a guarantee of brotherhood, love and peace between people who have forsaken the true religion of “Surrender to the will of Allah” instead of following their own selfish desires in mankind—The other Satan, the Devil.

Surely all these miraculous incidents, far beyond the powers of human knowledge, show that there is an Allah, Who is saving those who have surrendered to Him in *miraculous* and *unpredictable ways* against the satanic scientific might of worldly peoples—*thus repeatedly bringing the efforts of scientific knowledge to naught!* Science cannot show a single incident in which it has been able to overcome or even withstand or even escape a single calamity brought about by Allah! Its satanic powers controlled by human selfish intelligence are indeed very weak and helpless in front of Allah, Who is All Powerful and does whatever He pleases with no one to challenge or question His Authority!

If we want our safety from the coming Satanic Nuclear Holocaust leading upto the Battle of Armageddon then must we not also “Surrender” ourselves to His Will?—*To live according to His wishes and in the manner He wants mankind to live!* When science and human might and our intelligence have miserably failed on each and every occasion in the past is it not the height of folly to place our blind trust in something which has always been a failure?

## **H. How mankind can become one community**

Racial tensions all over the world and particularly in South Africa, Rhodesia, the Portuguese colonies in Africa, the U. S. A. and West Asia between Israel and the Arabs are all dangers which cannot brook any delay for a peaceful solution. Here is an article which appeared on page 9 of *"The Statesman"*, Calcutta, dated 9th July, 1968:

*"White man is not yet human, says Barbara Ward"*

“UPPSALA (Sweden), July 8—A march from Stockholm to the world council of Churches Assembly here by young Christians, who called for “action—not words”, took place in pouring rain yesterday, reports, Reuter.

“A teach-in followed on the theme “the Third World and development”, at which the British Economist, Dr. Barbara Ward declared that “the white man is not yet human”.

“Earlier, a small group of Uppsala University students carrying placards which read ‘freedom in Greece’ and ‘hundreds killed—what is the Church doing about it?’ Stood outside the cathedral as the Greek orthodox delegates left the official communion service.

“Lord Caradom, Britain’s permanent representative at the U. N. told the plenary session last night that the new world of the last 25 years had created a confusion that bred a barren, naked and unhealthy isolation, opening a gulf that was now most difficult to bridge.”

These are the dangers created by the Capitalist pattern of Society. As against that, the Russian Communist policies do not seem to find favour with their comrades in China, who have more or less broken away even though they are following the same communist ideology. Therefore the same ideology is no guarantee of peace between followers of the same schools of thoughts. Why is it thus?

These are the two extremes, the two patterns’ of Societies which are threatening to engulf the world of today with catastrophe. They are

involved directly with each other in Indo-China, Korea, and Germany *etc.* Both are afraid of the extremist policies of the other. The only middle course which can be acceptable to both is “Islam”, the religion which protects not only the interests of the poor, the masses of labourers and agriculturists but also curbs and controls the lust of the Capitalists. It is a social pattern of society which gives equality of opportunity to all irrespective of caste, colour, society or education. It is simple, logical and easy to life upto. It is fair to all mankind and builds Universal brotherhood. It does not recognise the artificial barriers of nationality. It treats mankind as one nation, all of us being the children of Adam and Eve, through the three sons of Noah who were saved from the Deluge and who are respectively the origin of the three basic races of man *i.e.* the white, yellow and dark-coloured peoples on earth (Chapter 4: D and 8: F).

Here is an illustrative divine verse:

“Mankind were but one community; then they (Nimrodists) differed (from Noah), and had it not been for a word that had already gone forth from thy Lord (at the Tower of Babel) it had been judged between them in respect of that wherein they differ” (Qur’an 10: 20).

If world unity is our sacred objective, then let us all realise most emphatically that mankind was once a single community, spoke one language and lived as one united people.

“And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one, and they have one language; and this they begin to do: and Now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do” (Genesis 11:6).

This Biblical quotation informs that as long as the people were united in one community, they were able to make fantastic achievements in extremely short periods. Good examples being Mahabharata and Atlantis about which we have read hereabove not to forget Nimrod and his performances (Chapter 5). It has taken us over four millenia (4,000 years) to rediscover Nuclear weapons and space

flights, but we have not yet found out how to repeat many of Nimrod's achievements!

Our downfall came about due to the Curse of Allah upon mankind at the "Tower of Babel". We went to sleep speaking one language. Got up the next morning speaking different languages (Genesis 11: 7). This caused us to scatter all over the earth (Genesis 11: 8). This curse is still haunting us with disunity and strife. How can we overcome the same?

### **I. How can we become one united brotherhood?**

The only way in which we can avoid differences between man and man lies in the surrender of oneself to the Will and purpose of our Creator, Allah. A splendid example of this is enacted every year for the world to realise the significance. This occurs on the occasion of Haj Pilgrimage at Mecca (Chapter 7: H and I). Here then is a solution for world peace for those who think. This Universal Brotherhood of mankind was not only preached for the first time by Muhammad, but it was he, who also put it into practice 1,400 years ago as read in Chapter 15: K, 1-5 and which is still continuing unaffected by today's conditions!

In the fallen conditions in which mankind is today, it will require spiritualists and selfless people to uplift them. Such people would have to be the "Sufi" types—*i.e.* those who by means of "Jihad" (Chapter 21: C) have attained self-control over their passions or the Satan attached to each person and have thus been fortunate in attaining the vision of Allah in their soul and losing themselves in "*Him*", and who have naturally got powers to obtain the forgiveness of hundreds of thousands of sins of those who follow them. Such pious people still exist all over the world. *But the masses instead of respecting them and heeding their advice usually mock them by calling them "demented"!* Just as the Pre-deluge people treated Noah and his family!

If the educated masses, especially of the European Group of nations, were to come in contact with just a few such sufis, and learn from them "Jihad" as to how to control their passions—the Satan, the

Devil attached to each one of us, the world would become quite a different place to live in. Instead of the cold war that is going on between nation and nation, it would give place to love and brotherhood if they would or could come under the influence of just a few such “selfless” souls who are interested in the upliftment of mankind, without any desires for a reward or a consideration, save and except the pure love of Allah. Here then lies one of the solutions for averting the terrible disasters of the feared Third World War, which is otherwise inevitable, unless some kind of miracle takes place to change the hearts of men. Therefore here is some food for thought for the intellectuals of the progressive nations of today.

The last of the Divine Books gives repeated warnings to mankind. Here is just one of them:

“Those who reject Our (Allah’s) revelations are deaf and dumb—in the midst of darkness profound (such is the condition of those who refuse to follow Allah’s guidance), Allah does not care to guide them but He leaves (them) to wander (groping in the darkness in their efforts to find their own solution to the threat of destruction which is facing them). He wills (for those who are anxious to follow Allah’s teachings) that He places them on the (right) straight path (Qur’an 6: 39).

This divine verse explains very vividly why man in spite of his vast scientific knowledge has been unable to find the way to universal world peace, happiness and plenty!

It also explains why the U.N.O. is not achieving its object of universal peace in spite of almost all the Governments of the world being its members.

Yet there is a group of people of all colours and hues from all over the world who are setting the example of how universal peace is being achieved by them for a period of several months each year for the past 1,400 years—*i.e.* because they have surrendered themselves to the Will of Allah as read in Chapter 7: H and I!

Will not the rest of the people contemplate on this example for their Safety? Will not the educated masses realise where all their scientific discoveries are leading them to—*The Nuclear Holocaust?* (Chapter 2). *Will they not stop groping in the Dark?*

You have laughed God out of your schools and educational systems; out of your homes, and out of your life; *but you cannot laugh HIM out of your death!*

*It indeed takes a lot of knowledge to understand how little we know!*









PART 5

BIBLICAL FORETELLINGS  
ON NUCLEAR DESTRUCTION!  
COMMUNIST DOMINATION AND  
THE GREAT BATTLE BY SAINTS—  
AN ERA OF UNIVERSAL PEACE, WHEN  
WARS WOULD BECOME THINGS OF THE  
PAST AND WEAPONS OF WAR DESTROYED!  
“THY WILL BE DONE ON EARTH  
AS IT IS IN HEAVEN”.





## Chapter 23

# We are now in the Transition Period to the New Era—say Biblical Researchers



Hereunder are given a few items from “*Awake!*” London dated 8th October, 1968 chronicling the findings of eminent European Researchers with regard to Biblical Foretellings:

### **A. Is the Year 1914 the Commencement of the transition period to the New Era?**

On page 5 of *ibid* the following passage appears:

1914—“*Last Days*” *Begin*.

“The year 1914 was not an ordinary year. According to God’s timetable, that year really ushered in what the Bible calls the “last days” for this system of things—2 Tim. 3: 1.”

Now let us study a few of the statements of historians, statesmen and editorialists showing the significance of 1914 as an outstanding time-marker, a turning point for mankind:

“The last completely ‘normal’ year in history was 1913, the year before World War I began” (*Times Herald*, Washington D. C., 13th March 1949).

“Security and quiet have disappeared from the lives of men since 1914 and peace! Since 1914, the Germans have not known real peace nor has much of mankind” (Konrad Adenauer, Chancellor, West Germany, 20th January 1954).

"In the year 1914 the world, as it was known and accepted then, came to an end. Far more than any year before or since was this the punctuation-mark of the twentieth century" ("1914" by James Cameron).

"If ... the human race survives, some historian in the next century may well conclude that the day the world went mad was August 4, 1914" (*Star*, London 4th August 1960).

"The first (World) war marked a far greater change in history. It closed a long era of general peace and began a new age of violence in which the second (world) war is simply an episode. Since 1914 the world had a new character; a character of international anarchy ... Thus the First World War marks a turning point in modern history" (H. R. Trevor-Roper, British historian, 1st August, 1954).

"It is indeed the year 1914 rather than that of Hiroshima which marks the turning point in our time, ... it was the first world war that ushered in the era of confused transition in the midst of which we are floundering" (*Scientific Monthly*, July 1951).

"The world as man knew it ... was forever ending, and from July 28 to August 4, 1914, the leaders and the led joined in pronouncing the death sentence ... World War 1, was the end of the Golden Age, the beginning of Total War" (Hanson W. Baldwin, American Military analyst, 26th July, 1964).

"If ever there was a year that marked the end of an era and the beginning of another it was 1914. That year brought to an end the old world with its sense of security and began the modern age, characteristic of which is the insecurity that is our daily portion" (A. L Rowse, Oxford historian and biographer, 28th June, 1959).

"A deterioration has been going on since the first World War" (Dwight D. Eisenhower, former president of the United States, 13th September, 1965).

"Since 1914, civilization has constantly deteriorated. Nowadays it is on the verge of collapse" (*Newark News*, 20th, November 1960).

"We seem to leap from incident to incident. Suddenly there is a new emergency and men die. Since 1914, great empires have collapsed

and nations hardly known then are now world problems ... We have tried war, appeasement, charity, diplomacy, the League of Nations, the United Nations. These efforts have failed ... Obviously something happened (in 1914) which altered the course of ... life. That alteration has not been for the better” (*Journal-American*, New York, 24th January, 1952).

On page 179 of “*Babylon the Great Has Fallen!*” by Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society (1963) we are informed:

“Accordingly, a symbolic or prophetic ‘time’ would Scripturally equal three hundred and sixty (360) years. If, now, three and a half symbolic ‘times’ (Daniel 12: 7) amounted to ..., 1,260 years, then twice three and a half times (or seven) symbolic ‘times’ would be twice 1,260 years, that is to say, 2,520 years. Thus the ‘seven times’ that are mentioned in Daniel 4: 16, 23, 25, 32 ... would stand for two thousand five hundred and twenty literal years”.

On page 309 of “*Your Will Be Done on Earth*” by Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society (1958):

“This marked time began in the year 1914 (A.D.). In that important year the ‘appointed times of the nations,’ 2,520 years long, ran out. If we measure back that many years from 1914 we come the ancient date of 607 B.C.”

The year 607 B.C. is the date when Jerusalem was burnt and destroyed completely by the Babylonian Government.

From the above also it will be clear that even in the Bible there is a remarkable prophecy concerning the number of years that Allah would allow nations following the religion of Babylon or Nimrodism to rule over the earth. This period began in 607 B.C. when Jerusalem was effaced and ended in 1914, which heralds the transition period to the “New Era”.

## **B. How do we know we are in the last days of our present systems?**

How can we be sure that we are living in that period of time, which is known as the “last days”? Apart from chronology, what definite proof is there that this era began in the year 1914? How long a time is covered by it? When will it end?

The phrase “last days” comes from Biblical prophecy such as the one recorded at 2 Timothy 3:1:

“This know also, that in the last days perilous times (hard to deal with) shall come”. It is the same time period that Jesus referred to when his disciples asked him:

“... came to him (Jesus) privately, saying, Tell us when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming and the end of the world ?” (St. Matthew 24: 3).

Jesus replied after giving the details as follows:

“Verily I (Jesus) say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled” (St. Matthew 24: 34).

This time period has a definite beginning and a definite end. It is similar to the last day of any week, which has a specific beginning at midnight and a specific end twenty-four hours later. *During the time period of the “Last Days”, certain events would take place, after which God would bring the period to an end by crushing out of existence this present wicked world.*

The events that Holy Jesus brings to our attention, were all to take place within the same generation as quoted above from St. Matthew 24: 34. These events would identify which generation’s lifetime would embrace the “last days”, as much as your fingerprint identifies you. Your fingerprint contains a pattern of marks, or lines, totally different from what any other person has. Likewise the “last days” contain their own pattern of marks, or events, that come together at a time to form a specific “fingerprint” that cannot possibly belong to any other generation.

Remember, however, that it is not just one of these events by itself that is crucial, although each may be highly significant. *All of them must come together in the same generation like the multifarious lines that come together on one of your fingers to form your fingerprint.*

Before describing these events of identification, Jesus cautioned:

“And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled; for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet” (St. Matthew 24: 6).

True to his words, such things did happen for centuries after the time when Jesus was on earth.

Then, Jesus began listing the world-shaking events that would constitute a “sign” marking the beginning and duration of the “last days,” “and what shall be the sign of thy coming (back to earth in bodily form as promised in Acts 1: 11)” (St. Matthew 24: 3). Let us now examine some of these events foretold in the Bible that make up this sign. Observe how they are being fulfilled one by one since 1914!

### **C. The signs of the “Last Days of our Present Civilisation”**

#### **1. ‘Nation shall rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom’ (St. Matthew 24: 7)**

“(World War I) killed more men than any previous war, and it was the first war to suck in whole nations, including civilians” (*Life*, 13th March, 1964).

“In its scope, its violence, and above all, in its totality, it established a precedent. World War I ushered in the Century of Total War, or—in the first full sense of the term—global war ... Never before 1914-1918 had a war absorbed so much of the total resources of so many combatants and covered so large a part of the earth. Never had so many nations been involved. Never had the slaughter been so comprehensive and indiscriminate” (*World War I*, by Hanson W. Baldwin, 1962).

“Two World Wars have left a legacy of dead which number more than all the armies engaged in any war that made ancient or medieval history. No half-century ever witnessed slaughter on such a scale, such cruelties and inhumanities, such wholesale deportations of peoples into slavery, such annihilations of minorities” (Mr. Justice Jackson of Nuremberg trial of Nazi War criminals, in *Tyranny On Trial*, by Whitney R. Harris, 1954).

## **2. “There shall be famines ... in diverse places” (St. Matthew 24: 7)**

“During and after the 1914-1918 war, famine conditions were widespread in many parts of Europe. Millions died in the Russian famine also” (*Encyclopaedia Britannica* 1946).

“The world food situation is now more precarious than at any time since the period of acute shortage immediately after the Second World War” (B.R. Sen, Director General of United Nations Food and Agriculture Organization, 1966).

“Every 86 seconds someone in an underdeveloped country dies as a result of illness caused by malnutrition ... 10,000 every day. Over 3,500,000 every year” (New York “*Times*”, 29th December, 1967).

“Everyone admits that more than half of the world is undernourished, with many starving” (*Natural History*, May, 1968).

## **3. “There shall be ... pestilences ... in diverse places” (St. Matthew 24: 7)**

“No recorded pestilence before or since has equalled the 1918-1919 death toll in numbers. In those two years an estimated 21,000,000 died of influenza-pneumonia throughout the world, some 50,000 in the United States alone” (*The Saturday Evening Post*, 26th September, 1959).

“The influenza epidemic of 1918 ... was a pandemic (universal in scope), a brutal and savage killer that stalked the world, respecting



neither race nor colour nor age ... In Alaska, entire Eskimo villages were wiped out before help could arrive. In India, where five million persons died, burning ghats and burial grounds were piled with corpses ... Only two places in the world escaped; St. Helena in the South Atlantic and Mauritius, a small island in the Indian Ocean' (*Today's Health*, October, 1967).

"More people are chronically ill for longer periods and with less relief than ever before" (New York "*Post*," 6th December, 1967).

Disease and pestilence continue to rage, millions die each year from cancer and heart trouble; venereal disease is spreading rapidly. Cholera, Typhoid and other epidemics occur in country after country, especially in Asia, Africa and Latin America.

#### **4. "There shall be ... earthquakes in diverse places" (St. Matthew 24: 7)**

"In this century earthquakes have killed more than 900,000 people" (*Changing Times*, May 1968).

Over 30,000 were killed at Avezzano, Italy in 1915 A. D. More than, 180,000 died in Kansu, China in 1920. An estimated 143,000 perished in Tokyo-Yokohama, Japan in 1923. Sixty thousand lost their lives in Quetta, India in 1935. The death toll exceeded 23,000 in Erzincan, Turkey in 1939. In 1950 a gigantic quake, one of the most violent ever, ripped mountains to pieces in Assam, India.

In the 1960 decade alone—1960, 5,700 were killed in Chile, 12,000 in Morocco, 1962, 10,000 died in Iran, 1963, Skoplje, in Yugoslavia, and El Merj, in Libya, were largely destroyed. 1964, Gigantic quake in Alaska unleashed 400 times more energy than all Nuclear bombs ever exploded! 1965, saw devastation in Chile, and El Salvador. 1966, 3,000 were killed in eleven nations; large parts of Tashkent, Russia, destroyed. 1967, Quakes rocked Chile, Colombia, France, Indonesia, Turkey and Venezuela.

### 5. “Iniquity shall abound” (St. Matthew 24: 12)

“A plague of lawlessness and violence ... is now sweeping the globe” (New York “*Times*”, 6th June, 1968).

“Discord and violence now are merging...from one end of the globe to the other” (*U.S. News and World Report*, 10th June, 1968).

“No Filipino is safe in the streets today,... thrill-killing, vandalism, and general mayhem is steadily increasing” (Philippine Islands “*Weekly Graphic*”, 13th May, 1964).

“We can’t have even one day of peaceful life in Seoul because in the evenings the streets become streets of terror” (South Korean, “*Chosun Daily*”, 14th April, 1964).

“Violent crime is now running wild ... a virtual explosion of crime ... Rising disorder, drift to anarchy and mounting lawlessness being loosed on the streets in city after city in a wave of violent crimes—murder, rape, assault.

“Racial violence, accompanied by arson and looting on a huge scale, sweep urban areas as police stand by helplessly” (*U.S. News and World Report*, dated 9th August, 1965 and 17th June 1968).

### 6. “Disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy” (2 Timothy 3: 2)

“There has been a tremendous and disturbing increase in the number of crimes carried out by young people today ... It has occurred in many countries throught the world” (*The Psychology of Crime*, by David Abrahamsen, 1960).

“Almost everywhere, including Soviet Russia, there appears to be an increase in crime, and particularly, alas, in juvenile crimes” (*U.S. News and World Report*, 1st Nov. 1965).

“The ‘teenage culture’.. is a rebellious, oppositional society, dedicated to the preposition that the grown up world is a sham” (*The Challenge of Crime in a Free Society*, 1967).

## **7. “Lovers of their own selves, covetous” (2 Timothy 3: 2)**

“Most of us ... love money much more than any of the things it will buy. It is not a means to an end for us, it is a passion” (*The Paper Economy*, by David T. Bazelon, 1963).

“In our investigations we’ve found, as an average, that one out of every three employees is basically dishonest—which means he will seek ways of stealing; that (another) one out of every three employees will be dishonest if given the opportunity” (Toronto Manager of Pinkerton’s Detective Agency, in “*Canadian Weekly*”, 7th-13th September 1963).

## **8. “Lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God” (2 Timothy 3: 4)**

“Our greatest danger is in the decline in religious conviction and moral character,... It’s reached a level that should be a great concern” (Michigan Governor, George Romney in “*Look*”, 24th September 1963).

“Adultery seems to be as widely practiced as it must have been in the orgiastic days before the Flood (of The Great Deluge)” (*Pageant*, August 1957).

“Not only have vast numbers of Americans lost all sense of the sacred, the moral and the ethical, but the spiritual leaders from both the laity and the priesthood are often found in the forefront of this irreligious pursuit of comfort rather than conviction.. of the meaningful life ...

“The criticisms of God rank well above almost all other criticisms of the hour. More people—in more ways and on more occasions—cast doubt, hurl darts, and throw charges against God such as this country has never seen in all of its history” (United States Senator, Frank Carlson, 19th June, 1968).

“We are not living in ordinary times ... The morals with which we

have grown up are being cast aside ... God has been dethroned; sex has been deified” (Courier-Mail, 15th June, 1964 issued in Brisbane, Australia).

### **9. “Having a form of Godliness but denying the power thereof” (2 Timothy 3: 5)**

“The church has rarely been poorer spiritually than it is today as unlike the apostolic church of the first century, of the Bible concept of the church of Christ, as is possible to find,... A cursory reading of the New Testament would show that...we strain at gnats and swallow camels” (Two clergymen in Toronto’s “*Star Weekly*”, 28th March, 1964).

“The majority of our people are members of the Church, but are really unbelievers ... The spark of faith perhaps still alive in them has been smothered by their association with the Church”—(Lutheran Church booklet *Mit Einander Fur Einander Beten* i.e. “*Praying with One Another and for One Another*”, Germany, 1963).

“The church mouths its pious phrases...but it lulls its people to sleep” People are leaving the churches “because they are looking at the lives of the church as we are living it and they are seeing how phoney it is” (Professor of Religious education, in *The Christian Index*, 14th December 1967).

### **10. “Them which destroy the Earth” (Revelation 11:18)**

“We are rapidly destroying our planet as a habitat for man” (*Natural History*, May 1968).

“This planet is approaching ‘a crisis which may destroy its suitability as a place for human society’ ...

“Man and his works are disrupting the numerous complex and interrelated processes upon which this planet’s web of life depends. Thus earth’s supply of available oxygen is being depleted ... Large bodies of water are steadily being fouled ... the precarious balance of

nature is being disturbed on a scale without precedent” (*N.Y. Times*, 1st January 1968).

## **11. Peace—A sign of Coming Destruction!**

The most difficult of the signs of coming Destruction given in the Holy Bible which is required to complete the list of events leading to the “Battle of Armageddon” is the false and belying feeling of international “*Peace and security*” that will suddenly come about immediately before the disaster—The calm before the storm!

After all the devastating wars we have seen since 1914, and all these even without our terrible *Atomic and Nuclear* weapons does make mankind very anxious for some kind of a durable peace for our safety from total annihilation by our own destructive creations—the Nuclear weapons. It is this instinct of man which will lure many of us into complacency as soon as we can arrive at even some make-shift agreements for peace because of our fear of the destructive—“H-Bombs”. But in reality such a peace will make us more vulnerable to any sudden Nuclear attack as most of us would be totally unprepared for it and also it will come at a time when we would be least expecting it,—the warning from the Holy Bible:

“Verily I (Jesus) say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled.

“But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no not (even) the angels of heaven, but my (Heavenly Divine) Father only” (St. Matthew 24: 34 and 36).

Now in this context let us review the latest position. President Nixon after his talks with China, U.S.S.R. and the Peace Treaty of Viet Nam had very confidently declared:

“We are on the eve of what could be the greatest generation of Peace—true peace—mankind has ever known”.

But the Holy Bible gives us the following warning:

“For when they say, *Peace and safety*; then *sudden destruction cometh upon them*, as travail upon a woman with child; *and they shall not escape*” (1 Thessalonians 5: 3).

From this it would be clear that the Peace we are now going to have in the coming years will be a deceptive peace and the prelude to the coming destruction.

For example the “*Soviet Military Strategy*” published in September 1962 contends:

“The Soviet Union must and will launch an all-out nuclear attack on the United States once it has nuclear superiority”!

Is this contention of the U.S.S.R. something merely on paper or is it a real danger to a large section of mankind—atleast to those living in U.S.A.?

Let us for a moment compare the recent activities of these super powers and see what they indicate:

1. The U.S.A. is spending its money and energies in placing men upon the moon!
2. The U.S.S.R. on the other hand are concentrating upon placing sputniks in space, which could be loaded with nuclear warheads. Thus the Russians can force any nation in any part of the earth to surrender or even without any warning these nuclear weapons could be detonated over the heads of any nation during the night especially there beings 12 hours difference in time between Central U.S.S.R. and American timings—so during daylight hours in U.S.S.R. on one hand whilst all America would be sleeping on the other!

That is why many Biblical scholars say—Now is the time to wake up! It's time that the world be put on notice that without any warning U.S.A. and her allies the European Economic Countries could be the target for sudden unavoidable atomic devastation. Because while there is talk of peace yet these

nations are planning for war.

3. Due to the different policies being followed by these two major powers their scientific progress can be assessed as under:

- a) Dr. Eberhardt Rechtin, scientist at the California Institute of Technology has testified:

“In a sense we are so far behind that the Russian competitor does not even look back to see where we (U.S.A.) are”.

- b) Dr. Edward Teller, nuclear scientist and father of the “H-Bomb” has warned that the news media is not telling the American people the truth about the imminent dangers that they face.

Teller has noted that if Russia attacked the United States and if they responded with a successful counter attack, 97% of the Russian population would survive. But says Teller:

“The majority of the American people will perish because next to nothing is being done about saving lives in the case of attack”.

- c) Dr. Hyman Appleman, noted evangelist, has warned: “Like Israel, America is facing the Philistines, who today are infinitely more dangerous and infinitely more able to destroy than they were of old”. Then Appleman poses the question: “Shall we wait till Intercontinental missiles are raining down death and smashing destruction upon our cities?” Thereafter he provides us with his reply:

“The key to today’s situation is to get right with God”.

- d) The Bible does forecast this possibility, declaring:

“Men’s hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers

of heaven will be shaken” (St. Luke 21: 26).

“And I saw, and behold a white horse: and he that sat on him had a bow (but no arrow)...” (Revelation 6: 2).

The no arrows seems to symbolize peace by disarmament. But immediately, there follows the rider on the red horse of whom we read:

“And there went out another horse that was red: and power was given to him that sat thereon to take (away) peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another (*i.e.* the rider on the red horse and the rider on the white horse): and there was given to him (on the red horse) a great sword” (Revelation 6: 4).

This great sword in the hands of the “Red” horse or “Red” Communist Russia is the giant Soviet 559 Intercontinental missiles displayed in Moscow in 1972 at the anniversary of the Bolshevik Revolution. This also explains why the Soviets are continuing to build missile launching sputniks and submarines as against the foolish wastage of time, money and energy by the U.S.A. in putting men on the moon!

## **12. Man’s vast knowledge will prove useless! (2 Timothy 3: 13)**

An important sign at the time of the Battle of Armageddon will be that man will acquire vast knowledge but it will be quite useless to bring about world peace, prosperity, happiness and success as read earlier—(Chapter 22). The Holy Bible informs:

“Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth” (2 Timothy 3: 7).

## **13. Deceiving and being deceived! (2 Timothy 3: 13)**

Such a situation will develop on a world-wide scale that the condition of people given to evilness will become worse and worse due to many reasons including shortages, spiralling cost of necessities with higher standards of living and thirst for luxuries. These conditions will bring about disillusionment and will lead many to deceive many and be



deceived by many. The Holy Bible states:

“But evil men and seducers shall wax worse deceiving, and being deceived” (2 Timothy 3: 13).

**D. How long will this transition period last?—Any time Between 1974 and 1999 A.D.**

“Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled” (St. Matthew 24: 34).

All these events are to happen in a period of one generation. The generation which started from 1914. When is it likely to end? Many old people live up to 85 years these days, whilst a few even cross the century mark. If 85 years is added to 1914 we come to 1999 A.D. Therefore we must expect the end of our present system by 1999 A.D. The last 25 years will naturally be the worst period with all kinds of calamities. Hence the worst period will be between 1974 and 1999 A.D.—the crucial period of the end of our present system and the prelude to the “New Era”.

Adam was created in the autumn 4,026 years B.C. according to Biblical research (Genesis 2:7). The Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society has announced that the very bad time for the commencement of the end of our present system of civilisation will set in as soon as 6,000 years from the creation of Adam is over. This means 6,000 years minus 4,026 B.C. It gives us the year 1974 A.D. These Jehovah’s Witnesses have arrived at their finding by linking this period of 6,000 years to the six days of God that have passed since the creation of man on earth. Their contention according to the Holy Bible is that this earth with its present human civilisation will last for “Seven days of God’s timing” and each such day represents a period of 1,000 years.

Therefore, they believe, that as soon as the “*seventh day*” which is the “*Sabbath day*” will set in there will be a period of 1,000 years when God’s will shall prevail—*Thy will be done on Earth as it is in Heaven*. This is also the interpretation of most Bible scholars who point out that

Satan will also be imprisoned and bound in chains for this Sabbath period of 1,000 years:

“And I saw an angel come down from the heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand.

“And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,

“And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season” (Revelation 20: 1-3).

Abraham was born in 2181 B.C. (Genesis 11: 26). When he was 16 years old (*i.e.* in 2165 B.C.), he broke the idols in an attempt to destroy Nimrodism. For that reason King Nimrod threw Abraham into the fire during the spring of 2165 B.C. (Chapter 6: F). If the period of 4,000 years is taken from these incidents to mark the end of “Nimrodism” or the cursed religion of Babylon we come to 1999 A.D.—4,000 years minus 2181 B.C.

These two dates of 1974 A.D. for the commencement of the end of the present system and 1999 A.D. as the beginning of the new era free from “Nimrodism” also fit in with the period of one generation from 1914 A.D. as evaluated by Bible scholars.

Now let us compare in the subsequent chapters these findings with the dates actually foretold in the Holy Bible itself. It will be seen that they surprisingly concur!



## Chapter 24

# —The Coming of a Saviour to Establish— “Thy Kingdom Come, Thy Will Be Done On Earth As It Is In Heaven”



The above is an extract from the Lord's Prayer. This popular prayer taught by Jesus is recited daily by millions all over the world. Is this prayer ever to be fulfilled some day on earth? It is at least the universal belief especially amongst the Pagans, Hindus, Jews, Christians and Muslims alike, that a gifted person, a Saviour, would come to establish a universal religion of surrender to the Will of the Creator. Let us now look at some of these ancient foretellings.

### **A. The dream of King Nimrod**

The world knew of this fact at least some 4,000 years back. Those were the days of the first king of mankind (Genesis 10:6-10)—the great-grandson of Noah (Genesis 10:1-8), the mighty hunter in rebellion against Allah (Genesis 10: 9). He was Nimrod the builder of Babylon and its cursed tower temple which broke up the unity of mankind (Genesis 11:1-9) about whom we have already read in greater details (Chapter 5). Nimrod had a dream (Chapter 6: A) by which he knew that a child was to be born in a year's time, who would prove that it is a blasphemy to call anybody “Son of God”, “God incarnate come on earth to save sinners” and “Trinity in Unity”. He would establish permanently that “Allah is one and alone and none others comparable

to Him”. He would establish the necessity of “Surrender to the will of Allah” and those who would not listen would get destroyed eventually with all their might and scientific progress by a divine decree, just as the mighty army of Nimrod was annihilated resulting in his eventual violent death, which took place through the medium of green-coloured flying creatures sent by Allah in His divine way to destroy them (Chapter 6: I and J).

That from this child, whom we know as Prophet Abraham, the friend of Allah, would come several lines of prophets and saints. His followers would be the circumcised people of the earth (Chapter 7: E and F). That all these prophets would teach the same basic religion of the absolute Oneness of Allah who has no equals—neither sons, nor daughters, nor trinity in unity nor god incarnate come on earth to save sinners *etc.* That all of them would preach the necessity of “Surrender to the will of Allah”. That the last of these prophets from Abraham’s descendants would be the greatest of them all. (Chapter 6: A-7). That from the children of this last and greatest prophet would come a saintly child who would annihilate from the face of this earth all religions originating in Nimrodism (Chapter 6: A-8). In this Herculean task he shall have Divine Guidance. In a great battle he would destroy the might of the wicked world. He would guide the whole world into one universal brotherhood of “Surrender to the will of Allah”. Wars will become a thing of the past. Implements of war will be converted into peaceful uses. He would end the curse of Allah which commenced at the Tower of Babel and which is still haunting mankind and preventing them to become one united body, owing to the practice of Nimrodism under various names and garbs (Chapter 6: A-8).

### **B. The foretellings of Jamaseph—The head Magi**

Jamaseph, was one of the head Magis and the leading disciple of Zoroaster (we know from the appendix to the research of the Rev. Alexander Hislop’s “The Two Babylons” Zoroaster was Nimrod hence Jamaseph is one of the head priests of Nimrod). His foretellings are

known as "Jamaseph Nama" or "the recordings of Jamaseph". These tell us:

That when the various planets will be in certain positions a person will be born amongst the Arabs (See Chapter 26: A-5 where according to old Tibetan records Dr. T. Lobsang Rampa has made the same foretellings). He will have a big head, strong physique and long legs. He will be following the religion of his ancestors. Large forces following him (or coming to his assistance) will traverse Iran. Wherever he will establish settlements or cities, such places would become fruitful and prosperous. His justice and guidance will be such that they will not only make mankind live as a single brotherhood irrespective of caste, colour, creed or nationality, but that animals also would be so much influenced that a lion and a lamb shall drink water side by side from the same place. Spiritual knowledge will spread throughout mankind and there would be thousands of saints giving correct spiritual guidance to mankind. The whole world, *like a new bride adoring her husband, will become joyfully a worshipper of Allah, the One and Alone*. Injustice and persecution will be eradicated from the face of the earth. People will destroy their armaments and wars will be forgotten (page 15 of *Imam-us-Zaman Ki Aamad* by Khwaja Hasan Nizami Published in Urdu by Ibne Arabi Ka Rukum, Halka-e-Mashaek, Delhi, January 1927, 4th Edition).

### **C. The knowledge of India**

The coming of a Saintly person who would unite the world into one universal brotherhood is also known to India for the past 3,500 years. This can be gathered from the prehistoric Hindu record known as "*Kalki Purana*" or the old records of tomorrow's happenings.

On pages 5-6 of this ancient sacred Hindu scripture is the description of certain worldwide conditions, *viz*:

People all over the world will be degraded and low in all walks of life and in all spheres of their activities. Children will cause difficulties

for their parents. The masses will not read nor pay heed to the teachings of the religious scriptures. Instead they would often be ready to help the wicked, and lend support to their activities by wrong arguments and quotations. Trade in liquids (*i.e.* liquid gases, mineral and vegetable oils, and liquid medicines, colours, perfumes, strong and soft drinks *etc*) will become popular. The rich and the powerful will be treated with respect, even though they are wrong and wicked. Those dealing in interests will be honoured or sought for (like Bankers, Insurances giving loans and cheap loans from money-lending Governments *etc*). The pious, religious and good people would prefer to stay away from the gaiety of society and rather stay aloof or indoors. Students and disciples will speak, behave, and conduct themselves against their teachers, spiritual guides and educational authorities. Many will try to rob others under the garb of religion such as relief funds, welfare homes, refugee rehabilitation, building of religious places and missionary works *etc*. Love marriages by choice of boy and girl will be in vogue and will replace the system of choice by parents for the good qualities which make marriages a success. The ignorant and inexperienced politicians will make themselves party leaders, and make themselves famous by wrong ideologies and underhand means and thus misguide the masses. Those who are poor and jobless will try to become priests, even though they do not do so for the divine adoration of their Creator. Religious works will become less effective. Liquids from distant places (*e. g.* oils, strong and soft drinks, scents, *etc*) will be respected and sought for. Those who pretend to be saintly will have threads around their necks (like rosaries, crosses, beads *etc*). Anybody walking with a stick in his hand would be regarded as a sage by the ignorant people. Foods will grow less. There will be crop failures. Agriculture will be good only in those areas where (artificial irrigation) water is available.

Clouds will not give rains when required. Ladies from respectable families, whose shadows were even unseen before, would freely mix and talk with strangers (*i.e.* any male person who is not directly or

closely related to her or her husband) and will have less regard for their husbands. Widows will not remain under religious restrictions. Taxes will be exorbitant. These times would be so troublesome that joy and contentment will be gone from the faces of mankind.

On page 1 of this book we are told that when such conditions will prevail for some-time, then a person from the descendants of Prophets will be born in "Shambal Deep" (Professor Max Muller says it means the Arab Countries). The father's name of this child will mean "Servant of the Lord" (in Arabic the name Abdulla" means "Servant of Allah"). The mother's name would be "Shomti" or "Respectable Lady" (in Arabic it would be "Amena"). He will establish the Original Religion as taught by his ancestors. This child will wipe out all governments which are based upon persecution and denial of liberties and freedom of mankind.

He will spread successfully a religion based upon Surrender to the purpose and the will of the Creator throughout the world. He will teach kindness for all including man and beast. Wars will become a thing of the past under his guidance and inspiration.

#### **D. The universal knowledge of the coming of a Saviour**

The different groups of people took with them the teachings and knowledge propagated by King Nimrod, when they were scattered all over the earth owing to the curse of Allah at the Tower-temple of Babel. This information of the coming of a Saintly person at the end of times who would reunite the World and guide it into one brotherhood thus ending the curse of Allah at the "Tower of Babel" was well known not only to the Magi Fire-temple priests of Persia and to the Hindus as shown herebefore but also to the Mongolians, Chinese and other nations.

This was even known to the American Indians, who had lost all contact with our known world for more than 3,500 years and had lived in isolation. This is evident from page 60, Vol. I, of Prescott's "Conquest

of Mexico". When Cortez landed with the Spaniards, the aboriginal Mexicans greeted him as the returning Saviour!





## Chapter 25

# Biblical Foretellings of Coming Events



David L. Cooper, Th., Ph. D., Litt. D., had published a little booklet under the heading of “*The Unfolding of the Ages*”. It gives an interesting Chart showing the coming events according to Biblical prophecies. These Biblical foretellings of coming events are given hereunder serially:

### **A. The first set of clear indications of the coming of the “Tribulation”**

“And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet.

“For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in diverse places.

“All these are the beginning of sorrows” (St. Matthew 24: 6-8).

### **B. At the end of the present system the Jews will occupy Palestine by force of arms.**

“... In the latter years thou (the Jews) shalt come into (possession of) the land (of Israel) that is brought back (under Jewish control) from (by) the sword, and is gathered out of many (Arab) people, against the mountains of Israel, which have been always waste: but it is

brought forth out of the (Arab) nations and they (the Jews) shall dwell safely all of them (in spite of the opposition of the Arab Nations surrounding them)” (Ezekiel 38: 8).

Thus the establishment of Israel at the point of the sword, on the blood of martyred Arabs and their repeated victories over the surrounding Arab nations has been foretold!

### **C. How great will be the destruction?**

“For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no nor ever shall be” (St. Matthew 24: 21).

From this Biblical forecast it is clear that Nuclear Wars commencing with the third world war (See Chapter 2) and ending in the great battle of Armageddon, will be so very devastating that they cannot be compared to any past incidents of destruction.

### **D. Who are the nations following Nimrodism according to Christian researchers, who will be destroyed in this Great War?**

President Rutherford of the Watch Tower Bible Society made the following declaration to 15,000 Bible students in Toronto on Sunday 24th July 1927:

“... With great pomp and glory that unholy system ride upon the backs of peoples. Without the support of the common people that wicked system called ‘Christendom’ could not survive. When peoples withdraw their support therefrom ‘organised Christianity’, which is a part of Babylon or the Devil’s organisation will fall like a great millstone into sea.

“The doom of ‘organised Christianity’ or Babylon is sealed!”

It will thus appear that according to Bible students and the Watch Tower Bible Society, Greater Babylonia comprises the Christian nations of the world and includes Europe, the U.K. and America. The Holy Bible also supports the above conclusions.

“And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory.

“And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon The Great (*i.e.* Greater Babylonia or all countries following Nimrodism) is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.

“For all nations (who follow the religion of Babylon) have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her (*i.e.* the Christian nations who have accepted Nimrodism), and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.

“And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues (This is the Biblical warning to people to leave the U.K., the U.S.A. and Europe which are to be demolished as already foretold in Chapter 2: E to H).

“For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.

“Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled fill to her double.

“How much she hath glorified herself, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she saith in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow (This is a reference to, the false sense of security and independence owing to Nuclear might, the Nuclear Missile interception and destruction umbrella built by the Powerful Nations.).

*“Therefore shall her plagues come in, one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her (This is the Biblical warning of a Nuclear Holocaust which will burn and destroy the powerful*

nations suddenly just as it has happened in history previously” (Revelation 18: 1-8).)”

This warning is also to be found in the old Jewish religious books:

“Gather yourselves together yea, gather together (again a reference to the group of the Nuclear-Rich Powerful Nations), O shameless nation;

“Before the decree bring forth the day when one passeth as the chaff, before the fierce anger of the Lord come upon you, before the day of the Lord’s anger come upon you.

“Seek ye the Lord, all ye humble’ of the earth, that have executed His Ordinance; seek humility. It may be ye shall be hid in the day of the Lord’s anger” (Zephaniah 2: 1-3, from *“Books of the Hebrew Bible”* by the Soncino Press, London & Bournemouth, England).

The only way in which the Powerful Group of Nations can escape this calamity is to give up the religion of Babylon or Christianity and surrender to the Will of Allah as warned earlier (Chapter 2: I).

### **E. How long will this great “Nuclear” war last?**

“And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect’s sake those days shall be shortened” (St. Matthew 24: 22).

The Bible makes it clear that the Nuclear War will last for a very short period for the sake of one saint—the saint saviour—otherwise all things including mankind, animals, and flying creatures would have been wiped out from the face of the earth.

### **F. Who will be the contestants in this dreadful war?**

“Daniel spake and said, I saw in my vision by night, and, behold, the four winds of the heaven strove upon the great sea.

“And four great beasts came up from the sea, diverse one from another.

“The first was like a lion, and had eagle’s wings: I beheld till the wings thereof were plucked, and it was lifted up from the earth, and made stand upon the feet as a man, and a man’s heart was given to it.

‘And behold another beast, a second, like to a bear, and it raised up itself on one side, and it had three ribs in the mouth of it between the teeth of it: and they said thus unto it, Arise, devour much flesh.

“After this I beheld, and lo another, like a leopard, which had upon the back of it four wings of a fowl; the beast had also four heads; and dominion was given to it.

“After this I saw in the night visions, and behold a fourth beast; dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had great iron teeth: it devoured and broke in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of it: and it was diverse from all the beasts that were before it; and it had ten horns” (Daniel 7: 2-7).

**1. The First Beast** was a lion with wings. This undoubtedly refers to the British Lion and her British Empire, whose wings *i.e.* her Empire will be plucked and all that will be left will be the U. K. That is exactly what has happened between 1914 A.D. when this period started and now. It will be given a human heart. This means that the Government of the U.K. will be a Government which will conduct all her acts with human considerations. This is also a fact.

**2. The Second Beast** was like a bear, huge and mighty. This country “has three ribs in its mouth” and “devours much flesh”. The only country which has dropped not one but even two Atom Bombs on mankind *viz.* at Hiroshima and Nagasaki, thus destroying innocent lives indiscriminately is the mighty United States of America. The three ribs in her mouth therefore refer to the three bloody incidents in which America is involved *viz.* the massacre of innocent civilians in Japan, and Vietnam and the Black African American problems in the U.S.A. These hard realities clearly establish that the U.S.A. is the second beast referred to by Prophet Daniel.

**3. The Third Beast** is a leopard with four wings and four heads. A leopard is a very agile animal. Its four heads and four wings represent that it will be a unit comprising eight (four big and four small) Governments, who are so very resilient that they can make quick recoveries from disasters. The only group of Nations in the world who have proved that they are very agile and have made quick recoveries from the devastations of the two world wars are the European Group of eight Nations—The European Common Market representing West Germany, France, Italy, Ireland (the four larger countries followed by the four smaller governments of) Denmark, Belgium, Holland and Luxemburg (but excluding Britain because she is already covered by the first beast. In fact the English people by nature are very conservative and carefully weigh each and every aspect before arriving at a considered decision hence they cannot be considered agile like their other European partners, hence they have been separately mentioned in the Holy Bible as a lion with a human heart—the first beast). Hence the third beast represents the European Economic Community.

Thus the first three beasts represent the U.K., the U.S.A. and the E.E.C. These are the nations, who profess Christianity or the religion of Babylon, which was started by King Nimrod, the mighty hunter in rebellion against God—the cause of the curse of Allah at the tower of Babel, which broke up the unity of mankind and has been responsible for our woes for nearly the past 4,000 years.

**4. The Fourth Beast** is dreadful and exceedingly strong and is different from all the others. Under the Communist system all property belongs to the state and not to individuals. Therefore this system is quite unlike that of all other governments. Hence this reference in the Bible refers evidently to the Mighty Communist Government of the U.S.S.R. or Russia, who are very dreadful in their methods to uphold their principles and they are exceedingly strong because they muster the force of their entire population behind them. Further, the ten horns on the head of this beast indicate that there will be ten smaller governments who will support this mighty power by adopting the

communistic system of government which Originated and spread from the U. S. S. R. These ten smaller communistic governments according to the present indications are:

- |                 |                                 |                     |
|-----------------|---------------------------------|---------------------|
| 1) Poland,      | (2) East Germany,               | (3) Czechoslovakia, |
| (4) Hungary,    | (5) Bulgaria,                   | (6) Rumania,        |
| (7) Jugoslavia, | (8) Albania (in Europe),        |                     |
| (9) Mongolia    | and (10) North Korea (in Asia). |                     |

Thus China alone will remain outside the fold of influence of the U.S.S.R. as will be seen later according to the prophecies of Daniel (Chapter 25: K and L).

In this position the mighty U.S.S.R. can easily simultaneously attack both the E.E.C. on her West and the U.S.A. through Asia on her East as foretold by Shah Neamatullah as far back as 1152 A.D. as read at the very beginning (Chapter 2: H).

The Holy Bible confirms in the very same chapter that these beasts mean Governments and kingdoms:

“I Daniel was grieved in my spirit in the midst of my body, and the visions of my head troubled me.

“I came near unto one of them that stood by, and asked him the truth of all this. So he told me, and made me know the interpretation of the things.

“These great beasts, which are four kings (or kingdoms or groups of states), which shall arise out of the earth” (Daniel 7: 15-17).

It will be clear that these Biblical foretellings refer to none but the two major blocs amongst the European group of countries who possess Nuclear weapons. The Western Bloc comprising the U.K., the U.S.A., and European Countries. The Eastern or Communist Bloc being spearheaded by Russia with her ten satellites.

### G. Who will be victorious out of the four powers?

Daniel has prophesied in the very same chapter as under:

“Then I would know the truth of the fourth beast, which was diverse from all others, exceeding dreadful, whose teeth were of iron (*i.e.* the strength of the Russian Communist Government would be its workers from the factories using equipments made of iron and its peasants using agricultural implements and machinery, also made of iron), and his nails of brass (nails stand for talons which have power to take into their grip, hence this Russian Government will be controlled by their “*top-brass*” or militant intelligentsia who are not prepared to allow any opposition to exist); *which devoured* (the other three powers *i.e.* the U.K., the U.S.A. and the European Economic Communities in a very heartless and cruel way) break them in pieces (in a Nuclear Holocaust) and *stamped the residue with his feet* (so as not to leave any chance for the revival of these nations)” (Daniel 7:19)

Jeane Dixon has warned in her foretellings as read in Chapter 2: E that America will be effaced in such a devastating manner that it could be compared with the setting in of a calamity such as the Dark Ages of Europe.

This same warning of the complete effacement of not only the people of America, but also of the population of Britain had been given in 1152 A.D. by Shah Neamatullah as read in Chapter 2: H, when he foretold: the calamity of the third world war, would be such that what would be left of Britain and the U.S.A. would be only their names in the pages of history to the effect that once upon a time there was a nation called the British and another called the Americans who for their refusal to surrender to the Will of Allah in accordance with the last set of His rules (*i.e.* Muhammad and the Qur'an and their wickedness in continuously trying to destroy Islam Chapter 29: C-2 A to H) have been effaced from the face of the earth just as were the peoples of Sodom and Gomorrah for disbelieving in the Prophet Lot or the Arab tribes of Thamud and Aad for refusing to believe in their respective prophets or



the old civilisation of the people of the earth for refusing to believe in Noah.

Not only will the U.S.A. and the U.K. be involved in this terrible war but also Europe, as is clear from the foretellings given in Chapter 2: F. The wording of this prophecy would seem to give one the impression that this great war would probably start from or as a result of conflicts in which Israel is involved. This foretelling states that this war would cover all places from “N” of Christianity (*i.e.* Nazareth or Israel) to Rome and from Rome to the furthest corners of America. Over this huge area would be a rain of rockets bursting like volcanoes throwing out white hot fire, which would cause terrible devastation.

Thus the destruction of the U.K., the U.S.A. and Europe has been foretold not only in the above passages of the Holy Bible but is also confirmed by other sources also (see also Chapter 29: C-2 A to H).

Do not all these warnings provide food for our thoughts? Do they not remind us of the warnings in the Holy Bible that people should leave such places of danger and flee for their lives (St. Matt. 24: 15-21)?

## H. What will this victorious power do?

Daniel has not stopped at the above quoted verse. No! he goes on further to warn in the following verse that this (Communist) Power, which will emerge victorious from the Nuclear Holocaust after effacing the Western Bloc of Countries would become so power-drunk on account of its invincible Nuclear might, that it would set out heartlessly to conquer the whole world to its ways of thinking and in this process wipe out many a nation mercilessly as will be apparent from:

“Thus he said, The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be diverse from all kingdoms, (*i.e.* the Communists do not allow individual rights to property which is the birthright elsewhere) and **shall devour the whole earth** (after the third World War or the Nuclear Holocaust), and **shalt tread it down and break it in pieces**” (Daniel 7: 23).

Do not these warnings from the Holy Bible make one apprehensive of the impending calamities which our generation shall have to face? Should we not do something about it? At least to try and save ourselves, our near and dear ones and our countries?

## **I. Communist World Domination also described in the Bible as that of Gog of Magog**

### **1. Who are the bands of Magog and their allies?**

The first question that arises is “Who” are these people?

The Holy Bible informs:

“Now these are the generations of the sons of Noah, Shem, Ham, and Japheth: and unto them were sons born after the flood.

“The sons of Japheth; Gomer, and Magog and Madai, and Javan, and Tubal and Meshech, and Tiras” (Genesis 10: 1-2).

### **2. Where did they settle down?**

According to the map of “Ancient World showing the probable settlement of the descendants of Noah” published at the end of the Holy Bible (authorised King James Version) by The Bible Meditation League of Columbus, Ohio, we find that these descendants of Japheth settled down as follows:

Gomer settled in Russia to the North of the Black Sea.

Magog inhabited the vast areas East and North of the Black Sea and North of the Caspian Sea. In other words the present Russia.

Tubal lived along the shores of the Black Sea.

Meshech established himself in Armenia (in Russia).

The son of Javan known as Tarshish occupied Southern Mongolia and China.

### 3. Communist domination of the world

To be able to appreciate the forces which combine to bring the Communists together, one has to glance at the works of Karl Marx and it will be realised that the seed or basis of Communism has arisen out of the denial of the basic minimum rights to the poorer masses by the affluent few! It was the centuries of oppression that was the cause of the French Revolution. The denial of “Love thy neighbour as thyself” by the Christian rulers brought about the Russian Revolution (Chapter 14: H).

Because of the oppression by the affluent few upon the poor, forcing them into serfdom and slavery, resulted in the birth of Communism, and their belief in that there is no God. It is small wonder that they persecute anybody believing in God. Of course they did not realise that *Christianity was nothing but Nimrodism* (Chapter 12: G and H). So it was contrary to the teachings of Jesus and the Laws of God. The only way in which they imagined they could get out of this curse of Christianity and its Capitalist structure was to unite the oppressed masses, the labour class and the agriculturists into a combined force to fight against the religion of the God of Christianity *i.e.* Capitalism or the interest of the affluent few and all that it represented for the oppression of the poorer masses.

The many centuries of oppression and denial of rights of the weaker masses against the armed might of the few have left an imbedded impression on the minds of the Communists that if they are to save themselves from the armed might of the European Capitalists or those believing in the Christian God, then they have to be stronger than the combined strength of the so-called “Free Christian Nations”. They have to be ruthless and inconsiderate in the methods they adopt to achieve their goal. They have no time or patience to analyse what is good or bad in them so long as—“*The end justifies the means*”.

The result is that those who once come under the influence of

Communism have little option but to unite together. They realise very well the efficacy of the proverb:

“United we stand, divided we fall.”

When these people of Magog and their allies, that is the Communists of Eastern Europe and elsewhere, will be combined together, they will present an invincible force which can easily destroy and/or conquer the rest of the world.

The people of U.S.S.R., and their ten allies are thus the “Magogs” who would be led by a “Gog” to great victories over other peoples of the world as foretold in the Holy Bible:

“And the word of the Lord came unto me, saying,

“Son of man, set thy face against Gog of the land of Magog, the chief prince of Meshech and Tubal (*i.e.* U.S.S.R.), and prophesy against him,

“And say, Thus saith the Lord God; behold, I am against thee, O Gog, the chief prince of Meshech and Tubal (*i.e.* the President of U.S.S.R.):

“And I will turn thee back, and put hooks into thy jaws, and I will bring thee forth, and all thine army, horses and horsemen, *all of them clothed with all sorts of (Nuclear) armour*, even a great company with bucklers and shields, all of them handling swords:

“Persia, Ethiopia, and Libya with them; all of them with shield and helmet:

“Gomer, and all his bands; the house of Togarmah of the north quarters, and all his bands: and many people with thee.

“Be thou prepared, and prepare for thyself, thou, and all thy company that are assembled unto thee, and be thou a guard unto them (with your “Nuclear” umbrella) (Ezekiel 38: 1-7).

From the mention of Ethiopia and Libya it is apparent that the Communists will be in absolute control of the straits of Bosphorus and the Dardanelles so that they can subsequently control all countries

bordering on the Mediterranean Sea, especially Egypt and her allies like Iraq (which was part of old Persian Empire and has been referred to as Persia), Syria, Sudan and Libya. Further, that the Communists would spread from the North and have the support of many races specially from the underdeveloped countries. For them all it would appear that the golden age for a common goal of an uniform Communist Government would set in on a world-wide basis for raising the status of the classes of administrators, workers, labourers, miners, farmers, writers, artists, and intellectuals. Their call would be:

“Workers of all countries, unite!”

#### **J. Then the Communists or Magogs shall occupy Palestine**

“Therefore, son of man, prophesy and say unto Gog, Thus saith the Lord God; In that day when my people of Israel dwelleth safely, shalt thou not know it?

“And thou shalt come from thy place out of the north parts, thou, and many people with thee, all of them riding upon horses (in today’s conditions it would mean armoured cars and tanks), a great company, and a mighty army:

“And thou shalt come up against My people of Israel, as a cloud (air force) to cover the land; it shall be in the latter days (*i.e.* the days just before the end of the present system), and I will bring thee (Gog) against My land, that the (Jews who have become like) heathen may know Me, when I shall be sanctified in thee, O Gog, before their eyes.

“Thus saith the Lord God; Art thou he of whom I have spoken in old time by My servants the prophets of Israel, which prophesied in those days many years (back) that I would bring thee against them (the disobedient Jews)?” (Ezekiel 38: 14-17).

### **K. After occupation of Palestine an evil thought will come to the Gog of Magogs**

“Thus saith the Lord God; It shall also come to pass, that at the same time shall things come into thy mind, and thou shalt think an evil thought:

“And thou shalt say, I will go up to the land of unwallled villages; I will go to them that are at rest, that dwell safely, all of them dwelling without walls, and having neither bars nor gates.

“To take a spoil, and to take a prey; to turn thine hand upon the desolate places (of the Arabian Deserts) that are now inhabited, and upon the people that are gathered (there for Holy Pilgrimage) out of the nations, which have gotten cattle and goods, that dwell in the midst of the land.

“Sheba, and Dedan, and the merchants of Tarshish (which we known from the descendants of Japheth represents China), with all the young lions thereof (*i.e.* the newly formed nations of Southern Asia who would be supporting China), shall say unto thee, Art thou come to take a spoil? hast thou gathered thy company to take a prey? to carry away silver and gold, to take away cattle and goods, to take a great spoil (the oil resources of the Arabs)?” (Ezekiel 38: 10-13).

Sheba mentioned in the above text is an area on the coast of Arabia about the middle of the Red Sea. At present the most important town in this area is Madinah.

Dedan mentioned in the above text is an area, which commences about 100 miles further south and extends upto about Aden. The most significant religious town of Mecca, where Abraham had built the altar or temple of God, is in this area.

Therefore it appears from the Holy Bible that Gog and his Magogs after occupying Palestine, will turn their eyes towards Madinah and Mecca, both of which are unwallled cities of Saudi Arabia and an easy prey for their Nuclear might. Saudi Arabia owing to her vast oil production is one of the richest countries and is full of gold. So the gold

and the oil resources of Arabia should be the great attraction.

## **L. What will happen to them then?**

“For in My jealousy and in the fire of My wrath have I spoken, Surely in that day (when the Communist Might will attack Madinah and Mecca) there shall be a great shaking in the land of Israel;

“So that the fishes of the sea, and the fowls of the heaven, and the beasts of the field, and all creeping things that creep upon the earth, and all the men that are upon the face of the earth, shall shake at My presence, and the mountains shall be thrown down, and the steep places shall fall, and every wall shall fall to the ground.

“And I will call for a sword against him (*i.e.* Gog of Magogs after they plan to take Madinah and Mecca) throughout all My mountains, saith the Lord God: every man’s sword shall be against his brother.

“And I will plead against him (Gog of Magogs) with pestilence and with blood; and I will rain upon him (Gog of Magogs), and upon his bands, and upon the many people (*i.e.* all the communists) that are with him, an overflowing rain, and great hailstones, fire, and brimstone.

“Thus will I magnify Myself, and sanctify Myself; and I will be known in the eyes of many nations (who under Communist influence deny the necessity of the existence of God), and they shall know (on that day when all their invincible scientific Nuclear Might will be destroyed by miraculous Divine action) that I am (indeed the Living Absolute Monarch, the Creator and the Destroyer without any equal) the Lord (of the entire Creation)” (Ezekiel 38: 19-23).

“Therefore, thou son of man, prophesy against Gog, and say, Thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I am against thee, O Gog, the chief prince of Meshech and Tubal:

“And I will turn thee back, and leave but the sixth part of thee (*i.e.* on this occasion of the attacks on Madinah and Mecca 5/6th of the

world-wide Communist might will be destroyed), and will cause thee to come up (for the attack on Madinah and Mecca) from the north parts, (*i.e.* from the mountains of Israel into Saudi Arabia or Sheba and Dedan to use the Biblical names)...

“And I will smite thy bow out of thy left hand, and will cause thine arrows to fall out of thy right hand.

“Thou shalt fall (and be destroyed as you are leaving Israel for this attack) upon the mountains of Israel, thou, and all the people that is with thee: I will give thee (*i.e.* 5/6th of the mighty Communist armies) unto the ravenous birds of every sort, and to the beasts of the field to be devoured.

“Thou shalt fall (and be destroyed) upon the open field (*i.e.* the deserts south of Israel): for I have spoken it, saith the Lord God.

“And I will send a fire (*i.e.* Nuclear Holocaust) on Magog, and among them that dwell carelessly in the isles: and they shall know that I am (indeed) the Lord (God Who is very much alive and in existence from eternity to eternity and has control over all things)” (Ezekiel 39: 1-6).

### **M. After 5/6th of the hordes of Gog of Magog have been destroyed**

The world will thus witness how the invincible atheist army of Communism which had mastered the whole world including Europe and America, has been destroyed miraculously by God Almighty in a matter of hours along with 5/6th of the Communists all over the earth. They would be destroyed by Divine Power only when there will be no force on earth of sufficient strength to oppose them. They would be effaced only because of their evil thought of occupying Sheba (Madinah) and Dedan (Mecca). The one-sixth of the survivors which would represent probably the people left all over the world will be awakened to the reality that their Nuclear might and scientific achievements are simply nothing and absolutely useless before God, Who can wipe out centuries of research and billions of dollars worth of invincible equipment in a matter of a few hours. That the only course



open to mankind if they want to save themselves is to “Surrender to the Will of God Almighty”. Nothing else would help them! Science has every time been a miserable failure as repeatedly shown on many an occasion earlier in this research.

Upon the destruction of Communism there will naturally be a great religious vacuum. Two opposing forces will then set to work. One will be the false prophet who will pretend that he is the prophet of the last period and has come to save the world. The other will be the saint at whose prayers the might of Communism was destroyed in the attack on Madinah and Mecca. This saint will set about immediately spreading the religion of “Surrender to the will of God.” Both of them will have great followings. The apostate Jews and their supporters, the surviving Nimrodists or Christians from such places as South America, South Africa, Australia, New Zealand and other countries which escaped destruction in the Nuclear Holocaust or Third World War will follow chiefly the false prophet.

#### **N. The Revival Movement started by the Saint-Saviour**

The Saint-Saviour will start a great movement for revival, which will eventually guide the whole world to one religion:

“Thy will be done on Earth as it is in Heaven.”

The number of conversions will be so very great, as had never before taken place. All these believers will have the mark of prayers on their foreheads and they will be dressed in white robes (Chapter 7: I) as foretold in the Holy Bible as hereunder:

“And after these things I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree.

“And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea,

“Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads” (Revelation: 7: 1-3).

“After this I beheld, and lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the (God Almighty’s) throne.. clothed with white robes (such an unaccountable number of people from all nations speaking many different languages all clothed in white robes gather annually before Allah’s throne or the temple built by Prophet Abraham at Mecca known as “Baitullah” *i.e.* House of Allah or the Kaabah. Everybody would be dressed in two pieces of white unstitched linen known as the pilgrim’s robe as read earlier in Chapter 7: H and I; 15: K-1 and 2. Hence this is an apparent reference to the gathering of Muslim pilgrims for Haj) ...

“And cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne,....

“And all the angels stood round about the throne, and about the elders and the four beasts (*i.e.* the remnants of English, Americans, and Europeans and the Communists), and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God (this shows that all the people who will escape the Nuclear Holocaust of the Third World War and the destruction of 5/6th of the Communists for their attack on Madinah and Mecca will “Surrender to the Will of Allah” and become Muslims. Because only Muslims are permitted to go to Kaabah and further Muslims are the only people who get a prayer mark on their forehead, owing to their bowing on the floor or prayer carpets before Allah in their five daily prayers).

“Saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.

“And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes? and whence came they?

“And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation (*i.e.* those who have surrendered themselves to the Will of Almighty God and have come

in humble submission to the House of God or Kaabah to perform Haj, wearing two pieces of white unstitched cloth—the pilgrim’s robe and having the prayer mark on their foreheads after the great tribulation leading to the Battle of Armageddon) ...

“Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple (*i.e.* the Kaabah at Mecca): and He that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them.

“They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat” (Revelation 7: 9-16).

### **O. The False Prophet**

Whilst all this revival would be taking place under the guidance and efforts of the Saint-Saviour, another genius would be working again for world domination.

The first part of Daniel 7: 24 reads:

“And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise:”

Thus we are told that ten men would make themselves dictators over the remnants of this shattered earth after the destruction of the Communists Empires all over the world.

The second part of Daniel 7: 24 informs:

“And another shall rise after them; and he shall be diverse from the first (ten), and he shall subdue three kings.”

That this master-mind and genius is the false prophet and that he will preach against God will be clear from the following verses:

“And he shall speak great words against the Most High, and shall wear out the Saints of the Most High, and think to change times and (divine) laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time...” (Daniel 7: 25).

From this passage of the Bible it obvious that this Master Mind or

anti-Christ will be a “King of Terror”. He shall fill the streets with the blood of martyrs. The corpses of Saints and believers will be strewn about. And he will boast after each massacre against Allah as to how weak God is because He is unable to afford protection to the lives of believers, whom this despot will be murdering daily.

It is clear that this “King of Terror” will try and abolish Allah’s rule on earth according to the Bible which reads:

“And think to change times and (divine) laws”.

His kingdom will last for a period of seven times according to Daniel 4: 16, 23 and 25. We shall read later that the period of “Tribulations” mentioned in the Holy Bible will last a period of seven years. Hence the natural conclusion is that this “King of Terror” or the “False Prophet” will rule for seven periods of time or at least seven years.

## **P. The Supporters of the False Prophet**

This King of Terror, who will try to change the laws of God and destroy all believers, will have the support of the entire Jewish community and their friends *i.e.* those stubborn remnants of Nimrodism or Christianity who have escaped the destruction of Greater Babylonia or the U.K., the U.S.A. and Europe in the third Great World War or the Nuclear Holocaust *i.e.* South Africans, South Americans Philippinos and Australians *etc.*

That the King of Terror will have the backing of world-wide Financial Resources of the Jews and their Allies will be clear from:

“We have sinned, and have committed iniquity, and have done wickedly, and have rebelled, even by departing from Thy precepts and from Thy judgment:

“Neither have we hearkened unto Thy servants the prophets, which spake in Thy name to our kings, our princes, and our fathers, and to all the people of the land.

“O Lord, righteousness belongeth unto Thee, but unto us confusion of faces as at this day; to the men of Judah, and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and unto all Israel, that are near, and that are far off, (scattered) through all the countries, (of the world) whither Thou hast driven them, because of their trespass that they have trespassed against Thee.

“O Lord, to us belongeth confusion of face, to our kings, to our princes, and to our fathers, because we have sinned against Thee.

“To the Lord our God belong mercies and forgivenesses, though we have rebelled against Him;

“Neither have we obeyed the voice of the Lord our God, to walk in His laws, which He set before us by His servants the prophets.

“Yea, all Israel have transgressed Thy law, even by departing, that they might not obey Thy voice; therefore the curse is poured upon us, and the oath that is written in the law of Moses, the servant of God, because we have sinned against Him.

“And He hath confirmed His words, which He spake against us, and against our judges that judged us, by bringing upon us a great evil: for under the whole heaven hath not been done as hath been done upon Jerusalem.

“As it is written in the law of Moses, all this evil is come upon us: yet made we not our prayer before the LORD our God, that we might turn from our iniquities, and understand Thy truth.

“Therefore hath the LORD watched upon the evil, and brought it upon us: for the LORD our God is righteous in all His works which He doeth: for we obeyed not His voice” (Daniel 9: 5-14).

This is the opinion too of the eminent Christian scholars as will be evident from the following quotation from pages 6-7 of “The Unfolding of the Ages” by David L. Cooper:

But we are told by our Lord that, before the Tribulation, there will be a period of peace and prosperity men engaging in regular commercial and social pursuits (St. Matthew 24: 37-39).

“Paul said that, when the general sentiment and outlook of the people of earth will be that of peace and safety, then comes the throes of the day of the Lord. From Jesus and Paul, therefore, we learn that, immediately preceding the day of the Lord, there is to be a period of peace and prosperity.

“This is indicated on the chart by the seventh arrow in this period...

“The eighth arrow signifies the next important event on the programme; namely, the rise of the Antichrist, and the beginning of the Tribulation .... He appears after the world-empire has collapsed and fallen into its ten divisions. It takes him a little time to ingratiate himself into the favour of these mighty dictators, but he does gain the ascendancy. Finally, he enters into contract with the Jews; making a covenant with them for seven years. This event seems to be at the very beginning of the Tribulation. Thus the seven years of the day of the Lord are counted from this event.

“If anyone were to hold strictly to the position of the rupture as indicated on the chart, he would think that it occurs immediately before the Tribulation begins. This position is held by many excellent Bible students. But we must be very careful in setting a hard and fast date for it. It is best to say that we do not know the day nor the hour; therefore let all be ready.

“The chronological order of events that is presented here seems to be the one that is demanded by the Scriptures.

“When the Antichrist enters into covenant relations with the apostate remnant of Israel (Daniel 9: 27), God’s clock, which strikes off the hours of the Tribulation starts running again. This period is of seven years’ duration, and is referred to in the Book of Revelation”.

Hereunder are the relevant quotations from the Holy Bible:

“... for it is given unto Gentiles: and the holy city shall they tread under foot (for) forty and two months.

“And I will give power unto My two witnesses (*i.e.* the saint Saviour

and his assisting saint), and they, shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and three score days clothed in sack cloth” (Revelation 11: 2 and 3).

So the period of tribulations will be divided into two halves of about 31/2 years each. The first will be a period of 42 months during which the King of Terror or False Prophet will consolidate his position in Jerusalem. The second will be a period of 1260 days in which two witnesses of Allah (*i.e.* the saint Saviour and his chief assisting saint) will prophesy the coming Battle of Armageddon and will try to win over souls to the right path.

### **Q. The powers of the False Prophet**

The powers of this King of Terror or the False Prophet are given in the Bible as:

“Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not.

“For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive (even) the very elect.

“Behold, I have told you before.

“Wherefore if they shall say unto you, behold, he is in the secret chambers; believe it not” (St. Matthew 24: 23-26).

### **R. The Seven Years of Tribulation**

Consequently the False Prophet or the King of Terror with the world-wide support of Jews would not only overpower three of the ten divisions or Kingdoms that would be formed upon the fall and destruction of the Magogs or Communist World Powers as already noted earlier from Daniel 7: 24, but would persecute the believers of the saint, who has been working for the religious revival of the people of the earth as warned in Daniel 7: 25:

And he (the false prophet, the subduer of 3 out of the 10 kingdoms) shall speak great words against the Most High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High, and think to change times and (the divine) laws”.

The activities of this false prophet can well be gauged from the following quotations. This would be the beginning of the period of the seven years of “*Tribulation*”

“And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone” (Revelation 19: 20).

“For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect” (St. Matthew 24: 24).

This genius would become “power-drunk” and aim for world domination. The believers in God would be his only opponents. He would weed them out individually from house to house giving them one of the two undermentioned options *viz*:

- a) To accept him as Lord and Master and obey him, or
- b) To be tortured until death overtakes the victims.

In this way, many saints and believers would be martyred by this evil master-mind, who would daily cover his streets with blood and corpses. Palestine and all places under his control would become totally unsafe for anybody believing in Allah. Such a dangerous situation on a world-wide scale had never taken place before and will not occur again. The Holy Bible gives us the following warnings:

“And Jesus answered and said unto them, take heed that no man deceive you.

“For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many” (St. Matthew 24: 4-5).



“All these are the beginning of sorrows (*i.e.* the seven years of “Tribulation”).

“Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you and ye (the believers in Allah) shall be hated of all nations for My (*i.e.* Allah’s) name’s sake.

“And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

“And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.

“And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.

“But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved” (St. Matthew 24: 8-13).

“When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation (*i.e.* blood and corpses of the innocent), spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand :)

“Then let them which be in Judaea flee into the mountains:

“Let him which is on the house top not come down to take anything out of his house:

“Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes.

“And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days!

“But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the Sabbath day:

“For then shall be *great tribulation*, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no nor ever shall be” (St. Matthew 24: 15-21).

Thus the Holy Bible advises the believers to flee from Palestine and all places under the control of this King of Terror, the False Prophet.

### **S. The saints will lose in the beginning but will eventually be victorious at the final battle**

The easy victories of the Jews, who were heavily armed by Britain, America and Europe, over the defenceless Muslims in Palestine in 1948 to set up the state of Israel and their sudden victory with a small army over the unprepared Arab countries in the surprise attack of the June 1967 war have given the Jews a superiority complex. They consider the Muslims as their number one enemy. These Jews with their Nuclear weapons under the guidance of the False Prophet or the King of Terror will prepare and try to wipe out the religion of “Surrender to the One and Only Allah—Thy Will be done on earth as it is in Heaven”. They will kill each and every Muslim they can lay their hands on.

On the other hand the saint at whose behest the Communists were destroyed for their attack on Madinah and Mecca, will also have won a large number of converts all over the world to “Islam—the religion of Surrender to the will of Allah”.

Therefore a direct confrontation is inevitable between these two opposing forces *viz*:

- a) The False Prophet or the King of Terror with the Jews and the Christians or Nimrodists on one hand with all their scientific might, and
- b) The two saints and their followers of the religion of “Surrender to the will of Allah” on the other.

This battle will take place at the end of the seven years of tribulation according to the Bible, where the river Jordan rises from Lake Tubariya between Israel and Syria—the Golan Heights!

The armies of the two saints will be losing in the beginning and there will be cries and prayers from the saint and his followers for Divine assistance. The Holy Bible informs:

“I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and

prevailed against them;

“Until the Ancient of days came, and judgment was given to the saints of the Most High; and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom” (Daniel 7: 21-22).

## **T. The bringer of divine help at Armageddon**

“And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war.

“His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man know, but he himself.

“And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called **The Word of God**.

“And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

“And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the wine press of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God” (Revelation 19: 11-15).

“**Faithful and True**” or in Arabic “**Al-Amin**” was the title of honour given by the pagan Arabs of Mecca to Muhammad when he was 24 years 9 months and 6 days old (Chapter 17: E and 17: D-30). No one else has ever been given publicly such a title since the creation of man! Hence the leader of the army of angels bringing divine help to the Saints at the Battle of Armageddon according to Rev. 19: 11 is **Prophet Muhammad**.

This is again confirmed in Rev. 19: 13 that his name is “**The Word of God**” or in Arabic “**Amr Allah**”, which is one of the titles of Prophet Muhammad as read earlier (Chapter 17: A-3). No other prophet in the past, including Jesus, has said that one of his titles is “Amar Allah” or the “Logos” or “The Word of God”.

Prophet Muhammad has thus been referred to twice by two of his popularly known titles in the same passages of the Holy Bible, thereby removing any possibilities of doubt as to who has been repeatedly mentioned in these texts of the sacred scriptures. He is referred to again in Revelation as quoted hereafter.

The extent of the help that will be given by Prophet Muhammad and his army of angels is confirmed in the Holy Bible in the very same chapter as follows:

“And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army.

“And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

“And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh” (Revelation 19: 19-21).

## **U. The return of Jesus**

At the Battle of Armageddon not only will divine aid be given by Prophet Muhammad on a white horse leading the army of angels but Jesus also will come down to earth from Heaven in bodily form to help in this great battle according to the Holy Bible:

“Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken:

“And then shall appear the sign of the son of man in heaven; and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory” (St. Matthew 24: 29-30).

“For as the lighting cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the son of man be” (St. Matthew 24: 27).

“And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up; and a cloud received him out of their sight.

“And while they looked steadfastly towards heaven as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel;

“Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? This same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven” (Acts 1:9-11).

## **V. What will happen at the Battle of Armageddon?**

“And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates; and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared (for crossing the river with their armies to go to the Battle of Armageddon).

“And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet.

“For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty.

“Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame.

“And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon.

“And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, ‘It is done’.

“And there were voices, and thunders, and lightings; and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth,

so mighty an earthquake, and so great.

“And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell: and great Babylon came, in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of His wrath.

“And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found.

“And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, every stone about the weight of a talent: and men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail: for the plague thereof was exceeding great” (Revelation 16: 12-21).

“And I saw the beast, and the Kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army.

“And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

“And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh” (Revelation 19: 19-21).

“For thus saith the LORD of hosts; Yet once, it is a little while, and I will shake the heavens, and the earth and the sea, and the dry land;

“And I will shake all nations, and the desire (praise) of all nations shall come (out in My honour): and I will fill this house (*i.e.* of Abraham) with glory, saith the LORD of hosts.

“The silver is mine, and the gold is mine, saith the Lord of hosts.

“The glory of this latter House (*i.e.* the Kaabah or the Temple of God at Mecca towards which the Muslims have turned in prayer since 622 A. D. and which was built by Abraham) shall be greater than of the former (*i.e.* The Temple of Jerusalem towards which the Jews have been turning in their prayers since 1027 B.C. and which was built originally by King Solomon), saith the Lord of hosts: and in this place (*i.e.* Palestine in the North to Madinah and Mecca in

the South—the lands promised to Prophet Abraham) will I give peace, saith the Lord of hosts” (Haggai 2 : 6-9).

## **W. Weapons of war will be destroyed**

“And He shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people: and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruninghooks: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more” (Isaiah 2: 4).

“And they that dwell in the cities of Israel shall go forth, and shall set on fire and burn the weapons, both the shields and the buckler, the bows and arrows, and the hand-staves, and the spears, and they shall burn them with fire seven years:

“So that they shall take not take wood out of the field, neither cut down any out of the forests; because they will make fires with the weapons : ... saith Lord God” (Ezekiel 39: 9-10).

## **X. What Religion will Jesus preach upon his return?**

The Holy Bible informs us that when Jesus was lifted to Heaven, his religion was incomplete:

“I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now” (St. John 16: 12).

Jesus has recommended his followers to accept the religion of the “Comforter” of the Universe (in Arabic “Rahmat-ul-lil-Aalameen” is the divinely conferred title of Prophet Muhammad) as mentioned in the following verses of the Holy bible:

“But the Comforter (of the Universe *i.e.* “Rahmat-ul-lil-Aalameen” or Prophet Muhammad), which is the Holy Ghost (*i.e.* Logos or Nur-e-Muhammadi— Chapter 17-A: 1- 8, and B: 1-6, therefore two references are made in this one sentence to Prophet Muhammad) whom the Father will send, in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you” (St. John 14: 26).

“But when the **Comforter** (Rahmat-ul- lil-Aalameen or Prophet Muhammad) is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the *Spirit of truth* (*i.e.* Logos or Prophet Muhammad), which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me” (St. John 15: 26).

“Howbeit when he, the *Spirit of truth* (*i.e.* Logos or Prophet Muhammad) is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak (Al-Qur’an—Chapter 17—The Qur’an—The Greatest continuing miracle on Earth); and he will shew you things to come” (St. John 16: 13).

The Holy Qur’an has confirmed that the teachings of the earlier prophets which were incomplete before the time of Muhammad were only completed for the first time in 631 A.D., when the last verse of the Qur’an was revealed, reading as follows:

“This day have I (Allah) perfected your religion for you and completed My favour (*i.e.* completed the divine message—The Quran) unto you, and have chosen for you as religion AL-ISLAM (*i.e.* surrender to the will of Allah) ...” (Qur’an 5: 3).

Allah has not only completed His Religion in Islam but He has also taken upon Himself to preserve it:

“Indeed We (Allah), even We have revealed the Reminder (*i.e.* the Quran) and lo! We (Allah) will most surely be its Guardian” (Qur’an 15: 9).

“He (Allah) it is Who hath sent His messenger with the guidance and the religion of truth (*i.e.* Islam), that He may cause it to prevail over all other religions. And Allah Sufficeth as a Witness.

“Muhammad is the messenger of Allah ....”(Qur’an 48: 28-29).

Further Allah has also taken upon Himself in the Qur’an to explain the teachings of Islam:

“Lo! upon Us (Allah resteth) the putting together thereof and the reading thereof.

“Therefore when We (Allah) have recited it (*i.e.* revealed it and got



it recited through the mouth of the Holy Prophet Muhammad), follow thou the recitation (*i.e.* the Quran).

“Then lo! upon Us (Allah resteth) the explanation thereof.

“Nay, but ye do love the fleeting present life.

“And neglect the Hereafter.

“That day will faces be resplendent,

“Looking toward their Lord (and His Wondrous Beauties);

“And that day will other faces be despondent (and denied the sight of Allah).

“Thou wilt know that some great disaster is about to fall on them” (Qur’an 75: 17-25).

If we now refer to Chapter 13—*The Mission of Jesus*, it will be clear that the sole purpose for which he was given such a miraculous birth through the Virgin Mary, was to pave the way for the coming of the final Promised Prophet of Salvation *i.e.* Muhammad, the Messenger of Allah.

Those who disobeyed the teachings of Jesus, whilst claiming to be his followers have suffered very badly—See Chapter 14 for the consequences suffered by the Christians.

Our present day woes are on account of disobedience by the European Group of Nations, who have been professing for several centuries to be the followers of a Jesus, but in reality they are “Nimrodists” following the *accursed religion of the Tower of Babel*.

In fact Jesus has repeated the warning of all the earlier prophets as follows in the Holy Bible:

“For Moses truly said unto the fathers, *A prophet* shall the Lord your God raise up unto you (out) of your brethren (tribe *i.e.* the descendants of Ishmael the first-born and heir of Abraham) like unto me (*i.e.* Moses, who will speak face to face with God just like one speaks to his friend—Exodus 33:11 (him (*i.e.* the promised Prophet

Muhammad) shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he (Muhammad) shall say unto you.

“And (after a time) it shall come to pass (in the great Battle of Armageddon), that every soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people (on the earth in the great wars—The present-day threatened Nuclear Holocaust, the war of Gog of Magos and the Battle of Armageddon all foretold in the Holy Bible as read herebefore).

“Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these days.

“Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed” (Acts 3: 22-25). As already read Chapter 7: G-1 to 8 shows that Jesus himself has confirmed who was this seed of Abraham; Chapter 13: B to K has shown who is the Promised Prophet according to the Holy Bible and Chapter 17: G. 1-10 sets out the curses of Allah upon those who deny Prophet Muhammad. This is also corroborated by Jesus, as we shall read in Chapter 29: C-7 d.

Jesus, after his return to earth from heaven in bodily form at the Battle of Armageddon, would openly set the example to the Catholic World in particular by following the completed religion of “AL ISLAM” (Chapter 29: C-7 C to H). Thus the system of a “Pope” would come to an end according to the Prophecy of Fatima which was to be disclosed in 1960 (see Chapter 26: B). However this prophecy is being suppressed deliberately by the Church Authorities as will be realised in the next chapter (26: B).

Thus it would be clear from the Biblical records now available that the mission of Jesus during his first coming on earth was to pave the way and foretell the coming of the promised Prophet Muhammad (Chapter 13: A-K) and the mission of his second coming on earth from heaven at the Battle of Armageddon will be to destroy Nimrodism or

Christianity in all its forms and to propagate Islam or Surrender to the will of Allah.

This fact is known to Christians as will be apparent from the undermentioned quotations from the speech made by President Rutherford of The Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society to 15,000 International Bible Students on 24th July 1927 at Toronto:

“.. ‘organised Christianity’, which is a part of Babylon or ‘the Devil’s organisation’ will fall like a great millstone into the sea.

“The doom of ‘organised Christianity’ or Babylon is sealed!”

## **Y. The 1000 years happy period free from Demonism**

“And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand.

“And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,

“And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season” (Revelation 20: 1-3).

“And it shall come to pass in that day, that the Lord shall punish the host of the high ones that are on high, and the kings of the earth upon the earth.

“And they shall be gathered together, as prisoners are gathered in the pit, and shall be shut up in the prison, and after many days shall they be visited” (Isaiah 24: 21-22).

The Holy Bible has also confirmed thus:

“But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day” (2 Peter 3: 8).

This period of 1000 years is called by The Watch Tower Bible Society as the seventh day or seventh millennium of man’s existence on

this earth since the creation of Adam. Hence they call it the Sabbath period or the 1000 years period, when mankind would perform good and holy acts, deeds and things. This will be a period free from demonism and the temptations of satan, who is chained for 1000 years!

One is tempted to ask, which Satan? Will it be Lucifer or Iblis or somebody else? When Iblis is praying all the time to his Lord as shown earlier then who could be this devil? Surely it is our human selfish instincts, *i.e.* our selfish desires. So from this it would appear that the spiritual revival of mankind will be of such a high order that our selfish desires of greed, lust, anger, jealousy, hate *etc.*, will be completely subdued for several generations. Man would be one brotherhood of universal love and peace! There would be literally a heaven on earth for all! Something to strive for, something to look forward to—the ideal goal of humanity!—Love, happiness and universal Peace!—The Garden of Paradise on this earth!



## Chapter 26

### Foretellings As To Dates



#### **A. When are these Biblical Prophecies likely to be fulfilled?**

One is naturally anxious to know when these Biblical foretellings are likely to be fulfilled? Has any Westerner clarified the possible dates?

A lot of interesting information has been given recently by an American lady. She throws some light on when to expect the realisation of the various Biblical foretellings in her books entitled “*A Gift of Prophecy—The Phenomenal Jeane Dixon*” by Ruth Montgomery published by William Morrow & Co. Inc., New York (1965), and “*My Life and Prophecies—Jeane Dixon*” by Rene Noorbergen by Bantam Book (Sept. 1970) printed under permission of William Morrow & Co. Inc., New York.

#### **I. The date and place of birth of the Child from the East who will unite the world into one religion of peace?**

On pages 169-173 of “*A Gift of Prophecy*” Jeane Dixon describes her visions and announces that she has seen the birth of a baby in the Arab lands on Monday the 5th February, 1962. The Arab lands cover any place between Morocco and Iraq. The Arabic equivalent of this date corresponds to the 29th day of the lunar month of Shaaban of the year 1381 Hijrah (A.H.). She says on page 171 of *ibid* as follows:

“A child, born somewhere in the Middle East shortly after 7 A.M.

(EST) on February 5, 1962, will revolutionize the world. Before the close of the century he will bring together all mankind in one all-embracing faith. This will be the foundation of a new Christianity (*i.e.* not the current Christianity as founded by Constantine) with every sect and creed united through this man who will walk among the people to spread the wisdom of the Almighty Power”.

## **2. From which family does this Saint Saviour come?**

Jeane Dixon has narrated on page 172 of *ibid* that this child, born in a humble peasant family, is a descendant from an Egyptian Pharaoh and his Queen. She then poses the following question:

“Who was the Pharaoh who disappeared back into the Sun? Why was Joseph in the vision? ... Joseph seemed to be controlling the couple and inducing them to present the child to the world, but she (Jeane Dixon) did not know why?”.

Joseph was the great-grandson of Prophet Abraham. So it appears that this Pharaoh and this child Saviour have some connection with a prophet of God from the family of Abraham.

## **3. Have any Prophets or Saints come out of any Egyptian Pharaoh and his Queen?**

The first of only three women to be honoured with direct visits of Angels with Divine messages and foretellings was the Egyptian Princess Hagar, the second wife of Prophet Abraham, the father of Nations of Believers in the oneness of God—the circumcised people of the world (Chapter 7: B, C, E-G).

Princess Hagar was the eldest child of Pharaoh Senusrit I. This king ruled over Egypt from 1771 to 1728 B. G. His wife was Queen Nufrit, the daughter of Pharaoh Amenemhait I.

Pharaoh Amenemhait II, the crown prince and heir was the second child of Senusrit I, and younger brother of Hagar. This prince

was born to Queen Nufrit about ten months after Sarah was returned to Abraham—the incident that took place upon their arrival in Egypt (Ch. VII: B.). In fact all the courtiers of this Egyptian Monarch had only female issues till then. They also were blessed with sons as a result of Abraham's prayers out of joy upon Sarah's return to him (Chapter 7: B).

Senusrit I along with all his courtiers and their families converted to the religion of Abraham upon seeing the all-pervasive influence of Abraham. Thus they gave up idolatry and Sun-worship. Hence Senusrit I was the first Egyptian ruler who believed in the absolute oneness of Allah.

When Senusrit I and all his courtiers were blessed with male issues and heirs, they consulted amongst themselves and decided to make a suitable royal gift to the 76-year-old patriarch because his wife Sarah was not only barren but she was also 66 years old—hence she had already passed the age of bearing any children. Therefore out of gratitude King Senusrit I presented his one and only daughter Hagar to the Prophet Abraham, his religious teacher and guide, when he was leaving Egypt. When Princess Hagar grew up she was married to Abraham (Chapter 7: B).

This Egyptian ruler had so much faith in his Creator that under no circumstances was he prepared to go against the wishes of Allah. He came to know that his eighteen-year-old daughter Princess Hagar with his grandchild Prince Ishmael only a few months old had been left in the wilderness of Paran (Mecca) by Prophet Abraham, under the orders of Allah. Yet he did not dare to bring them over to his palace in Egypt to live in comfort. Instead he spent a fortune and constructed a wonderful engineering feat—a ship canal from the River Nile to the Red Sea! By means of this canal he used to supply the needs of Hagar and Ishmael via Jeddah. So much faith, obedience and surrender to the will of Allah has not been displayed by any believing king of the world uptil now. Naturally the Saint Saviour whom Jeane Dixon has seen in her

vision has got to be from amongst the descendants of this believing Pharaoh and his Queen.

The following great personages are the descendants of this Egyptian Princess Hagar, the second wife of Prophet Abraham:

- a) Her only son Prophet Prince Ishmael—the first-born of Abraham who was offered as a sacrifice to Allah before the foretelling of the birth of Isaac as read earlier (Chapter 7: C, F, G-1 to 8 and H).
- b) Amena, mother of Prophet Muhammad, as recorded earlier (Chapter 17: D-4), is the third woman since creation who had direct visits of Angels foretelling the birth of the Promised Prophet, through whom the World would be blessed.
- c) The Promised Prophet Muhammad, the Comforter of the Universe (Chapter 17).

From no other Egyptian Pharaoh or his Queen have come any prophets or saints in this world. So it is clear that this Saint-Saviour must be from this particular family, who believed in the absolute Oneness of Allah and followed the religion of Abraham. In other words a descendant of Prophet Abraham, by his first-born Ishmael and his descendant Muhammad. This Saint-Saviour will convert all the people of this earth to the one common religion of “Surrender to the Will of Allah—Thy Will be done on Earth as it is in Heaven” or “AL-ISLAM” the name given to this religion in the Arab lands, where this child is born.

The Holy Bible and Jesus have also confirmed this:

“And in thy (Abraham’s) seed (Ishmael) shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed My Voice” (Chapter 7: G-1 to 8).

Hence this is a reference to both Prophet Muhammad, the Saviour of the Universe and his descendant, the Saint, who will eventually bring all nations into the one religion where all mankind will be blessed



because it is the religion of “Surrender to the Will of Allah” or “AL-ISLAM”, the religion chosen by Allah which He has perfected and completed through Muhammad, the Messenger of Allah (Qur’an 5: 3). This religion will be preserved by Allah as repeatedly confirmed by Jesus in the Gospel of Barnabas in spite of all the efforts of the wicked to destroy it. Allah has also confirmed as follows:

“He (Allah) it is Who hath sent His messenger with the guidance and the religion of truth, that He may cause it to prevail over all other religions. And Allah sufficeth as a Witness” (Qur’an 48: 28).

#### **4. Some important events about this Child of the East**

Jeane Dixon has revealed the following information about this child born in the East:

- a) “The circumstances surrounding the birth of the ‘*Child of the East*’ and the events I have since seen taking place in his life make him appear so Christlike” (page 203 of *My Life and Prophecies*).
- b) “It was a new-born babe, wrapped in soiled, ragged swaddling clothes. He was in stark contrast to the magnificently arrayed royal couple” (page 193 of *ibid*).
- c) “As I watched the little child being presented (by the Egyptian Pharaoh and his queen) to mankind, I became strongly aware of the tremendous and compelling force that went out from him. In his eyes I found *serene wisdom and unlimited knowledge*,” (page 203 of *ibid*).
- d) “Thus the coming of the child was backed by the image of the rising sun, symbolizing the tremendous force at the disposal of this child who is to lead the world” (pages 203-204 of *ibid*).
- e) Just as baby Jesus had to be taken to Egypt for his safety from Herod (St. Matthew 2: 13) so also this child has been taken from the country of his birth to Egypt. The reason for such a change

of country is not known to Jeane Dixon. She however stresses *“But I do know that there are forces working around him which protect him”* (page 204 of *ibid*). In Chapter 21: D-6 we have read that Muhammad had foretold that this child would be born in a village in Yemen. If that be so then it explains Jeane Dixon’s above forecast that due to the civil war in Yemen many supporters of the Peoples’ Party had to go over to Egypt for their safety from the Royalists.

- f) Just as Jesus, when he was twelve years old, had preached to the priests and the Jewish Doctors in the temple of Jerusalem (Luke 2: 42-49) so also when this child is eleven years old almost close to twelve, he will be affected by something of tremendous importance. We shall not begin necessarily to hear of him at that time (1973-74) but at this age he will become aware of his mission in life. He will then expand his influence, and those around him will form finally a small nucleus of dedicated followers by the time he reaches the age of nineteen (1981 A.D. or the first year of the fifteenth century Hijrah *i.e.* 1401 A.H.). He will work quietly with them until he is finally disclosed (page 205 of *ibid*).
- g) *“There is nothing kingly about his coming—no kings or shepherds to do homage to this new born baby—but he is the answer to the prayers of a troubled world. Mankind will begin to feel the great force of this man in the early 1980’s and during the subsequent ten years the world as we know it will be reshaped and revamped into one without wars or sufferings. His power will grow greatly until 1999 at which time the people of this earth will probably discover the full meaning of the vision”* (page 172 of *A Gift of Prophecy*).
- h) Jeane Dixon writes that by the time this child is about thirty years of age, the influence of Christianity will have diminished greatly. *“Christian education in the Schools will have come almost to a standstill, and the youth will have become extremely*

vulnerable to the coming of the man. I see that the youth of the world will accept him and will work closely with him in placing the world into his eager hands” (pages 205-206 of *My Life and Prophecies*).

- i) “Mankind, Jeane Dixon has said, will begin to feel the great force of this man about 1980 (*i.e.* after the fourteenth century Hijrah is over and the new century sets in), *and his power will grow mightily until 1999, when there will be peace on earth to all men of good will*” (page 182 of *A Gift of Prophecy*). This is the concluding statement on which she has ended her book “*A Gift of Prophecy*”.

## 5. Foretellings about the Saviour from other sources

The Tibetan clairvoyant Dr T. Lobsang Rampa has disclosed the following facts in his thesis “*Chapters of Life*” based upon old Tibetan records:

At the end of 2000 years from the birth of Jesus (*i.e.* around 1999 A. D.) yet another world leader or Saviour shall arise. He would be the twelfth of the cycle completing the destiny of the Zodiac Traversal. Conditions shall improve, and so, gently, in the course of time, people shall be led into a new Age where they will have different abilities to what they now have. Man will be able to communicate with fellow man and even with animals by means of telepathy and would know in advance what things are going to take place through clairvoyance. There would be a spiritual revival of man (pages 23-24).

Dr. Rampa on page 138 mentions the astrological fact that on 5th February 1962, sixteen degrees covered the Sun, the Moon, Mercury, Venus, Mars, Jupiter and Saturn during an eclipse at that time. The next time such a configuration will occur will be on 5th May 2000. These two configurations will lead to momentous occurrences throughout the world. It will be the opening of a New Age, says Dr Rampa, the time when hopes and spiritual aspirations become renewed. This will take

place from the year 2000.

As the configuration of 5th May 2000 will bring about peace and love between mankind, so also it can be assumed safely that on 5th February 1962, when this same configuration took place then on that very same date the Saviour of the world must have been born as confirmed by Jeane Dixon! Mrs. Dixon has also stated that this Saint Saviour would succeed in bringing mankind into one single community around 1999 and there will follow a period of peace on earth to all men of goodwill! Hence the foretellings of both Jeane Dixon and the old Tibetan records through Dr. Rampa are identical even though they are from two entirely different sources.

## **6. Events leading to World Peace**

“Jeane Dixon foresees that this peace for which men long will dawn in the year 1999, but not before a world holocaust has shocked mankind into spiritual renewal” (page 175 of *A Gift of Prophecy*).

Dr. Rampa says on page 138 of “*The Chapters of Life*” that between the two configurations referred to above will be the return of Halley’s comet around April 1986. So according to him the world peace he expects in 2000 A. D. will come about due to certain events following the appearance of Halley’s comet.

Whenever Halley’s comet has appeared there have been some serious wars or calamities. Therefore one cannot escape the assumption that when Halley’s comet will appear the next time, it will herald the commencement of the Nuclear Holocaust, which will shake mankind into a spiritual revival as foretold by so many authoritative sources as we shall also read a little later in this Chapter.

### **B. The Prophecy of Fatima—to be revealed in 1960!**

On 13th May 1917, Lucia dos Santos and her cousins, Jacinta and Francisco Marto, three children, saw their first vision of the Virgin Mary in the Portuguese bleak hill country-side called Fatima. During a

series of visitations thereafter, the Virgin Mary conveyed to the children a number of prophecies concerning the two World Wars and Russia. On the day of her sixth appearance in October 1917, the Virgin Mary had promised a miracle. To witness this “Miracle of Fatima” some seventy thousand people travelled through a downpour to reach this spot called Fatima. At noon the rains stopped, the sun burst through and at Lucia’s cry that the Virgin Mary had come, a celestial display stunned the awestruck viewers. Three times the solar disc spun in the sky, then plunged downward, but gradually resumed its proper place high in the heavens. Even the sceptics had to concede that something had interfered with normal cosmic laws. The prophecies revealed by the children before the untimely death of Jacinta and Francisco have all come to pass. Lucia joined a convent, and in 1927 she reported that Jesus had appeared before her and asked that one of his prophecies be kept secret until 1960. Sister Lucia recorded this on a sheet and sealed it in an envelope and conveyed it to the Pope in the Vatican. The Pope has failed to disclose it on 1st January 1960. Does this suppression show that the Pope is a faithful adherent of the Real Jesus?

Jeane Dixon has disclosed this “Prophecy of Fatima” on pages 167-169 of *“A Gift of Prophecy”* as follows:

“In hushed tones Jeane recalls: ‘Suddenly the very air seemed rarified. A glorious light shone again from the dome of the Cathedral (St. Matthew’s Cathedral), and before me stood the Holy Mother. She was draped in purplish blue and surrounded by gold and white rays which formed a halo of light around her entire person.

“In a cloud-like formation to the right and just above her I read the word ‘Fatima’ and sensed that the long-secret prophecy of Fatima was to be revealed to me. I saw the throne of the Pope, but it was empty. Off to one side I was shown a Pope with blood running down his face and dripping over his left shoulder. Green leaves of knowledge showered down from above, expanding as they fell. I

saw hands reaching out for the throne but no one sat in it, so I realized that within this century a Pope will be bodily harmed. When this occurs, the head of the Church will thereafter have a different insignia than that of the Pope... *This I feel sure was the prophecy of Fatima*".

"Catholics the world over eagerly awaited revelation of the prophecy, and in 1960 Catholic information centres were swamped with inquiries. For some reason unknown to laymen, it has not yet been revealed., Jeane believes that the vision she saw at the end of 1958, foretelling the close of the papal reign of the Church within this century, was the same as the 'Prophecy of Fatima'."

Jeane Dixon has further disclosed in "*My Life and Prophecies*" on page 167:

"During this century one pope will suffer bodily harm. Another will be assassinated. The assassination will be a final blow to the office of the High See... this pope will be the last one ever to reign as singular head of the Church..."

What Jeane Dixon has revealed as "*The Prophecy of Fatima*" i.e. the end of Papal reign, has also been foretold by a number of other independent sources. A few are quoted hereunder for ready reference and corroboration:

1. On page 133 of "*Chapters of Life*" Dr. Lobsang Rampa, the Tibetan clairvoyant has foretold on the basis of old Tibetan records:

"Other things are: In the future Italy will be conquered by Communism. For the time being Christian religion will be lost and the Vatican will be closed, cardinals and bishops will be killed, Communism will seep throughout Europe".

2. President Rutherford of the Watch Tower Bible Society had informed 15,000 Bible students in Toronto as far back as Sunday 24th July 1927:

"... 'Organised Christianity', which is a part of Babylon or the Devil's organisation will fall like a great millstone into the sea.

“The Doom of ‘Organised Christianity’ or Babylon is sealed!”

3. The Holy Bible also confirms this as:

“And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon The Great (*i.e.* Greater Babylonia or all countries following Nimrodism) is fallen, is fallen and is become the habitations of the devil...”  
(Revelation 18: 2).

4. Shah Neamatullah had warned of this more than 800 years ago in 1152 A.D. as follows:

Couplet 54: “(The two countries whose names commence with ‘Alif’ (*i.e.* America and Anglistan or England) will be eliminated (by ‘Ra’ or Russia) in such a devastating form that no trace whatsoever will be left of them save and except their names in the pages of history.

Couplet 55: “This (kind of annihilation of nations) would be the punishment of the Almighty Invisible (God) upon the sinful Western civilisation.

“Never again will they be able to claim (as Rome has been) the seat of priestly power to influence this world.

Couplet 56: “The disbelievers in God (*i.e.* Atheists or Communists) will conquer the world (after destroying the Western civilisation).

“But in the end they will eventually be destroyed and condemned to hell.

Couplet 61: “If you want success and continuity (of your nations), (I beg to you) in the name of Allah, obey his orders.

“Live according to His last set of commandments”.

From these prophecies it would appear that after communist Russia has annihilated America and England in the Nuclear Holocaust of the Third World War, they will make themselves masters of most parts of the world. They would bodily harm a Pope and kill many cardinals and bishops to wipe out Christianity from Italy. There will be no more Popes thereafter.

5. The suppression of “the Prophecy of Fatima” since 1960 shows clearly that the Church is determined not to allow Christendom to be warned of the impending Nuclear Holocaust which is going to exterminate them. Alas! it appears that the Church rather prefers the death of the millions comprising Christendom or the European groups of Nations to take place with its own destruction rather than warn them to save themselves by honestly and frankly disclosing the truth that the present Christianity has nothing whatsoever to do with the Real Jesus of Nazareth, but is the religion of Nimrod the accursed at the Tower of Babel which was propagated and introduced by Emperor Saint Constantine from the Nicaean Council of 325 A.D. when the Hebrew teachings of the Real Jesus recorded by Levi and John in Aramaic script were burnt and the false Greek Bibles were created under this Pagan Roman Emperor’s orders by St. Athanasius, the man who burnt the original Evangel of Jesus as read earlier in Chapter 12. Is it not the duty of the Church, when their destruction has been warned by the Prophecy of Fatima to guide their followers to give up the Nimrodic Faith of Christianity and to realise the Mission of Holy Jesus (already read in Chapter 13) and surrender to the Will of Allah—Al Islam—“Thy will be done on Earth as it is in Heaven”—without which there is no salvation for the many millions who comprise the advanced and developed nations of this earth—Britain (the first beast in the Daniel 7: 4 ), America (the second beast in Daniel 7: 5) and the eight-nation European Economic Community (the third beast in Daniel 7: 6) and who according to the Prophecy of Daniel will be destroyed as already read in Chapter 15: F and G—which is again the same as the “Prophecy of Fatima”.

Thus it will appear that the “*Prophecy of Fatima*” in spite of its suppression by the Church since 1st January 1960 is now disclosed to the public through six independent sources including two from the Holy Bible itself *viz*: Jean Dixon, Dr. Lobsang Rampa, President Rutherford of the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society, Prophet Daniel, St. John in the Revelation and Shah Neamatullah.



Such an attitude of the church for the suppression of the truth is naturally going to cause a lot of dissatisfaction amongst its followers. Jeane Dixon has prophesied this also, see page 152 of *“My Life and Prophecies”* (published 1970):

“Within the next twenty years the Catholic Church will undergo more drastic changes in doctrine and tradition than ever before in history. Steadily increasing numbers of priests and high ranking officials will apply for permission to marry—and will end up by marrying with or without permission. The church will become so divided in matters of dogma and principles that it will split into many factions”.

Instead of Christianity having a clear minimum 25 years notice from 1960, the year fixed by Jesus for the disclosure of the “Prophecy of Fatima” by the Church, they will now have hardly 12 years in hand from the publication of this book to set their house in order. Therefore there is no time to lose! The dates as to when these incidents are likely to take place according to the Holy Bible itself and others are given hereafter.

### **C. Does the Bible support these forecastings of dates?**

In this connection let us look at some of the foretellings of Daniel in the Holy Bible, for example:

“And I heard but I understood not: then said I, O my Lord, what shall be the end of these things?

“And He said, Go thy way, Daniel for the words are closed up and sealed till the time of the end.

“Many shall be purified, and made white (*i.e.* those who surrender to the Will of Allah), and tried, *but the wicked shall do wickedly! and none of the wicked shall understand* (that they are following the cursed religion of Nimrod of Babylon called Christianity); *but the wise shall understand.*

“And from the time that the daily sacrifice shall be taken away, and

the abomination that maketh desolate set up, there shall be one thousand two hundred and ninety days.

“Blessed is he that waiteth, and cometh to the thousand three hundred and five and thirty days.

“But go thou thy way till the end be: for thou shalt rest, and stand in thy lot at the end of the day” (Daniel 12: 8-13).

### **1. The period between the Two Abominations that maketh desolate**

If each day were to represent one solar year as has been accepted by most authorities of the Christian Churches, then we have been given the dates of two important disasters

The first of these (Daniel 12: 11) informs that between the abolition of the daily sacrifice in the temple of Jerusalem and the abomination that maketh desolate set up amongst the children of Abraham there shall be a period of 1, 290 years.

Jerusalem was attacked by King Nebuchadnezzar for the third time when he laid siege to it in 609 B.C. (II King 25: 1 & 2). Nebuchadnezzar eventually destroyed and burnt the temple to the ground in 607 B.C. (II King 25: 8-10; Jeremiah 52: 12-14). If we are to take the date of the abolition of the daily sacrifices as commencing from 609 B.C. and to it we add a period of 1,290 years as in the prophecy of Daniel we shall come to:

1,290 years in the prophecy of Daniel

Less 609 B.C.—The siege of Jerusalem which ended in its destruction.

Balance 681 years or we come to the year 681 A.D.

What was the major catastrophe to the children of Abraham around 681 A.D. or a few months earlier or later?

An incident which not only shocked the world then but is also an event which is mourned over annually even now was the martyrdom of

the male members of the descendants of Abraham on the 10th day of October 680 A.D. *i.e.* 10th Muharram 60 A.H. at Kerbala. It was the martyrdom of Hussain, the second grandson of Prophet Muhammad with almost all male members of the family that were present including even little male children. This is the abomination or shocking massacre that made a desolate scene at Kerbala by killing almost all the male members from the family of the grandchildren of Muhammad, the Promised Prophet from the seed of Ishmael, the first-born of Abraham.

Thus this foretelling of Daniel has covered two major disasters faced by the descendants of the two blessed sons of Abraham.

The first incident covers the destruction of Jerusalem and the descendants of Isaac, the second son of Abraham.

The second incident covers the martyrdom of Hussain and the male members of the family of Muhammad at Kerbala, who were the descendants of Ishmael, the first born of Abraham.

Both these episodes are of very great significance for they acted as a tonic for the revival of faith amongst the two groups of children of Abraham, when they had fallen away from the right path of "Surrender to the will of God Almighty".

This second disaster of Karbala on the Bank of the River Euphrates has been again referred to in the Holy Bible as follows:

"...For the Lord God of hosts hath a sacrifice in the north country by the river Euphrates" (Jeremiah 46: 10).

No other such sacrifice to Allah was ever made on the banks of the Euphrates involving any descendants of Abraham except the martyrdom of Hussain with almost all the male members of the family of Prophet Muhammad. This great sacrifice of 72 innocent souls was for the purpose of saving all mankind, who have surrendered to the will of the Almighty from the time of Adam the first man till the end of this earth.

It will therefore be seen that not only the date but also the place of

the martyrdom of Hussain along with 72 innocent holy personages has been clearly confirmed in two different passages of the Holy Bible, thus leaving no scope for doubts that they relate to this great sacrifice for the benefit of mankind which took place after the advent of Islam.

It naturally follows that the next set of dates given in the Holy Bible by Prophet Daniel in the same passages should also relate to incidents connected with Islam, which in fact it does as will be seen hereafter.

## **2. The period of waiting between the Blessed Days**

Daniel 12: 12 reads:

“Blessed is he: that waiteth, and cometh to thousand three hundred and five and thirty days”.

This foretelling shows that the time lag between two blessed periods would be 1,335 years and from Daniel 12: 8 and 9 it would be clear that the second of these two periods would be at “The time of the end”, which means somewhere around our period. The questions before us therefore are:

When was the last of the blessed period?

When did it terminate?

Jesus informs us about the first blessed time as follows:

“I therefore say unto you that the messenger of God is a splendour that will give gladness to nearly all that God hath made, for he is adorned with the spirit of understanding and of counsel, the spirit of wisdom and might, the spirit of fear and love, the spirit of prudence and temperance; he is adorned with the spirit of charity and mercy, the spirit of justice and piety, the spirit of gentleness and patience, which he hath received from God three times more than He hath given to any of His creatures. *O blessed time*, when he shall come to the world! Believe me that I have seen him and have done him reverence, even as every prophet hath seen him: seeing that of his spirit God giveth to them prophecy (*i.e.* prophethood). And when I saw him my soul was

filled with consolation, saying: ‘O Muhammad, God be with thee, and may He make me worthy to untie thy shoelatchet, for obtaining this (honour to untie the shoe lace of Prophet Muhammad) I shall be a great prophet and holy one of God.’

“And having said this, Jesus rendered his thanks to God” (page 105 of *Gospel of Barnabas*).

The Prophet Muhammad established the democratic secular Government of Islam at Madinah on his arrival in 622 A.D. This was the commencement of the last of the blessed periods. He departed from earthly life during 631 A.D. Thereafter four of his disciples became Khalifas or Caliphs (Viceroys) of Islam and ruled in accordance with his principles for a period of about 30 years. This blessed period of the rule of justice and equality ended with the martyrdom of Ali, the seal of the rightful Khalifas of Islam in 661 A.D. This martyrdom of Ali marked the end of the blessed period of rule by religious heads for the benefit of the world at large. If we are to take this 661 A.D. as the end of the first blessed period and add to it 1,335 years being the foretelling of Daniel 12: 12 we come to the figure of 1996 A.D. This marks the end of the period of tribulations—the Battle of Armageddon and commencement of the blessed period of about 1000 years—the era of “*God’s rule on Earth—Thy Kingdom come, Thy will be done on Earth as it is in Heaven*”.

### **3. The dates of coming events according to Biblical calculations**

#### **a. The Prediction of Daniel**

Therefore according to this prediction of Daniel the good blessed period will only commence from 1996 A.D. (Daniel 12: 12 and 13). This is the year which then should mark the end of the 7 years of tribulations resulting in the Battle of Armageddon, as already foretold in the Holy Bible (Chapter 15: M to W).

### **b. The Prediction of St. Matthew**

In St. Matthew 24: 34 it is foretold that the bad period will last for “One Generation”. Many Christian scholars say it has already commenced from 1914 A.D. and so will end by 1999 A.D. (Chapter 23: A to D).

We have seen in Chapter 23: D that the transition period between the end of our present system of civilisation and the commencement of the new era is 1974 and 1999 A. D respectively *i.e.* a transition period of about 25 years.

### **c. The Holy Bible warns of three mass-scale deaths**

Another important item of information given by the Holy Bible reads:

“And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet.

“For they are the spirits (or souls) of devils working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty (*i.e.* the Battle of Armageddon).

“Behold, I come as a thief...

“And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon” (Revelation 16: 13-16).

The only living thing that comes out of the mouth of a person is his soul. Whenever that happens the body dies. From the above it would be obvious that there will be three major incidents causing the annihilation of three major groups of people. What are these three events?

### **d. The Destruction of Greater Babylon**

The first of these is the spirit or the soul coming out of the mouth of the dragon, which goes to gather the kings of the earth to their

destruction on a day chosen by God Almighty, which date is unknown to mankind as emphasised in Revelation 16: 15—“Behold I come as a thief...”

That the dragon stands for “The Great Babylon” would be clear from a subsequent verse—“and great Babylon come into remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of wine of the fierceness of His wrath” (Revelation 16: 19).

This is the reference to the “Nuclear Holocaust” or the third World War (Chapter 25: C to G) which is meant to destroy Nimrodism Babylonia from the face of the earth.

The most perfect form of Nimrodism in practice at present in the world is Christianity (Chapter 12 and 14). The countries professing Christianity are the U.K., America and Europe, hence they together, form “Babylon the Great” of today according to Biblical Scholars (Chapter 25: C to G and X and Chapter 27: E and F). Therefore it is clear that the first of these three incidents is going to destroy Greater Babylonia or America, Britain, and the remaining eight members of the European Economic Community.

The reasons for this disaster and how it can be avoided are given in Chapter 2: I. In Chapter 29: C-5c we shall read that this calamity is being brought about by Allah to warn mankind that if they want their future safety, they must give up Nimrodism or Christianity and surrender immediately to the Will of Allah—The requirements of “*The Prophecy of Fatima*”, which is being deliberately suppressed by the Church since 1960—much to the detriment of the Christians.

#### **e. The Destruction of Communists**

The second of these is a mighty beast. The soul of it coming out of its mouth in the form of a frog indicates the death or destruction of “*The mighty beast*”. The mighty beast according to the Holy Bible will be the destroyer of America, Britain, and the remaining eight members of the

European Economic Community (Chapter 25: F and G). Hence this Biblical reference concerns the destruction of 5/6th of the might of the victorious Communists, as already read in Chapter 25: G to M, when they go to capture Sheba (Madinah) and Dedan (Mecca), the last two religious places in opposition to the sphere of Communist influence.

The actual method by which 5/6th of the Communists' might will be destroyed according to the Holy Bible is given in the very next sentences *viz*:

“And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, and so great (even greater than that which caused the sinking of Atlantis—the lost civilisation more than 4,000 years ago).

“And the great city (*i.e.* human civilisation) was divided into three parts (or incidents) and the cities of the nation fell; and great Babylon came into remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of wine of the fierceness of His wrath (to destroy the two most popular branches of Nimrodism *i.e.* the Christian Nations and the Atheists or Communists).

“(Then in the second incident *i.e.* the destruction of Gog and his Magogs and Communists and their followers who have been described as those living in the islands in the midst of Magogs) and every island fled away, and the mountains were not found.

“And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven every stone about the weight of a talent; and men blasphemed God because of the plague of hail; for the plague thereof was exceeding great” (Revelation 16: 18-21).

#### **f. The Destruction of the False Prophet and his followers**

The third of these is the soul in the form of a frog coming out of the mouth of “The false prophet”. This is the third incident which brings the world into the final battle against the truth in which the apostate Jews under the command of the false prophet fight Jesus and the Saint



Saviour and those who have surrendered to the Will of God in the great Battle of Armageddon.

The Holy Bible is very explicit in the following verse:

“And He gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon” (Revelation 16: 16).

Armageddon will complete the destruction of all disbelievers, who have escaped annihilation in the previous two incidents. Should we not pay attention to these Biblical warnings of the three imminent disasters? Should not the people of this earth surrender themselves to the will of Allah? Are they not interested in their safety? Or are they still so intoxicated by the spell cast by Nimrod upon humanity some 4,000 years ago which caused the curse of Allah to fall upon mankind at the Tower of Babel that man is still unable to realise the truth!—The warnings of the “Prophecy of Fatima” which is being suppressed since 1960?

#### **g. Biblical dates for these events**

Taking all these Biblical calculations into consideration, it is clear that the time-table of those coming events works out something like this:

##### **Between 1974/1989**

1. Terrible food shortages and famines resulting in many deaths.
2. Uncontrollable pestilences and epidemics taking a huge toll of human lives.
3. There will be devastating earthquakes in which large areas of land will subside and possibly large chunks of the sea-bed will rise out of the Ocean, changing the course of warm sea currents: This in due course making deserts into fertile food bowls and temperate Zone areas into tundra uninhabitable ice wastes!
4. There will be increasing lawlessness and it will not be possible to control this.

5. Disobedience to parents, teachers and elders will become universal.
6. People will do anything and everything for the sake of money, lust and sexual gratification.
7. Having a form of Godly devotion for the sake of deceiving the public.
8. Scientific and industrial activities would pollute the earth's atmosphere so seriously that if continued it would render the earth unsuitable for the habitat of mankind.
9. A terrible war involving many nations. A holocaust which will destroy Greater Babylonia comprising America, U.K., and Europe and all their large and beautiful cities—the industrial commercial complexes (Chapter 25: C to F). Thus Allah will show His hatred towards Nimrodism or Christianity for those who have the sense to realise (Chapter 29: C-5 and 7).
10. The victors according to the Bible will be the settlers of the North *i.e.* the Russians—Mongols also called the Gog and his Magogs (Chapter 25: G).
11. A Gog of Magog *i.e.* a Commander of these Northern people will lead the Communists to world-wide domination (Chapter 25: Hand I-1 to 3).
12. The Magogs (Communists) will overrun and occupy Palestine (Chapter 25: J; 29: C-5d). ,
13. After the occupation of Palestine, the commander of the Magogs will get an evil thought of trying to occupy the oil-rich Arab countries *i.e.* Sheba (Madinah) and Dedan (Mecca). (Chapter 25: K; 29: C-5e).
14. At the behest of a saint and his prayers, Divine help will come and destroy 5/6th of the mighty invincible Communist Armies in such a frightening but miraculous manner that the terror of

the name of Allah will come upon the lips of all survivors. Communism will end instantaneously and become a thing of the past for ever. Thus a “Saint” of great importance to mankind will be disclosed (Chapter 25: L-M; 29: C-5 E to H).

**Between 1989/1996. A.D.**

1. In the vacuum caused by the destruction of the Communist World Power, ten separate governments will be set up (Chapter 25: M).
2. Of these, three will be overpowered by the “False Prophet” and he will set up a powerful government in Palestine with the aid of apostate Jews and their worldwide wealth! (Chapter 25: O to R; 29: C-6).
3. This will mark the commencement of tribulations or the reign of the King of Terror or the False Prophet. (Chapter 25: M to O).
4. According to the Holy Bible this period of Tribulation will comprise two parts. The first will be a period of 42 months of terror (Revelation 11: 2).
5. The second period will comprise 1260 days during which two saints will warn people of the Battle of Armageddon and try to win over souls to the religion of “Surrender to the Will of God” (Revelation 11: 3).
6. This will alarm the “False Prophet” and he will prepare for a showdown with the followers of these two “Saints”.

**Between 1996/1999 A.D.**

1. The events leading to the battle of Armageddon.
2. In the beginng the forces of the “False Prophet” will be victorious and the army of the two “Saints” will fall back (Chapter 25: S).

3. Jesus will come down from heaven to assist (Chapter 25: U).
4. Divine help will be led by Prophet Muhammad on a white horse and his band of angels (Chapter 25: T).
5. Eventually the two Saints and Jesus will secure a complete victory at Armageddon (Chapter 25: V; 29: C-7a to h).
6. A period of a few years *i.e* from about 1996 to 1999 A.D. will be required by the two Saints to bring the world to the one religion of Al-Islam (Chapter 26: A-5 ; 29: C-8). These two saints will be the last of the great Imams from the children of Hasan and Hussain *viz*:
  - a) The Saint-Saviour or Imam Mahdi whose name will be Syed Muhammad son of Syed Abdulla from the family Hasan the eldest grandson of the Promised Prophet Muhammad and who would be the duplicate of the Promised Prophet (Chapter 21: D-6).
  - b) The Khalifatul Mahdi or the viceroy of the Mahdi who is Imam Abul Qassim, the Ghaibul Imam (the Imam who disappeared), the son of Imam Hasan Askari from the children of Hussain the great Martyr of Karbala— Chapter 21: D-6).
  - c) These two will be assisted by Jesus, the Ghaibun Nabi (the prophet who disappeared from view), the son of the Virgin Mary and the last Prophet from Isaac the second son of Prophet Abraham (Chapter 29: C-7B to H).
7. The destruction of all weapons of war. The commencement of the blessed period when wars will be forgotten and become things of the past (Chapter 25: W; 29: C-8A to D). See also Holy Bible—Micah 4: 1-5.
8. This advent will bring about the universal establishment of Al-Islam by the two saints assisted by Jesus, son of the Virgin Mary.

## **D. A comparison between the Biblical dates and the foretellings of Jeane Dixon**

### **1. The period of terrible wars**

On pages 180-181 of “*A Gift of Prophecy*” Jeane Dixon states that according to her interpretation of the visions she has seen it means that during the decade of “1980,” a terrible war will take place in which many Asian and African nations will join with Red China to destroy the American way of life.

Therefore the terrible war of “Nations against Nations” foretold in the Holy Bible as taking place before 1989 A.D. would take place between 1980-1989 A. D.

### **2. When will the “Saint-Saviour” be disclosed?**

According to Jeane Dixon on page 172 of *ibid*:

“Mankind will begin to feel the great force of this man in the early 1980s” (see also page 182 of *ibid*).

This also fits in with the Biblical Foretellings.

### **3. When will this “Saint-Saviour” bring the world into one community?**

Jeane Dixon on pages 171-172 of *ibid* states that this man will be able to bring about universal peace and establish a world-wide regime for the benefit of mankind by 1999 (See also page 182 of *ibid*).

Thus there is no difference between the prophecies of Jeane Dixon and the Holy Bible, which has forecasted the same things as taking place by 1999 A.D. when the period of one generation expires (St. Matthew 24: 34) as also 4,000 years from the incident of breaking of Idols of Nimrodism by Abraham and his escape from the huge fire (Chapter 6: F).

## **E. Others also confirm the Biblical foretelling of dates of coming events**

There are numerous foretellings from various sources about coming events between 1974 and 1999 A.D.—the Biblical dates of the transition period from our present system of civilisation and the coming “New Era”. A very few examples are quoted hereunder which will give a fair idea of what one may expect in this crucial period.

### **1. Events between 1974/1981 A.D.**

The Astrological Magazine of February 1970 on page 207 informs us that during the period 1974/1981 A.D. a world-wide famine is to be expected in spite of the green revolution in agriculture.

This famine will result in heavy loss of lives.

### **2. A series of nuclear world wars after 1985 A.D.**

Peter Vidal in the *Sunday Standard*, Bombay dated 7.9. 1969 under the heading: “WHAT THE STARS FORETELL” has stated:

It is towards the end of this century, from 1985 onwards that there will be a series of major Nuclear world wars.

Thus Peter Vidal has calculated that a series of world wars or Nuclear calamities will take place between 1985 and 1999 A.D.

### **3. A Great World Calamity expected around 1987.**

The following was published in a local paper of Madras on 2nd January 1970:

“DHARWAR dated 1st January 1970”

“Only spiritual persons could save the world from a great calamity that would befall it in 1987, said Sri Kumaraswamiji of the Navakalyan Math today.

“The Swamiji, who came out of his 10 months’ solitude of Tapasya

(i.e. prayers and penance) for the good of the world, added that a major part of the world would be wiped out and no power on earth or science could save it”.

“The Swamiji was addressing a gathering of 10,000 people which had collected at the Tapovan, four miles away from here, to greet him and have his darshan (sight and blessings)”.

From the above it will be clear that if the Europeans want to save themselves even now, they must realise immediately the importance of the “Prophecy of Fatima”, as revealed by Jeane Dixon of the end of the Papacy in this century and arrange at once to forsake Christendom which is the doomed religion of Nimrod of Babylon and instead surrender themselves to the will of Allah as warned by Jesus if they want their safety. They are already more than twelve years late since 1960 when the “Prophecy of Fatima” should have been revealed by the Church. So now there is no more time to waste.

#### **4. Warnings of Shah Neamat-Ullah.**

Shah Neamat-Ullah had warned in the year 1152 A.D. in couplet No. 61 of his thirteenth book of prophecies as to how the European people can escape from the disasters of the third World War as follows:

“If you want success and continuity (of your nations),

(I beg of you) in the name of Allah, Obey His orders and live according to His last set of commandments”.

If one will ignore this warning then Shah Neamat-Ullah has foretold that Russia will destroy England and America in a very heartless manner in this third world war as read earlier in Chapter 2: H.

#### **5. The warning of the Learned Dean**

The learned Dean Inge has declared:

“The future will show whether civilisation, as we know it, *can be*

*mended or must be ended.*

“The time seems ripe for a new birth of religious and spiritual life which would remould society, as no less potent force could have the strength to do”.

## **6. End of transition period in 1998 A.D.**

On page 238 of *The Astrological Magazine*—Feb. 1970 issue, we are informed that the present transition period will end in 1998 A.D. Hence the new era will be ushered in by 1999 A.D.

This transition period is described on page 237 of *ibid* as follows:

“Our generation is now facing one of these turning points. A tempest is blowing all over the world, *men of science themselves admit that all mechanical, materialistic and Cartesian theories are collapsing one after another like a house of cards. They have to find a new approach to the great forces governing the universe.* A gigantic work of synthesis is being started from everywhere, forcing the minds to search for another dimension”.

## **7. Prophecies regarding the United States during transition period**

Peter Vidal has forecast in *The Sunday Standard*, Bombay dated 1st. February 1970 under the heading of “Whither U.S.?”

### **1971/1974**

The U.S. will lose momentum and lose sense of purpose, will suffer loss of prestige, will suffer disasters detrimental to national fortunes including may be extremes of weather, major earthquakes, physical or political, uncontrollable epidemics *etc.*

### **Upto 1984**

There will be a gradual enervation of the national will. Isolationist policies will be adopted. There will be a gradual withdrawal from those areas of the Pacific and the East into which the U.S. has expanded.



### **1980/1987**

There is a warning of racial conflicts between white and coloured citizens. This may possibly lead to civil war?

As a result the U.S. may be split up into several nations or political units around 1986/1987?

### **1987/1988**

The U.S. will be plunged in this period into some very great calamity.

There is a very real danger that, owing to the United States' bad disaster progress (in trade, commerce and industries) throughout the world will be held back or slowed down.

## **F. Foretellings from Tibet**

From the old records of Tibet a person who calls himself Dr. Lobsang Rampa has given the following interesting information in "Chapters of Life":

*On page 133:*

England and the United States will amalgamate eventually for protection. England will come under the direction of the United States and will, in all probability have an American as its Governor.

*On page 134:*

From over Alaska will come rockets with Nuclear bombs from Communist Russia. Great devastation will be caused in the United States and Canada. By the retaliatory methods of these countries, great devastation will also be caused in Russia.

*On page 135:*

Around 2000 A.D. will see great events in space, not always for peace. There shall be great rivalry between the two surviving great powers viz: The Russians and the Chinese. Soon this will lead to a devastating terrible nuclear war between China and Russia in space.

On earth, people will huddle in deep shelters and several people shall be saved.

According to the Holy Bible this is the war by the Gog of Magog in which 5/6th of the World's population will be destroyed. This war according to the Bible should be over before 1989 A.D. when the seven years of Tribulations start as read herebefore.

Somewhere around the year 2008 A.D. or a few years earlier or later *i.e.* say anytime between 1995 and 2010 A.D. will come some people from outer space, from far beyond our Solar system: They will be human beings like us. They will come here and want to settle on this earth. The humans already here will be frightfully cross about it all, and they will look upon their unwanted guests with a jaundiced eye. For a time there will be a considerable commotion. However, common sense and reason will prevail finally.

The people from outer space will show peaceful intentions—a thing sadly lacking on this Earth. In time the people from outer space shall settle down with the people who are native to this Earth, and they will intermarry with all races, thus setting the example and inducing the people of this earth to intermarry irrespective of caste, colour or nationality. All races will thus be induced to intermarry so that at last there shall be only one race and it shall be known as the “Race of the Tan” because the mixture of all colours—white, black, yellow and brown, will result in a very pleasant tan shade (see Chapter 29: C-7a for explanation of invaders to our earth from outer space). This will be the commencement of the Golden Age—the age of peace, the age of tranquility and of high occult knowledge. It shall be an age when Man, whether terrestrial or extra-terrestrial, shall get along harmoniously (see Chapter 30 for greater details and explanations of these old Tibetan prophecies).

### **G. The predictions of Nostradamus**

The famous French clairvoyant named Nostradamus has foretold the coming of the False-prophet as follows:

“The third king of Terror will rise in July 1999” as against 1989 from other sources.

“This King will reign for 27 years with blood, human corpses, reddened water and hell on earth” as against 7 years of Tribulations according to the Holy Bible.

### **H. The conclusion on foretold dates**

The Holy Bible and many other sources indicate that the period of crisis will last for 25 years from 1974 A.D. to 1999 A.D. According to Muslims, it will last for a period of anything from 20 to 50 years from 1980 A.D. *i.e.* the end of the fourteenth century A.H. If it is within 20 years from 1980 then it coincides exactly with the Holy Bible. Whilst Nostradamus has stated that the period of crisis will commence from July 1999 A.D. and last for a period of 27 years.

Do these minor discrepancies of about 25/27 years make any vital or important difference to the history or the existence of man on earth? As long as the basic facts are clear and identical, these minor differences of a few years definitely do not make any difference whatsoever in the context of human history about the change from one type of civilisation into a new era. The Holy Bible makes it explicit that nobody, not even the angels know the exact date and time when all these disasters and changes are going to take place *e.g.*:

“Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled.

“But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not (even) the angels of heaven but my God only” (St. Matthew 24: 34 & 36).

Wise persons are they who take the earliest possible date for commencement of disasters and start preparations for the worst. In

that way they will not be taken by surprise when the bad times come. They will be able not only to save themselves and their families but also be able to help even their neighbours.

The important thing therefore is not the exact date and time at which a certain disaster is going to take place but that, people should prepare themselves in good time before the commencement of the disasters, which can take place any time after 1974 A.D. if they do not wish to be caught napping as warned in the Holy Bible:

“Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth (fix for the various calamities to) come.

“But know this, that if the good man of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up.

“Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not (will the disasters foretold by) the son of man cometh” (St. Matthew 24: 42-44).



## Chapter 27

# You May Survive Armageddon and Enter Into God's New World



A study has been carried out by the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society and the International Bible Students Association on this subject. This research involving several years of labour was published in 1955. A few important extracts from this valuable work are given hereunder:

### **A. Proclaiming the Good News**

Under this heading on pages 7-15 of "*You may survive Armageddon into God's New World*" we get the following information:

1. A meeting was called by the Watch Tower Bible Society for Sunday 26th July 1953.
2. It was attended by over 165,000 people in three groups and places.
3. This meeting was called to enlighten people of the world upon the following prophecy made by Prophet Isaiah some twenty-five centuries back as to what would happen after Armageddon *viz:*

"They shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning hooks,

Nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they

learn war any more” (Isaiah 2: 4). The same information is also in Micah 4: 3.

4. The president of this association opened his speech with:

“Armageddon will be the worst thing ever to hit the earth within the history of man. God’s new world will be the best thing ever to come to distressed mankind ...” (page 11 of *ibid*).

He went on to say:

“For us to know that the best immediately follows the worst gives us courage to consider the subject of our discussion So if we have yet to endure Armageddon, it will be better for us to face it with understanding, in the hope of surviving and entering into a new world of God’s making, a world altogether different from the one mankind has known for thousands of years, to its sorrow Armageddon will prove a great blessing in disguise” (page 11 of *ibid*).

This momentous speech was closed with these words:

“Avoid perishing with this old world in the ‘war of the great day of God Almighty’. Get ready now to live *after Armageddon in God’s New Word!*” (Page 11 of *ibid*).

Ordinarily, for any man to think of trouble is not a pleasant thing. We all shrink instinctively from it. But the consideration of Armageddon, when rightly understood, is indeed inviting and beneficial. No man on the earth can hope to escape this war! There will be no neutrals in this war! Each will have to be on either one side or the other! Happy will those be who find themselves on the winning side. Only those who favour and uphold the winning side can have a hope of surviving this greatest of all Wars. It is now possible to know which would be the winning side and take one’s stand in advance. And this is what invites us to a consideration of Armageddon and of Allah’s New World that will follow it. That is why we are wise if we are thoughtful and consider the overwhelming evidence of the nearness of it. The Holy Bible advises us against acting hastily without knowledge and taking a

disastrous course:

“Also, that soul be without knowledge, it is not good; and he that hasteth with his feet sinneth” (Proverbs 19: 2).

“A prudent man foreseeeth the evil, and hideth himself: but the simple pass on, and are punished” (Proverbs 22: 3).

So do not consider this mere: calamity-howling, scoff at it and go on in ignorant simplicity and suffer:

“How long, ye simple ones, will ye love simplicity? and the scorers delight in their scorning, and fools hate knowledge?” (Proverbs 1: 22).

“When the scorner is punished, the simple is made wise: and when the wise is instructed, he receiveth knowledge” (Proverbs 21:11).

In our day of man's inhumanity to man and general lawlessness, the warnings of the coming Battle of Armageddon and the good news of the *wonderful* period to follow is a message which is of central importance to each and every one of us whosoever he may be and wheresoever he may be living on any part of the earth.

Many outstanding individuals have recognised that the incredible wrongs in various societies are caused, in part, by the influences to which man's nature is susceptible. Many philosophical systems and political ideologies have been developed in an effort to overcome the “baser aspects” of man's nature.

The republican form of government in the U.S.A. was born with the express purpose of circumventing man's inhuman rule over other human beings. Many of the American founding fathers, for example, were deeply concerned with the defects and drawbacks in man's nature. Alexander Hamilton (1757-1804) was particularly suspicious of human nature.

The English philosopher John Locke (1622-1704) and John Stuart Mill (1806-1873) devoted much of their philosophical speculation to the problem of how to have a strong government without despotism.

For example the French Revolution of 1789 was held as a triumph of human need for justice to the poor over government despotism. Theoretically “Marxism” and its political counterpart, “Communism”, seek to change human nature for the better for the masses.

Researchers all over the world are concerned with the problem of man’s nature. B.F. Skinner, American behaviourist, recommends “biological engineering” in order to direct humans into doing that which is beneficent. The late psychologist Abraham Maslow, talked of the need for “self-actualized” people. Many have studied mentally healthy people in order to discover why they behaved as they did. After a lifetime of work, Maslow concluded that love, especially in early life, is a central need of all human beings.

Still, as is quite obvious, humanity has failed to develop love-oriented people on a vast scale. Communism, in practice has not exactly proven a boon to humanity. Representative government is only preserved by exterior forces, *i.e.* the checks and balances which keep groups from acquiring despotic power. Yet within the structure itself, there is confusion, inequality and man’s characteristic inhumanity to man.

No revolution or new government either before or since the establishment of Islamic government at Madinah by Muhammad and ending with the martyrdom of Ali has produced anything even resembling the kind of utopian conditions man would like to live under, save and except the annual gathering of millions of people from all over the earth comprising all the races including whites, yellows and blacks, speaking numerous languages and having different cultures all fraternising together for months on the occasion of Haj for the past fourteen centuries. That these have succeeded where all others have failed is only because they have surrendered to the will of Allah and act in the manner in which He wants them to behave.

Today because of our refusal to surrender to His Will and act in the manner in which He wants, has made us failures in each and every



effort we have made for the upliftment of man. Rather it has had a contrary effect! So we accept a condition in which war, bigotry, stealing, mental unhappiness and a host of other ills are very much a part of the fabric of our daily life.

Internally, humans are still by and large human, with all that the word implies. It is as though a vital ingredient was missing from the recipe for love-oriented humans or a piece had vanished from the perfection puzzle. We just don't seem to be able to do much with human inhumanity and that is solely because we have become materialists instead of surrendering to the will of the Almighty and living according to His Divine Laws of love!

At best, human nature appears to be an odd combination of contradictory behavioural patterns. A Bahutu tribesman of Southern Africa may love his children but butcher the off spring of a Watsui neighbouring tribe because of years of Watsui suppression. A common citizen may respect his friend's property but pilfer from the local department store. A man may jump into a pool to save his neighbour's drowning wife, even at the risk of his own life, but he might also steal his neighbour's wife by having an affair with her.

As such "non-love" situations have been multiplied by the millions and have resulted in a collective World that kills, steals, hates and is generally filled with man's cruelty to man.

In spite of all our efforts, we have been unable to develop loving human beings and a society that is moving steadily into a condition which could broadly be defined as living under a "concept of full love"—to love—and to be loved—to live a happy contented life—at peace and harmony with all mankind.

But in spite of everything evil which is happening around us today on a world-wide scale and the failure of each effort to make us Jove one another and live as a single world-wide brotherhood, at least for the enlightened are writings on the wall announcing the good news of the wonderful time to come after the Battle of Armageddon which is meant

to destroy only those who in spite of all the warnings refuse to surrender to the will of the All Loving Creator in the manner in which He desires. It will not destroy the believers.

Thus perfect love between mankind is in any case going to come about after the Battle of Armageddon, whether we want it or not—whether we strive for it or not. But those who will ignore these facts and will not strive to save themselves will surely be destroyed in the Battle of Armageddon.

Therefore let us not leave our problems to the research scholars. By themselves they cannot be successful. Let us all face the facts, understand them, and then choose the way of survival if we want to survive into the wonderful period that follows Armageddon which is briefly described at the end of this treatise in Chapter 30.

## **B. God will fight**

On this subject on page 18 of *ibid* it is recorded:

“No one can gain victory over an Almighty Fighter, nor can an Almighty Fighter ever lose. The prize of victory at Armageddon is so great, the issues that are to be fought out are so universal, that the war calls for the Almighty God of the universe Himself to go into action. That explains why the war fought at Armageddon is Scripturally called ‘the war of the great day of God the Almighty’ (Revelation 16:14, 16, NW). Those who are on His side can therefore say without national self-conceit, ‘God is with us’.”

“No one but the Almighty could take on a fight against all who array themselves against us and be certain to overcome all those that are against Him”.

It must be realised that those against the Almighty will have all the demonic power of science and its destructive Nuclear might with them, whilst those who have surrendered themselves to the will of Allah may be totally devoid of such equipments of war. Yet science and its demoniac nuclear weapons will not only be defeated but also totally

annihilated!

The miraculous manner in which this mighty army of earthmen with their fiendish nuclear power will be destroyed will not only be frightening for the victorious believers who will realise what tremendous and unimaginable power Allah can display as to bring the entire scientific knowledge of the earth into naught but it would also strike terror into the hearts of the disbelievers who would be tortured to death for cursing the Almighty. A quotation from the Holy Bible bringing this out is given hereunder:

“Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame.

“And He gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon

“And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, ‘It is done’.

“And there were voices, and thunder, and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake and so great.

“And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, every stone about the weight of a talent: and men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail; for the plague thereof was exceeding great” (Revelation 16: 15-18 and 21).

### **C. God did not fight for Christians**

On pages-29-30 of *“You May Survive Armageddon into God's New World”* is recorded

“Christendom's armies have fought for world domination as regards the earth, but not for the universal sovereignty of Jehovah God. There is no inspired record that either Jehovah God of ancient Israel or Jesus has taken part in any of the wars of Christendom and fought for any of her nations”.

#### **D. Then for whom did God fight?**

If God did not fight for the Christians, then for whom does He fight and whom will He eventually make victorious in the battle of Armageddon? The only Divinely inspired Scriptures which give these desperately needed answers are as follows:

“There was a token for you in the two (opposing) hosts (the defenders of Islam and the army of the disbelievers from Mecca) which met (at the oasis of Badr): one army fighting in the way of Allah, and another disbelieving, whom they saw clearly with their eyes as twice their number. Thus Allah strengtheneth with His help to whom He wills. Lo! herein verily is a lesson for those who have eyes” (Qur’an 3: 13).

“Ye (Muslims) *slew them* (the army of disbelievers from Mecca) *not* (in the battle of Badr), *but Allah slew them!* And thou (Muhammad) threwest not when thou didst throw (the handful of sand after praying for Allah’s help when it looked as though the small Muslim army would be defeated completely at the battle of Badr and this incident was the turning point which brought a great victory for the Muslims) but Allah threw, that He might test the believers by a fair test from Him. Lo! Allah is Hearer, Knower” (Qur’an 8: 17).

“O ye who believe! Be Allah’s helpers, even as Jesus son of Mary said unto his disciples: ‘Who are my helpers for Allah?’ They said: We are helpers. And a party of the children of Israel believed, while a party disbelieved” (Qur’an 61: 14).

“O ye who believe! If ye help Allah, He will help you and will make your foothold firm” (Qur’an 47: 7).

Angels fought regularly alongside the Muslim Armies in all the battles against the disbelievers during the life of Muhammad and even thereafter resulting in great victories for small bands of Muslims thus spreading Islam from the Atlantic to India and China in a very short time (pages 152-153 and 504, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fit Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

### **E. Who are the hypocrites?**

On pages 53-54 of “*You may survive Armageddon into God's New World*” the Watch Tower Bible Society has confirmed that Christians are hypocrites:

“Any open-minded examination of Christendom in the light of the Bible, which she claims as her Book, will prove she is practicing an adulterated, degraded form of Christianity, not the pure Bible kind of Christianity, not the real imitation of Jesus”.

Because of this Christianity will be destroyed at Armageddon. This is even confirmed by these Bible scholars on page 54 of *ibid* as under:

“Christendom claims to be the spiritual house of God or temple, applying to herself the words addressed to the true congregation of Christ's anointed followers: ‘Do you not know that you people are God's temple and that the spirit of God dwells in you? If anyone destroys the temple of God, God will destroy him; for the temple of God is holy, which temple you people are’ (1 Corinthians 3: 16, 17, NW). By bringing pagan doctrines and practices into her organization, which she claims to be the temple of God, and by persecuting those whose lives and teachings show they are members of that spiritual temple, Christendom has in effect been engaged in destroying Jehovah God's temple. There is only one possible outcome of this: God will destroy Christendom! Her certain destruction at Armageddon was typified by Israel's”.

### **F. God will destroy at Armageddon all forms of Nimrodism**

On page 51-52 of *ibid*, Bible researchers confirm:

“In the universal conflict of Armageddon the nations of this world will perish forever, including the so-called ‘Christian nations’ of Christendom ‘come near, ye nations, to hear; and hearken, ye peoples: let the earth hear, and all its fulness; the world, and all that cometh forth of it.

“For the wrath of Jehovah is against all the nations, and (His) fury

against all their armies: He hath devoted them to destruction, He hath delivered them to the slaughter. And their slain shall be cast out, and their stink shall come up from their carcasses, and the mountains shall be melted with their blood. And all the host of the heavens shall be dissolved, and the heaven shall be rolled together as a scroll; and all their host shall fade away, as a leaf fadeth from off the vine, and as the withered (fruit) from the fig-tree' (Isaiah 34: 1-4 Da). Christendom pretends to be made up of God's people, but she is really made up of those who do not live up to God's Book, the Holy Scriptures, but who go *in the ways of the Pagan Nations* (i.e. the teachings of Nimrod, the cursed of Babylon). *Christendom is hypocritical in her pretense of being Christian*: 'Isaiah aptly prophesied about you hypocrites, as it is written: "This people honour Me with their lips, but their hearts are far removed from Me. It is in vain that they pay respect to Me, because they teach as doctrines commands of man". Letting go the commandment of God you observe the tradition of men (Mark 7: 6-8, NW). God hates hypocrites, for hypocrites bring reproach upon His name and oppose His universal sovereignty. Logically, God hates Christendom. Soon He will destroy her with the rest of the world—Proverbs 6: 12-19".

### **G. Safety lies in surrender to the will of God**

On pages 58-59 of *ibid*:

"For anyone to find safe refuge and to escape with his life amid such global destruction will be a most difficult thing beyond the power of any and all modern scientists to provide. Yet there will be survivors. Not that we say so, but that Jehovah of hosts Himself says so. You may be among them. How? Jehovah, Who is interested in the salvation of His true people, tells us how. After warning of the destruction to come upon unfaithful Jerusalem and her realm of Judah in the day of His wrath, Jehovah addresses Himself to the nation that was weak in its worship of Him and divided in its devotion between Him and false gods, and He says: "Collect yourselves and gather together, O nation without shame, before the decree bring forth, (before) the day pass away as chaff, before the

fierce anger of Jehovah come upon you, before the day of Jehovah's anger come upon you. Seek Jehovah, all ye meek of the land, who have performed his ordinance; seek righteousness, seek meekness: it may be ye shall be hid in the day of Jehovah's anger."—Zephaniah 2: 1-3.

"Jerusalem, with all her Israelite adherents in the land of Judah, proved to be a nation without shame before God. The modern counterpart of that ancient nation, namely, Christendom, has likewise proved to be a shameless 'nation' before Jehovah God and His Jesus, and to this day she has not repented of her hypocritical, selfish, unchristian course that has resulted in two world wars since 1914 and now threatens a third one".

When Jerusalem was destroyed in 607 B.C. mainly those who were disobedient to Allah suffered. But most of the people who were good, pious and holy did not suffer. Those who escaped included amongst others:

1. The Prophet Jeremiah
2. Ebedmelech
3. The entire tribe of Rechabites.

Therefore, you also can escape the disasters of Armageddon, if you will surrender yourselves immediately to the Will of Allah. In any case, this religion is going to be established irrespective of however much Nimrodism or Christianity is going to oppose it with its Nuclear demoniac scientific might. Nothing, simply nothing, is going to prevail against the Almighty Allah. Only those who have surrendered to His will shall have hopes of survival into the New Era after Armageddon! Do you want to be one of them?

On page 365 of *ibid* one reads:

"Show faith like Lot, sound the warning to others in modern Sodom, and get out from being any part of this doomed, iniquitous system. Move without delay. Never slow up for any regrets and look back. Remember the wife of Lot".

## H. Immediate individual decision necessary for surviving Armageddon

On page 362 of *ibid* one reads:

“Each informed individual is now faced with the need to make the decision upon which depends his fate at Armageddon. He cannot look to Christendom for guidance, for her fruits make her known as not Christian”.

The prophet Zephaniah has warned in the Holy Bible as follows:

“Gather yourselves together, yea, gather together, O nation not desired (by God for your disbelief and evil deeds);

“Before the decree bring forth, before the day pass as the chaff; before the fierce anger of the Lord come upon you, before the day of the Lord’s anger come upon you.

“Seek ye the Lord, all ye meek of the earth, which have wrought His judgment; seek meekness: it may be ye shall be hid in the day of the Lord’s anger” (Zephaniah 2: 1-3).

This is no occasion for gambling with time as we are already more than thirteen years late due to the non-disclosure of the “Prophecy of Fatima” in 1960. This is brought out on pages 363-364 of “*You may survive Armageddon into God’s New World*”:

“In the past you may have squandered your opportunities to enjoy the love, care and provision of the heavenly Creator like the prodigal son of Jesus’ parable. If you now appreciate the spiritual famine that is ruining Christendom and all the nations, come to your senses like the impoverished prodigal son, leave the doomed, spiritually starving world, repentantly return to Jehovah God, and humbly confess your sins against Him”. From the above it is clear that we must give up all self-righteousness—the false conviction that we are right in whatever we do!—and instead seek meekly Allah’s righteousness and surrender completely to His will not as we want to but as He wants us to! Only in that manner can one hope to be “hid in the day of Allah’s anger” and survive, through



Armageddon!





## *Chapter 28*

# The Duty of Mankind to Avert Coming Disasters



If this world is to be saved from the Demoniatic Powers of destruction of the scientific discoveries of today then those nations equipped with Nuclear powers must be the first to take a step in the right direction. They should come to some agreement banning the use of Nuclear weapons with the ultimate object of to their eventual destruction. All world governments should combine together to make their serious contribution to bring about such a happy agreement for the benefit of mankind under the aegis of the U.N.O.

But do you think such an agreement is ever possible? Has the U.N.O. so much influence over the “Big Power” Governments? When the U.N.O. cannot get the baby “Israel” to respect its decisions to bring about peace in West Asia, can all the world governments who are members of the U.N.O. bring about such a ban on Nuclear armaments? In spite of the Hague International Court’s ruling and New Zealand sending a protest vessel with one of its Ministers on board has not been able to stop France’s Nuclear Tests in the Pacific. Do you feel you can answer truthfully—“Yes”, to those desperate problems or are you feeling despondent with a “No”!—which was all the answer the world communities got from their numerous individual protests to France?

Why are we feeling that there is no possibility of such an agreement for world peace? Is there anything wrong with our approach to such a serious world problem which even threatens our very

existence on earth?

A few extracts given hereunder from the diary of a young Jewish girl, who was living in hiding in a secret room in Amsterdam afraid of being discovered by the Nazi's during World War II provide serious food for our thoughts:

"As you can easily imagine we often ask ourselves here despairingly: "What, oh, what is the use of the war? Why can't people live peacefully together? Why all this destruction?"

"The question is very understandable, but no one has found a satisfactory answer to it so far. Yes, why do they make still more gigantic planes, still heavier bombs and, at the same time, prefabricated houses for reconstruction? Why should millions be spent daily on the war and yet there's not a penny available for medical services, artists, or for poor people?

"Why do some people have to starve, while there are surpluses rotting in other parts of the World? Oh! why are people so crazy?

*"I don't believe that the Big Men, the politicians and the capitalists alone, are guilty of the war. Oh no, the little man is just as gully, otherwise the people of the world would have risen in revolt long ago! There's in people simply an urge to destroy, an urge to kill; to murder and rape, and until all mankind, without exception, undergoes a great change, wars will be waged, everything that has been built up, cultivated, and grown will be destroyed and disfigured, after which mankind will have to begin all over again.*

"I have often been downcast, but never in despair; I regard our hiding as a dangerous adventure, romantic and interesting at the same time. In my diary I treat all the privations as amusing..." (Pages 197-198 *Anne Frank: Diary of a Young Girl* published by Pocket Books Inc., New York N. Y.—22nd printing—December 1961).

These notes in an innocent child's diary do open one's eyes as to who is responsible for our woes. Are only the various governments and

politicians or each one of us also are equally responsible!

From this it will be amply clear, if we search our conscience we shall realise without fail that it is the duty of every responsible man, woman and child to rise to the occasion and to try and save the world from total effacement!

If we cannot get the response of the masses in this respect then is it not our duty to try and save the community we live in—our neighbours and our near and dear ones—whomsoever we can? That is our prime duty from which no one can escape under any circumstances! Please judge for yourselves and act now if you want safety!

#### **A. “What’s this world coming to?”**

Here are a few opinions:

“I get the feeling that we’re on a runaway train or something—that the country has gone over the edge and there’s nothing I or anyone can do about it,” said a doctor in Los Angeles.

“Society is coming apart at the seams,” stated an office worker in Chicago.

“It’s a murder epidemic,” declared an Black American student in Atlanta.

The Wall Street Journal of 6th June 1968, has observed:

“Many converged on the appalling and dark conclusion: American society is sick and frighteningly violent”.

Combat of Paris said: “America is mad.”

However, the problem of growing troubles is not confined to just one country! In every nation on earth, including your own, serious difficulties are spreading. If you live in a large city, do you not find that violence and crime are widespread? Do you not fear to walk down

certain streets after dark? And when there is a knock at your door, do you not sometimes hesitate to open it until you find out if it is someone you know?

Even in formerly peaceful villages and rural areas people are being shaken by events, if not by the larger problems of their country, then by such things as the exploding immorality in their own neighbourhood, or by the disruption of family life on a scale never before experienced.

It is a fact that everywhere the political; economic, religious and moral situations are deteriorating. That is why people all over the world, and likely you too, ask: *What's this world coming to?*"

An answer to this question was noted in *U.S. News and World Report* of 3rd June 1968.

"A climax of some kind seems to be approaching the world over... It's not the U. S. alone that's hit. Uprisings have erupted in France, in West Germany, in Spain, in Britain. Communist Eastern Europe is affected. So is Red China".

Commenting on the fact that the problem is worldwide, an editorial reprinted in the *New York Times* of 10th June 1968, stated:

"The American people will misread the meaning of Robert Kennedy's death if they view it solely as a self-contained American tragedy. The tragedy is the result of the spill-over of violence and volatile tensions from one part of the world to another.

"We are at the end of the age of purely national or even regional problems. Combustibles for setting the globe afire exist everywhere".

Showing how rapidly world conditions now are building up to some sort of climax, this same editorial added:

"Throughout the entire world people are caught up in convulsive change...Issues that formerly took a century or more to come to a boil are now in constant eruption. Everything is being bunched up—time, space, nations, peoples, issues. And everything has a fuse attached to it.

“The habits of nations, always variable, have become starkly irrational”.

The noted columnist Walter Lippmann also observes that a climax of some sort is approaching. In the *Newsweek* of 9th October 1967, he writes:

“For us all the world is disorderly and dangerous, ungoverned and apparently ungovernable. Everywhere there is great anxiety and bewilderment ...

“This ... marks, I believe, the historical fact that we are living through the closing chapters of the established and traditional way of life”.

World leaders see these critical problems mounting. But they cannot find answers to them. As was said about the United States President Johnson that: “He has consulted the wisest men he knows and cannot figure out what else to do”.

#### **B. “Men’s hearts failing them for fear” (Luke 21: 26)**

“The fact is that today the biggest single emotion which dominates our lives is fear”—David Lawrence, *U.S. News and World Report*, 11th October 1965.

“At all levels of American life, people share similar fears, insecurities and gnawing doubts to such an intense degree that the country may in fact be suffering from a kind of national nervous breakdown”—The National Committee For An Effective Congress, 25.th December 1967.

“More than 120 million Americans would die in the event of a Soviet missile attack... If it were to include urban centres,... the death toll would be 149 million”—United States Secretary of Defense, in *N. Y. Times*, 19th February 1965.

Here are the opening and closing remarks made by J.C. Kumarappa before the Golden Jubilee Convention of the Christian Endeavour Union of India, Burma and Ceylon held at Indore on 8th

October 1938 under the heading of:

“Swords or Ploughshares?

“The subject chosen for today is one of paramount importance. The world is in turmoil. On all sides we hear of wars and rumours of wars. Nations are rising against Nations, and kingdoms against kingdoms. There are famines and pestilence in diverse places. These are symptoms of economic crisis in the world. What is the place in such a world for Jesus, the embodiment of Love and Truth?

“As possible leaders of the next generation this question challenges your attention and demands your serious and prayerful consideration ...” (page 14, *The Non-violent Economy and World Peace* by J. C. Kumarappa published by Akhil Bharat Sarva-Seva-Sangh- Prakashan, Rajghat, Kashi, India, second Edition of May 1958).

“Jesus evaluated things according to the use they were to individual human beings. To him the widow’s two mites were more than all the rest, for, she had cast in all the living that she had. If we love our neighbours as ourselves we shall be able to realize and appreciate the true value of all that we possess. If we long for articles that are made by depriving nations of their freedom, by resorting to violence, by devouring widow’s houses, by taking the taxes from the poor to serve the needs of the rich, we shall be ignoring Jesus’ standards, and gaining materially at the cost of the suffering of others. As Solomon says:

“Better is little with the fear of the Lord than great treasure and trouble therewith”,

“Better is little with righteousness than great revenues without right.”

“Shall we save our life or lose it? If we are convinced that the present atmosphere of war is caused by the desire to control raw materials and markets, we shall be parties to violence and bloodshed if we subscribe to it by buying or selling goods made under such methods. So if we wish to usher in peace and goodwill among nations we shall



have to remember that the Master (Jesus) we profess to follow had not where to lay his head. (Jesus did not have a safe place to lay his head, where he could remain in peace without having his enemies attacking him. If Jesus did not have any material possessions, then who are we to hanker after material goods. Nay, rather, we must not even purchase goods that have been manufactured at the cost of keeping a community subjugated. If we do so, we are a party to suppression and injustice). The servant cannot be greater than the master. What shall be our choice? The broad path or the narrow way? Hitler or Gandhiji? Barabbas or Jesus? The sword or the ploughshare?" (pages 20-21 of *ibid*).

Besides his above remarks Mr. Kumarappa had delivered the following lecture in July 1945 on "World Security":

"The much advertised San Francisco Conference has produced a scheme which it is claimed will make for peace and will guarantee the four freedoms for which it has been working. The method it had adopted is to entrust the policing functions to a group of Big Powers assisted by a few smaller ones. This group will wield the big stick and keep down the recalcitrant ones. In effect it is the old League of Nations with a few frills added, and we fear it will meet the same fate as its predecessor, as the basic evils in society which produce such holocausts as these World Wars have not been tackled at all. The remedy sought is too superficial.

"In the history of mankind these attempts at making the world safer from the onslaughts of greed and avarice are not novel. In Christendom the Church, not content with reserving for itself the moral power consequent on its spiritual leadership but with the help and allegiance of other temporal States and with the sanction of physical force and violence, tried for centuries to play the role of arbiter and restore the rule of reason amongst nations; but the savage and barbaric hordes of Europe reduced its efforts to futility as these recurring World Wars have witnessed. The heart of man, was not

touched.

“In India, the Hindus of old launched on an elaborate plan to sterilize greed and avarice by setting up cultural standards of values, which will reduce the evils of economic competition and lay emphasis on the value of the development of personality. By the Varnashram Dharma those who exercised rights were put down as the lowest group. The profit-seeking Vaisya had no high social status, while the protector of the people, the Kshatriya, had a status all his own, independent of his wealth or material possessions. The dispossessed Brahmin, whose position of influence was based on the service of his fellowmen, occupied the pinnacle of respect. This system has also fallen short of its possibilities because in the course of time these distinguishing ideals were lost sight of and status was attached to birth rather than to form of service rendered to society.

“The San Francisco Conference granting the charter of World Security by the agreement and help of the “Big Powers” borders on the ludicrous. Whoever has heard of the small nations being a menace to World Security? It is the greed of the “Big Powers” that has plunged the world into streams of blood from time to time. For these very miscreants to be asked to guarantee World Security is like entrusting the safety of our banking houses to a team of gangsters. What is needed is the disintegration and liquidation of these very “Big Powers” and a fundamental change to the economic outlook and organisation.

“We have to accept the fact that all modern wars were caused by economic competition for raw materials and markets. This competition is made keener still by a complex standard of living built up by a whole series of artificially created wants which do not satisfy any natural needs. This being so, there can be no world security until this malady is attacked. The remedy cannot be mere physical force and restraint caused by fear. The real cause has to be grappled with, and a solution found by means of cultural forces which will counteract the acquisitive tendencies of man and crush selfishness. This calls for the setting up of standards based on simplicity of life and building up of

character and personality. Only by such means will it be possible to secure to the world composed of the weak and the strong, the simple and the sophisticated a state of affairs where all can follow their several avocations:

1. Free from fear
2. Free from want
3. Free from slavery, and
4. Enjoy freedom of thought and speech

“In practice, to achieve this in the economic sphere it would be necessary to curb the profit motive and control the centralised industries and at the same time regulate our consumption in the light of real needs.

“The attempt made by Islam was through ethical means. They aimed at making humanity a brotherhood where all distinction of caste, colour, and economic inequalities would be abolished. This method was much more successful but as it is confined itself to the followers of the Prophet, it has not naturally attained world-wide dimensions in practice. It has yet great unexplored possibilities” (pages 62-64 of *ibid*).

This study has been carried out with the object of providing those answers to the U.K., U.S.A., E.E.C., the U.S.S.R. and China *i.e.* Governments armed with “Nuclear Power” that the President of America could not get from the wisest advisers he knew of, *viz*:

How to avert the threatened coming of the three foretold world-wide disasters:

- a. The Nuclear Holocaust or Third World War in which Allah will efface Nimrodism or Christianity from the U.K., America and Europe (the first frog from the mouth of the dragon—Revelation 16:13).
- b. The Atheist attack on Sheba (Madina) and Dedan (Mecca) which will efface Communism from the face of the earth by

the destruction of 5/6th of its armed might (the second frog from the mouth of the great beast—Revelation 16:13).

- c. The battle of Armageddon where the false prophet with the backing of the apostate Jews and other disbelievers (the third from the mouth of the false prophet—Revelation 16:13) will be annihilated by Jesus and the Saint Saviour who will destroy all weapons of war and establish throughout mankind the religion of:

“Surrender to the Will of Allah—

Thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven”

According to the European scholars there is only one way of avoiding the Third World War as already read earlier in Chapter 15: S, 1-6.

This is confirmed on page 4 of “*Awake!*” of 8th October 1968. The summary of it is as follows:

**“All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and profitable for doctrine, reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness” —2 Timothy 3:16**

What does the Bible show as to the meaning of all these world events? It shows that for this unrighteous world time is running out fast! It shows that within the next few years *i.e.* between 1974 and 1999 A.D. there will take place a climax in human affairs so gigantic that it will affect every person on earth, every man, woman and child. *It will, without fail, affect even you!*

What is this climax? God himself will take a direct hand in world affairs. He will use His overwhelming power to crush wickedness and wicked people (Rev. 11:18). This act of God is called “Armageddon” (Rev. 16:16).

This climactic act of God will bring to a sudden end all the trouble and troublemakers in the world of today. It will pave the way for an entirely new system of things where people who love righteousness will

find true freedom and relief from the horrifying conditions of today.

So what is this world coming to? The Bible answers:

“The world passeth away (so also) the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever” (1 John 2:17).

Yes, this violent, crime-ridden, war-torn world civilisation is coming to its end! Time is fast running out for it! It is much later for this world than you may think. Indeed the present system of civilisation has only a few more years left!

### **C. What will it cost you?**

Actually, we have been living in a transition period since the year 1914. In that year, the present system of things began their downward fall. The “*Awake*” dated 8.10.1968 on page 27 has described it:

“Like a train about to plunge into an abyss, this system of things is about to plunge into destruction. Time is fast running out for it!

“If you had the right opportunity to jump from a train that was heading for certain destruction, would you not do so? True, it might cost you a severe bruising; you might leave behind some of your possessions and the people on the train, but you would atleast save your own life.

“What will it cost you to have the hope of living through the end of this wicked system of things? What will you have to pay to gain life in God’s new order?

“The cost to you cannot be measured in money. The apostle Peter once said to a person offering him money for benefits that God gives:

“May your silver perish with you, because you thought through money to get possession of the free gift of God”—Acts 8:18-20

### **1. Life in the New Era—a gift of God**

Those who are on the side of Allah have a hope of passing through

Armageddon into His new order. This will be an incredible gift. For details see Chapter 30 given hereafter. You cannot buy your way beyond Armageddon with all the riches on this earth, but you can only achieve it, if you are deserving! All others will be destroyed!

## 2. What is the cost?

To do Allah's will, you must first know what it is. To find that out, you need to spend time and effort.

Is that too high a price to pay for learning about success in life both in this world and in the hereafter? Surely not!

God's word states:

"And the world passeth away, and (so also) lust there of: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever" (1 John 2:17).

That is the key to eternal life—the doing of Allah's will and in the manner in which HE wants it to be done and NOT in the way *you* want it! All the conditions that must be met are included in that framework. So then, if *you* want to survive the end of this wicked world and be given the gift of life in God's new kingdom, *you* need to "surrender to *His will* and *not yours*, as *you* have been doing so long.

It is only logical that if *you* want to live in God's new system *you* MUST do His will. What would happen if God allowed people to do whatever they wanted in His new system? Crime, violence, bloodshed, hatred, prejudice and injustice would begin all over again. However, this is not to be the case this time, for Allah will not allow such conditions to prevail for a period of several centuries after Armageddon.

Therefore, there must be law and order. And the highest law that results in the best order comes from Allah. That is why there has to be an obeying of God's righteous requirements. These requirements are for the good of everyone, including the one keeping them. Nor are they burdensome!

“For this is the (real and true) love of God, that we keep (observe) His commandments: and His commandments are not grievous (*i.e.* difficult or burdensome)” (1 John 5:3).

### **3. Do not be diverted by opposition**

You need to understand that not all persons revere God or His Word. Some oppose, while others openly ridicule (2 Peter 3:3). Do not be surprised, therefore, to have opposition arise from some of your friends, or even from close relatives. If this does happen, and others oppose your learning Allah’s will, what then? Should you abandon your study of God’s word?

The gift of eternal life will not come from any human source, but only from Allah!

So do not let anyone divert *you* from taking in the knowledge of God. Indeed, although some may oppose you, in time, with patience and tact on your part, and with evidence that your life has been changed for the better by your knowledge of your Creator, it may influence such opponents to accept Allah and His Word.

Also, what good would *you* do for these adversaries by going along with them to certain disaster? If you were on a train headed for a crash, could *you* do anyone on it any good by staying with the train just because others refuse to leave? All *you* would get out of such foolishness is *the loss of your own life*. So staying with this system as it heads towards its inevitable end will not benefit anyone. The sooner *you* break away from it the better it will be for you to save yourself from the coming sure disasters. *Judge* for yourself.

### **4. No time to lose**

The termination of this wicked system is approaching rapidly. It is already much later than most people realise. How far away is the period

1974/1999 A.D.? Hence there is no time to lose in working for survival. Already we are more than 13 years late due to non-disclosure and suppression of the “Prophecy of Fatima” since 1960.

Do not be misled into thinking *you* can ignore this matter and that God will somehow favour *you* when the end comes. No! *you* cannot gain blessed life without Allah’s approval, and *you* cannot get His approval without first meeting His conditions. The Holy Bible warns:

“The Lord is with you, while you be with Him, and if ye seek Him, He will be found of you; but if ye forsake Him, He will forsake you”.  
(2 Chronicles 15:2).

On page 29 of “Awake” of 8th October 1968:

“Those who refuse to listen to God will not survive the end of this system. The Great Judge of all mankind now causes His wisdom to cry out and give warnings: ‘Because I have called out but you keep refusing and you keep neglecting all My counsel and My reproof, you have not accepted, I also, for my part, shall laugh at your own disaster, I shall mock when what you dread comes, and your own disaster gets here just like a stormwind, when distress and hard times come upon you. At that time they will keep calling Me, but I shall not answer; they will keep looking for me, but they will not find Me, for the reason that they hated knowledge, and the fear of Jehovah they did not choose. They did not consent to My counsel; they disrespected all My reproof. So they will eat of the fruitage of their way.’ (Proverb 1:24-31).

“But this will not be so for those who take in knowledge of God, who listen to His counsel and reproof, and who then apply themselves to the doing of His will : ‘As for the one listening to me, he will reside in security and be undisturbed from dread of calamity’. (Proverb 1:33). Of this kind of person the Bible says: “The upright are the ones that will reside in the earth, and the blameless are the ones that will be left over in it. (Proverb 2:21).

“Do *you* want to be ‘left over’ in the earth when this wicked system is annihilated soon at Armageddon? (Daniel 2:44). Then begin



taking in knowledge of God's right way. How?"

### **5. Arise and follow the Real Jesus if you want safety**

O the scientifically advanced European group of Nations! Today *you* are not getting a solution which will settle the problems threatening the very existence of man on earth. All of you had been Christians. Many still are Christians. Of the remainder, *i.e.* the Communists, many still have a soft corner for Jesus. Don't you think that when any religion having a divine origin is followed CORRECTLY, it can be a binding factor for brotherhood amongst the people of different nations even in spite of diverse customs, languages and colours of skin. As against that, whenever a religion has its origin in Nimrod, which was cursed by Allah at the Tower of Babel, it is going to cause disputes and disunity.

A certain religion for the past 1400 years has been setting a wonderful and unimpeachable example. Millions gather annually from all the four corners of the globe in answer to Abraham's call in the wilderness (Chapter 7:1) after he had built the Holy House of Allah (Chapter 7: H) at Mecca. These millions live together as one brotherhood for several months on the occasion of Haj. Gone are the differences of caste, colour, nationalities, customs, richness, and poverty. Even differences of language do not stand in the way because one can get himself understood by means of signs if nothing else works. The harmony, love and fraternity to be witnessed yearly are all unassailable proofs that Islam, the basic religion of Allah, has always been the source of love and goodwill amongst mankind.

O Brother Christians! Aught you not to give up Nimrodism, that which Jesus hates and due to which Jerusalem was twice burnt and destroyed? (Chapter 8: G; 14:A3). Abstain from blasphemy taught by Nimrod that God is a trinity in unity, instead of the teachings of Jesus

that Allah is One and Alone (Chapter 12: G-1 to 3). Give up eating swine flesh which was not only abominable to Jesus (Chapter 12: G-9) but which also insults Jesus because it represents the abusive hatred and revenge against Abraham, the prophet responsible for the violent death of Nimrod, their so-called saviour, the only son of god born of the great virgin queen of the heavens (Chapter 6: J and K). Even now forsake the cursed sign of the cross which was hated by Jesus because it represents “T” for Tammuz, the title of Nimrod (Chapter 5: F-2; 12: G-5). Abstain from Baptism taught by Nimrod (Chapter 5: F-4), which was hated by Jesus, who did not “Baptise” anybody (St. John 4:2) or authorise anybody to Baptise! In fact, Jesus was circumcised. Hence he could not come under the magical influence of that cursed religion, which has been the cause of disunity amongst mankind for the past 4000 years from the curse of Allah at the Tower of Babylon (Chapter 5: G). The fact that Christianity has broken up into thousands of groups or sects (Chapter 14: A-5 and 6; 14: B-5; 14: F) all believing in the same Bible clearly proves:

- a) That Christianity is the cursed religion of Babylon according to Christian scholars.
- b) That Christianity does not emanate from any divine source. Otherwise it would have bonded people together in one common brotherhood just as Islam is doing for the past 14 centuries.
- c) The fact that thousands of disputes between one group of Christians and another have been going on for the past 1650 years from Nicene creed of 325A.D. proves further that as long as Christianity will last it is going to be responsible for disputes leading to its eventual destruction at Armageddon.
- d) Christian Research Scholars have warned that Christianity, the cursed religion of Babylon, is going to be annihilated (Chapter 27: F), just as Babylon had been destroyed completely!
- e) Do the Christians want to suffer total destruction at

Armageddon as warned by their own Bible Society?

O Brother Christians! aught you not follow what was the Mission of Jesus (Chapter 29: C-7g)? Would you like to belong to the army of Jesus or to the army of the false prophet at this crucial battle? Are you going to be with those who torture Jesus by blaspheming in his name by calling him “Son of God” and the “Holy Trinity” (Chapter 29:C-7g)? *You judge for yourself!*

Look once again carefully over the Mission of Jesus (Chapter 13) and the Fruits of disobedience to Jesus (Chapter 14). Study carefully the calamities that befell repeatedly the Christians they broke away from the teachings of Jesus and instead adopted Nimrodism (Chapter 12: G, 1-16). Contemplate upon the magical influence of “Baptism” which makes people blind to logic and the truth (Chapter 6:1 to M). Only by means of “Circumcision—the Everlasting Covenant of Allah with Abraham”, can one break out of the spell cast by Nimrod 4000 years ago upon the “Baptised” and join the group of “Surrenderers” in the absolute and perfect Oneness of Allah, Who has no equals, no virgin wives, no begotten sons *etc.!*

Read in the next chapter what Jesus will do upon his return. This will no doubt inform what a person, claiming to be a follower of Jesus, must do now for the sake of his or her own safety and success. Think of the “Prophecy of Fatima” which is being suppressed deliberately since 1960 only to prevent the Christians from knowing the truth and for the sake of misguiding them in order that they also be destroyed at Armageddon, along with Christianity or Nimrodism—Indeed what a disastrous end!—*Judge for yourself!*





## *Chapter 29*

# Biblical Prophecies Confirmed



From Chapter 24 it is clear that there is universal knowledge of the coming of a Saviour to save the World from destruction and guide the people of the earth to establish the universal religion of “Surrender to the Will of God—Thy Will be done on Earth as it is in Heaven”. Whenever this happens, war will be a thing of the past and the weapons of war will be destroyed.

This Saint-Saviour will be born amongst the Arabs as if foretold by “Jamasaḥ” about 4000 years ago (Chapter 24: B). The conditions of the people of the earth in which he would be born are described vividly in the “Kalanki Purana” the sacred Hindu Scriptures of India for more than 3500 years and fit in with the present world context (Chapter 24: C).

Even though these Foretellings fit in, they have not given the exact dates revealed by the calculation of dates from the Holy Bible (Chapter 26).

The only religious records which not only confirm the religion of Abraham and that of the subsequent Jewish Prophets including Jesus, son of Virgin Mary but also complete those religious teachings which were left incomplete by Jesus are found in Islam. This religion is now over 1400 years old. Islam was the last of the “Abrahamic” group of Religious teachings. It has clarified and explained the teachings of the earlier prophets. Hence it would be most interesting for researchers after the truth to see what elaboration or clarification, if any, has been

given by Islam in connection with Biblical Foretellings quoted herebefore.

Since the advent of Islam was the last, it got an opportunity to give certain titles to this Saint-Saviour, who would guide the world and the false prophet who would oppose him.

Let us study the meaning of these two titles *vis*: “Mahdi” and “Dadjdjal” or “Masih Al-Dadjdjal” respectively.

### **The meaning of Mahdi**

If you look at page 310 of the *Shorter Encyclopaedia of Islam* by H.A.R. Gibb and J.H. Kramers, you will get the following information:

“Al Mahdi”, means literally “the guided one”. As all guidance (huda) is from Allah, it has come to mean “the divinely guided one”, who is guided, in a peculiar and individual way. For Allah, in the intense and immediate theism of Islam, is guiding everyone and everything in the world, whether by the human reason or by the instincts of the lower animals, to a knowledge of Himself and to what is needed for their existence and continuance (LA, 20:228, foot). One of His names is “Al-Hadi”, “The Guide” (Qur’an 22: 54; 25: 31), and the idea of His guidance is reiterated in the Qur’an. For a statement of its different kinds see Baidawi on Surah 1: 6 (Fleischer’s ed., i: 8, ii: 21 sqq); Mufradat of al-Raghib al-Isfahani, p. 560 of ed. Cairo 1324. In the usage of the Qur’an “he accepted guidance for himself” is used as a quasi or reflexive passive. Thus the man whom Allah guides is not simply ‘guided’ but reacts himself to the “Divine guidance”.

Hence “MAHDI” is the title given under Islam to the Saint-Saviour—the man who will guide the believers, through the “Battle of Armageddon”, to establish the universal religion of “Surrender to the Will of Allah” *i.e.* Islam with peace amongst mankind lasting for several centuries. He would demolish the weapons of war and/or convert them into implements for increasing agriculture (Isaiah 2:4; and Micah 4:3).

### **A. The meaning of Dadjdjal or Masih Al-Dadjdjal**

In the *Shorter Encyclopaedia of Islam* by H.A.R. Gibb and J.H. Kramers, the following Interpretation is given:

“Al-Dadjdjal or Masih Al-Dadjdjal (rarely Al-Kadhdhab: Bukhari, Fitan, bab 26 and Masih Al-Dalala: Tayalist, No. 2532), the Muslim Anti-Christ. In Syriac it is found as an epithet of the Anti-Christ, *e.g.* in Matthew 24:24 where the Peshitta translates ... by Meshihe daggale. We also find in Syriac nebiya daggala “pseudo-prophet”, Shaheda daggala “false witness” *etc.* On the other hand is the existence in Arabic of the verb dadjala with the meaning “to deceive”.

Hence “Dadjdjal” or “Masih Al-Dadjdjal” stands for the false messiah or the false prophet, who will work miracles and will be supported by the apostate Jews in his opposition to the Mahdi, as foretold in the Holy Bible (Chapter 25: O and P).

### **B. Quotations from the last Prophet from the children of Abraham and his followers**

Let us now examine a few of the messages given by Muhammad, the last of the prophets from the descendants of Abraham and his followers:

#### **1. The general conditions of the world at the time of the end of the present civilisations**

- a) Large groups of people will disbelieve in God. They will contend that everything has been brought about by “Nature”, through a process of evolution. Hence there is no necessity for Allah and His existence. Today, this is not only the belief of Communists, but it is also the belief of large groups of scientific-minded non-communists throughout the world, who openly deny the necessity of God. To appreciate how silly and ignorant these people are let us go back to Chapter 16: B—

*“Does Allah Really Exist?” and Chapter 17: B-1 and 2—  
Evolution or Creation?*

- b) That even large sections of the Muslims will generally disregard the teachings of Prophet Muhammad. Such apostate Muslims, will be following the teachings of Satanism as against Shariat as shown in Chapter 20: E, 1-12, and yet they will believe that they are rightly guided because they are following “*Fierce Monotheism*”, which they feel is the straight path to Heaven!

These apostate Muslims, who have come under the influence of “Satanism” would refuse to pay any special respect to their Prophet and his Saints. Such Apostate Muslims coming under the influence of the money of those who hate Islam, would try to misguide those on the correct path by calling them “Biddati” *i.e.* those who commit sacrilege and/or Sheirk (Polytheism) in religion by paying respects to the Prophet of Islam and his Saints, instead of Allah only.

- c) People of the world will generally give up the acquiring of religious knowledge. Instead they will strive for wordly knowledge *e.g.* Scientific research, industrial developments, modern technologies *etc.*
- d) The reading of religious books all over the face of the earth will be replaced by story books of adventures, mysteries, sexual, criminal and other horrible tales which would bring down naturally the standard of morality. In many countries it would become difficult if not dangerous to roam the streets after darkness especially for women folks.
- e) Intellectuals and the good class of people will suffer poverties and deprivations. Their advice will be ignored. In many cases they might be declared revisionists and even tried and put to death for their good intentions and welfare for the public around them. Instead, young leaders, by their mass strength of the inexperienced students and ignorant and uneducated



labour, will be in dictatorial posts, even where they are most unsuitable or undesirable. Because of their lack of religious education and inexperienced standards, they would only be able to set bad examples to their public which would lead to further abuses.

- f) Disobedience to parents, disrespect for elders, dishonour to one's teachers or spiritual guides will become the order of the day!
- g) Men will have more children from prostitutes and more connection with women, whom they have not married, than their own wives! More often they will do so just for the sake of the fun and pleasure of it! People will even indulge in homosexual practices.
- h) A lot of smoke will be produced in this period at various places all over the world. From this reference, it would be clear that it refers to:
  - 1. The present industrial age. The smoke being from factories, ships, trains, foundries *etc.*
  - 2. The discovery of underground gas in numerous parts of the world.
  - 3. The manufacture of gases for various uses (page 48, *Khatmae Nabuwat* by Abu Ala Moududi of Lahore, published Calcutta on 12.2. 1962).
- i) There will be serious trouble in various parts of our globe with no solution in sight for the heads of those governments.
- j) There would be in numerous different places bloodshed, riots, famines, food shortages, plagues, or earthquakes or similar disasters.
- k) That things will continue to deteriorate throughout the 14th Century Hijrah coming to a head at the end of that Century

(14th Century Hijrah ends in 1980 A.D.). Therefore the worst conditions will be reached in or around 1980 A.D. according to these foretellings, *i.e.* the period from a few years before to a few years after 1980 A.D.

For further details please refer to pages 450-485, Vol. II, of *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*. Hence the series of disasters which will compel man to come back to the right path should take place in the few years that follow 1980 A.D. If the period is taken as anything between about 15 to 50 years, then the world should be a much better place to live in around the beginning of the twenty-first century A.D.

l) Arab riches foretold

The Prophet Muhammad has foretold that in this period the Arabs will have so much wealth that if someone were to pay them as much as one hundred dinars as a tip, they would still feel dissatisfied!

This position has become true owing to the discovery and exploitation of the huge oil resources of Arabia and countries bordering on the Arab-Persian Gulf (page 21, *Mojizat-e-Muhammadia* by Moulana Enayatullah, published in 1291 A.H. at Lahore).

m) Distraction in every Arab home.

A "Fitna" shall creep into every Arab home (page 21 of *ibid*).

A "Fitna" in Arabic is a distraction, which prevents people from paying due attention towards their religious and other duties.

What could be this "Fitna" which would creep into Arab homes and destroy the very fundamentals of Islamic teachings?

The Communists are today the only leaders in science who are anxious to make common cause with the oppressed races. The Muslims all over being the oppressed will gladly accept the

hand of friendship offered by the Communists. The result will be young militant leaders will rouse the people to revolt against their elders and the established principles of Islamic Socialistic Democracy. Many an Arab State will come under the Communist domination, which will shake the faith of many in Allah and His divine powers and induce them to rely more and more upon their military strength, leading to many injustices, robbing property without compensation and murder of leaders, including good and pious people.

When the foretold Communist victory in the Third World War will come about all these Muslim Republics such as the U.A.R., Sudan, Syria, Iraq, Libya *etc.* would agree to become part of the powerful Communist Empire. This has been foretold in the Bible (Chapter 25: I-3). Perhaps the only parts left out amongst the Arab countries might be the “Oil Rich” Saudi Arabia and the Trucial States, now known as the United Arab Emirates. Oil would naturally be the great attraction for an attack on them, as foretold earlier from the Holy Bible (Chapter 25: K, L and M).

Hence it appears that the “Fitna” which will creep into Arab homes should be “Communism”, which does not believe in the necessity of “Allah”. Hence this “Fitna” attacks the very fundamental teachings of Islam. It contends, as taught by King Nimrod (Chapter 5: F), that every success achieved by mankind is not due to Allah but is due only as a result of the efforts put in, such as, knowledge research and experiment. Every failure will be put down to inefficiency, improper calculations and insufficeint experimentation or wrong concepts. Hence it will be considered shirking of responsibility and cowardice for anyone to put the blame for failures on a supreme God, for Whom the Communists do not see any necessity to exist! Their decision being final for the Communists!

## **2. Specific incidents that will take place heralding the coming of the Mahdi or saint-saviour**

### **a. Turkey involved in a war with Europeans.**

About the beginning of the fourteenth Century Hijrah (the 14th Hijrah is from about 1883 to 1980 A.D.) Turkey will be under the rule of a single king for 32 years. (Sultan Abdul Hamid Khan ruled for 32 years from 1877 to 1919 A. D.). At the end of his reign, this Turkish ruler will be involved in a war with European Nations resulting in the break up of the Islamic Empire. After the war this king will be deposed and this will bring about the end of the Sultanate (or rule by kings) over Turkey (page 21 of Imam Uz Zaman Ki Aamad by Khwaja Hassan Nizami).

This has already taken place. Sultan Abdul Hamid Khan was deposed in 1919 A. D. This has marked the end of the Sultanate of Turkey. He was replaced by Mustafa Kamal Attaturk, an Army Commander, who became the founder of modern Turkey and its first President.

### **b. Arab-Turk war**

The European nations during the above war will get the Arabs to revolt against Turkey. This war will destroy the Islamic Empire (page 450, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). Lawrence of Arabia has fulfilled this foretelling during World War I.

### **c. European influence over Arab countries**

When the above two incidents occur and the Muslim Empire is broken, the European Nations will bring these Arab lands under their control (page 484, Vol. II, *ibid*). The whole of North Africa, Northern Arabia including Palestine, Syria, Lebanon, Iraq, Jordan and the Arab Gulf States did actually come under the influence of the different European Nations.

Even the Holy Lands of Palestine did not escape. Britain obtained a mandate over the holy lands of Palestine in 1922. France got control of Lebanon and Syria.

#### **d. The sovereignty of foreign powers over the Holy lands**

Great Britain asked world Jewery to finance her with their vast resources and to help her to tide over her financial difficulties caused by World Wars I and II. The Jews in return asked Britain for the holy lands of Palestine now under their control.

Britain was under agreements with the Arab rulers to give them protection. When this condition was insisted upon by the Jews, Britain decided with the co-operation of their European group of Nations including the U.S.A. to betray the unsuspecting Arabs.

Therefore in furtherance of this pact with Jewery, Britain assisted by the U.S.A., and other European Nations including France and Germany trained the Jews and gave them unlimited supplies of modern arms.

These armed Jews were settled in Palestine. The Arabs not only in Palestine but in all the surrounding countries were kept totally unarmed or supplied a few obsolete weapons by this consortium of European Nations.

Thus the Jews had an excellent, well-armed and trained army with unlimited supplies of modern weapons which could easily destroy the combined strength of the surrounding ill-armed Arab countries.

This is how the European Nations betrayed the Arab Protectorates under their control, as foretold by the Prophet of Islam 1,400 years ago (page 21, *Mojizat-e-Muhammadia* by Moulana Enayatullah).

**e. The invasion of Italy by European nations having world-wide powers**

In a war amongst European Nations the country of Italy would be invaded by certain European Nations having world-wide influence (page 32, *Imam 'Uz Zaman Ki Aamad*). This has taken place when the Allied armies invaded Italy during World War II to drive out the Nazi German Army from North Africa and Italy.

**f. These invaders of Italy will set up a kingdom by force of arms in the Arab lands**

After the invasion of Italy, these European Nations with world-wide influence will set up a kingdom by force of arms on the blood of innocent martyrs, about 15 “Manzils” North of Madinah in an area between Madinah and Damascus (page 32 of *ibid*).

A “Manzil” is an approximate distance of 30/45 miles, which can be travelled comfortable by a camel in one night.

Therefore fifteen “Manzils” means an approximate distance of 450/675 miles. England, America, and General De Gaulle’s Foreign French Forces—the European Nations having world-wide influence, who invaded Italy in World War II, according to these foretellings, were going to set up an independent country in the Arab Lands about 450/675 miles North of Madinah and in between Madinah and Damascus.

Israel was established by this very European group of Nations by force of arms on the blood of martyred innocent Arabs including many Saints, helpless women and defenceless children. They bulldozed the homes of the Arabs in the towns and villages of Palestine! They rendered hundreds of thousands homeless in Palestine, robbed them of their hearths and homes and drove them out as refugees without any compensation!

Thus this establishment of Israel on the lands of the Arabs is not

only a fulfilment of this 1,400-year-old foretelling, but it is also according to the prophecies of the Holy Bible that at the end of the present system of civilisation the Jews will occupy Israel by the *Sword!* (Chapter 25: B)

#### **g. The object of establishment of Israel by European powers**

The object with which these European Powers planned the establishment of a Jewish country in the Arab Lands of Palestine was to destroy the religion of “Surrender to the Will of Allah” or Islam. This time they intended to use a circumcised people to do this job for them. Because the Christians were uncircumcised people, hence outside the fold of the children of Abraham, they had failed to obliterate Islam in spite of repeated attempts during the past 14 centuries and that also in spite of their worldwide influence and empires during which they had done their utmost, but in vain. They now thought that by putting a circumcised group of people *i.e.* the Jews against Islam they would be able to achieve better results in the destruction of Islam than they had achieved so far.

Thus the plan of getting the mandate established in the Holy Lands of the Arab countries was for the sole purpose of causing a “Fratricide” by arming the Jews who were the descendants from Isaac, the second son of Abraham, to destroy the followers of Ishmael, the first born of Abraham, *viz.* the Muslims, both of them being the circumcised children and followers of Abraham. This is proved by the “Balfour” Declaration of the British Government which is as follows:

British Foreign Office

London dated November, 2nd 1917.

“Dear Lord Rothschild,

I have much pleasure in conveying to you on behalf of His Majesty’s Government the following declaration of sympathy with Jewish

Zionist aspirations which has been submitted to and approved by the Cabinet:

‘His Majesty’s Government view with favour the establishment in Palestine of a national home for the Jewish people, and will use their best endeavours to facilitate the achievement of this object, it being clearly understood that nothing shall be done which may prejudice the civil and religious rights of existing non-Jewish communities in Palestine, or the rights and political status enjoyed by Jews in any other country.’

I should be grateful if you would bring this declaration to the knowledge of the Zionist Federation.

Yours sincerely,

Sd /-ARTHUR JAMES BALFOUR

Therefore Britain quietly ended her mandate in 1948 and slipped out of Palestine, when all plans for the forcible occupation of the Arab lands of Palestine by the European-armed armies of Jews were completed. The Jews thus fully armed by America, Britain, and the European group of nations began to murder and destroy the Arabs and deprive them of their hearths and homes. Hence these armed brigands created forcibly the state of Israel on the blood of innocent Arabs in lands robbed by them at the point of the gun!

#### **h. The punishment for establishment of Israel**

The Prophet Muhammad has warned that those European countries with world-wide influence who invaded Italy and who will help in the establishment of this foreign kingdom in the Arab lands by force of arms on the blood of Arab Muslim martyrs and saints will incur the wrath of Allah.

Their extensive dominions would be snatched away from them. They would be tortured by internal strife and disunity even leading to bloody internal riots. Their widespread influence would be taken away



from them. Eventually they will be destroyed in a very big and devastating war! That would be the punishment of Allah for having established Israel forcibly on the blood of innocent martyrs and saints (see also Chapter 2: H; 25: F and G).

### **1. The British Empire**

The British Empire, which was so widespread, that they could boast “The Sun never sets upon the British Empire”, has within a space of only 25 years from the establishment of Israel on the blood of innocent Arabs become reduced from a world-wide power to only the “Cliffs of Dover in the South of England”.

On pages 167-168 of Cheiro’s World Predictions one reads:

“Great Britain will suffer terribly in the prolonged warfare. Most of London and Towns on the East Coast will be destroyed by fleets of aeroplanes from Russia.

“In Ireland there will be Civil War between the North and the South, and the new Irish Republic will inflict considerable damage by aeroplanes on such cities as Liverpool, Manchester, Birmingham and the West of England”.

### **2. The French Empire**

France has similarly been reduced not only by the loss of her Empire, but she has also suffered financially by her student-labour revolts and riots resulting in the eventual rejection of De Gaulle.

### **3. The United States of America**

The United States of America with its huge resources has also been reduced to an insignificant position when it was shown clearly that the entire might of the U.S.A. could not crush the baby Vietnam where the Americans have suffered so much humiliation in spite of all the armed might that they have thrown into South Vietnam. Further, her internal

white-Black American riots are the consequence of the curse of Allah for the establishment of Israel as foretold. The more the U.S.A. is going to support Israel, the more she is going to suffer!

The Holy Bible goes further to state as read earlier, that Britain, America and the remaining eight-nation European Economic Community will be annihilated, so completely by Communist power that only the names of these nations will be left in the pages of history (Chapter 25: B to G). Shah Neamutullah has explicitly stated (Chapter 2: H) that such total destruction of England and America and their allies will be in punishment for their refusal to surrender to the will of Allah *i.e.* Islam.

#### **i. Turkistan in Northern Central Asia will be destroyed**

Ali (Son of Abu Talib), the son-in-law of the Prophet Muhammad, has foretold a number of things that would take place when the time of the Mahdi is near (page 481, Vol. II of *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

These fourteen-century old foretellings inform that those areas which we now know as Russian Turkish Republics will be captured by Atheists.

These atheists will destroy the religion of Islam. They will kill and deport many people.

This has become a fact, ever since the time that the Communists of U.S.S.R. have gained control of this area.

#### **j. Sinkiang areas will be destroyed by China**

Ali in the above foretellings has also informed that Turkish areas would be attacked, captured and the religion of the people destroyed by China.

This refers apparently to the control of Chinese Communists over the Sinkiang Area (Xinjiang—Uyghur), and their attempts to destroy Islam in this area. This is now a fact today.

**k. India suffers**

Communal and other riots and bloodshed in India have also been mentioned by Ali in his above foretellings.

**1. Iran suffers**

Ali has informed in the above foretellings that Iran will in particular suffer from storms, earthquakes or pestilences. These are well established facts today.

**m. Locust attacks**

There would be serious breeding of locusts in Arabia from where they will attack crops in various countries according to the above referred group of foretellings of Ali.

All these forewarnings have now become facts.

**3. The Birth of The Mahdi**

Muhammad has informed us 1,400 years back that the present system of world civilisation will not end, until and unless the Mahdi is born from his descendants in an Arab Country (pages 7-8 of *Imam Uz Zaman Ki Aamad*).

The Mahdi will be born before the death of the Second President of the Republic of Turkey (page 21 of *ibid*). The Second President of the Republic of Turkey is Ismet Inu- nou, who is still alive at the time this book is going into print in 1972.

The Holy Prophet has stated that the name of the Mahdi will be the same as my name. His father's name will be the same as my father's name and his mother's name will be that of my mother's name. The father of the Mahdi will be from the direct descendants of Hasan, the eldest son of Fathema, his youngest daughter. His character and conduct will be on the same principles as my (Muhammad's) own. The

Mahdi will stammer slightly when he speaks. He will fill the earth with as much piety as it was filled with wickedness at the time of his birth (page 481, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Thus we come to know further details of the Saint-Saviour who will save the world and bring in the new era of lasting world peace as follows:

<i>Title:</i>	The Mahdi which means Saint-Saviour or The Divinely guided one.
<i>Name:</i>	Muhammad (Chapter 21: D-6).
<i>Father's name:</i>	Abdulla (Chapter 21: D-6 and 24: C)
<i>Mother's name:</i>	Amena (Chapter 21: D-6 and 24: C)
<i>Descendant of:</i>	Hasan the first-born of Fathema, the youngest daughter of Prophet Muhammad who is a descendant of Abraham by his first born Prince Ishmael, son of Princess Hagar of Egypt the eldest child of Pharaoh Sensusrit I and Queen Nufrit. (Chapter 7: B, C, E, F and G-1 to 8; 21: D-6 and 26: A, 1-6).
<i>Place of Birth:</i>	A village in Yemen-an Arab country (Chapter 21: D-6; 24: C and 26: A-1 to 4).
<i>Time of birth:</i>	Somewhere before the end of the 14th century Hijrah ( <i>i.e.</i> a few years before 1980 A.D.). Since the Prophet was born on a Monday, so this Saint-Saviour or the Mahdi will also be born on a Monday. Shah Neamatullah has foretold that the Mahdi will be born around 1380/ Hijrah (page 25, <i>Imam Uz Zaman Ki Aamad</i> ). Jeane Dixon has affirmed that this child was actually born on a Monday <i>i.e.</i> 5th February 1962 A.D. which corresponds to 29th Shabaan 1381 Hijrah (Chapter 26: A-1). Dr Lobsang Rampa has

foretold that this date is a very important date leading to momentuous events in the history of mankind (Chapter 26: A-5). Hence the foretellings of Prophet Muhammad made fourteen centuries ago, Shah Neamatullah made more than 800 years back and that of Jeane Dixon in 1962 and by Dr. Rampa are all surprisingly identical!

*Character:* As wonderful and pure as that of Prophet Muhammad himself (Chapter 21: D-6).

*Speech:* The Mahdi will stammer slightly when speaking.

*Achievement:* That he will fill the earth before his death with so much piety and spiritualism as the earth was full of irreligion, impurities and materialism at the time of his birth. (Chapter 21: D-6; 24: A, B and C and 26: A, 1-6).

#### **4. Incidents That Will Take Place After The Birth Of The Mahdi**

The Prophet Muhammad has forecast several incidents that will take place after the birth of the Mahdi. These are:

##### **a. The spectacular Jewish victory of June, 1967 foretold!**

A small army of enemies with the backing of powers having world-wide influence would defeat devastatingly the huge armies of Muslims. The causes for the defeat would be that Muslims of these areas would:

1. Be attached to worldly luxuries and easy life such as wine, women *etc.*
2. They would be irreligious and take to the path of Communistic Socialism.
3. Persecute Muslim elders, who preach Islamic Democratic

Socialism.

4. They would fear death (pages 451-452, Vol. II, item No. 112 of *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

This has already come to pass in the June, 1967 conflict between Israel and her Arab neighbours.

#### **b. Jerusalem will go out of Muslim hands also forecast!**

The Prophet Muhammad had foretold that after the birth of the Mahdi, Jerusalem and the surrounding areas of the Holy land will go out of Muslim hands. (page 31, *Imam Uz Zaman Ki Aamad*).

This fourteen-century-old prophecy has become a fact. During the June 1967 war Israel captured not only the whole town of Jerusalem, but also all areas upto the Jordan River.

The Jews are now free not only to destroy the homes of the Arabs, which they are already systematically doing but they are also likely to demolish “Masjid-e-Aksa” under various pretexts and excuses. Setting fire to “Masjid-e-Aksa” is just the first step towards this goal. Claiming that it forms a part of the Original temple of the Jews built by Solomon and hence it should be replaced by and/or converted into the new temple of the Jews to be built are the other excuses.

#### **c. Syria and her allies will be let down**

Ali has foretold that in their hour of need Syria and her associate countries like Iraq (and Egypt) will be let down badly by Armenian Europeans *i.e.* The Government of Russia (page 481, Vol II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

In the June 1967 war with Israel, that is just what happened as foretold fourteen centuries earlier.

**d. An Asian Country will convert to Islam**

An Asian country with a Muslim minority, whom they had been persecuting, will suddenly convert to Islam (pages 8-10, *Imam Uz Zaman Ki Aamad*).

**e. A Non-Muslim ruler will convert to Islam**

A non-Muslim head of a non-Muslim state or Government will convert to Islam publicly (page 10 of *ibid*).

**f. A Non-Muslim will convert with one's country to Islam**

Shah Neamatullah has foretold more than 800 years ago that before the end of this century A.H. *i.e.* before 1980 A.D. a non-Muslim will convert to Islam. This person's name will start with the Persian letter "Gaf" or in English with the letter "G". The name would comprise six letters (in the Persian language). This person will be a very shrewd person. Upon or at the time of his or her conversion, his or her whole country will give up persecuting their Muslim minorities and will also convert to Islam. This country will accordingly give up its pagan rites and practices, causing great joy to the Muslims.

**5. Important Events Leading To The Disclosure Of The Mahdi**

It is well known amongst Muslims that the worst period for mankind will be the end of the 14th Century Hijrah era. This ends in 1980 A.D. It might be taken as the beginning of the end of our present system of civilisation. The end of mankind living as different nations, castes, creeds and religions and to be replaced by a new era where mankind would be an universal brotherhood under one common religion of "Surrender to the Will of Allah". Gone would be the distinctions between man and man, of nationalities, castes, colours *etc.*

The following amongst other questions naturally pose themselves

upon our thoughts:

What does the transition period hold for us?

How long will it last?

Who would be the leaders of the new set up?

What would be their achievements?

Hence everybody becomes interested in these foretellings, especially when so much of what has been given here before have already become facts.

#### **a. The dramatic events that will frighten Mankind into shaking of its present complacency**

Certainly the daily scientific discoveries and achievements are disturbing the learned scholars and men of goodwill all over the world. They well realise that we are heading for a major demoniac scientific catastrophe which might well destroy the existence of man on earth! As a matter of fact, Dr. Linus Pauling, the American Nobel Prizewinning scientist has declared openly in "Technocrat" issue of December 1968, that we now have *enough bombs to wipe out every man, woman and child on the face of this earth upto 150 times over!*

Yet unfortunately the masses are not paying any heed towards these realities. They dub these warners as *alarmists* or *lunatics*. These people, who are steeped in today's "*free for all*" style of living consider it their right and freedom to do just what they please amongst themselves so long as everyone participates in the fun willingly. Accordingly more and more people consider our present institution of marriage, of fidelity between man and wife of being true to one another, and our existing sex morals as completely out-dated in our present dynamic age, when everything is moving so very fast. These consider it their privilege of freedom to enjoy themselves with any and everybody, whether married to them or not. So long as they all have a very nice time, it is perfectly right and justified! Such "modern" groups of youths



would naturally spurn and make mockery of these foretellings. They will disregard the warnings in the Holy Bible and the other religious records dating from about 4000 years back till the last set given by Islam, even though they are all identical in general principles on coming events. *Hence the scientific youth of today are thus the greatest danger to the human societies of the world.* In their lust they have forgotten the causes for the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah or Pompeii. Were they not destroyed for the same immoral and sexual laxities? Was not also the “Great Deluge”, which effaced everything on the face of the earth including the wonderful scientifically advanced civilisation of the “Lost Atlantis”, except those in Noah’s Ark. Were they not inflicted for the very same reasons?

When the world was once destroyed completely by God Almighty for a particular reason, can it not be repeated again? Particularly if the very same reasons exists? Is it not ever so easy for Allah to do what He pleases? Has there been anyone who can stop Him? Was the Nuclear might of Atlantis of any avail? Please judge for yourself.

Have we not read earlier in Chapter 27: B-1 how mysteriously Allah has effaced the inhabitants of this earth time and again by a sudden calamity simultaneously all over the face of the earth destroying everything and replacing it equally suddenly by something quite different? Just to remind ourselves here are a couple of quotations:

“There can be no doubt about it. All the dinosaurs, along with various other ... reptiles became extinct.

“...Not one of them survived ... The proof of the geologic record on this score is irrefutable” (page 249 of *Dinosaurs* by Edwin H. Colbert).

“It is as if the curtain were rung down suddenly on a stage where all the leading roles were taken by reptiles, especially dinosaurs, in great numbers and bewildering varieties and rose again immediately to reveal the same setting but in an entirely new cast in which the dinosaurs do not appear at all, other reptiles are mere

supernumeraries (unimportant, bit-part actors) and all, all the leading parts are played by Mammals” (page 426 of *Historical Geology* by Carl O Dunbar).

“In addition to stopping abruptly, the classic Neanderthaler (the prehistoric man) is replaced with equal abruptness by people like ourselves. There is no blending, no gradual shading from one type to the other” (page 126 of *Early Man* by F. Clark Howell).

When nobody has ever been able to interfere in any way with whatsoever He does, then what is the force or value in the statements put forward by the youth of today? They often argue boastfully—Can such a destruction of the heavily populated world of today take place as would wipe out large portions of mankind like the lost civilisation of Atlantis by the great deluge at the time of Noah? Have they not got numerous such examples even in recent times? Let us all remind ourselves of the most recent complete destruction of Agadir in 1960 with 12,000 deaths for the same moral sexual disregard. Several such frightening examples during the past decade have been listed earlier (Chapter 23: C-4).

Certainly a large number of people of “Goodwill”, including some who are the heads of advanced nations and many learned scholars and even a few large nations amongst the developing countries do very well realise the coming perils. These surely will surrender themselves to the Will of Allah. But all together they will still be a minority in comparison with the heedless masses of youth, who are too much steeped in materialism. Nothing but bitter and repeated shocks of world-shaking events, even to the extent of threatening the very annihilation of man on earth, are going to get such a degenerated mankind to give up its luxuries and strive to lead the purer life of “Surrender to the Will of the Almighty Creator” and in the manner in which He wants us to. What could these terrifying events be?

### **b. Frightening natural calamities**

Muhammad has foretold that in the last period of our present system of civilisation, which will come to a head upon the termination of the 14th century Hijra (i.e. 1980 A.D.) there will be a large number of frightening natural calamities and disastrous earthquakes. About this time there will be three very terrible earthquakes, in which large areas of the surface of the earth will subside. One of these would be somewhere in the West, another in the East and one in the Arabian area. (page 485, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). These events would take place about the time of disclosure of the Mahdi. (i.e. around 1980 A.D. or a few years earlier or later).

### **c. The frightening war**

Muhammad has warned the world that two large groups of nations will fight a most devastating war. *Their declared object for fighting the war would be the same! Yet they would fight!* The devastations would be such as will wipe out large sections of mankind! (page 33, *Imam Uz Zaman Ki Aamad*).

The Holy Qur'an also refers briefly to this horrifying world war as follows:

“They said: O Zulqarnain! surely Gog and Magog make mischief in the land. We shall pay you a tribute on condition that you would create a barrier between us and them.

“He said that in which my Lord hath established me is better (than your tribute so I have no need of your tribute), therefore you only help me with workers, I will make a fortified barrier between you and them.

“So (when Zulqarnain had made the barrier) they (Gog and his Magogs) were not able to surmount, nor could they pierce (the barrier).

“He said: This is a mercy from my Lord; but when the promise of my Lord cometh to pass (at the time of the end of the present

civilisation He will permit Gog and his Magogs to cross over the mountain barrier which is hemming them in). He will lay it low (*i.e.* the barriers or mountains will not act any longer as an obstacle in their way), for the promise of my Lord is true.

“And on that day We (Allah) shall let a part of them surge (in conflict) against another part (like them) and (the devastation will so great as if) the “Trumpet” has been blown (this is an allegorical reference to the Trumpet of death and devastation of all living creatures on the face of the earth that will be blown by Allah to announce the destruction of this earth), so We (Allah) will gather (all the dead amongst) them together in one gathering. (This apparently refers to the terrible death rate and devastation that will take place all of a sudden in ‘one gathering’ or ‘one incident’ when the descendants of the Gog and Magogs *i.e.* the Russians with their ten allies, the terrible fourth beast with ten horns fight a terrible war with another part of humanity which is like them refers apparently to the other European Nations who are similar to them in culture and scientific developments and also possess Nuclear weapons *i.e.* Britain the first beast, America, the second beast, and the European Economic Community of eight nations—the third beast of Daniel 7: 2-7. Thus this allusion is a clear reference to some mighty conflict between two powerful groups of the nations. This warning of the Qur’an no doubt refers to that catastrophe which is predicted in the Holy Bible:

“For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes in diverse places. All these are the beginning of sorrows”—St. Matthew 24: 7 and 8).

“On the day We (Allah) shall present (the picture of) hell to the disbelievers, plain to view (so that they may see the horrible destruction that takes place in this war between the Gog and Magogs on one hand and the other part like them on the other *i.e.* Britain, the U.S.A. and the E.E.C. This devastation and destruction will be completed in as little as approximately one hour according to Revelation 18: 1-19 or in other

words in a very short time, suddenly).

“Those whose eyes were hoodwinked from My reminder, and who could not bear to hear (the teachings of the religion of surrender to the Will of Allah in the manner in which He wants it—Islam).

“Do the disbelievers reckon that they can choose My bondman (*i.e.* Jesus, son of the Virgin Mary) as protecting friend beside Me? Lo! We (Allah) have prepared hell as a welcome for such disbelievers (from this reference it is clear that the people who blaspheme in the name of Jesus by calling him Christ, the Son of God, after the teachings of King Nimrod, the cursed of Babylon).

“Say: Shall We (Allah) inform you, who will be the greatest losers by their works?

“Those whose effort goeth astray in the life of the world, and yet they reckon that they do good work.

“Those are they who disbelieve in the revelations of their Lord and in the meeting with Him. Therefore their works are vain, and on the Day of Resurrection We (Allah) assign no weight (*i.e.* value or consideration) to them.

“That is their reward! Hell, because they disbelieved, and made a jest of (Allah’s) revelation and Our Messengers.

“Lo! those who believe and do good works, theirs are the Gardens of Paradise for welcome.

“Wherein they will abide, with no desire to be removed from thence.

“Say: Though the Sea (here the sea refers to all the Oceans of this earth put together) became ink for (writing) the Words (of praise) of my Lord, verily the sea would be used up before the Words (of praise) of my Lord were exhausted, even though We (Allah) brought the like thereof (*i.e.* another Ocean as large as all the Oceans of this earth put together) to help (in providing ink to write down the praises of Allah)”

(Qur'an 18: 95, 96, 98-110).

#### **d. The frightening world conquest of Gog and Magogs!**

It has been foretold even by Muhammad that at the end of our present system of civilisation, the Gog and his Magogs will gain control over the whole earth except "Harmain" *i.e.* the area covered by Mecca and Madinah. These Gog and Magogs are the descendants of Japheth, son of Noah (page 483, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

#### **e. Gog and his Magogs will attack "Harmain" and there they will be destroyed**

In their lust for gaining control over the "Harmain" or the area in which Mecca and Madinah are situated they will proceed with their entire Nuclear might to take an easy prey as even foretold in the Holy Bible (Chapter 25: K, L and M).

The Qur'an confirms this fact very briefly in the following passage:

"And Zakariah, when he cried unto his Lord: my Lord! leave me not childless, though Thou art the best of inheritors.

"Then We (Allah) heard his prayer, and bestowed upon him John, and adjusted his wife (to bear a child for him in their old age). Lo! they used to vie one with the other in good deeds, and they cried unto Us (Allah) in longing and in fear; and were submissive unto Us (Allah).

"And she who was chaste (*i.e.* the Virgin Mary), therefore We breathed into her (something) of Our spirit and made her (Mary) and her son (Jesus) a token for (all) people (because the Virgin Mary miraculously gave birth to Jesus).

"Lo! this (Islam), your religion, is one (*i.e.* it has also been the one same basic religion for all the prophets from Adam to Jesus), and I am your Lord, so worship Me.

"And they (the followers of the earlier prophets *i.e.* the Jews and

the Christians) have broken their religion (*i.e.* not kept the commands of God) among them, (yet) all are returning unto Us (Allah and they will then know on the day of Judgment what is going to happen to them for breaking away from the teachings of their earlier prophets).

“Then whoso doeth good works and is a believer (Muslim or one who has surrendered to the will of Allah according to His wishes), there will be no rejection of his effort. Lo! We (Allah maintain a) record for him (as warned even in Revelation 20: 12).

“And there is a ban upon those communities which We (Allah) have destroyed: that they shall not return. “Until, when Gog and Magogs are let loose, and they quickly conquer every high place (*i.e.* every place of importance all over the world *i.e.* the communists will conquer the world).

“And the True Promise draweth nigh; then behold them (the Gog and Magogs) staring wide (in terror), the eyes of those who disbelieve (in Allah and are Atheists *i.e.* the Communists), (They say): Alas for us! we (lived) in forgetfulness of this, Ah! but we were wrongdoers (see also Revelation 16: 21)!

“Lo! ye (Atheists or Communists) and that which ye believe beside Allah (*i.e.* your scientific achievements) are the fuel of hell. Thereunto ye will come.

“If these (scientific equipments) had been Gods (*i.e.* the power which can decide issues then) they would not have come thither (*i.e.* to such a destruction), but they will abide therein.

“Therein wailing is their portion, and therein, they hear not.

“Lo! those (who have surrendered to do the will of Allah) unto whom kindness hath gone forth before from Us (Allah), they will be far removed from thence.

“They will not hear the slightest sound thereof, while they abide in that which their souls desire.

“The Supreme Horror will not grieve them, and the angels will welcome them, (saying): This is your Day which ye were promised” (Qur’an 21: 89-103).

#### **f. The disclosure of the Mahdi**

When the Gog and his Magogs will decide upon attacking Harmain from Israel, the defenceless unarmed Muslims will get frightened. Their saints will start a search for the Mahdi at Madinah and Mecca. They know well that nobody but the Mahdi can get Allah’s help to save them from this desperate situation.

The Mahdi will at last be discovered and recognised at Mecca (page 484, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

The first person to fall at his feet and kiss them will be a representative of one of the newly-converted Muslim leaders of a newly-converted country. This incident will take place at the foot of one of the numerous hills in and around Mecca (page 8 of *Imam Uz Zaman Ki Aamad*).

When the Mahdi will be found a voice will proclaim for everyone present to hear:

“Haza Khalifat-ullah Al Mahdi Fastamou Ela Aticu”.

Translation from Arabic:

“This is the Khalifa (Viceroy) of Allah, the Mahdi. Listen to him and obey him (in all matters)”.

An army of Muslims from a newly-converted country will rush to the aid of the Mahdi (page 10 of *Imam Uz Zaman Ki Aamad*).

On page 244/245 of “Durre Maqsood” is given the biography of Imam Mahdi by the scholar Syed Aulad Hyder Belgrami. In this passage he reveals that a piece of cloud will give shade over the disclosed Imam Mahdi, just as a piece of cloud used to give shade over Muhammad throughout his life as read earlier. Just then the angel will



announce that this is the Imam Mahdi as read herebefore.

### **g. The frightening destruction of Gog and Magogs**

By Divine Will, the complete destruction of the Communist powers of Gog and his Magogs at the prayer of the Mahdi will be so very frightening and thorough that the surviving people all over the world will forget completely even the mention of *Communism*.

The Commander-in-Chief of the Russian forces will stand bound before the Muslim Commander (page 10 of *Imam Uz Zaman Ki Aamad*).

According to Ezekiel 38: 13, the merchants of Tarshish *i.e.* Chinese will come to the rescue. Then will follow a mighty battle between Communist Russia and all her allies on one hand and the Muslims led by China in which 5/6th of the communists all over the world would be destroyed and Communism will disappear from the face of the earth as prophesied in the Holy Bible (Chapter 25: H-L).

The terrible war between Russia and China has also been foretold by Dr. Lobsang Rampa on page 135 of “*Chapters of Life*” (Chapter 26: F).

### **h. Communist party of China proclaims Islam**

The Communist Party of China after their cultural revolution leading to a big bloodbath throughout China will give the call of Islam from their palaces at the meeting of their “Party” or Communes. Thus will China convert to Islam by the decision of her intellectuals (page 10, of *Imam Uz Zaman Ki Aamad*).

## 6. The Masih Al-Dajjal or False Messiah

### a. Description

The Dajjal or Masih Al-Dajjal is the title of the false Prophet, who will be Jewish by birth. His hair would be curly. He would be born with his right eye blind. He would be a person of bad dealings (very arrogant and of very bad character)? On his forehead will be written three letters viz: “Kaf Fae Rae” which when read together is pronounced “Kafir”. The English translation of this Arabic word is “Disbeliever” (page 481, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

However, this man will be a wonderful genius. He will probably create a false “Heaven” and “Hell”. He will be able to perform many miracles. He will even have power to raise the dead to life. He will publicly cut a believer into two when he will reach near Madinah. “Then he will raise this martyr back to life. In spite of it, the believer whose name will be Ahmad bin Abdulla, a resident of Madinah, will declare ‘This is the Dajjal, Beware of him’. The false prophet with such powers will naturally be able to deceive many into thinking that he is the Saviour or Messiah of the last period. He will be able to gather a large following. The Jews and the remaining Christians will mainly back the Dajjal (page 484, Vol. II, *ibid*).

### b. Activities of Dajjal

In the vacuum caused by the destruction of the Communistic world power of Gog and Magogs, several small kingdoms or states would be set up. Systematically the Dajjal would gain control over several of these states (page 483, Vol. II, *ibid*).

His headquarters would be Israel. He would be a “King of Terror”. Every day he will kill many people—those who refuse to believe in him. He will oppose and try to change the laws of Allah, destroy the “Quran” and those who follow the right path of Surrender to the Will of Allah (page 483, Vol. II, *ibid*). His period of reign will be so terrible that the

blood of martyrs shall redden the water and the corpses of believers will be strewn all over. He will literally create a hell on earth.

### **c. Preparing for battle with the Mahdi**

The Dajjal will try to defeat the Mahdi, who is the only major obstacle to his gaining world supremacy. He will gather all the Jews and the Christians and all other non-Muslims from all over the world to his side. He will gather everybody possible out of the depleted mankind left after the Nuclear Third World War and the destruction of Communist World might. He will gather his forces on the borders of Israel and Syria (page 484, Vol. II, *ibid*).

It will appear from this foretelling that at this battle the army of Dajjal will be comprising the entire world, on one side. The Dajjal will mark his soldiers with his mark and sign. They will gather for the battle of Armageddon at the shores of Aphek, the valley where the river Jordan rises from the Sea of Tubariya (page 52 of *Khatme Nabuwat*).

## **7. The Battle of Armageddon**

### **a. The Supporters of the Mahdi**

As against the world-wide army of the Dajjal, the supporters of the Mahdi will comprise:

1. The army of the three Turks. One unit will be the Turks from Turkey in Asia Minor. The second will be the Turks of Russian Turkestan, who will be freed from the Communistic yoke upon the destruction of the Communist might referred to earlier. The third unit will comprise Turks from the Sinkiang areas of China, who will be able to practice their religion freely, after the Communist Party of China adopts Islam as their system of living. Ali has said that when the three Turks combine they will be able to defeat the might of the world armies.

2. An army will come from beyond Khorasan (this is a reference to the army of Muslims from the Turkish Republics of Russia and China and the Pathans of the North West Frontier of Pakistan). The Imam, who would lead this army will have the title of “Khali-fatul Mahdi” *i.e.* one of the Khalifas of the Mahdi. He would be by relationship a cousin of the Mahdi. His flag would be of black colour. Thus this foretelling confirms the Bible Prophecy that two Saints would be striving for the safety of mankind prophesying from 31/2 years before the coming battle of Armageddon the doom of disbelievers. This passage from the Bible reads:

“And I (God) will give power unto My two witnesses, and they shall prophecy (the coming Battle of Armageddon and destruction of Dadjdjal) a thousand two hundred and three score days in sackcloth (*i.e.* wearing the Haj pilgrim’s robe *i.e.* two pieces of unstitched white cloth)” (Revelation II: 3).

The Muslims all over the world are exhorted by this injunction to join this army (page 68 of *Imam Uz Zaman Ki Aamad*).

On an analysis it would appear as follows:

- i. The name of the Mahdi is Syed Imam Muhammad, son of Syed Abdulla and Syeda Amena, both descendants of the family of Hasan, the elder grandson of Prophet Muhammad.
- ii. Hence the Khalifatul Mahdi to be cousin of the Mahdi by blood must be a direct descendant of Hussain, the younger grandson of Prophet Muhammad.
- iii. On this thesis it is believed generally that the name of this saint, who is the Khalifa of the Mahdi, is Imam Abul Qassim, son of Imam Hasan Askari. His mother’s name is Nargis Khatoon, an Italian Christian Princess, who converted to Islam in accordance with an order given to her by Holy Jesus and the Virgin Mary in several dreams

advising her that she would have the good fortune of marrying the Imam of Islam of that period.

- iv. This Saint Imam Abul Qassim disappeared miraculously at the age of 5 years from the town of Samarah in Iraq when his revered father Imam Hasan Askari was martyred on the 8th of the lunar month of Rabi-ul-awwal 260 A.H. which corresponds to 873 A.D. (Chapter 21: D-6). Thereafter he carried on his administration and guidance through four Khalifas upto 328 A.H. Then he gave a written note to his last Khalifa, that he would no longer be contactable for an indefinite period until the end of times *i.e.* the time of the Battle of Armageddon, as his period of administration was over (Chapter 21: D-6).
- v. It is well known that whilst the Muslims of the Arab world would form an army under the Mahdi *i.e.* Imam Syed Muhammad son of Syed Abdullah, the non-Arab Muslims would form the army under Khalifat-ul-Mahdi *i.e.* Imam Abul Qassim, son of Imam Hasan Askari, who disappeared originally in 260 A.H. (873 A.D.) and finally at the ripe old age of 73 lunar years or 71 solar years in 328 A.H. (939 A.D.) after carrying on his administration through four khalifas for 68 lunar or 66 solar years.
- vi. The Army of Khalifatul Mahdi will comprise Muslims from Turkey, Russian-Turkestan, Chinese-Turkestan (Sinkiang), India, Pakistan, Afgana (*i.e.* North West Frontier Province of Pakistan) and Iran in particular. The flag of this army will be of black colour.
- vii. This Saint *i.e.* Imam Abul Qassim, son of Imam Syed Hasan Askari has been sought after by a particular community of Muslims from any a century now. He is known popularly amongst this particular group as “Ghaibul Imam” *i.e.* the spiritual Head who is ever present from the time of his

disappearance. It is believed generally by all Muslims that this “Ghaibul Imam” will be disclosed again only for the purpose of leading an army of Muslims to the Battle of Armageddon just as Jesus, the “Ghaibun Nabi”, would return for the same purpose, and would lead the believing Jews and Christians to the said battle.

- viii. Thus all the descendants of Prophet Muhammad from both his grandsons as well as all groups of Muslims would be represented in this all-important and final Battle of Armageddon, against the forces of Masih-Al-Dadjdjal, the False Prophet from the Jewish Communities.
- ix. All the believing Jews and the real followers of Jesus will forsake the Christian-Israeli army of Masih-Al-Dadjdjal and join the Muslims when they see that Jesus of Nazareth, son of the Virgin Mary has descended amongst the Muslims to fight Masih-Al-Dadjdjal at the Battle of Armageddon.
- x. Hence it will be clear that all the believing children and followers of Abraham would be represented on the winning side at this all-important Battle of Armageddon. Abraham’s eldest son Ishmael will be represented by the children and followers of Prophet Muhammad. His second son Isaac will be represented by the Jews *etc.*, under Ghaibun Nabi or the Prophet who disappeared *i.e.* Jesus, the last of the Jewish Prophets and his followers.
- xi. Jesus (Ghaibun Nabi) and Ghaibul Imam Abul Qassim are not the only two people who have disappeared from view (Chapter 21: D-6). There are a large number of saints who have also from time to time disappeared from the view of the common people in live condition. A few references about some of them are given hereunder:
  - a. There was a pious family from the followers of Jesus.

Seven youths of this family, to escape the persecution during the time of the Roman Emperor Nero (68 A.D.) fled from Jerusalem into the surrounding hills and hid themselves in a cave. They went to sleep and when they got up they found themselves to be in the reign of Theodosius II (408-450 A.D.). According to Simeon Metapharastes they got up from their sleep in 440 A.D. *i.e.* after 372 years (page 736, translation of *The Holy Qur'an* by A. Yusuf Ali).

- b. According to Seyid of Najran a Jacobite follower of Jesus, three youths from a good family in Ephesus, to avoid the persecution of Emperor Decius (249-251 A.D.) decided to flee to the hills with their dog. They went to sleep in a cave and got up during the reign of Emperor Theodosius after sleeping for 200 years from 250 to 450 A.D. (pages 217- 219 translation of *Al Koran* by George Sale, published by Frederick Wane & Co., London).
- c. According to Nestorians these youths were five in number and their dog the sixth (page 218-219 of *ibid*).
- d. One day the army of Muawiyah (the first person who forcibly made himself king of the Islamic Empire) whilst on an expedition against Natolia passed by the cave of the seven sleepers. Muawiyah sent some of his people into the said cave to see these seven sleepers. Ibne Abbas warned him of the danger of it, saying: "That a better man than him (meaning the Holy Prophet Muhammad) had been forbidden to enter it and recited certain verses from the Quran, some of which are given hereafter. Muawiyah did not pay any heed! No sooner had these men entered the cave than they were struck dead! (page 218 of *ibid*). From this it

will be clear that these sleepers are still in the cave and will come out only at the time of the Battle of Armageddon to render assistance to the Saint Saviour—the Mahdi.

e. Some of the verses of the Qur'an referred to above are:

“Or deemest thou that the People of the cave and the inscription are a wonder among Our (Allah's) miraculous signs?

“When the young men fled for refuge to the Cave and said: Our Lord! Give us mercy from Thy presence, and shape for us right conduct in our plight.

“Then We (Allah) sealed up their hearing in the Cave for a number of years.

“And afterwards We (Allah) raised them up that We (Allah) may know which of the two parties would best calculate the time that they had slept there.

“We (Allah) narrate unto thee their story with truths. Lo! they were young men, who believed in their Lord, and We (Allah) increased them in guidance.

“And We (Allah) made firm their hearts when they stood forth and said: Our Lord is the Lord of the heavens and the earth. We pray unto no god besides Him, for then should we utter a falsehood.

“And in like a manner (as they had gone to sleep) We (Allah) awakened them that they might question one another. A speaker from among them asked: How long have ye tarried? They said: We have tarried a day or some part of a day. (Others) said: Your Lord best knoweth what we have tarried...

“But they had tarried in their Cave three hundred (solar) years and add nine (to get the lunar years)” (Qur'an 18: 9-14, 20 and 27).



This is but one reference to the manner in which numerous saintly people are passing their time at various places hidden from the view of the common people until the Battle of Armageddon after which a new civilisation is going to start for mankind.

Thus along with the disclosure of Jesus, the Ghaibun Nabi, and Intam Abul Qassim, the Ghaibul Imam, will also be disclosed the large number of saints, who had long since vanished from the view of the common people.

When these many people speaking quaint and long forgotten tongues and wearing funny old-fashioned clothes will appear all of a sudden, the scientific-minded materialistic people, who do not believe in miracles but only what they can scientifically prove will declare that these strangers have come from some planet in outer space far beyond our Solar System for the purpose of invading and capturing the earth. Many of the native earthmen will be very much upset about it and will try to refuse permission to these so-called outsiders to settling down here. For a time there will be a lot of commotion. These so-called invaders from outer space will demonstrate that they have peaceful intentions of common brotherhood. They will support the Saint Saviour at the Battle of Armageddon.

After the Battle of Armageddon, they, led by Jesus, will intermarry and intermingle with all races showing the way to a common brotherhood of peace and love. So that at last there shall be only one race of people of mixed breed! This will convince the inhabitants of the earth, that these human beings from outer space have not come here for the purpose of conquest or invasion but have come with love and goodwill and to teach the people of this earth how to live in love, peace and harmony with their fellow human beings as a single community of brothers, and that their eventual success lies in:

1. "Surrender to the will of Allah in the manner He wants it!
2. "Thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven".

3. There will also be an army from the large Asian country, which had converted recently to Islam (page 10 of *Imam Uz Zaman Ki Aamad*).
4. There would be an army from the continent of Africa.
5. There would be other Muslims also.

The forces of the Mahdi will assemble at Damascus in Syria. They will have on their foreheads the mark of the Muslim prayers (Chapter 17: E-10).

The period of the time between the destruction of the Communist world power of Gog and Magogs and the Battle of Armageddon should be approximately seven years. (page 484, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*). From this it will be evident that this is the period of about 7 years, which has also been referred to as the 7 years of Tribulations in the Holy Bible (Chapter 25: R).

#### **b. The return of Jesus, son of the Virgin Mary**

The Mahdi will pray for divine help and the return of the Ghaibun Nabi *i.e.* Jesus, son of the Virgin Mary, because the Dajjal can be killed only by Jesus.

Allah, in response to the prayers of the Mahdi, will send Jesus down from heaven supported by two angels. Jesus would be wearing a saffron-coloured robe. The angels would leave him on the top of the Eastern minaret of the Jamae Mosque of Damascus. The time would be that of Asar Prayers. (Asar prayer time comprises about two hours daily and ends as soon as the sun sets). He will call out from the top of the minaret for a ladder to enable him to come down. The public will enquire that when angels have brought him down from heaven onto the top of the minaret then why not down to the ground. Jesus will reply that this is the sign given to them by their prophet by which they will recognise him. The Mahdi will arrange for a ladder to be put up to bring the Ghaibun Nabi *i.e.* Jesus down from the minaret (page 483, Vol. II,

*Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia).*

### **c. Description of Jesus, son of the Virgin Mary**

The Prophet Muhammad has foretold that between him and the return of Jesus, son of Mary, there will be no other prophet. You will be able to recognise Jesus, said be, by the following signs:

1. Jesus will come down from Heaven supported by two angels each holding him up from under each of his arms.
2. The two angels would deposit Jesus on the top of the Eastern Minaret of the mosque at Damascus, and people would have to put a ladder up for Jesus to climb down.
3. “He will be wearing a robe made of two pieces of cloth. The colour would be saffron.
4. Height medium.
5. Colour of skin fair with reddish tint.
6. His hair would look like wet dripping hair, but it would be dry (page 85, *Aalam-e-Islam aur yahudiat* by Arif Dehlavi, M.A., published by Friends Publications, Multan).
7. Jesus will descend amongst the Muslims and no other community (page 82 of *ibid*).

### **d. The Spiritual Guide of Jesus**

By the time Jesus is brought down from the minaret, the time for Asar prayers would be coming to an end, *i.e.* sun-set would be approaching.

The Mahdi will offer Jesus the opportunity of leading the prayers because he is a prophet in his own rights. But Jesus will decline the offer pointing out that he has not come to earth on this second occasion as a Prophet because the religion of Islam, which was in-complete upto his time on earth has now been completed by Muhammad, the Comforter

of the Universe *i.e.* Rahmatul-Lil-Aalameen and the Quran, the complete divine message has been delivered; as such no more prophets are required. That Allah had accepted his prayer and honoured him by giving him this wonderful opportunity of becoming a disciple of Muhammad only because of his desire of being granted the opportunity to tie the shoe-lace of Muhammad, which honour would make him one of the greatest prophets. Therefore Jesus will insist upon tying up the shoe-lace of the Mahdi, the duplicate of Muhammad and of offering, as a disciple, his prayers behind the Mahdi, who is not only a direct descendant of Hasan, the eldest grandson of Muhammad, but is also a duplicate of the Holy Prophet in every respect including his name and the names of his father, mother, face and features. Accordingly Jesus will make the Mahdi his spiritual guide.

After all this has been mutually agreed, it will be settled between them that the Mahdi will lead the prayers as Imam and Jesus will pray behind the Mahdi as his disciple or Khalifatul Mahdi and as a follower of the Holy Prophet Muhammad—May Allah bless them all (pages 484-485, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

The Holy Prophet Muhammad had made the following announcement:

“Jesus will return to earth as a Khalifa of my followers (*i.e.* the Khalifa of the Mahdi). He will destroy the cross (*i.e.* believers in the sign of the cross) and kill the swine (*i.e.* eaters of swine-flesh). Jesus will live for forty years after his return to earth. He will marry and be blessed with children. Then he will die a natural death. How can my followers be destroyed from the face of this earth, when I am there first and Jesus is at the end of them and the Mahdi, who is from my descendants is in the middle of us two?” (page 463, Vol. 1, *Ajaibal Kasas*, by Muhammad Ahsanullah Khan Bahadur).

Thereafter Jesus will announce to the opposing army of the Jews and Christians led by Masih-Al-Dadjdjal that:

1. He is Jesus, son of the Virgin Mary.

2. He has returned again in bodily form as had been promised in the Holy Bible:

“.. Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? This same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, *shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven*” (Act 1: 11). Thus making it absolutely clear that Jesus is going to return to earth in bodily form, in the same like condition as he was when he was taken up into Heaven. Jesus is certainly not going to come back on earth in a spiritual form.

3. His first Mission on earth was to pave the way and prepare the world for the reception and welcome of “Muhammad, the Messenger of Allah” for whom the entire universe was created by Allah and the entire universe will be blessed through Muhammad who was the Messenger of Salvation and whose teachings *i.e.* the Qur’an shall be true, insomuch that the heaven and earth shall fail, but his teachings shall never fail. The very word “Gospel” means “Good News”. There has, of course, been much preaching of a supposed Gospel of Christ. In that sense Christ has been much preached to the world. But not the Gospel of Jesus which he personally taught!—The Gospels of Levi, Barnabas and John and the Revelation, all of which were in the Hebrew language, the mother tongue of Jesus and noted down in Aramaic Script, none of which is any longer available to the public—the real teachings of Jesus, which have been shown in Chapter 12: G, 1-16 are totally different to what is being practiced by Christians, which is nothing but the teachings of Nimrod of Babylon the mighty hunter in rebellion due to whom the curse of Allah fell upon mankind at the Tower of Babel and which has been haunting us since then!
4. That all prophets have become prophets, because of the blessings they received from the soul of Muhammad or Nur-e-Muhamadi or Logos or the Light of Truth which is the first

thing that God created.

5. That Jesus, by being blessed with this present opportunity to serve as a humble disciple of Muhammad upon his return to earth, would become one of the greatest prophets!
6. Muhammad is the promised seed of Abraham through whom the whole world would be blessed—The Comforter of the Universe—Rahmatul-Lil-Aalameen.
7. After the birth of Muhammad the Messenger of Allah, no other prophet would be born on this earth.
8. Muhammad is the only prophet from the children of Abraham, to be born south of Palestine, hence he is the Promised Prophet. The fact that he destroyed idols and idolatry further confirms that he is the Promised Prophet, the Saviour of the Universe.
9. The mission of the second coming of Jesus was to destroy at the Battle of Armageddon, which is commencing forthwith, the Masih Al-Dadjjal or False Prophet and his army of apostate Jews and Christians or Nimrodists.
10. This is the last chance for those who want to convert to Islam. No further opportunity will be given as all disbelievers in the world would be exterminated in the Battle of Armageddon which is commencing forthwith.

On pages 221-227 of the *Gospel of Barnabas* is recorded:

“When the prayer was ended, the priest said with a loud voice: ‘Stay, Jesus, for we need to know who thou art, for the quieting of our nation.’

“Jesus answered: ‘I am Jesus, son of Mary, of the seed of David, *a man that is mortal* and feareth God, *and I seek that to God be given honour and glory*’.

“The priest answered: ‘In the book of Moses it is written that our

God must send us the Messiah, who shall come to announce to us that which God willeth, and shall bring to the world the mercy of God. Therefore I pray thee tell us the truth, art thou the Messiah of God whom we expect?’

“Jesus answered: ‘It is true that God hath so promised, *but indeed I am not he, for he is made before me, and shall come after me.*’

“The priest answered: ‘By thy words and signs at any rate we believe thee to be a prophet and an holy one of God, wherefore I pray thee in the name of all Judaea and Israel that thou for love of God shouldst tell us in what wise the Messiah will come.’

“Jesus answered: ‘As God liveth, in whose presence my soul standeth, I am not the Messiah whom all the tribes of the earth expect, even as God promised to our father Abraham, saying: In thy seed will I bless all the tribes of the earth”. *But when God shall take me away from the world, Satan will raise again this accursed sedition, by making the impious believe that I am god and son of god, whence my words and my doctrine shall be contaminated, insomuch that scarcely shall there remain thirty faithful ones: whereupon God will have mercy upon the world, and will send His Messenger for whom He hath made all things; who shall come from the south with power, and shall destroy the idols with the idolaters; who shall take away the dominion from Satan which he hath over men. He shall bring with him the mercy of God for salvation of them that shall believe his words.*

“Unworthy though I am to unite his hosen (*hosen means shoe lace*), I have received grace and mercy from God to see him.

“Then answered the priest, with the governor and the king, saying: ‘Distress not thyself, O Jesus, holy one of God, because in our time shall not this sedition be any more, seeing (to) that we will write to the sacred Roman senate in such wise that *by imperial decree none shall any more call thee god or son of god.*’

“Then said Jesus: ‘With your words I am not consoled, because

where ye hope for light darkness shall come; But my consolation is in the coming of the messenger, who shall destroy every false opinion of me, and his faith shall spread and take hold of the whole world, for so hath God promised to Abraham our father. *And that which giveth me consolation is that his faith shall have no end, but shall be kept inviolate by God.*

“The priest answered: ‘After the coming of the messenger of God shall other prophets come?’

“Jesus answered: There shall not come after him true prophets sent by God, but there shall come a great number of false prophets, whereat I sorrow. For Satan shall raise them up by the just judgement of God, and they shall hide themselves under the pretext of my gospel.

“Herod answered: How it is a just judgement of God that such impious men should come?’

“Jesus answered: ‘It is just *that he who will not believe in the truth to his salvation should believe in a lie to his damnation. Wherefore I say unto you, that the world hath ever despised the true prophets and loved the false, as can be seen in the time of Michaiah and Jeremiah. For every like loveth his like.*

“Then said the priest: ‘How shall the Messiah be called, and what sign shall reveal his coming?’

“Jesus answered: ‘The name of the Messiah is admirable, for God Himself gave him the name when He had created his soul, and placed it in a celestial splendour. *God said: ‘Wait Muhammad, for thy sake I will create paradise, the world, and a great multitude of creatures, whereof I make thee a present, insomuch that whoso shall bless thee shall be blessed and whoso shall curse thee shall be accursed. When I shall send thee into the world I shall send thee as My messenger of salvation, and thy word shall be true, insomuch that heaven and earth shall fail, but thy faith shall never fail.* “Muhammad is his blessed name”.

“Then the crowd lifted up their voices, saying: ‘O God, send us Thy



*messenger: O Muhammad, come quickly for the salvation of the world'!"*

### **e. The Battle in the valley of Jordan River at Armageddon**

On the next morning Jesus leading the forces of the Mahdi, will come out of Damascus.

Jesus, the Mahdi and the Muslims will recite the following above quoted prayer of Jesus and his true followers:

“O Muhammad! come quickly to our assistance for the Salvation of the world”.

In response to this prayer the army of the Saint Saviour would receive divine assistance in the form of Prophet Muhammad clothed in white robes on a white horse with an army of angels. This has also been foretold in the Holy Bible (Chapter 25: T) but instead of the name Muhammad he has been described by his title “Al Amin” (Chapter 27: D-30) *i.e.* “The Faithful and True” which was given to him by the Meccans when he was only 24 years, 9 months and 6 days old. In the following verse, he has also been described by his divine title “Amar Allah” *i.e.* the Word of God (Chapter 17: A-3) or Logos. In other words two descriptions have been given of the Prophet of Islam, both of which titles have not been blessed upon any other prophet.

The Dadjdal upon seeing Jesus would start melting (with fear) and will flee back across the Golan Heights. His army will retreat back to the shores of Aphek, the valley where the Jordan River rises from Lake Tubariya. This place has been called Armageddon in the Holy Bible. The entire army of the Dadjdal will perish here! (page 485, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

### **f. The Death of Dadjdal**

The Dadjdal and his few non-Muslim followers who escape the great killing at Armageddon will all be captured one by one and killed within 40 days thereafter by the army of Saints with the Mahdi. Jesus will

capture and kill the Masih Al-Dadjdjal the false prophet at Lod (now known as Lydda) the airport to Tel-Aviv (page 485, Vol. 11, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia* & page 87 *Alam-e-Islam aur Yahudiat*).

**g. Jesus will revenge himself by killing everyone who disgraced him before Allah by blaspheming by calling him “god” or “son of god”**

Jesus was very much embarrassed in heaven because his so-called followers after some years instead of following his teachings changed over to Nimrodism and started blaspheming in the name of Jesus by calling him by the titles of Nimrod *i.e.* “god in Trinity in Unity” and “The only begotten son of God”. The said questions and answers as revealed in the Divine passages of the Qur’an are reproduced hereunder:

“And when Allah questioned: O Jesus, son of Mary! Didst thou say unto mankind: Take me and my mother for two gods (*i.e.* son of God and Mary mother of God) besides Allah? He (Jesus) replied: (O Allah!) Be glorified! It was not *mine to utter that to which I had no right*. If I used to say it, then Thou knewest it. Thou knewest what is in my mind and I know not what is in Thy mind. Lo! Thou, only Thou art the knower of things hidden.

“I spoke unto them only that which Thou commandest me (teaching): Worship Allah my God and your God (St. John 20: 7). I was a witness of them (only) whilst I dwelt amongst them, and when Thou tookest me, Thou wast the Watcher over them. Thou art Witness over all things.

“If Thou punish them (for their blasphemy) Lo! they are Thy slaves and if Thou forgive them (lo! they are Thy slaves). Lo! Thou only Thou art the Mighty, the Wise” (Qur’an 5: 116-118).

Jesus was very much insulted and humiliated in heaven, when he was questioned by Allah as above because his so-called followers started blaspheming by calling him “God” or “Trinity in unity” and “Son of God” and calling his mother “the mother of God”.

Thus Jesus, son of the Virgin Mary, will avenge himself at the

Battle of Armageddon by fighting and destroying each and every believer in Christianity or Nimrodism. He will demolish the religion of the sign of the cross and the eaters of swine flesh (Foretellings by Muhammad—pages 82, 84-86 of *Aalam-e-Islam aur Yahudiat*).

Christians who might escape from the valley of Aphek or Armageddon will be chased by Jesus and his army of Muslims and killed. If they hide themselves anywhere, the walls and the ground of the area will call out “Oh Muslims, here is a disbeliever hiding. Come and kill him”. In this way each and every believer in “Tau” *i.e.* the “Cross” the sign of Nimrod and Emperor St. Constantine’s Christians, the uncircumcised, the eaters of swine flesh will be destroyed by Jesus and his Muslim armies! (pages 82, 84-86 of *Aalam-e-Islam aur Yahudiat*).

This is corroborated not only in the Holy Bible as pointed out herebefore according to the research carried out by the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society and International Bible Students Association (Chapter 27: F) but is even foretold by Jeane Dixon in her revelation of the “Prophecy of Fatima” (Chapter 26: B) that the “Papacy” will come to an end in this century.

#### **h. The complete destruction of Nimrodism**

Thus from the above prophecies it will be clear that between the end of the Fourteenth Century Hijrah (*i.e.* 1980 A.D.) and the establishment of the new “Era”, three major incidents destroying Nimrodism and its followers will take place. The first of these will be the Nuclear Holocaust which will eliminate very large sections of Nimrodism, which have gained fame under the general name of Christianity. The second would be the destruction of the next branch of Nimrodism *i.e.* Atheism known as Communism. The last will be at what is known as the Battle of Armageddon at which all the various remaining branches of Nimrodism will be gathered together under the mark of the Dajjal to fight the Mahdi and the “Muslims” *i.e.* “those who have surrendered to

the Will of Allah”.

Muhammad has even warned that anybody who follows any religion other than Islam or Surrender to the Will of Allah, even if he manages to escape from the battlefield on the shore of Aphek or Armageddon, will still be caught and killed. So it will be useless for him because wherever he will flee and hide the earth of that place will speak miraculously and warn Jesus and the Muslims that here is a disbeliever hiding, come and kill him. In this manner every Nimrodist and apostate Jew will be eliminated from the face of the earth (page 86, Aalam-e-Islam aur Yahudiat). It does remind one of the following warning in the Holy Bible:

“And He (God) shall send Jesus (back), which before was preached unto you, (Acts 1: 11).

“Whom the heaven must receive (and retain) until the times of the restitution of all things (into God’s New Era), which God hath spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since, the world began.

“For Moses truly said unto the (fore) fathers, a (promised) prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you from your brethren (tribe of Ishmael), like unto me (*i.e.* one who would speak face to face with God as one speaks to his friend as Moses had done); him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.

“And (after the lapse of some centuries when the time of reconstitution of the Earth into God’s New Era will come) it shall come to pass, that every soul, which will not hear that (promised) Prophet, shall be destroyed (at the Battle of Armageddon) from among the people (of the earth).

“Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel and those that follow after, as many have spoken, have likewise foretold of these days.

“Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our (fore) fathers (Chapter 17: A-8 for the full details of the covenant), saying unto Abraham (as seen earlier in Chapter 7: F

and G-1 to 8 when Abraham had taken Ishmael to sacrifice his one and only son to Mount Monah on the outskirts of Mecca which took place sometime even before the foretelling of the birth of Isaac and when Allah had saved Ishmael from the sacrifice, Allah, had foretold to Abraham “And in thy seed through this one and only child *i.e.* Ishmael, shall all the nations be blessed, because thou hast obeyed My voice and offered thy son, thy only son Ishmael in sacrifice—Genesis 22: 18 read with 16), And in thy seed (Ishmael’s children *i.e.* Muhammad the Promised Prophet—the Logos and in his children *i.e.* the Mahdi) shall, all the kindreds of the earth be blessed” (Acts 3: 20-25),

The Prophet Muhammad has foretold that at the final Battle of Armageddon on the shores of Aphek, Jesus son of the Virgin Mary, will destroy every believer in the “Sign of the Cross” and every eater of “Swine flesh” (page 82 of Aalam-e-Islam aur Yahudiat).

**8. The establishment of the new era—man is one brotherhood irrespective of nationality, caste or colour under the universal government of the religion of: Surrender to the will of Allah.**

Upon the destruction of Nimrodism in all its forms at the Battle of Armageddon what will be the benefits to mankind?

**a. The end of the 4000-year-old curse of Allah at the Tower of Babel**

The first advantage will be that mankind could return to the stage they were in before the curse of Allah at the Tower of Babel which broke up the unity of mankind by changing their language overnight. To quote the words of the Holy Bible:

“And the whole earth was of one language, and one speech:

“And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one, and they all have one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they imagined to do” (Genesis 11: 1 & 6)

Thus a golden opportunity will present itself to mankind for

progress to a wonderful future in an undreamed of manner.

### **b. The establishment of the universal religion of surrender to the will of Allah**

The Mahdi (*i.e.* Syed Imam Muhammad, son of Syed Abdullah, from the family of Hasan, the eldest grandson of the Holy Prophet Muhammad) will be assisted by his cousin and Khalifa (*i.e.* Syed Imam Abul Qassim, son of Imam Hasan Askari, the ninth and last Imam from the children of Hussain the younger grandson of the Holy Muhammad, the Imam, who disappeared from view and became Ghaibul Imam) and Prophet Jesus, son of the Virgin Mary (who also disappeared from view and was lifted to heaven without dying to become one of the three Ghaibun Nabi) and who would represent Isaac, the second child of Abraham, *i.e.* the Jews and the real followers of Jesus *etc.*

These three *i.e.* the Mahdi and his two Khalifas will set out to unify all mankind under one brotherhood of Islam. Within a very small period (say about 3/5 years; after the Battle of Armageddon, the whole earth will be completely converted to “Al Islam” or Surrender to the Will of Allah in the manner in which the Almighty wants us to act. The world will honour Allah with great religious and spiritual fervour. The regime of “Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven” will thus be firmly established once and for all times (pages 87-88, *Aalam-e-Islam aur Yahudiat*).

### **c. All weapons of war destroyed or converted to agricultural uses**

All weapons of War will be demolished save and except those which can be converted to peaceful uses for producing power or aiding in agriculture (pages 82-90: *ibid*).

### **d. Wars will become a thing of the past**

Jesus, son of the Virgin Mary, will see to it that wars will become a thing of the past. He will teach people to live in love and harmony with others

as has been foretold by Muhammad (page 82, *ibid*).

## 9. The life of the Mahdi

Muhammad has forecast that the Mahdi, will have a period of 40 years. This statement has been interpreted in two ways *viz*:

- a. If the date of birth of the Mahdi as foretold by Jeane Dixon (Chapter 26: A-1) and confirmed by Shah Neamatullah (Chapter 29: C-3) are taken into consideration then 40 lunar years from this date brings us to 1999/2000 A.D.

If this period is taken as that the total life of the Mahdi will be about 40 years, then in that case Biblical Foretellings and the forecast of Jeane Dixon would fit in exactly *viz*:

- i. The Mahdi should be disclosed sometime during the decade of the 1980s A.D. *i.e.* when the fourteenth century A.H. ends
  - ii. The period of seven years Tribulation would be 1989/1996 A.D.
  - iii. Jesus would return to earth and lead the ill-equipped Muslim Armies to victory in the Battle of Armageddon in 1996 A.D.
  - iv. The unification of the world under “AL ISLAM” by about 1999/2000 A.D.
- b. The second interpretation is that the Mahdi will become disclosed when he is about 40 years old, because the Prophet Muhammad was revealed to the world when he was 40 years old. If this interpretation is correct, then the Mahdi will be disclosed around 1999/ 2000 A D. in which case the foretelling of Nostradamus would fit in, that the world is in for a bad time of 27 years under the reign of a “King of Terror”, who would daily cover the streets with human corpses and the blood of

martyrs. Then the period of Tribulation will be 27 years instead of only 7 years as mentioned in the Holy Bible. The Battle of Armageddon will be in 2027. The whole world would be brought under the influence of Islam at the latest within the next thirteen years to cover the maximum period of 40 years since the disclosure of the Mahdi.

Since the Holy Prophet has said in one of his statements that the Mahdi will have three periods *viz*:

One of nine years

Another of seven years

And another of five years

In the light of the dates before us from Jeane Dixon read with the Holy Bible one may logically feel that these three periods refer to:

- a. 1980 A.D. from when his influence upon the world is going to commence and will carry on for 9 years *i.e.* 1989 A.D. by which time he will be disclosed to the world.
- b. 1989/1996 A.D. covers the 7-year-period of the Tribulations as warned in the Holy Bible leading to the Battle of Armageddon.
- c. The final period of five years would be 1996/2000 A.D. by which time the whole world would have converted to the religion of "Surrender to the Will of Allah" in the manner in which He wants it—AL ISLAM,

By this time the Mahdi or Saint Saviour will be 40 years old and it may be interpreted that he will give over charge to Jesus and depart from earthly life as his mission of bringing the world to the universal religion of Islam will be completed.

As far as the destiny of mankind is concerned these few years' difference in the two interpretations of the same set of events hardly



makes any difference at all. The important thing is that man should prepare himself for the worst from the earliest possible date so that he may not be caught unawares when the disasters strike, which could be any time after 1974 A.D. according to the Holy Bible or at the latest from the end of the fourteenth century A. H. (which takes place in 1980 A.D.) according to Islamic sources.

As soon as the Battle of Armageddon is over and all disbelievers destroyed, the Mahdi will get his chief disciple Jesus, son of the Virgin Mary, to marry a Muslim lady. He will appoint Jesus as his “Khalifa” or Viceroy. Upon the Mahdi’s departure from earthly life, Jesus will become king of the *United humankind*. Thus the old prophecy will be fulfilled:

“Jesus of Nazareth a king from out of the Jews” or in Latin “Iesus Nazaranae Rex Iudaei” or “I.N.R.I.” would become true after twenty centuries!

Thus would commence the new system of a civilisation of common universal brotherhood of humankind in a period, when wars would be a thing of the past and weapons of war exterminated. The world would be filled with piety and goodness, as it was full of wickedness at the time of the birth of the Mahdi (5th February 1961 *i.e.* Monday 29th Shaban 1381 A.H.) *i.e.* around the latter part of 14th century Hijrah.

When the task of the Mahdi has been accomplished, he will depart from earthly life. Jesus will perform the last funeral rites of his “Spiritual Guide”—the Mahdi and bury him (page 485, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

## **10. The life of Jesus after his return**

Muhammad has foretold, that Jesus will live for approximately 40 years after his return to earthly life at Damascus amongst the Muslims at the time of the Battle of Armageddon (page 85, *Aalam-e-Islam aur*

*Yahudiat*).

Jesus under instructions of his Spiritual Guide—The Mahdi—will marry and get children (page 485, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Further, when Jesus would be appointed by the Mahdi—the Saint Saviour—as the Khalifa to rule the world, Jesus out of respect for the Holy Prophet Muhammad will not set up his Capital at Mecca or Madinah as he would not consider himself worthy of such an honour. So he will make his headquarters at Jerusalem, the town of his forefather, the Prophet David (see page 485, Vol. II, *Tafrihul Askia Fil Ahwal Ul Ambia*).

Further it is foretold by Muhammad that Jesus will live the life of a Muslim or “One who has surrendered himself to the will of Allah”. Jesus will also die as a Muslim. Further, that Muslims will perform his last rites and bury Jesus (page 85, *Aalam-e-Islam aur Yahudiat*).

It is further foretold that either the Mahdi or Jesus are likely to be buried in the one vacant space, alongside the grave of Prophet Muhammad at Madinah. In fact it is felt by Muslims that the Mahdi—the Saint Saviour—will desire that this honour be given to his chief disciple—his Khalifa, the Prophet Jesus, son of the Virgin Mary, thereby bringing both the children of Abraham *i.e.* the descendants of Ishmael and Isaac under one fold and one brotherhood!

#### **D. Comparison with Biblical foretellings**

Thus it will be seen that Islamic and Biblical foretellings are absolutely identical. The fundamentals are also the same *viz*:

1. Three terrible wars are in the offing within the next few years, and this will decimate mankind. Probably only so few people will be left as could be compared with the position some four thousand years back *i.e.* before the curse at the Tower of Babel and after the Great Deluge which destroyed mankind save and

except Noah and his three sons and their wives!

2. Islam also confirms the findings of Christian Research Scholars that both the apostate Jews as well as also Christians will be destroyed at the Battle of Armageddon.
3. Islam also corroborates the findings of Christians that only those who surrender themselves to the Will of Allah and conduct their lives in the manner in which the Almighty wants us to act will be saved.
4. The foretellings of Jeane Dixon on the “Prophecy of Fatima” that the Papacy of the Church will end, and that there will be no more “Popes” after the end of this century is also confirmed by Islam that Jesus, son of the Virgin Mary, will himself destroy Christianity, the religion of the eaters of swine flesh and believers in the sign of the cross, which was founded by King Nimrod and incorporated by St. Peter and St. Paul and became known as Christianity when the Roman Emperor St. Constantine coined the name “Christos” from the Greek letter “X” representing the sign of the cross, Easter, and “X-mas” or Christmas.
5. The Gog and his Magogs (*i.e.* Communist) domination of the world and its destruction at the hands of the Mahdi or Saint Saviour because of their attack on Madinah and Mecca is foretold likewise both by the Holy Bible and Islam.
6. Both the Holy Bible and Islamic sources forecast terrible earthquakes and other natural calamities.
7. Both warn that all disbelievers will be destroyed in the famous Battle of Armageddon in which evil will be eliminated from the face of the earth.
8. Both sources inform that the Battle of Armageddon will start a new era of world peace, progress and prosperity under the system of a great spiritual revival:

“Thy will be done on Earth as it is in Heaven”

9. That Allah will be honoured throughout the world. No other gods or sons of God or Trinity or other such blasphemies will remain on the face of the earth for several centuries thereafter!



## Chapter 30

# Too Wonderful To Believe—Yet It's True



Do you see a bright future ahead? Both for humanity and you? Are you not alarmed at today's prevailing conditions? Do you not feel that something drastic is just round the corner, which may threaten the very existence of man on earth? Where is any *good news* today?

Can any future be found amongst the nations developing nuclear weapons which can wipe out all human, animal and plant life from the face of the earth?

Is there any joyous anticipation to be found in the prosperous "have" nations?—where the sources of drinking water—the rivers and the lakes—are being polluted and the air we breathe is being contaminated and the foods are being robbed of their nutrition in the food factories and in the fields which are covered by chemical fertilizers and insecticides to grow more food!

Or is there any hope to be found in the wretchedness, ignorance, poverty, squalor and filth in which more than half the world's population live?

Do we not see all around us unhappiness?—homes and families are being broken up by our *freedom for all* living in sexual abuses and abortions! Crimes of every description are rapidly increasing, racial problems and violence are erupting, and sickness and mental disturbances are multiplying!

Are we not tempted to ask—Where can happiness be found today and how?

Only but half a century ago, driving down the countryside in almost any country of the world, one could see the farmers ploughing with their teams of horses or cows, singing happily as they walked. Today, the very same farmers ride tractors—but where has their singing and happiness gone to?

Even on university campuses, where the leaders for tomorrow are being educated, we are sadly disappointed to discover that they too are consigning morality to the limbo of an outmoded past. There, most unfortunately, unproved doctrines and dogmas are being absorbed by the impressionable minds!—Result is greater chaos and confusion by the younger generations. Many become totally unfit for the societies they live in! Suicides are on the increase!

Where can one find inspiration in the assertions of world leaders, that by doing this or that we can live in peace, prosperity and harmony with the rest of the world? There unfortunately seems to be none amongst the “Great Powers” nor amongst our leaders and elders to warn us how we must adjust ourselves now to save ourselves from the future of growing problems and dangers—There are “*No Solutions*” in sight!

Well, for people in any of the above prevailing concepts, the future must indeed appear discouragingly bleak!

This research has been compiled taking over twelve years only for the purpose of providing those answers which are not available to the public. Numerous efforts were made by the author to get this thesis published by any one of the leading European, British and American publishers—but one and all they refused! An American publisher was however kind enough to give the following reason:

*“Books which are meant to correct the world and bring them to the right path are not liked by the public”.*

This answer brings home very vividly the two main methods of life—the two basic principles—the two fundamental philosophies *viz*:

- a. The one way is “*God-centered*”!

The other is “*Self-centered*” !

- b. One is “*Love*”!

The other is “*Lust*”!

- c. One believes it is more blessed to share whatever you have with the have-nots!

The other insists that acquiring, taking, accumulating, in the way of competition, leads to progress and happiness!

- d. The one accepts the “Golden” Rule of—serve others!

The other says: “Do it to others before they can do it to you”!

- e. One is the way of the divine will of the Creator!

The other is the way of human nature!

- f. This world Civilisation is on the hostile competitive *self-centered* way.

The coming civilisation after Armageddon will be just the opposite!

Our present civilisation has produced every human woe and misery! It is this way, which is now threatening the very extinction of humanity!

All this means only one thing that MAN engrossed in the struggle for survival is utterly unable to solve his problems. He can only create new and more difficult ones. By our scientific knowledge and material outlook this world is doomed and hopeless, unless we can take to the path of Allah and surrender ourselves to His will in the manner in which He wants it—not as we want it!

### A. The grand future ahead

Now You be the JUDGE!—judge for yourself:

Do you want to follow the RIGHT path of Allah?

Do you want to save yourself?

Do you want to guide your family and friends to that path which will save them?

Do you want to survive through Armageddon?

Do you not long for a period of *peace* and *cooperation* between *Man* and *Man*?

If such were possible even for a few centuries, can you imagine the wonderful progress that mankind will make in each and every field?—The grand future ahead!

Will not such a period be too wonderful to believe?

If your mind is open you can easily realise that a dramatic change is just round the corner. But realise very well that as the American publisher has informed the author that good advices meant to bring people to the right path are not liked, so also realise well that if you want to surrender yourself to the Will of Allah in the manner He wants—Do that—and you will be FORCED to reject society!

Because *it will reject you!*

When so many of the prophecies made thousands of years back have come true, can there be any logical reason to doubt that after the Battle of Armageddon there is going to be a new era of peace and prosperity for many centuries with mankind as one race! Will not this be a period which will be too wonderful to believe? Is there anyone who can dispute this?

Let us fill our hearts with joy and hope by reading a few Biblical Foretellings about conditions in Allah's new system of civilisation *i.e.* The New Order which will come about after the series of calamities



ending with the Battle of Armageddon. Then let us ponder and think whether it will be worth the sacrifice we shall be required to make, before we can achieve it?—The grand future ahead!

### **B. Establishment of the religion of surrender to the will of Allah**

“Thy Kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in Heaven” (St. Matthew 6: 10).

Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for “... a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness” (2 Peter 3: 13).

### **C. Weapons of war destroyed and wars will be forgotten**

“And He shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people: and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruninghooks. Nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more” (Isaiah 2: 4).

“But in the last days it shall come to pass, that the mountain of the house of the Lord shall be established in the top of the mountains, and it shall be exalted above the hills; and people shall flow unto it.

“And He shall judge among many people, and rebuke strong nations afar off; and they shall beat their swords into plowshares and their spears into pruning hooks, nation shall not lift up a sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more.

“But they shall sit every man under his vine and under his fig tree; and none shall make them afraid: for the mouth of the Lord of hosts (*i.e.* of mankind and the universe) hath spoken it” (Micah 4: 1, 3 and 4).

### **D. Period of righteousness and rule of justice**

“Behold, a king shall reign in righteousness, and princes shall rule in judgment” (Isaiah 32: 1).

“Give the king Thy judgments, O God and Thy righteousness unto the king’s son.

“He shall judge Thy people with righteousness, and Thy poor with judgment.

“The mountains shall bring peace to the people, and the little hills, by righteousness.

“He shall judge the poor of the people, he shall save the children of the needy, and shall break in pieces the oppressor” (Psalms 72: 1-4).

### **E. This new order will make the earth into one United Kingdom**

“They shall fear Thee as long as the sun and moon endure, throughout all generations.

“He (Jesus) shall come down (to earth from heaven for his second period in bodily form) like rain upon the mown grass; as showers that water the earth.

“In his days shall the righteous flourish; and abundance of peace so long as the moon endureth.

“He shall have dominion also from sea to sea, and from the river unto the ends of the earth” (Psalms 72: 5-8).

### **F. End of hatred and jealousy between man and man—peace on earth**

“Cease from anger, and forsake wrath: fret not thyself in any wise to do evil.

“For evildoers shall be cut off: but those that wait upon (*i.e.* surrender themselves unto) the Lord, they shall inherit the earth.

“For yet a little while (for several centuries), and the wicked shall not be: yea, thou shalt diligently consider his place, and he shall not be.

“But the meek (*i.e.* those who surrender themselves unto Allah) shall inherit the earth; and shall delight themselves in the abundance of

peace” (Psalms 37: 8-11).

**G. Sickness will disappear, the blind will see, the lame will dance, the dumb will sing!**

“Strengthen ye the weak hands, and confirm the feeble knees.

“Say to them that are of a fearful heart. Be strong, fear not: behold your God will come with vengeance, even God with a recompense; he will come and save you.

“Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped.

“Then shall the lame man leap as a hart (*i.e.* like a young deer), and the tongue of the dumb sing: for in the wilderness shall waters break out, and streams in the desert” (Isaiah 35: 3-6).

**H. Man will live in security and happiness**

“And the work of righteousness shall be peace; and the effect of righteousness quietness and assurance for ever.

“And my people shall dwell in a peaceable habitation, and in sure dwellings, and in quiet resting place” (Isaiah 32: 17 and 18).

**I. Mankind will be blessed with noble children**

“They shall not labour in vain, nor bring forth for trouble; for they are the seed of the blessed of the Lord, and their offspring with them” (Isaiah 65: 23).

**J. Mankind's wishes will be granted by Allah even before they are prayed for!**

“And it shall come to pass, that before they call, I (Allah) will answer; and while they are yet speaking, I will hear” (Isaiah 65: 24).

**K. Man will possess his own house and enjoy the fruits of his own garden and labour**

“And they shall build houses, and inhabit them; and they shall plant vineyards, and eat the fruit of them.

“They shall not build, and another inhabit; they shall not plant and another eat: for as the days of a tree are the days of My people and Mine elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands” (Isaiah 65: 21 and 22).

**L. Famines will become a thing of the past—plenty all around**

“And I will make them and the places round about my hill a blessing: and I will cause the shower to come down in his season; there shall be showers of blessing.

“And the tree of the field shall yield her fruit, and the earth shall yield her increase, and they shall be safe in their land, and shall know that I am the Lord, when I have broken the bands of their yoke and delivered them out of the hand of those that served themselves of them.

“And they shall no more be a prey to the heathen, neither shall the beast of the land devour them; but they shall dwell safely and none shall make them afraid.

“And I will raise up for them a plant of renown, and they shall be no more consumed with hunger in the land, neither bear the shame of the heathen any more” (Ezekiel 34: 26-29).

**M. Wilderness and deserts will become full of fruits and flowers: Even thorn trees will change**

“The wilderness and the solitary place shall be glad for them; and the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose.

“It shall blossom abundantly, and rejoice even with joy and singing: the glory of Lebanon shall be given unto it, the excellency of Carmel and Sharon, they shall see the glory of the Lord, and the

excellency of our God” (Isaiah 35: 1 and 2).

“Instead of the thorn shall come up the fir tree, and instead of the brier shall come up the myrtle tree: and it shall be to the Lord for a name, for an everlasting sign that shall not be cut off” (Isaiah 55: 13).

“Until the spirit be poured upon us from on high, and the wilderness be a fruitful field, and the fruitful field be counted for a forest.

“Then justice shall dwell in the wilderness, and righteousness shall abide in the fruitful field” (Isaiah 32: 15 and 16).

“And the parched ground shall become a pool, and the thirsty land springs of water: in the habitation of dragons, where each lay, shall be grass with reeds and rushes.

“And an highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called The way of holiness; the unclean shall not pass over it; but it shall be for those: the wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err therein.

“No lion shall be there, nor any ravenous beast shall go up thereon, it shall not be found there; but the redeemed shall walk there;

“And the ransomed of the Lord shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away” (Isaiah 35: 7-10).

## **N. Wild animals shall become tame and harmless**

“And in that day will I make a covenant for them with the beasts of the field, and with the fowls of heaven, and with the creeping things of the ground: and I will break the bow and the sword and the battle out of the earth, and will make them to lie down safely” (Hosea 2: 18).

“And I will make with them covenant of peace, and will cause the evil beasts to cease out of the land: and they shall dwell safely in the wilderness, and sleep in the woods” (Ezeikel 34: 25).

“The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatting together; and a little child shall lead them.

“And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox.

“And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice’ (*i.e. a cobra’s*) den.

“They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea” (Isaiah 11: 6-9).

“The wolf and the lamb shall feed together and the lion shall eat straw like the bullock: find dust shall be the serpent’s meat. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain, saith the Lord” (Isaiah 65: 25).

### **O. The earth will be filled with piety**

“God be merciful unto us; and cause his face (*i.e.* Prophet Muhammad and the Mahdi because they have identical face and features) to shine upon us, Selah.

“That Thy way (AL ISLAM) may be known upon earth, Thy saving health among all nations.

“Let the people praise Thee, O God; let all the people praise Thee.

“O let the nations be glad and sing for joy: for Thou shalt judge the people righteously, and govern the nations upon earth. Selah.

“Let the people praise Thee, O God; let all the people praise Thee.

“Then shall the earth yield her increase; and God even our own God, shall bless us.

“God shall bless us; and all the ends of the earth shall fear Him” (Psalms 67: 1-7).

## **P. The whole earth will sing praises unto Allah**

“Make joyful noise unto God, all ye lands:

“Sing forth the honour of His name: make His praise glorious.

“Say unto God, How awesome and fearfully glorious are Your works: through the greatness of Thy power shall Thine enemies submit themselves unto Thee.

“All the earth shall worship Thee, and shall sing unto Thee; they shall sing to Thy name. Selah” (Psalms 66: 1-4).

“For My thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways My ways, saith the Lord.

“For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are My ways higher than your ways, and My thoughts than your thoughts.

“For as the rain cometh down and the snow from heavens, and returneth not thither, but watereth the earth, and maketh it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater:

“So shall My word be that goeth forth out of My mouth: it shall not return unto Me void, *but it shall accomplish that which I please*, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it.

“For ye shall go out with joy, and be led forth with peace: the mountains and hills shall break forth before you into singing and all trees of the field shall clap their hands” (Isaiah 55: 8-12).

## **Q. The finale**

The Prophet Muhammad and all Muslim Saints have given the very same information about these glorious times which follow. So also have the 4,000-year-old foretellings of Jamaseph (Chapter 34: B) and the 3,500-year-old Indian prophecies in the Kelanki Purana (Chapter 24: C) given the same good news. Hence these prosperous times have been foretold from 4,000 years back by world-renowned authorities! When

all important sources are giving the same information of the coming new world order, can there be any scope or justifiable reason to doubt them? The answer has to be that there cannot be any logical basis to doubt the fulfilment of the prophecies which will indeed be too remarkable to believe for those living in today's alarming world tensions.

Surely you want to live in such a wonderful new order, as Allah's promises have described in the above Biblical foretellings.

Just think of it—no more wars, crimes, violence, starvation, hunger, poor housing or sickness! Your children instead of being disobedient and bringing shame and disgrace upon their elders would become noble—"the apples of your eyes"! Gone would be the days of student revolts and labour uprisings! Everybody would become studious and progressive! What a splendid blessing these joyous surroundings will bring about for mankind, who would have surrendered to live according to the wishes of Allah!

Once again after about 4,000 years mankind would be where they were before the curse of Allah at the Tower of Babel on King Nimrod! The curse which not only broke up our unity and changed our languages, but a scourge which has also plagued mankind for the past 4,000 years with wars, strifes and destructions. The Holy Bible pertinently reminds us:

"And the Lord said Behold, the people (of the earth) is one (united group), and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do" (Genesis 11: 6).

Just let us imagine what a golden opportunity these several centuries of peace and unity will provide mankind for progress in whatever fields man wants—scientific or otherwise. Now there would be nothing to stop man in his advancement.

But this is not all! Even the wild animals will change suddenly and miraculously! The wolf and the lamb shall feed together! The lion shall



eat straw like the bullock! Dust shall be the serpent's meat! Even the cobra will not sting nor poison a child, putting his finger into the cobra's den!

Indeed these conditions would be incredible! Gone would be the days of sickness and deformity. There will be no hatred, no jealousy, no poverty and no injustice—only love for one another and adoration of Allah! Quite naturally under such ideal atmosphere throughout the whole earth there will be a great spiritual revival establishing:

**“Thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven”**

This will bring home very vividly the meaning of “ISLAM” *i.e.*

“I Shall Love All Mankind”

These ideal conditions naturally will be for only those, who would survive through the final Battle of Armageddon. Don't you wish to be one of these fortunate survivors? Don't you think you should divorce yourself from all attractions that today's temptations of the modern fast life are offering? Don't you think you must start immediately and now? Don't you think that the time of complacency is gone, if you are to survive? Don't you think that you must immediately surrender at once completely to the Will of Allah?—and the manner in which HE wants it and not according to your EGO.

Here is a quotation from page 17 of the Madras Lectures on Islam (Series No. 2)—“*The Cultural Side of Islam*” by the English scholar Marmaduke Pickthall delivered in January 1927 (2nd Edition published in 1937):

“It was this natural and reasonable basis of Islam” which made the greatest of German poets, Goethe, exclaim, after reading a translation of the Quran:

“If this is Islam, then every right thinking man amongst us is, in fact, a Muslim”.

Allah has informed the world in the very last revelation of His

divine message as follows:

“...This day are those who disbelieve in despair of (ever harming) your religion (O Muhammad!) so fear them not, (but) fear Me! This day have I perfected your religion for you (which was incomplete from the time of Adam till Jesus) and completed My favour unto you, and have chosen for you as religion AL-ISLAM (which in Arabic means ‘The surrender to the will of Allah—Thy will be done on Earth as it is in Heaven’)...” (Qur’an 5: 3).

Allah has also promised that a time will come when Islam will prevail over all other religions on the face of the earth.—Allah does not lie! His warning is:

“He (Allah) it is, Who hath sent His messenger with the guidance and the religion of Truth, that He may cause it to prevail over all other religions! And Allah sufficeth as a Witness!

“Muhammad is the Messenger of Allah ....” (Qur’an 48: 28-29).

This is an apparent reference to what will happen after the famous Battle of Armageddon. The relevant divine passage when translated into English is as follows:

“And the Jews say: Ezra is the son of Allah and the Christians say: The Messiah is the son of Allah. These (nonsensical and blasphemous sayings) are the sayings of their mouths. They (thereby) imitate the saying of those (Nimrod and his followers of Babylon) who disbelieved of olden times. Allah (Himself) fighteth against them (and will destroy them). How perverse (*i.e.* blind) are they!

“They have taken their doctors of Law (*i.e.* the Jewish Rabbi *etc.*) and their monks. (*i.e.* Christian Pope and other head-priests) as Lord (*i.e.* the Infallible Pontifex Maximus) instead of Allah and (also Jesus) the Messiah, son of Mary, when they were bidden to worship only One God. There is no God but He. Be He glorified (because He is) above all that they ascribe as partners (unto Allah)!

“They (thus) desire to put out the light (of guidance) of Allah with

(the argument of) their mouths, but Allah will not consent to it, instead He shall perfect His light (in spite of, the opposition), however much the disbelievers are averse.

“He (Allah) it is, Who hath sent His messenger (Muhammad) with the guidance and (Islam) the Religion of Truth, which He will cause it to prevail over All Other Religions (after the famous Battle of Armageddon), however much the idolaters are averse.

“O ye who believe! Beware! many of the (Jewish) rabbis and (Christian) monks devour the wealth of mankind wantonly and debar (Mankind) from (Islam) the way of Allah give them tidings (O Muhammad) of a painful doom” (Qur’an 9: 30-34).

If you want your personal safety and survival, you must analyse immediately and judge for your own selves the following facts:

1. Which, out of the so many so-called books of Words of God, is the absolute truth, free from Nimrodism and which are the works of interpolation by man?
2. Which one these Divine messages has Allah taken upon Himself to preserve?
3. Which one of these Divine messages has Allah taken upon Himself to explain!
4. Which religion has Allah chosen for mankind?
5. Which religion represents by its very name “Surrender to thy Will of Allah”!
6. Has this religion stood the test of time and shown by its wondrous qualities that even the Head priests of other religions *e.g.* Macarinus, Patriarch of Antioch in the Seventeenth Century (Chapter 15: I) *etc.*, who are not its followers, have prayed for its perpetuity until the end of times?
7. What will be the religion of Jesus upon his return at the Battle of Armageddon?

8. Which will be the one and only religion that will prevail after Armageddon?
9. Don't you think that if you surrender yourself to the will of your Creator and accept His religion from now, then you have the best chance of survival, after the famous Battle of Armageddon?
10. Don't you think that if everybody were serious about avoiding wars, they could force their respective Governments through their politicians and elected representatives to adopt such policies as would save the World from the Nuclear Holocausts—Third World War and Armageddon? See the Diary of the Jewish girl Anne Frank (Chapter 28).

—Now, *you be the judge!*

Allah does not change our destinies unless and until we strive to change it by following His will. The Qur'an is very clear on this point. Here are just a few quotation:

“Those unto whom We (Allah) gave the scriptures recognise this Revelation (*i.e.* Qur'an) as they recognise their sons! But those who ruin their own souls will not believe!

“Who doth greater wrong than he who inventeth a lie against Allah and denieth His revelations? Lo! the wrongdoers will never be successful (warns Allah)! (Qur'an 6: 20-21)

“And thus have We (Allah) permitted in every city the wicked ones to become the great ones (*i.e.* the leaders), so that they should plot therein. They do but plot against themselves, though they perceive not!

“And when a token cometh unto them, they say: we will not believe till we are given that which Allah's messengers are given! Allah knoweth best with whom to place His message. Humiliation from Allah and heavy punishment will smite the guilty for their scheming.

“And whomsoever it is Allah's will to guide aright, He opens their

bosom unto AL- ISLAM, but whosoever (schemes to destroy Islam) He makes their hearts hard and (their minds) narrow such will be permitted to stray (and their difficulties will be increased so much that they will feel) as if they were engaged in sheer ascent. Thus Allah layeth ignominy upon these who believe not!

“This is the path of thy Lord, a straight path. We (Allah) have detailed Our revelations for a people who pay heed” (Qur’an 6: 123-126).

“There is *no compulsion in religion*. The right direction henceforth is distinct from error. And he who rejecteth false deities and believeth in Allah hath grasped (the teachings of AL-ISLAM of Muhammad) with a firm handhold which will never break. Allah is Hearer, Knower.

“Allah is the Protecting Friend of those who believe. He bringeth them out of darkness (or the wrong path) into light (of guidance). As for those who disbelieve (in Islam and Muhammad), their patrons are false deities, who bring them out of light (of guidance) into darkness (or the evil path). Such are the rightful owners of the Fire (*i.e.* the denial of the wondrous sight of Allah). They will abide therein” (Qur’an 2: 256 and 257).

“He is the Knower of the invisible and the visible, the Great, the High Exalted. (Qur’an 13: 9).

“... Lo! Allah changeth not the condition (or destiny) of a people (or nation) until they (first of all strive to alter and improve their own destiny by) changing that which is in their hearts; and if Allah permitteth misfortune for a people (or nation), there is none that can avert it, nor have they any defender besides Him. (Qur’an 13: 11).

“Allah effaceth (His decrees for a people if they improve) what He wills, and establisheth what He wills (if they do not strive to improve their destiny), for He is the source of ordinance” (Qur’an 13: 39).

“How many a community that dealeth unjustly have We (Allah) destroyed, and (instead) raised up another folk!” (Qur’an 21: 11).

“Surely those who believe and do good We (Allah) do not waste the reward of him, who does a good work” (Qur’an 18: 30).

“That no man shall bear another’s load,

“And that a man hath *only that for which he maketh effort*,

“And that (the result of) his effort will be apparent (to him on the Day of Judgment).

“And afterward he will be rewarded for it with fullest repayment (*i.e.* if he has done good the repayment will be the joys of the sight of the All beautiful Allah and if he had done badly the result will be the denial of the sight of Allah).

“And that thy Lord, He is the goal” (Qur’an 53: 38-42).

It was this teaching of the Qur’an that made the most neglected and backward nation in the world, the Arabs, to become a nation of supreme conquerors in all spheres of life including knowledge, culture, science, chemistry, medicine mathematics and made them masters from the Atlantic Ocean to China within a short period of about 30 years, an unparalleled event in world history.

This great revolution was brought about only by awakening in them a “Jihad” or a “Zest” for striving hard to achieve success. When the Europeans in their “Dark Ages” came into contact with the enlightened and progressive followers of Islam of that period they too became enlightened. Thus it was this zest for achieving success through continuous effort and hard work as taught by the Qur’an which was not only responsible for pulling Europe out of her “Dark Ages” but is also responsible for the wondrous scientific, discoveries of the Europeans of today.

Islam is thus a formula for positive thinking and positive action to achieve success. It is an antidote against indolence, escapism, fatalism and predestination, all of which are un-Islamic in conception. For example the Qur’an has elaborated as follows:

“Those of the believers, who sit still (at home praying) other than those who have a (disabling) hurt, are not on an equality with those who strive in the way of Allah with their wealth and lives. Allah hath conferred on those who strive with their wealth and lives a rank (which is far) above the sedentary. Unto each Allah hath promised good, but He hath bestowed on those who strive a (far) greater reward above the sedentary.

“Degrees of rank from Him, and forgiveness and mercy. Allah is ever Forgiving, Merciful” (Qur’an 4: 95 and 96).

“... And whosoever putteth his trust in Allah, He will suffice him ...” (Qur’an 65: 3) is explained by Prophet Muhammad (May Allah always Bless him with His choicest gifts and rewards) thus: “If you place full reliance in Allah, you will get sustenance like the birds that fly out hungry in the morning but return contented at nightfall”.

The significant words in the clarification are “*FLY OUT*”, which clearly means efforts exerted in order to obtain the desired result *i.e.* “Jehad”—to strive to achieve!

There is absolute condemnation of lethargy by Muhammad who says: “I hold him enemy, who prays for a living but endeavours not to earn it”. While he praises one who strives thus: “One who is not ashamed to earn a living, lightens his burden, he is happy, and his family well-off”. The Prophet of Islam has said in rather an angry tone: “That among my people are certain types who cannot have their prayers answered” and he describes this type of person as: “One who stays at home, prays to Allah to grant him a living, but strives not to earn it, is rebuked by Allah; has He not provided you with healthy limbs to earn a living?”

From this it will be clear that those who want to be successful and to escape from coming disasters must immediately rise to the occasion and surrender themselves actively to the Will of Allah. Prayers alone will not be enough. Merely converting to the religion of Surrender to

the Will of Allah with no active effort to do good to others will not be adequate. You have to make effects, to strive—*i.e.* Jihad!

Let's not hope and wait for a better tomorrow—rather make every effort to better our today by our hard work and continuous effects!

The time for passive inaction has gone. We have therefore to show actively by our thoughts, words and deeds not only that we are of those who have “Surrendered” but we have also a duty to our families and all those who live around us to explain to them what it is “To surrender”—This is the “Jihad” taught and practised by Muhammad through-out his life—this alone can bring us success.

We shall only succeed in avoiding the imminent calamities if we can harness public opinion and thereby compel our Governments to combine together and work for universal co-operation on the one and only basis which can achieve the desired results, *viz*:

“SURRENDER TO THE WILL OF ALLAH

“*THY WILL BE DONE ON EARTH AS IT IS IN HEAVEN*”.

Peoples and Governments of several lands are going to heed these warnings. These will be the fortunate millions in the coming bad times. Are you going to be one amongst them? If so, then evaluate carefully all the materials provided for your edification by this exhaustive research. Then come to the all-important decision—Do you wish to be saved? If so, you must act here and now!—There is no time to lose!

“*REMEMBER YOU HAVE BEEN WARNED!*

“*FOREWARNED IS FOREARMED*”

**Now**

**YOU be the JUDGE**



## Detailed Chapterwise Index



Chapters	Details	Page
<b>Part 1 - Introduction</b>		
<b>Chapter 1</b>	<b>Scientific World—Whither bound? To Self-Destruction!</b>	<b>3</b>
<b>Chapter 2</b>	<b>Nuclear Holocaust—Forecast! When?—Where?—Means of averting it</b>	<b>5</b>
A	The groups of nuclear powers	5
B	The issues that could possibly lead to a nuclear war	5
C	Which countries might be involved in a nuclear bombardment?	5
D	Are nuclear weapons for the destruction of mankind?	6
E	Jeane Dixon prophesies bad times for America	7
F	Forewarnings that not only America but also Europe would be involved in nuclear destruction	11
G	Prophecies that the nuclear war would be between two powerful groups of nations <i>i.e.</i> the two nuclear blocs of countries	11
H	Prophecies made in 1152 A.D. describing the results of the Third World War	12
I	How can men save themselves from nuclear disasters?	14

Chapters	Details	Page
<b>Chapter 3</b>	<b>Universal Peace!—by what means?</b>	<b>19</b>
<b>Part 2 - The cause of disunity amongst mankind</b>		
<b>Chapter 4</b>	<b>The origin of religion</b>	<b>27</b>
A	The beginning	27
B	The early calculation of day, week and month	27
C	The two fallen angels	29
D	The Deluge	30
<b>Chapter 5</b>	<b>Nimrod—The genius mastermind</b>	<b>33</b>
A	The curse of Noah	33
B	The meaning of Nimrod	34
C	The popularity of Nimrod	35
D	Source of Nimrod's dynamic power and knowledge	37
E	Some of Nimrod's magical performances	43
1	The magical gatekeeper	43
2	The magical radar alarm	44
3	The magical aero vision mirror	45
4	The magical finder	45
5	The magical tank of justice	45
6	The magical city models	45
7	The magical well of deification and eternal life	46
a)	The principles relating to the birth of a divine son	46
b)	The celebration of the birth of the divine son	46
c)	The holy communion and sacramental food and drink	47
8	The magical tree of shade	50
F	Nimrodism—atheistic paganism	53

Chapters	Details	Page
1	The only begotten divine son born of the great virgin queen of the heavens	56
a)	The Babylonian passion play	59
2	The sign of the cross	60
3	Trinity in unity	63
4	Baptism	65
5	The twelve divine guides or apostles of the sun	66
6	The principles of Nimrodism	68
7	Nimrod's ambitions	75
G	The curse of God on Nimrod according to the Holy Bible	77
H	Nimrod's attempt to reunite mankind through marriage	79
<b>Chapter 6</b>	<b>Abraham—the friend of God—sent to destroy Nimrod, the evil genius</b>	<b>81</b>
A	The dream of King Nimrod	81
B	Steps to prevent the birth of Abraham	84
C	Nimrod's anti-marriage teachings at this juncture	85
1	Man born sinful	89
2	The title of "The Sacred Heart"—Baal	90
D	The birth of Abraham	90
E	How Abraham acquired knowledge of God and his teachings	93
F	Abraham, the idol breaker, thrown into the fire by Nimrod or Tammuz—Fire, the perfector	95
G	How Nimrod won the title of "A mighty bunter in rebellion against God"	105
H	Excommunication	107

Chapters	Details	Page
I	Death of King Nimrod by violence	109
J	The great sacrifice by which the only begotten son is to save sinners	112
K	Expression of hate by Nimrod's followers	114
L	Peculiarities about Nimrod's followers	116
M	Punishment to Chosen People of God for following Nimrod's religion	117
<b>Chapter 7</b>	<b>The life of Abraham</b>	<b>119</b>
A	Abraham's first marriage	119
B	Abraham's second marriage	122
C	Prophet Prince Ishmael—the first born of Abraham	130
D	Foretellings of the births of prophets Isaac and Jacob	137
E	The happiest year in the life of Abraham	141
F	The great trial of Abraham	145
G	Some forgeries in relation to Abraham	153
1	“And He (God) said (to Abraham), take now thy son, thine only son, whom thou lovest”	153
2	The special promised son of Abraham	154
3	The two forgeries in relation to Hagar and Ishmael	156
4	The First-born and Heir of Abraham	158
5	The seed of Abraham	159
6	The twelve princes	160
7	The reason for these forgeries	161
8	Jesus proves the forgeries	162
H	Building the Holy House of God Almighty	165
I	The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness inviting mankind to the way of Allah	169

Chapters	Details	Page
<b>Chapter 8</b>	<b>Important events connected with prophets</b>	<b>177</b>
A	Miraculous births	177
B	Raising the dead to life	178
C	Some unique miracles	179
D	The visits of angel Gabriel to various prophets	180
E	Raised bodily alive to heaven	180
F	The three Adams	181
G	The chosen people of Allah	182
H	Genealogical tables	186
I	Heavenly titles to eight chosen prophets	191
J	Heavenly books	193
1	Torah	195
2	Psalms	195
3	Evangel	196
<b>Chapter 9</b>	<b>Buddhism</b>	<b>199</b>
A	Gautama Buddha	199
B	The eight Beatitudes	199
C	The systems of Guru or Spiritual Guides	200
D	The spread of Buddhism	200
<b>Part 3 - The Religions of the Advanced Western Civilisation</b>		
<b>Chapter 10</b>	<b>The miraculous conception and birth of Holy Jesus</b>	<b>203</b>
A	The lineage of the mother of the Virgin Mary	203
B	The dedication of the Virgin Mary by her mother from before her birth	203
C	The birth and dedication of the Virgin Mary to the service of God	204

Chapters	Details	Page
D	The Virgin Mary received food from Heaven when inside a locked room!	204
E	Zakariah prays for a child from within the sanctuary of the Virgin Mary	205
F	Zakariah foretold of the birth of Prophet John	205
G	The Virgin Mary is blessed by God and preferred above women of creation	205
H	The Virgin Mary's engagement to be married	206
I	The Virgin Mary foretold of the birth of Holy Jesus without any human contact and before she is married!	206
J	The Virgin Mary miraculously conceives Jesus without human contact	206
K	Jesus miraculously speaks on child-birth and consoles his mother	207
L	The new-born child Jesus miraculously speaks and defends the virginity of Mary	208
M	Jesus a prophet for the Jews and his miracles	208
N	Jesus teaches he is not son of God but the Brethren disbelieve	209
O	The birth of Adam is more miraculous	209
P	Jesus's miraculous birth confirmed	211
<b>Chapter 11</b>	<b>The day and date of birth of Holy Jesus</b>	<b>213</b>
<b>Chapter 12</b>	<b>The teachings of Holy Jesus</b>	<b>217</b>
A	Introduction	217
1	Period: the birth of Jesus	220
2	Period: 29-33 A.D.	220
3	Jesus is lifted bodily to Heaven	222
4	The knowledge of the coming of Jesus	222

Chapters	Details	Page
B	The world in which the Christian Church was born	223
1	About 35 A.D.	223
2	The conversion of St. Paul	224
C	The origin of the Christian Churches	225
1	About 36 A.D.	225
2	The decision to preach to other than Jews	225
3	How to attract people to convert to the Brethren faith	225
4	The first Pagan to convert to the Brethren faith	227
5	Jesus refused to convert pagans to his religion even though they had implicit faith, which even the Jewish followers of Jesus did not have	228
6	Jesus commands that his teachings are for Jews and not others	228
7	The protest of the Nazarenes to the Brethren	229
8	The Brethren faith break away from the Nazarenes or followers of Jesus	229
9	In 47-48 A.D.	229
10	The warning of Jesus	230
11	The second protest in 49 A.D.	230
12	The first conference of the Brethren	233
D	The warnings of Jesus that he disowns Peter	234
E	The origin of the non-Hebrew gospels	239
F	The spread of Christianity	242
1	The Brethren faith	242
2	The Church receives Royal Patronage	242
3	The burning of the Evangel and other Hebrew texts	249

Chapters	Details	Page
4	The religion of the founder of “The Church of Christ”	251
5	The character of the originator of “The Church of Christ”	252
6	The reasons for founding “The Church of Christ”	253
7	The destruction of Mithraism	253
8	The religion of the sword in one hand and the Holy Bible in the other	255
9	The origin of the Canonical Gospels	257
10	The stoppage of the spreading of the Nazarene faith	259
11	The Apocryphal Gospels	260
12	The Gospel of Barnabas	262
G	Accept the teachings of which Jesus?	276
1	On God	281
2	On only begotten son of God	286
3	On sons of God	289
4	Christmas	290
5	The sign of the cross	295
6	On circumcision	297
7	On Sabbath day	301
8	On meat with blood forbidden	303
9	On food laws—swine forbidden as food	306
10	On idolatry	309
11	On marriage	309
a)	Marriage laws according to the Bible	311
12	On monasticism	313
a)	Holy Bible shows Jesus is against monasticism	313



Chapters	Details	Page
	b) Marriage is compulsory for priests under the Holy Bible	314
	c) Celibacy is a bad thing according to God in the Holy Bible	316
	d) General order of God that a priest must marry	318
	e) Divine confirmation that monasticism was not taught by Jesus	319
13	The Apostles	321
14	On sin and Holy Communion	323
15	Formalities to enter the faith of the Real Jesus	327
16	On crucifixion	329
H	The permanent sacrifice to save sinners	336
1	“The Powers of darkness”	336
2	The crucifixion	338
3	St. Peter denies Jesus six times in a single night!	345
4	Courts of justice do not function at night!	347
5	False witnesses at dead of night	347
6	The unexplained and absurd fit of sudden insanity of both Herod and Pilate during the “Powers of darkness”!	348
7	The belated admission exonerating the Jews	348
8	The falsity of the crucifixion	348
9	Origin of Easter according to the Church	349
10	The origin of the crucifixion of Christ on the cross	349
11	The revelation by European research scholar	349
I	Mithraism	352
J	Buddhistic teachings incorporated into Christianity	353

Chapters	Details	Page
1	The eight Beatitudes	358
K	Conclusions on the teachings of Holy Jesus	359
1	The admission of the Church Authorities	360
2	Has the Church the right to sanctify blasphemy, idolatry and wickedness under the Holy Bible?	361
3	The contentions of the Church	362
4	Nimrod's religious influence	364
<b>Chapter 13</b>	<b>The Mission of Holy Jesus</b>	<b>367</b>
A	Introduction	367
B	Who is the Promised Seed through whom the world would be blessed according to the Holy Bible?	369
C	The Promised Comforter according to the New Testament	375
D	The Promised Prophet honoured as "LORD" in the Holy Bible	380
E	The Prophecy of Holy Moses	386
F	King Tibba the re-builder of "Ya Tibba" or "Yathrib"	390
G	The learned Jewish elders and the result of disobedience	395
H	The knowledge of the Nazarenes, the true followers of Jesus, about the mission of Jesus	407
I	The mission of Jesus by Arius from the line of St. John, the only heir of Jesus	408
J	Roman King Heraclius and the golden casket Sakina from the temple of Jerusalem	418
K	The causes leading to the surrender of Jerusalem in 16 A.H./ 637 A.D. and it's after effects	424
L	Why the Jews hated Jesus	442

Chapters	Details	Page
<b>Chapter 14</b>	<b>The fruits of disobedience to Holy Jesus</b>	<b>445</b>
A	Some of the consequences	445
1	Disputes between the Nazarenes and the Brethren	446
2	The death of St. Paul in Rome	446
3	The cause for the two destructions of Jerusalem	446
4	The last warnings of St. John	447
5	The disunity of the Church	447
6	The cause of Disunity	447
B	The curses due to the burning of the Evangel	448
1	St. Athanasius	448
2	Emperor St. Constantine	448
3	The destruction of the Roman Empire	449
4	The Dark Ages	450
5	The Church in Christendom	450
C	The cause of the downfall of Emperor Heraclius	451
D	The Crusades	452
1	The causes leading to the Crusades	452
2	The primary Crusade	454
3	The first Crusade	454
4	The second Crusade	456
5	The third Crusade	456
6	The fourth Crusade	457
7	The fifth Crusade	459
8	The children's Crusades	460
E	The civilisation of Europe	461

Chapters	Details	Page
F	The warnings of Jesus	462
G	Love thy neighbour as Thyself	464
H	The birth of Communism due to denial of “Love thy neighbours as thyself”	466
I	Oh! What we have believed in is good enough!	468

**Part 4 - According to European scholars—the Religion of Universal Brotherhood and Goodwill—How Harmony between Capitalists and Communists can be achieved—so that Nuclear War may be avoided!**

<b>Chapter 15</b>	<b>The concept of Surrender to the will of God according to European scholars</b>	<b>475</b>
A	Introduction	475
B	The search for truths	475
C	Europeans’ discovery of surrender to the will of God	476
D	The opinion of European Rulers	478
1	Her Majesty the Empress of the British Empire	479
2	Napoleon The Great	479
E	The realisation of the Kingdom of God on earth according to Europeans	480
F	The branches of surrender to the will of God	487
1	Judaism	487
2	Nazarenes	487
3	Islam	488
4	Others	488
G	The history of perfect socialistic secularism	489
H	According to European History, a religion of tolerance or the sword?	491
1	Jerusalem	491

Chapters	Details	Page
2	Spain	493
3	Constantinople	493
4	European Christians	494
5	Mexico and Peru	495
6	Biblical records show	495
a	Prophet Moses	495
b	Prophet Joshua	496
c	Prophet Samuel	496
d	The laws at the time of Moses	497
7	Europeans prove superiority of religion of toleration	497
8	Religion of toleration by Pickthall	499
I	According to Christians the only religion which proved the protector of the weak	501
J	Tolerance and Islam	503
K	The religion of universal brotherhood	506
1	Man—universal brotherhood—in practice	506
2	Practice of our Black Brothers as our equal brother	507
3	The causes for the abolition of slavery	508
4	Slaves repeatedly nominated kings by their previous masters	509
5	Brotherhood by Pickthall	509
L	The influences that propagated Islam	513
M	European view on education in Islam	515
N	European confirms permanency of the civilising powers of Islam	517
O	Chambers' Encyclopaedia on "Civilisation of Europe"	519

Chapters	Details	Page
P	The foretellings of G.B. Shaw	520
Q	Quotations on surrender to the will of God	521
R	The remarks of a European scholar	524
S	European indicates only solution to bring Capitalism and Communism together	526
1	General world conditions when Communism started	526
2	The origin of Communism and why in Russia?	527
3	The compromise according to European researchers	527
4	The Western point of view	529
5	The solution for the Communists	531
6	A possible basis for universal peace	535
T	The warnings	536
<b>Chapter 16</b>	<b>Allah</b>	<b>541</b>
A	Definitions	541
B	Does Allah really exist?	545
C	Is Allah only one?	554
D	Does "God" incarnate come on earth to save sinners?	559
1	The general belief of Pagans and Christians	559
2	A comparison between "God incarnate" and Allah	560
3	Analysis on necessity of a God incarnate	564
4	What is sin?	565
I	Minor sins	565
Ii	Major sins	565
iii	Sins against another	566
iv	Unpardonable sins	566

Chapters	Details	Page
5	The teachings of Jesus on innocence of mankind in its childhood	566
6	Is man born with an original sin?	568
7	The destruction of the religion of “God incarnate”, the sin bearer of Babylon	569
E	It is impossible for Allah to lie!	570
<b>Chapter 17</b>	<b>The Promised Prophet (May Allah Bless Him)</b>	<b>585</b>
A	“Logos”—the Holy Spirit—the Light of Truth	585
1	Nebula	585
2	The Medium	586
3	The Word of Allah	587
4	The affection of Allah for His Beloved	589
5	The meaning of Ahmed and Muhammad	590
6	The creation of the universe to honour Allah’s beloved	590
7	What is Muhammad?	593
8	The covenant of the Prophets	595
B	The part played by Nur-e-Muhammadi for mankind	598
1	Did modern man evolve from prehistoric men?	598
2	The creation of Adam	613
3	The superiority of man above angels and spirits	619
4	The two forces in man—Mortal and Immortal souls	621
b)	Iblis becomes Satan	623
5	The differences between prehistoric men and Adam	625
6	What the “Logos” did for civilisation of mankind	639
C	The Beloved of Allah and his name	649

Chapters	Details	Page
1	The Beloved of Allah according to Astrology	650
2	The Beloved of Allah according to Sikh Scriptures	650
3	The Beloved of Allah according to Hindu Scriptures	650
4	The Beloved of Allah from the Books of Moses and Joshua	652
5	The Beloved of Allah by Jesus	653
6	The Beloved of Allah according to the Holy Bible	654
7	Conclusions on the Beloved of Allah	659
D	Birth of the Holy Promised Prophet	661
1	The martyrdom of Prophet John	661
2	The prophecy by Jesus on the birth of the father of the Promised Prophet	661
3	The Jewish attempt to murder the father of the Promised Prophet	662
4	The visit of angels and earlier prophets to the pregnant mother foretelling that her child would be the Promised Prophet	663
5	The birth of Muhammad (may Allah bless him)	664
6	Incidents experienced by Abdul Muttaleb at the time of the birth of Muhammad	667
7	Incidents at Kaabah at the time of the birth	668
8	Incidents in Persia at the time of the birth of Muhammad	669
9	Incidents in Yemen at the time of the birth of Muhammad	670
10	Universal celebration on the birth of Muhammad	371
11	The Roman Emperor	372
12	The luckiest year for Mecca	674



Chapters	Details	Page
13	The foretelling of the Nazarene monk Esau	674
14	His foster mother	675
15	The miracle performed on his foster mother by the babe	676
16	Halima's camel miraculously restored to health	676
17	Halima's camel miraculously speaks	677
18	The foretellings of the Abyssinian monks belonging to the Nazarene faith	677
19	The attempt to murder the babe by idolators	677
20	Baby Muhammad never dirtied his clothes	678
21	Miracles during the stay of baby Muhammad with Halima	678
22	The growth of Muhammad	679
23	Muhammad's body threw "no shadow"	679
24	Muhammad left no footprints upon sand but upon rocks	679
25	Muhammad tames a lion miraculously	679
26	The peculiarities about child Muhammad	680
27	The miracles during the return of the child to his mother	680
28	His life before declaration of prophethood	682
29	He did not learn to read or write	682
30	The "Al Amin"	683
31	The Kaabah	683
32	The repairs to the Kaabah	684
33	The commencement of meditation	685
34	The first revelation	685

Chapters	Details	Page
35	Recognised as the Promised Prophet through whom the universe would be blessed	687
36	Hazrat Khadija's conversion	687
E	Life of Muhammad after prophethood	688
1	The early converts	688
2	Commencement of public preaching	689
3	The bitter persecution of Muhammad and his followers	690
4	The faith of Muhammad in his teachings	691
5	The faith of others in Muhammad's mission	691
6	European scholars on the Prophet of Islam	692
7	The conversion of Omar	693
8	The Deed of Ostracism	693
9	The highest honour of seeing and speaking to Allah	695
10	The prevailing conditions in Arabia	709
11	The chance meeting with people from Madinah	711
12	The first delegation from Madinah	711
13	The invitation from the people of Madinah	712
14	The attempted murder of Muhammad	712
15	Muhammad's welcome at Yathrib (Madinah)	715
16	The commencement of the Hijrah Era or Muslim calendar	716
17	The training in the art of self-defence	717
18	The victory of Badr	717
19	The truce of Al-Hudybiyah	718
20	The truce broken by the Qureysh	722
21	The fall of Mecca	722

Chapters	Details	Page
22	The battle of Huneyn	724
23	The capture of Taif	724
24	The declaration of immunity	725
25	The year of deputations	725
26	The farewell pilgrimage	730
27	The Holy Hair	730
28	His departure from earthly life	732
29	His marriages for a son	737
30	His characteristics	738
F	The miracles of Holy Prophet Muhammad (may Allah bless him)	739
1	The multiplicity of miracles	739
2	Raising the dead to life	740
3	The miracles relating to inanimate objects	745
4	A few unique miracles concerning the living	747
5	Unique influence upon heavenly bodies	748
6	Splitting the Moon into two	749
G	Historical facts connected with disbelievers of prophets	760
1	Adam	760
2	Noah	761
3	Abraham	762
4	Moses	762
5	Isaiah	762
6	Jeremiah	763
7	Daniel	763

Chapters	Details	Page
8	John the son of Zakariah and Jesus the son of the Virgin Mary	764
9	Generalisation	764
10	Muhammad	765
a	The pagans and idolatry	765
b	The Jews	765
c	The Nazarenes	766
d	The Christian and Persian Emperors	766
e	The number of converts	768
f	The effects of his teachings	771
g	Other significant facts	772
h	Muhammad and scientific progress	772
H	Muhammad according to European scholars	773
1	The hero as a prophet	776
2	The alleged moral failures	781
3	The foundations of greatness	782
<b>Chapter 18</b>	<b>The Divine Scripture which defies forgeries—the greatest continuing miracle over the centuries</b>	<b>793</b>
A	“Whose sayings?” Of Allah or a man who did not even know how to read or write a single letter?	794
B	Is the Quran full of flaws and grammatical mistakes showing it to be the work of an uneducated person who did not know how to read or write?	795
C	Is the Quran in the simple language of the uneducated?	796
D	If Quran is the work of a man then it should be possible for others to produce similar works	798

Chapters	Details	Page
E	Under what conditions were these “Sayings” revealed according to the findings of research scholars?	802
F	What the “Sayings of Allah” are according to the olden prophets	805
G	Which sacred book of religion is the truth?	807
H	The object of the Quran—according to Europeans is to correct the corrupted Scriptures of the Old and New Testaments and guide the Jews and Christians to the original religion of Abraham	811
I	The basic teachings of the Quran according to Europeans	814
J	How and when was the Quran recorded?	816
K	A few comments on the Quran	817
<b>Chapter 19</b>	<b>The Divine Laws and their application</b>	<b>819</b>
A	Shariat according to European scholars	819
B	No priesthood in Islam	821
C	How is Shariat to be applied to daily life?	822
D	Index to Legislation	824
E	Marriage	827
1	The Jewish marriage laws	827
2	The universal pagan marriage system	827
3	Islam—monogamy or polygamy—which?	827
4	When is a Muslim required to marry	843
5	Whom can a Muslim marry?	844
6	The status of a wife	844
7	The contract of marriage	844
8	Meher	845

Chapters	Details	Page
F	Polygamy in India	846
G	Polygamy and the West	847
1	To legalise free prostitution or not?	848
2	What are the feelings of European womanhood!	851
3	The only means to emancipate European Womanhood!	853
H	Divorce	856
1	The Qur'anic laws on divorce	856
2	Hadith on divorce	863
3	Procedure for enforcing a divorce	864
4	The first divorce procedure	864
5	The second divorce procedure	866
6	The third or final divorce	866
7	Steps to prevent remarriage of such trouble-makers who have harassed their families with three separate divorce proceedings of 4 months each	867
8	The exceptions to the rule	867
9	Woman's right to divorce	868
10	Divorce on whimsical grounds or by swearing oaths not permitted by Quran	869
11	Annulment of marriages before living as man and wife	870
12	Divorce granted when husband missing	871
13	Divorced woman's rights to re-marriage	872
14	Special conditions—which annul marriages	872
15	The conclusion on divorce	872

Chapters	Details	Page
<b>Chapter 20</b>	<b>Satanism</b>	<b>875</b>
A	Why was Iblis condemned into Satan?	877
B	How did Iblis tear off the heavenly bliss of innocence of Adam and Eve?	888
C	The act of temptation by Iblis	890
D	The consequences	893
E	Satanism—vs—Shariat	899
1	How Allah's chosen have to be honoured	899
2	Differences between prostration to honour and divine worship	904
3	Allah's absolute authority to forgive or punish	907
4	How to obtain grants from Allah	909
5	Qalima	913
6	How does Allah guide?	915
7	Intermediary	917
8	The spiritual guide	920
9	After death	923
10	Anniversaries	924
11	What is the right path?	925
12	What have the earlier prophets taught?	931
<b>Chapter 21</b>	<b>Sufiism</b>	<b>939</b>
A	Introduction to Sufiism	939
B	The derivation of "Sufi"	941
C	Jihad	943
D	The origin or Sufiism	950
1	Ali—the Spiritual Heir	951

Chapters	Details	Page
2	The Spiritual Heirs of Ali	968
3	Ali—The seal of rightful Khalifas	977
4	The lovers of Ali	991
5	“Pul–Sarat”—Heaven and Hell?	994
6	The Twelve Great “Imams”	1001
7	The saints of Islam—The Imams	1025
8	Abdullah ibne Saba—The enemy of Ali and his sons	1029
9	Martyrdom of sons of Ali, destruction of Madinah and attack upon Kaabah	1045
E	Dhikir	1070
1	The importance of Dhikir	1070
2	What does Dhikir achieve?	1070
3	How often is Dhikir to be done?	1071
4	What about those who withdraw themselves from the Dhikir of Allah?	1071
F	What is the goal of Sufiism	1072
1	Tariqat	1072
2	Marifat	1073
3	Haqiqat	1061
4	Wahdaniat	1078
G	Sama (or) Qawwali (or) Hymns	1081
H	The removal of the veils	1086
J	Ah! thou soul at peace!	1091
<b>Chapter 22</b>	<b>How universal peace amongst mankind is achievable</b>	<b>1105</b>
A	World tensions and evils leading whither?	1105
B	Why men do not find lasting peace?	1106



Chapters	Details	Page
C	Origin of mankind	1109
D	Why was man created?	1111
E	How is universal peace achievable?	1114
F	Who is this other Satan, the Devil	1116
G	Has Allah ever saved any from the might of the human devil?	1122
H	How mankind can become one Community	1129
I	How can we become one united brotherhood?	1131

**Part 5 - Biblical prophecies on Nuclear destruction! Communist Domination and the great Battle by Saints—An Era of Universal peace, when wars would become things of the past and weapons of war destroyed! “Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven”**

<b>Chapter 23</b>	<b>We are now in the transition period to the New Era—say Biblical researchers</b>	<b>1137</b>
A	Is the year 1914 the commencement of the transition period to the New Era?	1137
B	How do we know, we are in the last days of our present systems?	1140
C	The signs of the “Last days of our present civilisation?	1141
1	1 “Nation shall rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom” (St. Matthew 24: 7)	1141
2	“There shall be famines...in diverse places” (St. Matthew 24: 7)	1142
3	“There shall be...pestilences...in diverse places” (St. Matthew 24: 7)	1142
4	“There shall be...earthquakes, in diverse places” (St. Matthew 24: 7)	1143
5	“Iniquity shall abound” (St. Matthew 24: 12)	1144

Chapters	Details	Page
6	“Disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy” (2 Timothy, 3: 2)	1144
7	“Lovers of their own selves, covetous” (2 Timothy 3: 2)	1145
8	“Lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God” (2 Timothy 3: 4)	1145
9	“Having a form of Godliness but denying the power thereof” (2 Timothy 3: 5)	1146
10	“Them which destroy the earth” (Revelation 11: 18)	1146
11	Peace—A sign of Coming Destruction!	1147
12	Man’s vast knowledge will prove useless! (2 Timothy 3: 7)	1150
13	Deceiving and being deceived! (2 Timothy 3: 13)	1150
D	How long will this transition period last?—any time between 1974 and 1999 A.D.	1157
<b>Chapter 24</b>	<b>The coming of the saviour to establish—“Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven”</b>	<b>1153</b>
A	The dream of King Nimrod	1153
B	The foretellings of Jamaseph—the head Magi	1154
C	The knowledge of India	1155
D	Universal knowledge of the coming of a saviour	1157
<b>Chapter 25</b>	<b>Biblical foretellings of coming events</b>	<b>1159</b>
A	The first set of clear indications of the coming of the “Tribulations”	1159
B	At the end of the present system the Jews will occupy Palestine by force of arms	1159

Chapters	Details	Page
C	How great will be the destruction?	1160
D	Who are the nations following Nimrodism, according to Christian researchers, who will be destroyed in this great war?	1160
E	How long will this great “Nuclear” war last?	1162
F	Who will be the contestants in this dreadful war?	1162
1	The first beast	1163
2	The second beast	1163
3	The third beast	1164
4	The fourth beast	1164
G	Who will be victorious out of the four powers?	1166
H	What will this victorious power do?	1167
I	Communist world domination also described in the Bible as that of Gog of Magog	1168
1	Who are the bands of Magog and their allies?	1168
2	Where did they settle down?	1168
3	Communist domination of the world	1169
J	Then the Communists or Magogs shall occupy Palestine	1171
K	After occupation of Palestine an evil thought will come to the Gog of Magogs	1171
L	What will happen to them then?	1173
M	After 5/6 th of the hordes of Gog of Magogs have been destroyed	1174
N	The revival movement started by the Saint Saviour	1175
O	The False Prophet	1177
P	The supporters of the False Prophet	1178

Chapters	Details	Page
Q	The powers of the False Prophet	1181
R	The seven years of Tribulation	1181
S	The saints will lose in the beginning but will eventually be victorious at the final battle	1184
T	The bringer of divine help at Armageddon	1185
U	The return of Jesus	1186
V	What will happen at the battle of Armageddon?	1187
W	Weapons of war will be destroyed	1189
X	What religion will Jesus preach upon his return	1189
Y	The 1000 years happy period free from Demonism	1193
<b>Chapter 26</b>	<b>Foretellings as to dates</b>	<b>1195</b>
A	When are these Biblical prophecies likely to be fulfilled?	1195
1	The date and place of birth of the child from the East who will unite the world into one religion of peace?	1195
2	From which family does this Saint-saviour come?	1196
3	Have any prophets or saints come out of any Egyptian Pharaoh and his queen?	1196
4	Some important events about this child of the East	1199
5	Foretellings about the Saviour from other sources	1201
6	Events leading to World Peace	1202
B	The Prophecy of Fatima—to be revealed in 1960	1202
C	Does the Bible support these forecastings of dates?	1207
1	The period between the two abominations that maketh desolate	1208
2	The period of waiting between the blessed days	1210

Chapters	Details	Page
3	The dates of coming events according to Biblical calculations	1211
a	The prediction of Daniel	1211
b	The prediction of St. Matthew	1212
c	The Holy Bible warns of three mass-scale deaths	1212
d	The destruction of Greater Babylon	1212
e	The destruction of Communists	1213
f	The destruction of the False Prophet and his followers	1214
g	Biblical dates for these events	1215
D	A comparison between the Biblical dates and the foretellings of Jeane Dixon	1219
1	The period of terrible wars	1219
2	When will the “Saint Saviour” be disclosed?	1219
3	When will this “Saint Saviour” bring the world into one community	1219
E	Others also confirm the Biblical foretelling of dates of coming events	1220
1	Events between 1974/1981 A.D.	1220
2	A series of nuclear world wars after 1985 A.D.	1220
3	A great world calamity expected around 1987	1220
4	Warnings of Shah Neamatullah	1221
5	The warning of the learned dean	1221
6	End of the transition period in 1998 A.D.	1222
7	Prophecies regarding the United States during transition period	1222
F	Foretellings from Tibet	1223

Chapters	Details	Page
G	The predictions of Nostradamus	1225
H	The conclusion on foretold dates	1225
<b>Chapter 27</b>	<b>You may survive Armageddon and enter into God's new world</b>	<b>1227</b>
A	Proclaiming the good news	1227
B	God will fight	1232
C	God did not fight for Christians	1233
D	Then for whom did God fight?	1234
E	Who are the hypocrites?	1235
F	God will destroy at Armageddon all forms of Nimrodism	1235
G	Safety lies in surrender to the will of God	1236
H	Immediate individual decision necessary for surviving Armageddon	1238
<b>Chapter 28</b>	<b>The duty of mankind to avert coming disasters?</b>	<b>1241</b>
A	"What's this world coming to?"	1243
B	"Men's hearts failing them for fear" (Luke 21: 26)	1245
C	What will it cost you?	1251
1	Life in the New Era—a gift of God	1251
2	What is the cost?	1252
3	Do not be diverted by opposition	1253
4	No time to lose	1253
5	Arise and follow the real Jesus if you want safety	1255
<b>Chapter 29</b>	<b>Biblical prophecies confirmed</b>	<b>1259</b>
A	The meaning of Mahdi	1260
B	The meaning of Dajjal or Masih Al-Dajjal	1261

Chapters	Details	Page
C	Quotations from the last prophet from the children of Abraham and his followers	1261
1	The general conditions of the world at the time of the end of the present civilisation	1261
2	Specific incidents that will take place heralding the coming of the Mahdi or Saint-Saviour	1266
a	Turkey involved in a war with Europeans	1266
b	Arab-Turk war	1266
c	European influence over Arab countries	1266
d	The sovereignty of foreign powers over the Holy Lands	1267
e	The invasion of Italy by European nations having world-wide powers	1268
f	These invaders of Italy will set up a kingdom by force of arms in the Arab lands	1268
g	The object of establishment of Israel by European powers	1269
h	The punishment for establishment of Israel	1270
1	The British Empire	1271
2	The French Empire	1271
3	The United States of America	1271
i	Turkistan in Northern Central Asia will be destroyed	1272
j	Sinkiang areas will be destroyed by China	1272
k	India suffers	1273
l	Iran suffers	1273
m	Locust attacks	1273
3	The birth of the Mahdi	1273

Chapters	Details	Page
4	Incidents that will take place after the birth of the Mahdi	1275
a	The spectacular Jewish victory of June, 1967 foretold	1275
b	Jerusalem will go out of Muslim hands also forecast	1275
c	Syria and her allies will be let down	1276
d	An Asian country will convert to Islam	1277
e	A non-Muslim ruler will convert to Islam	1277
f	A non-Muslim will convert with one's country to Islam	1277
5	Important events leading to the disclosure of the Mahdi	1277
a	The dramatic events that will frighten mankind into shaking off its present complacency	1278
b	Frightening natural calamities	1281
c	The frightening war	1281
d	The frightening world conquest of Gog and Magogs	1284
e	Gog and his Magogs will attack "Harmain" and there they will be destroyed	1284
f	The disclosure of the Mahdi	1286
g	The frightening destruction of Gog and Magogs	1287
h	Communist party of China proclaims Islam	1287
6	The Masih al-Dadjjal or false Messiah	1288
a	Description	1288
b	Activities of Dadjjal	1288
c	Preparing for battle with the Mahdi	1289
7	The Battle of Armageddon	1289
a	The supporters of the Mahdi	1289



Chapters	Details	Page
	b The return of Jesus, son of the Virgin Mary	1296
	c Description of Jesus, son of the Virgin Mary	1297
	d The Spiritual Guide of Jesus	1297
	e The battle in the valley of Jordan river at Armageddon	1303
	f The death of Dadjdal	1303
	g Jesus will revenge himself by killing everyone who disgraced him before Allah by blaspheming by calling him “God” or “Son of God”	1304
	h The complete destruction of Nimrodism	1305
8	The establishment of the new era—Man is one brotherhood irrespective of nationalities, caste or colour under the universal government of the religion of: Surrender to the will of Allah	1307
	a The end of the 4000 year old curse of Allah at the Tower of Babel	1307
	b The establishment of the universal religion of surrender to the will of Allah	1308
	c All weapons of war destroyed or converted to agricultural uses	1308
	d Wars will become a thing of the past	1308
9	The life of the Mahdi	1309
10	The life of Jesus after his return	1311
D	Comparison with Biblical foretellings	1312
<b>Chapter 30</b>	<b>Too wonderful to believe—yet it’s true</b>	<b>1315</b>
A	The grand future ahead	1318
B	Establishment of the religion of Surrender to the will of Allah	1319
C	Weapons of war destroyed and wars will be forgotten	1319

Chapters	Details	Page
D	Period of righteousness and rule of justice	1319
E	This new order will make the earth into one united kingdom	1320
F	End of hatred and jealousy between man and man—peace on earth	1320
G	Sickness will disappear, blind will see, lame will dance, dumb will sing	1321
H	Man will live in security and happiness	1321
I	Mankind will be blessed with noble children	1321
J	Mankind's wishes will be granted by Allah even before they are prayed for!	1321
K	Man will possess his own house and enjoy the fruits of his own garden and labour	1322
L	Famines will become a thing of the past—plenty all around	1322
M	Wilderness and deserts will become full of fruits and flowers even thorn trees will change	1322
N	Wild animals shall become tame and harmless	1323
O	The earth will be filled with piety	1324
P	The whole earth will sing praises unto Allah	1325
Q	The Finale	1325



## General Index



### **Abdullah ibne Saba**

Ali is Allah—declared 1040-1041,  
1053-1055

Banished by Ali 1041-1043

Confusion, conflict in Islam 1033-  
1035

Destroyer of Madinah 1030, 1043

Disbeliever in Ali 1030-1035,  
1041-1043, 1064-1065  
Allah 1031, 1062-1064

Disbeliever Hasan 1037-1038,  
1058-1060, 1065-1068

Hussain 1037-1050, 1068

Imams 1045-1053, 1060,  
1068

Islam 1038-1040, 1043-1045,  
1068

Muhammad 1031, 1041,  
1055-1057, 1060, 1064

Enemy of Abu Bakr 1028, 1041

Enemy Ali and his sons 1030,  
1033-1035, 1037-1043, 1045

Islam 1028-1068

Khalifas of the Prophet 1030-  
1033

Omar 1028-1030

Failure in Madinah and Mecca  
1030

False stories—creator of forgeries  
1033

Founded—Shiaism from Kufa  
1030

On non-Islamic Sources  
1038, 1058-1068

Founder—Shiaism—a Jew 1028,  
1038, 1043, 1060

Greater than—Allah 1031  
—Prophet 1031

Infallible Pontifex Maximus 1031

Murder of Ali and his sons 1030,  
1030, 1043-1053

### **Abraham**

Achievement—Allah is one 482

Acquired Knowledge—How? 92-94

Birth of— 89-92

—Foretold 81-83

—Steps to prevent 83-84, 91, 313-319

Covenant—everlasting 142, 181

Enemy of 59, 81-84, 89-91, 92-104, 106-108, 113-116, 295-296, 306-308, 313-319

Father of Nations of Circumcised believers 141, 143, 181, 295-300

Feast of 148, 172

Friend of Allah 99, 177, 191, 521, 662

Happiest year in life 141-152

Hen-pecked husband 127, 158

Idol breaker 81, 92-97, 162

Marriage—First 119-120

—Second 127

—Third 155

Muslim 99-101, 521-522,

Promise—Sacrifice of son 143

Prayer for coming of Muhammad 165

Promised-prophet-seed 150, 162-163, 165-167, 185, 378, 389, 442

Sacrifice 148-150, 172

Soul at Peace 99, 148, 152, 1102

Surrendered 99-101, 148, 152

Swine Flesh-eater a hater of 59, 113-114, 155, 306

Thrown into fire 92-104, 295-296

Trial of—great 143-152

### **Abu Bakr**

Buried next to Prophet 735

Converts—amongst first 687-688

Father-in-law 732, 981

Flight—Only Companion during 712-714

Heaven—none shall enter without love for 992, 1031

Khalifa—first 735, 977

foretold by Allah to Adam 419-422, 978, 994, 1031

induced by Ali to accept 984

nominated by Prophet 977-978, 994, 1031

offered Khalifa to Ali 981-984

selected by Public 981

Love and respect for Ali 990

Pilgrimage—appointed leader by Prophet 725

Prayer—appointed Imam by Prophet 732, 733

Sermon of—on departure of Prophet 732-735,

**Adam—The Three**

Abraham—father of believers  
141-143, 181

Adam 177, 180, 208-209, 600,  
612-617, 628-629

Noah—father of three basic races  
of man that survived deluge  
33, 180, 542, 600-602, 614-  
616

**Ahle-Baits**

Abbas and family are 972

Abu Bakr, Omar, Osman, Ali 972

Blood relationship unnecessary  
973-975

Definition of 973

Fathema, Hasan, Hussain are 972

Hadith on 972-973

Prophet—of the 972-973

Qur'anic meaning 972

Relatives are all 972

Respect of 975-977

Salman Pharsi is 973

Slaves of Prophet are 972-973

True followers are 973-975, 1028

**Ahmed**

Is Prophet Muhammad 190, 375,  
580

Promised Prophet 422, 432-1048,  
435, 439

Suppressed in Bible 580

Translated in Greek into  
Parakletos 375, 580

Ali

Adviser/Guide of Khalifas 435,  
981-986

Appointed first 3 Khalifas 984-  
985, 1031

Appointed Khalifa 435, 984

Declined repeatedly Khalifaship  
980, 984-985

Disbelievers in 1031, 1064-1065

Enemies of 1028-1068

Falsehood against Khalifas proved  
by 1041-1043

Gadir-e-Khum—Hadith 953-956

Greatest Khalifa 986-990

Hadith-e-Saqlain 956-963, 966,  
975

Heir—the spiritual 690, 950-977

Heirs of Ali 968-975, 1000-1028

Ilm-e-Sina 952-955, 970

Lovers are Abu Bakr, Omar 985-  
986, 990-992

Martyred 985

Natik-ul-Quran 956-963, 966-975

Never spoke ill of anyone 990

Seal of Rightful Khalifas 985-988,  
1210

Sharik-ul-Quran 953

**Allah**

Absolute oneness 553-558  
 Answerable to none—but all to him 553, 619, 636  
 Christian and Pagan beliefs in  
   God incarnate 46-48, 68-75, 81, 111-113, 230-232, 243-248 558-563  
 Comparison—blind laws of  
   Nature 544-546  
   Allah and God incarnate 558-563  
 Creates—only ones 554-558, 610-612, 616, 629, 994  
 Creator of Universe 542, 636  
 Definition 13, 92, 541-544, 563  
 Destruction—religion of God incarnate 568, 1303-1307  
 Differences—Meaning Allah and God 541-542  
 Does Allah really exist? 544-553  
 Does God incarnate come on earth to save sinners? 106-113, 328-351, 558-568  
 Evolution—does not permit 602-612  
 Flawless 546  
 Guides 480-485, 502, 1190  
 Infinite—undescribable 372-373, 556, 585-586, 612  
 Lie—impossible for Allah 152-

163, 570-582

Miracles prove His existence 548-553, 588

Nature—Blind law—not 544-548, 688

Necessity—God incarnate 106-113, 328-351, 532-568

Omnipresent 585-586

Plurals used to mean Singular 92

Promise of 704-705

Protector 432, 441, 485, 502, 712, 714

Science—nothing before Him 548-553, 598-617, 624-636, 1124-1127, 1174

Thy will be done on Earth as it is in heaven 553, 707, 1307, 1319, 1325-1334

Unimaginable—the 544, 723

Victory—fights and grants 432, 717, 723, 1232-1236

**Angels**

Fallen—contactable 30, 41, 298

Fallen—two—Horus and Marduk 28, 39-43, 298

Food—don't require human 137, 209

Taught magic 30, 39-43, 298

Visits to Abraham 137-139, 178

Amena 129, 134, 662-663

Hagar 129, 132-136, 663

Mary 129, 134, 203-206, 663  
 Muhammad 178, 663-667, 771  
 Prophet 178-180  
**Apostles**  
 Betrayer—necessity of 67-68, 328-331  
 Paul St.—not of Jesus 223-229, 230-234, 238  
 Peter St.—not of Jesus 229, 230 238, 240  
 Twelve—necessity and origin 65-68, 321-323  
**Arius**  
 Apostolic heir to Jesus 408  
 Arianism 245  
 Banished for refusal to give up real teachings of Jesus 243, 248, 408-412, 430  
 Foretold year of Muhammad's fame 412-413  
 Heresy—declared by enemies of Jesus 243-245  
   —declared by Church of Christ 243-245  
 Incomplete—Jesus' teachings completed by 410-417  
 Instructed Salman Pharsi to go to Madinah and accept Muhammad 408-417

Opposed—Nimrod's Trinity—maintaining God superior to Jesus 243-245, 408-412, 446  
 Original Hebrew—Evangel—Holder of—Seized from him and burnt 243, 246-250, 257-257, 412  
 Reasons—Jesus' Mission 408-412, 413-417  
 Signs to recognise Muhammad 413-415  
**Armageddon**  
 Battle of 1182-1188, 1210, 1213, 1217, 1250, 1289-1298, 1302-1307  
 Blessing—greatest 1193, 1227, 1315-1325  
 Bringer of Divine Help—names of:  
   (a) Faithful and True—Al Amin 170, 387, 406, 419, 681, 684, 773-777, 1102, 1184, 1302  
   (b) Logos or Word of God or Amar Allah 387, 586-588, 1184, 1302  
 Decision—necessity to Survive 1237, 1250, 1254  
 Destroy—Christians/ Nimrodism 1236, 1254-1256, 1303-1307  
 Destroy—Disbelievers 403-404, 410, 522, 568, 598, 646-648,

1159-1191, 1303-1305

Disbelievers in Promised Prophet

377, 382, 638, 646-648, 672,  
752-759, 1176-1193, 1287-  
1308

Duty of mankind 1241-1256

## **Babylon**

Babel—meaning of 36, 41

Built—for rebellion 33-34, 39 -41,  
70-72, 74, 240

Cursed by God 41, 55, 77-78, 111-  
113, 116-118, 122, 181-185,  
273, 275, 351, 363-365, 378,  
445-471, 558, 563, 602

Destruction due to religion of 50-  
51, 116-118, 238-240, 273-  
275, 363-365, 568, 1305-  
1307,

Disunity—mankind 51-53, 116,  
240, 365, 378, 558

Forehead—written on 646

Religion—rebellion against God  
33-34, 53-59, 68-75, 111-116,  
223-227, 240, 275, 363-365,  
412

Religion spread all over 39 -41,  
46-50, 53-61, 68-75, 225, 230  
-232, 238-240, 246-266, 254,  
255, 280-344, 349-352, 358-  
367, 378

Spell over Mankind, 36, 37-43, 55,  
68-75, 113, 116-118, 230 -

232, 240, 273-275, 378, 660

## **Baptism**

Devil's teachings 65, 328

Enter into Religion 65, 68, 255,  
327, 408, 412

Forgiveness—Baptised sinners 65,  
111-113, 229-232, 327

Fraud—is a 328, 408

Hated by Jesus 327-328, 408,  
1254, 1303-1305

Origin 39, 63-68, 255, 327-328,  
362, 367, 412, 452, 1254

Spell—Magical 39, 113, 116-118,  
328

## **Barnabas—Evangel by St.**

Apocryphal declared in 367 A.D.  
by destroyer of Original  
Hebrew Evangel 257, 262

Apocryphal—by Pope in 382 A.D.  
257, 262

Authentic 261, 262-273

Canonical—according Church  
Authorities 261-262

Canonical—until 325 A.D. 257-  
261

Companion and disciple of Jesus  
262

Crucifixion of Jesus—false 283

Deliberately destroyed by Church  
271-273



Did exist—confirmed by Church  
264

Forgeries—in Bible proved 160-  
163, 197, 652

Hebrew—Original in 195-197,  
257-259, 262-273, 362

Hebrew—Original in Pope's  
library since 382 A.D. 257,  
262-269

Recorded in Hebrew—the  
language of Jesus 195-197,  
262, 266, 269, 362

Recoded during life of Jesus 262,  
266, 267, 269, 362

Similar to Gospel of Levi in  
Hebrew 195-197

Suppressed by Church 257-257,  
262, 267-273, 362, 660

Suppression—caused—curse and  
world wars 660

Warns destruction/forgery of  
Bible 197

### **Barnabas—Italian translation of Evangel**

Authenticity 257-257, 262, 266,  
267, 271

Christian—translator a 264-271

Disclosed by Cramer—1709 A.D.,  
264

Existence unknown to Muslim  
264

Forgeries in Bible proved 160-  
163, 195-197, 264-273, 281-  
286, 372-373, 368-380, 652

Fra Marino—become Muslim  
according teachings of Jesus  
264-271

Fra Marino—translated from  
Hebrew Original in Pope's  
Private Library 264-269

Handwriting style proved 269

Original work 264

Paper—when made—proved 269

Suppressed and/or destroyed 271-  
273

Translated into English 267

by Lonsdale and Laura Ragg  
264-271

into Spanish 266, 267, 273

Treasure—Celestial 266

### **Barnabas—Teachings of Jesus on Muhammad**

Adam—Original sin forgiven by  
reference of Muhammad  
896-897, 909-935

Blessed—everyone by  
Muhammad 373, 652

—Whoever blesses  
Muhammad 373, 652

Born—South of Israel 372, 413,  
653

Cloud will give shade over  
 Muhammad 372, 387, 404-  
 406, 413, 653

Celestial Splendour—Soul of Md.  
 kept 652  
 —First was soul of Md. 652

Created—Universe for sake of  
 Md. 652

Crucifixion—false—Md. will  
 prove 281-283

Faith of Md.—remain for ever  
 375, 516

Forgeries in Torah—re. Ishmael  
 Md. 160-163

Harbringer—Jesus of coming if  
 Md. 375, 373, 413, 442, 652,  
 1298-1300

Hatred of Jews due Jesus proved  
 Md. from Ishmael not Isaac  
 162-163, 413, 442

Idolatry—destroyed of idols 372,  
 653

Idols—shall fall down on birth of  
 Md. and when lifted  
 announce his birth 372, 652

Judgment—day of—All prophets  
 from Adam to Jesus will be  
 placed under Md. 930-935

Kissed thumb nails—Adam when  
 name of Md. appeared  
 thereon 885-886

Lord—of David and descendants  
 including Jesus—Md. is 162-  
 163, 441-384

Messenger—Md. is—across  
 Heaven 163, 885  
 of Salvation 373, 652, 930-  
 935

Messiah—Md. is according to  
 Jesus 375

Moses and Joshua—Md. in real  
 Torah 389, 652

Name—Md. 163, 283, 286, 373

Prophet—Adam to Jesus became  
 Prophets for honouring Md.  
 445, 652, 1302  
 —No more after Md. 445,  
 652, 1302

Saviour—of Universe 373, 652

Suppressed by Church 271-273,  
 362, 658-660  
 by Jewish High priest 373,  
 442

**Beloved of Allah**

Addressed as 680, 930-935

Allah's love 588, 590, 595-596,  
 648

Astrology—according 648-650

Conclusion on 658-660

Forgiveness—in name of 163,  
 646-648, 1004

Hindu and Sikh scriptures 650

Holy Bible 653-658

Jesus 652-653

Moses and Joshua 652

Name cured and raised dead 671,  
828

### **Bible—Burnt**

Curses due to burning 446-450

Evangel dictated by Jesus in  
Hebrew and recorded in his  
life—burnt 195-197, 248-  
250, 257-257, 271-273, 291,  
323, 362, 412, 441, 446, 448,  
452, 464, 487, 793, 796

### **Bible—Contradictions**

Contradictions in 152-163, 217-  
218, 243-245, 254, 275-278

Reasons for 160, 163, 195-197,  
230 -234, 240, 261, 275-365,  
370-375, 412, 570-582, 590-  
593, 793, 796

Result of 217-220, 445-471

### **Births—miraculous**

Adam's more miraculous than  
Jesus 208-209

Adam's most miraculous 177

Eve's second most miraculous 177

Jesus third miraculous 177, 206,  
209-211

**Blasphemy** 34, 39, 75-77, 223,  
229, 234, 237, 300, 303, 358-  
363, 452, 1303-1305

### **Blessed time**

Adam/ Jesus—Muhammad's 163,  
424, 652, 885, 1210

Allah—blessed 665, 671-672, 676

Daniel—Period waiting between  
1208-1210

### **Book—Divine**

Absolute truth—which sacred  
book 806-811, 932-934

Contaminated—1st. 3 informs  
Jesus 197

Evangel (third) 152-155, 194, 195,  
197, 218, 238, 248-250, 255-  
273, 291, 323, 362, 412

Four only—Jesus/ Quran  
Confirms 194, 197

Psalms (second) 194, 521

Quran—(fourth) 194, 197—See  
Quran  
—none after 988

Torah—(first) 194, 197, 633  
—forged 152-163, 570-579,  
652

### **Brethren faith**

Adapted—Nimrod's religion of  
Mithraism 225, 229-232,  
240-242, 280-344, 229-365

Blasphemed—God got Son 229,  
232, 280-289

Baptism instead promise do good  
327-328

Broke Everlasting Covenant 225,  
229, 230, 296-300

Encouraged sin 229, 232

Falsified religion of Jesus 223-234

Incorporated false miracle of wine  
225

Nimrod's titles include  
Sacred Heart 232

Result Jerusalem destroyed 295,  
445-446

**Brotherhood**—Universal 19-22,  
172-175, 217-220, 437-441,  
504-512, 517, 658-660, 1127,  
1132, 1307-1312

**Buddhism**

Beatitudes—eight 199

Founder—Gautama Buddha 199

Spread of 199-200

Teachings incorporated into  
Mithraism/ Christianity 200,  
352-358

**Celibacy**

Modern youth 848-849

Origin of 70-74, 84-88, 313

Plunged into deepest pollution  
70-74, 316-318

Practice of 70, 316-318

Result of 72-74, 316-318

Tonsure—Clerical 70-72

Unmarried men 70, 72, 88, 313-  
315,  
women 70-74, 88, 315

### **Chosen people**

Christians—Claim “sons of god”  
183, 283-289

punished 445-471, 1303-  
1307

Ishmaelites—blessed 181-185, 420

—Saved inspite idolatry 181-  
183, 420

—Saved because 185, 420,  
572

Jews—destroyed 181-183, 398,  
420, 445-446

### **Christmas**

Origin of 44-50, 246, 289-294,  
349-351

Gifts/Santa Claus/Yule tree  
46

### **Church of Christ**

Admissions of 273-275, 358-360

Barbarian founder 41, 246-250,  
252

Burnt /suppressed real teachings  
of Jesus 195-197, 248-250,  
254-261, 267, 271-273, 362,  
412, 441, 446-452, 660

Character of Founder 242, 252

Contentions of 362-363

Cursed by God 446-450, 454-461,  
 464-471, 526-527, 658-660,  
 1256  
 Destroyed—will be by God 1236,  
 1254-1256, 1305-1307  
 Destroyed teachings of Jesus 242-  
 250, 254-257, 358-363, 412  
 Devil's organisation 273-275,  
 1159-1160, 1191, 1203  
 Disunity 217, 218, 445-446, 457-  
 459, 462-466, 504, 1207  
 Hypocrites—according Christians  
 1232-1236, 1303  
 Influence Nimrodism 280-358,  
 363-365, 412, 504  
 Mockery to Christian unity 217,  
 462-464, 504  
 Origin of 242-243, 246-252, 255-  
 257, 337, 358-360, 1254-1256  
 Religion of Sword 254-255, 276,  
 455-461, 467, 491-502, 788  
 Right to sanctify blasphemy,  
 wickedness, idolatry as good  
 360-362  
**Circumcision**  
 Brethren—discarded 225, 229-  
 232, 298-300  
 Distinction from non-believers  
 142, 225, 230 -232, 296-300,  
 362  
 Everlasting Covenant 142, 191,  
 229, 298, 362, 1256

Jesus and followers 220, 362-229,  
 296-300, 362  
 Saves from magical spell of  
 Nimrod 296-300, 1256  
**Communion—The Holy**  
 Existed 2000 years before Jesus  
 50, 323-325  
 Holy Sacramental food and  
 drinks 46-50, 74-75, 111-113,  
 225, 323-325, 367, 563  
 Origin of 46-48, 68, 74-75, 225,  
 323-325  
 Spread over the earth 48-50  
**Communists**  
 Allies—10 nations group 1164  
 Chinese People Party proclaims  
 Islam 1287  
 Complete Destruction foretold  
 13, 1173-1174, 1283-1287  
 Compromise according  
 Europeans 526-529  
 Destroy European Civilisation 11-  
 13, 1166-1167  
 General Condition at start of 526-  
 527  
 Gog and Magog—who/where?  
 1167  
 —domination 1167-1207,  
 1280-1287  
 Origin—due Christianity 466-  
 467, 526, 1167-1169

—why in Russia 526-527  
 Palestine occupied 1171, 1285  
 Solution for Peace 13-15, 531-535  
 Warnings 535-539, 1171-1174,  
 1287  
 World Victory 11-13, 1166-1169,  
 1285-1287

**Constantine—Emperor and  
 Saint**

Barbarian—Founder of Church  
 252  
 Burnt Original Evangels of Jesus  
 195-197, 248-250, 257, 323,  
 412, 441, 446, 448, 452, 4643,  
 487  
 Causes of—Church Disunity 217-  
 220, 446, 504  
 —Dark Ages of Europe 448  
 Causes of Destruction—of faith of  
 Jesus 242-250, 257-257  
 of Mithraism 252-254  
 Roman Empire 448  
 Church of Christ  
 Based upon sign of Cross  
 246, 250  
 Becomes Church of Christ  
 246-250  
 Character of Founder 242,  
 252  
 Christos—word coined 246  
 Christianity 41, 246 360, 412

Curse—Result of God's 446-  
 450  
 Destroyed religion of Jesus  
 248-250, 254-261, 280-  
 344, 358-365, 401, 441  
 Destroyed opposition 252-  
 255  
 Easter—established 246, 331-  
 336, 349-351  
 Exiled—Arius and believers  
 in Jesus 243-245, 250-  
 412  
 Founded—242-243, 252-254  
 Founder of 41, 246-250  
 Nicaea—Council of 243-248  
 Pontifex Maximus 242-245,  
 248  
 Patronage—Royal, to 242  
 Sabbath—Sun God's day  
 established by decree  
 242, 250  
 Sword—Religion of 254-255,  
 276, 491-494, 497, 499  
 Trinity—Proclamation of  
 250  
 —Why adapted? 250  
 Murderer—Second Nero 252  
 Pagan Chairman of Nicaean  
 Council 243  
 —Originator of Christianity  
 250, 254-257, 337, 344,  
 358-365, 412

- Remained throughout life 250
- Unbaptised 243
- Covenant of Prophet** 522, 595-596
- Crucifixion**
  - Falsity of 281-283, 328-344, 347
  - Jesus not but alive after 281-283, 328-344
  - Origin—Sacrifice to save Sinners 59-60, 111-113, 334-337, 344, 229-351
- Crusade**
  - Causes for 450-452
  - Children's 459-461
  - Constantinople massacre 457, 492
  - Disunity amongst Christians 455-459
  - First to fifth 454-459
  - Hate Islam 452, 477, 500, 502, 519
  - Jerusalem massacre 454, 491
  - Religion of Sword 454-457, 491-492
  - Suppression of Jesus and Truth 452
- Curse**
  - God's on Nimrodism 77-78, 111, 113, 122, 181-185, 255, 291, 311, 319, 363-365, 445-471, 526-527, 568, 761, 1305
  - Jerusalem on 116-118, 181-185, 445-446
  - Jesus — of 229, 238, 284, 360-362
  - Jesus — on followers of 445-471, 526-527, 1303-1307
    - on Peter 237-238, 762
  - Jews 396-401, 404, 762
- Curse—disbelievers in Prophets**
  - Abraham 761
  - Bowing before Adam 759-761
  - Daniel 762
  - Isaiah 15-16, 761-762
  - Jerimiah 762
  - Jesus 225-229, 238, 284, 360-362, 445-471, 526-527, 762, 1303-1307
  - John 762
  - Lot 764-768
  - Moses 53, 214, 728, 757, 761
  - Muhammad 764-768, 1305-1307
  - Noah 30, 53, 180, 214, 311, 600-602, 614-616, 633, 755-757, 761
- Dadjdjal—Anti-Christ—False Prophet**
  - Description—Kafir 645 646, 1176-1177, 1260, 1287
  - King of Terror 1177, 1181-1182, 1225, 1287-1289

Supporters 1177-1179, 1182,  
1287-1289

### **Darkness**

Forces of 48, 65, 113

Powers of 46, 59, 68, 291, 331-347

Remover of 671, 721-723

Son of God will be killed by forces  
of 59, 108-114

### **Destruction—Foretold**

America 6-16, 1162-1166, 1212,  
1215, 1222, 1271

England 11, 1162-1166, 1212,  
1215, 1270

E.E.C. 1162-1166, 1212, 1215,  
1270

God incarnate—religion of 568-  
570, 1159-1162, 1305-1307

Gog and Magog 1167-1174, 1213-  
1215, 1280-1287

Nuclear Wars 1166-1174, 1212-  
1226, 1283-1307

Present wicked by New Era 1173-  
1193, 1241 1252, 1271-1325

### **Destruction—Past**

Animals—World Wide 609-610,  
614-616, 629

Assyrian Army by prayers 15-16,  
761-762

Atlantis in spite Nuclear Arms  
1124

Babylon in spite Magical Powers  
50-53, 116-118, 238-240,  
273-275, 311, 728, 1305-1307

Babylonian Army by unarmed  
Abraham 108-110

Deluge by Noah 30, 53, 180, 214,  
311, 600-602 614-616, 633,  
755-757

Egyptian Army by Moses 53, 214,  
728, 757

Philistinian Army by David 214,  
728

Wicked Civilisations replaced 30,  
53, 180, 311, 600-602, 614-  
616, 635

### **Devil—the real Satan**

Animal Spirit—human self 621-  
623, 628, 875, 1094, 1117-  
1120,

Be all and end all 55, 75, 83, 104-  
106, 111-113, 1031, 1108

Brotherhood of man-How? 19-22,  
172-175, 217-220 437-441,  
506-512, 517, 1105-1115,  
1302-1308, 1315-1334

Chained for 1000 years 1193

Devil—who is real Satan 1114-  
1122, 1193, 1315-1317

Disbelievers follow lust 1114,  
1237-1238, 1317

Egoism—Pride 20-22, 55, 83, 104-  
106, 111-113, 623, 628-638,



- 759-762, 883, 908, 925, 928,  
1031, 1317
- Ham-Zat—Human Passion 1117-  
1120
- Infallible Pontifex Maximus 55,  
75, 83, 104-113, 242-248,  
469, 752, 1031
- Intolerance of whites 491, 494,  
499-500, 506-507 541, 638
- Khan-Nas—Human Passion  
1117-1120
- Might is right 83
- Nafs Ammara—Cause of Sin 623,  
875, 1094, 1117, 1317
- Passion—Pride, Lust, Greed 944,  
1117, 1144, 1193, 1317
- Peter St—declared by Jesus 323,  
345, 367
- Powers of human devil 84, 91,  
106-108, 1118-1120
- Saved from Human Devil by  
Allah 1122-1127, 1237
- What we believe good enough 20-  
22, 116, 467-471, 648, 917
- Divorce in Islam**
- Annul—special condition which  
871
- Annulment before living  
man/wife 870
- Conclusions on 871-874
- Divorced women's right to  
remarry 871
- Enforcing—procedure 863-866
- Exception to the rule 866-868
- First divorce procedure 863-866
- Hadith on 863
- Law—Qur'anic on 856-863
- Pagan System 709, 868-870
- Prohibited—in anger 870  
—swearing 3 times 868-870  
—whimsically 868-870
- Second divorce procedure 866
- Third divorce procedure 866
- Trouble makers—Steps to prevent  
after failure of 3 separate  
divorces 866
- When husband missing 870
- Women's equal right to divorce  
868
- Easter—Origin** 56-59, 246, 331-  
336, 229-351
- Evangel**
- Apocryphal—Church declares  
Hebrew Originals as 195-  
197, 243-246, 257-264  
—Jews declared Greek  
Version as 257
- Cononical Greek M. S. are  
forgeries 238, 240, 245-250,  
255-261, 275-276, 280-365,

487

Destroyed—Hebrew Originals

195-197, 218, 248-250, 257-  
257, 437, 291, 323, 208, 441,  
487, 793, 796

Dictated—in life of Jesus 195-197,  
248-250, 262-271, 362, 367

Forgeries in 153-155, 197, 255-  
257, 276-365, 487, 793

Hebrew—195, 218, 248, 261, 269-  
271, 323, 362  
—non 248, 255-261, 271, 323

Heresy—Originals of Jesus  
declared 245, 257

Result of loss of Original Hebrew  
218, 257-257, 446-450

Version—many 218

### **Evolution**

Darwin's theory of 598-600, 605,  
629  
false scientifically 602-616,  
629

Evolution or Creation? 598-610,  
1108-1110

Fossils—living disprove 602-602,  
612

Oldest living things 612-616

Pagan Arab's theory of 707

Reproduction—not normally  
possible in different of same  
group 598-600

Sudden appearances of new  
species without ancestors or  
evolution 607-617

Sudden disappearances without  
evolving into higher forms  
605-616, 629

### **Evolved—whether mankind?**

Absolutely differs from all  
creation 607, 621-623, 629-  
631

Crated suddenly from nowhere  
605-309, 629

Differences with animals  
including so-Called  
primitive men: 605-309  
—achievements 626  
—at birth 626

brain construction 605, 624-  
626

Soul—Mortal /Immortal  
621-623

Superiority due to Nur-e-  
Muhammadi 590-591,  
617, 621-623, 626-648

Evolve—didn't from animals 602  
—from those animals whom  
Scientists call  
prehistoric men 605-  
609

Only Creation with 2 souls 621-  
623, 628

Origin—3 basic races of man 600-602, 616, 629

Superior Creation to Angels 619-623, 629

to animals including those  
animals called primitive  
men 624-629

**Excommunication**—origin of  
and ban on study of other  
religions 106-108

**Fatima—Prophecy of**

Confirmed by Bible / Daniel /  
Others 1203-1205

Disclosed by Jeane Dixon 1203

Suppressed 273, 636, 660, 672,  
1202, 1205, 1212

Warning of destruction /disunity  
273, 1203-1212

**First-Born**

Abraham—of 157-158, 162-163,  
570-574

Biblical Law on 157, 570

Ismael is 157-163, 570-579

**Forgeries—relating to**

Abraham 152-155, 570-580

Beloved of Allah 653-657

Comforter 370-378, 577-579

Hagar 153-160, 570, 579

Holy Bible 152-163, 217-220, 230-232, 237-238, 243-246, 254-261, 276-229, 352-363, 370-

375, 570-582

Ismael 152-163, 570-579

Jesus 223-238, 254, 275-344, 229,  
352-363

Promised Seed—Muhammad  
160-163, 368-385, 500, 570-582

**Foretelling's—dates** 1207-1226

**Genealogy**—Jesus and  
Muhammad 185-190

**God**

According Nimrod /  
Christianity—inferior,  
helpless, inexperienced 68,  
75, 284, 362

Definition / Differences /  
Incarnate—see Allah Fights  
for whom? 425-432, 506,  
560, 723, 766-768, 1233, 1250  
not for Christian 454-455,  
1232-1233

Hates Christianity 1236, 1254-1256, 1303-1307

**Good Deeds according  
Christianity / Nimrod**

Born sinful—Man 89-91

Curse—God's laws are 68, 75,  
229-230, 240, 303 325, 358,  
362, 367, 412

Doers of good hangs himself—  
sent to Hell 68, 75, 240, 284-

286, 325

Encouraged Sin not good 68, 229-230, 323-324, 362

Feasting and Wine—Holy  
 Communion makes one  
 Pure Son of God—Kills  
 Conscience against sins  
 committed 46-50, 68-70, 74-78, 113, 225, 323-325, 362

Incorporated into Brethren Faith  
 20, 367-234  
 into Christianity 284-286,  
 323, 325, 358-363, 412

Marriage—hindrance to god 83-88, 315

Sinners—Baptised to Heaven 75,  
 284, 324

**Good Deeds according Jesus**

Bad deeds forbidden 229, 232-234, 243, 323-327

Born pure /children sinless 89,  
 412, 565-567

Heaven for doers of good 229-238, 410-412

Marriage and Children good  
 deeds 89, 309, 313

**Hagar, (in Arabic Hajra)**

Angel's visit—1st woman  
 honoured 129, 132-134 143,  
 663

Canal—Nile to Red Sea 136, 1196

Exile of 130-137, 172, 1102, 1196

Innocence and persecution 127-136, 143, 155-157

Presentation to Abraham of 122,  
 1196

Princess of Egypt 122, 125, 136,  
 143, 158-160, 579, 663, 1196

Son—foretelling of 129, 143, 152

Zam Zam—miracle of 132-136,  
 172, 572

## **Haj**

Abraham and Ishmael 148, 165-173, 681

Adan and Eve 163-165, 172

Angels 2000 years before Adam  
 163

Brotherhood 172, 173, 506, 638

Jacob—"Wall of Wailing" 172-173

Jewish prophet incl. Moses 172-173, 389

Muslims 148, 170-175

## **Heart**

Pure—Toast Waes Haeil—Be well  
 48

Sacred—Origin of—Baal—  
 meaning of 89

Sweet—Cupid—St Valentine's  
 day 48

## **Heaven**

Divine laws—for observers of 41

Judgment—day of 930-935

Lifted alive to 27, 180, 222, 694-707

What is it? 780, 784-786, 994-1000, 1073, 1094

## **Hell**

Self inflicted tortures 1000

Sight of Allah—denial of 848, 1000

What is it? 932, 999-1000

## **House of Allah—Kaabah**

Attack upon 181, 183, 420, 572, 633, 1030, 1053, 1064

Birthplace of Promised prophet 165, 653, 662-669

Builders—Angels / Abraham and Ishmael / Muhammad 130, 165-168, 389, 681, 723, 729

House of Allah / First Sanctuary 130-132, 163-173, 389, 681

Purified by Muhammad 721, 725

**Idols—forbidden** 28, 30, 308, 362

**Idols—Origin—Mother with babe** 55-56

**Idolatry** 55-56, 63, 81, 92-97, 281, 308, 360, 362, 382-384, 393, 398, 412, 452, 764

## **Imams**

Abraham—Darood of—reveals 1000-1024

Abu Hanifah—Nauman bin Sabit 1026

Great—the twelve 1000-1024

Great—the 3 Hasani 1000-1009, 1016-1023

Great—the 9 Hussani 1007-1012

Hambal—Abdullah Ahmed bin 1026-1028

Malik 1026

Shafei—Md. bin Idris Abu Abdulla 1026

## **Ishmael**

Birth—foretold 129, 152

Beloved son of Abraham 141, 145-147, 158, 572, 575

Blessed child 129-141, 150-160, 181-185, 382, 572, 579, 662

Blessed with Promised Seed—Prophet 134, 150, 165-167, 185, 192, 377, 441, 389, 442, 579

Descendants—as Stars in heaven and Sands on sea shore 150, 160, 192, 579

First—born / Heir of Abraham 129-130, 141, 145, 157, 185, 382, 570-574, 663

Persecution—even as a babe 130-132, 570-574,

Prices—sons also 136, 141-145, 158-160, 382, 572, 579

Sacrifice 143, 148-152, 172, 577, 662, 1052

Zam Zam—miracle—well of 132-  
136, 158, 572

## Islam

Abstinence—Anti sin and drinks  
517, 48, 728, 778, 789

Basis—world peace 172-173, 430,  
506, 524-539, 638, 728

Christians—hate Islam 452, 477,  
492, 500, 502, 519, 563, 766,  
778, 789

Civilisation—Europe 461, 500,  
516 -519, 532, 638-645

Civilisation—permanency of 517,  
771

Completed by Muhammad 372,  
373 410, 417, 441-442, 467,  
484-539, 1122, 1190-1193

Compromise—Capitalism and  
Communism 526-539

Compulsion—on 477, 480, 491-  
492, 502, 504, 770, 778

Converts enemies into Islam /  
friends 509, 512-514, 726-  
728

Conquerors accept Islam 512-514

Courts enquiry 477, 516, 519

Courts inquiry / Encourages  
education 477, 514, 519, 771

European scholars on 475-478,  
496-502, 524-539

Equality—All 172-175, 430, 439-  
441, 504-512, 517, 539-554,

716

Man and Woman 478, 511,  
539, 640, 716, 726

Existed since eternity / mankind  
485, 977

Faith through action 477

Goodwill—Goethe says all people  
of—are 475

Guided and sustained by Allah  
485, 502, 1190

Meaning of 475-477, 485, 492,  
506, 539, 586, 1190

Mourning forbidden 733, 1048-  
1053, 1055-1058

Peace and good will 721, 726-728,  
1307-1334

Prayers by others for Islam 500

Priests—no class of 512, 539, 821

Propagation—influences 430, 441,  
475-477, 512-517, 728, 745,  
766-771

Protector of poor, widows etc.  
499-511, 531-532, 640

Quotation on 487, 502, 521-524

Rational religion 477, 514, 516,  
519, 739

Refuge from persecution by  
Christians 499-500

Solution for all 477, 502, 504, 519,  
524-529

Stood test of time 173-175, 475,  
491-506, 534-535, 638, 728  
Superior 375, 441-442, 491-507  
Truth—Religion of 441, 504, 726,  
1190  
Universality of 475-477, 484-489,  
504, 506, 519  
World—important for 524, 728-  
745

### **Islam—Brotherhood**

Abolition of slavery 435-439, 507-  
511, 716, 726-728  
Enemies and Conquerors into  
brothers 509-514, 726-728  
Equality between Master/Slave  
435-439, 507-511, 726-728  
Negro our equal brother 506-507  
Picktall on 509-512  
Slaves—repeatedly nominated  
king 507-509  
Universal brotherhood in practice  
83, 172-175, 415, 439-441,  
497-512, 517, 638, 726-728,  
784

### **Islam—Conversion to**

Africa 517  
Believers in Jesus 404-408, 441  
Believing Jews 394-396  
Christian Priest martyred upon  
422-424, 672, 766  
Europeans 477-478

George—Roman General 429-432  
Jerusalem 441-442  
Orders of Jesus 370-384, 408-415,  
595-596, 652-653  
Moses 377-384, 704-705  
Prophet 377, 596

Pagans 391-394, 441

Permanent effect 517, 771

Salman Pharsi 415-417

Spread like wild fire 441, 512-514,  
517, 768-771

### **Islam—God's Kingdom**

Allah protector of 432, 441, 485,  
502, 1190  
Europeans' Discovery 475-487  
Socialistic Socialism 477, 489-491,  
502  
Unique 489-491, 496, 502, 507,  
707

### **Islam—Love**

Better than might 435  
Establishment after Armageddon  
1302-1308, 1317-1334  
Equality—Black and White 506,  
507, 517  
Love and Goodwill 385-387, 441,  
475, 484-487  
Worship out of love—not fear  
1094

1000 years of love between  
mankind 1193

### **Islam—toleration or Sword?**

According Christians proved  
protector 494-502 778, 784,  
788

According European History 494-  
502

Constantinople 464-468, 492-494

Jerusalem 435-442, 454-462, 491-  
492

Tolerance in Islam 491-504, 712-  
721, 784

### **Israel**

Destruction at Armageddon 403-  
404, 1171, 1176-1188, 1302-  
1303

Establishment—Foretold exactly  
1268  
—How 403, 454, 1264-1271

Establishment—Why 401-403,  
1268

Peace—How 403, 948-950

Punishment to helpers 1270-1271

### **Jehad—meaning of 944-945**

— Muhammad's 719-721,  
788, 945-948, 1098-1099  
—Self-control—Surrender to  
His will not ours 942-  
950, 1110-1115, 1127

### **Jerusalem**

Faced towards in prayers 398,  
410-412

Sacred city 295, 434

### **Jesus—Miraculous birth of**

Birth day not Christmas 213, 216,  
289-292

—whose is Christmas 44-50,  
289-294

foretold without father 204-  
206

Blessed—the day and date of birth

Conceived miraculously by  
Virgin Mary 206

Joseph foretold miraculous birth  
of Jesus 211

Miraculously speaks on birth to  
Mary 206

defends on birth virginity  
206-208

### **Jesus—Teachings of**

Abandon his and accept  
Muhammad's 441

Accursed—who curse  
Muhammad 373, 590, 595,  
766

Apostles 321-323

Arise and follow 1254-1256

Begotten son—only 243-245, 283-  
288, 408, 412

Blood—meat with 303-304



- Burnt 195-197, 246-250, 257-257,  
 271-273, 291, 323, 362, 412,  
 793, 796  
 Celibacy—a bad thing 316-318  
 Christmas 289-294  
 Circumcision 220, 296-300, 362,  
 412, 1254  
 Completed—teachings will be by  
 Spirit of Truth i.e.  
 Muhammad 373, 410-417,  
 467, 484-489, 636-638, 674,  
 745-755, 1014, 1111, 1188-  
 1191, 1258  
 Cross—Sign hated by 295-296,  
 1254, 1303-1307  
 Crucifixion 328-229  
 Declared Heresy 243-254  
 Destroyed 243-250, 255-261, 358-  
 363  
 Disbelievers cursed 225-229, 238,  
 284, 360-362, 367, 445-450  
 Disobedience 417-441, 445-467  
 Enemies to teachings of 222-261  
 Followers numbered 222, 229,  
 321, 768  
 Food laws 306-308  
 Forged 197, 242-250, 254-261,  
 276, 323-325, 337, 352-363,  
 367-380, 408-412  
 Formalities to enter faith 327-328,  
 408-412  
 God—on 243-245, 280-283, 336-  
 337, 408-412, 446  
 Hebrew Language 218, 220-222,  
 248-250, 255-257, 261  
 Holy Communion 323-325, 367,  
 408  
 Idolatry 308, 358, 362, 412  
 Incomplete 372, 410-417, 442,  
 467, 636-638, 1111, 1188-  
 1191, 1258, 1298-1302  
 Jews—for only 222, 227, 368-370  
 Jewish religion 220, 227-234, 323-  
 325, 358, 370, 410  
 Marriage—Compulsory for  
 priests 313-319  
 —laws 309-312  
 Mission of 367-389, 404-442, 467,  
 1190-1191, 1298-1307  
 Monasticism—Jesus against 313  
 Not taught by 70-74, 84-88,  
 319  
 Muhammad—Promised  
 Prophet—Messenger 160-  
 163, 281-286, 368-380, 410-  
 417, 441, 590, 595  
 No prophets after Muhammad  
 413  
 No prophets between Jesus /  
 Muhammad 413  
 Not Promised Prophet 368-380,  
 412-413

Original teachings 160-163, 280-337, 358

Pagans—not admitted 227

Preached 220-222, 358

Prophet for Jews 162, 208-211, 222, 227, 368-370, 408, 595

Result of changing—Curse 309-311, 319, 445-471

—Disunity 217, 457-459, 491-496, 1254-1256

—Many versions 218

Religion upon return 1188-1191, 1254-1256, 1294-1307, 1310-1312

Return of Armageddon 370, 1186, 1217, 1254-1256, 1294-1307

Sabbath day 242, 301-303, 408

Sacrifice 336-352

Saviour—not 238, 286-289, 324-325, 408-412

Sin 229, 232-234, 243, 323-325, 360-363, 410-412, 565-567

Son of God—Origin 41, 48, 223, 358-363

Sons of God 48, 183, 243-245, 288-289

Suppressed 245-250, 255-261, 271-273, 358-363, 412, 658-660

Swine forbidden 211, 306-308, 362, 408, 1254

Unite shoe-lace of Muhammad makes Jesus great prophet—prayer for 163, 375, 595, 986, 1210, 1298-1302

In vain do they worship me 243, 289, 324-325

Which Jesus—Real or false 275-337, 344, 358-363, 408-412, 454, 461, 471

Which Jesus—Worshipper of God? 280-288, 337, 344

—of Sun 337-344

Wine and strong drinks forbidden 211, 225, 306, 315, 408

Why hated by Jews 442

Judas—Betrayed and Crucified 283, 328-332, 337-338, 344

### **Laws of God**

Applied to daily life—How? 821-824

Concept of 619, 819-821

Curse according Nimrodism / Christianity 68, 75, 229-367, 240, 303, 325, 358, 362-367, 563-568

Jesus—Heaven attainable only by observing 225-232, 323-325, 358-362, 565-567

**Logos—Word of God—Amar Allah—Nur or Soul of Muhammad—Spirit of**

**Light / Truth**

Amar Allah—Word of God 387,  
586-588, 1302

Light of Truth 591, 726

Logos—Allah's beloved 588- 590,  
595-596, 648

—Bringer of divine help—  
Armageddon 1184,  
1302

—Covenant of prophets 595-  
598

—Creation of Universe from  
591-593

—Meaning of 586-595

—Medium 585, 593

Logos—Nebulla 585, 590, 593

—What is Muhammad 593-  
595, 883-886, 1004

Nur-e- Muhammadi

—Created many  
astronomical years  
before anything—first  
creation 162, 586, 883-  
885

—Enlightened Europe—  
Dark Ages 640-645

—First to prostrate 588

First to surrender 586-588,  
929

—Forgiveness of Adam 646,  
897

—Forgiveness of Mankind  
646-648, 704, 930-935

—Made man unique in  
entire creation 590-591,  
607, 617-623, 629-648

—Placed in forehead of  
Adam to enable  
immortal soul to inter  
human body made of  
clay 127, 617, 628-629,  
876-878, 881-883, 896-  
899, 904

—Placed in forehead of :

—Abdullah 660-662

—Abram 127, 130

—Amena 662, 667

—Hagar (Hajra) 127, 130

—Ishmael 130

—Muhammad 633, 657, 667

—Responsible development  
mankind 590-591, 617,  
621-648

—Reverence mad Jesus into  
a prophet 163, 595

—Reverence made all  
prophets 163, 595, 652,  
929

—Spread knowledge, science  
and democracy 640-645

—Universe Created to  
honour 373, 389, 590,  
885, 929-935

**Mahdi**—see Saviour (Saint)

**Man**

Absolutely unique 590-591, 607,  
617-623, 629-648, 1111

Community—One 19-22, 172-  
175, 506-512, 1127-1132

Created suddenly 605-609, 629

Created—Why? 631-638, 1100,  
1110-1114, 1127-1132, 1236-  
1238, 1315-1334

Differences—animals / primitive  
men 605-609, 624-626, 849

—achievements 626

—at birth—incapacity of  
man-vs-full instinct in  
animals 626, 849

—brain construction 605,  
624-626

Differences—soul—Mortal /  
Immortal 621-628

—Superiority due to Nur-e-  
Muhammadi inspite of  
inferior physical volume  
of brain and instinct  
and born helpless 590-  
591, 617, 621-623, 626-  
648

Egoism—Pride—Intolerance See  
Devil

Human mind—so great—why?  
624-636

Human mind—So helpless—

why? 631-638, 1105-1111

Immortal Soul—What is it? 617,  
621, 628-633

Misguided without Nur-e-  
Muhammadi 628-635, 645

Mortal Soul—What is it? 621, 628

Only creation with two souls 621-  
623, 628

Peace—way to—does not know  
631, 1105-1108

Races—Origin of three basic 600-  
602, 616-629

Superior creation to Angels etc.  
619-623, 629, 1111

to animals 624-629

to those animals called  
primitive men include  
Neanderthal 626-629

**Marriage**

Annulment of—See Divorce

Apple—the forbidden fruit—what?  
886-897

Biblical laws on 309-316

Celibacy—bad according Jesus  
313, 316, 319-321

—causes prostitution 70-75,  
316-318

Compulsory for priests—Jesus  
313-319

Contract of 844

- Emancipation—European
  - Women—how? 851-854
- Islam—inhibits plural marriages
  - 829, 836
- Islam—monogamy or
  - polygamy—which? 826-843
- Jewish marriage laws 826
- Man born sinful because of
  - marriage 88-89
  - sinless 89, 565-568
  - the only one Sinless because of virgin 89
- Marriage—avoidance as a sinful thing 84-89, 309-311
  - a good thing 89, 313-316
- Monasticism—Jesus against 313, 316, 319, 321
  - Origin—hate Abraham 81-89, 313-315
- Monogamist—Is Muhammad? 687, 777-778, 836
- Monogamy—Nimrod's
  - encouraged prostitution 34, 48, 55, 78, 309-312
  - Western causes prostitution 846-854
- Nimrod's Rule of one only 70, 78, 84-89, 119, 309
- Number of wives—on restrictions in Bible 309, 312
- Origin of "One wife"—but
  - freedom to prostitute 48, 70-75, 78, 309-311, 846-854
- Pagan—universal marriage system
- Polygamy—in India 844-846
  - Western Civilisation 846-854
- Popes—married men 313
- Prostitution—destroys civilisation 311-312, 839-841, 854
  - To legalise or not? 848-854
  - European Womanhood 849-854
  - Can emancipate women? 851-854
- Ring in marriage—origin of 70, 360
- Status of wife 1006-1007
- Widows—for protection of orphans, of war heroes, destitute, helpless 829-834
- Women—when unfit for marriage 828
- Virgin only—whom Muhammad married 828
- Martyrs**
  - Ali 1033
  - Amar of Yemen 671
  - Companion of Holy Prophet 1033-1037

Hasan 1006, 1043  
 Hussain 1006, 1043-1058, 1068  
 Imam Hasan Askari 1009  
 Innocent children 84, 91-92, 457,  
     491-497  
 Isaiah (Prophet) 761, 762  
 John (Prophet) 660, 762, 1014  
 Karbala—Prophets family at  
     1006, 1043-1068, 1207-1208  
 Madinah—people of 1045, 1053,  
     1064  
 Muhammad—by after effects of  
     poison 401, 733  
 Omar and Osman 1033  
 Priest accepting Islam by  
     Christians 422-424, 672, 766  
 Queen Asiya of Egypt for  
     supporting Moses 663  
**Mecca**  
     Birthplace and place of disclosure  
         of Muhammad 168-170, 380,  
         384, 662-669, 685-688  
     Capture by Muhammad with an  
         army of 10,000 saints  
         foretold in Holy Bible 380-  
         384, 658  
     Capture by Md. without fight  
         721-723, 944-948  
     Hagar and Ishmael—lived and  
         buried 137, 173

Paran—old name—blessed  
     place—place of Promised  
     Prophet 130-137, 163-167,  
     380-384  
 Saved miraculously from  
     destruction when without  
     means of defence 181-185  
**Miracles and Muhammad**  
     Animals 676, 672, 743  
     At birth—healing 669-671, 674-  
         676  
         —idols 652, 667-671, 738  
         —Magi fire 387-389, 669-738  
         —Persia 669, 738-739  
         —talks to Allah and asks  
             blessings 665  
     Before birth—blood stained  
         Clothes of prophet John  
         would become miraculously  
         clean upon his father's birth  
         63  
         —Restored to health 674  
         —Save his father's life 662,  
             745-750  
         —Madinah 391  
     Before birth—Saved Mecca 181-  
         185, 420, 572  
     Born circumcised from mother's  
         womb 422-424, 671-672  
     Dead to life—after eating up flesh  
         of goat 743

- Children of Jabir bin Abdullah Ansari—two 743
- Name raised dead 743
- Parents—both 743
- Footprints—not on sand but on rocks 672
- Grandfather—dumb for 3 days 405
- Hair still keeps growing / multiplying 729-732
- Halima—during nursing 676-681, 747
- Idols—broken miraculously 382-384, 721-723
  - announced birth and talk 372, 422-652, 667-672, 738, 743-745
- Inanimate objects 667-672
- Languages 955-965
- Moon—split—foretold—witnessed 412-415, 749-759
- Multiplicity and Universal simultaneously 667-681, 738-739
- Performed what none done 671, 743-754
- Performed what others done 747-749
- Quran—the continuing miracle defying forgeries and destruction 387, 590, 745, 793-811, 986-988
- Raised to Heaven 387, 694-707
- Saw Allah with naked human eyes 387, 695-707
- Shade by cloud 372, 387, 413, 653, 676
- Shadow—no 672
- Spoke to Allah 372, 387, 665, 694-707
- Sun 705, 747-749
- Tibba—letter of 393
- Unique 387, 671, 743-755, 771
- Witnessed thousands of miles away simultaneously 387, 422, 671, 738-739, 749-754
- Miracles—Raising the dead**
  - Abraham 286, 741-743
  - Elijah 178
  - Elisha one year after his death 178
  - Imam of Islam 741-743
  - Jesus 306
  - Muhammad—see Miracles of Muhammad Saints of Islam 739-741
- Mithraism**
  - Alexandrian library burnt 254
  - Destroyed—How and why? 252-255
  - Hypatia—Priest murdered 254

Incorporated into Christianity  
223-225, 230-232, 240-242,  
246-754, 289-296, 334, 352-  
363

Mithra—means Saviour 351

Origin of and Popular religion 41,  
60, 200, 223- 225, 246-248,  
289-296, 351-352, 358-363

Principal rival to Christianity  
289-294, 352

Spread throughout Roman  
Empire even reaching Britain  
by 70 B.C. 60, 200, 242-243,  
351

### **Muhammad**

Ahmed—Name of Prophet—  
Meaning of 588

Al-Amin—Faithful and True—  
Title of bringer of Divine aid  
at Armageddon 170, 387,  
406, 419, 681, 684, 773-777,  
1102, 1184, 1302

Amar Allah—Word of Allah See  
logos

Badr—Victory 716-717

Birth 422, 663-674

Blessing 163, 372, 373, 393, 586-  
596, 646, 652, 665, 671-672,  
930-935, 1188-1190

Born—South of land of Israel  
372-413, 653

Character—strong, good—Al-  
Amin 387, 733-738

Charity—spirit of 163, 595

Coded letters at beginning of  
Surah's 588

Comforter 370-372, 424, 590-591,  
636, 674, 695-721, 726, 752-  
754, 930-935, 1188, 1190

Complete religion left incomplete  
by Jesus 372 373, 415, 467,  
484-489, 636-638, 674, 754-  
755, 1014, 1111, 1188-1191

Defense—Self 716

Departure from earthly life 732-  
736

Descendent of Abraham 134, 162-  
163, 188-190, 393, 413, 422,  
672, 705, 1195-1198

of Hagar /Ishmael 134, 163,  
188-190-413, 420-422,  
596, 672, 1200

of Pharaoh Sensusrit and  
Queen Nufrit of Egypt  
122, 125-137, 158-160,  
1195-1198

Disrespect made Iblis (Lucifer)  
Satan 619-623, 876-885

Divine Messiah—see Quran

European's opinions 692, 771-791

Faith on his mission 690-692

Forgiver of enemies 380, 387, 401,  
726, 788, 945-948



- Forgiveness—Source of 163, 896-897, 909-911, 945-948
- Foster mother—Halima Sadiya 674-681
- Freedom, from fear of speech 640
- Gift—would accept but not charity 372, 387, 413, 415
- Greater than—
- Adam obtained forgiveness 896-897, 909-911,
  - David called him—Lord 378-380
  - him none 163, 595, 781-791, 986-988, 1098-1100
  - Jesus wants the shoelace 163, 375, 595, 986
  - Lord of Angel Gabriel 932
  - Moses—prayer for mercy 389
  - Moses—wants to be follower 385
  - Other became prophets due to 163, 595, 605, 929
  - Saviour of all 595, 650, 590-935
- Guidance in mankind 372-373, 514-519, 591, 771, 811-814
- Hair—miraculous—distributed 729-732
- Hate—by Christians 452, 477, 500-502, 519, 776, 780, 781
- Hater of—is accursed warns Jesus 373, 590, 652
- Heraclius—Roman Emperor recognised 419-424
- Hijrah Era—Commencement of 716
- Hudybiyah—Truce with Meccans 717-721
- Humility 387, 415, 726, 733-738, 789-791
- Invitation by Yathrib (Madinah) 711, 714-716
- Jihad—Peace at all cost 717-721, 788, 945-950
- Jews 394-404, 442, 764
- King—Virtual yet led humble life 387, 415, 726, 738
- Kissed thumb nails and rubbed one eyes—Adam 885-886
- Learn—did not to read or write 387, 415, 681
- Life—after Prophethood 687-738
- before Prophethood 663-687
- Mahboob—the beloved of Allah 588, 596, 648-660
- Mehraj—invitation by Allah to heaven 694-707
- Mercy for mankind 162, 652-653,

- 789, 930-935
- Messenger of Allah 163, 373, 389, 586, 1190
- Mission of Jesus—to foretell 404-442, 660, 1298
- Monogamist 687, 777-778, 826-836
- Moulud 714-716
- Muhammad—meaning of 588
- Soul—celestial splendour 975
  - Soul—see Logos
- Murder—attempts at 676, 680, 711-714
- Name—Blessed 163, 590, 671, 743
- Deliberately deleted in Bible 370-375, 577-582
  - Still in Hebrew Bible 385, 591-593, 653-658
- Nur-e-Muhammadi—see Logos
- Peculiarities 672-680, 729-732
- Pilgrimage—of farewell 729
- Prayers—Islam—Origin of 695-702
- Promised seed/prophet 370-373, 389, 577-579, 596, 662, 674-676, 687, 695
- Prophets—No more after—says Jesus 413, 1302
- Prophethood—transferred from Jews to descendants of
- Ishmael—*i.e.* brethren tribe—from Zion or Jerusalem to Paran or Mecca 377-382, 596
- Protector of weak, oppressed, orphans and widows 387, 499-502, 640
- Public preaching 688-690, 712-714, 729
- Recognised as promised prophet 394-396, 401-406, 430, 435-442, 672-676, 711, 725, 766
- Rests under tree by Abraham 372, 406-408
- Revealed at Cave Hira / Paran 380-389, 685
- Salvation to all 162-163, 373, 389, 410, 422, 487, 519, 577-590, 650-658, 665, 773, 930-935
- Saw Allah by naked eyes 387, 694-707
- Seal of prophethood 372, 387, 406, 413-417, 658, 986-988
- Speaks to Allah 372, 384, 387, 596, 638, 646, 665, 694-707
- Temptations—money—power—women—will not influence 387, 690
- Tortures and trials of 393, 688-694, 711, 1085-1100
- Women—granter of equal rights to 640

Wonder 788-791

Words—effects of 725-726

**Muharram—10th day of—  
Fridays**

Abraham—Saved from Nimrod's  
fire 97-104, 214

Ark of Noah—Safely lands after  
deluge 214

Birth of—Holy Jesus out of Virgin  
Mary 213, 216

Creation of—Adam suddenly out  
of clay 214

—Earth out of Sun 213

—Universe out of Logos or  
Holy Spirit 213

David—slays Goliath 214

Destruction of—Pharaoh and  
Egyptian Army 214

—Sodom and Gomorrah  
137-139, 150, 214

Escape of—Jews from yoke of  
Egypt 214-216,

—Jonah from whale stomach  
214

Martyrdom of Hussain and family  
of Muhammad at Karbala to  
become saviours 214, 1043-  
1058

Reunion of Jacob with Joseph 214

**New Era—Biblical and other  
foretelling's**

Communist 1167-1174, 1213,  
1215, 1250, 1283-1287

Contestants—1st Beast 1162-  
1166, 1212, 1215

—2nd Beast 1162-1166,  
1212, 1215

—3d Beast 1162-1166, 1212,  
1215

—4th Beast 1164-1174, 1213,  
1215

—Victor and deeds 1166-  
1171, 1250

Destruction before new era 1159

False Prophet 1176-1181, 1260,  
1287, 1302-1303

—Supporters 1177-1181,  
1287-1289

Gog and Magog 1167, 1280-1285

Jews capture Palestine by force  
1159

Nuclear Wars—period of 1162,  
1334

Revival by Saint Saviour 1174-  
1176, 1276, 1285-1287

**New Era—Last days of Present  
Civilisation**

Arab riches foretold 1262-1264

China—National party will  
become Muslim 1287

Destruction—in every Arab home  
1264

- European Control over Holy Lands 1266
- Invasion of Italy by world powers 1266-1268
- Israel—establishment by force 1159, 1268
- object of Europeans 1268-1270
- punishment for establishing 1270-1271
- Jerusalem will go out of Muslim hands 1171
- Jewish—Victory foretold 1275
- Opinions / Sign of 1137-1140, 1144-1149, 1159, 1242
- New Era—Transition period to**
- Commencement of transition period 1137-1138, 1307-1310
- How do we know? 1138-1149, 1241-1250
- How long will it last? 1167, 1210-1212
- New Era—What will it be like after the Battle of Armageddon?**
- Blessed period in every Way 1271-1325
- Noble children bringing honour 785
- Own home and fruits 1320
- Wishes granted even before praying for them 1320
- Civilisation—new—of one universal brotherhood 83, 385, 1193, 1307-1312, 1319-1320
- Earth—whole sings praises of Allah 1324-1325
- Decide now to save yourselves 1236-1238, 1251-1256
- Famines disappear—wilderness fruitful 1322
- Free from Demonism 1193, 1303-1307
- Future—Grand—ahead 1317-1319
- Happiness and security all around 1320
- Hatred—Jealously— ended 1320
- Life in New Era a gift of God 1251
- Peace—Universal established on earth 1308, 1320
- Piety—All around—abound 1324
- Righteousness—Justice—prevail 1319
- Sickness, diseases, blindness disappear 1320
- Surrender to will Allah will prevail 83, 375, 377, 385, 1319, 1324-1325
- Too wonderful to believe 1251, 1315-1325

Wars—forgotten 83, 1195, 1217,  
1227, 1319

Weapons of war destroyed 1217,  
1227, 1308, 1319

Wild animals become tame 1322-  
1324

**Nimrod—King —The Mighty  
Rebel**

Ambition of 75-77

Birth of 33, 36, 44-50, 53-59, 289-  
294

Blasphemer 34, 36, 55-56, 63, 75,  
104-111, 280-292, 327, 337,  
362

Death by violence 59-60, 108-113,  
337-362

Discoverer of many new wonders  
34-37

Dream of—warning his  
destruction 81-83

Enemy of Abraham 81-148, 295-  
300, 306-315, 362, 387-389

Grandson of Ham, the son of  
Noah 33

King—Forcibly made himself  
during life of Noah, the head  
of the human race after  
deluge 33-36

King—Not by God's grace 33, 75

Magical—Aerovision Mirror 44  
—Alarm against surprise

attack 43

—Baptism 39, 63, 65, 113-  
118, 327-328, 358-365

—City Models to control the  
people 44

—Cross—sign of 60-63, 295-  
296, 1303-1307

—Finder of culprits 44

—Gate Keeper 43

—Guides—The Twelve 65-  
68, 321

—Justice—The tank of 44

—Knowledge 39, 110

—Performances 36 -39, 43

—Tree of shade at Babylon  
50-53

—Well of life 44-50

Meaning at Nimrod 33, 34, 303

Murderer of innocent 84, 91, 106-  
108

of opposers 36, 97

Popularity of 34-36, 55-59, 116-  
118, 378-558

Power and Knowledge—Source of  
36 -41

Religion spread all over the earth  
39 -41, 46-50, 53-61, 68-75,  
225, 230-232, 238-240, 246-  
248, 254-255, 280-344, 349-  
352, 358-367, 378, 412, 558,  
1159-1160, 1305-1307

Son/Sons of God 33-34, 44-59,  
284-289, 327-362

Spell upon Mankind—4,000 years  
of hypnotic influence 36 -43,  
55, 68-75, 113-118, 230-232,  
240, 295, 327-336, 362-365,  
378, 660, 1303-1307

Superior Religion 75, 104-106,  
116, 323-325, 358-363

Sword—Religion of 36, 65, 84, 91,  
106-108, 246-255

Trinity in Unity—not enough  
honour 75

—The superior in 75, 284,  
362

### **Nimrodism**

Jesus will destroy at Armageddon  
1303-1307

Principles of 46-48, 68-75, 111-  
113, 225-232, 240-248, 257,  
280-351, 362, 367, 563

### **Nimrod's Titles**

Accursed—at Tower of Babel 55,  
77-78, 111, 116, 122, 255,  
351, 363-365, 445, 1303-1307

Baal—The Sacred Heart 55, 59-  
60, 89, 116, 230, 280-281

Bacchus—The Inventor of Wine  
55, 225

Baptised—The—as “This is my  
well beloved son in whom I  
am well pleased” 65, 327

Baptiser of his followers 39, 65,  
113, 122, 327

Begotten son of God 53-60, 280-  
291, 324-325, 336

Beloved son—the well 46, 55, 65,  
327

Born—The one—of a Virgin 44-  
48, 55

Condemned—to Hell for refusal  
to give up Trinity and  
instead believe in one God at  
the behest of Abraham 111-  
113

Condemner—The —of doers of  
good deeds in accordance  
with laws of God 75, 284

Cross—The sign of—The initial  
of his title “Tammuz” 60-63,  
97, 99, 122, 246, 250, 295,  
298, 229, 349, 1303-1307

Cupid—The Sweet Heart 48

Deliverer of sinners—The 56-59,  
284

Dispenser of Justice—Day of  
Judgement 75

God—experienced because led  
earthly life, hence Superior  
to God, the father who has  
not got practical experience  
75

God Incarnate come to save the  
world by Sacrifice of his  
sacred life 59, 111-113

- Healer of wicked souls 55, 113, 284
- Hope of those who have absolute faith in him 75
- Hunter—The Mighty—in rebellion against God Almighty—104, 106, 1031
- Infallible Pontifex Maximus—See Devil
- Killer—The—of God 104-106
- Lamb—The—of the heavens 55, 59, 75
- Lamented—The—during Easter 56
- Liberator—The—from sins 56, 59, 284
- Light Bringer—day-light increases from his birth at Winter solstice 44-46, 284
- Mediator—Only between God and Man 55, 284
- Mithra—The Benefactor—Saviour 55, 351-352
- Rebel—The—against God 34, 78, 108-111, 303, 367
- Sacrament—The Holy 46-50, 113, 323-324
- Sacrifice—The—to save sinners 59, 111-113, 284, 563
- Santa Claus—Origin of 46
- Saviour—The 46, 59, 111-113, 286
- Shepherd—The Good 55, 59, 284
- Sin Bearer—The, 55, 59, 113, 116-118
- Sinless—The only one born 88-89  
The only one who cannot commit any sins irrespective of whatever might be his crimes 55, 89, 111-113
- Sitter on the right hand of God on the day of Judgement 75, 284, 362
- Slain—The—by the evil forces of darkness and illiteracy 55, 59, 108-111
- Son—The only of God 44-50, 283-289, 323-327
- Tammuz—Fairy the perfecter 97-99, 104
- Trinity in Unity 63, 246-250, 281, 296, 362  
—false 108, 243-246, 280-289, 446  
—not enough honour 75  
—The superior in 75, 284, 362
- Noah**
- Father—second of whole human race 30, 33, 180, 304, 309, 600-602, 614-616, 633

King not made himself even  
 though lived 350 years as  
 head of humanity after  
 deluge 33

Saved from the great Deluge 30,  
 600, 616, 633

### **Omar**

Accepted surrender of Jerusalem  
 435-441

Appointed Ali is acting Khalifa  
 435, 984

Ahle bait of Holy prophet  
 Muhammad 972

Buried next to Holy Prophet 735.

Conversion to Islam 692

Father-in-law of Holy Prophet  
 972, 981

Khalifa—foretold 419-422, 435-  
 439, 977-980, 994, 1031

Love and respect for Ali 955, 985-  
 986, 990

Martyred 1033

Offered Khalifaship to Ali 984

Recognised as second Khalifa  
 437-439

Second Khalifa 435, 735, 977-978,  
 984

Strengthened Islam 441, 733-735,  
 980, 984

### **Osman**

Acted on advice of Ali 985

Al-Hudydiyah—negotiator 719

Khalifa—foretold by Allah 419-  
 422, 978, 994-1031

—induced by Ali to accept  
 985

—nominated by Prophet  
 977-978, 994-1031

—offered it to Ali 984-985

—selected by Committee 984

Martyred by Sabaites or Shias  
 1033

Son-in-law of Holy Prophet 981-  
 984

Spread Qur'anic knowledge 985

### **Paran**

Birth Place of promised Prophet  
 389

Idols and idolatry destroyed from  
 here 380-384, 389

Old Biblical name of Mecca 132,  
 382, 389

New Divine Laws from here 380-  
 384, 389

Promised prophet to be revealed  
 here 380-389

Residence of Hagar and Ishmael  
 132, 160

Passion Play 59-60, 328-336, 349-  
 351

### **Paul—Saint**

Blasphemer/Broke Everlasting